The
International Critical Commentary
on the Holy Scriptures of the Old and
New Testaments.

UNDER THE EDITORSHIP OF

THE REV. SAMUEL ROLLES DRIVER, D.D.,
Regius Professor of Hebrew, Oxford;

THE REV. ALFRED PLUMMER, M.A., D.D.,
Late Master of University College, Durham;

AND

THE REV. CHARLES AUGUSTUS BRIGGS, D.D.,
Professor of Theological Encyclopedia and Symbolics,
Union Theological Seminary, New York.
THE INTERNATIONAL CRITICAL COMMENTARY.

TWENTY-FIVE VOLUMES NOW READY, viz. —

Genesis (Dr. Skinner), Numbers (Dr. Gray), Deuteronomy (Dr. Driver), Judges (Dr. Moore),
I. and II. Samuel (Dr. H. P. Smith), Chronicles (Dr. Curtis), Esther (Dr. Paton),
Psalms, Two Vols. (Dr. Briggs), Proverbs (Dr. Toy), Isaiah, chaps. I.-xxvii. (Dr. Gray),
Ecclesiastes (Dr. Barton), Amos and Hosea (Dr. Harper), Zephaniah,
Nahum, Habakkuk, Obadiah and Joel (Dr. J. M. P. Smith, Dr. W. H. Ward, and Dr.
J. A. Bower), Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi and Jonah (Dr. H. G. Mitchell, Dr. J. M. P.
Smith, and Dr. J. A. Bower), S. Matthew (Willoughby C. Allen), S. Mark (Dr. Gould),
S. Luke (Dr. Plummer), Romans (Dr. Sanday), 1st Corinthians (The Bishop of Exeter
and Dr. Plummer), Ephesians and Colossians (Dr. Abbott), Philippians and Philemon
(Dr. Vincent), Thessalonians (Prof. Frame), S. Peter and S. Jude (Dr. Bigg), The
Johannine Epistles (A. E. Brooks).

The following other Volumes are in course of preparation:—

THE OLD TESTAMENT.

Exodus.

Leviticus.

Joshua.

Kings.

Ezra and Nehemiah.

Ruth, Song of Songs,

and Lamentations.

Isaiah, chs. 38-66.

Jeremiah.

Ezekiel.

Daniel.

Synopsis of the

Four Gospels.

John.

Acts.

2nd Corinthians.

Galatians.

The Pastoral Epistles.

Hebrews.

James.

Revelation.

A. R. S. KENNEDY, D.D., Professor of Hebrew, University of Edinburgh.

J. F. STENNING, M.A., Fellow of Wadham College, Oxford; and the late

GEORGE ADAM SMITH, D.D., LL.D., Principal of Aberdeen University.

FRANCIS BROWN, D.D., Litt. D., LL.D., Professor of Hebrew and Cognate
Languages, Union Theological Seminary, New York.

L. W. BATTEN, D.D., late Professor of Hebrew, P. E. Divinity School,
Philadelphia.

C. A. BRIGGS, D.D., Professor of Theological Encyclopaedia and Symbols,
Union Theological Seminary, New York.

G. BUCHANAN GRAY, D.D., Mansfield College, Oxford; and A. S. PEAKE,
D.D., University of Manchester.

A. F. KIRKPATRICK, D.D., Dean of Ely.

G. A. COOKE, D.D., Fellow of Oriel College, and C. F. BURNBY, D.Litt.,
Fellow and Lecturer in Hebrew, St. John's College, Oxford.

JOHN P. PETERS, D.D., late Professor of Hebrew, P. E. Divinity
School, Philadelphia, now Rector of St. Michael's Church, New York.

W. SANDAY, D.D., LL.D., Lady Margaret Professor of Divinity, and
Canon of Christ Church, Oxford; and W. C. ALLEN, M.A., Principal
of Egerton Hall.

JOHN HENRY BERNARD, D.D., Dean of St. Patrick and Lecturer in Divinity,
University of Dublin.

C. H. TURNER, M.A., Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford; and H. N.
BATE, M.A., late Fellow and Dean of Divinity in Magdalen College,
Oxford, now Vicar of St. Stephen's, Hampstead, and Examining
Chaplain to the Bishop of London.

The Right Rev. ARCH. ROBERTSON, D.D., Lord Bishop of Exeter; and
ALFRED PLUMMER, M.A., D.D., formerly Master of University
College, Durham.

ERNST D. BURTON, D.D., Professor of New Testament Literature,
University of Chicago.

WALTER LOCK, D.D., Dean Ireland's Professor of Exegesis, Oxford.

JAMES MOFFATT, D.D., Professor in Mansfield College, Oxford.

JAMES H. ROPES, D.D., Bussey Professor of New Testament Criticism in
Harvard University.

ROBERT H. CHARLES, D.D., D.Litt., Fellow of Merton College, Oxford,
Grinfield Lecturer on the Septuagint and Speaker's Lecturer in
Biblical Studies.

Other engagements will be announced shortly.

T. & T. CLARK, 38 GEORGE STREET, EDINBURGH.

STATIONERS' HALL, LONDON.

LONDON AGENTS: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT, & CO. LTD.
THE

GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE

Rev. ALFRED PLUMMER, M.A., D.D.
First Edition . . . 1896
Second Edition . . . 1898
Third Edition . . . 1900
Fourth Edition . . . 1901
Reprinted 1905, 1906, 1908, 1910, 1913
PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

This volume has no such ambitious aim as that of being a final commentary on the Gospel according to S. Luke. The day is probably still far distant when any such commentary can be written. One of the difficulties with which the present commentator has had to contend is the impossibility of keeping abreast of all that is constantly appearing respecting the Synoptic Gospels as a whole and this or that detail in them. And the Third Gospel abounds in details which have elicited special treatment at the hands of a variety of scholars. Every quarter, indeed almost every month, brings its list of new books, some of which the writer wishes that he could have seen before his own words were printed. But to wait is but to prolong, if not to increase, one's difficulties: it is waiting dum defluat amnis. Notes written and rewritten three or four times must be fixed in some form at last, if they are ever to be published. And these notes are now offered to those who care to use them, not as the last word on any one subject, but simply as one more stage in the long process of eliciting from the inexhaustible storehouse of the Gospel narrative some of those things which it is intended to convey to us. They will have done their work if they help someone who is far better equipped entirely to supersede them.

The writer of this volume is well aware of some of its shortcomings. There are omissions which have been knowingly tolerated for one or other of two adequate reasons. (1) This series is to include a Commentary on
the Synopsis of the Four Gospels by the Rev. Dr. Sanday, Lady Margaret Professor of Divinity, Oxford, and his distinguished pupil, the Rev. W. C. Allen, Fellow and Lecturer of Exeter College. Various questions, especially as regards the relations of the Third Gospel to the First and Second, which have been but slightly touched or entirely passed over in this volume, can be more suitably treated, and will be much more efficiently treated, by those who are to comment on the Synopsis. (2) Economy of space has had to be considered and rigorously enforced. It has been thought undesirable to allow more than one volume to any one book in the New Testament: and therefore subjects, which might with propriety be discussed at some length in a work on the Gospel of S. Luke, have of necessity been handled very briefly or left entirely untouched. Indeed, as editor of those New Testament volumes which are written by British scholars, the present writer has been obliged to strike out a good deal of what he had written as contributor to this series. And it has been with a view to economize space that the paraphrastic summaries, which are so very valuable a feature in the commentary on Romans, have been altogether omitted, as being a luxury rather than a necessity in a commentary on one of the Synoptic Gospels. For the same reason separate headings to sections and to special notes have been used very sparingly. The sub-sections have no separate headings, but are preceded by an introductory paragraph, the first sentence of which is equivalent to a heading.

The fact of the same person being both contributor and editor has, in the case of this volume, produced shortcomings of another kind. Two heads are better than one, and two pairs of eyes are better than one. Unintentional and unnecessary omissions might have been avoided, and questionable or erroneous statements might have been amended, if the writer had had the advantage of another's supervision. Even in the humble but important work of
detecting misprints the gain of having a different reviser is great. Only those who have had the experience know how easy it is for the same eye to pass the same mistakes again and again.

If this commentary has any special features, they will perhaps be found in the illustrations taken from Jewish writings, in the abundance of references to the Septuagint and to the Acts and other books of the New Testament, in the frequent quotations of renderings in the Latin Versions, and in the attention which has been paid, both in the Introduction and throughout the Notes, to the marks of S. Luke's style.

The illustrations from Jewish writings have been supplied, not because the writer has made any special study of them, but because it is becoming recognized that the pseudepigraphical writings of the Jews and early Jewish Christians are now among the most promising helps towards understanding the New Testament; and because these writings have of late years become much more accessible than formerly, notably by the excellent editions of the Book of Enoch by Mr. Charles, of the Psalms of Solomon by Professor Ryle and Dr. James, and of the Fourth Book of Ezra by the late Professor Bensly and Dr. James.¹

A very eminent scholar has said that the best commentary on the New Testament is a good Concordance; and another venerable scholar is reported to have said that the best commentary on the New Testament is the Vulgate. There is truth in both these sayings: and, with regard to the second of them, if the Vulgate by itself is helpful, d fortiori the Vulgate side by side with the Latin Versions which preceded it is likely to be helpful. An effort has

¹ For general information on these Jewish writings see Schürer, Hist. of the Jewish People in the Time of Jesus Christ, Edinburgh, 1886, Div. II. vol. iii.; W. J. Deane, Pseudepigrapha, Edinburgh, 1891; J. Winter und A. Wünsche, Die jüdische Literatur seit Abschluss des Kanons, Trier: Part III. has just appeared.
been made to render those who use this commentary to a large extent independent of a Concordance, and to some extent independent of the invaluable edition of the Vulgate now being produced by the Bishop of Salisbury and Mr. White. Great trouble has been taken with the numerous references to the Septuagint, the books of the New Testament, and other writings. The large majority of them have been verified at least twice. But the difficulty of excluding error in such things is so great that the writer cannot suppose that he has succeeded in doing so. It is possible that a few references have accidentally escaped verification. A very few have been knowingly admitted without it, because the reference seemed to be of value, the source was trustworthy, and verification was not easy.

Reasons are stated in the Introduction for regarding a study of S. Luke’s style as a matter of great interest and importance; and it is hoped that the analysis given of it there will be found useful. A minute acquaintance with it tells us something about the writer of the Third Gospel. It proves to us that he is identical with the writer of the Acts, and that the whole of both these books comes from his hand. And it justifies us in accepting the unswerving tradition of the first eight or nine centuries, that the writer of these two books was Luke the beloved physician.

Dogma in the polemical sense is excluded from the plan of these commentaries. It is not the business of the commentator to advocate this or that belief. But dogma in the historical sense must of necessity be conspicuous in a commentary on any one of the Gospels. It is a primary duty of a commentator to ascertain the convictions of the writer whose statements he undertakes to explain. This is specially true of the Third Gospel, whose author tells us that he wrote for the very purpose of exhibiting the historical basis of the Christian faith (i. 1–4). The Evangelist assures Theophilus, and with him all other Christians, that he knows, upon first-hand and carefully
investigated evidence, that at a definite point in the history of the world, not far removed from his own time, a Prophet of God once more appeared in Israel to herald the coming of the Christ (iii. 1-6), and that his appearance was immediately followed by that of the Christ Himself (iii. 23, iv. 14, 15), whose Ministry, Passion, Death, and Resurrection he then narrates in detail. On all these points the student is again and again met by the question, What does the Evangelist mean? And, although about this or that word or sentence there may often be room for discussion, about the meaning of the Gospel as a whole there is no doubt. If we ask what were “the things wherein” Theophilus “was instructed” and of “the certainty” concerning which he is assured, the answer is not difficult. We may take the Old Roman Creed as a convenient summary of it.

Πιστεύω εἰς Θεὸν πατέρα παντοκράτορα (i. 37, iii. 8, xi. 2-4, xii. 32, etc.). Καὶ εἰς Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν, ὑιὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ (i. 31, ii. 21, 49, ix. 35, x. 21, 22, xxii. 29, 70, xxiii. [33] 46: comp. iv. 41, viii. 28), τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν (i. 43, ii. 11, vii. 13, x. 1, xi. 39, xii. 42, xvii. 5, 6, xix. 8, 31, xxii. 61, xxiv. 3, 34) τὸν γεννηθέντα ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ Μαρίας τῆς παρθένου (i. 31-35, 43, ii. 6, 7), τὸν ἐπὶ Πνεύμον Πιλάτου σταυρωθέντα καὶ ταφέντα (xxii., xxiii.), τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἀναστάτα ἐκ νεκρῶν (xxiv. 1-49), ἀναβάντα εἰς τοὺς οὐρανοὺς (xxiv. 50-53), καθήμενον εἰς δεξίὰ τοῦ πατρός (xxii. 69), δότων ἔρχεται κρίνας ζωής καὶ νεκρῶς (comp. ix. 26, xii. 35-48, xviii. 8). Καὶ εἰς πνεῦμα ἁγίου (i. 15, 35, 41, 67, ii. 26, iv. 1, 14, xi. 13, xii. 10, 12) ἁγίαν ἐκκλησίαν (comp. i. 74, 75, ix. 1-6, x. 1-16, xxiv. 49) ἀφεσιν ἀμαρτίων (i. 77, iii. 3, xxiv. 47) σαρκός ἀνάστασιν (xiv. 14, xx. 27-40).

The Evangelist’s own convictions on most of these points are manifest; and we need not doubt that they include the principal things in which Theophilus had been instructed, and which the writer of the Gospel solemnly affirms to be well established. Whether in our eyes they
are well established depends upon the estimate which we form of his testimony. Is he a truth-loving and competent witness? Does the picture which he draws agree with what can be known from other authorities? Could he or his informants have invented the words and works which he attributes to Jesus Christ? A patient and fair student of the Third Gospel will not be at a loss for an answer.

ALFRED PLUMMER

University College, Durham,
Feast of S. Luke, 1874.

---

The correction of many misprints and other small errors has been greatly facilitated by the generous help of several correspondents, and by the invaluable *Concordance to the Greek Testament*, according to the texts of WH., Tischendorf, and R.V., by Moulton and Geden, an indispensable aid, which had not been published when the first edition of this volume appeared. But to no one is the writer more indebted than to the Rev. John Richard Pullan, who has bestowed upon the work of a stranger an amount of attention which one would not venture to solicit from an old friend.

This edition has also been improved by many small insertions, chiefly of references to books, which have either appeared, or have come to the writer's knowledge, since the first edition was published. First amongst these in
importance is vol. i. of the new *Dictionary of the Bible*, edited by Dr. Hastings, which should be in the hands of every Biblical student. Three articles in particular may be mentioned, both on account of their excellence, and also of their helpfulness to the student of the Third Gospel: these are the articles on “Angels” (for this Gospel might be called the Gospel of the Angels, so often does it mention these glorious beings); on the “Chronology of the New Testament”; and on the “Acts of the Apostles.” To this must be added the new edition of A. S. Lewis’ translation of the *Sinaitic Syriac Palimpsest*; the editions of *The Assumption of Moses* and *The Apocalypse of Baruch*, by R. H. Charles; and of *The Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, by Morfill and Charles; *Das Kindheitsevangelium*, by A. Resch; *Bibelstudien* and *Neue Bibelstudien*, by G. A. Deissmann, both of which contain valuable illustrations of Biblical Greek from papyri; *Grammatik des NT. Griechisch*, by F. Blass; and the instructive but eccentric *Historical Greek Grammar*, by A. N. Jannaris. The interesting work on the *Philology of the Gospels*, by F. Blass, is chiefly occupied with the Gospel of S. Luke, and should be read side by side with the sections of the Introduction to this volume which treat of the same topics. The writer has only to add, that nothing which he has read since he wrote the Introduction has shaken his convictions as to the authorship, date, or integrity of this Gospel.

A. P.

*University College, Durham,
Whitsuntide, 1898.*
PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

This edition is marked by the correction of some errors that had escaped notice, and by the addition of numerous references and short notes. Since the second edition was published, three volumes have appeared which the student of the Third Gospel cannot afford to neglect. These are the *Horae Synopticae* of the Rev. Sir John C. Hawkins, *The Gospel according to S. Luke in Greek*, edited by the Rev. Arthur Wright, and vol. ii. of the *Dictionary of the Bible*, edited by Dr. Hastings. In the last of these, the article on “Jesus Christ” is a masterpiece of critical acumen and lucidity combined with reverential treatment. The present writer desires to express his obligations to all three volumes. Mr. Wright suggests in his preface that his own work should be used in conjunction with this commentary; and those who use the commentary will certainly profit greatly if they follow his suggestion.

A. P.

*University College, Durham,*

*Whitsun tide, 1900.*
# CONTENTS

## INTRODUCTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>§ 1. The Author</th>
<th>xi-1xxxv</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>was the Author of the Acts</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a Companion of S. Paul</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S. Luke</td>
<td>xii</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| § 2. S. Luke the Evangelist                         | xviii    |
| § 3. The Sources of the Gospel                      | xxiii    |
| No Ebionite Source                                  | xxv      |
| Supposed Dislike of Duplicates                      | xxviii   |

| § 4. Time and Place                                 | xxxix    |
| § 5. Object and Plan                                | xxxiii   |
| Analysis of the Gospel                              | xxxviii  |

| § 6. Characteristics, Style, and Language           | xli      |
| The Gospel of S. Paul                               | xlii     |
| of Prayer                                           | xlv      |
| of Praise                                           | xlvii    |
| literary, historic, domestic                        | xlviii   |
| S. Luke's Command of Greek                          | lx       |
| Expressions peculiar to S. Luke                     | lii      |
| to him and S. Paul                                  | liv      |
| to both with Hebrews                                | lviii    |
| to S. Luke with Hebrews                             | lx       |
| Expressions frequent in S. Luke                     | lix      |
| possibly medical                                    | lxii     |
| His Diction compared with that of S. Matthew        | lxiii    |
| and S. Mark                                         | lxvi     |

| § 7. The Integrity of the Gospel                    | lxvii    |
| § 8. The Text                                      | lxx      |
| § 9. Literary History                              | lxxiii   |

| Clement of Rome                                     | lxxiv    |
| The *Didaché*.                                      | lxxvi    |
| *Gospel of Peter*                                   | lxxvii   |
| *Testaments of XII. Patriarchs*                      | lxxix    |
# CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>§ 10. Commentaries</th>
<th>Abbreviations</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lxxx</td>
<td>lxxxvi</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## COMMENTARY

### SPECIAL NOTES

- On the use of ἐγνέφο
- The Decree of Augustus
- The fifteenth year of Tiberius
- The Genealogy
- Demonical Possession
- The Miraculous Draught of Fishes
- The title "Son of Man"
- The word διενεργεί
- The Sermon ἔν τῷ τόπῳ πεδίου
- Christ’s Raising the Dead
- The Journeyings towards Jerusalem
- The word ἄναλημψις
- The Mission of the Seventy
- The Idea of Hades or Sheol in the O.T.
- The Blind Man at Jericho
- The Parable of the Pounds
- The Question about Psalm cx
- The Apocalypse of Jesus
- Readings in Chapters xxii. and xxiii.
- The Narratives of the Resurrection
- Western Non-interpolations
- Interpolations in the Sinaitic Syriac

### INDEX TO THE NOTES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I. General</th>
<th>II. Writers and Writings</th>
<th>III. Greek Words</th>
<th>IV. English and Latin Words</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>577</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>590</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION.

§ 1. THE AUTHOR.

As in the case of the other Gospels, the author is not named in the book itself. But two things may be regarded as practically certain, and a third as highly probable in itself and much more probable than any other hypothesis. (i.) The author of the Third Gospel is the author of the Acts. (ii.) The author of the Acts was a companion of S. Paul. (iii.) This companion was S. Luke.

(i.) The Author of the Third Gospel is the Author of the Acts.

This position is so generally admitted by critics of all schools that not much time need be spent in discussing it. Both books are dedicated to Theophilus. The later book refers to the former. The language and style and arrangement of the two books are so similar, and this similarity is found to exist in such a multitude of details (many of which are very minute), that the hypothesis of careful imitation by a different writer is absolutely excluded. The idea of minute literary analysis with a view to discover peculiarities and preferences in language was an idea foreign to the writers of the first two centuries; and no known writer of that age gives evidence of the immense skill which would be necessary in order to employ the results of such an analysis for the production of an elaborate imitation. To suppose that the author of the Acts carefully imitated the Third Gospel, in order that his work might be attributed to the Evangelist, or that the Evangelist carefully imitated the Acts, in order that his Gospel might be attributed to the author of the Acts, is to postulate a literary miracle. Such an idea would not have occurred to any one; and if it had, he would not have been able to execute it with such triumphant success as is conspicuous here. Any one who will underline in a few chapters of the Third Gospel the phrases, words, and constructions which are specially frequent in the book, and then underline the
same phrases, words, and constructions wherever they occur in the Acts, will soon have a strong conviction respecting the identity of authorship. The converse process will lead to a similar result. Moreover, the expressions which can be marked in this way by no means exhaust the points of similarity between the two books. There are parallels of description; e.g. about angelic appearances (comp. Lk. i. 11 with Acts xii. 7; Lk. i. 38 with Acts i. 11 and x. 7; Lk. ii. 9 and xxiv. 4 with Acts i. 10 and x. 30); and about other matters (comp. Lk. i. 39 with Acts i. 15; Lk. ii. 39 with Acts xiii. 29; Lk. iii. 8 with Acts xxvi. 20; Lk. xx. 1 with Acts iv. 1; Lk. xxi. 18 with Acts xxvii. 34; Lk. xxii. 35 with Acts xvi. 26; Lk. xxiii. 2 with Acts xxiv. 2–5; Lk. xxiv. 27 with Acts viii. 35). And there are parallels of arrangement. The main portion of the Gospel has three marked divisions: The Ministry in Galilee (iii. 1–ix. 50), between Galilee and Jerusalem (ix. 51–xix. 28), and in Jerusalem (xix. 29–xxiv. 11). And the main portion of the Acts has three marked divisions: Hebraic (ii.–v.), Transitional (vi.–xii.), and Gentile (xiii.–xxviii.). In the one case the movement is from Galilee through Samaria, etc. to Jerusalem; in the other from Jerusalem through Samaria, etc. to Rome. And in both cases there is an introduction connecting the main narrative with what precedes.

(ii.) The Author of Acts was a Companion of S. Paul.

A full discussion of this statement belongs to the commentary on the Acts rather than to the present volume: but the main points in the evidence must be noted here. It is perhaps no exaggeration to say that nothing in biblical criticism is more certain than this statement.

There are the “we” sections in which the writer uses the first person plural in describing journeys of S. Paul. This “we” is found in Codex Bezae as early as xi. 28 at Antioch, and may represent a true tradition without being the original reading. It appears certainly xvi. 10 at Troas and continues to Philippi (xvi. 17). Several years later it reappears at Philippi (xx. 5) and continues to Jerusalem (xxi. 18). Finally, it reappears at the departure for Italy (xxvii. 1) and continues to Rome (xxviii. 16).

1 J. Friedrich, Das Lukasevangelium und die Apostelgeschichte Werke desselben Verfassers, Halle a.S., 1890. The value of this useful pamphlet is somewhat lessened by want of care in sifting the readings. The argument as a whole stands; but the statistics on which it is based are often not exact.

2 For ἀναγνώστας δὲ ἐλς ἢ αὐτῶν D has οὐκ ἀναγνώστας δὲ ἢ μὲν ἢ δὲ ἢ αὐτῶν, reverenter tibi autem nobis est unus ex eis. This reading is also found in Augustine (De Serm. Dom. ii. 57 [xvii.]).
The "we" necessarily implies companionship, and may possibly represent a diary kept at the time. That the "we" sections are by the same hand as the rest of the book is shown by the simple and natural way in which they fit into the narrative, by the references in them to other parts of the narrative, and by the marked identity of style. The expressions which are so characteristic of this writer run right through the whole book. They are as frequent inside as outside the "we" sections, and no change of style can be noted between them and the rest of the treatise. The change of person is intelligible and truthlike, distinguishing the times when the writer was with the Apostle from the times when he was not: but there is otherwise no change of language. To these points must be added the fact that the author of the Acts is evidently a person of considerable literary powers, and the probability that a companion of S. Paul who possessed such powers would employ them in producing such a narrative as the Acts. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 29.

(iii.) The Companion of S. Paul who wrote the Acts and the Third Gospel was S. Luke.

Of the companions of S. Paul whose names are known to us no one is so probable as S. Luke; and the voice of the first eight centuries pronounces strongly for him and for no one else as the author of these two writings.

If antiquity were silent on the subject, no more reasonable conjecture could be made than "Luke the beloved physician." He fulfils the conditions. Luke was the Apostle's companion during both the Roman imprisonments (Col. iv. 14; Philem. 24; 2 Tim. iv. 11), and may well have been his companion at other times. That he is not mentioned in the earlier groups of Epistles is no objection; for none of them coincide with the "we" sections in the Acts. Moreover, the argument from medical language, although sometimes exaggerated, is solid and helpful. Both in the Acts and in the Third Gospel there are expressions which are distinctly medical; and there is also a good deal of language which is perhaps more common in medical writers than elsewhere. This feature does not amount to proof that the author was a physician; still less can it prove that, if the author was a physician, he must have been Luke. The Apostle might have had another medical companion besides the beloved physician. But, seeing that there is abundance of evidence that Luke was the writer of these two documents, the medical colour which is discernible here and there in the language of each of them is a valuable confirmation of the evidence which assigns the authorship of both to Luke.
For the voice of antiquity is not silent on the subject; and we are not left to conjecture. There is no need to argue whether Timothy, or Titus, or Silas, or some unnamed companion of the Apostle is more likely than S. Luke to have written these two books. The evidence, which is both abundant and strong, is wholly in favour of Luke. Until we reach the blundering statement in Photius near the end of the ninth century, there is no hint that any one ever thought of any person but Luke as the author of either treatise. Photius has this statement: “Some say that the writer of the Acts was Clement of Rome, others Barnabas, and others again Luke the Evangelist; but Luke himself decides the question, for at the beginning of his preface he mentions that another treatise containing the acts of the Lord had been composed by him” (Ampil. Qu. 123). Here he seems to be transferring to the Acts conjectures which had been made respecting the Epistle to the Hebrews. But at any rate the statement shows that the Third Gospel was regarded as unquestionably by Luke.

The Pauline authorship of Romans and Galatians is now commonly regarded as certain, and the critic who questions it is held to stultify himself. But is not the external evidence for the Lucan authorship of the Third Gospel and the Acts equally strong? If these are not named by any writer earlier than Irenæus, neither are those Epistles. And the silence of the Apostolic Fathers respecting the Third Gospel and the Acts is even more intelligible than their silence respecting Galatians and Romans, because the two former, being addressed to Theophilus, were in the first instance of the nature of private writings, and because, as regards the Gospel narrative, the oral tradition still sufficed. But from Irenæus onwards the evidence in all these cases is full and unwavering, and it comes from all quarters of the Christian world. And in considering this third point, the first point must be kept steadily in view, viz. the certainty that the Third Gospel and the Acts were written by one and the same person. Consequently all the evidence for either book singly is available for the other book. Every writer who attributes the Third Gospel to Luke thereby attributes the Acts to Luke and vice versa, whether he know anything about the second book or not. Thus in favour of Luke as the author of the Third Gospel we have three classes of witnesses viz. those who state that Luke wrote the Third Gospel, those who state that Luke wrote the Acts, and those who state that he wrote both treatises. Their combined testimony is very strong indeed; and there is nothing against it. At the opening of his commentary on the Acts, Chrysostom says that many in his day were ignorant of the authorship and even of the existence of the book (Migne, lx. 13). But that statement
creates no difficulty. Many could be found at the present day, even among educated Christians, who could not name the author of the Acts. And we have seen that the late and confused statement in Photius, whatever it may mean respecting the Acts, testifies to the universal conviction that the Third Gospel was written by Luke.

But we obtain a very imperfect idea of the early evidence in favour of the Third Gospel when we content ourselves with the statement that it is not attributed to Luke by any one before Irenæus and the Muratorian Fragment, which may be a little earlier than the work of Irenæus, but is probably a little later. We must consider the evidence of the existence of this Gospel previous to Irenæus; and also the manner in which he himself and those who immediately follow him speak of it as the work of S. Luke.

That Justin Martyr used the Third Gospel (or an authority which was practically identical with it) cannot be doubted. He gives a variety of particulars which are found in that Gospel alone; e.g. Elizabeth as the mother of the Baptist, the sending of Gabriel to Mary, the census under Quirinius, there being no room in the inn, His ministry beginning when Jesus was thirty years old, His being sent by Pilate to Herod, His last cry, "Father, into Thy hands I commend My spirit" (1 Apol. xxxiv.; Try. lxxvi., lxxxiii., c., ciii., cv., cvi.). Moreover, Justin uses expressions respecting the Agony, the Resurrection, and the Ascension which show that the Third Gospel is in his mind.

That his pupil Tatian possessed this Gospel is proved by the Diatessaron. See Hemphill, Diatessaron of Tatian, pp. 3 ff.

Celsus also knew the Third Gospel, for he knew that one of the genealogies made Jesus to be descended from the first man (Orig. Con. Cels. ii. 32).

The Clementine Homilies contain similarities which are probably allusions (iii. 63, 65, xi. 20, 23, xvii. 5, xviii. 16, xix. 2).

The Third Gospel was known to Basilides and Valentinus, and was commented upon by Heracleon (Clem. Alex. Strom. iv. 9, p. 596, ed. Potter).

Marcion adopted this Gospel as the basis for what he called the "Gospel of the Lord" or "Gospel of Christ." He omitted a good deal as being inconsistent with his own teaching, but he does not appear to have added anything. See § 7; also Wscct., Int. to Gospels, App. D; Sanday, Gospels in the Second Century, App.

In the Epistle of the Churches of Lyons and Vienne to the Churches in Asia there is a quotation of Lk. i. 6 (Eus. H.E. v. i. 9).

1 What Pseudo-Tert. says of Cerdo is perhaps a mere transfer to Cerdo of what is known of Marcion.
These instances, which are by no means exhaustive, may suffice as evidence for the early existence of the Third Gospel. It remains to notice the way in which Irenæus and his later contemporaries speak of the book. Irenæus, who represents the traditions of Asia Minor and Rome and Gaul in the second half of the second century, quotes it many times and quotes from nearly every chapter, especially from those which are wholly or in the main peculiar to this Gospel, e.g. i., ii., ix.–xix., xxiv. In a very remarkable passage he collects together many of the things which this Gospel alone narrates and definitely assigns them to Luke: “Now if any one reject Luke, as if he did not know the truth, he will manifestly be casting out the Gospel of which he claims to be a disciple. For very many and specially necessary elements of the Gospel we know through him, as the generation of John, the history of Zacharias, the coming of the angel to Mary,” etc. etc. (iii. 14. 3. Comp. iii. 10. 1, 22. 4, 12. 12, 14. 4, etc.). It will be observed that he does not contemplate the possibility of any one denying that Luke was the author. Those who may reject it will do so as thinking that Luke’s authority is inadequate; but the authorship is unquestioned.

Clement of Alexandria (A.D. 190–202) had had teachers from Greece, Egypt, Assyria, Palestine, and had received the tradition handed down from father to son from the Apostles (Strom. i. 1, p. 322, ed. Potter). He quotes the Gospel very frequently, and from many parts of it. He definitely assigns it to Luke (Strom. i. 21, p. 407, ed. Potter).

Tertullian (A.D. 190–220) speaks for the African Church. He not only quotes the Gospel frequently in his other works, but in his treatise against Marcion he works through the Gospel from ch. iv. to the end, often calling it Luke’s.

The Muratorian Fragment (A.D. 170–200) perhaps represents Rome. The first line of the mutilated Catalogue probably refers to S. Mark; but the next seven unquestionably refer to S. Luke, who is twice mentioned and is spoken of as medicus. (See Lft. on Supernatural Religion, p. 189.)

It would be waste of time to cite more evidence. It is manifest that in all parts of the Christian world the Third Gospel had been recognized as authoritative before the middle of the second century, and that it was universally believed to be the work of S. Luke. No one speaks doubtfully on the point. The possibility of questioning its value is mentioned; but not of questioning its authorship. In the literature of that period it would not be easy to find a stronger case. The authorship of the four great Epistles of S. Paul is scarcely more certain. In all these cases, as soon as we have sufficient material for arriving at a conclusion, the evidence is found to be all on one side and to be decisive. And exactly
the same result is obtained when the question is examined as to
the authorship of the Acts, as Bishop Lightfoot has shown (art.
"Acts" in D.B. 2). Both the direct and the indirect argument for
the Lucan authorship is very strong.

With this large body of historical evidence in favour of S. Luke
before us, confirmed as it is by the medical expressions in both
books, it is idle to search for another companion of S. Paul who
might have been the author. Timothy, Sopater, Aristarchus,
Secundus, Gaius, Tychicus, and Trophimus are all excluded by
Acts xx. 4, 5. And it is not easy to make Silas fit into the "we"
sections. Titus is possible: he can be included in the "we" and
the "us" without contradiction or difficulty. But what is gained
by this suggestion? Is a solution which is supported by no evi­
dence to be preferred to an intrinsically more probable solution,
which is supported by a great deal of evidence, and by evidence
which is as early as we can reasonably expect?

Those who neglect this evidence are bound to explain its
existence. Irenæus, Clement, and Tertullian, to say nothing of
other authorities, treat the Lucan authorship as a certainty. So far
as their knowledge extends, Luke is everywhere regarded as the
writer. How did this belief grow up and spread, if it was not
true? There is nothing in either treatise to suggest Luke, and he
is not prominent enough in Scripture to make him universally
acceptable as a conjecture. Those who wanted apostolic authority
for their own views would have made their views more conspicuous
in these books, and would have assigned the books to a person of
higher position and influence than the beloved physician, e.g. to
Timothy or Titus, if not to an Apostle. As Renan says, "There
is no very strong reason for supposing that Luke was not the
author of the Gospel which bears his name. Luke was not yet
sufficiently famous for any one to make use of his name, to give
authority to a book" (Les Évangiles, ch. xiii. p. 252, Eng. tr.
p. 132). "The placing of a celebrated name at the head of a
work . . . was in no way repugnant to the custom of the times.
But to place at the head of a document a false name and an
obscure one withal, that is inconceivable. . . . Luke had no place
in tradition, in legend, in history" (Les Apôtres, p. xvii., Eng. tr.

1 Even Jülicher still talks of "the silence of Papias" as an objection (Einl.
in das N. T. § 27, 3, Leipzig, 1894). In the case of a writer of whose work
only a few fragments are extant, how can we know what was not mentioned
in the much larger portions which have perished? The probabilities, in the
absence of evidence, are that Papias did write of Luke. But we are not quite
without evidence. In the "Hexaemeron" of Anastasius of Sinai is a passage in
which Papias is mentioned as an ancient interpreter, and in which Lk. x. 18 is
quoted in illustration of an interpretation. Possibly the illustration is borrowed
§ 2. S. LUKE THE EVANGELIST.

The name Lucas is probably an abbreviation of Lucanus, but possibly of Lucilius, or Lucius, or Lucianus. There is, however, no proof that Lucanus was shortened into Lucas. Nevertheless some of the oldest Latin MSS. (e.g. Corbeiensis and Vercellensis) have secundum Lucanum as the title of the Third Gospel. Lucas, like Apollos, Artemas, Demas, Hermas, and Nymphas, is a form not found in classical literature, whereas Lucanus is common in inscriptions. Lobeck has noticed that these contracted proper names in -ii> are common in the case of slaves (Patholog. Proleg. p. 506). Slaves were sometimes physicians, and S. Luke may have been a freedman. Antistius, the surgeon of Julius Caesar, and Antonius Musa, the physician of Augustus, were freedmen.

That Lucas=Lucanus is probable. But that Lucanus=Silvanus, because lucus=silva, and that therefore Luke and Silas are the same person (Van Vitren), looks like a caricature of critical ingenuity. Equally grotesque is the idea that Luke is the Aristion of Papias (Eus. H. E. iii. 39, 4, 5), because ἀπορεῖν=lucere (Lange).

Only in three places is Lk. named in Scripture; and it is worth noting that in all three of them the other Evangelist who is not an Apostle is named with him (Col. iv. 10, 14; Phil. 24; 2 Tim. iv. 11). These passages tell us that “the physician, the beloved one” (ὁ ἱατρὸς ὁ ἀγαπητὸς), was with S. Paul during the first Roman imprisonment, when the Epistles to the Colossians and to Philemon were written, and also during the second imprisonment, when 2 Timothy was written. Besides telling us that Luke was a physician very dear to the Apostle, they also tell us that he was his “fellow-worker” in spreading the Gospel. But apparently he was not his “fellow-prisoner.” In Col. iv. 10 Aristarchus is called συναχισμένος, and in Phil. 23 Epaphras is called such; but Lk. in neither place.

Almost all critics are agreed that in Col. iv. 14 Luke is that the preface to Papias shows that he was acquainted with the preface to Luke. Salmon is disposed to agree with him (Intr. p. 90, ed. 5).

1 The argument from the Greek form (that Δικαβρός, not Δοκαβρός, is the equivalent of Lucanus) is inconclusive. After about A.D. 50 forms in Δοκ- begin to take the place of forms in Δικ-.

2 Comp. Annas for Ananus; Apollos for Apollonius (Codex Bezae, Acts xviii. 24); Artemas for Artemidorus (Tit. iii. 12; Mart. v. 40); Cleopas for Cleopatros; Demas for Demetrius, Demarchus for Demaratus, Nymphas for Nymphodorus, Zenas for Zenodorus, and possibly Hermas for Hermodorus. For other examples see Win. xvi. 5, p. 127; Lf. on Col. iv. 15; Chandler, Grk. Accent. § 34.

3 Marcion omitted these words, perhaps because he thought that an Evangelist ought not to devote himself to anything so contemptible as the human body (Texte und Unters. viii. 4, p. 40).
separated from "those of the circumcision," and therefore was a Gentile Christian. Hofmann, Tiele, and Wittichen have not succeeded in persuading many persons that the passage does not necessarily imply this. Whether he was a Jewish proselyte before he was a Christian must remain uncertain: his knowledge of Jewish affairs and his frequent Hebraisms are no proof. That he was originally a heathen may be regarded as certain. He is the only one of the Evangelists who was of Gentile origin; and, with the exception of his companion S. Paul, and possibly of Apollos, he was the only one among the first preachers of the Gospel who had had scientific training.

If Luke was a Gentile, he cannot be identified with Lucius, who sends a salutation from Corinth to Rome (Rom. xvi. 21). This Lucius was Paul's kinsman, and therefore a Jew. The identification of Luke with Lucius of Cyrene (Acts xiii. 1) is less impossible. But there is no evidence, and we do not even know that Lucas was ever used as an abbreviation of Lucius. In Apost. Const. vi. r8. 5 Luke is distinguished from Lucius. Nor can he be identified with Silas or Silvanus, who was evidently a Jew (Acts xv. 22). Nor can a Gentile have been one of the Seventy, a tradition which seems to have been adopted by those who made Lk. x. r-7 the Gospel for S. Luke's Day. The tradition probably is based solely on the fact that Luke alone records the Mission of the Seventy (Epiph. Hær. ii. 5i. 11, Migne, xli. 908). The same reason is fatal to Theophylact's attractive guess, which still finds advocates, that Lk. was the unnamed companion of Cleopas in the walk to Emmaus (xxiv. 13), who was doubtless a Jew (vv. 27, 32). The conjecture that Luke was one of the Greek proselytes who applied to Philip to be introduced to Christ shortly before His Passion (Jn. xii. 20) is another conjecture which is less impossible, but is without evidence. In common with some of the preceding guesses it is open to the objection that Luke, in the preface to his Gospel, separates himself from those "who from the beginning were eye-witnesses and ministers of the word" (i. 2). The Seventy, these Greeks, and the companion of Cleopas were eye-witnesses, and Lk. was not. In the two latter cases it is possible to evade this objection by saying that Luke means that he was not an eye-witness from the beginning, although at the end of Christ's ministry he became such. But this is not satisfactory. He claims to be believed because of the accuracy of his researches among the best

1 Of the six who send greetings, the first three (Aristarchus, Mark, Jesus Justus) are doubly bracketed together: (1) as ol ὄντες ἐκ περιτομῆς, (2) as μόνον συνεργοὶ εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ, i.e. the only Jewish converts in Rome who loyally supported S. Paul. The second three (Epaphras, Luke, Demas) are not bracketed together. In Philem. 23 Epaphras is συναγασμένος, and Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke are ol συνεργοὶ μου, while Justus is not mentioned.
authorities. Had he himself been an eye-witness of any portion, would he not have let us know this? Why did he not use the first person, as in the “we” sections in the Acts? He belongs to the second generation of Christians, not to the first.

It is, however, possible that Chrysostom and the Collect for S. Luke’s Day are right in identifying “the brother whose praise in the Gospel is spread through all the Churches” (2 Cor. viii. 18) with S. Luke. But the conjectures respecting this unnamed brother are endless; and no more can be affirmed than that Luke is a reasonable conjecture.

The attempt to show that the writer of the Third Gospel and the Acts is a Jew is a failure; and the suggestion that he is S. Paul is absurd. See below (§ 5) for evidence that our Evangelist is a Gentile writing for Gentiles.

Besides the three passages in the Pauline Epistles and the preface to the Gospel, there are three passages of Scripture which tell us something about S. Luke, viz. the “we” sections. The first of these (Acts xvi. 10-17) tells us that during the second missionary journey Luke accompanied Paul from Troas to Philippi (A.D. 51 or 52), and thus brings the physician to the Apostle about the time when his distressing malady (2 Cor. xii. 7) prostrated him in Galatia, and thereby led to the conversion of the Galatians (Gal. iv. 13-15). Even without this coincidence we might believe that the relation of doctor to patient had something to do with drawing Luke to the afflicted Apostle, and that in calling him “the physician, the beloved one,” the Apostle is not distinguishing him from some other Luke, but indicating the way in which the Evangelist earned his gratitude. The second section (xx. 5-xxi. 18) tells us that about six years later (A.D. 58), during the third missionary journey, Luke was again at Philippi with Paul, and went with him to Jerusalem to confer with James and the elders. And the third (xxvii. 1-xxviii. 16) shows that he was with him during the voyage and shipwreck until the arrival in Rome.

With these meagre notices of him in the N.T. our knowledge of Luke ends. We see him only when he is at the side of his magister and illuminator (Tertull. Adv. Marcion. iv. 2) S. Paul. That he was with the Apostle at other times also we can hardly doubt,—inseparabilis fuit a Paulo, says Irenæus: but how often he was with him, and in each case for how long a time, we have no means of knowing. Tertullian perhaps means us to understand that Luke was converted to the Gospel by Paul, and this is in itself probable enough. And it is not improbable that it was at Tarsus,

1 Renan conjectures that Luke was a native of Philippi. Ramsay takes the same view, suggesting that the Macedonian whom S. Paul saw in a vision (Acts xvi. 9) was Luke himself, whom he had just met for the first time at Troas (S. Paul the Traveller, p. 202).
where there was a school of philosophy and literature rivalling those of Alexandria and Athens (Strabo, xiv. 5. 13), that they first met. Luke may have studied medicine at Tarsus. Nowhere else in Asia Minor could he obtain so good an education: φιλοσοφίαν καὶ τ. ἀληθὴν παιδείαν ἐγκύκλιον ἀπασαν (L.c.). Our earliest authorities appear to know little or nothing beyond what can be found in Scripture or inferred from it (Iren. i. 1, 10. 1, 14. 1-4, 15. 1, 22. 3; Canon Murator. sub init.; Clem. Alex. Strom. v. 12 sub fin.; Tert. Adv. Marcion. iv. 2). Nor can much that is very trustworthy be gleaned from later writers. The statement of Eusebius (H. E. iii. 4. 7) and of Jerome (De vir. ill. vii.), which may possibly be derived from Julius Africanus (Harnack, Texte und Unters. viii. 4, p. 39), and is followed by Theophylact, Euthymius Zigabenus, and Nicephorus, that Luke was by family of Antioch in Syria, is perhaps only an inference from the Acts. Ἀντιοχεῖα ἀπὸ τοῦ μὲν γένους ἄν τῶν ἀπ' Ἀντιοχείας (Eus.) need not mean more than that Luke had a family connexion with Antioch; but it hardly "amounts to an assertion that Luke was not an Antiochian." Jerome says expressly Lucas medicus Antiochensis. This is probable in itself and is confirmed by the Acts. Of only one of the deacons are we told to which locality he belonged, "Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch" (vi. 5) ¹: and we see elsewhere that the writer was well acquainted with Antioch and took an interest in it (xi. 19-27, xiii. 1, xiv. 19, 21, 26, xv. 22, 23, 30, 35, xviii. 22).

Epiphanius states that Luke "preached in Dalmatia and Gallia, in Italy and Macedonia, but first in Gallia, as Paul says of some of his companions, in his Epistles, Crescens in Gallia, for we are not to read in Galatia, as some erroneously think, but in Gallia" (Hmr. ii. 51. 11, Migne, xii. 908); and Oecumenius says that Luke went from Rome to preach in Africa. Jerome believes that his bones were translated to Constantinople, ² and others give Achaia or Bithynia as the place of his death. Gregory Nazianzen, in giving an off-hand list of primitive martyrs—Stephen, Peter, Andrew, etc.—places Luke among them (Orat. adv. Jul. i. 79). None of these statements are of any value.

The legend which makes Luke a painter is much more ancient than is sometimes represented. Nicephorus Callistus (H. E. ii. 43) in the fourteenth century is by no means the earliest authority for it. Omitting Simeon Metaphrastes (c. A.D. 1100) as doubtful, the Menology of the Emperor Basil ii., drawn up A.D. 980, represents

¹ It has been noted that of eight narratives of the Russian campaign of 1812, three English, three French, and two Scotch, only the last (Alison and Scott) state that the Russian General Barclay de Tolly was of Scotch extraction.

² His words are: Sepultus est Constantinopolii [vixit octoginta et quatuor annos, uxorem non habens] ad quam urbem vicecimo Constantii anno ossa ejus cum reliquis. Andrew apostoli transla. sunt [de Achaia]. The words in brackets are not genuine, but are sometimes quoted as such. The first insertion is made in more than one place in De vir. ill. vii.
S. Luke as painting the portrait of the Virgin. The oldest witness, however, is Theodorus Lector, reader in the Church of Constantinople in the sixth century. Some place him as late as the eighth century; but the name is common, and between A.D. 500 and 800 there may have been many readers of that name at Constantinople. He says that the Empress Eudoxia found at Jerusalem a picture of the Θεομνήμινπ painted by Luke the Apostle, and sent it to Constantinople as a present to her daughter Pulcheria, wife of Theodosius II. (Collectan. i. 7, Migne, Patr. Gr. lxxxvi. 165). In 1204 this picture was brought to Venice. In the Church of S. Maria Maggiore at Rome, in the Capella Paolina, is a very ancient picture of the Virgin ascribed to S. Luke. It can be traced back to A.D. 847, and may be still older. ¹ But although no such legend seems to be known to Augustine, for he says, neque novimus faciem virginis Mariæ (De Trin. viii. 5. 7), yet it is many centuries older than Nicephorus (Kraus, Real-Enc. d. Christ. Alt. ii. p. 344, which quotes Glückselig, Christus-Archäol. 101; Grimouard de S. Laurent, Guide de l'art chrét. iii. 15-20). And the legend has a strong element of truth. It points to the great influence which Luke has had upon Christian art, of which in a real sense he may be called the founder. The Shepherd with the Lost Sheep on His shoulders, one of the earliest representations of Christ, comes from Lk. xv (Tert. De Pud. vii. and x.): and both medieval and modern artists have been specially fond of representing those scenes which are described by S. Luke alone: the Annunciation, the Visit of Mary to Elizabeth, the Shepherds, the Manger, the Presentation in the Temple, Symeon and Anna, Christ with the Doctors, the Woman at the Supper of Simon the Pharisee, Christ weeping over Jerusalem, the Walk to Emmaus, the Good Samaritan, the Prodigal Son. Many other scenes which are favourites with painters might be added from the Acts. See below, § 6. i. d.

The four symbolical creatures mentioned in Ezek. i. and Rev. iv., the Man, the Lion, the Ox, and the Eagle, are variously explained by different writers from Irenæus (iii. 11. 8) downwards. But all agree in assigning the Ox or Calf to S. Luke. “This sacerdotal animal implies Atonement and Propitiation; and this exactly corresponds with what is supposed to be the character of St. Luke’s Gospel, as one which more especially conveys mercy to the Penitent. . . . It begins with the Priest, dwelling on the Priestly family of the Baptist; and ends with the Victim, in our Lord’s death.” (Isaac Williams, On the Study of the Gospels, Pt. I. sect. vi.)

¹ For an interesting account of this famous picture, and of others attributed to the Evangelist, see The Madonna of St. Luke, by H. I. Bolton, Putnam, 1895.
§ 3. THE SOURCES OF THE GOSPEL.

The idea of a special revelation to the Evangelist is excluded by the prologue to the Gospel; his narrative is the result of careful enquiry in the best quarters. But (a) which “eye-witnesses and ministers of the word” were his principal informants, (b) whether their information was mostly oral or documentary, (c) whether it was mostly in Aramaic or in Greek, are questions about which he is silent. Internal evidence, however, will carry us some way in finding an answer to them.

(a) During a large portion of the time in which he was being prepared, and was consciously preparing himself, for writing a Gospel, he was constantly with S. Paul; and we may be sure that it was among S. Paul’s companions and acquaintances that Luke obtained much of his information. It is probable that in this way he became acquainted with some of the Twelve, with other disciples of Christ, and with His Mother and brethren. He certainly was acquainted with S. Mark, who was perhaps already preparing material for his own Gospel when he and S. Luke were with the Apostle in Rome (Col. iv. 10, 14; Philem. 24). S. Paul himself could tell Luke only that which he himself received (1 Cor. xv. 3); but he could help him to first-hand information. While the Apostle was detained in custody at Caesarea, Luke would be able to do a good deal of investigation, and as a physician he would perhaps have access to people of position who could help him.

(b) In discussing the question whether the information was given chiefly in an oral or a documentary form, we must remember that the difference between oral tradition and a document is not great, when the oral tradition has become stereotyped by frequent repetition. A document cannot have much influence on a writer who already knows its contents by heart. Luke tells us that many documents were already in existence, when he decided to write; and it is improbable that he made no use of these. Some of his sources were certainly documents, e.g. the genealogy (iii. 23–38); and we need not doubt that the first two chapters are made up of written narratives, of which we can see the conclusions at i. 80, ii. 40, and ii. 52. The early narrative (itself perhaps not primary), of which all three Synoptists make use, and which constitutes the main portion of S. Mark’s Gospel, was probably already in writing when Jk. made use of it. S. Luke may have had the Second Gospel itself, pretty nearly in the form in which we have it, and may include the author of it among the πολλοὶ (i. 1). But some phenomena are rather against this. Luke omits (vi. 5) “the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath” (Mk. ii. 27). He omits the whole of Mk. vi. 45–viii. 9, which contains
the digression into the borders of Tyre and Sidon and the incident with the Syrophoenician woman, which is also in Matthew (xv. 21-28). And all this would have been full of interest to Luke’s Gentile readers. That he had our First Gospel is much less probable. There is so much that he would have been likely to appropriate if he had known it, that the omission is most easily explained by assuming that he did not know it. He omits the visit of the Gentile Magi (Mt. ii. 1-15). At xx. 17 he omits “Therefore I say to you, The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof” (Mt. xxi. 43). At xxi. 12-16 he omits “And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations” (Mt. xxiv. 14; comp. Mk. xiii. 10). Comp. the omission of Mt. xvii. 6, 7 at Lk. ix. 35, of Mt. xvii. 19, 20 at Lk. ix. 43, of Cesarea Philippi (Mt. xvi. 13; Mk. viii. 27) at Lk. ix. 18; and see p. xlii. Both to S. Luke and his readers such things would have been most significant. Again, would Luke have left the differences between his own Gospel and that of Matthew as they are, if he had been aware of them? Contrast Mt. ii. 14, 15 with Lk. ii. 39, Mt. xxviii. 7, 10, 16 with Lk. xxiv. 49; and generally mark the differences between the narratives of the Nativity and of the Resurrection in these two Gospels, the divergences in the two genealogies, the “eight days” (Lk.) and the “six days” (Mt. and Mk.) at the Transfiguration, and the perplexing phenomena in the Sermon on the Mount. These points lead us to the conclusion that Lk. was not familiar with our First Gospel, even if he knew it at all. But, besides the early narrative, which seems to have been nearly coextensive with our Second Gospel, Matthew and Luke used the same collection, or two similar collections, of “Oracles” or “Sayings of the Lord”; and hence the large amount of matter, chiefly discourses, which is common to Matthew and Luke, but is not found in Mark. This collection, however, can hardly have been a single document, for the common material is used very differently by the two Evangelists, especially as regards arrangement. 1 A Book of “Oracles” must not be hastily assumed.

In addition to these two main sources, (x) the narrative of events, which he shares with Matthew and Mark, and (2) the collection of discourses, which he shares with Matthew; and besides (3) the smaller documents about the Infancy incorporated in the first two chapters, which are peculiar to himself,—Luke

1 There are a few passages which are common to Mark and Luke, but are not found in Matthew: the Demoniac (Mk. i. 32-38 = Lk. iv. 33-37); the Journey in Galilee (Mk. i. 35-39 = Lk. iv. 42-44); the Request of the Demoniac (Mk. v. 18 = Lk. viii. 38); the Complaint of John against the Caster out of Demons (Mk. ix. 38 = Lk. ix. 49); the Spices brought to the Tomb (Mk. xvi. 1 = Lk. xxiv. 1). Are these the result of the time when S. Mark and S. Luke were together (Col. iv. 10, 14; Philem. 24)?
evidently had (4) large sources of information respecting the Ministry, which are also peculiar to himself. These are specially prominent in chapters ix. to xix. and in xxiv. But it must not be forgotten that the matter which S. Luke alone gives us extends over the whole range of Christ's life, so far as we have any record of it. It is possible that some of these sources were oral, and it is probable that one of them was connected with the court of Herod (iii. 1, 19, viii. 3, ix. 7-9, xiii. 31, xxiii. 7-12; Acts xiii. 1). But we shall probably not be wrong if we conjecture that most of this material was in writing before Luke made use of it.

It is, however, begging the question to talk of an "Ebionitic source." First, is there any Ebionism in S. Luke? And secondly, does what is called Ebionism in him come from a portion of his materials, or wholly from himself? That Luke is profoundly impressed by the contrasts between wealth and poverty, and that, like S. James, he has great sympathy with the suffering poor and a great horror of the temptations which beset all the rich and to which many succumb, is true enough. But this is not Ebionism. He nowhere teaches that wealth is sinful, or that rich men must give away all their wealth, or that the wealthy may be spoiled by the poor. In the parable of Dives and Lazarus, which is supposed to be specially Ebionitic, the rich Abraham is in bliss with the beggar, and Lazarus neither denounces on earth the superfluity of Dives, nor triumphs in Hades over the reversal of positions. The strongest saying of Christ against wealth, "It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God" is in Matthew (xix. 24) and Mark (x. 25) as well as in Luke (xviii. 25). So also is the story of Peter and Andrew, James and John leaving their means of life and following Christ (Mt. iv. 18-22; Mk. i. 16-20; Lk. v. 1-11). So also is the story of Matthew or Levi leaving his lucrative calling to follow Christ (Mt. ix. 9; Mk. ii. 14; Lk. v. 27, 28). In both these cases Luke expressly states that they forsook all (v. 11, 28), which, however, is sufficiently clear from the other narratives. In the story about Zacchaeus, which is peculiar to Luke, this head taxcollector retains half his great wealth, and there is no hint that he ought to have surrendered the whole of it. Elsewhere we find touches in the other Gospels which are not in Luke, but which would no doubt have been considered Ebionitic, if they had been found in Luke and not in the others. Thus, in the description of the Baptist, it is Matthew (iii. 4) and Mark (i. 6) who tell us of John's ascetic clothing and food, about which Luke is silent. In the parable of the Sower it is the others (Mt. xiii. 22; Mk. iv. 19) who speak of "the deceitfulness of riches," while Luke (viii. 14) has simply "riches." It is they who record (Mt. xix. 29; Mk. x. 29) that Christ spoke of the blessedness of leaving relations and pro-
pery (ἀγρούς) for His sake, where Luke (xviii. 29) omits ἀγρούς. He alone preserves Christ's declaration that he who sits at meat is superior to him who serves (xxii. 27), and there is no hint that to have servants is wrong. While the others tell us that Joseph of Arimathæa was a man of rank (Mk. xv. 43) and wealth (Mt. xxviL 57), Luke is much more explicit than they are about his goodness and rectitude (xxiii. 50, 51), which does not look like prejudice against the rich. And it is Luke alone who tells us of the women, presumably well-to-do, who "ministered unto them of their substance" (viii. 3). To which may perhaps be added the fact that in the quotation from Ps. cvii. 10 in Lk. i. 79 those "fast bound in poverty" (πτωχεύω) are omitted. Throughout the Third Gospel there is a protest against worldliness; but there is no protest against wealth. And there is no evidence that the protest against worldliness is due to some particular source from which he drew, and from which the others did not draw. Rather it is something in the writer himself, being apparent in the Acts, as well as in the Gospel; and it shows itself, sometimes in what he selects from his materials, sometimes in the way in which he treats it. As Jülicher says, *Man hat von dem ebionitischen charakter dieses Evang. gesprochen und nach den judi'schen Einflussen oder Quellen gesucht: sehr mit Unrecht. . . Von tendenziöser Ebionitisierung des Evangeliums kann bei ihm nicht die Rede sein* (Einf. § 27, p. 206).

(2) Frequent Hebraisms indicate that a great deal of Luke's material was originally in Aramaic. These features are specially common in the first two chapters. In translating Aramaic sources Luke would have ample opportunity for exhibiting his own predilection for certain words, phrases, and constructions. If the materials were already in Greek when Luke made use of them, then he could and did somewhat alter the wording in appropriating them. But it will generally be found that wherever the expressions which are characteristic of him are less frequent than usual, there we have come upon material which is common to him and the others, and which he has adopted without much alteration. Thus the parable of the Sower (viii. 4–15) has few marks of his style (ἐν μέσῳ, ver. 7; δ λόγος τοῦ Ἱσχοῦ, ver. 11; δέχονται and ἀφίστανται, ver. 13) which are not also in Mt. (τοῦ σπαραί, ver. 5) or in both (ἐν τῷ σπείρεω, ver. 5). But absence or scarcity of Luke's characteristics is most common in those reports of discourses which are common to him and Matthew: *e.g.* iii. 7–9, 17 = Mt. iii. 7–10, 12; vii. 6–9 = Mt. viii. 8–10; ix. 57, 58 = Mt. viii. 19, 20; vii. 22–28 = Mt. xi. 4–11; vii. 31–35 = Mt. xi. 16–19. This last passage is one of those which were excised by Marcion. As we might expect, there is much more variation between the Gospels in narrating the same facts than in reporting the same sayings;
and the greater the variation, the greater the room for marks of individual style. But we cannot doubt that an immense amount of what Luke has in common with Matthew, or with both him and Mark, was already in a Greek form before he adopted it. It is incredible that two or three independent translations should agree quite or almost word for word.

It is very interesting to notice how, in narratives common to all three, individual characteristics appear: e.g. viii. 22-56 = Mk. iv. 35-41, v. 1-43 = Mt. viii. 23-34, ix. 18-25. These narratives swarm with marks of Luke's style, although he keeps closely to the common material (see below, § 6. ii.). Thus he has εἶπεν πρὸς αὐτούς, ἐπιστάτα, δέομαι σοι, ἐξελθεῖν ἀπό, ἰκανός, ἐδέστο αὐτοῦ, σῶν, ὑπόστρεφε, παρὰ τοῦ πόθα, παραχωρήμα, etc., where Mark has λέγει αὐτούς, διδάσκαλε, ὁρκίζω σε, ἐξελθεῖν ἐκ, μέγας, παρεκάλει αὐτῶν, μετά, ὑπαγε, πρὸς τοὺς πόθας, εἰθής, etc. Moreover Luke has ἐν τῷ c. ἵππῳ, καὶ οὖν, καὶ αὐτοὺς, ὑπάρχει, πᾶς ο ἄπας, μονογενὴς, etc., where the others have nothing. The following examples will repay examination: iv. 38-41 = Mk. i. 29-34 = Mt. viii. 14-17; v. 12-16 = Mk. i. 40-45 = Mt. viii. 1-4; v. 17-26 = Mk. ii. 1-12 = Mt. ix. 1-8; ix. 10-17 = Mk. vi. 30-44 = Mt. xiv. 13-21; ix. 38-40 = Mk. ix. 17, 18 = Mt. xvii. 15, 16; and many others. It is quite evident that in appropriating material Luke works it over with his own touches, and sometimes almost works it up afresh; and this is specially true of the narrative portion of the Gospel.

It is impossible to reach any certain conclusion as to the amount of material which he had at his disposal. Some suppose that this was very large, and that he has given us only a small portion of it, selected according to the object which he is supposed to have had in view, polemical, apologetic, conciliatory, or historical. Others think that his aim at completeness is too conspicuous to allow us to suppose that he rejected anything which he believed to be authentic. Both these views are probably exaggerations. No doubt there are cases in which he deliberately omits what he knew well and did not question. And the reason for omission may have been either that he had recorded something very similar, or that the incident would be less likely to interest or edify Gentile readers. No doubt there are other cases in which the most natural explanation of the omission is ignorance: he does not record because he does not know. We know of a small amount which Mark alone records; of a considerable amount which Matthew alone records; of a very considerable amount which John alone records; and of an enormous amount (Jn. xxi. 25) which no one records. To suppose that Luke knew the great part of this, and yet passed it over, is an improbable hypothesis. And to suppose that he knew scarcely any of it, is also improbable. But a definite estimate cannot be made.
The statement that Luke avoids duplicates on principle has been made and accepted too hastily. It is quite possible that he has deliberately omitted some things, because of their similarity to others which he has recorded. It is possible that he has omitted the feeding of the 4000, because he has recorded the feeding of the 5000; and the anointing by Mary of Bethany, because of the anointing by the sinner; and the healing of the Syrophoenician's daughter at a distance, because of the centurion's servant at a distance; and the cursing of the barren fig-tree, because of the parable of the same; and the mocking by Pilate's soldiers, because of the mocking by Herod's soldiers. But in many, or even most, of these cases some other motive may have caused the omission. On the other hand, we must look at the doublets and triplets which he has admitted. If he made it a rule to exclude duplicates, the exceptions are more numerous than the examples, and they extend all through the Gospel.

The Mother of the Christ has a song (i. 46 ff.), and the father of the Baptist has a song (68 ff.). The venerable Simeon welcomes the infant Christ in the temple (ii. 28), and so does the venerable Anna (38). Levi the publican is converted and entertains Jesus (v. 27 ff.), and Zaccheus the publican also (xix. 1 ff.). The mission of the Twelve (ix. 1) is followed by the mission of the Seventy (x. 1). True disciples are equal to Christ's relations (viii. 21), and to His Mother (xi. 28). Twice there is a dispute as to who is the greatest (ix. 46, xii. 24). Not content with the doublets which he has in common with Mt. (viii. 19–22, ix. 16, 17, xxiv. 40, 41), he adds a third instance (ix. 61, 62, v. 39, xviii. 36?); or where Mt. has only one example (xxiv. 37–39), he gives two (xvii. 26–29). So also in the miracles. We have the widow's son raised (vii. 14), and also Jairus' daughter (viii. 54), where no other Evangelist gives more than one example. There are two instances of cleansing lepers (v. 13, xvii. 14); two of forgiving sins (v. 20, vii. 48); three healings on the sabbath (vi. 6, xiii. 10, xiv. 1); four castings out of demons (iv. 35, viii. 29, ix. 42, xi. 14). Similar repetition is found in the parables. The Rash Builder is followed by the Rash King (xiv. 28–32), the Lost Sheep by the Lost Coin (xv. 1–10); and the Friend at Midnight (xi. 5) does not involve the omission of the Unrighteous Judge (xviii. 1). The exceptions to the supposed principle are still more numerous in the shorter sayings of Christ: viii. 16 = xi. 33; viii. 17 = xii. 2; viii. 18 = xix. 26; ix. 23 = xiv. 27; ix. 24 = xvii. 33; ix. 26 = xii. 9; x. 25 = xviii. 18; xi. 43 = xx. 46; xii. 11, 12 = xxxi. 14, 15; xiv. 11 = xvii. 14; xix. 44 = xxi. 6; and comp. xvii. 31 with xxi. 21, and xxi. 23 with xxiii. 29. These instances, which are not exhaustive, suffice to show that the Evangelist cannot have had any very strong objection to recording duplicate instances of similar inci-
§ 4.] TIME AND PLACE xxix
dents and sayings. Could more duplicates be found in any other Gospel?


See especially Sanday in Book by Book, 1893, p. 345 ff.; in Dict. of the Bible, 2nd ed. 1893, supplement to the article on "Gospels," pp. 1217-1243; and in the Expositor, 4th series, Feb. to June, 1891.

§ 4. TIME AND PLACE.

(i.) It is a disappointment that Bishop Lightfoot's admirable article on the Acts (D.B.² i. pp. 25-43) does not discuss the Date. The Bishop told the present writer that he regarded the question of date as the province of the writer of the article on S. Luke, an article which has not yet been rewritten. The want has, however, been to a large extent supplied in the Bampton Lectures for 1893 (Lect. vi.), and we may safely accept this guidance.

The main theories respecting the date of the Third Gospel contend respectively for a time in or near the years A.D. 100, A.D. 80, and A.D. 63.

(a) The strongest argument used by those who advocate a date near the close of the first century or early in the second is the hypothesis that the author of the Third Gospel and of the Acts had read the Antiquities of Josephus, a work published about A.D. 94. But this hypothesis, if not absolutely untenable, is highly improbable. The coincidences between Luke and Josephus are not greater than might accidentally occur in persons writing independently about the same facts; while the divergences are so great as to render copying improbable. At any rate Josephus must not be used both ways. If the resemblances are made to prove that Luke copied Josephus, then the discrepancies should not be employed to prove that Luke's statements are erroneous. If Luke had a correct narrative to guide him, why did he diverge from it only to make blunders? It is much more reasonable to suppose that where Luke differs from the Antiquities he had independent knowledge, and that he had never read Josephus. Moreover, where the statements of either can be tested, it is Luke who is commonly found to be accurate, whereas Josephus is often

¹ Among these are Baur, Davidson, Hilgenfeld, Jacobsen, Pfeiderer, Overbeck, Schwögrler, Scholten, Volkmar, Weizsäcker, Wittichen, and Zeller. The more moderate of these suggest A.D. 95-105, the more extreme A.D. 120-135.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE


The relation of Luke to Josephus has recently been rediscussed; on the one side by Clemen (Die Chronologie der paulin. Briefe, Halle, 1893) and Krenkel (Josephus und Lukas; der schriftstellerische Einfluss des jüdischen Geschichtsschreibers auf den christlichen, Leipzig, 1894), who regard the use of Josephus by Luke as certain; on the other by Belser (Theol. Quartalschrift, Tübingen, 1895, 1896), who justly criticizes the arguments of these writers and especially of Krenkel. It is childish to point out that Luke, like Josephus, uses such words as ἀποκάλυψις, ἀποστέλλειν, αὐξάνειν, παύειν, τέμπειν, τύλη, κ.τ.λ., in their usual sense: and such phrases as προδότην τῷ σοφίᾳ καὶ δυνάμει (Lk. ii. 52) and έλεον πάντες οἱ ἀκούντες αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τῷ σώματι καὶ ταῖς ἀποκλίσεωις αὐτοῦ (ii. 47) are not strikingly similar to εἰς μεγάλην παιδεία προδότην ἐπίσκεψα (Jos. Vita, 2) and θαυμάσας τὴν ἀπόκρισιν αὐτοῦ σόφην οὐδεμισθεὶς (Ant. xii. 4, 9). Far more striking resemblances may be found in writings which are indisputably independent. Luke alone in N.T. calls the Sea of Galilee ἤμισυς Γεννησαρέτ. Could he not call it a λίμνη without being prompted? Josephus also calls it a λίμνη, but his designations all differ from Luke's: Γεννησαρήδης λίμνη, λ. Γεννησαριτῆς, λ. Γεννησαρίτης (B. J. ii. 20, 6, iii. 10, 7; Ant. xviii. 2, 1; Vita, 65), and other variations. Luke has προσέπεσεν τοῖς γόνασιν Ἰησοῦ (v. 8), and Josephus has τοῖς γόνασιν αὐτοῦ προσέπεσεν (Ant. xiii. 3, 4). But Josephus more often writes προσπέπτειν των πρὸς τὰ γόνατα, and the more frequent phrase would more probably have been borrowed. Comp. συνεχομένη πυρετῷ μεγάλῳ (Lk. iv. 38) with τεταρταλὼ πυρέτῳ συνεχεῖσθαι (Ant. xiii. 15, 5); μή μετευπέρεθε (xii. 29) with Ant. xvi. 4, 6, sub fin. (where, however, μετευπέρησε is the more probable reading); ἀραυκαῖς ἐγένετο ἀπὸ αὐτῶν (xxiv. 31) with ἀραυκάς ἐγένετο (Ant. xx. 8, 6). In these and many other cases the hypothesis of copying is wholly unwarranted. The expressions are not very uncommon. Some of them perhaps are the result of both Luke and Josephus being familiar with LXX. Others are words or constructions which are the common material of various Greek writers. Indeed, as Belser has shown, a fair ease may be made out to show the influence of Thucydides on Luke. In a word, the theory that Luke had read Josephus "rests on little more than the fact that both writers relate or allude to the same events, though the differences between them are really more marked than the resemblances" (Sanday, Bampton Lectures, 1893, p. 278). As Schürer and Salmon put it, if Luke had read Josephus, he must very quickly have forgotten all that he read in him. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 30.

In itself, the late date A.D. 100 is not incredible, even for those who are convinced that the writer is Luke, and that he never read Josephus. Luke may have been quite a young man, well under thirty, when he first joined S. Paul, A.D. 50–52; and he may have been living and writing at the beginning of the second century. But the late date has nothing to recommend it; and we may believe that both his writings would have assumed a different form, had they been written as late as this. Would not ὁ Χριστός, which is still a title and means "the Messiah" (ii. 26, iii. 15, iv. 41, ix. 20, xx. 41, xxii. 67, xxiii. 35, 39, xxiv. 26, 46), have become a

proper name, as in the Epistles? Would not ὁ Κύριος, as a designation of Jesus Christ, have been still more frequent? It is not found in Matthew or Mark (excepting in the disputed appendix); but it is the invariable designation in the Gospel of Peter. In Luke (vii. 13, x. 1, xi. 39, xii. 42, xiii. 15, xvii. 5, 6, xviii. 6, xix. 8, xxi. 61, xxiv. 34) and in John this use is beginning, but it is still exceptional. Above all, would xxii. 32 have stood as it does, at a date when "this generation" had "passed away" without seeing the Second Advent? Moreover, the historical atmosphere of the Acts is not that of A.D. 95-135. In the Acts the Jews are the persecutors of the Christians; at this late date the Jews were being persecuted themselves. Lastly, what would have induced a companion of S. Paul, whether Luke or not, to wait so long before publishing the results of his researches? Opportunities of contact with those who had been eye-witnesses would have been rapidly vanishing during the last twenty years.

(b) The intermediate date of A.D. 75-80 has very much more to recommend it. It avoids the difficulties just mentioned. It accounts for the occasional but not yet constant use of ὁ Κύριος to designate Jesus. It accounts for the omission of the very significant hint, "let him that readeth understand" (Mk. xiii. 14; Mt. xxiv. 15). When the first two Gospels (or the materials common to both) were compiled, the predicted dangers had not yet come but were near; and each of these Evangelists warns his readers to be on the alert. When the Third Gospel was written, these dangers were past. It accounts for the greater definiteness of the prophecies respecting the destruction of Jerusalem as given by Luke (xix. 43, 44, xxi. 10-24), when compared with the records of them in Mark (xiii. 14-19) and Matthew (xxiv. 15-22). After the destruction had taken place the tradition of the prediction might be influenced by what was known to have happened; and this without any conscious tampering with the report of the prophecy. The possibility of this influence must be admitted, and with it a possibility of a date subsequent to A.D. 70 for the Gospel and the Acts. Twice in the Gospel (viii. 51, ix. 28), as in the Acts (i. 13), Luke places John before his elder brother James, which Mt. and Mk. never do; and this may indicate that Luke wrote after John had become the better known of the two. Above all, such a date allows sufficient time for the "many" to "draw up narratives" respecting the acts and sayings of Christ.

1 Some year between A.D. 70 and 95 is advocated by Beyschlag, Bleek, Cook, Credner, De Wette, Ewald, Gü더, Holtzmann?, Jülicher, Keim?, Köstlin, Lechler, Lekebusch, Mangold, Ramsay, Renan, Reuss, Sanday, Schenkel, Trip, Tobler, Weiss, and others. And the more trustworthy of these, e.g. Ramsay, Sanday, and Weiss, are disposed to make A.D. 80 the latest date that can reasonably be assigned to the Gospel, or even to the Acts.
(c) The early date of about A.D. 63 still finds advocates;¹ and no doubt there is something to be said for it. Quite the simplest explanation of the fact that S. Paul's death is not recorded in the Acts is that it had not taken place. If that explanation is correct the Third Gospel cannot be placed much later than A.D. 63. Again, the writer of the Acts can hardly have been familiar with the Epistles to the Corinthians and the Galatians: otherwise he would have inserted some things and explained others (Salmon, Hist. Int. to N.T. p. 319, ed. 5). How long might Luke have been without seeing these Epistles? Easily till A.D. 63; but less easily till A.D. 80. Once more, when Luke records the prophecy of Agabus respecting the famine, he mentions that it was fulfilled (Acts xi. 28). When he records the prophecy of Christ respecting the destruction of Jerusalem (xxi. 5-36), he does not mention that it was fulfilled. The simplest explanation is that the destruction had not yet taken place. And, if it be said that the prediction of it has been retouched in Luke's record in order to make it more distinctly in accordance with facts, we must notice that the words, "Let them that are in Judæa flee to the mountains," are in all three reports. The actual flight seems to have been, not to the mountains, but to Pella in north Pææa; and yet "to the mountains" is still retained by Luke (xxi. 21). Eusebius says that there was a "revelation" before the war, warning the Christians not only to leave the city, but to dwell in a town called Pella (H. E. iii. 5. 3). This "revelation" is evidently an adaptation of Christ's prophecy; and here we reasonably suspect that the detail about Pella has been added after the event. But there is nothing of it in Luke's report.

Nevertheless, the reasons stated above, and especially those derived from the prologue to the Gospel, make the intermediate date the most probable of the three. It combines the advantages of the other two dates and avoids the difficulties of both. It may be doubted whether any of the Gospels, as we have them, was written as early as A.D. 63; and if the Third Gospel is placed after the death of S. Paul, one main reason for placing it before A.D. 70 is gone.

(ii.) As to the Place in which Luke wrote his Gospel we have no evidence that is of much value. The Gospel itself gives no sure clue. The peculiarities of its diction point to a centre in which Hellenistic influences prevailed; and the way in which places in Palestine are mentioned have been thought to indicate that the Gospel was written outside Palestine (i. 26, ii. 4, iv. 31, viii. 26, xxiii. 51, xxiv. 13). The first of these considerations does not lead to anything very definite, and the

¹ Among them are Alford, Ebrard, Farrar, Gloag, Godet, Grau, Guerike, Hahn, Hitzig, Hofmann, Hug, Keil, Lange, Lumby, Nösgen, Oosterzee, Resch, Riehm, Schaff, Schanz (67-70), Thiersch, Tholuck, Wieseler, and now Blass. Harnack gives A.D. 78-93 as the limit.
second has little or no weight. The fact that the Gospel was
written for readers outside Palestine, who were not familiar with
the country, accounts for all the topographical expressions. We
do not know what evidence Jerome had for the statement which
he makes in the preface to his commentary on S. Matthew:
Tertius Lucas medicus, natione Syrus Antiochenensis (cujus laus in
Evangelio), qui et discipulus apostoli Pauli, in Achaïae Boeotiaeque
partibus volumen condidit (2 Cor. viii.), quaedam altius repetens,
et ut ipse in proemio confitetur, audita magis, quam visa describent
(Migne, xxvi. 18), where some MSS. have Bithyniae for Boeotiae.
Some MSS. of the Peshitto give Alexandria as the place of com-
position, which looks like confusion with Mark. Modern guesses
vary much : Rome (Holtzmann, Hug, Keim, Lekebusch, Zeller),
Caesarea (Michaelis, Schott, Thiersch, Tholuck), Asia Minor
(Hilgenfeld, Overbeck), Ephesus (Köstlin), and Corinth (Godet).
There is no evidence for or against any of them.

§ 5. OBJECT AND PLAN.

(i.) The immediate Object is told us in the preface. It was
written to give Theophilus increased confidence in the faith which
he had adopted, by supplying him with further information
respecting its historical basis. That Theophilus is a real person,
and not a symbolical personage representing devout Christians in
general, is scarcely doubtful, although Bishop Lightfoot, with
characteristic caution, has warned us not to be too confident of
this. A real person is intrinsically more probable. The name
was a very common one,—fairly frequent among Jews, and very
frequent among Gentiles. It is thus quite unlike such obviously
made up names as Sophron and Neologus in a modern book,
or Philotheus, to whom Ken dedicates his Manual of Prayer for
Winchester scholars. Moreover, the epithet κασμώτε is far more
likely to have been given to a real person than to a fictitious one.
It does not however necessarily imply high rank or authority (Acts
xxiii. 26, xxiv. 3, xxvi. 25), and we must be content to be in ignor-
ance as to who Theophilus was and where he lived. But the tone
of the Gospel leads us to regard him as a representative Gentile
convert, who was anxious to know a good deal more than the few
fundamental facts which were taught to catechumens. The topo-
graphical statements mentioned above, and such remarks as “the

1 The idea that Theophilus may symbolize the true disciple is as old as
Origen (Hom. i. in Luc.), and is adopted by Ambrose: scriptum est evangelium
ad Theophilum, hoc est ad eum quem Deus diligit (Comm. in Luc. i. 3).
Epiphanius regards the name’s denoting τας ἀνδρων Θεου ἄγανων as a possible
alternative (Hær. ii. 1. 51, Migne, xii. 900).
feast of unleavened bread which is called the passover” (xxii. 1),
would not have been required for a Jewish convert.

But, although Theophilus was almost certainly an actual person
well known to Luke, we need not suppose that the Evangelist had
only this one reader in view when he wrote. It is evident that he
writes for the instruction and encouragement of all Gentile con­
verts, and possibly Greek-speaking converts in particular. Theo­
philus is to be the patron of the book with a view to its
introduction to a larger circle of readers. Perhaps Luke hoped
that Theophilus would have it copied and disseminated, as he
probably did.

Among the many indications that the book is written by a
Gentile for Gentiles are the substitution of Greek for Hebrew names,
ό Ζηλωτής for Ό Κανανειός (vi. 15; Acts i. 13), and Κρανίον for
Γολγοθά (xxiii. 33); his never using Ῥαββεί as a form of address,
but either διδάσκαλος or ἐπιστάτης; 1 his comparatively sparing use
of ἀφίη (seven times as against thirty in Matthew), for which he
sometimes substitutes ἀληθεία (ix. 27, xii. 44, xii. 3) or ἐπ’ ἀληθείας
(iv. 25, xxii. 59); his use of νομικὸς for γραμματεύς (vii. 30, x. 25,
xi. 45, 46, 52, xiv. 3); his adding ἀκάθαρτον as an epithet to
δαμόν (iv. 33), for Gentiles believed in good δαμόνα, whereas
to a Jew all δαμόνα were evil; his avoiding μεταμορφώθη (Mk.
ix. 2; Mt. xvii. 2) in his account of the Transfiguration (ix. 29), a
word which might have suggested the metamorphoses of heathen
deities; his notice of the Roman Emperor (ii. 1), and using his
reign as a date (iii. 1); his tracing the Saviour’s descent to Adam,
the parent of Gentile as well as Jew (iii. 38). Although full
honour is shown to the Mosaic Law as binding on Jews (ii. 21,
27, 39, v. 14, x. 26, xvi. 17, 29-31, xvii. 14, xviii. 20), yet there is
not much appeal to it as of interest to his readers. Luke has no
parallels to Mt. v. 17, 19, 20, 21, 27, 31, 33, xii. 5-7, 17-20,
xx. 1-20. The quotations from the Old Testament are few as
compared with Matthew, and they are found mostly in the sayings
of Christ (iv. 4, 8, 12, 18, 19, 26, vi. 4, vii. 27, viii. 10, xiii. 19,
28, 29, 35, xviii. 20, xix. 46, xx. 17, 37, 42, 43, xxi. 10, 24, 26, 27,
35, xxii. 37, 69, xxiii. 30, 46) or of others (i. 15, 17, 37, 46-55,
68-79, ii. 30, 31, 32, iv. 10, 11, x. 27, xx. 28). Very little is said
about the fulfilment of prophecy, which would not greatly interest
Gentile readers (iii. 4, iv. 21, xxi. 22, xxii. 37, xxiv. 44); and of
these five instances, all but the first occur in sayings of Christ
addressed to Jews. Many of the quotations noted above are mere

1 The following Hebrew or Aramaic words, which occur in the other Gospels,
are not found in Luke: 'ΑΒΒΑ (Mk.), Βασιλεύς (Mk.), Γαββαθά (Jn.),
'Εβραϊοτί (Jn.), 'Εμμανουήλ (Mt.), εφφάθ (Mk.), Κορβάν (Mk.), Κορβαράς
(Mt.), Μεσιάς (Jn.), δισαλφό (Mt. Mk. Jn.), together with the sayings, γαλεωθά
κοινο (Mk.) and έλοι, έλοι, κ.τ.λ. (Mt. Mk.).
reproductions, more or less conscious, of the words of Scripture; but the following are definitely given as citations: ii. 23, 24, iii. 4, iv. 4, 8, 10, 11, 12, 18, 19, vii. 27, x. 27, xvii. 20, xix. 46, xx. 17, 28, 37, 42, 43, xxii. 37. Excepting vii. 27, they may all have come from LXX.1 And vii. 27 does not agree with either the Hebrew or LXX of Mal. iii. 1, and is no evidence that the Evangelist knew Hebrew. But, excepting ἐγώ, it agrees verbatim with Mt. xi. 10, and we need not doubt that both Evangelists used the same source and copied it exactly. Add to these his command of the Greek language and his use of “Judæa” for the land of the Jews, i.e. the whole of Palestine (i. 5, iv. 44?, vii. 17, xxiii. 5; Acts ii. 9, x. 37, xi. 1, 29). This combination of non-Jewish features would be extraordinary in a treatise written by a Jew or for Jews. It is thoroughly intelligible in one written by a Gentile for Gentiles.

In his desire to give further instruction to Theophilus and many others like him, it is evident that Luke aims at fulness. He desires to make his Gospel as complete as possible. This is clearly indicated in the prologue. He has “traced up the course of all things accurately from the first” (ἀνωθεν πᾶσαν), in order that Theophilus may “know in full detail” (ἐν πᾶσιν) the historic foundations of the faith. And it is equally clearly seen in the Gospel itself. Luke begins at the very beginning, far earlier than any other Evangelist; not merely with the birth of the Christ, but with the promise of the birth of the Forerunner. And he goes on to the very end: not merely to the Resurrection but to the Ascension. Moreover his Gospel contains an immense proportion of material which is peculiar to himself. According to one calculation, if the contents of the Synoptic Gospels are divided into 172 sections, of these 172 Luke has 127 (§), Matthew 114 (§), and Mark 84 ($\frac{1}{2}$); and of these 172 Luke has 48 which are peculiar to himself (§), Matthew has 22 (§), and Mark has 5 ($\frac{1}{2}$). According to another calculation, if the total be divided into 124 sections, of these Lk. has 93, Matthew 78, and Mark 67; and of these 124 Luke has 38 peculiar to himself, Matthew 17, and Mark 2.2 The portions of the Gospel narrative which Luke alone has preserved for us are among the most beautiful treasures which we possess, and we owe them in a great measure to his desire to make his collection as full as possible.

1 Jerome (Comm. in Is. vi. 9, Migne, xxiv. 100) says, Evangelistam Lucam tradunt veteres Ecclesiae tractatores medicinæ artis fuisse scientissimum, et magis Graecas litteras scisse quam Hebrewas. Unde et sermo ejus, tam in Evangelio quam in Actibus Apostolorum, id est in utroque volumine compitior est, et secularem redolent eloquentiam, magisque testimonii Graecis utitur quam Hebrewis.

2 Six miracles are peculiar to Luke, three to Matthew, and two to Mark. Eighteen parables are peculiar to Luke, ten to Matthew, and one to Mark. See p. xii. For other interesting statistics respecting the relations between the Synoptists see Westcott, Intr. to Gospels, pp. 194 ff.
It is becoming more and more generally admitted that the old view of the purpose of Gospel and Acts is not far off the truth. It was Luke's intention to write history, and not polemical or apologetic treatises. It was his aim to show all Christians, and especially Gentile Christians, on how firm a basis of fact their belief was founded. The Saviour had come, and He had come to save the whole human race. The work of the Christ and the work of His Apostles proved this conclusively. In the Gospel we see the Christ winning salvation for the whole world; in the Acts we see His Apostles carrying the good tidings of this salvation to the whole world. Luke did not write to depreciate the Twelve in the interests of S. Paul; nor to vindicate S. Paul against the attacks of Judaizing opponents; nor yet to reconcile the Judaizers with the disciples of S. Paul. A Gospel which omits the severe rebuke incurred by Peter (Mt. xvi. 23; Mk. viii. 33), the ambitious request of James and John (Mt. xx. 21; Mk. x. 37), the boastful declaration of loyalty made by all the Twelve (Mt. xxvi. 35; Mk. xiv. 31), and the subsequent flight of all (Mt. xxvi. 56; Mk. xiv. 50); which promises to the Twelve their judgment-thrones (xxviii. 30), and trusts them with the conversion of "all the nations" (xxiv. 47), cannot be regarded as hostile to the Twelve. And why address a vindication of Paul to a representative Gentile? Lastly, how could Judaizers be conciliated by such stern judgments on Judaism as Luke has recorded? See, for instance, the following passages, all of them from what is peculiar to Luke: iv. 28, 29, x. 10, 11, 31, 32, xi. 39, 40, xii. 47, xiii. 1–5, 15, xvi. 15, xvii. 18, xviii. 10–14, xixii. 28–31; Acts ii. 23, v. 30, vii. 51–53, etc. It is well that these theories as to the purpose of the Evangelist have been propounded: the examination of them is most instructive. But they do not stand the test of careful investigation. S. Luke remains unconvicted of the charge of writing party pamphlets under the cover of fictitious history.

(ii.) The Plan of the Gospel is probably not elaborated. In the preface Luke says that he means to write "in order" (καθεξῆς), and this most naturally means in chronological order. Omitting the first two chapters and the last chapter in each case, the main features of the First and Third Gospels agree; and in outline their structure agrees to a large extent with that of the Second. Luke perhaps took the tradition which underlies all three Gospels as his chief guide, and inserted into it what he had gathered from other sources. In arranging the additional material he followed chronology, where he had any chronological clue; and where he

1 As regards order, in the first half the Second and Third Gospels commonly agree, while the First varies. In the second half the First and Second commonly agree, while the Third varies. Matthew's additions to the common material are mostly in the first half; Luke's are mostly in the second.
had none (which perhaps was often the case), he placed similar
incidents or sayings in juxtaposition.

But a satisfactory solution of the perplexing phenomena has not yet been
found: for what explains one portion of them with enticing clearness cannot be
made to harmonize with another portion. We may assert with some confidence
that Luke generally aims at chronological order, and that on the whole he
attains it; but that he sometimes prefers a different order, and that he often,
being ignorant himself, leaves us also in ignorance as to chronology. Perhaps
also some of his chronological arrangements are not correct.

The chronological sequence of the Acts cannot be doubted; and this is
strong confirmation of the view that the Gospel is meant to be chronological in
arrangement. Comp. the use of ἱστορίαν viii. 1; Acts iii. 24, xi. 4, xviii. 23.

That the whole Gospel is elaborately arranged to illustrate the development
and connexion of certain theological ideas does not harmonize with the im­
pression which it everywhere gives of transparent simplicity. That there was
connexion and development in the life and work of Christ need not be doubted,
and the narrative which reports that life and work in its true order will illustrate
the connexion and development. But that is a very different thing from the
supposition that Luke first formed a scheme, and then arranged his materials to
illustrate it. So far as there is "organic structure and dogmatic connexion" in
the Third Gospel, it is due to the materials rather than to the Evangelist.
Attempts to trace this supposed dogmatic connexion are instructive in two
ways. They suggest a certain number of connexions, which (whether intended
or not) are illuminative. They also show, by their extraordinary divergences,
how far we are from anything conclusive in this direction. The student who
compares the schemes worked out by Ebrard (Gosp. Hist. i. 1, § 20, 21),
McClellan (N.T. pp. 427 ff.), Oosterzee (Lange's Comm. Int. § 4), and West­
cott (Int. to Gospels, ch. vii. note G) will gather various suggestive ideas, but
will also doubt whether anything like any one of them was in the mind of the
Evangelist.

The analysis which follows is obtained by separating the
different sections and grouping them under different heads. There
is seldom any doubt as to where one section ends and another
begins; and the grouping of the sections is avowedly tentative.
But most analyses recognize a break between chapters ii. and iii.,
at or about ix. 51 and xix. 28, and between chapters xxi. and xxii.
If we add the preface, we have six divisions to which the numer­
ous sections may be assigned. In the two main central divisions,
which together occupy nearly seventeen chapters, some subsidiary
grouping has been attempted, but without confidence in its cor­
rectness. It may, however, be conducive to clearness, even if
nothing of the kind is intended by S. Luke. 1 The mark § indicates
that this portion is found in Luke alone; * that it is common to
Luke and Mark; † that it is common to Luke and Matthew; * that
it is common to all three.

1 The divisions and subdivisions of the Gospel in the text of WH. are most
instructive. Note whether paragraphs and sentences have spaces between them
or not, and whether sentences begin with a capital letter or not. The analysis
of the Gospel by Sanday in Book by Book, pp. 402–404 (Isbister, 1893), will be
found very helpful.
There is a presumption that what is peculiar to Luke comes from some source that was not used by Mark or Matthew; and this presumption is in some cases a strong one; e.g. the Examination of Christ before Herod, or the Walk to Emmaus; but all that we know is that Luke has preserved something which they have not. Again there is a presumption that what is given by Luke and Matthew, but omitted by Mark, comes from some source not employed by the latter; and this presumption is somewhat stronger when what is given by them, but omitted by him, is not narrative but discourse; e.g. the Parable of the Lost Sheep. Yet the book of "Oracles," known to Matthew and Luke, but not known to Mark, is nothing more than a convenient hypothesis for which a good deal may be said. And it would be rash to affirm that the few sections which are found in Mark and Luke, but not in Matthew, such as the Widow's Mite, come from some source unknown to Matthew. The frequency of the mark § gives some idea of what we should have lost had S. Luke not been moved to write. And it must be remembered that in the sections which are common to him and either or both of the others he often gives touches of his own which are of the greatest value. Attention is frequently called to these in the notes. They should be contrasted with the additions made to the Canonical Gospels in the apocryphal gospels.

I. i. 1-4. §THE PREFACE. THE SOURCES AND OBJECT OF THE GOSPEL.

II. i. 5-ii. 52. §THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY.
   1. The Annunciation of the Birth of the Forerunner (5-25).
   3. The Visit of the Mother of the Saviour to the Mother of the Forerunner (39-56).
   4. The Birth of the Forerunner (57-80).
   5. The Birth of the Saviour (ii. 1-20).
   6. The Circumcision and Presentation of the Saviour (21-40).
   7. The Boyhood of the Saviour (41-52).

III. iii. 1-ix. 50. THE MINISTRY, MAINLY IN GALILEE.
   i. The External Preparation for the Ministry; The Preaching of the Baptist (iii. i-22).
      1. §The Date (1, 2).
      3. *He baptizes the Christ (21, 22).
         §The Genealogy of the Christ (23-38).
   ii. The Internal Preparation for the Ministry; *The Temptation (iv. 1-13).
   iii. The Ministry in Galilee (iv. 14-ix. 50).
      1. Visit to Nazareth; *At Capernaum an unclean Demon cast out (iv. 14-44).
      2. §*The Miraculous Draught and the Call of Simon, *Two Healings which provoke Controversy; *The Call of Levi; *Two Sabbath Incidents which provoke Controversy (v. 1-vi. 11).
3. *The Nomination of the Twelve; †The Sermon "on the Level Place"; †The Centurion's Servant; §The Widow's Son at Nain; †The Message from the Baptist; §The Anointing by the Sinner; §The Ministering Women; *The Parable of the Sower; *The Relations of Jesus; *The Stilling of the Tempest; *The Gerasene Demoniac; *The Woman with the Issue and the Daughter of Jairus (vi. 12–viii. 56).

4. *The Mission of the Twelve; *The Feeding of the Five Thousand; *Peter's Confession and the First Prediction of the Passion; *The Transfiguration; *The Demoniac Boy; *The Second Prediction of the Passion; *Who is the greatest? *Not against us is for us (ix. 1–50).

IV. ix. 51–xix. 28. THE JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM: MINISTRY OUTSIDE GALILEE.

i. The departure from Galilee and First Period of the Journey (ix. 51–xiii. 35).

1. §The Samaritan Village; †§Three Aspirants to Discipleship; §The Seventy: The Lawyer's Questions and §the Good Samaritan; §Mary and Martha (ix. 51–x. 42).

2. §Prayer; *Casting out Demons by Beelzebub; §True Blessedness; *The Demand for a Sign: §Denunciation of Pharisaism; †Exhortation to Sincerity; §The Avaricious Brother; §The Rich Fool; God's Providential Care; §The Signs of the Times (xi. 1–xii. 59).

3. §Three Exhortations to Repentance; §The Woman with a Spirit of Infirmity; *The Mustard Seed; †The Leaven; The Number of the Saved; §The Message to Antipas and †the Lament over Jerusalem (xiii. 1–35).

ii. The Second Period of the Journey (xiv. 1–xvii. 10).

1. §The Dropscial Man; §Guests and Hosts; §The Great Supper; §The Conditions of Discipleship; †The Lost Sheep; §The Lost Coin; §The Lost Son (xiv. 1–xv. 32).

2. §The Unrighteous Steward; †§Short Sayings; §The Rich Man and Lazarus; Four Sayings on *Offences, §Forgiveness, †Faith, §Works (xvi. 1–xvii. 10).

iii. The Third Period of the Journey (xvii. 11–xix. 28).

1. §The Ten Lepers; §*The coming of the Kingdom; §The Unrighteous Judge; §The Pharisee and the Publican (xvii. 11–xviii. 14).
2. *Little Children; *The Rich Young Ruler; *The Third Prediction of the Passion; *The Blind Man at Jericho; § Zacchæus; §The Pounds (xviii. 15–xix. 28).

V. xix. 29–xxi. 38. LAST DAYS OF PUBLIC TEACHING: MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM.

2. The Day of Questions. *Christ's Authority and John's Baptism; *The Wicked Husbandmen; *Tribute; *The Woman with Seven Husbands; *David's Son and Lord; *The Scribes; ° The Widow's Mite; *§ Apocalyptic Discourse (xx. 1–xxi. 38).

VI. xxii.–xxiv. THE PASSION AND THE RESURRECTION.

i. The Passion (xxii. 1–xxiii. 56).
1. *The Treachery of Judas (xxii. 1–6).
3. *§ The Agony; *The Arrest; *Peter's Denials; The Ecclesiastical Trial; *The Civil Trial; § Jesus sent to Herod; *Sentence; *Simon of Cyrene; § The Daughters of Jerusalem; *The Crucifixion; § The Two Robbers; *The Death (xxii. 39–xxiii. 49).

ii. The Resurrection and the Ascension (xxiv.).
1. *§ The Women at the Tomb (1–11).
2. § [Peter at the Tomb (12).]
3. § The Walk to Emmaus (13–32).
4. § The Appearance to the Eleven (33–43)
5. § Christ's Farewell Instructions (44–49).
6. § The Departure (50–53).

Note that each of the three divisions of the Ministry begins with scenes which are typical of Christ's rejection by His people: the Ministry in Galilee with the attempt on His life at Nazareth (iv. 28–30); the Ministry outside Galilee with the refusal of Samaritans to entertain Him (ix. 51–56); and that in Jerusalem with the Lament over the city (xix. 41–44). In the first and last case the tragic rejection is heightened by being preceded by a momentary welcome.

It will be useful to collect for separate consideration the Miracles and the Parables which are recorded by S. Luke.
§ 6. CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE.

(i.) It has already been pointed out (p. xxxv) that Luke aims at fulness and completeness. (a) **Comprehensiveness** is a characteristic of his Gospel. His Gospel is the nearest approach to a biography; and his object seems to have been to give his readers...
as full a picture as he could of the life of Jesus Christ, in all the portions of it—infancy, boyhood, manhood—respecting which he had information.

But there is a comprehensiveness of a more important kind which is equally characteristic of him; and for the sake of a different epithet we may say that the Gospel of S. Luke is in a special sense the *universal* Gospel. All four Evangelists tell us that the good tidings are sent to “all the nations” (Mt. xxviii. 19; Mk. xiii. 10; Lk. xxiv. 47) independently of birth (Jn. i. 12, 13). But no one teaches this so fully and persistently as S. Luke. He gives us, not so much the Messiah of the O.T., as the Saviour of all mankind and the Satisfier of all human needs. Again and again he shows us that forgiveness and salvation are offered to all, and offered freely, independently of privileges of birth or legal observances. Righteousness of heart is the passport to the Kingdom of God, and this is open to everyone; to the Samaritan (ix. 51-56, x. 30-37, xvii. 11-19) and the Gentile (ii. 32, iii. 6, 38, iv. 25-27, vii. 9, x. 1, xiii. 29, xxi. 24, xxiv. 47) as well as to the Jew (i. 33, 54, 68-79, ii. 10); to publicans, sinners, and outcasts (iii. 12, 13, v. 27-32, vii. 37-50, xv. 1, 2, 11-32, xviii. 9, xi. 2-10, xxiii. 43) as well as to the respectable (vi. 36, xi. 37, xiv. 1); to the poor (i. 53, ii. 7, 8, 24, iv. 18, vi. 20, 21, vii. 22, xiv. 13, 21, xvi. 20, 23) as well as to the rich (xii. 2, xxiii. 50). And hence Dante calls S. Luke “the writer of the story of the gentleness of Christ,” *scriba mansuetudinis Christi* (*De Monarchia*, i. 16 [18], ed. Witte, 1874, p. 33; Church, p. 210). It cannot be mere accident that the parables of the Good Samaritan, the Prodigal Son, the Great Supper, the Pharisee and the Publican, the rebukes to intolerance, and the incidents of the sinner in the house of Simon, and of the penitent robber are peculiar to this Gospel. Nor yet that it omits Mt. vii. 6, x. 5, 6, xx. 16, xxii. 14, which might be regarded as hostile to the Gentiles. S. Luke at the opening of the ministry shows this universal character of it by continuing the great prophecy from Is. xl. 3 ff. (which all four Evangelists quote) till he reaches the words “All flesh shall see the salvation of God” (iii. 6). And at the close of it he alone records the gracious declaration that “the Son of Man is come to seek and to save that which was lost” (xix. 10; interpolated Mt. xviii. 11).1

It is a detail, but an important one, in the universality of the Third Gospel, that it is in an especial sense the Gospel for women. Jew and Gentile alike looked down on women.2 But all through this Gospel they are allowed a prominent place, and many types

---

1 Comp. also the close of the Acts, esp. xxviii. 28; and the πᾶς (Lk. xvi. 16), which is not in Mt. (xi. 12).

2 In the Jewish liturgy the men thank God that they have not been made women.
of womanhood are placed before us: Elizabeth, the Virgin Mary, the prophetess Anna, the widow at Nain, the nameless sinner in the house of Simon, Mary Magdalene, Joanna, Susanna, the woman with the issue, Martha and Mary, the widow with the two mites, the "daughters of Jerusalem," and the women at the tomb. A Gospel with this marked antipathy to exclusiveness and intolerance appropriately carries the pedigree of the Saviour past David and Abraham to the parent of the whole human race (iii. 38). It is possible that Luke simply copied the genealogy as he found it, or that his extending it to Adam is part of his love of completeness; but the thought of the father of all mankind is likely to have been present also.

It is this all-embracing love and forgiveness, as proclaimed in the Third Gospel, which is meant, or ought to be meant, when it is spoken of as the "Gospel of S. Paul." The tone of the Gospel is Pauline. It exhibits the liberal and spiritual nature of Christianity. It advocates faith and repentance apart from the works of the Law, and tells abundantly of God's grace and mercy and the work of the Holy Spirit. In the Pauline Epistles these topics and expressions are constant.

The word πλειστος, which occurs eight times in Mt., five in Mk., and not at all in Jn., is found eleven times in Lk. and sixteen in the Acts: μετάνοια, twice in Mt., once in Mk., not in Jn., occurs five times in Lk. and six in Acts: χάρις, thrice in Jn., not Mt. or Mk., is frequent both in Lk. and Acts: Ελέος, thrice in Mt., not in Mk. or Jn., occurs six times in Lk. but not in Acts: αφέσις ἀμαρτίων, once in Mt., twice in Mk., not in Jn., is found thrice in Lk. and five times in Acts; and the expression "Holy Spirit," which is found five times in Mt., four in Mk., four in Jn., occurs twelve times in Lk. and forty-one in Acts. See on i. 15.

It is characteristic that τίμα μισθὸν ἔχει (Mt. v. 46) becomes τολὴ ὑμῶν χάρις ἐστιν (Lk. vi. 32); and ἐσθήσαν ὑμεῖς τέλειοί, ὥστε δι' ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος τέλειος ἐστιν (Mt. v. 48) becomes γίνεσθε ὑμεῖς ἁγίοι, καθὼς ὁ πατήρ ὑμῶν εἰκότων ἐστίν (Lk. vi. 36). Note also the incidents recorded iv. 25-27 and x. 1-16, and the office of the Holy Spirit as indicated i. 15, 35, 41, 67, ii. 25, 26, 27, iv. 1, x. 21, xi. 13, all of which are peculiar to Lk.

But it is misleading in this respect to compare the Second Gospel with the Third. From very early times the one has been called the Petrine Gospel, and the other the Pauline. S. Mark is said to give us the teaching of S. Peter, S. Luke the teaching of S. Paul. The statements are true, but in very different senses. Mark derived his materials from Peter. Luke exhibits the spirit of Paul: and no doubt to a large extent he derived this spirit from the Apostle. But he got his material from eye-witnesses. Mark was the interpreter of Peter, as Irenæus (iii. 1, 10. 6) and Tertullian (Adv. Marcial. iv. 5) aptly call him: he made known to others what Peter had said. Paul was the illuminator of Luke (Tert. iv. 2): he enlightened him as to the essential character of the Gospel.
Luke, as his "fellow-worker," would teach what the Apostle taught, and would learn to give prominence to those elements in the Gospel narrative of which he made most frequent use. Then at last "Luke, the companion of Paul, recorded in a book the Gospel preached by him" (Iren. iii. 1. 1).

Jülicher sums up the case justly when he says that Luke has adopted from Paul no more than the whole Catholic Church has adopted, viz. the universality of salvation and the boundlessness of Divine grace: and it is precisely in these two points that Paul has been a clear-sighted and logical interpreter of Jesus Christ (Einl. § 27, p. 204). See also Knowling, The Witness of the Epistles, p. 328, and the authorities there quoted.

Holtzmann, followed by Davidson (Introd. to N.T. ii. p. 17) and Schaff (Apostolic Christianity, ii. p. 667), gives various instances of parallelism between the Third Gospel and the Pauline Epistles. Resch (Ausserekanonische Paralleltexte, p. 121, Leipzig, 1893), while ignoring some of Holtzmann's examples, adds others; but some of his are not very convincing, or depend upon doubtful readings. The following are worth considering:

S. LUKE.

iv. 32. ἐν ἐξουσίᾳ ἦν ο羔ος αὐτοῦ.

vi. 36. ὁ πάθη ὑμῶν οκτίρμων ἐστίν.

vi. 39. μὴ δύναται τυφλὸς τυφλὸν ἰδεῖν;

vi. 48. θύγρας θεμελίων.

vii. 8. ἀνθρωπὸς εἰμὶ ὑπὸ ἐξουσίαν ῥατοσίμως.

viii. 12. πιστεύσαντες σωθήσον.

viii. 13. μετὰ χαρᾶς δέχονται τ. λόγον.

x. 7. δίκοις γὰρ ὁ ἐργάτης τοῦ μισθοῦ αὐτοῦ.

x. 8. ἐσθιετε τα παρατιθέμενα υμῖν.

x. 16. ὁ ἀδετῶν ὑμᾶς ἐμὲ ἀδετεί: ὁ δὲ ἐμὲ ἀδετῶν ἀδετεῖ τῶν ἀποστελλατά με.

x. 20. τα δυνάματα ὑμῶν ἐνυγγυρίζεται ἐν τοῖς ὁμοφόροις.

xi. 7. μὴ μοι κόπους πάρεχε.

xi. 29. ἡ γενεά αὕτη... σημείων ἧγετε.

xi. 41. καὶ ἱδὼν πάντα καθαρὰ ὑμᾶν ἐστίν.

xii. 35. ἐστίνωσαν υμῶν τὸ δοσίας περιπεσομένως.

xii. 42. τίς ἁμα ἐστὶν ὁ πιστὸς οἰκονόμος;

xiii. 27. ἀπόστοτε ἀεὶ ἐμοὶ πάντες ἐργάται ἄδικιας (Ps. vi. 8).

xviii. 1. δεῖν πάντες προσευχήσομαι αὐτοῦ.

S. PAUL.

1 Cor. ii. 4. ὁ λόγος μου... ἐν ἀποδείξει πνεύματος καὶ δυνάμεως.

2 Cor. i. 3. ὁ παθή τῶν οκτίρμων.

Rom. ii. 19. τέσσαρα τεκνών ὡδηγον εἶναι τυφλῶν.

1 Cor. iii. 10. θεμέλιον θύμα.

Rom. xiii. 1. εἰσορίας ὑπερεχούσαι ὑποτασσόμενος.

1 Cor. ii. 21. σῶσαι τοὺς πιστεύοντας.

Rom. i. 16. εἰς ἀστηρίαν παντὶ τ. πιστεύοντι.

1 Thes. i. 6. δεξάμενοι τ. λόγον...

Phil. iv. 3. ἐν τῷ κύριῳ ἐν βιβλίῳ ἰδὼν (Ps. lxix. 28).

Gal. vi. 17. κόσμοι μοι μηδείς παρεξέτων.

1 Cor. i. 22. Ἰουδαῖοι σημείως αἰτοῦσιν.

Tit. i. 15. πάντα καθαρὰ τοὺς καθαροὺς.

Eph. vi. 14. στήτε ὢν περιποιόμενοι τῆς δοσίας ὑμῶν (Is. xi. 5).

1 Cor. iv. 2. ἵππειν ἐν τοῖς οἰκονομαῖς ὡς πιστῶν τάς τοις κυρίων.

2 Tim. ii. 19. ἀποστητής ἀπὸ ἄδικιας τός ὁ οἰκονόμος τοῦ δομα κυρίων.

Col. i. 3. πάντας προσευχήσομεν.

2 Thes. i. 11. προσευχόμεθα πάντοτε.
It is not creditable to modern scholarship that the foolish opinion, quoted by Eusebius with a \( \phi \\alpha \alpha \varsigma \) \( \delta \) (\( H. E. \) iii. 4-8) and by Jerome with \( q \)\( u \)d\( a \)m sus\( p \)p\( i \)c\( a \)ntur (\( D e \) \( v i r. \) \( i l l a s. \) vii.), that wherever S. Paul speaks of “my Gospel” (Rom. ii. 16, xvi. 25; 2 Tim. ii. 8) he means the Gospel of S. Luke, still finds advocates. And the supposition that the Third Gospel is actually quoted 1 Tim. v. 18 is incredible. The words \( \epsilon \)\( \phi \)\( \varepsilon \)\( \zeta \)\( y \) refer to the first sentence only, which comes from Deut. xxv. 4. What follows, “the labourer is worthy of his hire,” is a popular saying, adopted first by Christ (Lk. x. 7; Mt. x. 10) and then by S. Paul. Had S. Paul quoted the saying as an utterance of Christ, he would not have said \( \epsilon \)\( \phi \)\( \varepsilon \)\( \zeta \)\( y \). He would have used some such expression as \( \pi \)\( \varepsilon \)\( \rho \)\( \omicron \)\( \nu \)\( e \)\( \theta \)\( i \)\( o \)\( m \)\( t \)\( e \)\( s \)\( t \)\( o \)\( m \) (Acts xx. 35), or \( \alpha \)\( i \)\( o \)\( n \)\( e \)\( \alpha \)\( i \)\( o \)\( n \) (1 Cor. vii. 10, 12), or \( \mu \)\( e \)\( m \)\( m \)\( e \)m\( n \)\( e \)\( m \)\( m \)\( e \)n\( o \)m\( o \) (Clem. Rom. Cor. xiii. 1; comp. xvi. 7), or simply \( \epsilon \)\( s \)\( t \)\( e \)n\( o \)m\( o \) (Polyc. vii. 2). Comp. 1 Thes. iv. 15; 1 Cor. ix. 14, xi. 23.

\( b \) More than any of the other Evangelists S. Luke brings before his readers the subject of Prayer; and that in two ways, (1) by the example of Christ, and (2) by direct instruction. All three Synoptists record that Christ prayed in Gethsemane (Mt. xxvi. 39; Mk. xiv. 35; Lk. xxii. 41); Mark (i. 35) mentions His retirement for prayer after healing multitudes at Capernaum, where Luke (iv. 42) merely mentions the retirement: and Matthew (xiv. 23) and Mark (vi. 46) relate His retirement for prayer after the feeding of the 5000, where Luke (ix. 17) relates neither. But on seven occasions Luke is alone in recording that Jesus prayed: at His Baptism (iii. 21); before His first collision with the hierarchy (v. 16); before choosing the Twelve (vi. 12); before the first prediction of the Passion (ix. 18); at the Transfiguration (ix. 29); before teaching the Lord’s Prayer (xi. 1); and on the Cross (xxiii. [34], 46). Moreover, Luke alone relates the declaration of Jesus that He had made supplication for Peter, and His charge to the Twelve, “Pray that ye enter not into temptation” (xxii. 32, 40).
It was out of the fulness of His own experience that Jesus said, "Ask, and it shall be given you" (xi. 9). Again, Luke alone records the parables which enjoin persistence in prayer, the Friend at Midnight (xi. 5-13) and the Unrighteous Judge (xviii. 1-8); and to the charge to "watch" (Mt. xxv. 13; Mk. xiii. 33) he adds "at every season, making supplication, that ye may prevail," etc. (xxi. 36). In the parable of the Pharisee and the Publican the difference between real and unreal prayer is illustrated (xviii. 11-13).

(c) The Third Gospel is also remarkable for the prominence which it gives to Praise and Thanksgiving. It begins and ends with worship in the temple (i. 9, xxiv. 53). Luke alone has preserved for us those hymns which centuries ago passed from his Gospel into the daily worship of the Church: the Gloria in Excelsis, or Song of the Angels (ii. 14); the Magnificat, or Song of the blessed Virgin Mary (i. 46-55); the Benedictus, or Song of Zacharias (i. 68-79); and the Nunc Dicitatis, or Song of Symeon (ii. 29-32). Far more often than in any other Gospel are we told that those who received special benefits "glorified God" (δοξάζων τον Θεόν) for them (ii. 20, v. 25, 26, vii. 16, xiii. 13, xvii. 15, xviii. 43). Comp. Mt. ix. 8, xv. 31; Mk. ii. 12. The expression "praising God" (αἰών τον Θεόν) is almost peculiar to Luke in N.T. (ii. 13, 20, xix. 37, xxiv. 53?; Acts ii. 47, iii. 8, 9). "Blessing God" (εὐλογεῖν τον Θεόν) is almost peculiar to Luke (i. 64, ii. 28, xxiv. 53?): elsewhere only Jas. iii. 9. “Give praise (αἰνοῦ δίδωναι) to God” occurs Luke xviii. 43 only. So also χαίρειν, which occurs eight times in Matthew and Mark, occurs nineteen times in Luke and Acts; χαίρει seven times in Matthew and Mark, thirteen times in Luke and Acts.

(d) The Gospel of S. Luke is rightly styled "the most literary of the Gospels" (Renan, Les Évangiles, ch. xiii.). "S. Luke has more literary ambition than his fellows" (Sanday, Book by Book, p. 401). He possesses the art of composition. He knows not only how to tell a tale truthfully, but how to tell it with effect. He can feel contrasts and harmonies, and reproduce them for his readers. The way in which he tells the stories of the widow’s son at Nain, the sinner in Simon’s house, Martha and Mary at Bethany, and the walk to Emmaus, is quite exquisite. And one might go on giving other illustrations of his power, until one had mentioned nearly the whole Gospel. The sixth century was not far from the truth when it called him a painter, and said that he had painted the portrait of the Virgin. There is no picture of her so complete as his. How lifelike are his sketches of Zacharias, Anna, Zacchæus, Herod Antipas! And with how few touches is each done! As a rule Luke puts in fewer descriptive details than Mark. In his description of the Baptist he omits the strange attire
and food (Mk. i. 6; Mt. iii. 4). In the healing of Simon's wife's mother he omits the taking of her hand (Mk. i. 31; Mt. viii. 15). In that of the palsied he omits the crowding at the door (Mk. ii. 2). And there are plenty of such cases. But at other times we have an illuminating addition which is all his own (iii. 15, 21, iv. 13, 15, 40, 42, v. 1, 12, 15, 16, vi. 12, viii. 47, etc.). His contrasts are not confined to personal traits, such as the unbelieving priest and the believing maiden (i. 18, 38), the self-abasing woman and the self-satisfied Pharisee (vii. 37 ff.), the thankless Jews and the thankful Samaritan (xvii. 17), the practical Martha and the contemplative Mary (x. 38-42), the hostile hierarchy and the attentive people (xix. 47, 48), and the like; the fundamental antithesis between Christ's work and Satan's¹ (iv. 13, x. 17-20, xiii. 16, xxii. 3, 131, 53), often exhibited in the opposition of the scribes and Pharisees to His work (xi. 52, xii. 1, xiii. 14, 31, xv. 2, xvi. 14, xix. 39, 47, xx. 20), is brought out with special clearness. The development of the hostility of the Pharisees is one of the main threads in the narrative. It is this rare combination of descriptive power with simplicity and dignity, this insight into the lights and shadows of character and the conflict between spiritual forces, which makes this Gospel much more than a fulfilment of its original purpose (i. 4). There is no rhetoric, no polemics, no sectarian bitterness. It is by turns joyous and sad; but even where it is most tragic it is almost always serene.² As the fine literary taste of Renan affirms, it is the most beautiful book in the world.

(e) S. Luke is the only Evangelist who writes history as distinct from memoirs. He aims at writing "in order," which probably means in chronological order (i. 5, 26, 36, 56, 59, ii. 42, iii. 23, ix. 28, 37, 51, xxi. 7), and he alone connects his narrative with the history of Syria and of the Roman Empire (ii. 1, xiii. 1). The sixfold date (iii. 1) is specially remarkable: and it is possible that both it and ii. 1 were inserted as finishing touches to the narrative. The words ἀγάπη (18 ὅ) and µέτωπον (ἀρχή) occur more often in his writings than in the rest of N.T.: and this fact points to a special fondness for exactitude as regards time. Where he gives no date,—probably because he found none in his authorities,—he frequently lets us know what incidents are connected together although he does not know in what year or time of year to place the group (iv. 1, 38, 40, vii. 1, 18, 24, viii. 1, x. 1, 21, xi. 37, xii. 1, xiii. 31, xix. 11, 28, 41, xxi. 66, xxiv. 13). He is very much

¹ Both in Mark (i. 21-28) and in Luke (iv. 31-37) the miracle of healing the demoniac in the synagogue at Capernaum is perhaps placed first as being typical of Christ's whole work. But there is no evidence of any special "demonology" in Luke. With the doubtful exception of the "spirit of infirmity" (xiii. 10) there is no miracle of casting out demons which he alone records.

² A marked exception is the violent scene so graphically described xi. 53, 54.
less definite than Josephus or Tacitus; but that is only what we ought to expect. He had not their opportunities of consulting public records, and he was much less interested in chronology than they were. Yet it has been noticed that the Agricola of Tacitus contains no chronology until the last chapter is reached. The value of Christ's words and works was quite independent of dates. Such remarks as he makes xvi. 14, xviii. 1, 9, xix. 11 throw far more light upon what follows than an exact note of time would have done. Here and there he seems to be giving us his own estimate of the situation, as an historian or biographer might do (ii. 50, iii. 15, viii. 30, xx. 20, xxii. 3, xxiii. 12): and the notes, whether they come from himself or his sources, are helpful. If chronology even in his Gospel is meagre, yet there is a continuity and development which may be taken as evidence of the true historic spirit.\(^1\) He follows the Saviour through the stages, not only of His ministry, but of His physical and moral growth (ii. 40, 42, 51, 52, iii. 23, iv. 13, xxii. 28, 53). He traces the course of the ministry from Nazareth to Capernaum and other towns of Galilee, from Galilee to Samaria and Peræa, from Peræa to Jerusalem, just as in the Acts he marks the progress of the Gospel, as represented successively by Stephen, Philip, Peter, and Paul, from Jerusalem to Antioch, from Antioch to Ephesus and Greece, and finally to Rome.

(f) But along with these literary and historical features it has a marked domestic tone. In this Gospel we see most about Christ in His social intercourse with men. The meal in the house of Simon, in that of Martha and Mary, in that of a Pharisee, when the Pharisees were denounced, in that of a leading Pharisee on a sabbath, when the dropsical man was healed, His sojourn with Zacchæus, His walk to Emmaus and the supper there, are all peculiar to Luke's narrative, together with a number of parables, which have the same quiet and homely setting. The Good Samaritan in the inn, the Friend at Midnight, the Woman with the Leaven, the Master of the house rising and shutting the door, the Woman sweeping for the Lost Coin, the Father welcoming the Lost Son, all have this touch of familiar domesticity. And perhaps it is to this love of homely scenes that we may trace the fact that whereas Mk. (iv. 31) has the mustard-seed sown “on the earth,” and Mt. (xiii. 31) makes a man sow it “in his field,” Lk. (xiii. 19) tells us that a man sowed it “in his own garden.” Birks, Hor. Ev.

(ii.) When we consider the style and language of S. Luke, we are struck by two apparently opposite features,—his great com-

---

\(^1\) Ramsay regards Luke as a historical writer of the highest order, one who "commands excellent means of knowledge . . . and brings to the treatment of his subject genius, literary skill, and sympathetic historical insight" (S. Paul the Traveller, pp. 2, 3, 20, 21, Hodder, 1895).
mand of Greek and his very un-Greek use of Hebrew phrases and constructions. These two features produce a result which is so peculiar, that any one acquainted with them in detail would at once recognize as his any page torn out of either of his writings. This peculiarity impresses us less than that which distinguishes the writings of S. John, and which is felt even in a translation; but it is much more easily analysed. It lies in the diction rather than in the manner, and its elements can readily be tabulated. But for this very reason a good deal of it is lost in translation, in which peculiarities of construction cannot always be reproduced. In any version the difference between S. Mark and S. John is felt by the ordinary reader. The most careful version would fail to show to an attentive student more than a good portion of the differences between S. Mark and S. Luke.

The author of the Third Gospel and of the Acts is the most versatile of all the N.T. writers. He can be as Hebraistic as the LXX, and as free from Hebraisms as Plutarch. And, in the main, whether intentionally or not, he is Hebraistic in describing Hebrew society, and Greek in describing Greek society. It is impossible to determine how much of the Hebraistic style is due to the sources which he is employing, how much is voluntarily adopted by himself as suitable to the subject which he is treating. That Aramaic materials which he translated, or Greek materials which had come from an Aramaic source, influenced his language considerably, need not be doubted; for it is where he had no such materials that his Greek shows least sign of such influences. In the second half of the Acts, where he writes of his own experiences, and is independent of information that has come from an Aramaic source, he writes in good late Greek. But then it is precisely here that he is describing scenes far away from Jerusalem in an Hellenistic or Gentile atmosphere. So that it is quite possible that to some extent he is a free agent in this matter, and is not merely exhibiting the influence under which he is writing at the moment. No doubt it is true that, where he has used materials which directly or indirectly are Aramaic, there his style is Hebraistic; but it may also be true that he has there allowed his style to be Hebraistic, because he felt that such a style was appropriate to the subject-matter.

He has enabled us to judge of the two styles by placing two highly characteristic specimens of each in immediate juxtaposition. In the Acts the change from the more Hebrew portion to the more Greek portion takes place gradually, just as in the narrative there is a change from a Hebrew period (i.–v.), through a transitional period (vi.–xii.), to a Gentile period (xiii.–xxviii.).¹ But in the

¹ Compare in this respect the letter of Lysias (xxiii. 26–30) and the speech of Tertullus (xxiv. 2–9) with the speeches of Peter (ii. 14–39, iii. 12–26).
Gospel the remarkably elegant and idiomatic Greek of the Preface is suddenly changed to the intensely Hebraistic Greek of the opening narrative. It is like going from a chapter in Xenophon to a chapter in the LXX. And he never returns to the style of the Preface. In the Gospel itself it is simply a question of more or less Hebrew elements. They are strongest in the first two chapters, but they never entirely cease; and they are specially common at the beginning of narratives, e.g. v. 1, 12, 17, vi. 1, 6, 12, viii. 22, ix. 18, 51, etc. It will generally be found that the parallel passages are, in the opening words, less Hebraistic than Luke. In construction, even Matthew, a Jew writing for Jews, sometimes exhibits fewer Hebraisms than this versatile Gentile, who writes for Gentiles. Comp. Lk. ix. 28, 29, 33, 38, 39 with Mt. xvii. 1, 2, 4, 15; Lk. xiii. 30 with Mt. xix. 30; Lk. xviii. 35 with Mt. xx. 29; Lk. xx. 1 with Mt. xxi. 23.

From this strong Hebraistic tinge in his language some (Tiele, Hofmann, Hahn) have drawn the unnecessary and improbable conclusion that the Evangelist was a Jew; while others, from the fact that some of the Hebraisms and many other expressions which occur in the Third Gospel and the Acts are found also in the Pauline Epistles, have drawn the quite impossible conclusion that this hypothetical Jew was none other than S. Paul himself. To mention nothing else, the "we" sections in the Acts are fatal to the latter theory. In writing of himself and his companions, what could induce the Apostle to change backwards and forwards between "they" and "we"? As to the former theory, good reasons have been given above for attributing both books to a Gentile and to S. Luke, who (as S. Paul clearly implies in Col. iv. 11-14) was a Gentile. The Hebraistic colour in the Evangelist's language, and the elements common to his diction and that of the Pauline Epistles, can be easily explained, and more satisfactorily explained, without an hypothesis which imports more difficulties than it solves. The Hebraisms in Luke come partly from his sources, partly from his knowledge of the LXX, and partly from his intercourse with S. Paul, who often in his presence discussed the O.T. with Jews in language which must often have been charged with Hebraisms. The expressions which are common to the two Lucan documents and the Pauline Epistles are partly mere accidents of language, and partly the result of companionship between the two writers. Two such men could not have been together so often without influencing one another's language.

S. Luke's command of Greek is abundantly shown both in the freedom of his constructions and also in the richness of his vocabulary.

1 There are some who attribute the strongly Hebraistic tone of the first two chapters to a conscious and deliberate imitation of the LXX rather than to the influence of Aramaic sources.
(a) The freedom of his constructions is seen not infrequently even in his Hebraisms. Two instances will suffice. (1) His frequent use of ἐγέρετο is often purely Hebraistic (i. 8, 9), sometimes less so (vi. 1), sometimes hardly Hebraistic at all (Acts ix. 3, xxi. 1). This will be found worked out in detail in a detached note at the end of ch. i. (2) His frequent use of periphrastic tenses, i.e. the substantive verb with a present or perfect participle instead of the simple tense, exhibits a similar variety.

The use of ἦν with pres. or perf. part. as a periphrasis for imperf. or pluperf. indic. is of Aramaic origin in many cases and is frequent in the Gospels,—most frequent in Luke; but it is not always easy to say whether it is a Hebraism or a use that might very well stand in classical Greek. For ἦν with pres. part. see i. 10, 21, 22, ii. 33, 51, iv. 20, 31, 38, 44, v. 16, 17, 29, vi. 12, viii. 40, ix. 53, x. 14, xii. 10, 11, xiv. 1, xv. 1, xix. 47, [xxi. 37], xxiii. 8, xxiv. 13, 32. Most of these are probably due to Hebrew or Aramaic influence; but many would be admissible in classical Greek, and may be used to imply continuance of the action. In i. 21, 22, ii. 51, iv. 31, xv. 1, xix. 47, xxiii. 8, xxiv. 13, 32 the simple imperf. follows immediately in the next clause or sentence. That such cases as ii. 33, iv. 20, ix. 53, xi. 14, xii. 10, 11, xiv. 1 are Hebraistic need hardly be doubted. So also where ἦν with perf. part. is used for the pluperf. (i. 7, ii. 26, iv. 16, 17, v. 17, ix. 32, 45, xviii. 34), i. 7 and ix. 32 with most of the others are probably Hebraistic, but v. 17 almost certainly is not. Anyhow, Luke shows that he is able to give an Hellenic turn to his Hebraisms, so that they would less offend a Greek ear. Much the same might be said of his use of κατ. to introduce the apodosis, which may be quite classical (ii. 21), but may also be Hebraistic, especially where ὅτε is added (vii. 12, xxiv. 4), or ἀντὶ (v. 1, 17, viii. 1, 22, ix. 51, etc.): or of his frequent use of ἐν τῷ with the infinitive (i. 8, 21, ii. 6, 43, v. 1, etc.).


But Luke’s freedom of construction is conspicuous in other respects. Although he sometimes co-ordinates clauses, joining them, Hebrew fashion, with a simple κατ. (i. 13, 14, 31–33, xvi. 19, etc.), yet he is able to vary his sentences with relatives, participles, dependent clauses, genitive absolutes, and the like, almost to any extent. We find this even in the most Hebraistic parts of the Gospel (i. 20, 26, 27, ii. 4, 21, 22, 26, 36, 37, 42, 43); but still more in other parts: see especially vii. 36–50. He is the only N.T. writer who uses the optative in indirect questions, both without ἄν (i. 29, iii. 15, viii. 9, xxii. 23; Acts xvii. 11, xxi. 33, xxv. 20) and with it (vi. 11, xv. 26; Acts v. 24, x. 17), sometimes preceded by the article (i. 62, ix. 46). In xviii. 36 the ἄν is doubtful. The elegant and idiomatic attraction of the relative is very common in Luke (i. 4, v. 9, ix. 36, xii. 46, xv. 16, xxiii. 41; Acts i. 22, ii. 22, iii. 21, 25, etc.), especially after πᾶς (ii. 20, iii. 19, ix. 43, xix. 37, xxiv. 25; Acts i. 1, x. 39, xiii. 39, xxii. 10), whereas it occurs only twice in Matthew (xviii. 19, xxiv. 50) and once in Mark (vii. 13). His more frequent use of τε is another instance of more idiomatic Greek (ii. 16, xii. 45, xv. 2, xxi. 11 (but), xxii. 66, xxiii. 12, xxiv. 20): only once in Mark and four times in Matthew. Sometimes we find the harsh Greek of Matthew or Mark improved in the parallel passage in Luke: e.g. τῶν δεξιῶν ἐν τοῖς περιτατέων καὶ ἀσπασθέον ἐν ταῖς ἰσχυραῖς (Mk. xii. 38) has an awkwardness which Luke avoids by inserting φιλοντωμα before ἀσπασθέον (xx. 46). Or again, ἀλλὰ ἐξερευνήσες ἅξιον ἀνθρώπου ἐφοβοῦτο τὸν ἄγγελον ἀπατᾶς γὰρ ἐξαιτοῦ τῷ ἱωάννῃ δόντω ὅτι προφήτης ἦν (Mk. xi. 32) is smoothed
in more details than one in Luke: ἀδὲ εἰς εἰσιν 'Εξ ἀνθρώπων, ὁ λαὸς ἄρας καταλύσει θείας πεπεσμένος γὰρ ἐστιν Ἰσραήλ προφήτην εἶναι (xx. 6). Compare καὶ πρῶτον ἐννοεῖς λαόν, which perhaps is a provincialism (Mk. i. 35), with γενομένης δὲ ἡμέρας (Lk. iv. 42). In the verses which follow, Luke’s diction is smoother than Mark’s. Compare also Lk. v. 29, 30 with Mk. ii. 15, 16 and Mt. ix. 10, 11; Lk. v. 36 with Mk. ii. 21 and Mt. ix. 16; Lk. vi. 11 with Mk. iii. 6 and Mt. xii. 14. The superior freedom and fulness of Luke’s narrative of the message of the Baptist (vii. 18-21), as compared with that of Matthew (xi. 2, 3), is very marked.

(δ) But Luke’s command of Greek is seen also in the richness of his vocabulary. The number of words which occur in his two writings and nowhere else in N.T. is estimated at 750 or (including doubtful cases) 851; of which 26 occur in quotations from LXX. In the Gospel the words peculiar to Luke are 312; of which 52 are doubtful, and 11 occur in quotations. Some of these are found nowhere else in Greek literature. He is very fond of compound verbs, especially with διὰ or ἐπί, or with two prepositions, as ἐπανάγειν, ἐπευσέρχεσθαι, ἀντιπαρέρχεσθαι, συγκατατιθέναι, προσαναβαίνειν. He may have coined some of them for himself. The following are among the most remarkable words and expressions which occur either in both his writings and nowhere else in N.T., or in his Gospel and nowhere else in N.T. No account is here taken of the large number, which are peculiar to the Acts.

Those in thick type are found in LXX. Those with an asterisk are shown by Hobart to be frequent in medical writers. Many of these might be frequent in any writers. But the number of less common words, which are peculiar to Luke in N.T., and are fairly common in medical writers, is remarkable; and those of them which are not found in LXX are specially to be noted.

Thirty times in G. and A. ἐγένετο δέ (not Jn. x. 22).
Nine times in G. and A. ἡμέρα γίνεται : nine in G. μνᾶ.
Eight times in G. ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ (ἡμέρᾳ, ὥρᾳ, οἰκῇ).
Seven times in G. and A. ἐποδέχεσθαι, * συνβάλλειν, ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ταῦται.
Six times in G. and A. καθότι, πονηρός as an epithet of πνεῦμα : six in G. ἐπιστάτα, λέγειν παράβολήν.
Five times in G. and A. ἐξῆς, καθεξῆς, καθ’ ὅλης τῆς, προσέχετε ἑαυτοῖς, ὁ στρατηγὸς ὁ ὅστρ. τοῦ ἱεροῦ, ὁ ὕψιστος ὁ ὕψιστος (of God) : five in G. ἀνακρίνειν (in the legal sense), καὶ ὅστος, καὶ ὃς, λίμνη, ἐν μιᾷ τῶν.

1 Owing to the various readings it may be doubted either (1) whether the word is used by Luke, or (2) whether it is not used by some other writer. In the lists on pp. lii, liii, the lower number has generally been preferred in doubtful cases.
Twice in G. and A. ἀνάδεικται, ἀνακαθίζων, ἀναφαίνειν, ἀνευρισκόντες, ἀνταπαίτισαν, ἀπογραφή, ἀποτιγάσουσι, διατηρεῖν, διαυχρόνεσσα, διαβιβασμοί, ἐνεδρεῖς, ἐπιθέτης, εὐθύνον, τῷ ἔκχομεν, ἄχρα καροθ, κατακλειόντες, κατακόλουθος, κλάσις, κλίνει ή ἦλερα, κλινιδίον, ὄρινθος, παραβίασθαι, περιλάμβανες, περεόν εἰς εἰρήνην, προβάλλειν, προποτερεύεσθαι, προσοδοία, προσπάρχεις, στρατά, συνειναι, τραγανότης, τραγύς, χρυσόλιθης: twice in G. ἀγαρ, ἀνάπεποιεῖ, ἀντιπαρέχοσθαι, ἀπαράπτατες, ἀτέρ, αὐστηρός, βουνός, γελῶν, διαγγγελέσσαν, διαλειψάν, δοξη, ἐκκυκτηρίζειν, ἐκτελεῖν, ἐπιτελεῖν, ἐπανεχείσθαι, ἐφημερία, εὐγενεία, ἐργονομενεῖς, ἐυσταί, ἡ παῖς, πράκτωρ, προσεβία, προφέρειν, ὑπαρχονόν, ὑποκαταστάνειν, ὑποκρινέσθαι.

It is not worth while to make a complete list of the words (over 200 in number) which occur once in the Third Gospel and nowhere else in N.T. The following will give a good idea of their character:—

d'εραύνες, ἄρρονεῖς, ἀλλογενής, ἀμπελούργος, ἀνάδεικτης, ἀνάλημψις, ἀναφορέων, ἀντιβάλλειν, ἀπαραίτητα, ἀπελτήζειν, ἀποκλείειν, ἀποστατικῶν, ἀποτύπωσις, ἀριστερέων, ἀρχιτελών, ἀσπάσομαι, ἀφίλος, βολήν, βρῶσιμος, γῆρας, διαβάλλειν, διαγγέλλειν, διαλειψάν, διαμερίσμα, διαμεσός, διαπόμπη, διανυκτερεύειν, διαπραγματευόμεθα, διασκευὴ, διαχωρίζειν, δίηγημα, δύναμις, δυστυχεὶσα, ἐκκράτεισα, ἐκχωρεῖν, ἐκκύκτα, ἐκμάθειν, ἐνδέχεται, ἐπαρθείσαι, ἐπαυξήσεσθαι, τὸ ἐπιβάλλον, ἐπιμελεῖν, ἐπιπορεύεσθαι, ἐπιστησιμὸς, ἐπιστίχων, ἐπιτελεῖν, ἐφορεῖται, ἠμιπάς,

θεορία, θυμιάς, ἱερᾶς, ἱσόγελος, καταβαίνος, καταδείκτης, καταστρέφει, καταφύγειν, κεραία, κλείσις, κράτη, λαμπρός, λήρος, λυσίτελει, μετεωρίζειν, μερισμα, μένειν, μέμορα, οὖντος, ὀφθαλμοὺς, παμπληθεῖν, πανδοχείων, πανδοχεύω, παράβολας, παρακάλπτες, παρατηρήσεις, περικρύπτεις, περιοικεῖο, περιστασια, πήγανον, πίεσις, πνευκρίνον, πλημμύρα, πραγματεύεσθαι, προμελετῶν, προσαναβαίνειν, προσπαθεῖσα, προσεργαζόμεθα, προςφαίρεις, πτωτοποιοῦν, ῥήμα, σύλο, σίκερα, σιωπίσαν, στιομέρον, συνάμμος, συκομορία, συνκαταστάθηναι, συνκυρία, συσπέπτειν, συν-φύειν, συστήλωσις, τετραπλῶς, τραίμα, ὑγρός, ὑδρωπικός, ὑπο-στραυνύναι, φοβηθῶν, φρονίμως, χάσμα, ὁδόν.

But the words which are peculiar to Luke in N.T. are by no means even the chief of the marks of his style. Still more striking are those expressions and constructions which he uses frequently, or more frequently than any other writer. Many of these occur more often in S. Luke's writings than in all the rest of N.T. A collection of them is rendered much more useful by being to some extent classified; and the following lists have been made with a view to illustrating the affinities between the diction of S. Luke and of S. Paul and that of the Epistle to the Hebrews both jointly with the Pauline Epistles and also by itself. In this survey the Pastoral Epistles have been kept distinct from the main groups of the Pauline Epistles, in order to show their harmony with the diction of the Apostle's beloved companion. Words peculiar to Luke and to the Pastoral Epistles are not improbably Pauline. Words which are found in other Pauline Epistles as well as in the Pastoral Epistles and in Luke's writings are still more safely regarded as Pauline.

Eight classes have been made; and in them the very great variety of the words included,—many of them quite classical or of
classical formation,—illustrate the richness of S. Luke's vocabulary and his command of the Greek language. (1) Expressions peculiar to S. Luke and S. Paul in N.T. (2) Peculiar to S. Luke and S. Paul and the Epistle to the Hebrews. (3) Peculiar to S. Luke and the Epistle to the Hebrews. (4) Not found in any other Gospel and more frequent in S. Luke than in the rest of N.T. (5) Found in one or more of the other Gospels, but more frequent in S. Luke than in the rest of N.T. (6) Due to Hebrew influence. (7) Miscellaneous expressions and constructions which are specially frequent in his writings. (8) Expressions probably or possibly medical. In the first of these classes the second list contains expressions peculiar to the writers in question, although not frequent in Luke. The figures state the number of times which the word occurs in that book or group; and in fractions the upper figures indicates the number of times that the word occurs in the writings of Luke, the lower figure the number of times which it occurs elsewhere: e.g. in class 3 the fraction $\frac{2}{3}$ means twice in Luke's writings and once in Hebrews; and in classes 4 and 5 the fraction $\frac{7}{4}$ means seven times in Luke's writings and four times in the other books of N.T. Where various readings render the exact proportions doubtful a "c." is placed in front of the fraction; e.g. c. $\frac{7}{4}$.

In classes 1 and 2, when a reference to chapter and verse is given, this is the only instance of the use of the word in that book or group.

(1) Expressions peculiar to S. Luke and S. Paul in N.T.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>S. LUKE</th>
<th>S. PAUL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἀνθ' ἄν</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>xii. 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπολογεῖσθαι</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>xviii. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπενεπεύεσθαι</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποστολοί</td>
<td>xxiii. 41</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀργαλεῖα</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>xvi. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαθὸν ἐνοχῆν</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀργαία</td>
<td>ii. 24</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀριστάναι</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀριστάσθη</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀριστερά</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀριστερά</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>ix. 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κακοίριον</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κακογρίφειειν</td>
<td>v. 11</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κακοδίκει</td>
<td>v. 11</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κακολάβη</td>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
§ 6.] CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Characteristic</th>
<th>Luke</th>
<th>Acts</th>
<th>Paul</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Gosp.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταξιωθήματι</td>
<td>xx. 35</td>
<td>v. 41</td>
<td>2 Th. i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διάλογος τ. κυρίου</td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1 Th. i. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὀικονομία</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τὰ σερί</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεδέθαι, -ίδεθι</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1 Cor. iv. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψαλμός</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

All the above are proportionately common in S. Luke’s writings; but there are many more which illustrate the affinities between the two writers; e.g.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Characteristic</th>
<th>Luke</th>
<th>Acts</th>
<th>Paul</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἄγγις</td>
<td>xi. 44</td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Cor. xiv. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀρνίδιος</td>
<td>xii. 34</td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Th. v. 3</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αὐξανομένης</td>
<td>xii. 24</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. iii. 14</td>
<td>1 Tim. iv. 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνάγνωσις</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνάθεμα</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2?</td>
<td>2 Phil. i. 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνακρίνειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Phil. i. 23</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναλάκτειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Philem. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναλοεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Gal. v. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*ἀναπέμπειν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Gal. ii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναστάτων</td>
<td></td>
<td>7xxv. 21</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναπτάθειαν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναπτάθειαν</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxv. 14</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποστάσις</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxiv. 23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπάνθος</td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποστόλου</td>
<td></td>
<td>xiv. 12</td>
<td>Rom. xi. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνταποκρίνεσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>xiv. 6</td>
<td>Rom. ix. 20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀντικείσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀντιλαμβάνεσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>i. 54</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπειθεῖς</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxvi. 19</td>
<td>Rom. i. 30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπειλή</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Eph. vi. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποδεικνύοιαν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποβολή</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxvii. 22</td>
<td>Rom. xi. 15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*ἀπολύσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxii. 16</td>
<td>1 Cor. vi. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποστολή</td>
<td></td>
<td>i. 25</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποφάσεσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxiv. 16</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποθεοῦθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1 Tim. i. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀρεία; οἱ ἀρεία;</td>
<td></td>
<td>xvi. 8</td>
<td>Gal. ii. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀργοτρίῳ</td>
<td></td>
<td>vii. 7</td>
<td>1 Cor. ix. 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*ἀσφαλεῖα</td>
<td></td>
<td>i. 4</td>
<td>1 Th. v. 3</td>
<td>1 Cor. ix. 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπότομος</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxiii. 41</td>
<td>2 Th. iii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀχάριστος</td>
<td></td>
<td>vi. 35</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βαρβαρος</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. vi. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βιωτικός</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. ii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βυθιζεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. i. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δέχεσθαι οἰκείοις</td>
<td></td>
<td>v. 33</td>
<td>Phil. i. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δεκτός</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. vi. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>S. LUKE.</td>
<td>S. PAUL.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διαγγέλλειν</td>
<td>ix. 60</td>
<td>xxii. 26</td>
<td>Rom. ix. 17</td>
<td>2 Tim. iv. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διαίρειν</td>
<td>xv. 12</td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Cor. xii. 11</td>
<td>1 Tim. vi. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διάταγη</td>
<td></td>
<td>vii. 53</td>
<td>Rom. xiii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διερμηνεύειν</td>
<td>xxiv. 27</td>
<td>ix. 30</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δόγμα</td>
<td>ii. 1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δρόμος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Tim. vii. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δυνάμης</td>
<td>i. 52</td>
<td>viii. 27</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εἰ δὲ καὶ</td>
<td>xi. 18</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐρμανίς</td>
<td>x. 40</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rom. x. 20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἑνδοσθαί</td>
<td>xxiv. 49</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἑκακεῖν</td>
<td>xviii. 1</td>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἑκομισμὸς</td>
<td></td>
<td>xix. 39</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐξαρτίεσθαι</td>
<td>xxii. 5</td>
<td>xxi. 5</td>
<td>1 Cor. ix. 21</td>
<td>1 Tim. iv. 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐξοδευθεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>iv. 11</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. iii. 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐξουσία τ. σκότους</td>
<td>xxii. 53</td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐξουσίασθαι</td>
<td>xxii. 25</td>
<td></td>
<td>Col. i. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπάνειν</td>
<td>xvi. 8</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαναπάνασθαι</td>
<td>x. 6</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπέγειρεν</td>
<td>xiv. 7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Rom. ii. 17</td>
<td>1 Tim. v. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπεκείνα</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxiv. 4</td>
<td>Phil. ii. 16</td>
<td>2 Tim. ii. 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιμελεῖσθαι</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. vi. 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιτασσεῖν</td>
<td>i. 79</td>
<td>xxiv. 12</td>
<td>2 Cor. xi. 28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιτάσσειν</td>
<td></td>
<td>xxvii. 20</td>
<td>2 Cor. xi. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εὐαγγελιστής</td>
<td>xix. 12</td>
<td>xxi. 8</td>
<td>Eph. iv. 11</td>
<td>2 Tim. iv. 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εὐηγεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>xvii. 11</td>
<td>1 Cor. i. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εὐθειότερον</td>
<td>xvii. 23</td>
<td>xvii. 25</td>
<td>Rom. xii. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>έσείς τ. Πνεύματι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Γημία</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Γοργεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>v. 10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Tim. ii. 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Γωγοσεῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>xvii. 33</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Tim. vi. 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Θεάτρον</td>
<td></td>
<td>vii. 19</td>
<td>1 Cor. iv. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Καθῆκεν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Κατευθύνειν</td>
<td>i. 79</td>
<td>xxii. 22</td>
<td>Rom. i. 28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Κυνδεκαείς</td>
<td>viii. 23</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Κρατακοῦσθαι</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Cor. xv. 40</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Κυριεύειν</td>
<td>xxii. 25</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Λειτέω = fail</td>
<td>xxvii. 22</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μαρτυρεῖσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μεθιστάναι = en</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μεθοδεύεσθαι</td>
<td>xvi. 4</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μερίς</td>
<td>xii. 45</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μεταδίδοσθαι</td>
<td>x. 42</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μομοδοδάσκαλος</td>
<td>iii. 11</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μοσφίζεσθαι</td>
<td>v. 17</td>
<td>v. 34</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μονοθετεῖν</td>
<td>xx. 31</td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ξενία</td>
<td>xxviii. 23</td>
<td></td>
<td>Philem. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ξυράζεσθαι</td>
<td>xxi. 24</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 6.) CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE lvii</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>S. LUKE.</strong></td>
<td><strong>S. PAUL.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὄμοθυμαδόν</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Rom. xv. 6</td>
<td>2 Cor. xii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὄπτασία</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>xxvi. 19</td>
<td>Eph. iv. 24</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁσιότης</td>
<td>i. 75</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὑψώματα</td>
<td>iii. 14</td>
<td>Rom. xi. 9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παγία</td>
<td>xx. 34</td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πανάσπις</td>
<td>xi. 22</td>
<td></td>
<td>1 Th. iv. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πανούργα</td>
<td>iv. 23</td>
<td>1 Cor. xvi. 6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πάντως</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1 Cor. xiii. 5</td>
<td>Tit. iii. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραγγελία</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Eph. iii. 15</td>
<td>1 Tim. v. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παρασκευάζειν</td>
<td>x. 10</td>
<td>1 Tim. iii. 13</td>
<td>1 Tim. iii. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραχεμάζειν</td>
<td>xvii. 16</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραπτώματα</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παρατηρεῖν</td>
<td>ii. 4</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεποιθεῖν</td>
<td>iii. 25</td>
<td>Eph. ii. 12</td>
<td>Tit. iv. 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>περιήγησις</td>
<td></td>
<td>Philem. 9</td>
<td>Tit. ii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>περιμετέχειν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. xiii. 14</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπι πλείων</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πληροφορεῖν</td>
<td>i. 1</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πολιτεία</td>
<td>xxii. 28</td>
<td>1 Tim. iv. 14</td>
<td>1 Tim. v. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πολεμοεῖν</td>
<td>xxiii. 1</td>
<td>Tit. ii. 2</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προεξετάναι</td>
<td>ix. 21</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προορίζειν</td>
<td>vii. 52</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προδώτης</td>
<td>i. 16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προκατείλειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προδίδωσιν</td>
<td>vii. 11</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προετυχέσθαι</td>
<td>ii. 31</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρόδοσα</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Tim. iii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προτίμειν</td>
<td>xxiv. 2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσεχεῖν</td>
<td>iv. 28</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσπείται</td>
<td>xix. 36</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κατὰ πρόσωπον</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐβάλειν</td>
<td>ii. 31</td>
<td>2 Cor. xi. 25</td>
<td>2 Th. ii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἡβασμα</td>
<td>xii. 22</td>
<td>2 Th. ii. 4</td>
<td>2 Th. ii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σκοτεῖν</td>
<td>xvii. 23</td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σταυρίζειν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. vii. 26</td>
<td>1 Th. iii. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συγκαθίζειν</td>
<td>xxii. 25</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. vii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συγκλείειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συγχαίρειν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συμμπέμψειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συμφαίλειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. vii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνέπαθεν</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεχεῖ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεποιεῖσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνομίλειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεδριάζειν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνενεχόμενον</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεργαίνει</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεργῆ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνετέλεσθαι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Cor. viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(2) Expressions peculiar to S. Luke and S. Paul and the Epistle to the Hebrews.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>άμέματος</td>
<td>i. 6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tit. iii. 14</td>
<td>viii. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αναγκαῖος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>vii. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ανάμνῃσις</td>
<td>[xxii. 19]</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>x. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ανταποδίδουνα</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>x. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀξίουν</td>
<td>vii. 7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Th. i. 11</td>
<td>1 Tim. v. 17</td>
<td>2 x. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποτελθεῖσθαι</td>
<td>xix. 20</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Col. i. 5</td>
<td>2 Tim. iv. 8</td>
<td>ix. 27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπολύτρωσις</td>
<td>xxi. 28</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2 x. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀσφαλῆς</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Phil. iii. 1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>vi. 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀφυστάν.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2 Cor. xii. 8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>iii. 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βολή.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>vi. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διαμαρτύρεσθαι</td>
<td>xvi. 28</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1 Th. iv. 6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>ii. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δι’ ὑπ’ αἴτιαν</td>
<td>viii. 47</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>ii. 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκφάειν?</td>
<td>xv. 22</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td>i Tim. vi. 7</td>
<td>vi. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκπέφαειν</td>
<td>xxi. 36</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 x. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐφυναιμοῖν</td>
<td></td>
<td>ix. 22</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>?xi. 34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντυγχάνειν</td>
<td>xxv. 24</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>vii. 25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπίθεσις</td>
<td>viii. 18</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>vi. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταργεῖν</td>
<td>xiii. 7</td>
<td>24</td>
<td></td>
<td>2 Tim. i. 10</td>
<td>ii. 14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>λειτουργεῖν</td>
<td>xiii. 2</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rom. xv. 27</td>
<td></td>
<td>x. 11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
§ 6.] CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>leitourgia</td>
<td>i. 23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2 Tim. ii. 6</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>metaλambirthéνειν</td>
<td>nui</td>
<td>18?</td>
<td>iv. 7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*drίσεων</td>
<td>xxii. 22</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1 Tim. iv. 13</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παρατείνωει</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1 Tim. v. 13</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>περίκρεισθαι</td>
<td>i. 8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Tim. ii. 10</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σκληρόνειν</td>
<td>xix. 9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>x. 38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάξις</td>
<td>xx. 35</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>i. 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τυποστελλέω</td>
<td>iv. 18</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Cor. iii. 16</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χρείαν</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(3) Expressions peculiar to S. Luke's Writings and to the Epistle to the Hebrews.

(4) Expressions not found in the other Gospels and more frequent in S. Luke's Writings than in all the rest of N.T.

(5) Expressions found in one or more of the other Gospels, but more frequent in S. Luke's Writings than in all the rest of N.T.
The Gospel According to S. Luke

The frequent use of ἐγένετο is discussed at the end of ch. i. Add to this Luke's fondness for ἐνώπιον, which does not occur in Mt. or Mk. and only once in Jn. (xx. 30). It is found more than thirty times in Lk. and Acts, especially in the phrase ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ (i. 19, 75, xii. 6, xvi. 15) or κυρίον (i. 15). With this com-
§ 6. CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE

pare πρὸ προσώπου των (vii. 27, ix. 52, x. 1) and κατὰ πρόσωπον των (ii. 31). The frequent use of ἰδού (i. 38, ii. 34, 48, vii. 25, 27, 34, etc.) and καὶ ἰδού (i. 20, 31, 36, ii. 25, v. 12, vii. 12, 37, etc.) of ἤμερα for the matter of what is spoken (i. 65, ii. 15, 19, 51); of οἶκος in the sense of “family” (i. 27, 33, 69, ii. 4, x. 5, xix. 9); of ἐσ in the sense of ἀτι (v. 12, 17, viii. 22, xiii. 10, xx. 1) or of πρῶτος (xxiv. 1); of Ἠσιότος for “the Most High” (i. 32, 35, 76, vi. 35), illustrates the same kind of influence. So also do such expressions as ποιεῖν ἔλεος μετά (i. 72, x. 37) and μεγαλύνειν ἔλεος μετά (i. 58); ποιεῖν κράτος (i. 51); ἐκ κοιλίας μυτρός (i. 15); combinations with ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ or ἐν ταῖς κ., such as διαλογίζονται (iii. 15, v. 22; comp. xxiv. 38), διατρέω (v. 51), θόσται (i. 66, xxi. 14), συνβάλλειν (ii. 19); ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις (i. 5, 39, ii. 1, iv. 2, 25, v. 35, etc.); τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τοῦ σαββάτου (xiii. 14, 16, xiv. 5); with perhaps διὰ στόματος (i. 70), where both the expression and the omission of the article seem to be Hebraistic: in LXX we commonly have, however, ἐν τῷ στόματι or ἐκ τοῦ στόματος. Nearly all these expressions are found in the Acts also, in some cases very often. The frequent use of periphrastic tenses has been pointed out above (p. li) as being due in many cases to Hebraistic influence. The same may be said of the attributive or characterizing genitive, which is specially common in Luke (iv. 22, xvi. 8, 9, xviii. 6; comp. x. 6, xx. 34, 36); and of the frequent use of καὶ αὐτός (ii. 28, v. 1, 17, viii. 1, 22, xvii. 11, xix. 2), καὶ αὐτή (ii. 37), and καὶ αὐτοί (xiv. 1, xxiv. 14) after ἐγένετο, καὶ ἰδού, and the like. Phrases like δοξάζειν τὸν θεὸν (v. 25, 26, vii. 16, xiii. 13, xvii. 15, xviii. 43, xxiii. 47), ὁ λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ (v. 1, viii. 11, 21, xi. 28), and ἐπαιρεῖν τῇ φωνῇ (xi. 27) may be placed under the same head; and they all of them occur several times in the Acts.

In common with other N.T. writers S. Luke uses several Hebrew words, which may be mentioned here, although they are not specially common in his writings: ἄμην (iv. 24, xii. 37, xviii. 17, etc.), βεβεβούλ (xi. 15, 18, 19), γέννα (xii. 5), πάρσεα (ii. 41, xxii. 1, 7, 8, 11, 13, 15), σάββατον (iv. 16, 31, vi. 1, 2, 5, 6, 7, 9, etc.), σατανᾶς (x. 18, xi. 18, xiii. 16, etc.). Three others occur once in his Gospel and nowhere else in N.T.; βάτος (xvi. 6), κόρος (xvi. 7), σίκερα (i. 15). Other words, although Greek in origin, are used by him, as by other N.T. writers, in a sense which is due to Hebrew influence: ἀγγελός (i. 11, 13, 18, etc.), γραμματεύς (v. 21, 30, vi. 7, ix. 22, etc.), διάβολος (iv. 2-13, viii. 12), ἐονη (ii. 32, xviii. 32, xx. 24 δις, etc.), εἰρήνη (i. 79, ii. 29, vii. 50, etc.), κύριος (i. 6, 9, 11, 15, etc.); and ἔσημεριά (i. 5, 8) is a Greek word specially formed to express a Hebrew idea.
Miscellaneous Expressions and Constructions which are specially frequent in S. Luke's Writings.

In his use of the article he has several favourite constructions. He is very fond of \( \epsilon ν \tau \nu \) followed by a present infinitive to express time during which (i. 8, 21, ii. 6, 43, v. 1, 12, viii. 5, 42, etc.) or by an aorist infinitive to express time after which (ii. 27, iii. 21, ix. 34, 36, xi. 37, etc.); also of \( \tau ον \) with an infinitive to express purpose or result (i. 73, ii. 27, v. 7, xii. 42, etc.). He frequently employs \( \tau ον \) to introduce a whole clause, especially interrogations, much as we use inverted commas (i. 62, ix. 46, xix. 48, xxii. 2, 4, 23, 24, 37).

In the case of certain verbs he has a preference for special constructions. After verbs of speaking, answering, and the like he very often has \( προσ \) and the accusative instead of the simple dative. Thus, we have \( ειπείν \ προσ \) (i. 13, 18, 28, 34, 61, ii. 34, 48, 49, etc.), \( λαλείν \ προσ \) (i. 19, 55, ii. 15, 18, 20, xii. 3, etc.), \( λέγειν \ προσ \) (iv. 21, v. 36, vii. 24, vii. 25, ix. 23, etc.), \( άποκρίνεσθαι \ προσ \) (iv. 4, vi. 3, xiv. 37), \( γογγύζειν \ προσ \) (v. 30), \( συνετείν \ προσ \) (xxii. 23), \( συναλείπειν \ προσ \) (iv. 36). It often happens that where Mt. or Mk. has the dative, Luke has the accusative with \( προσ \) (Mt. ix. 11; Mk. ii. 22). Whereas others prefer \( εξήκρησθαι \ εκ \), he has \( εξήκρησθαι \ από \) (iv. 35, 41, v. 8, vii. 2, 29, 33, 35, 38, ix. 5, etc.) and for \( θαυμάζειν \ τι \) he prefers \( θαυμάζειν \ επί \ τινι \) (ii. 33, iv. 22, ix. 43, xx. 26). For \( θεραπεύειν \ νόσους \) he sometimes has \( θεραπεύειν \ από \ νόσουν \) (v. 15, vii. 21, viii. 2). He is fond of the infinitive after \( διά \ το \) (ii. 4, viii. 6, ix. 7, xi. 8, xviii. 5, etc.), \( μετά \ το \) (xii. 5, xxii. 20), and \( πρὸ \ τοῦ \) (ii. 21, xxii. 15). The quite classical \( εχεῖν \ τι \) is common (vii. 42, ix. 58, xi. 6, xii. 17, 50, xiv. 14). His use of the optative has been mentioned above (p. 11).

Participles with the article often take the place of substantives (ii. 27, iv. 16, viii. 34, xxii. 22, xxiv. 14). They are frequently added to verbs in a picturesque and classical manner: \( \alpha ναστάντες \ εξέβαλον \) (iv. 29), \( καθίσας \ εδίδασκεν \) (v. 3), \( σταθείς \ εκλέεσσαν \) (xviii. 40), \( στραφείς \ εσπερίμησαν \) (ix. 55), etc. They are sometimes strung together without a conjunction (i. 36, iv. 35, v. 11, 19, 25, etc.).

S. Luke is very fond of \( πᾶς \), and especially of the stronger form \( απάσ \). It is not always easy to determine which is the right reading; but \( απάσ \) is certainly very common (iii. 21, iv. 6, v. 26, viii. 37, ix. 15, xix. 37, 48, xxiii. 1; also in Acts). Elsewhere in N.T. \( απάσ \) is rare. Not unfrequently Luke has \( πᾶς \) or \( απάσ \) where the others have nothing (iii. 15, 16, 21, iv. 37, v. 11, 28, vi. 10, 17, 19, 30, vii. 35, etc.). \( πᾶς \ δ \ λαός \) and \( απάσ \ δ \ λ. \) are very freq.

In the use of certain prepositions he has some characteristic expressions: \( εἰς \ τὰ \ άντα \) (i. 44, ix. 44) and \( εἰς \ τὰ \ άκοάς \) (vii. 1), \( εν \ τοῖς \ άσιν \) (iv. 21) and \( εν \ μύσῳ \) (ii. 46, viii. 7, x. 3, xxii. 21, xxii. 27, 55,
§ 6. CHARACTERISTICS, STYLE, AND LANGUAGE lxiii

xxiv. 36); κατὰ τὸ ἱδος (i. 9, ii. 42, xxii. 39), τὸ εἰθυμένον (ii. 27), τὸ εἰσδόν (iv. 16), τὸ εὑρήμενον (ii. 24), and τὸ ὄρφημένον (xxii. 22); παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (vii. 38, viii. 35, 41, xvii. 16), whereas Mark has προς τ. πόδας (v. 22, vii. 25). Luke is very fond of σῶν, which is rather rare in the other Gospels but is very frequent in both of Luke's writings. Sometimes he has σῶν where the others have μετά (viii. 38, 51, xxii. 14, 56) or καί (xx. 1) or nothing (v. 19).

The pronouns αὐτός (see below) and οὗτος are specially common. The latter is added to a numeral, τρίτην ταύτην ἡμέραν (xxiv. 21), to make it more definite. τις ἐξ ὑμῶν; is almost peculiar to him (xi. 5, xii. 25, xiv. 28, xv. 4, xvii. 7), and so also is τις ἐστιν οὗτος δς; (v. 21, vii. 49). The indefinite τις with nouns is freq.

In using conjunctions he is very fond of combining δὲ with καὶ, a combination which occurs twenty-six times in his Gospel (ii. 4, iii. 9, 12, iv. 41, v. 10, 36, vi. 6, ix. 61, etc.) and seven in the Acts. It is rare in the other Gospels. His Hebraistic use of καὶ αὐτός, αὐτῇ or αὐτοῖ, and of καὶ ἰδοῦ, to introduce the apodosis to ἐγένετο and the like, has been pointed out above (p. lxi). But Luke is also fond of καὶ αὐτός at the beginning of sentences or independent clauses (i. 17, 22, iii. 23, iv. 15, v. 37, vi. 20, xv. 14, etc.), and of καὶ οὗτος, which is peculiar to him (i. 36, viii. 41?, xvi. 1, xx. 28). In quoting sayings he most frequently uses δὲ, and ἐκπευν δὲ occurs forty-six times in the Gospel and fourteen in the Acts. It is not found in Mt. or Mk., and perhaps only once in Jn. (xii. 6 [viii. 11] ix. 37?): they prefer δ ἐκπευν, or καὶ λέγει, κ.τ.λ. Luke also has ἐκεῖν δὲ nine times in the Gospel; it occurs twice in Mk., once in Jn., and never in Mt. Five times he begins a sentence with καὶ ὃς (temporal), which is not found elsewhere in N.T. (xv. 25, xix. 41, xxii. 66, xxiii. 26; Acts i. 10). The interrogative ἐσ is found eighteen times in Gospel and Acts (vi. 7, 9, xii. 23, xiv. 28, 31, xxii. 49, 67, etc.), ἐσ δὲ μη γε five times, and ἐσ ἀρα twice. All of these are comparatively rare elsewhere.

The idiomatic attraction of the relative is very common in both books (i. 4, ii. 20, iii. 19, v. 9, ix. 36, 43, xii. 46, xv. 16, xix. 37, etc.): it is rare in Mt. and Mk., and is not common in Jn.

After τοῦτο he has ἐστιν in Gospel and Acts (x. 11, xii. 39, etc.); Mt. and Mk. never; Jn. only after διὰ τοῦτο.

He is fond of combinations of cognate words, e.g. φυλάσσεις φυλάκας (ii. 8), ἐφοβόθησαν φόβον μέγαν (ii. 9), βαπτισθέντες τὸ βάπτισμα (vii. 29), ἡ ἄστρατη ἄσπρόποτος (xxiv. 24). Some of these are Hebraistic, especially such as ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα (xxii. 15).

(8) Expressions probably or possibly medical.

It was perhaps not until 1841 that attention was called to the existence of medical phraseology in the writings of S. Luke. In the
Gentleman’s Magazine for June 1841 a paper appeared on the subject, and the words ἀχλὸς (Acts xiii. 11), κραυγάλη (Lk. xxi. 34), παραλειμένος (v. 18, 24; Acts viii. 7, ix. 33), παροξυσμός (Acts xv. 39), συνεχομένη πυρετῶ μεγάλῳ (Lk. iv. 38), and ὕδρωπτικός (xiv. 2) were given as instances of technical medical language. Since then Dr. Plumptre and others have touched on the subject; and in 1882 Dr. Hobart published his work on The Medical Language of St. Luke, Dublin and London. He has collected over 400 words from the Gospel and the Acts, which in the main are either peculiar to Luke or are used by him more often than by other N.T. writers, and which are also used (and often very frequently) by Greek medical writers. He gives abundant quotations from such writers, that we may see for ourselves; and the work was well worth doing. But there can be no doubt that the number of words in the Gospel and the Acts which are due to the Evangelist’s professional training is something very much less than this. It may be doubted whether there are a hundred such words. But even if there are twenty-five, the fact is a considerable confirmation of the ancient and universal tradition that “Luke the beloved physician” is the author of both these books. Of Dr. Hobart’s long list of words more than eighty per cent. are found in LXX, mostly in books known to S. Luke, and sometimes occurring very frequently in them. In all such cases it is more reasonable to suppose that Luke’s use of the word is due to his knowledge of LXX, rather than to his professional training. In the case of some words, both of these causes may have been at work. In the case of others, the medical training, and not familiarity with LXX, may be the cause. But in most cases the probability is the other way. Unless the expression is known to be distinctly a medical one, if it occurs in books of LXX which were known to Luke, it is probable that his acquaintance with the expression in LXX is the explanation of his use of it. If the expression is also found in profane authors, the chances that medical training had anything to do with Lk.’s use of it become very remote. It is unreasonable to class as in any sense medical such words as ἄθροιζεν, ἀκοῇ, ἀναιρεῖν, ἀναλαμβάνειν, ἀνορθόν, ἀπατεῖν, ἀπαλλάσσειν, ἀπολέον, ἀπορεῖν, ἀσφάλεια, ἀφεσις, etc. etc. All of these are frequent in LXX, and some of them in profane authors also.

Nevertheless, when Dr. Hobart’s list has been well sifted, there still remains a considerable number of words, the occurrence or frequency of which in S. Luke’s writings may very possibly be due to the fact of his being a physician. The argument is a cumulative one. Any two or three instances of coincidence with medical writers may be explained as mere coincidences: but the large number of coincidences renders this explanation unsatisfactory for
all of them; especially where the word is either rare in LXX, or not found there at all.

The instances given in the Gentleman's Magazine require a word of comment. Galen in treating of the diseases of the eye gives ἀχλύς as one of them, and repeatedly uses the word, which occurs nowhere else in N.T. or LXX. Perhaps κραυγή, which in bibl. Grk. is found Lk. xxi. 34 only, is a similar instance. It occurs more than once in Aristophanes, but is frequent in medical writers of the nausea which follows excess. In παραλειμένος we have a stronger instance. Whereas the other Evangelists use παραλυτικός, Luke in harmony with medical usage has παραλειμένος, as also has Aristotle, a physician's son (Eth. Nic. i. 13. 15). But this use may come from LXX, as in Heb. xii. 12. That παρομοίωμαι is a medical term is indisputable; but as early as Demosthenes it is found in the sense of exasperation, as also in LXX (Deut. xxxix. 28; Jer. xxxix. [xxxii.] 37). The instance in Lk. iv. 38 is perhaps a double one: for συνεχομένη is possibly, and πυρετὸς μεγάλῳ probably, a medical expression. Moreover, here Mt. and Mk. have merely πυρεσσοῦσα, and in Acts xxviii. 8 we have the parallel πυρετοῖς καὶ δυσεντερίῳ συνεχόμενον. In υδρωπικός we have a word peculiar to Luke in bibl. Grk. and perhaps of purely medical origin.

By adopting doubtful or erroneous readings Hobart makes other instances double, e.g. ἐπέσεσεν for ἐπέσεν (Acts xiii. 11), βαρμύρειν for βαρμυρίαν (Lk. xxii. 34). Again, whether or no ἀναπτύσσεις has any medical flavour, Lk. iv. 17 must not be quoted in connexion with it, for there the true reading is ἀναλίγκης.

To the examples given in the Gentleman's Magazine may perhaps be added such instances as δικτύλῳ προσφαιδέο (xiv. 46), where Mt. has δικτύλῳ κυνῆς: διὰ τρήματος βελόνης (xviii. 25), where Mk. has δία τρυγολίας μαφίδος: ἔστη ἡ ῥάσις τοῦ αἵματος (viii. 44), where Mk. has ἐχυρώθη ἡ πηγὴ τ. αἵματος: ἐστερεωθήκασαν αἱ βάσεις αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰ σφυρά (Acts iii. 7); and more doubtfully ὁδώντων τέσσαρων ἄρχαις καθίεμενον (Acts x. 11) and ἀνεκάθισον (vii. 15; Acts ix. 40).

Luke alone relates what may be called the surgical miracle of the healing of Malchus' ear (xxii. 51). And perhaps the marked way in which he distinguishes demoniacal possession from disease (vi. 18, xiii. 32; Acts xix. 12) may be put down to medical training. His exactness in stating how long the person healed had been afflicted (xiii. 11; Acts ix. 33) and the age of the person healed (viii. 42; Acts iv. 22) is a feature of the same kind. For other possible instances see notes on iv. 35, v. 12, vii. 10.

The coincidences between the preface of the Gospel and the opening words of some medical treatises are remarkable (see small print, pp. 5, 6). And it is worth noting that Luke alone records Christ's quotation of the proverb, Ἰατρὴ, θεράπευσον σεαυτόν.
(iv. 23); and that almost the last words that he records in the Acts are S. Paul’s quotation from Is. vi., which ends καὶ λάτομαι αὐτοῦς (xxviii. 26, 27).

The following table will illustrate some characteristics of S. Luke’s diction as compared with that of the other Synoptists:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>S. MATTHEW</th>
<th>S. MARK</th>
<th>S. LUKE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iii. 10. ἡδι ὅε.</td>
<td>i. 10. τὸ πνεῦμα.</td>
<td>iii. 9. ἡδι ὅε καλ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii. 16. πνεῦμα Θεοῦ.</td>
<td>i. 11. φωνὴ ἐκ τ. υἱρ-</td>
<td>iii. 22. τὸ πν. τὸ ἀγιον.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii. 17. φωνὴ ἐκ τ. υἱρ-</td>
<td>iv. 1. ἀνήχθη.</td>
<td>iii. 22. φωνὴν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv. 1. ἀνήχθη.</td>
<td>i. 12. τὸ πν. αὐτῶν ἐκβάλ-</td>
<td>iv. 1. ὑπέστησεν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv. 5, 8. παραλαμβάνει.</td>
<td></td>
<td>iv. 5, 9. ἡγαγεν, ἀνα-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv. 18. τὴν θάλασσαν.</td>
<td>i. 16. τὴν θάλασσαν.</td>
<td>iv. 14. ὑπέστησεν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv. 20. ἄφωνται τὰ δικτυά.</td>
<td>i. 18. ἄφωνται τὰ δικτυά.</td>
<td>v. 1. τὴν λίμνην.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 2. λεπτὸς προσελθὼν</td>
<td>i. 40. λεπτὸς παρακάλων</td>
<td>v. 11. ἄφωνται πάντα.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσεκύνηται αὐτῷ.</td>
<td>αὐτῶν καὶ γονιμοτεύτων.</td>
<td>v. 12. ἀνήρ πλήρης</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 4. καὶ λέγει δ Ἰησοῦς.</td>
<td>i. 44. καὶ λέγει.</td>
<td>λέσσας πεσῶν ἐπὶ πρός-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix. 2. προσέβρασαν αὐτῷ</td>
<td>iii. 2. φέροντες πρὸς αὐτὸν</td>
<td>ωπον ἐδέχθη αὐτοῦ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραλυτικῷν.</td>
<td>παραλυτικόν.</td>
<td>v. 14. καὶ αὐτὸς παρ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix. 7. ἐγερθέν.</td>
<td>i. 12. ἡγέρθη καὶ εὐθός.</td>
<td>ἀγγελείην.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix. 8. ἐφοβθησαν.</td>
<td>i. 12. ἐξιστάσαται.</td>
<td>v. 18. ἀνραφεὶς φέροντες</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix. 9. Μαθαίων λεγόμενον,</td>
<td>ii. 14. Δευείν.</td>
<td>. . . παραλαμβάνεν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii. 50. τὸ θέλημα τ. σωτ-</td>
<td>iii. 35. τὸ θέλημα τ.</td>
<td>v. 25. παραχρήμα ἀν-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ρος μου.</td>
<td>Θεοῦ.</td>
<td>αστάτι εὐώπιον αὐτῶν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xiii. 7. ἐπὶ τὰς ἀκάνθας.</td>
<td>iv. 7. εἰς τὰς ἀκάνθας.</td>
<td>v. 26. ἐπιλήθησαν φό-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σιλείας.</td>
<td>iv. 16. λαμβανόμεθα.</td>
<td>v. 27. δρόματι Δευείν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xiii. 20. λαμβάνων.</td>
<td>iv. 17. σκανδαλίζομαι.</td>
<td>viii. 21. τὸν λόγον τ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xiii. 21. σκανδαλίζεται.</td>
<td>iv. 38. διδάκαλε.</td>
<td>Θεοῦ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. 15. καλουν λόγον.</td>
<td>v. 7. ὁρίζω σε.</td>
<td>viii. 7. ἐν μέσῳ τ. ἀκαν-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 21. κύριε.</td>
<td>v. 11. ἀγέλη χοίρων μεγ-</td>
<td>θαν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 30. ἀγέλη χοίρων</td>
<td>iv. 16. λαμβάνομεν.</td>
<td>viii. 11. τ. λόγοτο τ. Θεοῦ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωλῶν.</td>
<td>iv. 17. σκανδαλίζομαι.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσελθὼν προσεκύνηται αὐτῷ.</td>
<td>v. 7. ὁρίζω σε.</td>
<td>viii. 13. ἀφιστάναι.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix. 18. ἐτελεσθει.</td>
<td>v. 11. ἀγέλη χοίρων μεγ-</td>
<td>viii. 16. λόγων ἄγας.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi. 15. λέγει.</td>
<td>χισυσαγώνων καὶ πίπτει πρὸς τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ.</td>
<td>viii. 28. δὲσμαι σου.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. 23. ἐσχάτοις ἔχει.</td>
<td>vi. 29. εὐθὸς ἐξηράνθη ἢ</td>
<td>viii. 32. ἀγέλη χοίρων</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xi. 44. ἐσχάτοις ἔχει.</td>
<td>πυγῇ.</td>
<td>Ικανῶν.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vii. 11. ἐκπορευόμενοι ἐκεί-</td>
<td>viii. 42. καὶ αὐτὴ ἀπέ-</td>
<td>viii. 41. καὶ Ποῦ ἔλεγεν</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θθησαί.</td>
<td>θης ἢ μύσις.</td>
<td>ἄνηρ καὶ αὐτὸς ἄρχου τῆς</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vii. 29. ἐπηρώτα.</td>
<td>ix. 5. ἐξερχόμενοι ἀν-</td>
<td>συναγωγῆς ὑπῆρχεν καὶ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 20. εἰπεν ὅε.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
These are only specimens taken from a large number of instances, and selected for their brevity and the ease with which they admit of comparison. The student who has mastered the main features of Luke's style will be able to find many more for himself.

§ 7. THE INTEGRITY OF THE THIRD GOSPEL.

This question may be regarded as naturally following the discussion of S. Luke's peculiarities and characteristics, for it is by a knowledge of these that we are able to solve it. The question has been keenly debated during the last forty years, and may now be said to be settled, mainly through the exertions of Volkmar, Hilgenfeld, and Sanday. Dr. Sanday's article in the Fortnightly Review, June 1875, in answer to Supernatural Religion, was pronounced by Bishop Lightfoot to be "able and (as it seems to me) unanswerable" (On Sup. Rel. p. 186). This article was incor-
porated in *The Gospels in the Second Century*, Macmillan, 1876, now unfortunately out of print, and it remains unanswered. It is now conceded on all sides that Marcion's Gospel does not represent the original S. Luke, and that our Third Gospel has not been largely augmented and interpolated, especially by the addition of the first three chapters and the last seven verses; but that Marcion's Gospel is an abridgment of our S. Luke, which therefore was current before Marcion began to teach in Rome in or before A.D. 140. The statements of early Christian writers (not to be accepted as conclusive without examination) have been strongly confirmed, and it is right to speak of Marcion's Gospel as a “mutilated” or “amputated” edition of S. Luke.

Irenæus says of Marcion: *id quod est secundum Lucam evangelium circumcidens* (i. 27, 2, iii. 12. 7) ; and again: *Marcion et qui ab eo sunt, ad intercidentes conversi sunt Scripturam, quasdam in totum non cognoscentes, secundum Lucam autem evangelium et epistolam Pauli decurtantes, hoc sola legitima esse dicunt, quae ipsi minoraverunt* (iii. 12. 12). Similarly Tertullian: *Quis tam comesor mus Ponticus quam qui evangelia corrisit?* (Adv. Marcion. i. 1). Marcion evangelio suo nulliam adscribit auctorem. . . . *ex iis commentatoribus quos habemus Lucam videtur Marcion elegisse quem ediderit (ibid. iv. 2).* Epiphanius also: ὅ ἐκ γὰρ χαρακτῆρι τοῦ κατὰ Λουκᾶν σημαίνει τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ὅσε ἐκ ξηροπυρασται μὴ ἄρχην ἑκεῖν, μὴ τέλος, ἱοποιοῦν βεβαιωμένου ὕπερ πολλῶν σημάτων ἐπέκει τὸ τρόπον* (Phil. i. 3. 11, Migne, xli. 709). Epiphanius speaks of additions, τὰ ἐκ προστίθησιν: but these were very trifling, perhaps only some two or three dozen words.

The evidence of Tertullian and Epiphanius as to the contents of Marcion's Gospel is quite independent, and it can be checked to some extent by that of Irenæus. Their agreement is remarkable, and we can determine with something like certainty and exactness the parts of the Third Gospel which Marcion omitted; not at all because he doubted their authenticity, but because he disliked their contents. They contradicted his doctrine, or did not harmonize well with it, or in some other way displeased him. In this arbitrary manner he discarded i. ii. and iii. excepting iii. 1, with which his Gospel began. Omitting iii. 2–iv. 13, 17–20, 24, he went on continuously to xi. 28. His subsequent omissions were xi. 29–32, 49–51, xiii. 1–9, 29–35, xv. 11–32, xvii. 5–10, xviii. 31–34, xix. 29–48, xx. 9–18, 37, 38, xxi. 1–4, 18, 21, 22, xxii. 16–18, 28–30, 35–38, 49–51, xxiv. 47–53. Perhaps he also omitted vii. 29–35; and he transposed iv. 27 to xvii. 18.

It should be observed that not only does Marcion's Gospel

1 An exception must be made of the author of *The Four Gospels as Historical Records*, Norgate, 1895, pp. 93–95. The work is retrograde, and rakes together criticisms and positions which have been rendered impotent and untenable. One is tempted to apply to it the author's own words (respecting a volume of very real merit and ability, which has rendered signal service to the cause of truth), that it “may be said, without much injustice, to beg every question with which it deals” (p. 491).
contain nearly all the sections which are peculiar to Luke, but it contains them in the same order. Where Luke inserts something into the common tradition, Marcion has the insertion; where Luke omits, Marcion omits also. This applies in particular to "the great intercalation" (ix. 51–xviii. 14) as well as to smaller insertions; and this minute agreement, step by step, between Marcion and Luke renders the hypothesis of their independence incredible. The only possible alternatives are that Marcion has expurgated our Third Gospel, or that our Third Gospel is an expansion of Marcion's; and it can be demonstrated that the second of these is untenable.

(1) In most cases we can see why Marcion omitted what his Gospel did not contain. He denied Christ's human birth; therefore the whole narrative of the Nativity and the genealogy must be struck out. The Baptism, Temptation, and Ascension involved anthropomorphic views which he would dislike. All allusions to the O.T. as savouring of the kingdom of the Demiurge must be struck out. And so on. In this way most of the omissions are quite intelligible. The announcement of the Passion (xviii. 31–34) and the triumphal entry into Jerusalem, etc. (xix. 29–48), were probably disliked as being fulfilsments of O.T. prophecy. It is less easy to see Marcion's objection to the Prodigal Son (xv. 11–32) and the massacre of Galileans, etc. (xiii. 1–9); but our knowledge of his strange tenets is imperfect, and these passages probably conflicted with some of them. But such changes as "all the righteous" for "Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets" (xiii. 28), or "the Lord's words" for "the law" (xvi. 17), or "those whom the god of that world shall account worthy" for "they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world" (xx. 35), are thoroughly intelligible. Others which his critics supposed to be wilful depravations of the text are mere differences of reading found in other authorities; e.g. the omission of αἰώνων (x. 25) and of ἡ μεριστήν (xii. 14); and the insertion of καὶ καταλύοντα τὸν νόμον καὶ τοὺς προφῆτας (xxiii. 2).

(2) But the chief evidence (in itself amounting to something like demonstration) that Marcion abridged our S. Luke, rather than the Evangelist expanded Marcion, is found in the peculiarities and characteristics of Luke's style and diction. These run through our Gospel from end to end, and on the average are as frequent in the portions which Marcion omitted as in the rest. In the first two chapters they are perhaps somewhat more frequent than elsewhere. It is quite incredible that the supposed interpolator made a minute analysis of the style and diction of Marcion's Gospel, practised himself in it, and then added those portions of our Gospel which Marcion did not include in his Gospel: and that he accomplished this feat without raising a suspicion. Such a feat in
that age would have been a literary miracle. Only those who have worked through the passages expunged by Marcion, carefully marking what is peculiar to Luke or characteristic of him, can estimate the full force of this argument. But the analysis of a few verses will be instructive.

The dotted lines indicate that the expression is found more often in Luke's writings than in the rest of N.T., and the fraction indicates the proportion: e.g. the $\frac{6}{7}$ with καθήλευ means that καθαρέω occurs six times in Lk. and Acts, and three elsewhere in the rest of N.T. The plain lines indicate that the expression is peculiar to Luke in N.T., and the figure states the number of times in which it occurs in his writings: e.g. κατὰ τὸ θὸς occurs thrice in Lk. and Acts, and nowhere else in N.T.

Καθήλευ $\frac{6}{7}$ δυνάστας ἀπὸ θρόνων, καὶ ὕψωσεν ταπεινοὺς, πεινώτας ἐνέπλησεν $\frac{2}{3}$ ἀγαθῶν, καὶ πλουτοῦσας ἐξαπέστειλεν $\frac{1}{3}$ κενοὺς. ἀντελάβετο Ἰσραήλ παῖδος $\frac{1}{2}$ αὐτοῦ, μνησθήναι ἐλέους (καθὼς ἠλάλησεν πρὸς τοὺς πατέρας ήμῶν) τῷ Ἀβραὰμ καὶ τῷ στέρματι αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. Ἐμείνεν δὲ Μαρίαμ σὺν $\frac{1}{3}$ αὐτῆς ὡς μήνας $\frac{10}{9}$ τρεῖς, καὶ ὑπέστρεφεν $\frac{8}{3}$ εἰς τὸν οἶκον αὐτῆς (ι. 52–56).

Καὶ ἐπορεύοντο οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ κατ' ἐτοὺς $\frac{2}{3}$ εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα τῇ ἐορτῇ τοῦ πάσχα, καὶ ἤρεν ἐγένετο ἐτῶν $\frac{2}{3}$ δώδεκα, ἀναβαίνοντων αὐτῶν κατὰ τὸ ἔθος τῆς ἑορτῆς, καὶ τελειωσάντων τὰς ἡμέρας, ἐν τῷ ὑποστρέφεσθαι $\frac{2}{3}$ αὐτῶν ὑπέμευσεν Ἰησοῦς ὁ παῖς ἐν Ἱεροσόλυμα καὶ ὄφεις ἐγνωσαν οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ νομίσαντες $\frac{1}{11}$ δὲ αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ συνοδῇ εἶναι ἠλθὼν ἡμέρας δύον, καὶ ἀνεχότουν 3 αὐτὸν ἐν τοῖς συγγενεῖ καὶ τοῖς 2 γυναικοῖς $\frac{1}{12}$ καὶ μὴ εὗρόντες ὑπεστρέφοντας $\frac{8}{9}$ εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα, ἀναγρήστουν 3 αὐτόν, καὶ ἠγένετο μὲθ' ἡμέρας τρεῖς, ἐθῶν αὐτὸν εἰς τὸ ἱερόν καθεξέμενον ἐν μέσῳ τῶν διδασκάλων, καὶ ἀκούοντα αὐτῶν, καὶ ἐπερωτῶντας αὐτοὺς ἔξιστανος $\frac{10}{11}$ δὲ πάντες οἱ ἀκούοντες αὐτοῦ ἔπι τῇ συνέσει καὶ ταῖς ἀποκρίσεσιν αὐτοῦ (ιι. 41–47).

§ 8. THE TEXT.

The authorities quoted for the various readings are taken from different sources, of which Tischendorf's Nov. Test. Græc. vol. i. ed. 8, Lipsiae, 1869, and Sanday's App. ad Nov. Test. Steph., Oxonii, 1889, are the chief. The Patristic evidence has been in many cases verified. Gregory's Prolegomena to Tischendorf, Lipsiae, 1884–94, and Miller's edition of Scrivener's Introduction to the Criticism of N.T., Bell, 1894, must be consulted by those who desire more complete information respecting the authorities.
§ 8. THE TEXT lxxi

(1) Greek Manuscripts.

Primary uncials.

Cod. Sinaiticus, saec. iv. Brought by Tischendorf from the Convent of St. Catherine on Mt. Sinai; now at St. Petersburg. Contains the whole Gospel complete.

Its correctors are

\( ^\text{N} \) contemporary, or nearly so, and representing a second MS. of high value;

\( ^\text{N}^* \) attributed by Tischendorf to saec. vi.;

\( ^\text{N}^* \) attributed to the beginning of saec. vii. Two hands of about this date are sometimes distinguished as \( ^\text{N}^\text{ea} \) and \( ^\text{N}^\text{eb} \).


The corrector B\(^3\) is nearly of the same date and used a good copy, though not quite so good as the original. Some six centuries later the faded characters were retraced, and a few new readings introduced by B\(^3\).

B. Cod. Vaticanus, saec. iv. In the Vatican Library certainly since 1533 \(^1\) (Bati\^ffol, \textit{La Vaticane de Paul iii, etc.}, p. 86). Complete.

C. Cod. Ephraemi Rescriptus, saec. v. In the National Library at Paris. Contains the following portions of the Gospel:


These four MSS. are parts of what were once complete Bibles, and are designated by the same letter throughout the LXX and N.T.


X. Cod. Monacensis, sāec. ix. In the University Library at Munich. Contains i. 1-37, ii. 19-iii. 38, iv. 21-x. 37, xi. 1-xviii. 43, xx. 46-xxiv. 53.


If these uncials were placed in order of merit for the textual criticism of the Gospel, we should have as facile princeps B, with N as equally easily second. Then T, Σ, L, C, R. The Western element which sometimes disturbs the text of B is almost entirely absent from the Gospels.

Secondary Uncials.

E. Cod. Basileensis, sāec. viii. In the Public Library at Basle. Contains the whole Gospel, except iii. 4-15 and xxiv. 47-53.


Only six uncial MSS., N B K M S U, afford complete copies of all four Gospels.

(2) VERSIONS.

The Versions quoted are the following:

- The Latin (Latt.)
- The Vetus Latina (Lat. Vet.)
- The Vulgate (Vulg.)
- The Egyptian (Aegyptt.)
- The Bohairic (Boh.)
- The Sahidic (Sah.)
- The Syriac (Syrr.)
- The Curetonian (Cur.)
- The Sinaitic (Sin.)
- The Peshitto (Pesh.)
§ 9. LITERARY HISTORY

We are not yet in a position to determine the relation of the recently discovered Sinaitic Syriac (Syr-Sin.) to the other Syriac Versions and to other representatives of primitive texts; and it would be rash for one who is ignorant of Syriac to attempt a solution of this problem. But the readings of Syr-Sin., as given in the translation by Mrs. Lewis, are frequently quoted in the notes, so that the reader may judge to what extent they support the text adopted in this commentary.

It should be noticed that four of the seven instances of Conflate Readings, cited by WH. (ii. pp. 99-104) as proof of the comparative lateness of the traditional text, are found in this Gospel (ix. 10, xi. 54, xii. 18, xxiv. 53). Mr. Miller, in his new edition of Scrivener's Introduction to the Criticism of the N.T. (Bell, 1894), denies the cogency of the proof; but the only case with which he attempts to deal, and that inadequately (ii. pp. 292, 293), is Lk. xxiv. 53. See the Classical Review, June 1896, p. 264.

§ 9. LITERARY HISTORY.

It is not easy to determine where the literary history of the Third Gospel begins. The existence of the oral tradition side by side with it during the first century of its existence, and the existence of many other documents (i. 1) previous to it, which may have resembled it, or portions of it, very closely, are facts which render certainty impossible as to quotations which bear considerable resemblance to our Gospel. They may come from this Gospel; but they may also have another source. Again, there are possibilities or probabilities which have to be taken into account. We do not know how soon Harmonies of two, or three, or four Gospels were constructed. The Third Gospel itself is a combination of documents; and there is nothing improbable in the supposition that before Tatian constructed his Diatessaron others had made combinations of Matthew and Luke, or of all three Synoptic Gospels (Sanday, Bampton Lectures, p. 302). Some early quotations of the Gospel narrative look as if they may have come either from material which the Evangelists used, or from a compound of their works, rather than from any one of them as they have come down to us. On the other hand the difficulty of exact quotation must be remembered. MSS. were
not abundant, and even those who possessed them found a difficulty in "verifying their references," when rolls were used and not pages, and when neither verses nor even chapters were numbered or divided. In quoting from memory similar passages of different Gospels would easily become mixed; all the more so, if the writers who quote were in the habit of giving oral instruction in the Gospel narrative; for in giving such instruction they would be in the habit of constructing a compound text out of the words which they chanced to remember from any two or three Gospels. What they wanted to convey was the substance of "the Gospel," and not the exact wording of the Gospel according to Matthew, or Mark, or Luke.

There is nothing in the Epistle of Barnabas which warrants us in believing that the writer knew the Third Gospel: and the coincidence of κοινωνήσεις ἐν πάσιν τῷ πλησιον σου, καὶ ὦκ ἐρείς ὅπια ἐίναι (xix. 8) with Acts iv. 32 is too slight to be relied upon. Comp. Didaché iv. 8. Indeed it is not impossible that this Epistle was written before our Gospel (A.D. 70–80). In the Epistle of Clement, which doubtless is later than the Gospel (A.D. 95, 96), we have the perplexing phenomena alluded to above.

Mt. v. 7, vii. 1, 2. Clem. Rom. Cor. xiii. 2. Lk. vi. 36–38,

This quotation is found in the Epistle of Polycarp (ii. 3) in this form: μημονευόντες δε ὄν εἶπεν ὅ κύριος διδάσκων· μη κρίνετε, ὑνα μη κρίνετε· ἀφίητε, καὶ ἀφέβητα ὑμῖν· ἔλεητε, ὑνα ἔλεηθήτε σε. And Clement of Alexandria (Strom. ii. 18, p. 476, ed. Potter) has it exactly as Clement of Rome, with the exception of ἀντιμετρηθήσεται for μετρηθήσεται: but he is perhaps quoting his namesake. If not, then the probability that both are quoting a source different from any of our Gospels becomes much greater (Resch, Agrapha, pp. 96, 97).
Here again Clement of Alexandria (Strom. iii. 18, p. 561) quotes exactly as Clement of Rome, with the exception of "οὐκ" after "εἰ", and the omission of "τὴν" before "θαλάσσαν". In Clem. Rom. Cor. lxxvi. 3 we have a composite quotation (Is. xiii. 11; Ps. xxxiii. ro; Job v. 11, etc.), which may possibly have been influenced by Lk. i. 52, 53, xiv. 11, xviii. 14; but nothing can be built on this possibility. We must be content to leave it doubtful whether Clement of Rome knew our Gospel according to Luke; and the same must be said of Polycarp (see above) and of Ignatius. In Eph. xiv. we have φανερόν τὸ δεῦρον ἀπὸ τοῦ καρποῦ αὐτοῦ, which recalls ἐκ γὰρ τοῦ καρποῦ τὸ δεύερον γινώσκεται (Mt. xii. 33) and ἐκαστὸν γὰρ δεῦρον ἐκ τοῦ ἱδίου καρποῦ γινώσκεται (Lk. vi. 44). Smyr. iii. we have the very remarkable passage which perplexed Origen, Eusebius, and Jerome as to its source: δὴ πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρον ἠλθεντ, ἐφη αὐτῶις: Ἀδάμτε, ψηλαφήσατε με, καὶ ἔιπε σοι οὐκ εἰμι δαιμόνιον ἄσωματον. This may be a condensation of Lk. xxiv. 36-39, or may come from oral tradition or a lost document. Of other possibilities, τὸ πῦρ τὸ ἄσβεστον (Eph. xvi.) recalls Mk. ix. 43 rather than Lk. iii. 17: καλοὶς μαθητᾶς ἔως φιλής, χάρις σου οὐκ ἐστιν (Polyc. ii.) is not very close to Lk. vi. 32: ἧδοναι τοῦ βίου (Rom. vii.) is found Lk. viii. 14, but is a common phrase: and other slight resemblances (e.g. Magn. x.) may as easily come from other Gospels or from tradition.

We are on surer ground when we come to the Didaché and the Gospel of Peter, the dates of which remain to be determined, but which may be placed between A.D. 75 and 125. In the former we find further evidence of a combination of passages from Matthew and Luke, of which we have seen traces in Clement of Rome, and which suggests the possibility of a primitive Harmony of these two documents.
Here the acquaintance with our Gospel is highly probable, for of the Evangelists Luke alone has the plural of λόγων and of δοσίς. In giving the substance of the Sermon on the Mount, the Didaché again seems to compound the two Gospels.

Expressions which are peculiar to each form of the Sermon are here so abundant that we conclude that this doctrine of the Two Ways has been influenced by both forms. But the order in which the several precepts are put together is so different from both Gospels, that the editor can scarcely have had either Gospel before him. Very possibly the order and wording have been disturbed by oral instruction in Christian morality given to catechumens (Sanday, Bampton's, p. 302). But the evidence of
§ 9. LITERARY HISTORY

acquaintance with the Third Gospel is strong; and it is somewhat strengthened by the fact that in the Didaché Christ is called the “Servant (παῖς) of God” (ix. 2, 3, x. 2, 3), a use of παῖς which in N.T. is almost confined to Luke (Acts iii. 13, 26, iv. 27, 30; comp. iv. 25; Lk. i. 54, 69). But this use is common in LXX, and may easily be derived from Isaiah or the Psalms rather than from the Acts. Nevertheless there is other evidence of the influence of the Acts on the Didaché, and scarcely any evidence of the influence of Isaiah or of the Psalms: indeed the references to the O.T. are remarkably few. And this not only makes it quite possible that the use of ὁ παῖς σου comes from the Acts, but also still further strengthens the conviction that the Didaché is indebted to the writings of S. Luke. Comp. συγκοινωνήσεις τῷ ἀδελφῷ σου καὶ οὐκ ἔρεις ἰδιαίτερα (Did. iv. 8) with οὗτος εἰς τί τῶν ὑπαρχόντων αὐτῷ ἔλεγεν ἱδιον εἶναι, ἀλλὰ ἂν αὐτοῖς πάντα κοινά (Acts iv. 32). Bryennios and Wünsche see traces of Lk. ix. 1–6 and x. 4–21 in Did. xi.; but this chapter might easily have stood as it does if Luke had never written. Yet there is enough in what has been quoted above to establish the fact of the influence of Luke on the Didaché.

It is generally admitted that the fragment of the Gospel of Peter suffices to show that the writer of that apocryphal narrative was acquainted with all four of the Canonical Gospels. But it will be worth while to quote some of the expressions and statements which have a marked resemblance to Luke in particular.

GOSPEL OF PETER.

Lk. xxiii., xxiv.

4. Πειλάτως πέμψας πρὸς Ἰρώδην.

7. Πειλάτως... ἀνέστησεν αὐτὸν πρὸς Ἰρώδην.

5. καὶ σάββατον ἑπὶ φῶς ἐκδόθη.

32. ἔγγυτο δὲ καὶ ἐπερευμένοι κακοίργοι δίκα.

10. μεγαλύτερον δύο κακοίργοιν.

39. εἰς τῶν κρεμασθέντων κακοίργοιν ἐξάμεισεν αὐτῶν...

13. εἷς δὲ τίς τῶν κακοίργων ἔκειναν ἰδείας αὐτῶν, λέγων· ἡμέρα διὰ τὰ καλά δὲ ἐποίησαμεν οὕτω πεποίηθαμεν, οὕτως δὲ σωτὴρ γενόμενος τῶν ἀνθρώπων τι ἔδικνυσεν ἡμᾶς;...

34. προέδρας ἐπεφώνητος τοῦ σαββατοῦ.

44. τοῦ ἱλίου ἐκέλευστος.

15. ὁ ἡλίος ἔος.

48. πάντες οἱ συναργευμένοι ἧλιοι...

28. ὁ λαὸς ἂπαν γογγύζει καὶ κίνεται τὰ στῆθη.

54. καὶ σάββατον ἑπεφώνησεν.

34. προέδρας ἐπεφώνητος τοῦ σαββατοῦ.

41. ἡ ζωὴ ἂν ἐπράξαμεν ἀπολαμβάνομεν· οὕτως δὲ οὐδέν ἄτοπον ἐπράξεν.

36. δύο ἀνδραὶ κατελθόντας ἔκειθεν πολὺ φέγγοι έχοντας.

4. ἀνδρεῖ δύο ἐπέστησαν αὐτοῖς ἐν ζησῖς ἀστραπτούσης.

50. ὁ υἱὸς τῆς κυριακῆς... ἔπλησεν τὸν ἑμίθριον.

54. ὁ φέρων ἐλεφαντινὴν οὐκ ἤν.
are compared. S. Luke alone mentions the sending to Herod. He alone uses the expression σάββατον ἐπέφωσκεν (contrast Mt. xxviii. 1). He alone calls the two robbers κακούργου. He alone tells us that one of the robbers reviled, and that one contrasted the justice of their fate with the innocence of Jesus. He alone mentions the sun in connexion with the darkness. He alone speaks of all the multitudes of spectators, and of their beating their breasts. He alone calls the two Angels at the tomb ἀνδρες (Mt. and Mk. mention only one), and calls the tomb μυθημα; and he alone uses φέρετι of the women bringing the spices. There are other passages in which the Gospel of Peter resembles Luke with one or more of the other Gospels; but what has been quoted above is sufficient to show that the writer of the apocryphal gospel was influenced by S. Luke’s narrative. It must be remembered that these ten coincidences are found within the compass of fifty-five verses, and that they are not exhaustive. The inscription on the cross, οὐτός ἐστίν ὁ βασιλεύς τοῦ Ἰσραήλ (11), is closer to that given by S. Luke, ὁ β. τῶν Ἰουδαίων οὐτός (xxiii. 38), than to any of the other forms; and perhaps the words of the robber, σωτήρ γενόμενος (see above, 13), are suggested by σώσων σεαυτόν καὶ ἡμᾶς (xxiii. 39). The use of μεσημβρία for “midday” (15) is found in N.T. nowhere but Acts xxii. 6. The cry of the Jews after Christ’s death, ἵδετε ὅτι πόσον δίκαιος ἦτοι (28), looks like an adaptation of the centurion’s confession, ἄνω τοῦ ἀνθρώπου οὕτως δίκαιος ήν (xxiii. 47); and perhaps ἐξηγήσαντο πάντα ἀπεξ ἔδοξεν (45) is an echo of ἐξηγοῦντο τὰ ἐν τῇ ὀδύ (xxiv. 35). And, as already pointed out (§ 1), Pseudo-Peter always speaks of Jesus Christ as ὁ κύριος, a use which begins to be common in the Third Gospel.

The evidence of another interesting document of about the same date is worth quoting. The Testaments of the XII. Patriarchs is a Jewish Christian writing which almost certainly was composed between the two destructions of Jerusalem, A.D. 70 and 135. It shows marked traces of a knowledge of the Synoptic traditions and of S. Luke’s Gospel in particular. Some of the coincidences given below are probably the result of independent citation of the O.T. But the citation may have been suggested to the later writer by acquaintance with it in the Gospel narrative.


οἶνον καὶ σίκερα οὔκ ἐπιμον (Reuben i.).

εἴρων δὲ δίκαιος πάσχω (Sim. iv.).

ἐστιν οὐδέποτες χάριν ἐνώπιον Θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπων (Sim. v.).

οἶνον καὶ σίκερα ous μὴ πίη (l. 15; Num. vi. 3).

καὶ ἡμεῖς μὲν δίκαιος (xxiii. 41).

Ἰησοῦς πρόεκοπτεν . . . χάριτι παρά Θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπος (li. 52; 1 Sam. ii. 26).
Besides these verbal coincidences there are many coincidences in thought, especially respecting the admission of the Gentiles to the Kingdom through the Messiah, who is the Saviour of all, Jew and Gentile alike. "The Lord shall raise up from Levi a Priest, and from Judah a King, God and man. He shall save all the nations and the race of Israel" (Simeon vii.). "A King shall rise from Judah and shall make a new priesthood . . . unto all the nations (Levi viii.). Comp. Judah xxiv.; Zebulon ix.; Dan. vi.; Naphtali iv., viii.; Asher vii.; Benjamin ix. Moreover, there are passages which are very similar in meaning, although not in wording, to passages in Luke: comp. the end of Joseph xvii. with Lk. xvii. 27, and the beginning of Joseph xviii. with Lk. vi. 28.

It is hardly necessary to trace the history of the Third Gospel in detail any further. It has been shown already (pp. xv–xvii) that Justin Martyr, Tatian, Celsus, the writer of the Clementine Homilies, Basilides, Valentinus, Marcion, and the Churches of Lyons and Vienne, knew the Third Gospel, and that Irenæus, the

§ 9.] LITERARY HISTORY

Besides these verbal coincidences there are many coincidences in thought, especially respecting the admission of the Gentiles to the Kingdom through the Messiah, who is the Saviour of all, Jew and Gentile alike. "The Lord shall raise up from Levi a Priest, and from Judah a King, God and man. He shall save all the nations and the race of Israel" (Simeon vii.). "A King shall rise from Judah and shall make a new priesthood . . . unto all the nations (Levi viii.). Comp. Judah xxiv.; Zebulon ix.; Dan. vi.; Naphtali iv., viii.; Asher vii.; Benjamin ix. Moreover, there are passages which are very similar in meaning, although not in wording, to passages in Luke: comp. the end of Joseph xvii. with Lk. xvii. 27, and the beginning of Joseph xviii. with Lk. vi. 28.

It is hardly necessary to trace the history of the Third Gospel in detail any further. It has been shown already (pp. xv–xvii) that Justin Martyr, Tatian, Celsus, the writer of the Clementine Homilies, Basilides, Valentinus, Marcion, and the Churches of Lyons and Vienne, knew the Third Gospel, and that Irenæus, the
Muratorian Canon, Tertullian, Clement of Alexandria, and others definitely assign it to S. Luke. In the second half of the second century this Gospel is recognized as authentic and authoritative; and it is impossible to show that it had not been thus recognized at a very much earlier date.

The order of the Gospels has not always been the same. But, just as in the interpretation of the four symbolical creatures, the calf has uniformly been taken as indicating S. Luke, so in the arrangement of the Gospels his has almost invariably been placed third. The order with which we are familiar is the common order in most MSS. and Versions: but in D 594, a b c d e f f i g r and the Gothic Version, and in the Apostolic Constitutions, what is called the Western order (Matthew, John, Luke, Mark) prevails. The obvious reason for it is to have the two Apostles together and before the other two Evangelists. In a few authorities other arrangements are found. X and the Latin k have John, Luke, Mark, Matthew, while 90 has John, Luke, Matthew, Mark, and 399 John, Luke, Matthew. The Curetonian Syriac has Matthew, Mark, John, Luke.

§ 10. Commentaries.

A good and full list of commentaries on the Gospels is given by Dr. W. P. Dickson in the English translation of Meyer's Commentary on S. Matthew, i. pp. xxiii-xlili and of commentaries on S. Mark and S. Luke in that of Meyer's Commentary on S. Mark and S. Luke, i. pp. xiii-xvi. It will suffice to name a few of the chief works mentioned by him, especially those which have been in constant use during the writing of this commentary, and to add a few others which have appeared since Dr. Dickson published his lists (1877, 1880), or for other reasons were omitted by him.1 Of necessity the selection here given in many cases corresponds with that in the volume on Romans by Dr. Sanday and Mr. Headlam; and the reader is referred to that (pp. xcix-cix) for excellent remarks on the characteristics of the different commentaries, which need not be repeated here.

I. Greek Writers

Origén (Orig.); † 253. Homilie in Lucam in Origenis Opp. ed. Delarue, iii. 932; Lommatzsch, v. 85; Migne, xiii. 1801, 1902. These thirty-nine short Homilies are an early work, and have been preserved in the Latin translation made by Jerome. A few fragments of the original Greek survive in the Philologia (ed.

1 See also Introduction to the Synoptic Gospels by Dr. P. J. Gloag, T. & T. Clark, 1895, and the literature quoted p. 209.
J. A. Robinson, Camb. 1893) and elsewhere. The genuineness of these Homilies has been disputed, but is not doubtful. A summary of the contents of each is given in Westcott's article Origenes, D. Chr. Biog. iv. 113. The first twenty are on Lk. i., ii., and the next thirteen on Lk. iii., iv., leaving the main portion of the Gospel almost untouched. Besides these there are fragments of notes in the original Greek, which have been preserved in Venice MS. (28, 394); Migne, xviii. 311–370. They extend over chapters i.–xx.

EUSEBIUS of Cæsarea (Eus.); † before 341. Els τо κατὰ Λουκᾶν εὐαγγέλιον in Migne, xxiv. 529. Only fragments remain: on Lk. i. 5, 18, 19, 32, 35, 38, ii. 32, iv. 18, vi. 18, 20, vii. 29, 30, viii. 31, 43, ix. 1, 3, 4, 7, 26, 28, 34, x. 6, 8, xi. 21, xii. 11, 22, 34, 36, 37, 42, 45, xiii. 20, 35, xiv. 18, xvii. 3, 23, 25–31, 34, 37, xviii. 2, xix. 12, 13, 17, xx. 2, 3, xxi. 25, 26, 28–32, 36, xxii. 30, 57, xxiv. 4.

Cyril of Alexandria (Cyr. Alex.); † 444. Έξωγγειας εῖς το κατὰ Λουκᾶν εὐαγγέλιον in Migne, lxxii. 475. Only portions of the original Greek are extant, but a Syriac version of the whole has been edited by Dr. R. Payne Smith, who has also translated this version into English (Oxford, 1859). The Syriac version shows that many Greek fragments previously regarded as part of the commentary are from other writings of Cyril, or even from other writings which are not his. The Greek fragments which coincide with the Syriac prove that the latter is a faithful translation. The commentary is homiletic in form.

THEOPHYLACT (Theoph.), archbishop of Bulgaria (1071–1078); † after 1118. Migne, cxxiii.

EUTHYMIOUS ZIGABENUS (Euthym.); † after 1118. Migne, cxxix. 853.

These two almost contemporaneous commentaries are among the best of their kind. They draw much from earlier writers, but do not follow slavishly, and are far superior to mediæval Latin commentaries. The terseness of Euthymius is not unlike that of Bengel.

2. LATIN WRITERS.

AMBROSE (Ambr.); † 397. Expositio Evang. sec. Lucam; Migne, xv. 1525. Ambrose follows Philo and Origen in seeking for spiritual or mystical meanings under the natural or historical sense, and these are sometimes very far-fetched: in verbis ludit, in sententitis dormitat (Jerome, Prol. in Hom. Orig. in Luc.).

EUCHERIUS; † 449 or 450. Liber instructionum in Lucæ Evang.; Migne, l. 799.

ARNOBIO JUNIOR; † after 460. Annotationes ad quodam Evangeliorum loca; Migne, liii. 570, 578.
PATERIUS of Brescia; friend of Gregory the Great. He collected from the writings of Gregory an *Expositio Vet. et Nov. Test.*, of which Book III. is a catena of Passages on S. Luke; Migne, lxxix. 1057. In the eleventh century the monk ALULF made a similar collection; Migne, lxxix. 1199.

None of these works are very helpful as regards exegesis. Eucherius and Arnobius do not repay perusal. The extracts from Gregory are mainly from the *Moralia* or commentary on Job, full of allegorical interpretation.

Bede, the Venerable; †735. *In Lucam Exp. Libri VI.;* Migne, xcii. 307; Giles, xi., xii.; ed. Colon. 1612, v. 217. The character of the work may be given in his own words: "I have made it my business, for the use of me and mine, briefly to compile out of works of the venerable Fathers, and to interpret according to their meaning (adding somewhat of my own) these following pieces"—and he gives a list of his writings (H. E. sub fin. See also the Prol. in Marc.). This commentary is far superior to those just mentioned, and is an oasis in a desert.

SEDULIUS Scotus; † c. 830. A mere compiler, often from Origen; Migne, ciii. 27. WALAFRID STRABUS of Reichenau; † 849. *Glossa ordinaria*, a compilation with some original matter; Migne, cxiv. 243, 893. It became very famous. We may pass over with bare mention CHRISTIANUS DRUTHMARUS; c. 850; Migne, cvi. 1503: BRUNO Astensis; c. 1125; Migne, clxv. 33: and PETRUS Comestor; c. 1180; Migne, cxcviii. 1537.

THOMAS AQUINAS, Doctor Angelicus; † 1274. *Expositio continua* or *Catena aurea in Evangelia*, a mosaic of quotations (to be accepted with caution) from over eighty Christian writers, from Ignatius to Euthymius, so arranged as to form a summary of patristic theological teaching. Opp. ed. Venet. iv. 5; translated Oxford, 1845.

ALBERTUS MAGNUS of Ratisbon; † 1280.

3. Reformation and Post-Reformation Writers.

ERASMUS, Desiderius; † 1536. *Adnotationes in N.T., 1516; Paraphrases*, 1522.

BUTZER or Bucer, Martin; † 1551. *In sacra quatuor Evangelia Enarrationes*, 1551.

CALVIN, John; † 1564. *In harmoniam ex Matt. Marc. et Luc. compositam Commentarii*, 1553; Brunsvigae, 1868; translated by the Calvin Trans. Society, 1842; strong and independent.

BEZA, Theodore; † 1605. *Adnotationes in N.T., 1565, 1594.*

GROTIUS (Huig van Groot); † 1645. *Adnotationes in N.T., 1644.* Arminian; an early attempt to apply philological principles
(learned from J. J. Scaliger) and classical illustrations to the Bible; still useful.

HAMMOND, Henry; †1660. Canon of Christ Church, Oxford; "the Father of English Commentators." Paraphrase and Annotations of the N.T., 1653, 1845; "reveals genuine exegetical tact and learning." Biblical paraphrase is of English origin.

One or two Roman Catholic commentators in this period require mention.

CAJETAN, Cardinal (Jacob de Vio); †1534; a Dominican. In quatuor Evang. et Acta Apost. Commentarii, 1543. Under pressure from Luther (1518) he became considerably emancipated from patristic and scholastic influence.

MALDONATUS, Joannes (Maldon.); †1583; a Spanish Jesuit. Commentarii in quatuor Evangelia 1596; ed. Sansen, 1840; ed. K. Martin (condensed) 1850. Admirable of its kind: he rarely shirks a difficulty, and is often sagacious in his exposition. An English translation by G. J. Davie is being published by Hodges.

CORNELIUS A LAPIDE (van Stein); †1637; a Jesuit. Comm. in quatuor Evang., 1638. Part of a commentary on almost the whole Bible. A voluminous compilation, including much allegory and legend; devout and often edifying, but sometimes puerile. English translation of the Comm. on S. Luke, Hodges, 1887.

ESCOBAR Y MENDOSA, Antonio; †1669; a Spanish Jesuit, whose casuistry was gibbeted by Pascal. In Evangelia sanctorum et temporis commentarii, 1637.

Two great names in the eighteenth century serve well as a transition from the writers of the two preceding centuries to the present age.


WETSTEIN, Johann Jacob (Wetst.), †1754. Nov. Test. Græcum, 1751, 1752. A monument of criticism and learning. Wetstein was a leader in the field of textual criticism, and the stores of learning collected in his notes have been of the greatest service to all subsequent students of N.T.

4. MODERN WRITERS.

SCHLEIERMACHER, Fried. Dan. Ernst; †1834; Ueber die Schriften des Lukas, 1817. Translated anonymously by Thirlwall, 1825.

BORNEMANN, Fried. August.; †1850. Scholia in Lucæ Evangelium, 1830.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE  


Meyer, Hein. Aug. Wilh.; †1873. _Kritisch exegetischer Kommentar über das N.T. Markus und Lukas_, 1846. Excellent. A good English translation of the fifth edition was published by T. & T. Clark, 1880. Grammar is sometimes ridden to death; but this is still one of the best commentaries for English readers. The German revisions of Meyer by Bernhard and Johannes Weiss, 1885, etc., are superior, especially as regards the text.


Hahn, G. L., Professor of Theology at Breslau. _Das Evangelium des Lukas_, 1892, 1894. Two substantial volumes, full of useful material, but grievously perverse in questions of textual criticism.


Lasserre, Henri. _Les Saints Évangiles_, 1886, 1887. A French translation of the Gospels with brief notes. Uncritical, but interesting. It received the _imprimatur_ of the Archbishop of Paris and the praise of Leo XIII., ran through twenty-five editions in two years, and then through the influence of the Jesuits was suppressed.

Godet, Frédéric, Professor at Neuchatel. _Commentaire sur l'Évangile de S. Luc_, 1871, 1872, 1888. Equal to Meyer in exegesis, but weak in textual criticism. The edition of 1888 is greatly to be preferred. An English translation of the second edition was published by T. & T. Clark, 1879.

Alford, Henry; †1871. _Greek Testament_, vol. i. 1849, 5th ed. 1863. Sensible and clear.

Wordsworth, Christopher, Bishop of Lincoln; †1885. _Greek Testament_, vol. i. 1856, 5th ed. 1866. Scholarly and devout, supplying the patristic element wanting in Alford, but otherwise inferior; weak in textual criticism.

McClellan, John Brown. _The New Testament_, a new translation, from a revised text, with analyses, copious references and illustrations, chronological and analytical harmony, notes and dissertations, vol. i. 1875; unfortunately the only one published. Contains some grotesque renderings and perverse arguments, with a great deal of valuable matter.

Plumptre, Edward Hayes; †1891. The Synoptic Gospels in Bishop Ellicott's _Commentary for English Readers_, Cassell, 1878. Popular and suggestive, with a tendency to excessive ingenuity.
§ 10. COMMENTARIES


BOND, John. WH. text of St. Luke with introduction and notes, 1890. Brief to a fault, but useful.


BERNARD, Thomas Dehany. The Songs of the Holy Nativity, 1895. Did not come to the knowledge of the present writer until the commentary on chapters i. and ii. was in print.¹


BLASS, Fredericus. Evangelium secundum Lucam sive Lucæ ad Theophilum Liber Prior, secundam Formam quæ videtur Romanam, Trubner, 1897. Western text with introduction and critical notes.

Index II. contains the names of many other writers whose works are of great use to the student of this Gospel.

¹ A similar fact caused the omission at p. xxix of some recent discussions of the Synoptic problem: e.g. The Abbé Loisy, Essays in L'Enseignement Biblique, 1892, Revue des Religions, 1894, and Revue Biblique, 1896 (see the Guardian, August 1896, p. 1317); W. Arnold Stevens and E. De Witt Burton, A Harmony of the Gospels for Historical Study, Boston, 1896.
## ABBREVIATIONS

### Ecclesiastical Writers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Full Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ambr.</td>
<td>Ambrose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aug.</td>
<td>Augustine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bas.</td>
<td>Basil</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chrys.</td>
<td>Chrysostom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clem. Alex.</td>
<td>Clement of Alexandria</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clem. Hom.</td>
<td>Clementine Homilies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clem. Recogn.</td>
<td>Clementine Recognitions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clem. Rom.</td>
<td>Clement of Rome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cypr.</td>
<td>Cyprian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyr. Alex.</td>
<td>Cyril of Alexandria</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyr. Hier.</td>
<td>Cyril of Jerusalem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dion. Alex.</td>
<td>Dionysius of Alexandria</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epiph.</td>
<td>Epiphanius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eus.</td>
<td>Eusebius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euthym.</td>
<td>Euthymius Zigabenus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg. Naz.</td>
<td>Gregory of Nazianzum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg. Nys.</td>
<td>Gregory of Nyssa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herm.</td>
<td>Hermas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hippol.</td>
<td>Hippolytus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ign.</td>
<td>Ignatius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iren.</td>
<td>Irenæus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iren-lat.</td>
<td>Latin Version of Irenæus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jer. (Hieron.)</td>
<td>Jerome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jos.</td>
<td>Josephus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Just. M.</td>
<td>Justin Martyr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orig.</td>
<td>Origen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orig-lat.</td>
<td>Latin Version of Origen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tert.</td>
<td>Tertullian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theoph.</td>
<td>Theophylact</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Versions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Full Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aegyptt.</td>
<td>Egyptian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boh.</td>
<td>Bohairic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sah.</td>
<td>Sahidic</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

_idxvi_
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aeth.</td>
<td>Ethiopian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arm.</td>
<td>Armenian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goth.</td>
<td>Gothic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Latt.</td>
<td>Latin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lat. Vet.</td>
<td>Vetus Latina</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vulg.</td>
<td>Vulgate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cod. Am.</td>
<td>Codex Amiatinus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syrr.</td>
<td>Syriac</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cur.</td>
<td>Curetonian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sin.</td>
<td>Sinaitic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pesh.</td>
<td>Peshitto</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harcl.</td>
<td>Harclean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hier.</td>
<td>Jerusalem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cov.</td>
<td>Coverdale</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>Geneva</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luth.</td>
<td>Luther</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhein.</td>
<td>Rheims (or Douay)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tyn.</td>
<td>Tyndale</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wic.</td>
<td>Wicif</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AV.</td>
<td>Authorized Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RV.</td>
<td>Revised Version</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Editors.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>TR.</td>
<td>Textus Receptus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tisch.</td>
<td>Tischendorf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Treg.</td>
<td>Tregelles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WH.</td>
<td>Westcott and Hort</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alf.</td>
<td>Alford</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beng.</td>
<td>Bengel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>De W.</td>
<td>De Wette</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grot.</td>
<td>Grotius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maldon.</td>
<td>Maldonatus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mey.</td>
<td>Meyer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nösg.</td>
<td>Nösgen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wetst.</td>
<td>Wetstein</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wordsw.</td>
<td>Wordsworth (Chr.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Miscellaneous.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Burton</td>
<td>Burton, N.T. Moods and Tenses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. I. G.</td>
<td>Corpus Inscriptionum Graecarum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Didon, J. C.</td>
<td>Père Didon, Jesus Christ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L. J.</td>
<td>Leben Jesu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. de J.</td>
<td>Vie de Jesus</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
lxxxviii  THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE

Wsctt.  .  .  .  Westcott.
Edersh. L. & T.  .  .  .  Edersheim, Life and Times of Jesus the Messiah.
Stanley, Sin. & Pal.  .  .  .  Stanley, Sinai and Palestine
Trench, Mir.  .  .  .  Trench, Miracles.
Par.  .  .  .  " Parables.
D. B.¹ or D. B.²  .  .  .  Smith’s Dictionary of the Bible, 1st or 2nd edition.
D. Chr. Ant.  .  .  .  Smith’s Dictionary of Christian Antiquities.
Kraus, Real-Enc. d. Chr. Alt.  .  .  .  Kraus, Real-Encyklopädie der Christlichen Alterthümer.
Herzog, PRE.¹ or PRE.²  .  .  .  Herzog’s Protestantische Real-Encyklopädie, 1st or 2nd edition.
L. & S. Lex.  .  .  .  Liddell and Scott, Lexicon.
Win.  .  .  .  .  .  Winer, Grammar of N.T. Greek (the page refers to Moulton’s edition).

N.B.—The text commented upon is that of Westcott and Hort. The very few instances in which the editor is inclined to dissent from this text are noted as they occur.

¹ The name of John Lightfoot is not abbreviated in this volume.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE.

THE TITLE OF THE GOSPEL.

The title cannot be any part of the original autograph. It is found in different forms in ancient authorities, the earliest being the simplest: κατὰ Λουκᾶν (N B F), εὐαγγέλιον κατὰ Λουκᾶν (A C D Ε), τὸ κατὰ Λουκᾶν εὐαγγέλιον οτ τὸ κατὰ Λουκᾶν ἀγων εὐαγγέλιον (cursives).

The κατὰ neither affirms nor denies authorship: it implies conformity to a type. But, inasmuch as all four Gospels have the κατὰ, these uniform titles must be interpreted according to the belief of those who gave the titles, viz. the Christians of the first four centuries; and it was their belief that each Evangelist composed the Gospel which bears his name. Had the κατὰ meant no more than “drawn up according to the teaching of,” then this Gospel would have been called κατὰ Παῦλου, and the second Gospel would have been called κατὰ Πέτρου; for it was the general tradition that Mark wrote according to the teaching of Peter, and Luke (in a different sense) according to the teaching of Paul. The κατὰ, however, is not a mere substitute for the genitive of authorship, but indicates that the same subject has been treated by others. Thus, ἡ παλαιά διαθήκη κατὰ τοὺς ἐμβομήκοντα points to the existence of other translations, just as Ὄμηρος κατὰ Ἀρισταρχον or κατὰ Ἀριστοφάνην points to the existence of other editions. That the κατὰ does not exclude authorship is shown by such expressions as ἡ κατὰ Μωϋσέα πεντάτευχος (Epiphanius) and ἡ καθ’ Ἡρόδουν ιστορία (Diodorus): comp. ἐν τοῖς ὑπομηματισμοῖς τοῖς κατὰ τὸν Ἱερώνυμον (2 Mac. ii. 13). Strictly speaking, there is only one Gospel, εὐαγγέλιον Θεοῦ, the Gospel of God concerning His Son (Rom. i. 1); but it has been given to us in four shapes, εὐαγγέλιον τετράμορφον (Iren. Ηær. iii. 11. 8), and the κατὰ indicates the shape in which the writer named composed it.

I. 1–4. THE PROLOGUE OR PREFACE.

The classical style of this opening, and its similarity to the prefaces of Herodotus, Thucydides, and Polybius, hardly amount to proof that Lk. was well read in classical literature, and consciously imitated Greek historians; but there is nothing improbable in this supposition. Among the words which are classical rather
than biblical should be noticed ἐπὶ δηπερ, ἐπιχειρεῖν, ἀνατάξεσθαι, διήγησις. The construction also is classical, and in no way Hebraistic. We have clauses idiomatically interlaced, not simply co-ordinated. The modest position claimed by the writer is evidence of his honesty. A forger would have claimed to be an eye-witness, and would have made no apology for writing. Ewald remarks that "in its utter simplicity, modesty, and brevity, it is the model of a preface to an historical work." Its grammatical construction should be compared with that of the preface to the synodical epistle in Acts xv. 24, 25: Εἶπείδη ἥκονταιςεις . . . ἕδοξεν ἡμῖν.

This prologue contains all that we really know respecting the composition of early narratives of the life of Christ, and it is the test by which theories as to the origin of our Gospels must be judged. No hypothesis is likely to be right which does not harmonize with what is told us here. Moreover, it shows that an inspired writer felt that he was bound to use research and care in order to secure accuracy.

1. Ἐπειδήπερ. A stately compound, suitable for a solemn opening: freq. in class. Grk., but not found in LXX, or elsewhere in N.T. Quoniam quidem, "For as much as," Weil denn einmal. πολλοῖ. The context seems to imply that these, like Lk., were not eye-witnesses. That at once would exclude Mt., whose Gospel Lk. does not appear to have known. It is doubtful whether Mk. is included in the πολλοῖ. The writers of extant apocryphal gospels cannot be meant, for these are all of later origin. Probably all the documents here alluded to were driven out of existence by the manifest superiority of the four Canonical Gospels. The ἐπεχείρησαν cannot imply censure, as some of the Fathers thought, for Lk. brackets himself with these writers (ἔδοξεν κάμοι); what they attempted he may attempt. The word occurs 2 Mac. ii. 29, vii. 19; Acts ix. 29, xix. 13; and is freq. in class. Grk. in the sense of "put the hand to, take in hand, attempt." The notion of unlawful or unsuccessful attempting is sometimes implied by the context: it is not contained in the word. Luther renders unter wunden haben, "have ventured." Lk. must have regarded these attempts as insufficient, or he would not have added another. Meyer quotes Ulpian, p. 159 (in Valckenaer), ἐπειδήπερ περὶ τούτων πολλοῖ ἐπεχείρησαν ἀπολογήσασθαι. It is doubtful whether ἐπιχειρ. necessarily implies a great undertaking.

ἀνατάξασθαι διήγησιν. "To draw up again in order a narrative"; i.e. to arrange afresh so as to show the sequence of events. The verb is a rare one, and occurs elsewhere only Plut. Moral p. 969 C, De sollert. animal. xii. (Reiske, x. p. 36), in the sense of "practise, go over again in order," Iren. iii. 21. 2, and as v.l. Eccles. ii. 20. The subst. implies something more than mere notes of
anecdotes; “a leading through to the end” (durchführen), “a narrative” (Ecclus. vi. 35, ix. 15; 2 Mac. ii. 32, vi. 17; Plat. Rep. 392 D; Arist. Rhet. iii. 16. 1).

Versions vary greatly: ordinare narrationem (Latt.), componere narrationem (Beza), stellen die Rede (Luth.), “ordeyne the telling” (Wic.), “compyle a treates” (Tyn.), “set forth the words” (Cov.), “set forth the declaration” (Cran.), “write the historic” (Gen.), “compile a narration” (Rhem.), “set forth in order a declaration” (AV.), “draw up a narrative” (RV.), composer une narration suivie (Godet), coordonner en corps de récit (Lasserre), “restore from memory a narrative” (Blass).

τὰν πεπληρωφορημένων. “Of the things which have been carried through to the end, of the matters which have been accomplished, fully established.” Here again English Versions differ much; but “surely known” (Tyn.), “surely to be believed” (Cran.), “surely believed” (AV.), cannot be justified. The verb when used of persons may mean “persuade fully, convince,” and in pass. “be fully persuaded” (Rom. iv. 21, xiv. 5); but of things it means “fulfil” (2 Tim. iv. 5, 17). Here we may render “accomplished.” Others less well render “fully proved.” See Lightfoot on Col. iv. 12. The ἐν ἡμῖν probably means “among us Christians.” Christendom is the sphere in which these facts have had their full accomplishment. The ἡμῖν in ver. 2 shows that contemporaries are not meant. If these things were handed down to Lk., then he was not contemporary with them. The verse is evidence that the accomplished facts were already fully established and widely known, for they had already been narrated by many. See Westcott, Intr. to Gosp. p. 190, 7th ed.

2. καθὼς παρέδωκαν ἡμῖν. “Even as they delivered them to us.” The difference between ὅσι, “as,” and καθὼς, “just as,” should be marked in translation: the correspondence was exact. Lk. implies that he himself was among those who received the tradition. Like the πολλοὶ, he can only arrange afresh what has been handed down, working at second hand, not as an eye-witness. He gives no hint as to whether the facts were handed down orally or in writing. The difference between the πολλοὶ and these αὐτόπται is not that the πολλοὶ wrote their narratives while the αὐτόπται did not, but that the αὐτόπται were primary authorities, which the πολλοὶ were not.

ὑπήρεται γενόμενοι τοῦ λόγου. They not only had personal knowledge of the facts (αὐτόπται), they also had practical experience of the effects. They had preached and taught, and had thus learned what elements in the Gospel were of most efficacy for the winning and saving of souls. That τοῦ λόγου belongs to ὑπήρεται only, not to αὐτόπται, and means “the doctrine,” i.e. the Gospel (Acts vi. 4, viii. 4, xiv. 25, xvi. 6, xvii. 11), is manifest from the context. Origen and Athanasius are wrong in making τοῦ λόγου mean the
personal Word, the Son of God, a use which is peculiar to Jn. The ἀπ' ἀρχῆς refers to the beginning of Christ's ministry (Jn. xv. 27, xvi. 4). For ὑπηρέτης see on iv. 20 and comp. Acts xiii. 5.

3. ἔδοξε κάμοι. This is the main sentence, the apodosis of ἑπείδη πολλοὶ ἔπεμψαν. It neither implies nor excludes inspiration: the ἔδοξε may or may not have been inspired. The wish to include inspiration caused the addition in some Latin MSS. of et spiritu sancto (Acts xv. 28), which makes what follows to be incongruous. With ἔδοξε comp. the Muratorian Fragment: Lucas iste medicus . . . nomine suo ex opinione conscriptus—Dominum tamen nec ipse vidit in carne—et idem, prout assequi potuit, ita et a nativitate Ioannis incepit dicere. The κάμοι shows that Lk. does not blame the πολλοί: he desires to imitate and supplement them. It is their attempts that encourage him to write. What they have done he may do, and perhaps he may be able to improve upon their work. This is his first reason for writing a narrative. See Blass, N.T. Gram. p. 274.

παρηκολούθηκότοι. This is his second reason for writing, making the argument à fortiori. He has had special advantages and qualifications; and therefore what was allowed to others may be still more allowed to him. These qualifications are fourfold, and are told off with precision. In the literal sense of "following a person closely so as to be always beside him," παρακολοθεῖν does not occur in N.T. Here it does not mean that Lk. was contemporaneous with the events, but that he had brought himself abreast of them by careful investigation. Comp. the famous passage in Dem. De Cor. cap. liii. p. 285 (344), παρηκολούθηκότα τοῖς πράγμασιν ἐξ ἀρχῆς: also De Pal. Leg. p. 423.

ἀνωθεν. This is the first of the four qualifications: he has gone back to the very beginning, viz. the promise of the birth of the Forerunner. "From the first" is the meaning of ἀνωθεν here, not "thoroughly," radicitus, as in Acts xxvi. 5, which would make ἀνωθεν almost the same as πᾶσιν. Vulg. has a principio, and d has desusum (comp. the French dessus). It is the πᾶσιν which implies thoroughness; and this is the second point. He has begun at the beginning, and he has investigated everything. The Syriac makes πᾶσιν masc., but there is little doubt that it is neut., and refers to πράγματα in ver. 1.

ἀκριβῶς. This is the third point. He has done all this "accurately." There is no idle boast in any one of the three points. No other Gospel gives us this early history about the Baptist and the Christ. No other is throughout so full, for of 170 sections contained in the synoptic narrative 48 are peculiar to Lk. And, in spite of the severest scrutiny, his accuracy can very rarely be impugned. We cannot be sure whether he means to imply that ἀκριβῶς was not true of the πολλοί, but we may be
sure that none of them could claim all three of these points. In any case we have an inspired historian telling us in his inspired writings that he is giving us the results of careful investigation. From this it seems to follow that an inspired historian may fail in accuracy if his investigation is defective.

καθεξῆς. This is the fourth point, resulting from the other three. He does not propose to give a mere collection of anecdotes and detached sayings, but an orderly narrative systematically arranged. Chronological order is not necessarily implied in καθεξῆς, but merely arrangement of some kind. Nevertheless, he probably has chronological order chiefly in view. In N.T. the word is peculiar to Lk. (viii. 1; Acts iii. 24, xi. 4, xviii. 23), as is also the more classical ἐξῆς (vii. 11, ix. 37, etc.); but ἐφεξῆς does not occur.

κράτιστος Θεόφιλε. The epithet κράτιστος, often given to persons of rank (Acts xxiii. 26, xxiv. 3, xxvi. 25), is strongly in favour of the view that Theophilus was a real person. The name Theophilus was common both among Jews (= Jedidiah) and among Gentiles. But it was a name likely to be used to represent any pious reader. See Lft. on "Acts," D.B. pp. 25, 26. The word κράτιστος occurs in N.T. only here and in the Acts, where it is evidently a purely official epithet, for the persons to whom it is applied are of bad character. See Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 19, for the name.

4. ἵνα ἐπιγνωσθῇ περὶ δὲν κατηχήθης λόγων τὴν ἀσφάλειαν. "In order that thou mightest fully know the certainty concerning the words wherein thou wast instructed." The λόγοι are not the πράγματα or historic facts, but the details of the λόγος or Gospel (ver. 2), which "ministers of the word" had communicated to Theophilus. The compound ἐπιγνωσθῇ indicates additional and more thorough knowledge. It is very freq. in Lk. and Paul: see esp. Rom. i. 28, 32; 1 Cor. xiii. 12; Lft. on Col. i. 9; Trench, Syn. lxxv. In N.T. κατηχεῖν, "to sound down into the ears, teach orally," is found only in Lk. and Paul. The position of τὴν ἀσφάλειαν gives it solemn emphasis. Theophilus shall know that the faith which he has embraced has an impregnable historical foundation.

The idiomatic attraction, περὶ δὲν κατηχήθης λόγων, is best resolved into περὶ τῶν λόγων οὐκ κατηχήθη, not περὶ τῶν λόγων περὶ δὲν κατηχήθης. Only of persons does περὶ τινος stand after κατηχεῖν (Acts xxi. 21, 24): of things we have the acc. (Acts xviii. 25; Gal. vi. 6). These attractions are very freq. in Lk. See Blass, Gr. p. 170.

On the superficial resemblance between this preface and Jos. Con. Apion. i. 9, 10, see Godet, i. pp. 92, 93, 3ème ed. 1888. The resemblance hardly amounts to remarkable coincidence, and such similarities are common in literature. It is more interesting to compare this preface with that of the medical writer Dioscorides. The opening words of Dioscorides' treatise, περὶ Ἕλθε ἡ ἀπερίκτητα, run thus: Πολλών οὗ μόνον ἀρχαίων, ἄλλα καὶ νέων συνταξιομένων
I. 5-II. 52. THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY.

These chapters have often been attacked as unhistorical. That Marcion omitted them from his mutilated edition of this Gospel is of no moment. He did not do so upon critical grounds, but because their contents did not harmonize with his doctrine. It is more to the point to urge that these early narratives lack apostolic authority; that they cover ground which popular imagination, in the absence of history, would be sure to fill; that they abound in angelic appearances and other marvels; that their form is often highly poetical; and that it is sometimes difficult to reconcile them with the narrative of Mt. or with known facts of history. To this it may be replied that reserve would keep Christ's Mother from making known these details at first. Even Apostles may have been ignorant of them, or unwilling to make them known until the comparatively late period at which Lk. wrote. The dignity, beauty, and spirituality of these narratives is strong evidence of their authenticity, especially when contrasted with the silly, grotesque, and even immoral details in the apocryphal gospels. They abound in historic features, and are eminently true to life. Their independence of Mt. is evident, and both accounts bear the stamp of truthfulness, which is not destroyed by possible discrepancies in a few minor points. That Lk. is ever at variance with other historians, has still to be proved; and the merit of greater accuracy may still be with him, even if such variance exists.

This Gospel of the Infancy is made up of seven narratives, in two parallel groups of three, followed by a supplement, which connects these two groups with the main body of the Gospel.

I. 1. The Annunciation of the Birth of the Forerunner (5-25); 2. The Annunciation of the Birth of the Saviour (26-38); 3. The Visit of the Mother of the Saviour to the Mother of the Forerunner (39-56).

II. 4. The Birth of the Forerunner (57-80); 5. The Birth of the Saviour (ii. 1-20); 6. The Circumcision and Presentation of the Saviour (ii. 21-40).
III. 7. The Boyhood of the Saviour (ii. 41-52).

On the two accounts of our Lord's infancy see Resch, *Das kindheitsevangelium*, pp. 10 ff., 1897; Gore, *Dissertations on Subjects connected with the Incarnation*, pp. 12 ff.: Murray, 1895.

I. 5-25. The Annunciation of the Birth of the Forerunner.

"When John the Baptist appeared, not the oldest man in Palestine could remember to have spoken even in his earliest childhood with any man who had seen a prophet. . . . In these circumstances it was an occurrence of the first magnitude, more important far than war or revolution, when a new prophet actually appeared" (*Ecce Homo*, eh. i.). The miracles recorded are in keeping with this. God was making a new departure in dealing with His people. We need not, therefore, be startled if a highly exceptional situation is accompanied by highly exceptional facts. After more than three centuries of silence, Jehovah again speaks by prophecies and signs to Israel. But there is no violent rupture with the past in making this new departure. The announcement of the rise of a new Prophet is made in the temple at Jerusalem, to a priest of the old covenant, who is to be the Prophet's father. It is strong evidence of the historic truth of the narrative that no miracles are prophesied of the new Prophet, and that after his appearance his disciples attribute none to him.

5. *Еγένετο ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις*. The elegant idiomatic Greek of the preface comes abruptly to an end. Although the marks of Lk.'s style are as abundant here as in any part of the Gospel, yet the form of the narrative is strongly Hebraistic; so much so that one may be confident that he is translating from an Aramaic document. These first two chapters seem to consist of a series of such documents, each with a distinct conclusion (i. 80, ii. 40, ii. 52). If they are historical, the Virgin Mary must have been the source of much that is contained in these first two chapters; and she may have been the writer of documents used by Lk. In any case, we have here the earliest documentary evidence respecting the origins of Christianity which has come down to us,—evidence which may justly be called contemporary. Both *εγένετο* and *ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις* are Hebraistic (see on ver. 39); but there is no need to understand *ἦν* or any other verb after *εγένετο*, "It came to pass that there was." Rather, "There arose, came into notice," or simply "There was." See on iv. 36, and comp. Mk. i. 4; Jn. i. 6.

*Ἡρῴδου βασιλέως τῆς Ἰουδαίας*. Herod "the Great," a title not
given to him by his contemporaries, who during his last years suffered greatly from his cruelty. It is in these last years that the narrative of Lk. begins. The Herods were Idumæans by birth, though Jews by religion, and were dependent upon the Romans for their sovereignty. As Tacitus says: *Regnum ab Antonio Herodi datum victor Augustus auxit* (Hist. v. 9. 3).

The name *Ἡρῴδης* is contracted from *Ἡρῴδης*, and should have iota subscript, which is well supported by early inscriptions. Later inscriptions and coins omit the iota. In the *Codex Ambrosianus* of Josephus the name is written with iota adscript, *Ἡρῴδης* (*Ant.* xi.–xx.). See the numerous instances from inscriptions cited by Schürer in the *Theol. Litlg.* 1892, No. 21, col. 516. The ιοι inserted before βασιλέως in A and other texts is in accordance with classical usage. But in LXX the art. is commonly omitted in such cases, because in Hebrew, as in English, “Saul, king of Israel,” “George, king of England,” is the common idiom (Gen. xiv. 1, 2, 18, xx. 2, xxvi. 1, etc. etc.). See Simcox, *Lang. of N.T.* p. 47.

**βασιλέως τῆς Ιουδαίας.** This was the title conferred on him by the Senate at the request of Antony, Messala, and Atratinus (*Jos. Ant.* xiv. 14. 4). Judæa here may mean “the land of the Jews, Palestine” (vii. 17; xxiii. 5; Acts ii. 9, x. 37, xi. 1, 29). Besides Judæa in the narrower sense, Herod's dominions included Samaria, Galilee, a great deal of Pæœa, and Cœle-Syria. For the abundant literature on the Herods see *D.B.* 2 i. p. 1341; Herzog, *PRE.* 2 vi. p. 47; Schürer, *Jewish People in the T. of J. C.* i. 1, p. 400.

**ἱερέως τις ὄνοματι Ζαχαρίας.** In the *Protevangelium of James* (viii.), Zacharias is called high priest; and this has been adopted by later writers, who have supposed that the incident narrated by Lk. took place on the Day of Atonement in the Holy of Holies. But the high priest would not have been called ἱερέως τις, and it could not have been by *lot* (*ἐλαχε*) that he offered incense on the Day of Atonement. Priestly descent was much esteemed. The name means “Remembered by Jehovah.” For ὄνοματι see on v. 27.

**ἐξ ἐφημερίας Ἀβια.** The word ἐφημερία has two meanings: 1. “service for a term of days” (Neh. xiii. 30; 1 Chron. xxv. 8; 2 Chron. xiii. 10); 2. “a course of priests who were on duty for a term of days,” viz. for a week (1 Chron. xxiii. 6, xxviii. 13; 1 Esdr. i. 2, 15). These courses were also called διακρίσεις, and by Josephus πατριαί and ἐφημερίδες (*Ant.* vii. 14. 7; *Vita*, i.). Abijah was descended from Eleazar, and gave his name to the eighth of the twenty-four courses into which David divided the priests (1 Chron. xxiv. 10; 2 Chron. viii. 14). Of these twenty-four only the courses of Jedaijah, Immer, Pashur, and Harim returned from captivity (Ezra ii. 36–39); but these four were divided again into twenty-

---

four with the old names. So that Zacharias did not belong to the original course of Abijah, for that did not return from exile. Each course was on duty twice during the year; but we know far too little about the details of the arrangement to derive any sure chronology from the statements made by Lk. See on ii. 7.

Wieseler places the vision of Zacharias early in October A. u. C. 748 or B. C. 6 (Chron. Syn. ii. 2, Eng. tr. p. 123). With this result Edersheim agrees (L. and T. i. p. 135), as also does Andrews (L. of our Lord, p. 52, ed. 1892). Lewin prefers May 16th, B. C. 7 (Fasti Sacri, 836). Caspari is for July 18th, B. C. 3, but remarks "how little reliance is to be placed upon conclusions of this kind" (Chron. Einl. § 42, Eng. tr. p. 57). For the courses of priests, see Herzog, P.R.E.2 art. Priestertum im A. T.; Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. ii. 1, pp. 216–220.

γυνὴ ἀνδρὸν ἐκ τῶν θυγατέρων Ἀαρών. "He had a wife," not "his wife was" (AV.). Lk. follows LXX in omitting the art. with the gen. after θυγάτηρ: comp. xiii. 16 and the quotations Mt. xxi. 5 and Jn. xii. 15, and contrast Mt. xiv. 6. To be a priest and married to a priest's daughter was a double distinction. It was a common summary of an excellent woman, "She deserves to marry a priest." In the fullest sense John was of priestly birth. See Wetst.: Sacrosancta præcursoris nobilitas non solum a parentibus, sed etiam a progenitoribus gloriosa descendit (Bede). Aaron's wife was Elisabeth = Elisheba = "God is my oath." 6. δίκαιος. Once a term of high praise, and meaning righteousness in the fullest sense (Ezek. xviii. 5, 9, 11, 19, 20, 22, 24, 26); but it had come to mean little more than careful observance of legal duties. The addition of the Hebraistic ἐναρτίον τοῦ Θεοῦ (Acts viii. 21; Gen. vi. 8, 11, 13, vii. 1, x. 9) gives δίκαιος its full meaning: Zacharias and Elisabeth were saints of the O. T. type. Symeon is called δίκαιος (ii. 25), and Joseph (Mt. i. 19). Comp. δίκαιον εἶναι μὲν νόμος ἡ φύσις θ' ἀμα παρείχε τῷ Θεῷ (Eur. Ion. 643). The Gospel was to restore to δίκαιος its original spiritual meaning. See detached note on the word δίκαιος and its cognates, Rom. i. 17. For ἀμφότεροι see on v. 7.

πορευόμενοι ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ἐντολαῖς καὶ δικαιώμασιν τ. Χ. Another Hebraism (Deut. xxviii. 9; 1 Sam. viii. 3, 5; 1 Kings iii. 14, etc.). The distinction often drawn, that ἐντολαί are moral, while δικαιώματα are ceremonial, is baseless; the difference is, that the latter is the vaguer term. Here, although they differ in gender, they have only one article and adjective, because they are so similar in meaning. Comp. Col. ii. 22; Rev. v. 12; and see Win. xix. 3 c, p. 157. The two words are found combined Gen. xxvi. 5 and Deut. iv. 40. For δικαιώματα, "things declared right, ordinances," comp. Rom. ii. 26 and Heb. ix. 1, and see note in Sp. Comm. on 1 Cor. v. 6 as to the force of the termination -μα. The genitive here, as in Rom. ii. 26 and viii. 4, expresses the authority from
which the ordinance springs. The ἁμαρτία anticipate what follows, and, of course, does not mean that they were sinless. No one is sinless; but the conduct of some is free from reproach. Comp. Phil. iii. 6. See the quotation Eus. H.E. v. i. 9.

7. καὶ οὖν ἐτῶν τέκνων. This calamity is grievous to all Orientals, and specially grievous to Jews, each of whom is ambitious of being among the progenitors of the Messiah. It was commonly believed to be a punishment for sin (Lev. xx. 20, 21; Jer. xxii. 30). The story of Glaucus, who tempted the oracle at Delphi, and “at the present time has not a single descendant” (Hdt. vi. 86. 16), indicates a similar belief among the Greeks. Zacharias and Elisabeth had the sorrow of being childless, as Anna of being husbandless, and all three had their consolation. Comp. the births of Samson and Samuel, both of whom were Nazirites, and of Isaac.

καθότι. Peculiar to Lk. “Because that” (xix. 9; Acts ii. 24, xvii. 31), or “according as” (Acts ii. 45, iv. 35). In class. Grk. editors commonly write καθ’ δέ. The clause καὶ ἁμαρτέρων ... ἢπαν does not depend upon καθότι, which would be illogical, but is a separate statement. Their age would not explain why they had had no children, but why they were not likely to have any. “They had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren; and they were both advanced in years,” so that they had no hope of children.

προβεβηκότες ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις αὐτῶν. Hebraistic: in class. Grk. we should rather have had τῷ ἡλικίᾳ. In LXX we have προβεβ. ἡμέραις, or ἡμερῶν, or τῶν ἡμερῶν (1 Kings i. 1; Gen. xxiv. 1; Josh. xiii. 1). Levites were superannuated at about sixty, but a priest served as long as he was able.

8. Ἐγίνετο ... ἔλαχε. On the various constructions with ἐγίνετο in Lk. see detached note at the end of this chapter; and on ἐν τῷ ἱερατεύειν αὐτῶν, “while he was officiating as priest,” which is another very favourite construction with Lk., see on iii. 21. The verb ἱερατεύειν is freq. in LXX, but occurs nowhere else in N.T. It is not found earlier than LXX, but is not rare in later Greek. See Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 119. The phrase κατὰ τὸ ἐθνός is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (ii. 42, xxii. 39), but occurs in Theod. Bel 15; and ἐθνός occurs ten times in his writings, and only twice elsewhere (Jn. xix. 40; Heb. x. 25). Comp. κατὰ τὸ εἰκοσικόνων (ii. 27) and κατὰ τὸ εἰκόθεν (iv. 16; Acts xvii. 2). It is for the sake of those who were unfamiliar with the usages of the temple that he says that it was “according to the custom of the priest’s service” that it was decided by lot which priest should offer incense. To take κατὰ τὸ ἐθνός τῆς ἱερατίας with what precedes robs it of all point; it is tautology to say that he was officiating as priest according to the custom of the priest’s service. But the number of cases in which Lk. has a clause or word which is grammatically amphibolous is very large; vv. 25, 27, ii. 22, where see note. The word ἱερατία occurs in N.T. only here and Heb. vii. 5. “In relation to ἱερατία (Heb. vii. 11, 12, 24) it expresses the actual service of the priests, and not the office of priesthood” (Wssct. on Heb. vii. 5).

ἔλαχε τοῦ θυμίασα. The casting of lots took place twice a day, at the morning and the evening offering of incense. In the morn-
ing the drawing lots for offering the incense was the third and chief of a series of drawings, four in all; in the evening it was the only one. We do not know whether this was morning or evening. No priest might have this honour twice; and the number of priests was so great that many never offered the incense. The fortunate lot was a ψήφος λευκή, to which there is a possible reference Rev. ii. 17. The priest who obtained it chose two others to help him; but, when they had done their part, they retired, leaving him alone in the Holy Place. For the very elaborate details see Edersh. *The Temple, its Ministry and Services*, pp. 129-142.

The gen. τοῦ θυμιάματι is probably governed by ἐλαχίς, which in class. Grk. commonly has a gen. when it means "became possessed of," and an acc. when it means "obtained by lot" (Acts i. 17; comp. 2 Pet. i. 1). In 1 Sam. xiv. 47 we have Σαουλ ἐλαχίς [αἰ. ὁ κατακληροῦται] τοῦ βασιλείου εἰς Ἰσραήλ. The εἴσελθην εἰς τὸν ναόν must be taken with θυμιάματι, not with ἐλαχίς: "he obtained by lot to go in and burn incense," not "after entering into the ναός he obtained by lot to burn incense." The lots were cast before he entered the Holy Place, which was the front part of the ναός.

10. τὰν τὸ πλήθος ἦν τοῦ λαοῦ προσευχόμενον. Cod. Am. has the same order, *omnia multitudine erat populi orans.* The position of τοῦ λαοῦ is against taking ἦν with προσευχόμενον as the analytical tense instead of the imperf., a constr. of which Lk. is very fond (vv. 20, 21, 22, ii. 33, iv. 17, 31, 38, 44, etc.); ἦν may mean "was there," or "there was," and τοῦ λαοῦ be epexegetic of τὸ πλήθος. But certainty is unattainable and unimportant. We need not infer from τὰν τὸ πλήθος that there was a great multitude. As compared with the solitary priest in the ναός, all the worshippers outside were a πλήθος. The word is a favourite one with Lk., who uses it twenty-five times against seven in the rest of N.T. It is remarkable that prayer is not expressly mentioned in the Law as part of public worship, except in connexion with the offering of the first-fruits (Deut. xxvi. 15). But comp. 1 Kings viii. 33-48, 2 Chron. vi. 14-42; Is. lvi. 7. The people were inside the ἱερόν, although outside (ἐξω) the ναός, and the other priests would be between them and the ναός. Syr-Sin. omits ἐξω.

11. ὅφθη δὲ αὐτῷ ἀγγέλος Κυρίου. It was the most solemn moment of his life, when he stood alone in that sacred spot to offer the pure and ideal symbol of the imperfect prayer which he and those outside were offering. The unique circumstances contributed to make him conscious of that unseen world which is around all of us (2 Kings vi. 17; comp. Lk. xv. 7, 10). For ὅφθη see on xxii. 43; and for an analysis of the psychological facts see Lange, *L. of Christ*, bk. ii. pt. ii. § 2; Eng. tr. i. 264. But must we not choose between admitting an objective appearance and rejecting the whole as a myth? To explain it as a "false perception" or optical delusion, *i.e.* a purely subjective result of psychological
causes, seems to be not admissible. In that case Zacharias, like Lord Herbert of Cherbury,1 would have accepted the sign which he supposed that he had received. To believe in the reality of a subjective appearance and not believe its testimony is a contradiction. Moreover, the psychological explanation leaves the dumbness to be explained. Again, we have similar appearances ver. 26, ii. 9, 13, xxii. 43, xxiv. 4. Can we accept here an explanation which is very difficult (ii. 9, 13) or inadmissible (xxiv. 4) elsewhere? Are all these cases of false perception? See Paley, Evidences of Christianity, prop. ii. ch. i.; Mill, Pantheistic Principles, ii. 4, p. 123, 2nd ed. 1861; Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 142, ii. p. 751.

εκ δεξιῶν τοῦ θυσιαστήριου. The place of honour. It was "the right side of the altar," not of Zacharias, who was facing it. Comp. Acts vii. 55, 56. The right side was the south side, and the Angel would be between the altar and the golden candlestick. On the left, or north side, of the altar was the table with the shewbread.

12. φόβος ἐπέπεσεν ἐπ` αὐτῶν. Fear is natural when man becomes suddenly conscious of contact with the unseen: Humanæ fragilitatis est spiritualis creature visione turbati (Bede). Comp. ii. 9, ix. 34.; Judg. vi. 22, xiii. 22.; Job iv. 15, etc. For the phrase comp. Acts xix. 17; Exod. xv. 16; Judith xv. 2. In class. Grk. the dat. is more usual: Thuc. iii. 87. 1; Xen. Anab. ii. 2. 19; Eur. Andr. 1042.

13. εἶπεν δὲ πρὸς αὐτῶν. Both εἶπεν δὲ and εἶπεν πρὸς are very freq. in Lk., who prefers εἶπεν δὲ to καὶ εἶπεν even at the beginning of narratives, and uses πρὸς αὐτῶν, αὐτούς, κ.τ.λ. in preference to αὐτῷ, αὐτοῖς, κ.τ.λ., after verbs of speaking, answering, etc., to an extent which is quite remarkable (vv. 18, 19, 34, 55, 61, 73, ii. 15, 18, 20, 34, 48, 49, etc. etc.). This πρὸς is so strong a mark of his style that it should be distinguished in translation: εἶπεν πρὸς αὐτῶν, "He said unto him," and εἶπεν αὐτῷ, "He said to him." But not even RV. does this. See pp. lxii, lxiii.

Μὴ φοβοῦ. This gracious charge is specially common in Lk. (ver. 30, ii. 10, viii. 50, xii. 4, 7, 32; Acts xviii. 9, xxvii. 24). Bengel says of it, Primum alloquium celeste in aurora N.T. per Lucam amissimely descripta. Comp. Gen. xv. 1; Jos. viii. 1; Is. xliii. 1, 5, xliv. 2; Jer. xlvi. 27, 28; Dan. x. 12.

διότι. "Because," as generally in N.T. Comp. ii. 7, xxi. 28. It never means "therefore"; not Rom. i. 19 nor 1 Thes. ii. 18.

εἰσηγκώσθη ἢ δέησις σου. "Thy supplication was heard," at the time when it was offered. The pass. is used both of the petition (Acts x. 31; Ecclus. lii. 11) and of the petitioner (Mt. vi. 7; Heb. v. 7). The word δέησις implies personal need; it is a "special petition for the supply of want" (Lft. on Phil. iv. 6; Trench, Syn. li.). Unlike προσευχή, it may be used of petitions to men. The word

favourites, but by no means proves, the view that the prayer of Zacharias was for a son. And the context at first seems to confirm this. But would Zacharias have made his private wishes the main subject of his prayer at so unique an opportunity? Would he have prayed for what he regarded as impossible? As Bede remarks, *Nemo orat quod se accepturum desperat.* Having prayed for it as possible, would he have refused to believe an Angel who told him that the petition was granted? It is much more probable that he and the people were praying for the redemption of Israel,—for the coming of the Messiah's kingdom; and it is this supplication which was heard. To make δέησισ refer to habitual supplication, and not to the prayer offered with the incense, seems unnatural.

What Didon points out (p. 298) in quite a different connexion seems to have point here. It was an axiom with the Rabbins that a prayer in which there was no mention of the kingdom of God was no prayer at all (*Babyl., Beraoth*, fol. 40, 2); and in the ritual of the temple the response of the people to the prayers of the priests was, "Blessed be the name of the glory of the Kingdom of God for ever" (*Babyl., Taanith*, fol. 16, 2); *fēsus Christ*, ed. 1891. See also Edersh. *The Temple*, p. 127.

καὶ ἡ γυνὴ σου Ἐλευσάβετ γενέσει υἱὸν σοι. Not ἡ γυνὴ γάρ. "For thy wife shall bear thee a son" would have made it clear that the son was the answer to the δέησισ. But "and thy wife shall bear thee a son" may mean that this is an additional boon, which (as ver. 17 shows) is to prepare the way for the blessing prayed for and granted. Thus, like Solomon, Zacharias receives the higher blessing for which he prayed, and also the lower blessing for which he did not pray.

Τεννᾶω is generally used of the father (Mt. i. 1-16; Acts vii. 8, 29; Gen. v. 3-30, xi. 10-28, etc.); but sometimes of the mother (ver. 57, xxiii. 29; Jn. xvi. 21). The best authorities give Ἰωάνης, with only one ρ (WH. ii. App. p. 159). In LXX we have Ἰωάνης (2 Chron. xxviii. 12); Ἰωάνας (2 Chron. xvii. 15); Ἰωάννα (Neh. xii. 13); Ἰωάν (Neh. vi. 18); Ἰωάν (2 Kings xxv. 23; comp. Jn. xxi. 15-17). All these forms are abbreviations of Ιεωχαναν, "Jehovah's gift," or "God is gracious." Gotthold is a German name of similar meaning. It was a Rabbinical saying that the names of six were given before they were born—Isaac, Ishmael, Moses, Solomon, Josiah, and Messiah.

14. πολλοί ἐπὶ τῇ γενέσει αὐτοῦ χαρῆσονται. With the πολλοὶ here contrast παντὶ τῷ λαῷ in ii. 10. The joy at the appearance of a Prophet after centuries of need was immense, although not universal. The Pharisees did not dare to say that John was not a Prophet (Mt. xxi. 26); and Herod, until driven to it, did not dare to put him to death (Mt. xiv. 5). The word ἀγαλλάσσος means "extreme joy, exultation." It is not class., but is freq. in LXX. Elsewhere in N.T. only ver. 44; Acts ii. 46; Jude 24; Heb. i. 9 (from Ps. xlv. 8).
In class. Grk. $\chiαλπεων$ more often has the simple dat., but $επι$ is usual in N.T. (xiii. 17; Acts xv. 31; Mt. xviii. 13, etc.). It marks the basis of the joy. The reading γεννησει (G X I) for γεννησει (A B C D) probably comes from γεννησει in ver. 13.

18. $εσται γαρ μεγας ενοπτον \[του\] Κυριου. For he shall be great in the truest sense of the term. Whatsoever a character man has before God, of that character he really is.

The adj. $ενοπτος$ is found in Theocr. (xxii. 152) and in LXX, but $ενοπτων$ as a prep. seems to be confined to LXX and N.T. It is not in Mt. or Mk., but is specially freq. in Lk. (vv. 17, 19, 75, iv. 7, v. 18, 25, etc.), as also in Rev. The phrase $ενοπτον \tauου \κυριου$ or \θεου is a Hebraism (xii. 6, xvi. 15; Acts iv. 19, vii. 46, x. 31, 33; Judg. xi. 11; 1 Sam. x. 19; 2 Sam. v. 3, vi. 5). The preposition retains this meaning in modern Greek.

$οινον και σικερα \ου \μη \πιη$. He is to drink neither wine nor any intoxicating liquor other than wine. The same Hebrew word is rendered sometimes $σικερα$, sometimes $μεθυσμα$, and sometimes $σικερα \μεθυσμα$ (Lev. x. 9; Num. vi. 3; Judg. xiii. 4, 7, 14). Wiclif here has "ne wine ne syder." See D.B. 2 art. "Drink, Strong." John is to be a Nazirite, not only for a time, as was usual, but for all his life, as Samson and Samuel. This is not disproved by the omission of the command not to cut his hair (Edersh. The Temple, p. 322). Eusebius (Præp. Evang. vi. 10. 8) has gen. $σικερας$, and $σικερας$ is also quoted; but $σικερα$ is usually undeclined.

$\piνευματος \αγιου \πλησθησεται$. This is in obvious contrast to $οινον και σικερα$. In place of the physical excitement of strong drink he is to have the supernatural inspiration of the Holy Spirit. The whole phrase is peculiar to Lk. (vv. 41, 67; Acts ii. 4, iv. 8, 31, ix. 17, xiii. 9); and the two elements of it are specially characteristic of him. Excepting Mt. xxii. 10, xxvii. 48, the verb $πλησθησεται$ occurs only in Lk., who uses it twenty-two times. Mt. has the expression "Holy Spirit" five times, Mk. and Jn. each four times. Lk. has it fifty-three times, of which twelve are in the Gospel. He uses three forms: $πνευμα \αγιου$ (i. 15, 35, 41, 67, [ii. 25, iii. 16, iv. 1, xi. 13); $το \αγιου πνευμα$ (xii. 10, 12); and $το \πνευμα \το \αγιου$ (ii. 26, iii. 22). According to Schoettgen (i. p. 255), "to be filled with the Holy Spirit is" locutio Judæis familiaris. He gives one example. Comp. the contrast in Eph. v. 18.

$ετι \εκ \κοιλιας \μητρος \αυτου$. A Hebraism (Ps. xxii. 11, Ixxi. 6; Isa. xlix. 1, 5; comp. Judg. xiii. 5, 7, xvi. 17; Job xxxi. 18, etc.); instead of the more classical $εκ \γενεσις$, with or without $ενοπτων$ (Hom. II. xxiv. 535, Od. xviii. 6; Arist. Eth. Nic. vi. 13. 1, vii. 14. 4, viii. 12. 6). For the $ετι$ comp. $ετι \εκ \βρεθεσαν$, $ετι \απο \αρχης \ετι \και \εκ \παρθενων$, where $ετι$ seems to mean "even." The expression does not imply that John was filled with the Spirit before he was born (ver. 41). In LXX $κοιλια$ is often used of the womb (see esp. Jer. i. 5); but this is very rare in class. Grk.
16, 17. The two personal characteristics just stated—subjection of the flesh and sovereignty of the spirit—will manifest themselves in two external effects,—a great religious revival and the preparation for the Messianic kingdom. The first of these was the recognized work of every Prophet. Israel, through sin, was constantly being alienated from God; and it was one of the chief functions of a Prophet to convert the people to God again (Jer. iii. 7, 10, 14, xviii. 8; Ezek. iii. 19; Dan. ix. 13).

οὐκ αὑτός. The personal pronouns are much more used in N.T. than in class. Grk., esp. in the oblique cases. But even in the nom. the pronoun is sometimes inserted, although there is little or no emphasis. Lk. is very fond of beginning sentences with καὶ αὑτός, even where αὑτός can hardly mean "he on his part," as distinct from others (iii. 23, v. 14, 17, vi. 20, etc.). In προέλευσαται we have another mark of Lk.'s style. Excepting Mk. vi. 33 and 2 Cor. ix. 5, the verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (xxii. 47; Acts xii. 10, xx. 5, 13).

ἐνώπιον αὑτοῦ. "Before God," who comes to His people in the person of the Messiah (Is. xl. 1–11; Mal. iii. 1–5). It is unlikely that αὐτοῦ means the Messiah, who has not yet been mentioned. There is no analogy with αὐτός ἐφα, ἵπσε διίξη, where the pronoun refers to some one so well known that there is no need to mention him by name. For ἐνώπιον see on ver. 15; and for δύναμις, on iv. 14, 36. Elijah is mentioned, not as a worker of miracles, for "John did no sign" (Jn. x. 41), but as a preacher of repentance: it was in this that the Baptist had his spirit and power. For Rabbinic traditions respecting Elijah as the Forerunner see Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 706. Comp. Justin, Try. xlix.

The omission of the articles before πνευματι and δύναμις is probably due to the influence of an Aramaic original, in which the gen. which follows would justify the omission. Proper names in -ας pure commonly have gen. in -ου (Mt. i. 6, iii. 3); but here Ἡλεία is the true reading.

εἰποτρέψαι καρδιάς πατέρων ἐπὶ τέκνα. The literal interpretation here makes good sense, and perhaps, on the whole, it is the best. In the moral degradation of the people even parental affection had languished: comp. Ecclus. lviii. 10. Genuine reform strengthens family ties; whatever weakens them is no true reform. Or the meaning may be that the patriarchs will no longer be ashamed of their offspring: comp. Is. lxiii. 16. In any case, ἀπεθανός is not to be referred to τέκνα. It is not the disobedience of children to parents that is meant, but that of the Jews to God.

The Vulg. renders ἀπεθανός by incredibles, for which some MSS. have incredulos: comp. dissociabilis, penetrabilis for adjectives in -bilis with this force. Lat. Vet. varies: ineruditos (f), non consentientes (d), contumaces (e). ἐν φρονήσει δικαίων. The prep. of rest after a verb of motion expresses the result of the motion (vii. 17; Mt. xiv. 3): "Turn them so as to be in the wisdom of the just." For φρονησῖς see Lft. on Col. i. 9: the word
occurs only here and Eph. i. 8 in N.T. De Wette, Bleek, and others maintain that φύσης here means simply "disposition," Gesinnung. In what follows it is better to make επουάσαι dependent upon επιστρέφα, not co-ordinate with it. The preparation is the consequence of the conversion, and the final object of the προελεύσεσα: ne Dominus populum imparatum majestate sua obterat (Beng.).

18. Κατὰ τὶ γνώσομαι τοῦτο; The very question asked by Abraham (Gen. xv. 8): "In accordance with what shall I obtain knowledge of this?" i.e. What shall be in harmony with it, so as to be a sign of it? Comp. the cases of Gideon (Judg. vi. 36-39) and of Hezekiah (2 Kings xx. 8), who asked for signs; also of Moses (Exod. iv. 2-6) and of Ahaz (Is. vii. 11), to whom signs were given unasked. The spirit in which such requests are made may vary much, although the form of request may be the same; and the fact that Zacharias had all these instances to instruct him made his unbelief the less excusable. By his έγὼ γὰρ εἶμι, κ.τ.λ., he almost implies that the Angel must have forgotten the fact.

19. ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ ἄγγελος εἶπεν. In Attic ἀποκρίνομαι, in Homeric and Ionic ἀποκρίνομαι, is used in the sense of "answering." In N.T. ἀποκρίνομαι occurs only once (xx. 20), and there of "acting a part," not "answering": comp. 2 Mac. v. 25. But ἀποκριθεῖς for the class. ἀποκρινόμενος (which is rare in N.T.) marks the decay of the middle voice. In bibl. Grk. the middle voice is dying; in mod. Grk. it is dead. Machon, a comic poet about b.c. 250, is perhaps the earliest writer who uses ἀπεκρίθην like ἀπεκρινόμην in the sense of "replied, answered." In LXX, as in N.T., ἀπεκρίναμην is rare (Judg. v. 29 [A]; 1 Kings ii. 1; 1 Chron. x. 13). See Veitch, Greek Verbs, p. 78.

19. έγὼ εἰμι Γαβριήλ. Gabriel answers his έγὼ εἰμι with another. "Thou art old, and not likely to have children, but I am one whose word is to be believed": ἄγγέλῳ ἀποστείλω, καὶ τῷ ἀποστελλάντι (Eus.). The names of two heavenly beings are given us in Scripture, Gabriel (Dan. viii. 16, ix. 21) and Michael (Dan. x. 13, 21, xii. 1; Jude 9; Rev. xii. 7); other names were given in the later Jewish tradition. It is one thing to admit that such names are of foreign origin, quite another to assert that the belief which they represent is an importation. Gabriel, the "Man of God," seems to be the representative of angelic ministry to man; Michael, "Who is like God," the representative of angelic opposition to Satan. In Scripture Gabriel is the angel of mercy, Michael the angel of judgment. In Jewish legend the reverse is the case, proving that the Bible does not borrow Jewish fables. In the Targums Gabriel destroys Sennacherib's army; in the O.T. he instructs and comforts Daniel. The Rabbis said that Michael flies in one flight, Gabriel in two, Elijah in four, and Death in eight; i.e. mercy is swifter than judgment, and judgment is swifter than destruction. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 97.

ὁ παρεστηκὼς ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ. See on ver. 15. Gabriel is "the
angel of His presence” (Is. lxiii. 9; comp. Mt. xviii. 10). “Standing before” implies ministering. In LXX the regular phrase is παραστήτης (Job i. 6, which is a close parallel to this; 1 Kings xvii. 1, xviii. 15; 2 Kings iii. 14, v. 16). It is also used of service to a king (1 Kings x. 8). But when Gehazi “stood before his master,” we have παραστῆτης πρὸς τὸν κύριον αὐτοῦ (2 Kings v. 25).

Only here and ix. 27 does Lk. use the unsyncopated form of the perf. part. of ἔστην and its compounds. Elsewhere he prefers ἔστω to ἔστηκέν (i. 11, v. 1, 2, xviii. 13; Acts iv. 14, vii. 55, etc.). In Mt. xxvii. 47 and Mk. ix. 1 and xi. 5, ἔστηκέν is the right reading. In Jn. the unsyncopated form is common.

ἀπεστάλην λαλήσαι πρὸς σὲ καὶ εἰδαγγελίσασθαι σοι ταῦτα. This reminds Zacharias of the extraordinary favour shown to him, and so coldly welcomed by him. It is the first use in the Gospel narrative of the word which was henceforward to be so current, and to mean so much. In LXX it is used of any good tidings (2 Sam. i. 20; 1 Chron. x. 9), but especially of communications respecting the Messiah (Is. x. 10, lis. 9, lx. 6, lxi. 1). See on ii. 10 and iii. 18.

20. καὶ ἰδοὺ ἔση σωπτῶν καὶ μὴ δυνάμενος λαλήσας. The ἰδοὺ is Hebraistic, but is not rare in class. Grk. It introduces something new with emphasis. Signum poscenti datur congrum, quamvis non optatum (Beng.). The analytical form of the fut. marks the duration of the silence (comp. v. 10, vi. 40?, xvii. 35?, xxi. 17); and μὴ δυνάμενος, κ.τ.λ., is added to show that the silence is not a voluntary act, but the sign which was asked for (comp. Dan. x. 15). Thus his wrong request is granted in a way which is at once a judgment and a blessing; for the unbelief is cured by the punishment. For σωπτῶν of dumbness comp. 4 Mac. x. 18.

We have here one of many parallels in expression between Gospel and Acts. Comp. this with Acts xiii. 11; i. 39 with Acts i. 15; i. 66 with Acts xi. 21; ii. 9 with Acts xii. 7; xv. 20 with Acts xx. 37; xxi. 18 with Acts xxvii. 34; xxiv. 19 with Acts vii. 22.

In N. T. μη with the participle is the common constr., and in mod. Grk. it is the invariable use. In Lk. there is only one instance of ὥ with a participle (vi. 42). See Win. lv. 5. β, pp. 607-610; Lft. Epp. of St. Paul, p. 39, 1895. The combination of the negative with the positive statement of the same thing, although found in class. Grk., is more common in Heb. literature. In Acts xiii. 11 we have ἔση τυφλὸς μὴ βλέπων; comp. Jn. i. 3, 20, iii. 16, x. 5, 18, xviii. 20, xx. 27; Rev. ii. 13, iii. 9; Ps. lxxxix. 30, 31, 48; 2 Sam. xv. 4; Is. xxxviii. 1, etc.

ἀποκρύπτεται. Gal. iii. 19 is the only certain exception to the rule that ἀποκρύπτεται, not ἀποκρύπτεται, usually precedes vowels in N.T. Comp. xvii. 27, xxi. 24, and see on xvi. 16. For the attraction, comp. Acts i. 2; Mt. xxiv. 38. Attractions are specially freq. in Lk. See on iii. 10; also Blass, Gr. pp. 169, 214, ἀνθρώπου. Only in this phrase does ἀποκρύπτεται suffer elision in N.T. It is equivalent to ἀποκρύπτεται ἄνθρωπον, “for that, because” (xix. 44; Acts xii. 23; 2 Thes. ii. 10; Lev. xxvi. 43; 2 Kings xxii. 17; Ezek. v. 11). It is found in class. Grk. (Soph. Ant. 1068; Aristoph. Plut. 434).
21. ἦν ὁ λαὸς προσόδοκων. As in ver. 20, the analytical tense marks the duration of the action. Zacharias was longer than was customary; and the Talmud states that the priests were accustomed to return soon to prevent anxiety. It was feared that in so sacred a place they might incur God's displeasure, and be slain (Lev. xvi. 13). Hence ἐθαύμαζον ἐν τῷ χρόνῳ, "They were wondering while he tarried." Comp. ver. 8, and see on iii. 21. The common rendering, "at his tarrying," or "because he tarried," quod tardaret, is improbable even if possible. This would have been otherwise expressed: ἐθαύμαζον ἐπὶ (ii. 33, iv. 22, ix. 43, etc.), which D reads here; or διὰ (Mk. vi. 6; Jn. vii. 21 ?); or ὁ (xi. 38; Jn. iii. 7, iv. 27); or περί (ii. 18).

22. οὐκ ἐδύνατο λαλῆσαι αὐτῶς. He ought to pronounce the benediction (Num. vi. 24-26) from the steps, either alone or with other priests. His look and his inability to speak told them at once that something extraordinary had taken place; and the sacred circumstances would suggest a supernatural appearance, even if his signs did not make this clear to them.

The compound ἐπέγνωσαν implies clear recognition and full knowledge (v. 22, xxiv. 16, 31); and the late form ἐπτασίαι (for ὑπν.) is commonly used of supernatural sights (xxiv. 23; Acts xxvi. 19; 2 Cor. xii. 1; Dan. ix. 23, x. 1, 7, 8, 16). For καλ. αὐτός, "he on his part," as distinct from the congregation, see on ver. 17, and Win. xxii. 4. b, p. 187. The periphrastic tense ἦν διαμείνων again calls attention to the continued action. The verb is found here only in N.T., but occurs twice in LXX (Ps. xxxiv. 19; Ecclus. xxvii. 22). In διείμενε κῳδός both the compound and the tense emphasize the fact that it was no mere temporary seizure (xxii. 28; Gal. ii. 5; 2 Pet. iii. 4).

23. ὡς ἐπλήθησαν αἱ ἡμέραι τῆς λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ. When the week for which the course of Abijah was on duty for public service was at an end. See on vv. 15 and 57. In class. Grk. λειτουργία (λεώς, ἐφγαν) is freq. of public service undertaken by a citizen at his own expense. In bibl. Grk. it is used of priestly service in the worship of God (Heb. viii. 6, ix. 21; Num. vii. 22, xvi. 9, xviii. 4; 2 Chron. xxxxi. 2), and also of service to the needy (2 Cor. ix. 12; Phil. ii. 30). See Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 137.

ἀπήλθεν εἰς τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ. This was not in Jerusalem, in the Ophel quarter, where many of the priests resided, but in an unnamed town in the hill-country south of Jerusalem (ver. 39). It is probable that most of the priests who did not live in the city itself resided in the towns and villages in the neighbourhood. Convenience would suggest that they should live inside Judaea. In Neh. xi. 10-19 we have 1192 priests in Jerusalem; in 1 Chron. ix
we have 1,760. Later authorities speak of 24,000; but such figures are very untrustworthy. The whole question of the residences of the priests is an obscure one, and Josh. xxi. must not be quoted as evidence for more than a projected arrangement. That it was carried into effect and maintained, or that it was revived after the Exile, is a great deal more than we know. Schürer, *Jewish People in the T. of J. C.* ii. 1, p. 229.

24. σύνελαβεν. The word occurs eleven times in Lk. against five times elsewhere. He alone uses it in the sense of conceiving offspring, and only in these first two chapters (vv. 31, 36, ii. 21). This sense is common in medical writers and in Aristotle. Hobart remarks that the number of words referring to pregnancy and barrenness used by Lk. is almost as great as that used by Hippocrates: ἐν γαστρὶ ἔξειν (xxi. 23), ἐγκυσός (ii. 5), στείρα (i. 7), ἀτεκνός (xx. 28). And, excepting ἐν γαστρὶ ἔξειν, all of these are peculiar to himself in N.T. (*Med. Lang. of Lk.* p. 91).

περιέκρυβεν εαυτὴν μὴνας πέντε. The reflexive pronoun brings out more forcibly than the middle voice would have done that the act was entirely her own (Acts xxiii. 14; 1 Cor. xi. 31; 1 Jn. i. 8); and the compound verb implies all round, complete concealment. Her motive can only be conjectured; but the enigmatical conduct and remark are evidence of historic truth, for they would not be likely to be invented. The five months are the first five months; and at the end of them it would be evident that she had ceased to be ἡ στείρα (ver. 36). During these five months she did not wish to risk hearing a reproach, which had ceased to be true, but which she would not care to dispute. She withdrew, therefore, until all must know that the reproach had been removed.

The form ἐκρυβὼν is late: in class. Grk. ἐκρυψά is used. But a present κρύσω is found, of which this might be the imperfect.

It can hardly be accidental that μὴν is scarcely ever used in N.T. in a literal sense by any writer except Lk., who has it five times in his Gospel and five times in the Acts. The chronological details involved in this frequent use are the results of the careful investigation of which he writes in the preface. The other passages are Gal. iv. 10; Jas. v. 17, and six times in Revelation. So also ἐτόσο occurs fifteen times in Lk. and six in Mt. Mk. and Jn.

25. ἐπείδεν ἀφελεῖν ὡνείδος μοῦ ἐν ἄνθρωποις. The object of ἐπείδεν is neither ἐμὲ understood (as all English Versions except Wic. and Rhem.) nor ὡνείδος μοῦ (Hofmann), but ἀφελεῖν: “watched to take away, taken care to remove.” The constr. seems to be unique; but comp. Acts xv. 14. Alford and Holtzmann translate “hath deigned, condescended to remove”; but can ἐπείδεν mean that? Elsewhere in N.T. it occurs only Acts iv. 29; but in class. Grk. it is specially used of the gods regarding human affairs (Aesch. *Suppl.* i. 1031; *Sept.* 485). Hdt. i. 124. 2 is not
rightly quoted as parallel. Omitting ἔπειδεν, Rachel makes the same remark: Ἀφεῖλεν ὁ Θεὸς μου τὸ ὀνείδος (Gen. xxx. 23; comp. Ps. cxiii. 9; Is. iv. 1); but the different position of the μου is worth noting. In ἐν ἀνθρώπως we have another amphibolous expression (see on ver. 8). It may be taken with ἄφελεν, but more probably it belongs to τὸ ὀνείδος μου (ver. 36).

26-38. The Annunciation of the Birth of the Saviour.¹

The birth of the Baptist is parallel to the birth of Isaac; that of the Messiah to the creation of Adam. Jesus is the second Adam. But once more there is no violent breach with the past. Even in its revolutions Providence is conservative. Just as the Prophet who is to renovate Israel is taken from the old priesthood, so the Christ who is to redeem the human race is not created out of nothing, but "born of a woman."

26. εἰς τόπῳ τῆς ΓαλILEΑς ἡ ὅρμα Ναζαρέτ. The description perhaps implies that Lk. is writing for those who are not familiar with the geography of Palestine. There is no reason for believing that he himself was unfamiliar with it. Comp. ver. 39, iv. 31, vii. 11, viii. 26, ix. 10, xvii. 11, xix. 29, 37, 41.

Galilee is one of many geographical names which have gradually extended their range. It was originally a little "circuit" of territory round Kadesh-Naphtali containing the towns given by Solomon to Hiram (1 Kings ix. 11). This was called the "circuit of the Gentiles," because the inhabitants were strangers (1 Mac. v. 15, Γαλ. ἄλλοφιλοι). But it grew, until in the time of Christ it included the territory of Naphtali, Asher, Zebulon, and Issachar (D.B.² i. p. 1117). For a description of this region see Jos. B. J. iii. 3. 1-3. Nazareth is mentioned neither in O.T. nor in Josephus, but it was probably not a new town in our Lord's time. The site is an attractive one, in a basin among the south ridges of Lebanon. The sheltered valley is very fruitful, and abounds in flowers. From the hill behind the town the view over Lebanon, Hermon, Carmel, the Mediterranean, Gilead, Tabor, Gilboa, the plain of Esdraelon, and the mountains of Samaria, is very celebrated (Renan, Vie de J. p. 27). It would seem as if Mt. (ii. 23) was not aware that Nazareth was the original home of Joseph and Mary.

¹ "It has been argued that the different modes in which God is recorded to have communicated with men, in St. Matthew by dreams and in St. Luke by Angels, show the extent of the subjective influence of the writer's mind upon the narrative. But surely those are right who see in this difference the use of various means adapted to the peculiar state of the recipient. Moreover, as St. Matthew recognizes the ministry of Angels (xxviii. 2), so St. Luke relates Visions (Acts x. 9-16, xvi. 9, xviii. 9, 10). . . . It is to be noticed that the contents of the divine messages (Matt. i. 20, 21; Luke i. 30-33) are related conversely to the general character of the Gospels, as a consequence of the difference of character in those to whom they are addressed. The promise of Redemption is made to Joseph; of a glorious Kingdom to the Virgin" (West. Int. to Gospels, p. 317, 7th ed.). See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 93.
The form of the name of the town varies much, between Nazareth, Nazaret, Nazara, and Nazarath. Keim has twice contended strongly for Nazara (J. of Naz., Eng. tr. ii. p. 16, iv. p. 108); but he has not persuaded many of the correctness of his conclusions. WH. consider that “the evidence when tabulated presents little ambiguity” (ii. App. p. 160). Naζαράθ is found frequently (eight out of eleven times) in Codex Δ, but hardly anywhere else. Naζαρέθ is used once by Mt. (iv. 13), and perhaps once by Lk. (iv. 16). Naζαρέθ occurs once in Mt. (xxi. 11) and once in Acts (x. 38). Everywhere else (Mt. ii. 23; Mk. i. 9; Lk. i. 26, ii. 4, 39, 51; Jn. i. 46, 47) we have certainly or probably Naζαρές. Thus Mt. uses the three possible forms equally; Lk. all three with a decided preference for Nazaret; while Mk. and Jn. use Nazaret only. This appears to be fairly conclusive for Nazaret. Yet Scrivener holds that “regarding the orthography of this word no reasonable certainty is to be attained” (Int. to Crit. of N. T. ii. p. 316); and Alford seems to be of a similar opinion (i. Prolegom. p. 97). Weiss thinks that Nazara may have been the original form, but that it had already become unusual when the Gospels were written. The modern town is called En Nazirah, and is shunned by Jews. Its population of 5000 is mainly Christian, with a few Mahometans.

27. ἐμνηστευμένη. This is the N.T. form of the word (ii. 5): in LXX we have μεμνηστευμ. (Deut. xxii. 23). The interval between betrothal and marriage was commonly a year, during which the bride lived with her friends. But her property was vested in her future husband, and unfaithfulness on her part was punished, like adultery, with death (Deut. xxii. 23, 24). The case of the woman taken in adultery was probably a case of this kind.

ἐξ οἴκου Δαυείδ. It is unnecessary, and indeed impossible, to decide whether these words go with ἀνδρί, or with παρθένων, or with both. The last is the least probable, but Chrysostom and Wieseler support it. From vv. 32 and 69 we may with probability infer that Lk. regards Mary as descended from David. In ii. 4 he states this of Joseph. Independently of the present verse, therefore, we may infer that, just as John was of priestly descent both by Zacharias and Elisabeth, so Jesus was of royal descent both by Mary and Joseph. The title “Son of David” was publicly given to Jesus and never disputed (Mt. i. 1, ix. 27, xii. 23, xv. 22, xx. 30, 31; Mk. x. 47, 48; Lk. xviii. 38, 39). In the Test. XII. Patr. Christ is said to be descended from Levi and Judah (Simeon vii.); and the same idea is found in a fragment of Irenæus (Frag. xvii., Stieren, p. 836). It was no doubt based, as Schleiermacher bases it (St. Luke, Eng. tr. p. 28), on the fact that Elisabeth, who was of Levi, was related to Mary (see on ver. 36). The repetition involved in τῆς παρθένου is in favour of taking ἐξ οἴκου Δαυείδ with ἀνδρί: otherwise we should have expected αἱρήσ. But this is not conclusive.

28. Χαίρε, κεχαριτωμένη.1 Note the alliteration and the con-

---

1 The Ave Maria as a liturgical address to the Virgin consists of three parts, two of which are scriptural and one not. The first two parts, “Hail, Mary, full of grace; the Lord is with thee,” and “Blessed art thou among
nexion between χαίρε and γάρς. The gratia plena of the Vulg. is too indefinite. It is right, if it means “full of grace, which thou hast received”; wrong, if it means “full of grace, which thou hast to bestow.” From Eph. i. 6 and the analogy of verbs in -ῶ, κεχαριτωμένη must mean “endued with grace” (Ecclus. xviii. 17).  *Non ut mater gratia, sed ut filia gratiae* (Beng.). What follows explains κεχαριτωμένη, for with μετὰ σοῦ we understand ἐστι, not ἐστώ (comp. Judg. vi. 12). It is because the Lord is with her that she is endued with grace. Tyn., Cov., and Cran., no less than Wic. and Rhem., have “full of grace”; Genev. has “freely beloved.” See Resch, *Kindheitsev.* p. 78.


29. Here also ἴδοντα (A), for which some Latin texts have cum audisset, is an interpolation borrowed perhaps from ver. 12. It is not stated that Mary saw Gabriel. The pronominal use of the article (ἡ δὲ) is rare in N.T. (Acts i. 6; Mt. ii. 5, 9). It is confined to phrases with μὲν and δὲ, and mostly to nom. masc. and fem.

διεταράχθη. Here only in N.T. It is stronger than ἐπαράχθη in ver. 12. Neither Zacharias nor Mary are accustomed to visions or voices: they are troubled by them. There is no evidence of hysterical excitement or hallucination in either case. The διελογίζετο, “reckoned up different reasons,” is in itself against this. The verb is confined to the Synoptic Gospels (v. 21, 22; Mk. ii. 6, 8); Jn. xi. 50 the true reading is λογίζεσθαι.

ποταπός. In N.T. this adj. never has the local signification, “from what country or nation?” συναις? (Aesch. Cho. 575; Soph. O.C. 1160). It is synonymous with ποταμός, a use which is found in Demosthenes; and it always implies astonishment, with or without admiration (vii. 39; Mt. viii. 27; Mk. xiii. 1; 2 Pet. iii. 11; 1 Jn. iii. 1). In LXX it does not occur. The original form is ποταμός, and may come from ποταμός ἀπό; but συμπός is perhaps a mere termination.

εἶναι. It is only in Lk. in N.T. that we find the opt. in indirect questions. In him it is freq. both without ἄν (iii. 15, viii. 9, xxii. 23; Acts xvii. 11, xxii. 33, xxv. 20) and with ἄν (vi. 11; Acts v. 24, x. 17). In Acts viii. 31 we have opt. with ἄν in a direct question. Simcox, *Lang. of N.T.* p. 112; Win. xii. 4, c, p. 374.

30. Μὴ φοβοῦ, Μαριάμ, εἴρετε γὰρ χάριν παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ. See on women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb” (ver. 42), are first found in the *Liber Antiphonianus* attributed to Gregory the Great; and they were authorized as a formula to be taught with the Creed and the Lord’s Prayer, c. A.D. 1198. The third part, “Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners now and at the hour of death,” was added in the fifteenth century, and was authorized by Pope Pius v. in 1568.
I 30-33.] THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY 23

ver. 13. The 

The phrase is Hebraic: Nωε εὐφεν χάριν ἐναντίον Κυρίου τοῦ Θεοῦ (Gen. vi. 8; comp. xviii. 3, xxxix. 4). See on iv. 22.

εὐαγγέλιον καὶ τέξην υἱόν, καὶ καλεσεις τὸ ὄνομα. The same wording is found Gen. xvi. 11 of Ishmael, and Is. vii. 14 of Immanuel. Comp. Gen. xvii. 19 of Isaac, and Mt. i. 21 of Jesus. In all cases the καλεσεις is not a continuation of the prophecy, but a command, as in most of the Ten Commandments (Mt. v. 21, 27, 33; comp. Lk. iv. 12; Acts xxiii. 5, etc.). Win. xliii. 5. c, p. 396. The name Ἰησοῦς was revealed independently to Joseph also (Mt. i. 21). It appears in the various forms of Oshea, Hoshea, Jehoshua, Joshua, Jeshua, and Jesus. Its meaning is “Jehovah is help,” or “God the Saviour.” See Pearson, On the Creed, art. ii. sub init. p. 131, ed. 1849. See also Resch, Kindheitsev. pp. 80, 95.

οὗτος ἐσται μέγας. As in ver. 15, this is forthwith explained; and the greatness of Jesus is very different from the greatness of John. The title υἱὸς θυσίαν expresses some very close relation between Jesus and Jehovah, but not the Divine Sonship in the Trinity; comp. vi. 35. On the same principle as Ὁθός and Κύριος, ὑψίστος is anarthrous: there can be only one Highest (Ecclus. vii. 15, xvii. 26, xix. 17, xxiv. 2, 23, xxix. 11, etc.). The κληθήσεται is not a mere substitute for ἐσται: He not only shall be the Son of God, but shall be recognized as such. In the Acta Pauli et Theclae we have Μακάρων οἱ σοφίαι λαβίντες Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, οἱ αὐτοὶ υἱὸς υψίστος κληθήσονται (Tischendorf, p. 239). For τὸν θρόνον Δαυείδ comp. 2 Sam. vii. 12, 13; Is. ix. 6, 7, xvi. 5.

Δαυείδ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ. This is thought to imply the Davidic descent of Mary; but the inference is not quite certain. Jesus was the heir of Joseph, as both genealogies imply. Comp. Ps. cxxxii. 11; Hos. iii. 5. There is abundant evidence of the belief that the Messiah would spring from David: Mk. xii. 35, x. 47, xi. 10; Lk. xviii. 38, xx. 41; 4 Ezra xii. 32 (Syr. Arab. Arm.); Ps. Sol. xvii. 23, 24; Talmud and Targums. See on Rom. i. 3.

33. Βασιλείᾳ ... εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. Comp. “But of the Son he saith, God is Thy throne for ever and ever” (Heb. i. 8, where see Wsctt.); also Dan. ii. 44, vii. 14; Jn. xii. 34; Rev. xi. 15. The eternity of Christ’s kingdom is assured by the fact that it is to be absorbed in the kingdom of the Father (1 Cor. xv. 24–28). These magnificent promises could hardly have been invented by a writer who was a witness of the condition of the Jews during the half century which followed the destruction of Jerusalem. Indeed, we may perhaps go further and say that “it breathes the spirit of
the Messianic hope before it had received the rude and crushing
blow in the rejection of the Messiah” (Gore, *Dissertations*, p. 16).

The constr. *βασιλεῖαν ἐπὶ c. acc.* is not classical. We have it again
*xix*. 14, 27.

### 34. Πῶς ἦσται τοῦτο. She does not ask for *proof*, as Zacharias
did (ver. 18); and only in the form of the words does she ask as to
the mode of accomplishment. Her utterance is little more than
an involuntary expression of amazement: *non dubitantis sed admir-
antis* (Grotius). In contrasting her with Zacharias, Ambrose says,
*Hunc jam de negotio tractat; ille adhuc de nuntio dubitat.* It is
clear that she does not doubt the fact promised, nor for a moment
suppose that her child is to be the child of Joseph.

*Num*. *xxxii*. 17. The words are the avowal of a maiden conscious
of her own purity; and they are drawn from her by the strange
declaration that she is to have a son before she is married. It is
very unnatural to understand the words as a vow of perpetual
virginity, or as stating that such a vow has already been taken, or
is about to be taken. It is difficult to reconcile *ὁκ ἐγνώσκεν* (im-
perf., not aor.) *ἀυτὴν ἐως* (*Mt*. *i*. 25) with any such vow.¹

### 35. Πνεῦμα ἄγιον ἐπελεύσεται ἐπὶ σέ. It may be doubted whether
the article is omitted “because Holy Spirit is here a proper name”;
rather because it is regarded impersonally as the creative power of
the two passages are very parallel. See on ver. 15. Both *πνεῦμα*
and *ἄγιον* have special point. It is spirit and not flesh, what is
holy and not what is sinful, that is to produce this effect in her.
and *Jas*. *v*. *1*, the verb is peculiar to *Lk*. (*xi*. *22, xxi*. 26; *Acts* *i*. *8,*
*viii*. *24, xiii*. *40, xiv*. *19*).

*ἴσωμίς ῾Υπίστου ἐπισκιάσει σοι.* For *ἴσωμίς* see on *iv*. *14*; for
*ἐπισκιάσει* comp. the account of the Transfiguration (*ix*. *34*), and
for the dat. comp. the account of Peter’s shadow (*Acts* *v*. *15*). It
is the idea of the Shechinah which is suggested here (*Exod*. *xl*. *38*).
The cloud of glory signified the Divine presence and power, and it
is under such influence that Mary is to become a mother.

*δι. This illative particle is rare in the Gospels (*vii*. 7; *Mt*. *xxvii*. 8);
not in *Mk*. or *Jn*.

*τὸ γεννώμενον ἄγιον κληθήσεται οίδε Θεοῦ.* “The holy thing which
shall be born shall be called the Son of God,” or, “That which

¹ H. Lasserre renders *puisque je n’ai nul rapport avec mon mari,* and ex-
plains that *ἄνδρα* signifies mari, époux; *et la phrase marque la voeu de virginité*
*conjugal fait par Marie* (*pp*. *265, 564, ed. 1887). It is impossible that *ἄνδρα,*
without either article or possessive pronoun, can mean “my husband.”
shall be born shall be called holy, the Son of God." The latter of these two renderings seems to be preferable. Comp. ἄγιον τῷ κυρίῳ κληθήσεται (ii. 22); Ναζωραῖος κληθήσεται (Mt. ii. 23); ὦ Θεοῦ κληθήσονται (v. 9); ἐλάχιστος κληθήσεται and μέγας κλ. (v. 19). In all cases the appellation precedes the verb. The unborn child is called ἄγιον as being free from all taint of sin. De hac Sancto idem angelus est locutus, Dan. ix. 24 (Beng.). The εἰκ σου, which many authorities insert after γεννώμενον, is probably an ancient gloss, derived perhaps from Mt. i. 16: ΝΑΒΝ ΕΙΟΝ ΕΙΠΤΟ ΤΟΥ ἘΩΣ. Comp. ver. 20. Mary, who did not ask for one, receives a more gracious sign than Zacharias, who demanded it. The relationship between her and Elisabeth is unknown.

"Cousin," started by Wyclif, and continued until RV. substituted "kinswoman," has now become too definite in meaning. The kinship has led artists to represent the two children as being playmates; but Jn. i. 31 seems to be against such companionship. It has also led to the conjecture that Jesus was descended from both Levi and Judah (see on ver. 27). But Levites might marry with other tribes; and therefore Elisabeth, who was descended from Aaron, might easily be related to one who was descended from David. This verse is not evidence that Mary was not of the house of David.

The late form συγγενής (comp. συγγενείς), and the Ion. dat. γῆρει for γῆρα (Gen. xv. 15, xxi. 7, xxv. 8), should be noticed; also that ὁδὸς being the subject, the noun has no article. Comp. xxi. 22. The combination καὶ ὁδὸς is peculiar to Lk. (viii. 41?, xvi. 1, x. 28). The relative ages of Jesus and of John are fixed by this statement.

We may take καλομένη as imperf. part., "Used to be called." This reproach would cease when she reappeared at the end of the five months (ver. 24). καλομένος with appellations is freq. in Lk.

37. οὐκ ἄνωντήσει παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ πᾶν ῥῆμα. The negative and the verb are to be closely combined and taken as the predicate of πᾶν ῥῆμα. We must not take οὐκ without πᾶν. This is plain from Gen. xviii. 14: μη δινατεὶ παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ ῥημα; i.e. "Hath God said, and can He not do it?" or, Is anything which God has promised impossible? RV. here has "be void of power" for δινατεῖν; but it is doubtful whether the verb ever has this signification. Of things, it means "to be impossible" (Mt. xvii. 20); and of persons,
“to be unable”; in which case, like δυνατέων (Rom. xiv. 4; 2 Cor. ix. 8), it is followed by the infin. That “be impossible” is the meaning, both here and Gen. xviii. 14, is probable from Job xlii. 2, οἶδα δὲ πάντα δύνασαι, δύνατέω δὲ σοι οὐθέν; and from Zech. viii. 6, where δύνατησείν is used of a thing being too hard for man but not too hard for God; and from Jer. xxxii. 17, where both Aquila and Symmachus have οὐκ ἀδύνατησεῖν for οὐ μὴ ἀποκρυψθῇ of LXX. We render, therefore, “From God no word shall be impossible.” The idiom οὐ ... πᾶς, in the sense of “all . . . not,” i.e. “none,” is probably Hebraic. Comp. Mt. xxiv. 22. It is less common in N.T. than in LXX (Exod. xii. 16, 43; xx. 16; Dan. ii. 10, etc.), Win. xxvi. 1, p. 214; Blass, Gr. p. 174.

38. Ἰδοὺ ἡ δούλη Κυρίου. That ἴδον is not a verb, but an exclamation, is manifest from the verbless nominative which follows it. Comp. v. 12, 18. “Handmaid” or “servant” is hardly adequate to δούλη. It is rather “bondmaid” or “slave.” In an age in which almost all servants were slaves, the idea which is represented by our word “servant” could scarcely arise. In N.T. the fem. δούλη occurs only here, ver. 48, and Acts ii. 18, the last being a quotation.

γένοιτο μοι κατὰ τὸ ρήμα σου. This is neither a prayer that what has been foretold may take place, nor an expression of joy at the prospect. Rather it is an expression of submission—“God’s will be done”: πίναξ εἰμι γράφομενος ὁ βούλεται ὁ γραφείς, γραφέτω (Eus.). Mary must have known how her social position and her relations with Joseph would be affected by her being with child before her marriage. There are some who maintain that the revelation made to Joseph (Mt. i. 18–23) is inconsistent with what Lk. records here; for would not Mary have told him of the angelic message? We may reasonably answer that she would not do so. Her own inclination would be towards reserve (i. 51); and what likelihood was there that he would believe so amazing a story? She would prefer to leave the issue with regard to Joseph in God’s hands.


On the whole of this exquisite narrative Godet justly remarks: “Quelle dignité, quelle pureté, quelle simplicité, quelle délicatesse dans tout ce dialogue! Pas un mot de trop, pas un de trop peu. Une telle narration n’a pu émaner que de la sphère sainte dans laquelle le fait lui-même avait eu lieu” (i. p. 128, 3ème ed. 1888). Contrast the attempts in the apocryphal gospels, the writers of which had our Gospels to imitate, and yet committed such gross offences against taste, decency, and even morality. What would their inventions have been if they had had no historical Gospels to guide them?

Dr. Swete has shown that the doctrine of the Miraculous Conception was from the earliest times part of the Creed. Beginning with Justin Martyr (Apol. i. 21, 31, 32, 33, 63; Try. 23, 48, 100), he traces back
through Aristides (J. R. Harris, p. 24; Hennecke, p. 9; Barnes, Canon. and Uncanon. Gosp. p. 13), Ignatius (Eph. xix.; Trall. ix.; Smyr. i.), the Valentinians, and Basilides, to S. Luke, to whom these Gnostics appealed. The silence of S. Mark is of no weight; his record does not profess to go farther back than the ministry of the Baptist. In the Third Gospel we reach not merely the date of the Gospel (A.D. 75-80), but the date of the early traditions incorporated in these first chapters, traditions preserved (possibly in writing) at Jerusalem, and derived from Mary herself. The testimony of the First Gospel is perhaps even earlier in origin, and is certainly independent. It probably originated with Joseph, as the other with Mary (Gore, Bampton Lectures, p. 78; Dissertations on Subjects connected with the Incarnation, pp. 12-40). Greatly as the two narratives differ, both bear witness to the virgin birth (Swete, The Apostles’ Creed, ch. iv.).

39–56. The Visit of the Mother of the Saviour to the Mother of the Forerunner.

This narrative grows naturally out of the two which precede it in this group. The two women, who through Divine interposition are about to become mothers, meet and confer with one another. Not that a desire to talk about her marvellous experience prompts Mary to go, but because the Angel had suggested it (ver. 36). That Joseph’s intention of putting her away caused the journey, is an unnecessary conjecture.

It is not easy to see why the Song of Elisabeth is not given in metrical form either in WH. or in RV. It seems to have the characteristics of Hebrew poetry in a marked degree, if not in so full a manner as the Magnificat, Benedictus, and Nunc Dimittis. It consists of two strophes of four lines each, thus—

\[\text{Σπλογημένη σὺ ἐν γυναικίν,} \]
\[καὶ εὐλογημένος ὁ καρπὸς τῆς κοιλίας σου.\]
\[καὶ πόθεν μοι τοῦτο; \]
\[ἐνα Ελθῇ ἡ μήτηρ τοῦ κυρίου μου πρὸς ἐμέ; \]

\[Ἰδοὺ γὰρ ὦ εὐάγγελον ἡ φωνὴ τοῦ ἀσπασμοῦ σου ἐφ’ ὑμᾶς ἡ γενεὰ, ἐσκηρτοὶ ἐν ἀγαλλίαις τὸ βρέφος ἐν τῇ κοιλίᾳ μου. \]
\[καὶ μακαρία ἡ πιστεύσα ὧ θεαί τελεῖον τοῖς λαλήμενοις αὐτῷ παρὰ Κυρίῳ. \]


39. Ἀναστάσα. A very favourite word with Lk., who has it about sixty times against about twenty-two times in the rest of N.T. It occurs hundreds of times in LXX. Of preparation for a journey it is specially common (xv. 18, 20; Acts x. 20, xxii. 10, etc.). Lk. is also fond of such phrases as ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ταύταις, or ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις τυνος (ver. 5, ii. 1, iv. 2, 25, v. 35, vi. 12, ix. 36, etc.; Acts i. 15, ii. 18, v. 37, vi. 1, vii. 41, etc.). They are not found in Jn., and occur only four times in Mt., and the same in Mk. Here “in those days” means soon after the Annunciation. As
the projected journey was one of several days, it would require time to arrange it and find an escort. See small print note on ver. 20.

ἐπορεύθη εἰς τὴν ὀρυνήν. There is no trace of ὀρυνή as a proper name; ὀρυνή means the mountainous part of Judah as distinct from the plain (ver. 65; Gen. xiv. 10; Num. xiii. 29; Josh. ix. 1, x. 40; comp. Judith i. 6, ii. 22, iv. 7). It is worth noting that in this narrative, which is from an independent source, Lk. twice uses ὀρυνή. Elsewhere, when he is on the same ground as Mt. and Mk., he uses, as they do, τὸ ὄρος (vi. 12, viii. 32, ix. 28, 37). None of them use either ὄρος or τὰ ὄρη. Lk. On a Fresh Revision of N.T. pp. 124, 186, 3rd ed. 1891. For the shortening of ὀρυνή to ὀρυνή see WH. ii. App. p. 154. Grotius rightly remarks on μετὰ σπουδῆς, ne negligeret signum quod augendae ipsius fiduciae Deus assignaverat. Comp. Mk. vi. 25; Exod. xii. 11; Wisd. xix. 2.

εἰς πόλιν Ἰούδα. Lk. does not give the name, probably because he did not know it. It may have been Hebron, just as it may have been any town in the mountainous part of Judah, and Hebron was chief among the cities allotted to the priests. But if Lk. had meant Hebron, he would either have named it or have written τὴν πόλιν in the sense of the chief priestly dwelling. But it is very doubtful whether the arrangement by which certain cities were allotted to the priests was carried into effect; and, if so, whether it continued. Certainly priests often lived elsewhere. Eli lived at Shiloh, Samuel at Ramathaim-Zophim, Mattathias at Modin. None of these had been allotted to the priests. See on ver. 23.

That Ἰούδα is the name of the town, and represents Juttah (Ἡρᾶν or Ἱερᾶ or Ταῦβ), which was in the mountain region of Judah (Josh. xv. 55), and had been allotted to the priests (Josh. xxi. 16), is possible. Reland (1714) was perhaps the first to advocate this. Robinson found a village called Yuttah in that region (Res. in Pal. ii. p. 206), and the identification is attractive. But the best authorities seem to regard it as precarious. A tradition, earlier than the Crusades, makes Ain Karim to be the birthplace of John the Baptist. Didon (Jesus Christ, App. D) contends for this, appealing to V. Guérin, Description de la Palestine, i. p. 83, and Fr. Liévin, Guide de la Palestine. ii. But it is best to regard the place as an unknown town of Judah. In any case, the spelling "Juda" (AV.) is indefensible; comp. iii. 33.

41. ἐγένετο . . ἐσκύρησεν. See detached note at the end of the chapter. It is improbable that in her salutation Mary told Elisabeth of the angelic visit. The salutation caused the movement of the unborn child, and Elisabeth is inspired to interpret this sign aright. Grotius states that the verb is a medical word for the movement of children in the womb, but he gives no instances. It is used Gen. xxv. 22 of the unborn Esau and Jacob, and Ps. cxiii. 4, 6 of the mountains skipping like rams. In class. Grk. it is used of the skipping both of animals and of men. For ἐπικρηθη τοῦσα τοῦτος ἄγιος see on ver. 15. ὅσ = "when" is very freq. in Lk.

42. ἀνεφώνησεν. 1 Chron. xv. 28, xvi. 4, 5, 42; 2 Chron.
v. 13: here only in N.T. Lk. frequently records strong expressions of emotion, adding υπεράρπαση to κραυγή, φωνή, χαρά, etc. (ii. 10, iv. 33, viii. 28, xvii. 15, xix. 37, xxiii. 23, 46, xxiv. 52). It is perhaps because κραυγή seemed less appropriate to express a cry of joy that it has been altered (A C D) to the more usual φωνή. But it is convincingly attested (B L Ξ). It means any cry of strong feeling, whether surprise (Mt. xxv. 6), anger (Eph. iv. 31), or distress (Heb. v. 7). Comp. Ἀφοι. Βαρυχ., liv. 10.

Εἰλογημένα σὺ ἐν γυναιξίν. A Hebraistic periphrasis for the superlative, "Among women thou art the one who is specially blessed." Mary has a claim to this title κατ' ἐξοχήν. Comp. vii. 28. Somewhat similar expressions occur in class. Grk., esp. in poetry: ὁ φίλα γυναικῶν (Eur. Ἀλ. 460); ὁ σχέτλε ἄνδρών (Ἀριστ. Ἀν. 1048). In N.T. εἰλογημένος is used of men, εἰλογητός of God: see on ver. 68. With εἰλογημένος ὁ καρπός τῆς κοιλίας σου comp. εἰλογημένα τὰ ἐγκόνα τῆς κ. σου (Deut. xxviii. 4) and καρπὸν κοιλίας (Gen. xxx. 2; Lam. ii. 20). See small print on ver. 15.

43. καὶ πόθεν μοι τούτο. We understand ἐγένοντο: comp. Mk. xii. 37. Modestius filii praeludens qui olim Christo erat dicturus, σὺ ἐχεῖς πρὸς με; (Grotius). It is by inspiration (ver. 41) that Elisabeth knows that she who greets her is ἡ μήτηρ τοῦ κυρίου, i.e. of the Messiah (Ps. cx. 1). The expression "Mother of God" is not found in Scripture.1

In ἐν Ὑπαρχεῖ we have a weakening of the original force of ἐνα, which begins with the Alexandrine writers as an alternative for the infinitive, and has become universal in modern Greek. Godet would keep the telic force by arbitrarily substituting "What have I done?" for "Whence is this to me?" "What have I done in order that?" etc. Comp. the Lucan constr., τοῦτο ὅτι (x. 11, xii. 39; Acts xxiv. 14). See Blass, Gr. p. 224.

44. Ἰδοὺ γὰρ ὃς ἐγένετο ἡ φωνή τοῦ ἀσπάσμου σου. On this γὰρ Bengel bases the strange notion that the conception of the Christ takes place at the salutation: γὰρ rationem experimem, cur hoc ipso temporis puncto Elisabet primum "Matrem Domini sui" proclamat Mariam. . . . Nunc Dominus, et respectu matris et progenitorum, et respectu locorum, ubi conceptus ac natus est, ex iuda est ortus. It is a mark of the delicacy and dignity of the narrative that the time is not stated; but ver. 38 is more probable than ver. 40. Excepting 2 Cor. vii. 11, Ἰδοὺ γὰρ is peculiar to Lk. (ver. 48, ii. 10, vi. 23, xvii. 21; Acts ix. 11). For ἐγένετο ἡ φωνή see on iii. 22 and ix. 35, 36.

45. μακαρία ἡ πιστεύσας ὅτι. Latin texts, both of Lat. Vet. and of Vulg., vary much between beata quæ creditit quoniam and beata quæ credidisti quoniam. English Versions are equally varied, even Wic. and Rhem. being different. "Blessed is she that

1 P. Didon inaccurately renders this, Comment se fait il que la mère de mon Dieu vienne à moi (p. 111).
believed” is probably right. This is the first beatitude in the Gospel; and it is also the last: μακάριος οί μη θάντες και πιστεύσατε (Jn. xx. 29). In Mk. μακάριος does not occur; and in Jn. only xiii. 17 and xx. 29. It is specially common in Lk.

This verse is one of many places in N. T. in which διπ. may be either “that” or “because”: see on vii. 16. There can be little doubt that Luther, Erasmus, Beza, and all Latin and English Versions are right in taking the latter sense here. The διπ. introduces the reason why the belief is blessed and not the contents (Syr. Sin.) of the belief. There is no need to state what Mary believed. Elisabeth adds her faith to Mary’s, and declares that, amazing as the promise is, it will assuredly be fulfilled. Only a small portion of what had been promised (31-33) had as yet been accomplished; and hence the ἔτσι τελείωσος, “There shall be a bringing to perfection, an accomplishment” (Heb. vii. 11). Comp. ἔτελευσοι εἰς τελείωσιν τῶν λόγων δι' ἐκάλησας μετ' ἑμοῦ (Judith x. 9).

46-56. The Magnificat or Song of Mary.

This beautiful lyric is neither a reply to Elisabeth nor an address to God. It is rather a meditation; an expression of personal emotions and experiences. It is more calm and majestic than the utterance of Elisabeth. The exultation is as great, but it is more under control. The introductory εἶπεν, as contrasted with ἀνεβώνησεν κραυγῇ μεγάλῃ (ver. 42), points to this. The hymn is modelled upon the O. T. Psalms, especially the Song of Hannah (1 Sam. ii. 1-10); but its superiority to the latter in moral and spiritual elevation is very manifest. From childhood the Jews knew many of the O. T. lyrics by heart; and, just as our own poor, who know no literature but the Bible, easily fall into biblical language in times of special joy or sorrow, so Mary would naturally fall back on the familiar expressions of Jewish Scripture in this moment of intense exultation. The exact relation between her hymn and these familiar expressions can be best seen when the two are placed side by side in a table.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>THE MAGNIFICAT</th>
<th>THE OLD TESTAMENT</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Μεγάλωσεν ἡ γυνὴ μον των κύριων καὶ ἤγαλλάσεν τῷ πνεύμα μου ἐπι τῷ Θεῷ τῷ σωτήρι μου διπ. ἐπέβλεψεν ἐπὶ τὴν ταπείνωσιν τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ</td>
<td>1 Ἐστερεώθη ἡ καρδία μου ἐν Κυρίῳ, ἰσφάδη κέρας μου ἐν Θεῷ μου.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἰδοὺ γὰρ ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν μακαριότατα με πάσαι αἱ γενεαὶ διπ. ἐποίησεν μοι μεγάλα ὁ διωνόσι, καὶ ἄγιον τὸ ἄγωμα αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ εἰς γενεάς καὶ γενεάς τῶν φοβουμένων αὐτῶν.</td>
<td>2 ἐὰν ἐπιβλέπων ἐπιβλέψῃς τὴν ταπείνωσιν τῆς δόξης σου—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3 Μακαρία ἐγώ, διπ. μακαριούσι με πάσαι αἱ γεναῖκες.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4 δοτις ἐποίησεν ἐν σοι τὰ μεγάλα—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5 ἁγιον καὶ φαθορῷ τὸ ἄγωμα αὐτοῦ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6 τὸ δὲ ἔλεος τοῦ κυρίου ἀπὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος καὶ ἕως τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐπὶ τῶν φοβουμένων αὐτῶν.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 1 Sam. ii. 1.  2 1 Sam. i. 11.  3 Gen. xxx. 13.  4 Deut. x. 21.  5 Ps. cxi. 9.  6 Ps. ciii. 17.
The hymn falls into four strophes, 46–48, 49 and 50, 51–53, 54 and 55.¹⁰

46. Μεγαλύνει ἢ ψυχή μου τὸν κύριον. The verb is used in the literal sense of “enlarge,” Mt. xxiii. 5: comp. Lk. i. 58. More often, as here, in the derived sense of “esteem great, extol, magnify” (Acts v. 13, x. 46, xix. 17). So also in class. Grk. Weiss goes too far when he contends that “distinctions drawn between ψυχή and πνεῦμα have absolutely no foundation in N.T. usage” (sind ganzlich unbegründet); but it is evident that no distinction is to be made here. The ψυχή and the πνεῦμα are the immaterial part of man’s nature as opposed to the body or the flesh. It is in her inner, higher life, in her real self, that Mary blesses God in jubilation. If a distinction were made here, we ought to have μεγαλύνει τὸ πνεῦμά μου ἢ ἡγαλλάσειν ἢ ψυχή μου, for the πνεῦμα is the seat of the religious life, the ψυχή of the emotions. See Lk. Notes on the Epp. of S. Paul, p. 88, 1895, and the literature there quoted, esp. Olshausen, Opusc. p. 157.

47. ἡγαλλάσειν. A word formed by Hellenists from ἡγαλλαμαί, and freq. in LXX (Ps. xv. 9, xlvii. 12, lxix. 5; Is. xxxv. 2; Jer. xlix. 4). The act. is rare; perhaps only here and Rev. xix. 7; but as v. 1 Pet. i. 8. The aor. may refer to the occasion of the angelic visit. But it is the Greek idiom to use the aor. in many cases in which we use the perf., and then it is misleading to translate the Grk. aor. by the Eng. aor. Moreover, in late Grk.

---

¹ Ps. lxxxix. 11. ³ Job xii. 19. ⁸ Job v. 11.
² 1 Sam. ii. 7. ⁴ Ps. civii. 9. ⁶ Is. xlii. 8.
⁷ Ps. xcviii. 3. ⁸ Mic. vii. 20. ⁹ 2 Sam. xxii. 51.

On the use of the Magnificat, first at Lauds in the Gallican Church, from A.D. 507, and then at Vespers on Saturday in the Sarum Breviary, see Blunt, Annotated Prayer-Book.
the distinction between aor. and perf. had become less sharp. Simcox, 

τῷ Θεῷ τῷ σωτήρι μου. He is the Saviour of Mary as well as of her fellows. She probably included the notion of external and political deliverance, but not to the exclusion of spiritual salvation. For the expression comp. 1 Tim. i. 1, ii. 3; Tit. i. 3, ii. 10, iii. 4; Jude 25; Ps. xxiii. 5, cvi. 21. In the *Ps. Sol.* we have Ἀλήθεια τῶν δικαίων παρὰ Θεοῦ σωτήρος αὐτῶν (iii. 7); and ὡμεῖς δὲ ἐλπιδοῦμεν ἐπὶ θεὸν τὸν σωτῆρα ὡς (xivii. 3). Comp. *Ps. Sol.* viii. 39, xvi. 4.

48. δὲ ἐπέβλεψεν ἐπὶ τὴν ταπείνωσιν τῆς δουλῆς αὐτοῦ. Comp. Hannah's prayer for a child 1 Sam. i. 11. In spite of her humble position as a carpenter's bride, Mary had been chosen for the highest honour that a human being could receive. For ταπείνωσις comp. Acts viii. 33 (from Is. liii. 8) and Phil. iii. 21; and for ἡδεῖν τὴν ταπείνωσιν comp. 2 Kings xiv. 26 and Ps. xxv. 18. This use of ἐπιβλέπειν ἐπὶ is freq. in LXX (Ps. xxv. 16, lxix. 16, cxi. 19, cxix. 132, etc.); see esp. 1 Sam. ix. 16.

ἰδοὺ γὰρ ἄπο τοῦ νῦν μακαριούσιν με πᾶσαι αἱ γενεαί. For ἰδοὺ γὰρ see on ver. 44, and for ἄπο τοῦ νῦν see on v. 10. Elisabeth had begun this μακαριζεῖν, and we have another instance in the woman from the crowd (xi. 27). Note the wide difference between the scope of Mary's prophecy, μακαριούσιν πᾶσαι αἱ γενεαί, and Leah's statement of fact, μακαριζούσιν με πᾶσαι αἱ γυναίκες (Gen. xxx. 13). See Resch, *Kindheitsev.* p. 104.

The Latin renderings of ἄπο τοῦ νῦν are interesting: *ex hoc* (Vulg.), *a modo* (d), *a nunc* (Cod. Gall.).

49. δὲ ἐποίησεν μοι μεγαλὰ δ δυνατός. Here the second strophe begins. The reading μεγαλαία may come from Acts ii. 11: comp. δ ἐποίησας μεγαλαία (Ps. lxx. 19). With δ δυνατός comp. δύναμις Ὡψίτου (ver. 35) and Κύριος κραταιος καὶ δυνατός (Ps. xiii. 8). In LXX δυνατός is very common, but almost invariably of men. After both δυνατός καὶ αὐτῶς we should place a colon. The clause καὶ ἄγιον τὸ δύναμα αὐτοῦ is a separate sentence, neither dependent upon the preceding δικαίων, nor very closely connected with what follows.

50. καὶ τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ εἰς γενεάς καὶ γενεάς τοῖς φοβουμένοις αὐτῶν. Comp. *Ps. Sol.* x. 4, καὶ τὸ ἔλεος Κυρίου ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀγαπώτατος αὐτῶν ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, καὶ μισθοθέτα τοῦ Κυρίου τῶν δούλων αὐτοῦ ἐν ἐλέαι: also xiii. 11, ἐπὶ δὲ τοῖς ὀσίοις τὸ ἔλεος νυμίν, καὶ ἐπὶ τοῖς φοβουμένοις αὐτῶν τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ. With εἰς γενεὰς κ. γ. comp. εἰς γενεάς γενεάς (Is. xxxiv. 17), εἰς γενεάς καὶ γενεάς (Ps. lxxix. 2), and κατὰ γενεάν καὶ γενεάν (1 Mac. ii. 61). "Fearing God" is the O.T. description of piety. Nearly the whole verse comes from Ps. ciii. 17. Syr-Sin. for καὶ γενεάς has "and on the tribe."

51. Ἐποίησεν κράτος ἐν βραχίονι αὐτοῦ, διεσκόρπισεν, κ.τ.λ. Beginning of the third strophe. The six aorists in it are variously explained.
I. 51-54.) THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

1. They tell of things which the Divine power and holiness and mercy (vv. 49, 50) have already accomplished in the past. 2. According to the common prophetic usage, they speak of the future as already past, and tell of the effects to be produced by the Messiah as if they had been produced. 3. They are gnostic, and express God's normal acts. We may set aside this last. It is very doubtful whether the aor. is ever used of what is normal or habitual (Win. xl. 5. b, 1, p. 346). Of the other two explanations, the second is to be preferred. It is more likely that Mary is thinking of the far-reaching effects of the blessing conferred upon herself than of past events unconnected with that blessing. In either case the six aorists must be translated by the English perfect. They show that in this strophe, as in the second, we have a triplet. There it was God's power, holiness, and mercy. Here it is the contrasts between proud and humble, high and low, rich and poor.

Both ἐποίησεν κράτος and ἐν βραχίονι αὐτοῦ are Hebraisms. For the former comp. δεξία Κυρίου ἐποίησεν δύναμιν (Ps. cxviii. 15). For βραχίων to express Divine power comp. Acts xiii. 17; Jn. xii. 38 (from Is. liii. 1); Ps. xlviii. 3, xcviii. 1, etc. The phrase ἐν χείρι κράται καὶ ἐν βραχίονι υψηλάς is frequent in LXX (Deut. iv. 34, v. 15, vi. 21, xxvi. 8). This use of ἐν is in the main Hebraistic (xiiii. 49: Rev. vi. 8; Judg. xv. 15, xx. 16; 1 Kings xii. 18; Judith vi. 12, viii. 33). Win. xlviii. 3, d, p. 485.

ὑπερφανάνου διανοία καρδίας αὐτῶν. The dat. limits ὑπερφανάνου: they are proud and overweening in thought. In N.T. ὑπερφανός is never "conspicuous above" others, but always in a bad sense, "looking down on" others (Jas. iv. 6; 1 Pet. v. 5; Rom. i. 30; 2 Tim. iii. 2). It is frequent in LXX. Comp. Ps. Sol. ii. 35, κομβῶν ὑπερφανάνου εἰς ἀπώλειαν αἰώνων ἐν ἀτύμλῳ; also iv. 28. See Wsctt. on l Jn. ii. 16, and Trench, Syn. xxix.

52. καθελεῖν δυνάστας ἀπὸ θρόνων καὶ ὄψισεν ταπεινοῖς. "He hath put down potentates from thrones." "Potentates" rather than "princes" (RV.), or "the mighty" (AV.), because of τυχ. vi. 15. Comp. δυνάστα τὰ Φαραώ (Gen. l. 4). In Acts viii. 27 it is an adj. It is probable that ταπεινοῖς here means primarily the oppressed poor as opposed to tyrannical rulers. See Hatch, Biblical Greek, pp. 73-77. Besides the parallels given in the table (p. 31) comp. ἀναλαμβάνως πρεσεὶς ὁ κύριος, ταπεινῶν δὲ ἀμαρτολῶν ἐδω τῆς γῆς (Ps. cxvii. 6); θρόνων ἀρχιῶν καθελεῖν ὁ κύριος, καὶ ἐκάθισεν πρεσεὶς ἀντ' αὐτῶν (Ecclus. x. 14); also Lk. xiv. 11, xviii. 14; Jas. i. 9, 10. In Clem. Rom. Cor. lix. 3 we have what looks like a paraphrase, but may easily come from O.T. Comp. Enoch xi. 5.

53. πεινώτας ἐνέπλησεν ἄγαθών. Both material and spiritual goods may be included. Comp. πλήρεις ἄρτων ἡλαττώθησαν, καὶ ἀσθενοῦντες παρῆκαν γῆν (1 Sam. ii. 5); also Ps. Sol. v. 10-12, x. 7.

54. ἀντελάβετο Ἰσραήλ παιδὸς αὐτοῦ. The fourth strophe. The regular biblical meaning of ἀντελαμβάνωμαι is "lay hold of in order to support or succour" (Acts xx. 35; Ecclus. ii. 6); hence ἀντλήπτω is "succour, help" (1 Cor. xii. 28; Ps. xxii. 20, lxxxiii. 8), and ἀντλήπτωρ is "helper" (Ps. xviii. 3, liv. 6). There is no doubt that παιδὸς αὐτοῦ means "His servant," not "His son." The children of God are called τέκνα or νίοι, but not παῖδες. We have παῖς in the sense of God's servant used of Israel or Jacob (Is. xli. 8, 9, xlii. 1, xliv. 1, 2, 21, xlv. 4); of David (Lk. i. 69;
Acts iv. 25; Ps. xvii. 1; Is. xxxvii. 35; and of Christ (Acts iii. 13, 26, iv. 27, 30). Comp. Ps. Sol. xii. 7, xvii. 23; Didaché, ix. 2, 3, x. 2, 3.

μνημονεύων ἐλέους. "So as to remember mercy," i.e. to prove that He had not forgotten, as they might have supposed. Comp. Ps. Sol. x. 4, καὶ μνημονεύων Κύριος τῶν δούλων αὐτοῦ ἐν ἐλεήμονα.

55. καθὼς ἔλαλησεν πρός. "Even as He spake unto": see on vv. 2 and 13. This clause is not a parenthesis, but explains the extent of the remembrance of mercy. RV. is the first English Version to make plain that τῷ Ἀβραάμ, κ.τ.λ., depends upon μνημονεύων and not upon ἔλαλησεν by rendering πρός "unto" and the dat. "toward." To make this still more plain, "As He spake unto our fathers" is put into a parenthesis, which is not necessary. The Genevan is utterly wrong, "(As He promised to our fathers, to wit, to Abraham and his seed) for ever." It is improbable that Lk. would use both πρός and the simple dat. after ἔλαλησεν in the same sentence; or that he means to say that God spoke to Abraham's seed for ever. The phrase εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα is common in the Psalms, together with εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τοῦ αἰῶνος (Heb. i. 8) and εἰς αἰῶνα αἰῶνος. It means "unto the age," i.e. the age καὶ ἐξωκάτω, the age of the Messiah. The belief that whatever is allowed to see that age will continue to exist in that age, makes εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα equivalent to "for ever." This strophe, like ver. 72, harmonizes with the doctrine that Abraham is still alive (xx. 38), and is influenced by what takes place in the development of God's kingdom on earth (Jn. viii. 56; comp. Heb. xii. 1; Is. xxix. 22, 23).

For εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα AC F MS here have εἰς αἰῶνα (1 Chron. xvii. 16; Ezek. xxv. 15?), which does not occur in N.T.

56. Ἐμεινεν δὲ Μαριὰμ σῶν αὐτῆς. Lk. greatly prefers σῶν to μετά. He uses σῶν much more often than all N.T. writers put together. In his Gospel we find him using σῶν where the parallel passage in Mt. or Mk. has μετά or καί; e.g. viii. 38, 51, xx. 1, xxii. 14, 56. We have σῶν three times in these first two chapters; here, ii. 5 and 13. It is not likely that an interpolator would have caught all these minute details in Lk.'s style: see Introd. § 6.

ὁς μήνας τρεῖς. This, when compared with μην ἐκτὸς (ver. 36), leads us to suppose that Mary waited until the birth of John the Baptist. She would hardly have left when that was imminent. Lk. mentions her return before mentioning the birth in order to complete one narrative before beginning another; just as he mentions the imprisonment of the Baptist before the Baptism of the Christ in order to finish his account of John's ministry before beginning to narrate the ministry of Jesus (iii. 20, 21). That Mary is not named in vv. 57, 58 is no evidence that she was not
present. It would be unnatural to say that one of the household heard of the event; and, in fact, οἱ συγγενεῖς would include her, whether it is intended to do so or not. Origen, Ambrose, Bede, and others believe that she remained until the birth of John. For the patristic arguments for and against see Corn. à Lap. Lk. leaves us in doubt, probably because his authority left him in doubt; but Didon goes too far in saying that Lk. insinuates that she was not present.¹

For this use of ὤς comp. viii. 42 (not ii. 37); Acts i. 15, v. 7, 36. Lk. more often uses ὕστερον in this sense (iii. 23, ix. 14, 28, xxii. 41, 59, xxiii. 44; Acts ii. 47, etc.). In ὑπεστρεψὲν we have another very favourite word which runs through both Gospel and Acts. It is found elsewhere only Mk. xiv. 40; Gal. i. 17; Heb. vii. 1; 2 Pet. ii. 21.

Meyer rightly remarks that "the historical character of the Visitation of Mary stands or falls with that of the Annunciation." The arguments against it are very inconclusive. 1. That it does not harmonize with Joseph's dream in Mt. i. 20; which has been shown to be incorrect. 2. That there is no trace elsewhere of great intimacy between the two families; which proves absolutely nothing. 3. That the obvious purpose of the narrative is to glorify Jesus, in making the unborn Baptist acknowledge Him as the Messiah; which is mere assertion. 4. That the poetic splendour of the narrative lifts it out of the historical sphere; which implies that what is expressed with great poetic beauty cannot be historically true,—a canon which would be fatal to a great deal of historical material. We may assert of this narrative, as of that of the Annunciation, that no one in the first or second century could have imagined either. Least of all could any one have given us the Magnificat,—"the most magnificent cry of Joy that has ever issued from a human breast." Nothing that has come down to us of that age leads us to suppose that any writer could have composed these accounts without historic truth to guide him, any more than an architect of that age could have produced Milan cathedral. Comp. the Prot-evangelium of James xii.—xiv.; the Pseudo-Matthew ix.—xii.; the Hist. of Joseph the Carpenter iii.—vi.

57—80. The Birth and Circumcision of the Forerunner.

57. ἐπλήσθη δ' χρόνος τοῦ τεκείν αὐτήν. Expressions about time or days being fulfilled are found chiefly in these two chapters in N.T. (ver. 23, ii. 6, 21, 22). They are Hebraistic: e.g. ἐπληρώθησαν αἱ ἡμέραι τοῦ τεκείν αὐτήν (Gen. xxv. 24; comp. xxix. 21; Lev. xii. 4, 6; Num. vi. 5, etc.). And τοῦ τεκείν is gen. after δ' χρόνος.

¹ Didon has some excellent remarks on the poetical portion of this narrative. La poésie est le langage des impressions véhémentes et des idées sublimes. Chez les Juifs, comme chez tous les peuples d'Orient, elle jaillissait d'inspiration. Tout âme est poète, la joie ou la douleur la fait chanter. Si jamais un cœur a dû faire explosion dans quelque hymne inspiré, c'est bien celui de la jeune fille élue de Dieu pour être la mère du Messie.

Elle emprunte à l'histoire biblique des femmes qui, avant elle, ont tressailli dans leur maternité, comme Liah et la mère de Samuel des expressions qu'elle élargit et transfigure. Les hymnes nationaux qui célèbrent la gloire de son peuple, la miséricorde, la puissance, la sagesse et la fidélité de Dieu, reviennent sur ses levers habitués à les chanter (Jésus Christ, p. 112, ed. 1891). The whole passage is worth consulting.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [I. 57–62.

ἐμεγάλυνεν Κύριος τὸ ἐλεός αὐτοῦ μετ’ αὐτῆς. The verb is not used in the same sense as in ver. 46, nor yet quite literally as in Mt. xxiii. 5, but rather “made conspicuous,” i.e. bestowed conspicuous mercy. Comp. ἐμεγάλυνας τὴν δικαιοσύνην σου (Gen. xix. 19). The μετ’ αὐτῆς does not mean that she co-operates with God, but that He thus deals with her. Comp. ver. 72, x. 37, and εἶδετε ἐμεγάλυνεν μεθ’ ὑμῶν (1 Sam. xii. 24). In συνέχαρον αὐτῇ we have the first beginning of the fulfilment of ver. 14. It means “rejoiced with her” (xv. 6, 9; 1 Cor. xii. 26), rather than “congratulated her” (Phil. ii. 17).

59. ἔλθαν περιτεμεῖν τὸ παιδίον. The nom. must be understood from the context, amici ad eam rem associati, viz. some of those mentioned ver. 58. Circumcision might be performed anywhere and by any Jew, even by a woman (Exod. iv. 25).

On the mixture of first and second aorist in such forms as ἔλθαν, ἐπέσα, ἐλθομεν, ἐπέπεδα, etc., see Win. xiii. 1. a, p. 86; WH. ii. App. p. 164; and comp. ver. 61, ii. 16, v. 7, 26, vi. 17, vii. 24, xi. 2, 52, xxii. 52; Acts ii. 23, xii. 37, xxii. 7, etc.

ἐκάλων αὐτὸ ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ. Not merely “they wished to call,” but “they began to call, were calling”; comp. v. 6; Acts vii. 26; Mt. iii. 14. The custom of combining the naming with circumcision perhaps arose from Abram being changed to Abraham when circumcision was instituted. Naming after the father was common among the Jews (Jos. Vita, 1; Ant. xiv. 1. 3). For the ἐπί comp. ἐκλίψη ἐπ’ ὄνοματι αὐτῶν (Neh. viii. 63).

60. κληθῆσαι ἵωάνης. It is quite gratuitous to suppose that the name had been divinely revealed to her, or that she chose it herself to express the boon which God had bestowed upon her. Zacharias would naturally tell her in writing what had taken place in the temple. With καλεῖται τῷ ὄνοματι comp. xix. 2.

62. ἐνέφευον. Here only in N.T., but we have νεῦω similarly used Acts xxiv. 10 and Jn. xiii. 24. Comp. ἐνεύει ὁ φθαλμός, στηράνει δὲ ποιήσει, διδάσκει δὲ ἐνεύμαινα δακτύλων (Prov. vi. 13), and ὁ ἐνεφεύον ὁ φθαλμὸς μετὰ δάλου (Prov. x. 10). Some infer that Zacharias was deaf as well as dumb; and this is often the meaning of κωφός (ver. 22), viz. “blunted in speech or hearing, or both” (vii. 22). But the question is not worth the amount of discussion which it has received.

τῷ τί δὲν θέλοι. The art. turns the whole clause into a substantive. “They communicated by signs the question, what he,” etc. Comp. Rom. viii. 26; 1 Thes. iv. 1; Mt. xix. 18. The τῷ serves the purpose of marks of quotation.

This use of τῷ with a sentence, and especially with a question, is common in Lk. (ix. 45, xix. 48, xxii. 2, 4, 23, 24, 37; Acts iv. 21, xxii. 30). Note
62. *αἰτήσας πινακίδιον.* Postulans pugillarem (Vulg.), cum petisset tabulam (d). Of course by means of signs, ἐννεύμασιν δικτύλων. One is inclined to conjecture that Lk. or his authority accidentally put the ἐννεύμα in the wrong place. Signs must have been used here, and they are not mentioned. They need not have been used ver. 62, and they are mentioned. The πινακίδιον would probably be a tablet covered with wax: *loquitur in stylo, auditur in cera* (Tert. De idol. xxiii.).

All four forms, πίναξ, πινακίς, πινάκιον, and πινακίδιον, are used of writing-tablets, and πινακίδιον is v.l. (D) here. But elsewhere in N.T. πίναξ is a “dish” or “platter” (xi. 39; Mt. xiv. 11; Mk. vi. 25, 28). Note the Hebraistic particularity in ἔγραψαν λέγων, and comp. 2 Kings x. 6; 1 Mac. x. 17, xi. 57. This is the first mention of writing in N.T.

Ἰωάνης ἐστιν ὄνομα αὐτοῦ. Not ἔστιν, but ἐστίν: *habet vocabulum suum quod agnovimus, non quod elegimus* (Bede); *quasi dicat nullam superesse consultationem in re quam Deus jam definisset* (Grotius); *non tam jubet, quam jussum divinum indicat* (Beng.). The ἐθαυμάσαν πάντες may be used on either side of the question of his deafness. They wondered at his agreeing with Elisabeth, although he had not heard her choice of name; or, they wondered at his agreeing with her, although he had heard the discussion.

64. ἀνεύχθη δὲ τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ παραχῆμα. The prophecy which he had refused to believe was now accomplished, and the sign which had been granted to him as a punishment is withdrawn. That the first use of his recovered speech was to continue blessing God (ἔλαλε εὐλογῶν), rather than to complain, is evidence that the punishment had proved a blessing to him. The addition of ἐκαὶ ἡ γλῶσσα αὐτοῦ involves a zeugma, such as is common in all languages: comp. 1 Cor. iii. 2; 1 Tim. iv. 3; Win. lxvi. 1. e, p. 777. The Complutensian Bible, on the authority of two cursives (140, 251), inserts δηποθρώθη after ἡ γλῶσσα αὐτοῦ: see on ii. 22. For παραχῆμα see on v. 25 and comp. iv. 39. We are left in doubt as to whether ἔλαλε εὐλογῶν refers to the Benedictus or to some εὐλογία which preceded it. The use of ἐπροφήτευσεν and not εὐλογήσεν in ver. 67 does not prove that two distinct acts of thanksgiving are to be understood. Here Syr-Sin. has “They marvelled all.”

65. ἐγένετο ἐπὶ πάντας φῶσ. See on iv. 36. Zacharias (ver. 12) and Mary (ver. 30) had had the same feeling when conscious of the nearness of the spiritual world. A writer of fiction would have been more likely to dwell upon the joy which the wonderful birth of the future Prophet produced; all the more so as such joy had been predicted (ver. 14). The αὐτοῦς means Zacharias and Elisabeth.
ditelaειτο πάντα τα ῥηματα ταυτα. This need not be confined
to what was said at the circumcision of John. It is probably the
Hebraistic use of ῥηματα for the things which are the subject-
matter of narration. Comp. ii. 19, 51, where RV. has “sayings”
in the text and “things” in the margin; and Acts v. 32, where it
has “things” in the text and “sayings” in the margin. Comp.
LXX Gen. xv. 1, xxii. 1, 16, xxxix. 7, xl. 1, xlviii. 1, and esp.
xxiv. 66, πάντα τα ῥηματα δ ἐποιησεν. The verb διαλαείν occurs
only here and vi. 11: not in LXX, but in Syn. several times in
the Psalms. Syr-Sin. omits πάντα τα ῥηματα.

66. οθεντο πάντες σι ἄκουσαντες ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτῶν. Comp. ii. 19.
We find all three prepositions with this phrase, ἐν, ἐπι, and εἰς: θετο δανειδ
τα ῥηματα ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ (1 Sam. xxi. 12); θετο δανιὴλ ἐπι τὴν καρδιὰν
αὐτοῦ (Dan. i. 8); τίτισθε εἰς τὴν καρδιὰν ὑμῶν (Mal. ii. 2). Lk. is fond of
constructions with ἐν τῇ κ. or ἐν ταίς κ. (ii. 19, iii. 15, v. 22, xxii. 14; comp.
ii. 51, xxiv. 38). In Hom. we have both δειναλ κ. and θεσθαι κ.,
either ἐν φρει ἐν ἐν στῆθησαι. Note that, not only is πας or απος a favourite
word with Lk., but either form combined with a participle of ἀκουω is also
freq. and characteristic (ii. 18, 47, iv. 28, vi. 47, vii. 29, xx. 45; Acts v. 5,
xi. 21, x. 44, xxvi. 29; comp. Acts iv. 4, xviii. 8). See on vi. 30.

Τί ἄρα τὸ παιδιὸν τουτοῦ ἐσται; Not τίς; the neut. makes the question
more indefinite and comprehensive: comp. ή ἄρα ὁ Πέτρος ἐγένετο (Acts xii.
18). The ἄρα, igitur, means "in these circumstances"; viii. 25, xii. 42,
xxii. 23.

καὶ γὰρ χειρ Κυρίου ἕν μετ' αὐτοῦ. "For besides all that," i.e.
in addition to the marvels which attended his birth. This is a
remark of the Evangelist, who is wont now and then to interpose
in this manner: comp. ii. 50, iii. 15, vii. 39, xvi. 14, xx. 20,
xxiii. 12. The recognition that John was under special Divine
influence caused the question, τί ἄρα ἐσται; to be often repeated in
after times. Here, as in Acts xi. 21, χειρ Κυρίου is followed by
μετα, and the meaning is that the Divine power interposes to guide
and bless. See small print on i. 20 for other parallels between
Gospel and Acts. Where the preposition which follows is ἐπι, the
Divine interposition is generally one of punishment (Acts xiii. 11;
Judg. ii. 15; i Sam. v. 3, 6, vii. 13; Exod. vii. 4, 5). But this is
by no means always the case (2 Kings iii. 15; Ezra vii. 6, viii.
22, 31); least of all where χειρ has the epithet ἀγαθή (Ezra vii.
9, 28, viii. 18). In N.T. χειρ Κυρίου is peculiar to Lk. (Acts
xi. 21, xiii. 11; comp. iv. 28, 30).

67-79. The Benedictus or Song of Zacharias may be the υβ-
λογία mentioned in ver. 64.1 To omit it there, in order to continue
the narrative without interruption, and to give it as a solemn
conclusion, would be a natural arrangement. As the Magnificat
is modelled on the psalms, so the Benedictus is modelled on the

1 Like most of the canticles, the Benedictus was originally said at Lauds:
and it is still said at Lauds, in the Roman Church daily, in the Greek Church
on special occasions. See footnote on p. 67.
prophecies, and it has been called “the last prophecy of the Old Dispensation and the first in the New.” And while the tone of the Magnificat is regal, that of the Benedictus is sacerdotal. The one is as appropriate to the daughter of David as the other to the son of Aaron. The relation between new and old may again be seen in a table.

**The Benedictus.**

**The Old Testament.**

---

There is a manifest break at the end of ver. 75. The first of these two portions thus separated may be divided into three
strophes (68, 69; 70–72; 73–75), and the second into two (76, 77; 78, 79).

67. ἐπλήθη πνεύματος ἀγίου καὶ ἐπροφήτευσεν. See on ver. 15. The prophesying must not be confined to the prediction of the future; it is the delivery of the Divine message; speaking under God's influence, and in His Name. Zacharias sees in his son the earnest and guarantee of the deliverance of Israel.

In some texts ἐπροφήτευσεν has been altered into the more regular προφήτευσεν, but everywhere in N.T. (even Jude 14) the augment should precede the prep. in this compound. This is intelligible, seeing that there is no simple verb φησίν. Comp. Num. xi. 25, 26; Ecclus. xlviii. 13, and the similar forms ἀκούειν and ἀκοίησεν. Win. xii. 5, p. 84.

68. Εὐλογητὸς Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς τοῦ Ἰσραήλ. Not ἔστιν but εἰσίν is to be supplied. The line is verbatim as Ps. xli. 14, lxii. 18, cvi. 48, excepting that in LXX τοῦ is omitted. In N.T. εὐλογητός is used of God, but never of men: see on ver. 42. In LXX there are a few exceptions: Deut. vii. 14; Ruth ii. 20; 1 Sam. xv. 13, xxi. 33.

ἐπέσκεψατο καὶ ἐποίησεν λύτρωσιν τῷ λαῷ αὐτοῦ. Here, as in Ecclus. xxxii. 17, an acc. is to be supplied after ἐπέσκεψατο; there τῶν ταπεινῶν, here τῶν λαῶν. See on vii. 16. Excepting Heb. ii. 6, where it is a quotation from Ps. viii. 5, this verb is used in the Hebrew sense (Exod. iv. 31) of Divine visitation by Lk. alone in N.T. Comp. Ps. Sol. iii. 14. No doubt λύτρωσιν has reference to political redemption (ver. 71), but accompanied by and based upon a moral and spiritual reformation (vv. 75, 77). Comp. Ps. cxxix. 7.

69. καὶ ἤγειρεν κέρας σωτηρίας ἡμῖν. For this use of ἤγειρον comp. ἤγειρεν Κύριος σωτῆρα τῷ Ἰσραήλ (Judg. iii. 9, 15). In Ezek. xxix. 21 and Ps. cxxxii. 17 the verb used is ἀναστάλλω or ἐγκαθίσταλλο (see table). The metaphor of the horn is very freq. in O.T. (1 Sam. ii. 10; 2 Sam. xxii. 3; Ps. lxv. 5, 6, 11, etc.), and is taken neither from the horns of the altar, nor from the peaks of helmets or head-dresses, but from the horns of animals, especially bulls. It represents, therefore, primarily, neither safety nor dignity, but strength. The wild-ox, wrongly called "unicorn" in AV., was proverbial for strength (Num. xxiv. 8; Job xxxix. 9–11; Deut. xxxiii. 17). In Horace we have addis cornua pauperi, and in Ovid tum pauper cornua summii. In Ps. xviii. 3 God is called a κέρας σωτηρίας. See below on ver. 71. For παιδὸς αὐτοῦ see on ver. 54. "In the house of His servant David" is all the more true if Mary was of the house of David. But the fact that Jesus was the heir of Joseph is sufficient, and this verse is no proof of Mary's descent from David.

70. Second strophe. Like ver. 55, this is not a parenthesis, but determines the preceding statement more exactly. As a priest,
Zacharias would be familiar with O.T. prophecies. Even if the τῶν before ἀπ' αἰώνος (A C D) were genuine, it would be unlikely that τῶν ἀγίων means "the saints" in app. with τῶν ἀπ' αἰώνος προφητῶν. Lk. is fond of the epithet ἄγιος (ver. 72, ix. 26; Acts iii. 21, x. 22, xxi. 28). He is also fond of the periphrasis διὰ στόματος (Acts i. 16, iii. 18, 21, iv. 25): comp. 2 Chron. xxxvii. 22. And the expression ἀπ' αἰώνος is peculiar to him in N.T. (Acts iii. 21, xv. 18). It is used vaguely for "of old time." Here it does not mean that there have been Prophets "since the world began." Comp. οἱ γίγαντες οἱ ἀπ' αἰώνος (Gen. vi. 4), and καταβροντα καὶ καταφέγγει τοὺς ἀπ' αἰώνος ῥήτορας (Longin. xxxiv.), and adverbially (Hes. Θεος. 609).

71. σωτηριαν ἐκ ἐχθρῶν ἡμῶν. This is in app. with κέρας σωτηρίας and epegegetic of it. That the ἐχθρῶν ἡμῶν and τῶν μοιοίωντων ἡμᾶς are identical is clear from Ps. xviii. 18 and cvii. 10 (see table). The heathen are meant. Gentile domination prevents the progress of God's kingdom, and the Messiah will put an end to this hindrance. Comp. Exod. xviii. 10.

Neither σωτηρία (sv. 69, 77, xix. 9; Acts iv. 12, etc.) nor τοῦ σωτηρίου (ii. 30, iii. 6; Acts xxviii. 28) occur in Mt. or Mk. The former occurs once in Jn. (iv. 22). Both are common in LXX. The primary meaning is preservation from bodily harm (Gen. xxvi. 31; 2 Sam. xix. 2), especially of the great occasions on which God had preserved Israel (Exod. xiv. 13, xv. 2; 2 Chron. xx. 17); and hence of the deliverance to be wrought by the Messiah (Is. xlix. 6, 8), which is the meaning here. Comp. τοῦ κυρίου ἡ σωτηρία ἐπ' οἴκον Ἰσραήλ εἰς εὐφροσύνην αἰώνων (Ps. Sol. x. 9; and very similarly xii. 7). As the idea of the Messianic salvation became enlarged and purified, the word which so often expressed it came gradually to mean much the same as "eternal life." See on Rom. i. 16.

72. ποιήσαι δεός μετά, κ.τ.λ. This is the purpose of ἣγειρεν κέρας. The phrase is freq. in LXX (Gen. xxiv. 12; Judg. i. 24, viii. 35; Ruth i. 8; 1 Sam. xx. 8, etc.). Comp. μετ' αὐτῆς, ver. 58. "In delivering us God purposed to deal mercifully with our fathers." This seems to imply that the fathers are conscious of what takes place: comp. svv. 54, 55. Besides the passages given in the table, comp. Lev. xxvi. 42, and see Wsctt. on Heb. ix. 15, 16.


It is best to take ὥρκον in app. with διαθήκης, but attracted in case to δν: comp. svv. 4, 20, and see on iii. 19. It is true that in LXX μενοθήκης is found with an acc. (Exod. xx. 8; Gen. ix. 16). But would Lk. give it first a gen. and then an acc. in the same sentence? For the attraction of the antecedent to the relative comp. xx. 17 and perhaps Acts x. 36.

74. τοῦ δεόναι ἡμῖν. This is probably to be taken after ὥρκον as the contents and purpose of the oath: and the promise that "thy seed shall
possess the gate of his enemies” (Gen. xxii. 17) is in favour of this. But it is possible to take τοῦ δούλου as epexegetic of ver. 72; or again, as the purpose of γυρεύειν κέρας, and therefore parallel to ver. 72. This last is not likely, because there is no τοῦ with παῦσαι. This τοῦ c. infin. of the purpose or result is a favourite constr. with Lk. (vv. 77, 79, ii. 24, where see ref.). It marks the later stage of the language, in which aim and purpose become confused with result. Perhaps the gen. of the aim may be explained on the analogy of the part. gen. after verbs of hitting or missing.

ἐκ χειρὸς ἐχθρῶν. It does not follow from δοιχώτητι καὶ δικαιοσύνη that spiritual enemies are meant. The tyranny of heathen conquerors was a hindrance to holiness. In addition to the parallel passages quoted in the table, comp. Ps. xviii. 18, ἴσηται με ἐξ ἐχθρῶν μου δυνατῶν καὶ ἐκ τῶν μισούντων με.

For the acc. μυθέτασιν after ἀμήν comp. σοὶ δὲ συγγρώμα λέγειν τάδ' ἐστι, μὴ πάσχοσαν ὡς έτνω κακόν (Eur. Med. 814).

75. λατρεύειν αὐτῷ. Comp. λατρεύετε τῷ Θεῷ ἐν τῷ ὀρεί τοῦ θόου (Exod. iii. 12). We must take ἐνώπιον αὐτῷ with λατρεύειν αὐτῷ. The service of the redeemed and delivered people is to be a priestly service, like that of Zacharias (ver. 8). For ἐνώπιον see on ver. 15, and for λατρεύειν on iv. 8. The combination δοιχώτης καὶ δικαιοσύνη becomes common; but perhaps the earliest instance is Wisd. ix. 3. We have it Eph. iv. 24 and Clem. Rom. xlviii.: comp. Tit. i. 8 and 1 Thes. ii. 10.

76. Καὶ σὺ δὲ, παῖδιον. Here the second part of the hymn, and the distinctively predictive portion of it, begins. The Prophet turns from the bounty of Jehovah in sending the Messiah to the work of the Forerunner. “But thou also, child,” or “Yea and thou, child” (RV.). Neither the καὶ nor the δὲ must be neglected. There is combination, but there is also contrast. Not “my child”: the personal relation is lost in the high calling. The κηθήσῃ has the same force as in ver. 32: not only “shalt be,” but “shalt be acknowledged as being.”

προπορεύσῃ γὰρ ἐνώπιον Κυρίου. Comp. Κύριος ὁ θεὸς σου δὲ προπορευόμενος πρὸ προσώπων σου, καθα ἐλάλησεν Κύριος (Deut. xxxi. 3). Here Κυρίον means Jehovah, not the Christ, as is clear from vv. 16, 17.

77. τοῦ δοῦναι γνῶσιν σωτηρίας τῷ λαῷ αὐτοῦ. This is the aim and end of the work of the Forerunner. In construction it comes after ἐτοιμάσατο δόνοις αὐτοῦ. We may take ἐν ἄφεσιν ἀμαρτίων αὐτῶν with either δοῦναι, or γνῶσιν, or σωτηρίας. The last is best. John did not grant remission of sins; and to make “knowledge of salvation” consist in remission of sins, yields no very clear sense. But that salvation is found in remission of sins makes excellent sense (Acts v. 31). The Messiah brings the σωτηρία (vv. 69, 71): the Forerunner gives the knowledge of it to the people, as consisting, not in a political deliverance from the dominion of Rome but
in a spiritual deliverance from the dominion of sin. This is the first mention of the "remission of sins" in the Gospel narrative.

78. διὰ σπλάγχνα ἐλέους θεοῦ ἡμῶν. The concluding strophe, referring to the whole of the preceding sentence, or (if we take a single word) προπορείση. It is because of God's tender mercy that the child will be able to fulfill his high calling and to do all this. Comp. Test. XII. Patr. Levi iv., ἐως ἐπισκέψαται Κύριος πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἐν σπλάγχνοις νόιῳ αὐτοῦ ἐως αἰώνων: also Levi vii. and viii.

Originally the σπλάγχνα were the "inward parts," esp. the upper portions, the heart, lungs, and liver (viscera thoracis), as distinct from the ἐντέρα or bowels (viscera abdominis). The Greeks made the σπλάγχνα the seat of the emotions, anger, anxiety, pity, etc. By the Jews these feelings were placed in the ἐντέρα; and hence in LXX we have not only σπλάγχνα (which may include the ἐντέρα), but also κολλα and ἔγκατα used for the affections. Moreover in Hebr. literature these words more often represent compassion or love, whereas σπλάγχνα in class. Grk. is more often used of wrath (Aristoph. Ran. 844, 1006; Eur. Alc. 1009). "Heart" is the nearest English equivalent for σπλάγχνα (RV. Col. iii. 12; Phil. 12, 20). See Lft. on Phil. i. 8. "Because of our God's heart of mercy," i.e. merciful heart, is the meaning here. For this descriptive or characterizing gen. comp. Jas. i. 25, ii. 4; Jude 18. Some would make γνώσιν σωτηρίαν an instance of it, "saving knowledge," i.e. that brings salvation. But this is not necessary. For ἐν όσι see on ἐν βραχίονι, ver. 51. For ἐπισκέψαται comp. vii. 17; Ecclus. xvi. 14; Judith viii. 33; and see on ver. 68.

ἀναστολή ἐς ὑψος. "Rising from on high." The word is used of the rising of the sun (Rev. vii. 2, xvi. 12; Hom. Od. xii. 4) and of stars (Aesch. P. V. 457; Eur. Phan. 504). Here the rising of the heavenly body is put for the heavenly body itself. Comp. the use of ἀναστελλο in Is. lx. 1 and Mal. iv. 2. Because sun, moon, and stars do not rise from on high, some join ἐς ὑψος with ἐπισκέψαται, which is admissible. But, as ἀναστολή means the sun or star itself, whose light comes from on high, this is not necessary. Seeing that ἀναστελλο is used of the rising or sprouting of plants, and that the Messiah is sometimes called "the Branch" (Jer. xxiii. 5, xxxii. 15; Zech. iii. 8, vi. 12), and that in LXX this is expressed by ἀναστολή, some would adopt that meaning here. But ἐς ὑψος, ἐπιφάναι, and κατευθύναι are conclusive against it. These expressions agree well with a rising sun or star, but not with a sprouting branch.

79. ἐπιφάναι τοίς ἐν σκότει καὶ σκίᾳ θανάτου καθημένοις. For ἐπιφάναι comp. Acts xxvii. 20, and for the form Ps. xxx. 17, cxvii. 27. In 3 Mac. vi. 4 we have Σὺ θαράτω... ἀπόλλεσας, Φέγγος ἐπιφάνας ἐλέους Ἰσραήλ γένει. Note that the καθημένοις ἐν σκότει of Is. xlii. 7 and the σκία θανάτου of Is. ix. 1 are combined here as in Ps. cvii. 10 (see table). Those who hold that these hymns are

1 This is the reading of B Syr. Arm. Goth. Boh. and virtually of L, which has ἐπισκέψαται. Godet defends ἐπισκέψαται, because Zacharias would not suddenly turn from the past to the future; but this thought would lead to the corruption of the more difficult reading.
written in the interests of Ebionism have to explain why πεπεδημέ-
nους ἐν πτωχείᾳ (Ps. cvii. 10) is omitted.

Τοῦ κατευθύνει τοὺς πάθας ἡμῶν εἰς ὁδὸν εὐφήμης. For the constr.
comp. vv. 74, 77. Those who sat in darkness did not use their
feet: the light enables them to do so, and to use them profitably.
The ἡμῶν shows that Jews as well as Gentiles are regarded as being
in darkness until the Messianic dawn. “The way of peace” is the
way that leads to peace, especially peace between God and His
people (Ps. xxix. 11, lxxv. 9, cxix. 165; Jer. xiv. 13). It was one
of the many blessings which the Messiah was to bring (ii. 14, x. 5,
xxiv. 36). See on Rom. i. 7 and comp. ὑπὸ σωτηρίας (Acts xvi. 17).

80. Τὸ δὲ παιδίον ηὐσελν καὶ ἐκραταῖοτο πνεύματι. The verse
forms a set conclusion to the narrative, as if here one of the
Aramaic documents used by Lk. came to an end. Comp. ii. 40,
52; Judg. xiii. 24, 25; 1 Sam. ii. 26. In LXX ἀνείανω is never, as
here, intrans. Thus ἀνείανω σε σφόδρα (Gen. xvii. 6); ἡμῇ ἦν τὸ
παιδίον (Gen. xxi. 8). In N.T. it is used of physical growth (ii. 40,
xii. 27, xiii. 19), and of the spread of the Gospel (Acts vi. 7, xii. 24,
xix. 20). With ἐκραταῖοτο πνεύματι comp. Eph. iii. 16; and for
the dat. Rom. iv. 20? and 1 Cor. xiv. 20.

ἡμὶ ἐν ταῖς ἐρήμοις. The wilderness of Judæa, west of the Dead
Sea, is no doubt meant. But the name is not given, because the
point is, not that he lived in any particular desert, but that he lived
in desert places and not in towns or villages. He lived a solitary
life. Hence nothing is said about his being “in favour with men”;
for he avoided men until his ἀνάβεις brought him disciples. This
fact answers the question whether John was influenced by the
Essenes, communities of whom lived in the wilderness of Judæa.
We have no reason to believe that he came in contact with them.
Excepting the ascetic life, and a yearning for something better
than obsolete Judaism, there was little resemblance between their
principles and his. He preached the Kingdom of God; they
preached isolation. They abandoned society; he strove to reform
it. See Godet in loco and D.B. 2 art. “Essenes.” Lk. alone uses
the plur. αἱ ἔρημοι (v. 16, viii. 29).

ἐὼς ἡμέρας ἀνάβεις αὐτοῦ πρὸς τὸν Ἰσραήλ. John probably
went up to Jerusalem for the feasts, and on those occasions he and
the Messiah may have met, but without John’s recognizing Him as
such. Here only in N.T. does ἀνάβεις occur. In Ecclus. xliii. 6
we have ἀνάβεις χρόνον as a function of the moon. In Plut. the
word is used of the proclaiming or inauguration of those who are
appointed to office (Mar. viii.; C. Graec. xii.). It is also used of
the dedication of a temple (Strabo, viii. 23, p. 381). Comp.
ἀνάβεις of the appointment of the Seventy (x. 1). It was John
himself who proclaimed the inauguration of his office by manifesting
himself to the people at God’s command (iii. 2).
NOTE ON THE USE OF ἐγένετο.

More than any other Evangelist Lk. makes use of the Hebr. formula, ἐγένετο δὲ or καὶ ἐγένετο. But with it he uses a variety of constructions, some of which are modelled on the classical use of ὤφελθη, which Lk. himself employs Acts xxii. 35.

The following types are worth noting.

(a) The ἐγένετο and that which came to pass are placed side by side as parallel statements in the indicative mood without a conjunction.

i. 8. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν τῷ λεγασθεῖν αὐτῷ . . . θαυμᾷ τοῦ θυμιᾶτος.

ii. 23. καὶ ἐγένετο ὡς ἐπλήθησαν αἱ ἡμέραι τῆς λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ, ἀπῆλθεν.

ii. 41. καὶ ἐγένετο ὡς ἤκουσεν τῶν ἀστραμένων τῆς Μ. ἡ Ἐ., ἐκκήρυξεν τὸ βρέφος.

The same type are i. 59, ii. 6, 15, 46, vii. 11, ix. 18, 28, 29, 33, 37, xi. 1, 14, 27, xvii. 14, xviii. 35, xix. 29, xx. 1, xxiv. 30, 51. In viii. 40, ix. 57, x. 38 the ἐγένετο δὲ is probably spurious. In the Acts this type does not occur.

(b) The ἐγένετο and that which came to pass are coupled together by καὶ, which may be regarded as (1) uniting two co-ordinate statements; or (2) epexegetic, "It came to pass, namely"; or (3) introducing the apodosis, as often in class. Grk., "It came to pass that."

v. 1. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν τῷ τῶν ἀνθρώπων πεπίεθα αὐτῷ . . . καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν ἵππως.

v. 17. καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν μαθηταῖς ἡμερῶν καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν διδάσκαλος.

viii. 1. καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ καθέξις καὶ αὐτὸς διώκετον.

viii. 22. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν μαθηταῖς ἡμερῶν καὶ αὐτὸς ἠθέτης εἰς πλούς.

Of the same type are v. 12, ix. 12, 13, 26, 46, vi. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7.

(c) That which takes place is put in the infinitive mood, and this depends upon ἐγένετο.

iii. 21. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν τῷ βαπτισθῆναι ἀπαντᾷ τὸν λαὸν . . . ἀνεφεσθήναι τοῦ οἰκουμένου.

vi. 1. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν σαβείναι διαπερεῦσαι αὐτῶν διὰ σπορίμων.

vi. 12. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν τάις ἡμέραις ταῦταις ἐξελθεῖν αὐτόν εἰς τὸ δρόμον.

xvi. 22. ἐγένετο δὲ ἀπαθαναίων τοῦ πτωχῶν.

This type of construction is common in the Acts: iv. 5, ix. 32, 37, 43, xi. 26, xiv. 1, xvi. 16, xix. 1, xxii. 6, 17, xviii. 8, 17.

(d) In the Acts we have several other forms still more closely assimilated to classical constructions, the ἐγένετο being placed later in the sentence, or being preceded by ὡς or ὦς.

ix. 3. ἐν δὲ τῷ πορεύεσθαι ἐγένετο αὐτῶν ἐγγίζειν τῷ Δαμασκῷ.

xxi. 1. ὦς ἐγένετο ἀναχωρεῖ ἡμᾶς . . . ἠθέμοι εἰς τὴν Κω.

xxi. 5. ἐν δὲ ἐγένετο ἐξαρθῆναι ἡμᾶς τὰς ἡμέρας, ἐξελθοῦσεν ἐπιρεθομέθα.

x. 25. ὦς ἐγένετο τοῦ εἰσελθεῖν τῶν Πέτρων, . . . προσεκύνησεν.

In these last three instances we are far removed from the Hebraistic types (a) and (b). The last is very peculiar; but comp. xxvii. 1 and the exact parallel in Acta Barnab. Ἀρωστρυφ. viii. quoted by Lumby, ὦς ἐγένετο τοῦ τελέσαι αὐτῶς διδάσκαλος.

We have obtained in this analysis the following results. Of the two Hebraistic types, (a) is very common in the first two chapters of the Gospel, where Lk. is specially under the influence of Hebrew thought and literature, and is probably translating from the Aramaic; but (a) is not found at all in the Acts, and (b) occurs there only once. On the other hand, of the more classical types, (γ) is much less common in the Gospel than in the Acts, while the forms grouped under (δ) do not occur in the Gospel at all. All which is quite what we might have expected. In the Acts there is much less room for Hebrew influences than there is in the Gospel; and thus the more classical forms of construction become there the prevailing types.
II. 1-20. The Birth of the Saviour, its Proclamation by the Angels, and its Verification by the Shepherds.

The second of the narratives in the second group (i. 57–ii. 40) in the Gospel of the Infancy (i. 5–ii. 52). It corresponds to the Annunciation (i. 26–38) in the first group. Like the sections which precede and which follow, it has a clearly marked conclusion. And these conclusions have in some cases a very marked resemblance. Comp. ii. 20 with i. 56, and ii. 40 and 52 with i. 80. This similarity of form points to the use of material from one and the same source, and carefully arranged according to the subject-matter. This source would be some member of the Holy Family (see on i. 5). The marks of Lk.‘s style, accompanied by Hebraistic forms of expression, still continue; and we infer, as before, that he is translating from an Aramaic document. The section has three marked divisions: the Birth (1-7), the Angelic Proclamation (8-14), and the Verification (15-20). The connexion with what precedes is obvious. We have just been told how the promise to Zacharias was fulfilled; and we are now to be told how the promise to Mary was fulfilled.

1-7. The Birth of the Saviour at Bethlehem at the Time of the Enrolment. The extreme simplicity of the narrative is in very marked contrast with the momentous character of the event thus narrated. We have a similar contrast between matter and form in the opening verses of S. John’s Gospel. The difference between the evangelical account and modern Lives of Christ is here very remarkable. The tasteless and unedifying elaborations of the apocryphal gospels should also be compared.

1-3. How Bethlehem came to be the Birthplace of Jesus Christ, although Nazareth was the Home of His Parents. This explanation has exposed Lk. to an immense amount of criticism, which has been expressed and sifted in a manner that has produced a voluminous literature. In addition to the commentaries, some

1 "Such marvellous associations have clung for centuries to these verses, that it is hard to realise how absolutely naked they are of all ornament. We are obliged to read them again and again to assure ourselves that they really do set forth what we call the great miracle of the world. If, on the other hand, the Evangelist was possessed by the conviction that he was not recording a miracle which had interrupted the course of history and deranged the order of human life, but was telling of a divine act which explained the course of history and restored the order of human life, one can very well account for his calmness” (F. D. Maurice, Lectures on S. Luke, p. 28, ed. 1879).
of the following may be consulted, and from Schürer and Herzog further information about the literature may be obtained.


1. Ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ἕκείναις ἐξηλθὼν δόγμα παρὰ Καίσαρος Ἀδύουστος ἀπογράφεσθαι πᾶσαν τὴν οἰκουμένην. For the constr. see detached note at the end of ch. i.; and for ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ἕκείναις see on i. 5 and 39. The time of the birth of John is roughly indicated. Even in class. Grk. the first meaning of δόγμα, as "opinion, philosophic tenet," is not very common (Plat. *Rep.* 538 C); it is more often a "public decree, ordinance." This is always the meaning in N.T., whether an ordinance of the Roman Emperor (Acts xvii. 7), or of the Apostles (Acts xvi. 4; comp. Ign. *Mag.* xiii.; Didaché, xi. 3), or of the Mosaic Law (Col. ii. 14; Eph. ii. 15; comp. 3 Mac. i. 3; Jos. *Ant.* xv. 5. 3). For ἐξηλθὼν δόγμα comp. Dan. ii. 13 (Theod.). In Daniel δόγμα is freq. of a royal decree (iii. 10, iv. 3, vi. 9, 10). See Lft. on Col. ii. 14.

ἀπογράφεσθαι. Probably passive, *ut describeretur* (Vulg.), not middle, as in ver. 3. The present is here used of the continuous enrolment of the multitudes; the aorist in ver. 5 of the act of one person. The verb refers to the *writing off*, copying, or entering the names, professions, fortunes, and families of subjects in the public register, generally with a view to taxation (ἀποτίμωσις or τίμημα). It is a more general word than ἀποτίμωσις, which implies assessment as well as enrolment. But it is manifest that the ἀπογραφή here and in Acts v. 37 included assessment. The Jews were exempt from military service; and enrolment for that purpose cannot be intended. In the provinces the census was mainly for purposes of taxation.

πᾶσαν τὴν οἰκουμένην. "The whole inhabited world," *i.e.* the Roman Empire, *orbis terrarum.* Perhaps in a loose way the expression might be used of the provinces only. But both the πᾶσαν and the context exclude the limitation to Palestine, a meaning
which the expression never has, not even in Jos. Ant. viii. 3. 4. See on iv. 5 and xxi. 26. In inscriptions Roman Emperors are called κύριοι τῆς οἰκουμένης. The verse implies a decree for a general census throughout the empire.

It must be confessed that no direct evidence of any such decree exists beyond this statement by Lk., and the repetitions of it by Christian writers. But a variety of items have been collected, which tend to show that a Roman census in Judæa at this time, in accordance with some general instructions given by Augustus, is not improbable.

1. The rationarium or rationes imperii, which was a sort of balance-sheet published periodically by the emperor (Suet. Aug. xxviii.; Cal. xvi.). 2. The libellus or breviarium totius imperii, which Augustus deposited with his will (Tac. Ann. i. 11. 5, 6; Suet. Aug. ci.). 3. The index rerum gestarum to be inscribed on his tomb, which was the original of the Marmor An cyanum. But these only indicate the orderly administration of the empire. A general census would have been useful in producing such things; but that does not prove that it took place. Two passages in Dion Cassius are cited; but one of these (liv. 35) refers to a registration of the emperor's private property, and the other (iv. 13) to a census of Roman citizens. If Augustus made a general survey of the empire, of which there is evidence from the commentarii of Agrippa mentioned by Pliny (Nat. Hist. iii. 2. 17), this also would have been conveniently combined with a general census, although it does not show that such a census was ordered. Of some of the provinces we know that no census was held in them during the reign of Augustus. But it is probable that in the majority of them a census took place; and the statement of so accurate a writer as Lk., although unsupported by direct evidence, may be accepted as substantially true: viz. that in the process of reducing the empire to order, Augustus had required that a census should be held throughout most of it. So that Lk. groups the various instances under one expression, just as in Acts xi. 28 he speaks of the famines, which took place in different parts of the empire in the time of Claudius, as a famine ἐν ἅπαν ν ὀ κουμένη. Of the Christian witnesses none is of much account. Riess seems to be almost alone in contending that Orosius (Hist. Rom. vi. 22. 6) had any authority other than Lk. Cassiodorus (Variaiur Eph. iii. 52) does not mention a census of persons at all clearly; but if orbis Romanus agris divus cen suque descnptus est means such a census, he may be referring to Lk. ii. 1. The obscure statement of Isidore of Spain (Etymologiarum, v. 26. 4; Opera, iii. 229, ed. Arevallo) may either be derived from Lk. or refer to another period. What Suidas states (Lex. s.v. ἀναγραφή) partly comes from Lk. and partly is improbable. At the best, all this testimony is from 400 to 1000 years after the event, and cannot be rated highly. The passages are given in full by Schürer (Jewish People in the T. of J. C. i. 2, pp. 116, 117). But it is urged that a Roman census, even if held elsewhere, could not have been made in Palestine during the time of Herod the Great, because Palestine was not yet a Roman province. In A.D. 6, 7, when Quirinius certainly did undertake a Roman census in Judea, such a proceeding was quite in order. Josephus shows that in taxation Herod acted independently (Ant. xv. 10. 4, xvi. 2. 5, xvii. 2. 1, 11. 2; comp. xviii. 8. 4). That Herod paid tribute to Rome is not certain; but, if so, he would pay it out of taxes raised by himself. The Romans would not assess his subjects for the tribute which he had to pay. Josephus, whose treatment of the last years of Herod is very full, does not mention any Roman census at that time. On the contrary, he implies that, even after the death of Herod, so long as Palestine was ruled by its own princes, there was no Roman taxation; and he states that
the census undertaken by Quirinius A.D. 7 excited intense opposition, presumably as being an innovation (Ant. xviii. i. 1, 2. 1).

In meeting this objection, let us admit with Schürer and Zumpt that the case of the Cilex(? ) is not parallel.Tacitus (Ann. vi. 41. 1) does not say that the Romans held a census in the dominions of Archelaus, but that Archelaus wished to have a census after the Roman fashion. Nevertheless, the objection that Augustus would not interfere with Herod’s subjects in the matter of taxation is untenable. When Palestine was divided among Herod’s three sons, Augustus ordered that the taxes of the Samaritans should be reduced by one-fourth, because they had not taken part in the revolt against Varus (Ant. xvii. ii. 4; B. j. ii. 6. 3); and this was before Palestine became a Roman province. If he could do that, he could require information as to taxation throughout Palestine; and the obsequious Herod would not attempt to resist. The value of such information would be great. It would show whether the tribute paid (if tribute was paid) was adequate; and it would enable Augustus to decide how to deal with Palestine in the future. If he knew that Herod’s health was failing, he would be anxious to get the information before Herod’s death; and thus the census would take place just at the time indicated by Lk., viz. in the last months of the reign of Herod. For “Cilex” we should read Κιητή; Ramsay, Expositor, April, 1897.  

2. αὕτη ἀπογραφὴ πρῶτη ἐγένετο. This may be accepted as certainly the true reading; 2 and the meaning of it is not really doubtful. “This took place as a first enrolment, when Q. was governor of Syria.” The object of the remark is to distinguish the census which took Joseph and Mary to Bethlehem from the one undertaken by Q. in A.D. 6, 7, at which time Q. was governor of Syria. But was he governor B.C. 4, when Herod died? It is very difficult to establish this.

From B.C. 9 to 6 Sentius Saturninus was governor; from B.C. 6 to 4 Quinctilius Varus. Then all is uncertain until A.D. 6, when P. Sulpicius Quirinius becomes governor and holds the census mentioned Acts v. 37 and also by Josephus (Ant. xviii. i. 1, 2. 1). It is quite possible, as Zumpt and others have shown, that Quirinius was governor of Syria during part of the interval between B.C. 4 and A.D. 6, and that his first term of office was B.C. 3, 2. But it seems to be impossible to find room for him between B.C. 9 and the death of Herod; and, unless we can do that, Lk. is not saved from an error in chronology. Tertullian states that the census was held by Sentius Saturninus (Adv. Marc. iv. 19); and if that is correct we may suppose that it was begun by him and continued by his successor. On the other hand, Justin Martyr three times states that Jesus Christ was born εἰς Κυριηνίον, and in one place states that this can be officially ascertained εἰς τῶν ἀπογραφῶν τῶν γενομένων (Apol. i. 34, 46; Dial. lxxviii.).

1 See the treatment to which Herod had to submit in the matter of Syllæus (Jos. Ant. xvi. 9. 3, 4).

2 B (supported by 81, 131, 203) has αὕτη ἀπογραφὴ πρῶτη ἐγένετο.

8 has the impossible αὕτην ἀπογραφὴν ἐγένετο πρῶτη.

D (supported by Orig.-Lat.) has αὕτη ἐγένετο ἀπογραφὴ πρῶτη.

Thus all three are against the it before ἀπογραφὴ inserted in A C L R Z.
We must be content to leave the difficulty unsolved. But it is monstrous to argue that because Lk. has (possibly) made a mistake as to Quirinius being governor at this time, therefore the whole story about the census and Joseph’s journey to Bethlehem is a fiction. Even if there was no census at this time, business connected with enrolment might take Joseph to Bethlehem, and Lk. would be correct as to his main facts. That Lk. has confused this census with the one in A.D. 6, 7, which he himself mentions Acts v. 37, is not credible. We are warranted in maintaining (1) that a Roman census in Judaea at this time, in accordance with instructions given by Augustus, is not improbable; and (2) that some official connexion of Quirinius with Syria and the holding of this census is not impossible. The accuracy of Lk. is such that we ought to require very strong evidence before rejecting any statement of his as an unquestionable blunder. But it is far better to admit the possibility of error than to attempt to evade this by either altering the text or giving forced interpretations of it.

The following methods of tampering with the text have been suggested: to regard πρωτη as a corruption of πρωτει, (Linwood); to insert πρ της after ἐγένετο (Michaelis); to substitute for Κυροφλου either Κυντηλίου (Huetius), or Κορνιου=Saturnini (Heumann), or Σατούρνιου (Valesius); to omit the whole verse as a gloss (Beza, Pfaff, Valckenera). All these are monstrous. The only points which can be allowed to be doubtful in the text are the accentuation of αἱρή and the spelling of Κυροφλου, to which may perhaps be added the insertion of the article.

Among the various interpretations may be mentioned—

(1) Giving πρωτος a comparative force, as in Jn. i. 15, 30: “This taxing took place before Quirinius was governor of Syria” (Huschke, Ewalt, Caspari); or, as ἐγένετο των υἱῶν ἡ μητέρα ἐκείνης (2 Mac. vii. 41) means “The mother died last of all, and later than her sons,” this may mean, “This took place as the first enrolment, and before Q. was governor of S.” (Wieseler). But none of these passages are parallel: the addition of ημεροκλήσως is fatal. When πρωτος is comparative it is followed by a simple noun or pronoun. It is incredible that Lk., if he had meant this, should have expressed it so clumsily.

(2) Emphasizing ἐγένετο, as in Acts xi. 28: “This taxing took effect, was carried out, when Q. was governor of S.” (Gumpach, etc.); i.e. the decree was issued in Herod’s time, and executed ten or twelve years later by Q. This makes nonsense of the narrative. Why did Joseph go to Bethlehem to be enrolled, if no enrolment took place then? There would be some point in saying that the census was finished, brought to a close, under Q., after having been begun by Herod; but ἐγένετο cannot possibly mean that.

(3) Reading and accentuating α ieee ri ἐπογραφή: “The raising of the tax itself (as distinct from the enrolment and assessment) first took place when Q.,” etc. “Augustus ordered a census and it took place, but no money was raised until the time of Q.” (Ebrard). This involves giving to ἐπογραφή in ver. 2 a totally different meaning from ἐπογραφήσαται in ver. 1 and ἐπογραφήσαται in ver. 5; which is impossible.

(4) With α ἐπογραφή, as before: “The census itself called the first took place when Q.,” etc. The better known census under Q. was commonly regarded as the first Roman census in Judaea: Lk. reminds his readers that there had really been an earlier one (Godet). This is very forced, requires the insertion of the article, which is almost certainly an interpolation, and assumes
II. 2-4.) THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

that the census of A.D. 6, 7 was generally known as "the first census." From Acts v. 37 it appears that it was known as "the census": no previous or subsequent enrolment was taken into account. In his earlier edition Godet omitted the ἦ; in the third (1888) he says that this interpretation requires the article (i. p. 170).

McClellan quotes in illustration of the construction: αἷλα δὲ αὕτη προσή ἐγένετο τοὺς πολέμους (Thuc. i. 55. 3); αὕτη τῶν περὶ Ἰάβας ἐγένετο ἁρχὴ καὶ κατασκευασία πρόσθεν (Dem. 291. 10); πρόσθε τὸν μὴν μηνίνα ἐγένετο αὕτη κατὰ τοὺς τῶν ἀνδρῶν (Andoc. iii. 5); αὕτη πρωτῇ δημοτελείᾳ κράτος ἐγένετο ἀρχὴ πρὸς πολίσιν (Aristid. i. 124); and adds the curious remark that "the Holy Spirit would have us note that the Saviour of the World was registered in the first census of the World!"
δὲ καὶ see on iii. 9. Note the change of prep. from ἀπό to ἐκ. But ἀπό is used of towns (Acts viii. 26; xiii. 14, xx. 17, etc.), and ἐκ of districts (xxiii. 55; Acts vii. 4, etc.); so that there is no special point in the change, although it should be preserved in translation. Comp. Jn. i. 45 and xi. 1; also the ἐκ of Lk. xxii. 18 with the ἀπό of Acts xxvii. 34.

εἰς πόλιν Δαυεὶδ. That Bethlehem was David's birthplace and original home is in accordance with 1 Sam. xvii. 12 ff. and xvii. 58; but both passages are wanting in LXX. In O.T. “the city of David” always means the fortress of Zion, formerly the stronghold of the Jebusites (2 Sam. v. 7, 9; 1 Chron. xi. 5, 7), and in LXX πόλις in this phrase commonly has the article. Bethlehem is about six miles from Jerusalem. Note that Lk. does not connect Christ's birth at Bethlehem with prophecy.

ἡ Καλείται. In late Greek ἡται is sometimes scarcely distinguishable from δτ: comp. Acts xvii. 10. But in ix. 30 (as in Acts xxiii. 14, xxviii. 18, and Eph. i. 23, which are sometimes cited as instances of ἡται = δτ) there may be special point in ἡται. Even here it may “denote an attribute which is the essential property of the antecedent,” and may possibly refer to the meaning of Bethlehem. Comp. πόλιν κτίσας ταύτην, ἡται νῦν Μέμορες καλείται (Hdt. ii. 99. 7).

Βηθλεέμ. “House of Bread”; one of the most ancient towns in Palestine. It is remarkable that David did nothing for Bethlehem, although he retained affection for it (2 Sam. xxiii. 15); and that Jesus seems never to have visited it again. In Jn. vii. 42 it is called a κώμη, and no special interest seems to have attached to the place for many years after the birth of Christ. Hadrian planted a grove of Adonis there, which continued to exist from A.D. 135 to 315. About 330 Constantine built the present church. D.B.2 art. “Bethlehem.” The modern name is Beit Lahm; and, as at Nazareth, the population is almost entirely Christian.

οἶκου κ. πατριὰς. Both words are rather indefinite, and either may include the other. Here οἶκος seems to be the more comprehensive; otherwise καὶ πατριὰς would be superfluous. Usually πατριὰ is the wider term. That a village carpenter should be able to prove his descent from David is not improbable. The two grandsons of S. Jude, who were taken before Domitian as descendants of David, were labourers (Eus. H. E. iii. 20. 1-8).

5. ἀπογράφασθαι. “To get himself enrolled.” The aorist of his single act, the present (ver. 3) of a series of such acts. Both are middle, while ἀπογράφασθαι in ver. 1 is probably passive. We must not take σὺν Μαρία με το ἀπογράφασθαι: it belongs to ἀνίβη. It is essential to the narrative that she should go up with him; it is not so that she should be enrolled with him. In a Roman census women paid the poll-tax, but were not obliged to
come in person. That Mary had property in Bethlehem is a conjecture which is almost disproved by her resourcelessness in the place. And if it was necessary for her to come, because she also was of David's line, would not Lk. have written διὰ τὸ ἐλθεῖν αὐτῶς εἴκον κ. π. Δ.?

This reading is found in Syr-Sin.: "because they were both of the house of Δ." It is futile to argue that a woman in her condition would not have gone unless she was compelled: therefore Lk. represents her as being compelled: therefore he has made a mistake. She would be anxious at all risks not to be separated from Joseph. Lk. does not even imply that her presence was obligatory; and, if he had said that it was, we do not know enough about the matter to say whether he would have been wrong.

Had there been a law which required her to remain at home, then Lk. might be suspected of an error. For αὐν see on i. 56.

τῇ ἐμμητευμένῃ αὐτῷ, οὕτῃ ἐγκύῳ. The γυναῖκι of A, Vulg. Syr. and Aeth. is a gloss, but a correct one. Had she been only his betrothed (i. 27; Mt. i. 18), their travelling together would have been impossible. But by omitting γυναῖκι Lk. intimates what Mt. states i. 25. Syr-Sin. and some Latin texts have "wife" without "espoused." The οὕτῃ introduces, not a mere fact, but the reason for what has just been stated; he took her with him, "because she was with child." After what is related Mt. i. 19 he would not leave her at this crisis. See on i. 24.

6, 7. The Birth of the Saviour at Bethlehem. The Gospel of Pseudo-Matthew (xiii.) represents the birth as taking place before Bethlehem is reached. So also apparently the Protevangelium of James (xvii.), which limits the decree of Augustus to those who lived at Bethlehem! For ἐπιλήσθησαν see on i. 15 and 57.

7. τὸν υἱὸν αὐτῆς τῶν πρώτωτοκος. The expression might certainly be used without implying that there had been subsequent children. But it implies the possibility of subsequent children, and when Luke wrote this possibility had been decided. Would he have used such an expression if it was then known that Mary had never had another child? He might have avoided all ambiguity by writing μονογενῆ, as he does vii. 12, viii. 42, ix. 38. In considering this question the imperfect. ἔγινομαι (Mt. i. 25) has not received sufficient attention. See Mayor, Ep. of St. James, pp. xix–xxii.

ἐσπαργάνωσεν αὐτῶν. It has been inferred from her being able to do this that the birth was miraculously painless (τὴν ἀνώδυνον κύρην, Euthym.), of which there is no hint. For the verb comp. ὑμίχλη αὐτῶν ἐσπαργάνωσα, "I made thick darkness a swaddling band for it" (Job xxxviii. 9).

ἐν φάντα. The traditional rendering "in a manger" is right; not "a stall" either here or in xiii. 15. The animals were out at
pasture, and the manger was not being used. Justin (Try. lxxviii.,) and some of the apocryphal gospels say that it was in a cave, which is not improbable. In Origen’s time the cave was shown, and the manger also (Con. Cels. i. 51). One suspects that the cave may be a supposed prophecy turned into history, like the vine in xix. 31. Is. xxxiii. 16 (οὕτως ὄλθησεν ἐν ὕμνῳ στυλαίῳ πέτρας ὄχυρας) was supposed to point to birth in a cave, and then the cave may have been imagined in order to fit it, just as the colt is represented as “tied to a vine,” in order to make Gen. xlix. 11 a prediction of Lk. xix. 30–33 (Justin, Apol. i. 32).

οὐκ ἦν αὐτοῖς τόπος ἐν τῷ καταλύματι. Most of the Jews then residing in Palestine were of Judah or Benjamin, and all towns and villages of Judah would be very full. No inhospitality is implied. It is a little doubtful whether the familiar translation “in the inn” is correct. In x. 34 “inn” is πανδοξείων, and in xxii. 11 κατάλυμα is not “inn.” It is possible that Joseph had relied upon the hospitality of some friend in Bethlehem, whose “guest-chamber,” however, was already full when he and Mary arrived. See on xxii. 11. But κατάλυμα in LXX represents five different Heb. words, so that it must have been elastic in meaning. All that it implies is a place where burdens are loosed and let down for a rest. In Polybius it occurs twice in the plural: of the general’s quarters (ii. 36. 1), and of reception rooms for envoys (xxiii. 19. 2). It has been suggested that the “inn” was the Geruth Chimham or “lodging-place of Chimham” (Jer. xli. 17), the [son] of Barzillai (2 Sam. xix. 37, 38), “which was by Bethlehem,” and convenient for those who would “go to enter into Egypt.” See Stanley, Sin. & Pal. pp. 163, 529. Justin says that the cave was σύνεγγυς τῆς κόμης, which agrees with “by Bethlehem.” The Mandra of Josephus (Ant. x. 9. 5) was perhaps the same place as Geruth Chimham. Syr.-Sin. omits “in the inn.”

8–14. The Angelic Proclamation to the Shepherds: πτωχοὶ εὐαγγελίζονται (vii. 22). It was in these pastures that David spent his youth and fought the lion and the bear (1 Sam. xvii. 34, 35). “A passage in the Mishnah (Shek. vii. 4; comp. Baba K. vii. 7, 80 a) leads to the conclusion that the flocks which pastured there were destined for Temple-sacrifices, and accordingly, that the shepherds who watched over them were not ordinary shepherds. The latter were under the ban of Rabbinism on account of their necessary isolation from religious ordinances and their manner of life, which rendered strict religious observance unlikely, if not absolutely impossible. The same Mischnic passage also leads us to infer that these flocks lay out all the year round, since they are spoken of as in the fields thirty days before the Passover—that is, in the month of February, when in Palestine the average rainfall is nearly greatest” (Edersh. L. & T. i. pp. 186, 187). For details of
the life of a shepherd see D.B. art. "Shepherds," and Herzog, 
P.R.E.2 art. "Viehzucht und Hirtenleben."

8. ἀγραυλοῦντες. Making the ἀγρός their ἀλή, and so "spending their life in the open air": a late and rare word, whereas ἀγραυλος is class. This statement is by no means conclusive against December as the time of the year. The season may have been a mild one; it is not certain that all sheep were brought under cover at night during the winter months.

It is of the flocks in the wilderness, far from towns or villages, that the often quoted saying was true, that they were taken out in March and brought home in November. These shepherds may have returned from the wilderness, and if so, the time would be between November and March. But the data for determining the time of year are very insufficient, that after minute calculation of them all we are left in our original uncertainty. Among those who have made a special study of the question we have advocates for almost every month in the year. The earliest attempts to fix the day on which we have knowledge are those mentioned (and apparently condemned as profane curiosity) by Clement of Alexandria (Strom. i. 21 sub fin.). In his time some took April 21, others April 22, and others May 20, to be the day. What was unknown in his time is not likely to have been discovered afterwards respecting such a detail. December 25th cannot be traced higher than the fourth century, and it seems to have been adopted first in the West. We must be content to remain in ignorance as to the date of the birth of Christ. See on ἐφημερίας i. 5; D. of Chr. Ant. art. "Christmas"; Andrews, L. of our Lord, pp. 12-21, ed. 1892.

φυλάσσοντες φυλακάς. The plural refers to their watching in turns rather than in different places. The phrase occurs Num. viii. 26; Xen. Anab. ii. 6. 10; but in LXX τὰς φυλακὰς φυλ. is more common; Num. iii. 7, 8, 28, 32, 38, etc. Comp. Plat. Phædr. 240 E; Laws, 758 D. The fondness of Lk. for such combinations of cognate words is seen again ver. 9, vii. 29, xvii. 24, xxii. 15, and several times in the Acts. See on xi. 46 and xxiii. 46. We may take τής νυκτός after φυλακάς, "night-watches," or as gen. of time, "by night." See Blass, Gr. p. 199.

9. ἀγγέλος Κυρίου ἐπέστη αὐτοῖς. The notion of coming suddenly is not inherent in the verb, but is often derived from the context: see on ver. 38.1 In N.T. the verb is almost peculiar to Lk., and almost always in 2nd aor. In class. Grk. also it is used of the appearance of heavenly beings, dreams, visions, etc. Hom. II. x. 496, xxiii. 106; Hdt. i. 34. 2, vii. 14. 1. Comp. Lk. xxiv. 4; Acts xii. 7, xxiii. 11.

δόξα Κυρίου. The heavenly brightness which is a sign of the presence of God or of heavenly beings, 2 Cor. iii. 18: comp. Lk. ix. 31, 32. In O.T. of the Shechinah, Exod. xvi. 7, 10, xxiv. 17.

1 In Vulg. it is very variously translated: e.g. stare juxta (here), supervenire (ii. 38, xxi. 34), stare (iv. 39, x. 40, xxiv. 4), convenire (xx. 1), concurrere (Acts vi. 12), ad stare (Acts x. 17, xi. 11, xii. 7), ad sistere (Acts xvii. 5, xxiii. 11), imminere (Acts xxvii. 2).
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [II. 9-11.

xl. 34; Lev. ix. 6, 23; Num. xii. 8, etc. This glory, according to the Jews, was wanting in the second temple.

10. δὴ ἄγγελος. The art. is used of that which has been mentioned before without the art. Comp. τὸ βρεφὸς and τὸ φάτνη in ver. 16.

Мη φοβεῖσθε. Comp. i. 13, 30, v. 10; Mt. xiv. 27, xxviii. 5, 10.

For ἵδιον γὰρ see on i. 44.

εὐαγγελιζομαι ὑμῖν χαρὰν μεγάλην. The verb is very freq. in Lk. and Paul, but is elsewhere rare; not in the other Gospels excepting Mt. xi. 5, which is a quotation. See on i. 19.

The art. occurs Rev. x. 7, xiv. 6; the pass. Lk. vii. 22, xvi. 16; Gal. i. 11; Heb. iv. 2, 6; 1 Pet. i. 25, iv. 6; the mid. is freq. with various constructions. As here, dat. of pers. and acc. of thing, i. 19, iv. 43; Acts viii. 35; acc. of thing only, viii. 1; Acts v. 42, viii. 4, 12; acc. of person, iii. 18; Acts viii. 25, 40; acc. of person and of thing, Acts xiii. 32.

현τι ἐσται παντὶ τῷ λαῷ. "Which shall have the special character of being for all the people." The ἡντις has manifest point here (see on ver. 4); and the art. before λαῷ should be preserved. A joy so extensive may well banish fear. Comp. τῷ λαῷ, i. 68, 77, and τὸν λαὸν, vii. 16. In both these verses (9, 10) we have instances of Lk. recording intensity of emotion: comp. i. 42, viii. 37, xxiv. 52; Acts v. 5, 11, xv. 3. Dat. after εἰμί is freq. in Lk.

II. ἐτέχθη ὑμῖν σήμερον σωτῆρ. To the shepherds, as a part, and perhaps a specially despised part, of the people of Israel. Here first in N.T. is σωτῆρ used of Christ, and here only in Lk. Not in Mt. or Mk., and only once in Jn. (iv. 42): twice in Acts (v. 31, xiii. 23), and freq. in Tit. and 2 Pet. The 1st aor. of τίκτω, both act. and pass., is rare: see Veitch.

Χριστὸς κύριος. The combination occurs nowhere else in N.T., and the precise meaning is uncertain. Either "Messiah, Lord," or "Anointed Lord," or "the Messiah, the Lord," or "an anointed one, a Lord." It occurs once in LXX as a manifest mistranslation. Lam. iv. 20, "The breath of our nostrils, the anointed of the Lord," is rendered πνεῦμα προσώπου ἡμῶν Χριστὸς κύριος. If this is not a corrupt reading, we may perhaps infer that the expression Χριστὸς κύριος was familiar to the translator. It occurs in the Ps. Sol., where it is said of the Messiah καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν ἀδικία ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις αἰτίων ἐν μέσῳ αἰτίων, ὅτι πάντες ἀγίοι, καὶ βασιλεῖς αἰτίων Χριστὸς κύριος (xvii. 36: comp. the title of xviii.). But this may easily be another mistranslation, perhaps based on

1 "This Gospel of Luke is scarce begun, we are yet but a little way in the second chapter, and we have already three noli timeres in it, and all, as here, at the coming of an Angel (i. 13, 30, ii. 10). ... What was it? It was not the fear of an evil conscience; they were about no harm. ... It is a plain sign our nature is fallen from her original; Heaven and we are not in the terms we should be, not the best of us all" (Bishop Andrewes, Serm. V. On the Nativity).
II. 11-14. THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

that in Lam. iv. 20. Comp. εἰπεν δό κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου (Ps. cx. 1), and ἐπεκαλεσάμην Κύριον πατέρα κυρίου μου (Ecclus. li. 10). See Ryle and James, Ps. of Sol. pp. 141-143. The addition of ἐν πόλει Δαυὶδ here indicates that this σωτήρ is the King of Israel promised in the Prophets: see on ver. 4.

12. καὶ τούτῳ ὁμίλησεν τὸ σήμειον. BCE omit the τὸ. Sign for what? By which to prove that what is announced is true, rather than by which to find the Child. It was all-important that they should be convinced as to the first point; about the other there would be no great difficulty. — ἐδρήσετε βρέφος. "Ye shall find a babe," "not the babe," as most English Versions and Luther; Wiclif has "a yunge child." This is the first mention of it; in ver. 16 the art. is right. In N.T., as in class. Grk., βρέφος is more often a newly-born child (xvii. 15; Acts vii. 19; 2 Tim. iii. 15; 1 Pet. ii. 2) than an unborn child (Lk. i. 41, 44); in LXX it is always the former (1 Mac. i. 61; 2 Mac. vi. 10; 3 Mac. v. 49; 4 Mac. iv. 25), unless Ecclus. xix. 11 be an exception. Aquila follows the same usage (Ps. viii. 3, xvi. 14; Is. lxv. 20). — ἐσπαργασμένον καὶ κειμένον ἐν φάτνῃ. Both points are part of the sign. The first participle is no more an adjective than the second. No art. with φάτνῃ: the shepherds have not heard of it before.

13. Εἰς τὸν πρότερον ἄγγελον. The fact that this is expressly stated here confirms the view that suddenness is not necessarily included in ἐπέστη (ver. 9). For σύν τῷ ἄγγελῳ see on i. 56. — στρατιάς. Magna appellation. Hic exercitus tamen pacem laudat (Beng.). The genitive is partitive: "a multitude (no art.) forming part of the host." Comp. 1 Kings xxii. 19; 2 Chron. xviii. 18; Ps. ciii. 21; Josh. v. 15). — αἰνοῦντων. Constr. ad sensum. The whole host of heaven was praising God, not merely that portion of it which was visible to the shepherds. The verb is a favourite with Lk. (ver. 20, xix. 37, xxiv. 53); Acts ii. 47, iii. 8, 9). Elsewhere only Rom. xv. 11 (from Ps. cxvii. 1) and Rev. xix. 5; very freq. in LXX.

14. Δόξα . . . εὐδοκίας. The hymn consists of two members connected by a conjunction; and the three parts of the one member exactly correspond with the three parts of the other member.

GLORY to God in the highest,
And on earth peace among men of His good will.
Дόξα balances εἰρήνη, ἐν ὑψίστοις balances ἐν γῆς, Θεῷ balances ἐν ἀνθρώποις εὐδοκίας. This exact correlation between the parts is lost in the common triple arrangement; which has the further awkwardness of having the second member introduced by a con-

1 The word is thus written in the best texts here and ix. 39: comp. ἐφιλθίσως, xxi. 34; κεραν, xvi. 17; κρεπίνας, xxi. 34 (WH. App. pp. 150, 151). In class. Grk. ὑφράσις is of three terminations; but the true reading here may be οὐφρανθή (B D).
junction,\textsuperscript{1} while the third is not, and of making the second and third members tautological. \textquote{On earth peace} is very much the same as \textquote{Good will amongst men}. Yet Scrivener thinks that \textquote{in the first and second lines heaven and earth are contrasted; the third refers to both those preceding, and alleges the efficient cause which has brought God glory and earth peace} (Int. to Crit. of N.T. ii. p. 344); which seems to be very forced. The construction \textit{ἐν ἄνθρωποις εἰδοκίας} is difficult; but one of the best of modern Greek scholars has said that it \textquote{may be translated \textquote{among men of His counsel for good} or \textquote{of His gracious purpose}. This rendering seems to be in harmony with the preceding context and with the teaching of Scripture in general} (T. S. Evans, Contemp. Rev., Dec. 1881, p. 1003). WH. take a similar view. They prefer, among possible meanings, \textquote{(in) (among and within) accepted mankind}, and point out that \textquote{the Divine \textquote{favour} (Ps. xxx. 5, 7, lxxxv. 1, lxxxix. 17, cvi. 4) or \textquote{good pleasure}, declared for the Head of the race at the Baptism (iii. 22), was already contemplated by the Angels as resting on the race itself in virtue of His birth} (ii. App. p. 56, where the whole discussion should be studied). H. suggests that the first of the two clauses should end with \textit{καὶ} rather than \textit{καὶ}, and that we should arrange thus: \textquote{Glory to God in the highest and on earth; Peace among men of His good pleasure.} With the construction of this first clause he compares vii. 17 and Acts xxvi. 23: \textquote{Glory to God not only in heaven, but now also on earth.} \textquote{In this arrangement \textquote{glory} and \textquote{peace} stand severally at the head of the two clauses as twin fruits of the Incarnation, that which redounds to \textquote{God} and that which enters into \textquote{men}.} This division of the clauses, previously commended by Olshausen, makes the stichometry as even as in the familiar triplet, but it has not found many supporters. It destroys the exact correspondence between the parts of the two clauses, the first clause having three or four parts, and the second only two. W. here leaves H. to plead alone.

\textbf{εἰδοκίας.} The word has three meanings: (1) \textquote{design, desire}, as Ecclus. xi. 17; Rom. x. 1; (2) \textquote{satisfaction, contentment}, as Ecclus. xxxv. 14; 2 Thes. i. 11; (3) \textquote{benevolence, goodwill}, as Ps. cvi. 4; Lk. ii. 14. Both it and \textit{ἐιδοκεῖν} are specially used of the favour with which God regards His elect, as Ps. cxlvii. 12; Lk. iii. 22. The meaning here is \textquote{favour, goodwill, good pleasure}; and \textit{ἄνθρωποι εἰδοκίας} are \textquote{men whom the Divine favour has blessed.} See Lft. on Phil. i. 15. Field (\textit{Otium Norv.} iii. p. 37) urges that, according to Græco-biblical usage, this would be, not \textit{ἄνθρωποι εἰδοκίας}, but \textit{ἄνδρες εἰδοκίας}, and he appeals to nine examples in LXX. But two-thirds of them are not in point, being singulars, and having reference to a definite \textit{adult male} and not to

\textsuperscript{1} Syr-Sin. inserts a second \textquote{and} before \textquote{goodwill to man}. 
human beings in general. These are 2 Sam. xvi. 7, xviii. 20; Ps. lxxx. 18; Jer. xv. 10; ibid. Aq.; Dan. x. 11. There remain ἄνδρες βουλής μον, Ps. cxix. 24, Aq.; οἱ ἄνδρες τῆς διαθήκης σου, Obad. 7; ἄνδρες εἰρηνικοί σου, Obad. 7. This last is again not parallel, as being accompanied by an adj. and not a gen. Substitute ἄνδρες αἵματον, Ps. cxxxviii. 19. Of these instances, all necessarily refer to adult males, excepting Aq. in Ps. cxix. 24, and this more naturally does so, for "counsellors" are generally thought of as male. But, allowing that the usual expression would have been ἄνδράς ὑμαίνειν εἰδοκις, this might well have been avoided here in order to emphasize the fact that all, male and female, young and old, are included. Even in the case of an individual S. Paul writes ὅτι ἀνθρωπος τῆς ἀνοίξεως (2 Thes. ii. 3), so that the combination is at any rate possible. See on Rom. x. 1.

The reading is a well-known problem, but the best textual critics are unanimous for εἰδοκις. The internal evidence is very evenly balanced, as regards both transcriptional and intrinsic probabilities, which are well stated and estimated in WH. (ii. App. pp. 55, 56). The external evidence is very decidedly in favour of the apparently more difficult reading εἰδοκις. Roughly speaking, we have all the best MSS. (excepting C, which is here defective), with all Latin authorities, against the inferior MSS., with nearly all versions, except the Latin, and nearly all the Greek writers who quote the text. Syr-Sin. has "and goodwill to men."


"The agreement, not only of Ν with B, but of D and all the Latins with both, and of A with them all, supported by Origen in at least one work, and that in a certified text, affords a peculiarly strong presumption in favour of εἰδοκις. If this reading is wrong, it must be Western; and no other reading in the New Testament open to suspicion as Western is so comprehensively attested by the earliest and best uncials" (WH. p. 54). The vehemence with which Scrivener argues against εἰδοκις is quite out of place.

15–20. The Verification by the Shepherds.

15. ἀκόμην πρὸς ἀλήθειας Διδεῖμεν δῆ. "They repeatedly said unto one another, Come then let us go over," or "Let us at once go across." The compound verb refers to the intervening country (Acts ix. 38, xi. 19, xviii. 27), and the δῆ makes the exhortation urgent. Lk. is fond of διερχόμεθα, which occurs thirty times in his writings and less than ten elsewhere in N.T. In LXX it is very freq. Note ὡς = "when."

τὸ ἰδαμα τοῦτο. This need not be limited to the saying of the Angel. It is rather the thing of which he spoke: see on i. 65. In class. Grk. λόγος is used in a similar manner; e.g. Hdt. i. 21. 2. Videamus hoc verbum quod factum est (Vulg.).

16. ἡλθαν στενάντες καὶ ἀνεύραν. For these mixed forms of the aor. see on i. 59. Lk. alone in N.T. uses στενάνειν in its class. intrans. sense (xix.)
5, 6; Acts xx. 16, xxii. 18). In 2 Pet. iii. 12 it is trans. as in Is. xvi. 5.
Lk. alone uses ἀνευπληκάνευ (Acts xx. 4), but the mid. occurs 4 Mac. iii. 14:
2nd aor. in all three cases. The compound implies a search in order to find.
In his Gospel Lk. never uses τε without καὶ (xii. 45, xv. 2, xxi. 11, etc.).
Here both ἰδέα and φάτνη, having been mentioned before, have the article.

17. ἐγνώρισαν. "They made known," not merely to Mary and
Joseph, but to the inhabitants of Bethlehem generally. Both in
N.T. and LXX γνωρίζω is commonly trans.; but in Phil. i. 22 and
Job xxxiv. 25, as usually in class. Grk., it is intrans. Vulg. makes
it intrans. here: cognoverunt de verbo quod dictum erat illis de puer
hoc. But ver. 18 makes this very improbable.

18. πάντες οἱ ἀκούσαντες. See on i. 66. This probably includes
subsequent hearers, just as ver. 19 includes a time subsequent to the
departure of the shepherds. The constr. ἐδακμασαν περὶ is unusual.
But in English "about," which is common after "perplexed," might
easily be transferred to such a word as "astonished."

19. ἣ δὲ Μαρία πάντα συνετίρει τὰ βήματα ταῦτα. "But Mary"
could have no such astonishment; neither did she publish her
impressions. The revelations to Joseph and herself precluded
both. Note the change from momentary wonder (aor.) to sust-
tained reticence (imperf.): also that πάντα is put before the verb
with emphasis. Comp. Dan. vii. 28; Ecclus. xxxix. 2.—συνβάλλουσα
ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτῆς. Conferens in corde suo. From whom could
Lk. learn this? The verb is peculiar to him (xiv. 31; Acts iv. 15;
xvii. 18, xviii. 27, xx. 14). See small print note on i. 66.

20. δοξάσαντες καὶ αἰνοῦντες. The latter is the more definite
word. The former is one of the many words which have acquired
a deeper meaning in bibl. Grk. Just as δοξά in bibl. Grk. never
(except 4 Mac. v. 18) has the class. meaning of "opinion," but
rather "praise" or "glory," so δοξάζω in bibl. Grk. never means
"form an opinion about," but "praise" or "glorify." It is used
of the honour done by man to man (1 Sam. xv. 30), by man to God
(Exod. xv. 2), and by God to man (Ps. xci. 15). It is also used of
God glorifying Christ (Acts iii. 13), a use specially common in Jn.
(viii. 54, xi. 4, etc.), and of Christ glorifying God (xvii. 4). See
on Rom. i. 21. For the combination comp. αἰνεῖον καὶ δεδοξα-
μένον (Dan. iii. 26, 55). For αἰνεῖ see on ver. 13.

πᾶσιν οἷς. For the attraction see on iii. 19. If ἡκούσαν refers
to the angelic announcement, then καθὼς refers to εἶδον only. But
ἡκούσαν καὶ εἶδον may sum up their experiences at Bethlehem,
which were a full confirmation (καθὼς = "even as, just as") of what
the Angel had said. Syr-Sin. omits καὶ αἰνοῦντες and πᾶσιν.

Schleiermacher points out that, if this narrative had been a mere poetical
composition, we should have had the hymn of the shepherds recorded and more
extensive hymns assigned to the Angels (S. Luke, Eng. tr. p. 31). He regards
the shepherds as the probable source of the narrative; "for that which to them
was most material and obvious, the nocturnal vision in the fields, is, the only
circumstance treated in detail” (p. 33). But any narrator would give the vision, and could hardly give it more briefly without material loss. The brevity of it, especially when contrasted with the apocryphal gospels, is strong guarantee for its truth. How tempting to describe the search for the Babe and the conversation between the parents and the shepherds! Of the myth-hypothesis Weiss rightly says that “it labours in vain to explain the part played here by the shepherds by means of the pastoral tales of the ancients, and is driven to drag in, awkwardly enough, the legends of Cyrus and Romulus” (Leben Jesu, i. 2. 4, note, Eng. tr. p. 255). As for the old rationalism, which explained the angelic vision by ignis fatuus or other phosphoric phenomena, which travellers have said to be common in those parts; “the more frequent such phenomena, the more familiar must shepherds above all men, accustomed to pass their nights the whole summer long in the open air, have been with them, and the less likely to consider them as a sign from heaven pointing at a particular event” (Schleierm. p. 36).


This forms the third and last section in the second group of narratives (i. 57–ii. 40) in the Gospel of the Infancy (i. 5–ii. 52). It corresponds to the Visitation (i. 39–56) in the first group. Its very marked conclusion has close resemblance to i. 80 and ii. 52. See introductory note to vv. 1–20 (p. 46). The absence of parallel passages in the other Gospels shows that at first this portion of the Gospel narrative was less well known. An oral tradition respecting the childhood of the Christ (when hardly anyone suspected that He was the Christ) would be much less likely to arise or become prevalent than an oral tradition respecting the ministry and crucifixion. We can once more trace a threefold division, viz. a longer narrative between two very short ones: the Circumcision (21), the Presentation in the Temple (22–38), and the Return to Home Life at Nazareth (39, 40).

21. The Circumcision. The verse contains an unusual number of marks of Lk.'s style. 1. Kai òte (vv. 22, 42, vi. 13, xxii. 14, xxii. 33); 2. πληθείνειν (twenty-two times in Lk. and Acts, and thrice elsewhere in N.T.); see on i. 57; 3. τοῦ c. infin. to express aim or purpose (i. 74, 77, 79, ii. 24, iv. 10, v. 7, viii. 5, etc.); see on i. 74; 4. καὶ introducing the apodosis (v. 1v 12, 17, vii. 12, ix. 51, etc.); 5. συλλαμβάνειν (eleven times in Lk. and Acts, and five times elsewhere). See on v. 1.

21. τοῦ περιτεμείναυτόν. There being no art. with ἡμέρας (contrast ver. 22), we cannot, as in ver. 6 and i. 57, make the gen. depend on αἱ ἡμέραι or ὁ χρόνος. The ὥς does not take the place of the art. As Jesus was sent “in the likeness of sinful flesh” (Rom. viii. 3), and “it behoved Him in all things to be made like unto His brethren” (Heb. ii. 17), He underwent circumcision. He was “born under the law” (Gal. iv. 4), and fulfilled the law as a loyal son of Abraham. Had He not done so, οὐκ ἂν ἠλὼς παρεδέχθη διδάσκων, ἀλλ' ἀπετέμφθη ἂν ὃς ἀλλόσυνος
His circumcision was a first step in His obedience to the will of God, and a first shedding of the redeeming blood. It was one of those things which became Him, in order "to fulfil all righteousness" (Mt. iii. 15). The contrast with the circumcision of the Baptist is marked. Here there is no family gathering of rejoicing neighbours and kinsfolk. Joseph and Mary are strangers in a village far from home.

The reading τὸ παιδί (D E G H) for αὐτὸν (A B R Σ E and versions) probably arose from this being the beginning of a lection, "Him" being changed to "the child" (AV.) for greater clearness. The same kind of thing has been done at the beginning of many of the Gospels in the Book of Common Prayer, "Jesus" being substituted for "He" or "Him": e.g. the Gospels for the 6th, 9th, 11th, 12th, 16th, 18th, 19th, and 22nd Sundays after Trinity.

καὶ ἐκλήθη. The καὶ is almost our "then" and the German da: but it may be left untranslated. It introduces the apodosis, as often in Grk., and esp. in Lk. This is simpler than to explain it as a mixture of two constructions, "When eight days were fulfilled . . . He was called" and "Eight days were fulfilled . . . and He was called" (Win. liii. 3. f, p. 546, lxv. 3. c, p. 756). Comp. Acts i. 10. "He was also called" is not likely to be right. The Vulgate and Luther are right.

This passage, with that about John the Baptist (i. 59), is the chief biblical evidence that naming was connected with circumcision: comp. Gen. xvii. 5, 10. Among the Romans the naming of girls took place on the eighth day: of boys on the ninth. The purification accompanied it; and hence the name dies lustricus. Tertullian uses nominalia of the naming festival (Idol. xvi. 1). Among the Greeks the naming festival was on the tenth day; δεκατην ἐστιναν ήθεν.

συλλήμβινα This and corresponding forms, such as λήμβωμαι, προσω-τολμηθα, and the like, are abundantly attested in good MSS. both of LXX and of N.T. See on i. 31. κοιλία="womb" is specially freq. in Lk.

22–38. The Purification and the Presentation in the Temple. Here also we have a triplet. The Ceremony (22–24); Symeon and the Nunc Dimittis (25–35); and Anna the Prophetess (36–38). Symeon and Anna, like Zacharias and Elisabeth, with those spoken of in ver. 38, are evidence that Judaism was still a living religion to those who made the most of their opportunities.

22. αἱ ἡμέραι τοῦ κ. Lev. xii. 6. Lk. is fond of these periphrases, which are mostly Hebraistic. Comp. ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν σαββάτων.
THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

τῶν (iv. 16), or τῶν σαββάτων (xiii. 14, 16, xiv. 5), ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν ἀζύμων (xxii. 7), and the like.

τῶν καθαρισμῶν αὐτῶν. “Of their purification.” The Jewish law (Lev. xii.) did not include the child in the purification. This fact, and the feeling that least of all could Jesus need purifying, produced the corrupt reading αὐτῆς, followed in AV.

No uncial and perhaps only one cursive (76) supports the reading αὐτῆς, which spread from the Complutensian Polyglott Bible (1514) to a number of editions. It is a remarkable instance of a reading which had almost no authority becoming widely adopted. It now has the support of Syr-Sin. The Complutensian insertion of διηθρόδητη after ἡ γλώσσα αὐτῶν in i. 64 was less successful, although that has the support of two cursives (146, 251). D here has the strange reading αὐτῳ, which looks like a slip rather than a correction. No one would alter αὐτῶν to αὐτῷ. The Vulgate also has purgationis ejus, but some Lat. MSS. have eorum. The αὐτῆς might come from LXX of Lev. xii. 6, θαν ἀνατρίσωμεν αἱ ἡμέραι καθάρσεως αὐτῆς. Note that Lk. uses καθαρισμὸς and not καθάρσεις, which is a medical term for menstruation, and which Gentile readers might misunderstand.

The meaning of αὐτῶν is not clear. Edersheim and Van Hengel interpret it of the Jews; Godet, Meyer, and Weiss of Mary and Joseph. The latter is justified by the context: “When the days of their purification were fulfilled . . . they brought Him.” Contact with an unclean person involved uncleanness. Purification after childbirth seems to have been closely connected with purification after menstruation; the rites were similar. Herzog, P RE.2 art. Reinigungen. After the birth of a son the mother was unclean for seven days, then remained at home for thirty-three days, and on the fortieth day after the birth made her offerings.

κατὰ τὸν νόμον Μωυσέως. These words must be taken with what precedes, for the law did not require them to bring Him to Jerusalem (Lev. xii. 1–8). We have already had several places in ch. i. (vv. 8, 25, 27) in which there are amphibolous words or phrases: comp. viii. 39, ix. 17, 18, 57, x. 18, xi. 39, xii. 1, xvii. 22, xviii. 31, xix. 37, xxi. 36, etc.

The trisyllabic form Μωυσῆς is to be preferred to Μωσῆς. The name is said to be derived from two Egyptian words, mo = “water,” and υγατ = “to be preserved.” Hence the LXX, a version made in Egypt, and the best MSS. of the N.T., which in the main represent the text of the N.T. that was current in Egypt, keep nearest to the Egyptian form of the name by preserving the ο. Josephus also has Μωυσῆς. But Μωσῆς is closer to the Hebrew form of the name, and is the form most commonly used by Greek and Latin writers. Win. v. 8, p. 47.

ἀνήγαγον. One of Lk.’s favourite words (iv. 5, viii. 22, and often in Acts). It is here used of bringing Him up to the capital, like ἀναβασινωτῶν in ver. 43. In the literal sense they went down; for Bethlehem stands higher than Jerusalem. This journey is the first visit of the Christ to His own city.
64 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [II. 22, 23.

'Ιεροσόλυμα. In both his writings Lk. much more often uses the Jewish form 'Ιεροναλήμ (vv. 25, 38, 41, 43, 45, etc.), which Mt. uses only once (xxiii. 37), and Mk. perhaps not at all (? xi. 1). Jn. uses the Greek form in his Gospel, and the Jewish form in the Apocalypse. The Jewish form is used wherever the name is not a geographical term, but has a specially religious signification (Gal. iv. 25; Ἱερωνίμου ii. 22). The Greek form is neut. plur. In Mt. ii. 3 it may be fem.; but perhaps πᾶσα η πόλις was in the writer's mind. Neither form should have the aspirate, which a "false association with τιρσή" has produced (WH. ii. 313; App. p. 160). This visit to Jerusalem probably preceded the arrival of the Magi, after which Joseph and Mary would hardly have ventured to bring Him to the city. If this is correct, we must abandon the traditional view that the Epiphany took place on the thirteenth day after the Nativity. There is no improbability in Joseph's going back to Bethlehem for a while before returning to Nazareth. See Andrews, Life of our Lord, p. 92, ed. 1892; Swete, The Apostles' Creed, p. 50, ed. 1894.

In any case the independence of Mt. and Lk. is manifest, for we do not know how to harmonize the accounts. Lk. seems to imply that "the law of Moses" was kept in all particulars; and if so, the purification did not take place before the fortieth day. Mt. implies that the flight into Egypt took place immediately after the visit of the Magi (ii. 14). As Bethlehem is so close to Jerusalem, Herod would not wait long for the return of the Magi before taking action. We adopt, therefore, as a tentative order the Presentation on the fortieth day, Return to Bethlehem, Visit of the Magi, Flight into Egypt, without any return to Nazareth.

παραστήσαι τῷ κυρίῳ. The Heb. verb in Ex. xiii. 12 means "cause to pass over." It is elsewhere used of parents causing their children to pass through the fire in offering them to Moloch, but is not then translated by παραστήσαι (Deut. xviii. 10; 2 Kings xvi. 3, xvii. 17, xxiii. 10, etc.). For παραστήσαι of offering to God comp. Rom. xii. 1. This παραστήσαι τῷ κυρίῳ is quite distinct from the purification, which concerned the mother, whereas the presentation concerned the son. It is evident that the presentation is the main fact here. Not, "she came to offer a sacrifice," but "they brought Him up to present Him to the Lord," is the principal statement. The latter rite points back to the primitive priesthood of all first-born sons. Their functions had been transferred to the tribe of Levi (Num. iii. 12); but every male firstborn had to be redeemed from service in the sanctuary by a payment of five shekels (Num. xviii. 15, 16), as an acknowledgment that the rights of Jehovah had not lapsed. This sum would be about twelve shillings according to the present worth of that amount of silver, but in purchasing power would be nearly double that.

23. The quotation (which is not a parenthesis) is a combination of Ex. xiii. 2 with Ex. xiii. 12, and is not exact with either: καθήσεσαι ἄγ. perhaps comes from Ex. xii. 16; comp. Lk. i. 35. For τῶν ἀρσεν see Gen. vii. 23;
II. 23, 24.] THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

Ex. i. 22. The δαναγγον μήτραν seems to be fatal to patristic speculations respecting Mary's having given birth to the Christ clauso utero, and therefore painlessly; see on ver. 7. Excepting Mk. vii. 34, δαναγγον is peculiar to Lk. (xxiv. 31, 45; Acts vii. 56, xvi. 14, xvii. 3); freq. in LXX (Gen. iii. 5, 7; Exod. xiii. 15; Num. iii. 12, etc.).

24. τοῦ δοῦναι θυσίαν. See on i. 74, and to the reff. there given add v. 7, viii. 5, ix. 51, xii. 42, xxi. 22, xxii. 6, 31, xxiv. 16, 25, 29, 45. This is Mary's offering for her own purification: it has nothing to do with the ransom of the firstborn. The record of the offerings is considerable guarantee for the truth of the history. A legend would very probably have emphasized the miraculous birth by saying that the virgin mother was divinely instructed not to bring the customary offerings, which in her case would not be required.

ζεύγος τρυγώνων. The offering of the poor. It has been argued that this is evidence that the Magi had not yet come. But their gifts, even if they had already offered them, would not have raised Mary's condition from poverty to riches. Only well-to-do people offered a lamb and a pigeon. Neither here nor elsewhere in N.T. have we any evidence that our Lord or His parents were among the abjectly poor.

"The pigeon and turtle-dove were the only birds enjoined to be offered in sacrifice by the law of Moses. In almost every case they were permitted as a substitute for those who were too poor to provide a kid or a lamb. . . . But while the turtle-dove is a migrant, and can only be obtained from spring to autumn, the wild pigeons remain throughout the year; and not only so—they have young at all times. Consequently, at any time of the year when the turtle-dove was unattainable, young pigeons might be procured. There is also a force in the adjective 'young'; for while the old turtle-dove could be trapped, it was hopeless to secure the old pigeon" (Tristram, Nat. Hist. of the B. pp. 211, 213).

25-35. The Benediction of Symeon. He and Anna are representatives of the holiness which, in a time of great spiritual deadness, still survived among the men and women of Israel. They are instances of that "spontaneous priesthood" which sometimes springs up, and often among the lower orders, when the regular clergy have become corrupt and secularized. To identify Symeon with any other Symeon is precarious, the name being exceedingly common. He is introduced rather as an unknown person (μὴθροστομον). It is sometimes said that Symeon, son of Hillel and father of Gamaliel, would hardly have been old enough; he was president of the Sanhedrin A.D. 13. But ver. 29 does not necessarily imply that Symeon is very old. What we know of the Sanhedrin at this period, however, does not lead us to expect to find saints among its presidents. In the Gospel of Nicodemus he is called sacerdos magnus, and it is his two sons who are raised from the dead by Christ, and reveal what they have seen in Hades (Pars altera, A. i.).
25. ἐν ἑρωστάλημ. It is remarkable that with one exception (Rom. xv. 26) this expression is used in N.T. by no one but Lk., who has it very often (ver. 43, ix. 31; Acts i. 8, ii. 5, vi. 7, ix. 13, 21, x. 39, xiii. 27, xvi. 4, xxi. 11). In LXX it is common. See Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 184.

εὐλαβής. The word is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts ii. 5, vii. 2, xxii. 12): lit. “taking hold well,” and so “cautious.” Lat. timoratus (Vulg.), timens (e), metuens (d), timens deum (r). Plutarch uses εὐλαβεία in the sense of “carefulness about religious duties, piety”; but εὐλαβής is not thus used in class. Grk. We find the combination of these same two adjectives, δίκαιος and εὐλαβής, twice in Plato’s sketch of the ideal statesman. He ought to have both moderation and courage; and of moderation the two chief elements are justice and circumspection. If he is merely courageous, he will be wanting in τὸ δίκαιον καὶ εὐλαβής (Polit. 311 B). See also Philo, Quis rer. div. har. vi., of the εὐλαβεία of Abraham. The meaning of the combination here is that Symeon was conscientious, especially in matters of religion.

προσδεχόμενος (see on xxiii. 51) παράκλησιν. 1. “Appeal for help”; 2. “encouragement”; 3. “consolation.” The last is the meaning here. Those who “sit in darkness and the shadow of death” (i. 79) need consolation; and the salvation which the Messiah was to bring was specially called such by the Jews. Comp. “Comfort ye, comfort ye, My people” (Is. xl. 1, xlix. 1, li. 3, lx. 2, lxvi. 13). There was a belief that a time of great troubles (dolores Messiae) would precede the coming of the Christ. Hence the Messiah Himself was spoken of as “the Consoler,” or “the Consolation.” Comp. Joseph of Arimathæa, “who was waiting for the kingdom of God” (xxiii. 51; Mk. xv. 43); and with this “waiting” or “looking” of Symeon and Joseph comp. Jacob’s death-song, Gen. xlix. 18.

πνεύμα ἂν ἂγιον. This is the order of the words in the best authorities; and the separation of ἂγιον from πνεύμα by ἂν accentuates the difference between this expression and that in the next verse. Here the meaning is, “an influence which was holy was upon him”; i. 15, 35, 41, 67 are not parallel. See on i. 15. The accusative, ἐν αὐτῷ, indicates the coming, rather than the resting, of the holy influence; the prophetic impulse.

26. κεκρηματισμένον. The act. = 1. “transact business” (χρήμα); 2. “give a divine response” to one who consults an oracle; 3. “give a divine admonition, teach from heaven” (Jer. xxv. 30, xxxii. 2; Job xl. 8). The pass. is used both of the admonition divinely given, as here, and of the person divinely admonished (Mt. ii. 12, 22; Acts x. 22; Heb. viii. 5, xi. 7). It is gratuitous to conjecture that it was in a dream that the Holy Spirit made this known to Symeon. Comp. Acts xi. 26; Rom. vii. 3.
II. 26–28. THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

... This is the only example in N.T. of προλ with the subj. (Win. xii. 3, b, p. 371); and, if the reading is correct, the only instance of προλ δὲ: but perhaps either η or δὲ should be omitted. The repetition of "see" is doubtless intentional. In many languages "see" is used of any kind of experience (Acts ii. 27, 31, xiii. 35–37, etc.).

tὸν Χριστὸν Κυρίου. "The Anointed of the Lord"; Him whom God has sent as the Messiah. Comp. τὸν Χρ. τοῦ Θεοῦ (ix. 20), and also 1 Sam. xxiv. 7.

27. ἐν τῷ πνεύματι. Not "in a state of ecstasy" (Rev. i. 10), but "under the influence of the Spirit," who had told him of the blessing in store for him. By τῷ ἱερὸν is probably meant the Court of the Women.—ἐν τῷ εἰςαγαγεῖν. "After they had brought in": see on iii. 21. The verb is a favourite with Lk. (xiv. 21, xxii. 54, and six times in Acts): elsewhere only Jn. xviii. 16; Heb. i. 6.

tοῦς γονεῖς. We cannot infer from this that either here or ver. 41 Luke is using an authority that was ignorant of the supernatural birth of Jesus. It is more reasonable to suppose that the whole of this "Gospel of the Infancy" comes from one source, viz. the house of Mary, and that in these passages the narrator employs the usual expression. Joseph (iv. 22) and Mary were commonly called His parents: comp. ver. 33.—It is possible to take περὶ αὐτοῦ after νόμον or after εἰθισμένον; but more probably it belongs to τοῦ πνεύματος. For κατὰ τὸ εἰθισμένον see on i. 8.

28. καὶ ἁπάντων. First the parents, and then he holds the child in his arms; the καὶ being either "also" (he as well as they), or simply introducing the apodosis after ἐν τῷ εἰςαγαγεῖν. Each side acts its proper part. The parents bring Him in accordance with the Divine Law, and Symeon welcomes Him in accordance with the Divine impulse. Symeon is sometimes called Ὁ ἐκδόχως. See on viii. 13.

Latin renderings of ἄγκλας vary: uinas (Vulg.), manus (c.e.f.), amplexum (a), alas (d). The last is a late use of ala.

29-32. The Nunc Dimittis. In its suppressed rapture and vivid intensity this canticle equals the most beautiful of the Psalms. Since the fifth century it has been used in the evening services of the Church (Apost. Const. vii. 481), and has often been the hymn of dying saints. It is the sweetest and most solemn of all the canticles. See Bacon's Essay on Death.

Symeon represents himself as a servant or watchman released from duty, because that for which he was commanded to watch has appeared. Comp. the opening of the Agamemnon of Æschylus,
where the sentinel rejoices at his release from the long watch for
the fire signal respecting the capture of Troy.

29. "Now that I have at last seen the long-looked for
Messiah": the νῦν stands first with emphasis.

ἀπολύεις τῷ δοῦλῷ σῷ, δέσποτα. All three words show that the
figure is that of the manumission of a slave, or of his release from
a long task. Death is the instrument of release. 'Απολύω is used
of the deaths of Abraham (Gen. xv. 2), of Aaron (Num. xx. 29), of
Tobit (Tob. iii. 6), of a martyr (2 Mac. vii. 9); comp. Soph. Ant.
1268, and many examples in Wetst. Δεσπότης is the "master of a
slave," and the Greeks sometimes refused the title to any but the
gods in reference to themselves (Eur. Hippol. 88). In Scripture it
is not often used of God: Acts iv. 24; Rev. vi. 10; perhaps
Jude 4, which, however, like 2 Pet. ii. 1, may refer to Christ.
Comp. Job v. 8; Wisd. vi. 7, viii. 3; Ecclus. xxxvi. 1; 3 Mac.
ii. 2; Philo, Quis rer. div. her. vi.; and see Trench, Syn. xxviii.
In using the word Symeon acknowledges God's absolute right to
dispose of him, either in retaining or dispensing with his service.

κατὰ τὸ βήμα σου. The Divine command communicated to
him (ver. 26). Note the exact correspondence between his hymn
and the previous promise: ἀπολύεις = ίδειν θάνατον, εἶδον = εἴη,
τῷ σωτηρίῳ σου = τῷ Χριστῷ Κυρίῳ.—ἐν εἰρήνῃ. With emphasis,
answering to the emphatic νῦν: the beginning and the end of the
verse correspond. It is the peace of completeness, of work
finished and hopes fulfilled. Comp. "Thou shalt go to thy fathers
in peace" (Gen. xv. 15).

30. δτί. Introduces the cause of the perfect peace.—εἶδον οἱ
δόξαλμοι μου. Hebraistic fulness of expression: comp. Job xix. 27,
xlii. 5. His hands also had handled (1 Jn. i. 1); but he mentions
sight rather than handling, because sight was specially promised
(ver. 26). This verse probably suggested the worthless tradition
that Symeon was blind, and received his sight as the Messiah
approached him.

τῷ σωτηρίῳ. "The Messianic salvation," and scarcely to be
distinguished from τὴν σωτηρίαν. Comp. iii. 6; Acts xxviii. 28;
Ps. xciiii. 3; Is. xl. 5; Clem. Rom. Cor. xxxvi. 1. In LXX it is
freq., sometimes in the sense of "safety," sometimes of "peace-
offering." Win. xxxiv. 2, p. 294. That Symeon says so little about
the Child, and nothing about the wonders which attended His
birth (of which he had probably not heard), is a mark of genuine-
ness. Fiction would have made him dwell on these things.

31, 32. The second strophe of the canticle. Having stated
what the appearance of the Messiah has been to himself, Symeon
now states what the Messiah will be to the world.

31. ἡτοίμασας. When used of God, the verb almost = "ordain."
Comp. Mt. xx. 23, xxv. 34; Mk. x. 40; 1 Cor. ii. 9; Heb. xi. 16,
where, as here, the word is used of ordaining blessings. It is used only once of punishment (Mt. xxv. 41).

κατὰ πρόσωπον πάντων τῶν λαῶν. This includes both Jews and Gentiles, as the next verse shows, and is in harmony with the universal character of this Gospel: comp. Is. xix. 24, 25, xlii. 6, xlix. 6, lx. 3, and especially lii. 10, ἀποκαλύπτει Κύριος τὸν βραχίονα αὐτοῦ τὸν ἄγιον ἐνώπιον πάντων τῶν ἐθνῶν, καὶ δόθησαν πάντα τὸ ἀκρά τής γῆς τὴν σωτηρίαν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν. Both in LXX and N.T. κατὰ πρόσωπον is common; it occurs several times in Polybius. Comp. Test. XII. Patr. Benj. xi.

32. The σωτηρίαν is analysed into light and glory, and “the peoples” into heathen and Jews,—that “profound dualism which dominates the biblical history of humanity from Genesis to Revelation” (Godet). The passage is a combination of Ps. xcviii. 2, ἐναντίον τῶν ἐθνῶν ἀπεκάλυψε τὴν δικαιοσύνην αὐτοῦ, with Is. xlix. 6, δήδοκα σε εἰς φῶς ἐθνῶν, and φῶς and δόθησαν are in apposition with τὸ σωτηρίον. But some take both as depending on ἡγούμενος, and others take δόθησαν after εἰς co-ordinately with ἀποκάλυψιν. This last is Luther’s: ein Licht zu erleuchten die Heiden und zum Preis deines Volkes; but it is very improbable. Comp. Jn. i. 7, xii. 35, 46.

ἀποκάλυψις ἐθνῶν. Either 1. “revelation to belong to the Gentiles”; or 2. “instruction of the Gentiles”; or 3. “unveiling of the Gentiles,” i.e. for removing the gross darkness which covers them (Is. xxv. 7, lx. 2); or 4. (taking ἐθνῶν after φῶς) “a light of the Gentiles unto revelation” (Is. xl. 5). The first is best, “a light with a view to revelation which shall belong to the Gentiles,” making ἐθνῶν a poss. gen. Does ἀποκάλυψις ever mean “instruction”? 1

And to represent the heathen as revealed by the light seems to be an inversion: revealed to whom?

Elsewhere in N.T. the gen. after ἀποκάλυψις is either the person who reveals (2 Cor. xii. 1; Rev. i. 1), or the thing revealed (Rom. ii. 5; 1 Pet. iv. 13); but the poss. gen. is quite possible. The word is eminently Pauline (Crem. Lex. p. 343). It may be doubted whether the glory of Israel (Rom. ix. 4) is mentioned after the enlightening of the Gentiles in order to indicate that Israel obtained its full glory after and through the enlightenment of the Gentiles; for the heathen accepted the salvation which the Jews refused, and from the heathen it came back to Israel (Bede, Beng.).

The strain of confidence and joy which pervades the canticle is strong evidence of the historical character of the narrative. The condition of the Jewish nation at the close of the first century or beginning of the second is certainly not reflected in it: c'est le pur accent primitif (Godet). And Schleiermacher remarks that “it is a circumstance too natural for a poetical fiction” that Symeon takes no notice of the parents until they show surprise, but is lost in an enthusiastic address to God. See small print on i. 56.

33-35. Symeon’s Address to the Virgin. “The foreboding of suffering to Mary, so indefinitely expressed, bears no mark of post

1 Grotius admits without commending this rendering, and quotes Ps. cxix. 18, ἀποκάλυψις τοῦς ὀφθαλμόθις μου.
But the inspired idea of Messiah in the pious old man obviously connected the sufferings which He was to endure in His strife against the corrupt people with those which were foretold of Him in Is. liii.” (Neander, *Leben Jesus Christi*, § 18, Eng. tr. p. 27). The change from the unmixed joy and glory of the angelic announcements and of the evangelic hymns is very marked. Here for the first time in the narrative we have an intimation of future suffering.

33. ἢν. When the sing. verb was written, only the first of the persons mentioned was in the writer’s mind: such irregularities are common (Mt. xvii. 3, xxii. 40).—θανατάσσοντες ἐπὶ. Excepting Mk. xii. 17, this construction is peculiar in N.T. to Lk. (iv. 22, ix. 43, xx. 26; Acts iii. 12). It is quite class. and freq. in LXX (Judith x. 7, 19, 23, xi. 20; Job xli. 1; Eccles. v. 7; Is. iii. 15). The objection of Strauss, that this wonder of the parents is inconsistent with the angelic announcement, is pointless. Symeon’s declaration about the Gentiles goes far beyond the Angel’s promise, and it was marvellous that Symeon should know anything about the Child’s nature and destiny.

34. κεῖται. “Is appointed,” Phil. i. 16; 1 Thes. iii. 3; Josh. iv. 6; not “is lying” here in thine arms.

eἰς πτώσιν. In accordance with Is. viii. 14, where the same double destiny is expressed. The coming of the Messiah necessarily involves a crisis, a separation, or judgment (κρίσις). Some welcome the Light; others “love the darkness rather than the Light, because their works are evil” (Jn. iii. 19), and are by their own conduct condemned. Judas despairs, Peter repents; one robber blasphemes, the other confesses (2 Cor. ii. 16). Hence the πτώσις of many is an inevitable result of the manifestation of the Christ. Yet the purpose is not πτώσις, but ἀνάστασις and σωτηρία (Rom. xi. 11, 12). Elsewhere in N.T. ἀνάστασις means the resurrection of the dead; in bibl. Grk. it is never transitive. Some understand the metaphor as that of a stone lying (κεῖται), against which some stumble and fall (Mt. xxi. 44; Acts iv. 11; Rom. ix. 33; 1 Pet. ii. 6), while others use it as a means to rise. But the latter half of the figure is less appropriate.

σημεῖον. A manifest token, a phenomenon impossible to ignore, by means of which something else is known. A person may be a σημεῖον, as Christ is said to be here, and Jonah in xi. 30.—ἀντιλεγόμενον. “Which is spoken against.” This is the πτώσις, that men recognize, and yet reject and oppose, the σημεῖον; an opposition which reached a climax in the crucifixion (Heb. xii. 3). For the passive comp. Acts xxviii. 22.

35. From καὶ σου to ῥομφαία is not a parenthesis; there is nothing in the construction to indicate that it is one, and a statement of such moment to the person addressed would hardly be introduced parenthetically. It is the inevitable result of the ἀντιλογία: the Mother’s heart is pierced by the rejection and
crucifixion of her Son.—αὐτῆς. In opposition to ὅποιος.—ἡν ὑπερθηκή. The seat of the affections and human emotions.—δρομὴ. (1) A long Thracian pike; (2) a large sword, greater than μάχαιρα (xxii. 36, 38, 49, 52) or εἶφος. Such a weapon better signifies extreme anguish than doubt, the interpretation which Origen, Bleek, and Reuss prefer, as if she would be tempted to join in the ἀντίλέγειν. In that case we should expect τὸ πνεῦμα for τ. ψυχήν. The word is frequent in LXX and Rev. (i. 16, ii. 12, 16, vi. 8, xix. 15, 21). Syr-Sin. and Diatess-Tat. have "spear."

δῖπως ἄν. This depends upon the whole statement from ἵδον to δρομῆ, not on the last clause only; on κεῖται, not on διελέ wavelength. It was the Divine purpose that the manifestation of the Messiah should cause the crisis just described; men must decide either to join or to oppose Him. The ἄν indicates that in every case the appearance of the Christ produces this result: thoughts, hitherto secret, become known through acceptance or rejection of the Christ.

Acts iii. 19, 20 should be compared. There, as here, we have εἰς (?) followed by δῖπως ἄν. In N.T. δῖπως ἄν is rare; elsewhere only in quotations from LXX (Acts xv. 17 from Amos ix. 12; Rom. iii. 4 from Ps. li. 6).

ἐκ π. καρδιῶν. "Forth from many hearts," where they have been concealed; or "Forth from the hearts of many." For διαλογισμοῖ see on v. 22.

36-38. Anna the Prophetess. That the Evangelist obtained this narrative "directly or indirectly from the lips of this Anna who is so accurately described," is less probable than that the source for all this chapter is one and the same, viz. some member of the Holy Family, and probably Mary herself.

36. ἥν. Either "was present," as in Mk. xv. 40, in which case ἥν in the sense of "was" has to be understood with what follows; or simply "there was," which is better. Thus all runs in logical order. First the existence of Anna is stated, then her life and character, and finally her presence on this occasion. Symeon comes to the temple under the influence of the Spirit; Anna (Hannah) dwells there continually. The sight of the Messiah makes him at once long for death; it seems to give her renewed vigour of life. Is this subtle distinction of character the creation of a writer of fiction? We find fiction at work in the tradition that Mary had been brought up in the temple under the tutelage of Anna. There is nothing here to indicate that Anna had ever seen Mary previously.

1 It is not easy to decide whether the δὲ after σοῦ is genuine or not. Om. B L Σ, Vulg. Boh. Aeth. Arm. Ins. Ν A D, Syr., Orig. If it be admitted, comp. i. 76; and render καὶ... δὲ... in the same way in both passages: "Yea and." For διελέθησαται see on ver. 15.
Neither in ver. 36 (καὶ Ἰω) nor in ver. 37 (καὶ ἀβγῆ) does καὶ = "also" in ref. to ver. 25. The meaning is not "There was Symeon, the holy and aged man; also Anna, the holy and aged woman." Throughout the section καὶ = "and."

προφητὴς. She was known as such before this occasion. Like Miriam, Deborah, Huldah, and the daughters of Philip, Anna was a woman divinely inspired to make known God's will to others. That her genealogy is given because prophetesses are rare, is doubtful. But Lk.'s accuracy appears in such details, which a forger would have avoided for fear of mistakes. Although the ten tribes were lost, some families possessed private genealogies. For the word προφητὴς comp. Rev. ii. 20; Exod. xv. 20; Judg. iv. 4; 2 Chron. xxxiv. 22; Is. viii. 3.

For the omission of the art. after θυγατὴ see on i. 5. —Φανοῦρα = "Face of God," Peniel or Penuel (Gen. xxxii. 31, 32); in LXX έτες Θεοῦ. —Ασηρ, 2 Chron. xxx. ii.

αὔτη προβεβληκα, κ.τ.λ. "She was advanced in many days, having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity, and herself a widow even for eighty-four years." From αὔτη προβεβληθή to τεσσάρων is a parenthesis in which Ἰω is to be understood: ζήσασα explains προβεβληκα, and ἀβγη balances μετὰ ἀνδρός. She was of great age, because she had lived seven years as a wife and eighty-four years by herself (Rom. vii. 25) as a widow. The ἐως draws attention to the great length of her widowhood; "up to as much as" (Mt. xviii. 21, 22). That she should be considerably over a hundred years old is not incredible. But the eighty-four may be intended to include the seven years and the time before her marriage. In any case the clumsy arrangement of taking all three verses (36–38) as one sentence, and making αὔτη the nom. to ἀνθρωπολογήτω, should be avoided. That she had never, in spite of her early widowhood, married again, was held to be very honourable to her: comp. Ⅰ Tim. v. 3, 5. Monogamía apud ethnici in summo honore est (Tertul. de Exh. Cast. xiii.; comp. de Monog. xvi.; ad Uxor. i. 7). See quotations in Wetst. on Ⅰ Tim. iii. 2, and Whiston's note on Jos. Ant. xviii. 6. 6. Syr-Sin. has "seven days."

87. οὐκ ἀδφιστάτῳ τοῦ ἱεροῦ. See on viii. 13. This is to be understood, like xxiv. 53, of constant attendance, rather than of actual residence within the temple precincts, although the latter may have been possible. She never missed a service, and between the services she spent most of her time in the temple. In spite of her age she kept more than the customary fasts (comp. v. 33), perhaps more than the Mondays and Thursdays (see on xviii. 12), and spent an unusual amount of time in prayer.

1 The first aorist of Ἰω is late Greek. It occurs Acts xxvi. 5; Rom. xiv. 9; Rev. ii. 8, xx. 4. Attic writers use ἐβλω, which is not found in N.T.
λατρεύουσα. Freq. in Lk., Paul, and Heb. See on iv. 8. Not in Mk. or Jn. Mt. iv. 10 from Deut. vi. 13.—νύκτα κ. ἡμέραν. Comp. Acts xxvi. 7. This is the usual order: Mk. iv. 27, v. 5; Acts xx. 31; 1 Thes. ii. 9, iii. 10; 2 Thes. iii. 8; 1 Tim. v. 5; 2 Tim. i. 3. But the other is also common: xviii. 7; Acts ix. 24; Rev. iv. 8, etc.; and in O.T. is more common. It may be doubted whether the order makes any difference of meaning: see Ellicott on 1 Tim. v. 5, and comp. Hom. Od. ii. 345; II. xxiv. 73, v. 490; Plat. Theaet. 151 A.

38. αὐτῇ τῇ ὁρᾷ. "That very hour" (RV.): see on x. 7, 21. AV. exaggerates with "that instant," as does Beza with eo ipso momento, and also Gen. with "at the same instant."—ἐπιστάσα. "Coming up" and "standing by," rather than "coming suddenly" (Gen. and Rhem.), although the word often has this meaning from the context. Comp. xxi. 34, x. 40, xx. 1; Acts iv. 1, vi. 12, xxii. 13, xxiii. 27; and see on ver. 9.—ἀνθρωπολογεῖτο. The άντι does not refer to Symeon, meaning that "she in turn gave thanks"; but to the making a return, which is involved in all thanksgiving: Ps. lxxviii. 13; Ezra iii. 11; 3 Mac. vi. 33; Test. XII. Patr. Judah i. εἶλαίε. Not on that occasion, but afterwards, "she was habitually speaking." When she met Mary and Joseph she could not speak πᾶσαν τούς προσδέχομένους, for they were not present. Grammatically περὶ αὐτοῦ may refer to τῷ Θεῷ, but it evidently refers to the Child. Godet divides the people into three sections: the Pharisees, who expected a political deliverer; the Sadducees, who expected nothing; and the blessed few, who expected the spiritual deliverance or consolation (ver. 25) of Jerusalem. Bengel argues from πᾶσαν εραν ἵτιμον ημίτοι, which does not follow, especially when we consider Lk.'s fondness for the word.

λύτρωσιν ἱερουσαλήμ. This, without εν, is certainly the true reading (N.B, many Versions and Fathers), "redemption of Jerusalem." Comp. Is. xl. 2. Fiction would probably have given Anna also a hymn. Against the hypothesis that this narrative is "a poetical and symbolical representation," Schleiermacher asks, "Why should the author, along with Symeon, have introduced Anna, who is not made even to answer any poetical purpose?"

39. ἐτελεσαν. "Brought to a close, accomplished"; especially of executing what has been prescribed: xii. 50, xviii. 31, xxii. 37; Acts xiii. 29; Rom. ii. 27; Jas. ii. 8. See Jn. xix. 28, which illustrates the difference between τελέω and τελείω. Syr-Sin. here inserts "Joseph and Mary" as nom. to "accomplished." Why not "His father and His mother" (ver. 33) or "His parents" (ver. 43), if that text was framed to discredit the virgin birth?

Ναζαρέτ. Lk. appears to know nothing of the visit of the Magi. It would have suited his theme of the universality of the Gospel so well, that he would hardly have omitted it, if he had known it. In that case he was not familiar with our First Gospel. From Mt. ii. 11 we infer that the Holy Family, after the Purification, returned to Bethlehem and there occupied a house (τὴν
The parents may have thought that the Son of David, born in Bethlehem, ought to be brought up there. Thence they fly to Egypt, a flight not mentioned in the authority used by Lk.

40. The conclusion of a separate narrative: comp. i. 80. Contrast the reticence of this verse (which is all that we know respecting the next eleven years) with the unworthy inventions of the apocryphal gospels.

ηδευανεν κ. ἐκραταιοῦτο. Of bodily development in size and strength; for πνεύματι is an insertion from i. 80.—πληρομενον. Pres. part. "Being filled" day by day. The σοφία is to be regarded as wisdom in the highest and fullest sense. The intellectual, moral, and spiritual growth of the Child, like the physical, was real. His was a perfect humanity developing perfectly, unimpeded by hereditary or acquired defects. It was the first instance of such a growth in history. For the first time a human infant was realizing the ideal of humanity. See Martensen, Christian Dogmatics, §139.

χάρις Θεοῦ ἦν ἐπ' αὐτό. See on iv. 22 and comp. Acts iv. 33.

It was near the beginning of this interval that the Jews sent an embassy of fifty to follow Archelaus to Rome, to protest against his accession, and to petition that Judaea might be annexed to Syria (Jos. B. J. ii. 6. 1; Ant. xvii. 11. 1), of which fact we perhaps have a trace in the parable of the Pounds (xix. 14). And it was near the end of this interval that another embassy went to complain of Archelaus to Augustus: and he was then deposed, and banished to Vienne in Gaul (Ant. xvii. 13. 2; B. J. ii. 7. 3). Lewin, Fasti Sacri, 877, 944, 1011, 1026.

41-52. The Boyhood of the Messiah.

His Visit to Jerusalem and the Temple, and His first recorded Words. Here again, as in the Circumcision, the Purification, and the Presentation, the idea of fidelity to the Law is very conspicuous. Hort, Judaistic Christianity, Lect. ii., Macmillan, 1894.

41. κατ' ἔτος. The expression occurs here only in N.T. Combined with the imperf. it expresses the habitual annual practice of Joseph and Mary. At the Passover, Pentecost, and Tabernacles every male had to go up to Jerusalem (Ex. xxiii. 14-17, xxxiv. 23; Deut. xvi. 16). But since the Dispersion this law could not be kept; yet most Palestinian Jews tried to go at least once a year. About women the Law says nothing, but Hillel prescribed that they also should go up to the Passover. Mary, like Hannah (1 Sam. i. 7), probably went out of natural piety, and not in obedience to Hillel's rule.

τῇ ἐορτῇ. "For the feast," or, more probably, "at the feast"; dat. of time, as in viii. 29, xii. 20, xiii. 14, 15, 16; Acts vii. 8, xii. 21, xxi. 26, xxii. 13, xxvii. 23. In class. Grk. τῇ ἐορτῇ without ἐν is rare: Win. xxxi. 5, p. 269. The phrase ἐορτῇ τοῦ Πασχα occurs again Jn. xiii. 1 only; not in
LXX. The fact that γορεῖς has not been changed here, even in those MSS. in which vv. 27 and 43 have been corrupted, is some evidence that the corruption was not made for dogmatic reasons. The love of amplification or of definiteness might suffice.

42. έτῶν δώδεκα. At the age of twelve a young Jew became "a son of the Law," and began to keep its enactments respecting feasts, fasts, and the like. The mention of the age implies that since the Presentation Jesus had not been up to Jerusalem.—ἀναβάτων. Imperf. part. "On their usual going up."—κατὰ τὸ ἔδοχος. See small print on i. 9; also Deissmann, Neue Bibelstud. p. 79.

43. καὶ τελειωσάντων. Note the change of tense. "And after they had fulfilled." There is nothing ungrammatical in the combination of an aor. with an imperf. part. But the reading ἀναβάτων is an obvious correction to avoid apparent awkwardness.—τὰς ἡμέρας. The prescribed seven days (Ex. xii. 15, 16; Lev. xxiii. 6–8; Deut. xvi. 3), or the customary two days, for many pilgrims left after the principal sacrifices were over.

ὑπέμενεν. Contains an idea of persistence and perseverance, and hence is used of remaining after others have gone: comp. Acts xvii. 14. The attraction of Divine things held Him fast in spite of the departure of His parents. It would be His first experience of the temple services, and especially of the slaying of the Paschal lamb.—ὁ παῖς. "The Boy," to distinguish from τὸ παιδίον: see on ver. 52.—οὐκ ἔγνωσαν. This shows what confidence they had in Him, and how little they were accustomed to watch Him. That it shows neglect on their part is a groundless assertion. They were accustomed to His obedience and prudence, and He had never caused them anxiety. See Hase, Geschichte Jesu, § 28, p. 276, ed. 1891.

44. τῇ συνῳδίᾳ. "The caravan." The inhabitants of a village, or of several neighbouring villages, formed themselves into a caravan, and travelled together. The Nazareth caravan was so long that it took a whole day to look through it. The caravans went up singing psalms, especially the "songs of degrees" (Ps. cxx.–cxxxiv.): but they would come back with less solemnity. It was probably when the caravan halted for the night that He was missed. At the present day the women commonly start first, and the men follow; the little children being with the mothers, and the older with either. If this was the case then, Mary might fancy that He was with Joseph, and Joseph that He was with Mary. Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 56.

ἡμέρας ὀδὼν. In LXX ὀδὼν ἡμέρας (Num. xi. 31; 1 Kings xix. 4). Comp. ποτέλαν ἡμέρας μᾶς (Jon. iii. 4). The compound ἀνειθῆναν expresses thoroughness (Acts xi. 25; Job iii. 4, x. 6; 2 Mac. xiii. 21).

συγγενεῖσιν. A barbarous form of dat. plur. found also Mk. vi. 4 and 1 Mac. x. 89. For γεωργοῖς see on xxiii. 49.
45. μὴ εὑρόντες. "Because they did not find": see on iii. 9.

—ὑπέστρεψαν ἀναζητοῦντες. The turning back was a single act, the seeking continued a long time. Comp. Mk. viii. 11, x. 2. In such cases the pres. part. is not virtually fut., as if it meant "in order to seek." The seeking was present directly the turning back took place. Win. xlv. r. b, p. 429. For ὑπέστρεψαν see small print on i. 56, and for ἐγένετο see detached note after ch. i.

46. ἡμέρας τρεῖς. These are reckoned in three ways. (1) One day out, at the end of which the Child is missed; one day back; and on the third the finding. This is probably correct. (2) One day's search on the journey back; one day's search in Jerusalem; and on the third the finding. (3) Two days' search in Jerusalem, and then the finding. This is improbable. Jerusalem was not a large place, and less than a day would probably suffice. We may understand that on all three days Jesus was in the temple with the doctors. Godet conjectures that He there had an experience similar to that of Jacob at Bethel (Gen. xxviii. 10-22): "God became more intimately His God, His Father." There is no evidence.

ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ. Not in a synagogue, if there was one in the temple enclosure, but probably on the terrace, where members of the Sanhedrin gave public instruction on sabbaths and festivals. If this is correct, His parents had left on the third day, and the Passover was still going on. If all had been over, this public teaching would have ceased.

καθήζομενον. As a learner, not as a teacher. St. Paul sat "at the feet of Gamaliel" (Acts xxii. 3). Jesus probably sat on the ground, while the Rabbis sat on benches or stood.—ἐν μέσῳ. See on viii. 7. Not dignitatis causā (Beng.) or as doctor doctorum (Calov.), but because there were teachers on each side, possibly in a semicircle. The point is that He was not hidden, but where He could easily be found. For a list of distinguished persons who may have been present, see Farrar, L. of Christ, i. ch. vi., from Sepp, Leben Jesu, i. § 17. Of biblical personages, Symeon, Gamaliel, Annas, Caiaphas, Nicodemus, and Joseph of Arimathea are possibilities.

ἀκούοντα αὐτῶν καὶ ἐπερωτῶντα αὐτῶν. Note that the hearing is placed first, indicating that He was there as a learner; and it was as such that He questioned them. It was the usual mode of instruction that the pupil should ask as well as answer questions. A holy thirst for knowledge, especially of sacred things, would prompt His inquiries. The Arabic Gospel of the Infancy represents Him as instructing them in the statutes of the Law and the mysteries of the Prophets, as well as in astronomy, medicine, physics, and metaphysics (l.—lii.). See on iii. 10.

47. ἐξίσταντο. A strong word expressing great amazement:
viii. 56; Acts ii. 7, 12, viii. 13, ix. 21. For ἐπὶ comp. Wisd. v. 2 and the ἐπὶ which Lk. commonly uses after θαυμάζεως (see on ver. 33); and for πάντες οἱ ἀκούοντες see on i. 66.—συνέσει. “Intelligence”; an application of the σοφία with which He was ever being filled (ver. 40): see Lft. on Col. i. 9.—ἀποκρίσεως. His replies would show His wonderful intellectual and spiritual development. The vanity of Josephus (Vita, 2) and of Bellarmine (Vita, pp. 28–30, ed. Döllinger und Reusch, Bonn, 1887) leads them to record similar amazement respecting themselves.

48. ἰδοντες. Return to the original subject, οἱ γονεῖς.—ἐξε-πλάγγασαν. Another strong expression: ix. 43; Acts xiii. 12. They were astonished at finding Him there, and thus occupied, apparently without thought of them.

ἡ μὴταρ αὐτῶ. It was most natural that she should be the first to speak. Her reproachful question perhaps contains in it a vein of self-reproach. She and Joseph had appeared to be negligent.

ζητοῦμεν. “Are seeking”: the pain of the anxiety has not yet quite ceased. For καὶ ἕγο see on xvi. 9.

B read ζητοῦμεν, which WH. adopt. Almost all other editors follow almost all other authorities in reading ζητοῦμεν.

ὁδυνώμενοι. “In great anguish” of mind, as in Acts xx. 38 and Zech. xii. 10; of body and mind, xvi. 24, 25; comp. Rom. ix. 2; 1 Tim. vi. 10. The ῥομφαία (ver. 35) has already begun its work. Anguish cannot be reasonable. But they might have been sure that the Child who was to be the Messiah could not be lost. This agrees with ver. 50.

49. τι ὤν ἐξητείτε με; Not a reproof, but an expression of surprise: comp. Mk. ii. 16. He is not surprised at their coming back for Him, but at their not knowing where to find Him.

Here also B has the pres. ἐξητείτε.

ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρὸς μου. “Engaged in My Father’s business” is a possible translation: comp. τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ (Mt. xvi. 23; Mk. viii. 33); τὰ τοῦ Κυρίου (1 Cor. vii. 32, 34). But “in My Father’s house” is probably right, as in Gen. xli. 51. Irenæus (Hist. v. 36. 2) paraphrases the ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ of Jn. xiv. 2 by ἐν τοῖς Ἀμαν (Esth. vii. 9); ἐν τοῖς αὐτῶν (Job xviii. 19); τὰ Δύκωνος (Theoc. ii. 76). Other illustrations in Wetst. Arm. and Diatess-Tat. have in domo patris mei. The words indicate His surprise that His parents did not know where to find Him. His Father’s business could have been done elsewhere. There is a gentle but decisive correction of His Mother’s words, “Thy father and I,” in the reply, “Where should a child be (δι), but in his father’s house? and My Father is God.” For the δι see on iv. 43. It is notable that the first recorded words of the Messiah are an expression of His Divine-
Sonship as man; and His question implies that they knew it, or ought to know it. But there is nothing which implies that He had just received a revelation of this relationship. These first recorded words are the kernel of the whole narrative, and the cause of its having been preserved. They must mean more than that Jesus is a son of Abraham, and therefore has God as His Father. His parents would easily have understood so simple a statement as that.

50. ὃς συνήκαν τὸ ἰημα. Ergo non ex illis hoc didicerat (Beng.). There is nothing inconsistent in this. They learnt only gradually what His Messiahship involved, and this is one stage in the process. From the point of view of her subsequent knowledge, Mary recognized that at this stage she and Joseph had not understood. This verse, especially when combined with the next, shows clearly who was the source of Lk.’s information.1 Comp. ix. 45 and xviii. 34.

51. ἂν ὑποτασσόμενος. This sums up the condition of the Messiah during the next seventeen years. The analytical tense gives prominence to the continuance of the subjection: comp. i. 18, 20, 21. For ὑποτασσόμενος comp. x. 17, 20.

ἀδώτος. The last mention of Joseph. He was almost certainly dead before Christ’s public ministry began; but this statement of continued subjection to him and Mary probably covers some years. The main object of the statement, however, may be to remove the impression that in His reply (ver. 49) Jesus resents, or henceforward repudiates, their authority over Him. Comp. Ign. Magn. xiii.

διενηρέω. Expresses careful and continual keeping. Gen. xxxvii. 11 is a close parallel: comp. Acts xv. 29. We must not confine πάντα τὰ ἰηματα to vv. 48, 49; the phrase is probably used in the Hebraistic sense of “things spoken of.” Comp. i. 65, ii. 19; Acts v. 32: but in all these cases “sayings” is more possible than here. Still more so in Dan. vii. 28: τὸ ἰημα ἐν τῷ καρδίᾳ μου διενηρόσα [Ῥσυνενήρόσα]. Syr-Sin. omits “in her heart.”

52. The verse is very similar to 1 Sam. ii. 26, of which it is perhaps a quotation. See Athan. Con. Arian. iii. 51, p. 203, ed. Bright; Card. Newman, Select Treatises of S. Athan. i. p. 419; Wace & Schaff, p. 421; Pearson, On the Creed, art. iii. p. 160.

1 ἵνα. The growth is very clearly marked throughout: τὸ βρέφος (ver. 16); τὸ παιδόν (ver. 40); ἵνα ὁ παῖς (ver. 43); ἵνα (ver. 52). Non statim plena statura, ut Protoplasti, apparet: sed omnes sitatis gradus sanctificavit. Senectus cùm non decebat (Beng.). Schaff, The Person of Christ, pp. 10-17, Nisbet, 1880.

1 “This fine tender picture, in which neither truth to nature, nor the beauty which that implies, is violated in a single line, . . . cannot have been devised by human hands, which, when left to themselves, were always betrayed into coarseness and exaggeration, as shown by the apocryphal gospels” (Keim, Jes. of Naz., Eng tr. ii. p. 137).
II. 52.] THE GOSPEL OF THE INFANCY

II. 52.

Here only in the Gospels, and elsewhere in N.T. only in S. Paul (Rom. xiii. 12; Gal. i. 14; 2 Tim. ii. 16, iii. 9, 13). The metaphor probably comes from pioneers cutting in front; but some refer it to lengthening by hammering. Hence the meaning of "promote": but more often it is intransitive, as always in N.T. Actual growth is expressed by the word, and to explain it of progressive manifestation is inadequate. Hooker, Eccl. Pol. bk. v. 53. 1–3.

σοφία. Not "knowledge" but "wisdom," which includes knowledge: it is used of the wisdom of the Egyptians (Acts vii. 22). Jesus was capable of growth in learning; e.g. He increased in learning through experience in suffering: ἐμαθεν ἀδικίαν ἐπὶ ἑπταθεν (Heb. v. 8, where see Westcott's notes).

ηλικία. Not "age," which is probably the meaning xii. 25 and Mt. vi. 27, but would be rather an empty truism here. Rather, "stature," as in xix. 3: justam proceritatem nactus est ac decoram (Beng.). His intellectual and moral growth (σοφία), as well as His physical growth (ηλικία), was perfect. The προέκοπτε ηλικία corresponds to ἐμεγαλύνετο (in some copies ἐπορεύετο μεγαλυνόμενον) in 1 Sam. ii. 26. See Martensen, Chr. Dogm. § 142.

χάρις. "Goodwill, favour, loving-kindness" (ver. 40, i. 30; Acts iv. 33, vii. 10): see on iv. 22. That He advanced in favour with God plainly indicates that there was moral and spiritual growth. At each stage He was perfect for that stage, but the perfection of a child is inferior to the perfection of a man; it is the difference between perfect innocence and perfect holiness. He was perfectly (τελέσας) man, as set forth in the Council of Constantinople (A.D. 381) against Apollinaris, who held that in Jesus the Divine Logos was a substitute for a human soul. In that case an increase in σοφία and in χάρις παρὰ Θεῷ would have been inconceivable, as Pearson points out (On the Creed, art. iii. p. 160; comp. E. Harold Browne, Exp. of the XXXIX. Articles, iv. 2. 4).

καὶ ἄνθρωπος. Nothing of the kind is said of John (i. 66, 80); his sternness and his retirement into the desert prevented it. But an absolutely perfect human being living among men could not fail to be attractive until His public ministry brought Him into collision with their prejudices and sins. Comp. what Josephus says of the development of Moses (Ant. ii. 9. 6); also the promise made in Prov. iii. 4 to him who keeps mercy and truth: "so shalt

1 Pearson in a long note gives the chief items of evidence as to the primitive belief that Is. liii. 2, 3 was to be understood literally of the personal appearance of Jesus as "a personage no way amiable; an aspect, indeed, rather uncomely," . . . "But what the aspect of His outward appearance was, because the Scriptures are silent, we cannot now know" (On the Creed, art. ii. pp. 87, 88).

Lange has some good remarks on the "master-stroke of Divine wisdom" which caused Jesus to be brought up at Nazareth (L. of Christ, Eng. tr. i. pp. 317, 324).
thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and man"—ἐνώπιον Κυρίου καὶ ἀνθρώπων.

For answers to the objections urged by Strauss against the historical character of this narrative see Hase, Gesch. Jesu, § 28, p. 280, ed. 1891.

III. 1-IX. 50. THE MINISTRY.

III. 1-22. The External Preparation for the Ministry of the Christ: the Ministry of John the Baptist, Mt. iii. 1-12; Mk. i. 1-8; Jn. i. 15-28.

Hic quasi scena N.T. panditur is Bengel's illuminative remark. "It was the glory of John the Baptist to have revived the function of the prophet" (Ecce Homo, p. 2); and it is difficult for us to realize what that meant. A nation, which from Samuel to Malachi had scarcely ever been without a living oracle of God, had for three or four centuries never heard the voice of a Prophet. It seemed as if Jehovah had withdrawn from His people. The breaking of this oppressive silence by the voice of the Baptist caused a thrill through the whole Jewish population throughout the world. Lk. shows his appreciation of the magnitude of the crisis by the sixfold attempt to give it an exact date. Of the four Evangelists he is the only one to whom the title of historian in the full sense of the term can be given; and of Christian writers he is the first who tries to fit the Gospel history into the history of the world. It is with a similar wish to do justice to a crisis that Thucydides gives a sixfold date of the entry of the Thebans into Platæa, by which the thirty years' truce was manifestly broken (ii. 2; comp. v. 20).

The section is carefully arranged. First the Date (1, 2); then a Description of the new Prophet (3-6); then an account of his Preaching and its Effects (7-17); and an Explanation as to how it came to an End (18-20). He baptizes the Christ (21, 22).

1, 2. The Date. The event that is thus elaborately dated is the appearance of the new Prophet, not the beginning of Christ's ministry. See below on the conclusion of ver. 2. Ellicott considers it the date of the captivity of the Baptist. This had been advocated by Wieseler in his Synopsis (ii. ch. ii. Eng. tr. p. 178), but he abandoned it in his Beiträge. Others would make it refer to Christ's baptism, which may have followed closely
upon John's first appearance as a preacher (Caspari, *Chron. Einl.* § 33, Eng. tr. p. 42). But the interval between the beginning of John's ministry and his baptizing Jesus cannot be determined. Some estimate it at one month, others at six months, because John was six months older than Jesus (Lewin, *Fasti Sacri*, 1171). Weiss (*Leben Jesu*, I. ii. 8, Eng. tr. i. p. 316) shows that the interval was not more than six months. The appearance of one who seemed to be a Prophet soon attracted immense attention; and when large numbers accepted his doctrine and baptism, it became imperative that the hierarchy should make inquiry as to his authority and claims. But it appears from Jn. i. 19-28 that the first investigation made by the Sanhedrin was about the time when the Baptist met Jesus. In neither case can year or time of year be determined. If Jesus was born towards the end, John about the middle, of 749 (B.C. 5), then John might begin to preach about the middle of 779, and Jesus be baptized early in 780 (A.D. 27).

It is little or no confirmation of this result that both the Greek and the Roman Churches celebrate the Baptism of Christ on Jan. 6th. Originally, the Nativity, the Visit of the Magi, and the Baptism were all celebrated on Jan. 6th. When Dec. 25th was adopted as the date of the Nativity, the Roman Church continued to celebrate the Baptism with the Epiphany to the Gentiles on Jan. 6th, while the Greek Church transferred the latter along with the Nativity to Dec. 25th, commemorating the Baptism alone on Jan. 6th. The fact that both the Eastern and the Western Church have concurred in celebrating the Baptism on Jan. 6th seems at first sight to be imposing testimony. But there is little doubt that all trustworthy evidence had perished before any of these dates were selected. 1

Instead of the elaborate dates given in these first two verses, Mt. (iii. 1) has simply 'Ev ev ταῖς ἡμεραῖς εὕρεται, while Mk. (i. 4) has nothing. Comp. the somewhat similar dating of the erection of Solomon's temple (1 Kings vi. 1). Beng. says of this date, Ἐποχὰ εὐκλείου τῶν ἱερων. Εἰς τοὺς χρόνους τῆς Καισαρείας. Νε nativitatis quidem, aut mortis, resurrectionis, ascensionis christi tempus tam praece definitur.

1. 'Εν άτε τέντεκαδεκάτῳ τῆς ᾿Ηγεμονίας Τιβερίου Καίσαρος. He naturally begins with the Roman Empire, and then takes the local governors, civil and ecclesiastical. "Now in the 15th year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar," or "of Tiberius as Cæsar." Is the 15th year to be counted from the death of Augustus, Aug. 19th, A.U.C. 767, A.D. 14? or from the time when he was associated with Augustus as joint ruler at the end of 764 or beginning of 765, A.D. 11 or 12? It is impossible to determine this with certainty. Good authorities (Zumpt, Wieseler, Weiss) plead for the latter reckoning, which makes the Gospel chronology as a whole run more smoothly; but it is intrinsically less probable,

1 For the chief data respecting the limits of our Lord's life see Lk. *Biblical Essays*, p. 58, note; and on Lk.'s chronology in these verses see Ewald, *Hist. of Israel*, vi., Eng. tr. p. 149, and Lange. *L. of C.* bk. ii. pt. iii. § 1, i. p. 342.
and seems to be inconsistent with the statements of Tacitus and Suetonius. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 405.

The main points are these. 1. Tiberius was not joint Emperor with Augustus; he was associated with him only in respect of the provinces and armies: *ut provincias cum Augusto communiter administraret, simulque censum ageret* (Suet. Tib. xxi.); *ut quum ei jus in omnibus provinciis exercitibusque esset* (Vell. Paterc. ii. 121); *filius, collega imperii, consors triumviorum protestatis adsunmitur, omnisque per exercitus ostentatur* (Tac. Ann. i. 3. 3; comp. i. 11. 2 and iii. 56. 2). 2. It is clear from Tacitus (Ann. i. 5-7) that, when Augustus died, Tiberius was not regarded by himself or by others as already Emperor. Suetonius confirms this by saying that Tiberius, while manifestly getting the imperial power into his hands, for a time refused the offer of it (Tib. xxiv.). 3. No instance is known of reckoning the reign of Tiberius from his association with Augustus. The coins of Antioch, Lk.'s own city, which helped to convert Wieseler from the one view to the other by seeming to date the reign of Tiberius from the association, are not admitted by Eckhel to be genuine. On the other hand, there are coins of Antioch which date the reign of Tiberius from the death of Augustus. It remains, therefore, that, although to reckon from the association was a possible method, especially in the provinces, for there Tiberius had been really a consort of Augustus, yet it is more probable that Lk. reckons in the usual way from the death of the predecessor (see Wieseler, Chron. Synop. ii. ch. ii.; Keim, Jesus of Naz. ii. pp. 381, 382; Lewin, Fasti Sacn', 1044; Sanday, Fourth Gospel, p. 65). Fifteen years from the death of Augustus would be A.D. 29, at which time our Lord would probably be 32 years of age, which sufficiently agrees with Lk.'s "about 30" (ver. 23). If the earlier date is admissible, the agreement becomes exact.

ήγεμονίας. Quite a vague term, and applicable to the rule of emperor, king, legatus, or procurator, as is shown by Jos. Ant. xviii. 4. 2, and by the use of ἥγεμων in N.T.: xx. 20, xxi. 12; Acts xxiii. 24, 26, 33, etc. Wieseler is alone in seeing in this word (instead of μοναρχία), and in καίσαρ (instead of Σεβαστός), evidence that the co-regency of Tiberius is meant (Beiträge z. richtigen Würdigung d. Evan. 1869, pp. 191-194). From the Emperor Lk. passes to the local governor under him.

ήγεμονεύοντος. The more exact ἐπιτροπεύοντος of D and other authorities is an obvious correction to mark his office with precision: ἐπιτροπος = procurator. Pilate succeeded Valerius Gratus A.D. 25, and was recalled A.D. 36 or 37 by Tiberius, who died, March A.D. 37, before Pilate reached Rome. Having mentioned the Roman officials, Lk. next gives the local national rulers.

tετραρχόντων. The word occurs nowhere else in N.T., but is used by Josephus of Philip, tetrarch of Trachonitis (B. J. iii. 10. 7). The title tetrarch was at first used literally of the governor of a fourth; e.g. of one of the four provinces of Thessaly (Eur. Alc. 1154), or one of the fourths into which each of the three divisions of Galatia were divided (Strabo, 430, 540, 560, 567). But afterwards it came to mean the governor of any division, as a third or a half, or of any small country; any ruler not a βασιλεύς (Hor.
Sat. i. 3. 12). Such seems to be the meaning here; but it may be used in its literal sense, Pilate's province representing the fourth tetrarchy, viz. the dominions of Archelaus.

In the we have the singular rendering: in anno quintodecimo ducatus Tiberi Caesaris procurante Pontio Pilato Judæam, quaterducatus Galilææ Herode.

'Ἡρῴδευς. Antipas, son of Herod the Great and Malthace the Samaritan. See small print on i. 5 for the iota subscript. Two inscriptions have been found, one at Cos and one at Delos, which almost certainly refer to him as tetrarch, and son of Herod the king (Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. I vol. ii. p. 17). His coins have the title tetrarch, and, like those of his father, bear no image. Herod Philip was the first to have any portrait on the coins of a Jewish prince. He had the images of Augustus and Tiberius put upon his coins. As his dominions were wholly heathen, this would cause little scandal. He even went so far as to put the temple of Augustus at Pæans on his coins. Herod Antipas was made tetrarch of Peræa and Galilee, B.C. 4 (Jos. Ant. xvii. 11. 4; B. J. ii. 6. 3). As he ruled this district until A.D. 39 or 40, the whole of Christ's life falls within his reign, and nearly the whole of Christ's ministry took place within his dominions. For his character see on xiii. 32. He was by courtesy allowed the title of βασιλεύς (Mk. vi. 14); and as Agrippa had obtained this by right, Antipas and Herodias went to Rome, A.D. 39, to try and get the courtesy title made a real one by Caligula. The attempt led to his banishment, the details of which are uncertain, for Josephus makes inconsistent statements. Either he was banished at Baiae, A.D. 39, to Lugdunum (Ant. xviii. 7. 2), or he had a second audience with Caligula at Lugdunum, A.D. 40, and was banished to Spain (B. J. ii. 9. 6). The latter is probably correct (Lewin, Fasti Sacri, 1561). But see Farrar, Herods, p. 178.

Φιλιππαῖος. Herod Philip, son of Herod the Great and Cleopatra. He reigned for nearly 37 years, B.C. 4 to A.D. 33, when he died at Julias, which he had built and named in honour of the infamous Julia, d. of Augustus and wife of Tiberius. He was the builder of Cæsarea Philippi (B. J. ii. 9. 1), and was the best of the Herods (Ant. xviii. 4. 6). He married his niece Salome soon after she had danced for the head of the Baptist, c. A.D. 31 (Ant. xviii. 5. 4). Trachonitis (τραχών = τραχός καὶ πετρώδης τόπος) derived its name from the rugged character of the country. It lay N.E. of Galilee in the direction of Damascus, and its inhabitants were skilled archers and very often banditti (Ant. xv. 10. 1). The expression τῆς Ἰττ. καὶ Τρ. χώρας, "the region of Ituraea and Trachonitis," seems to indicate that more than these two is included; probably Auranitis and Batanea. Ἰτωραία, both here and perhaps everywhere, is an adjective. Farrar, p. 164.
Λυσανίου τῆς Ἀβιληνίης τετραχ. Not merely Strauss, Gfrörer, B. Bauer, and Hilgenfeld, but even Keim and Holtzmann, attribute to Lk. the gross chronological blunder of supposing that Lysanias, son of Ptolemy, who ruled this region previous to B.C. 36, when he was killed by M. Antony, is still reigning 60 years after his death. Such a mistake is very improbable; and the only difficulty about Lk.'s statement is that we have no indisputable evidence of this tetrarch Lysanias.

But 1. Lysanias, son of Ptolemy, was styled king and not tetrarch, and the seat of his kingdom was Chalced in Coele-Syria, not Abila in Abilene. 2. It is pure assumption that no one of his name ever ruled in these parts afterwards. 3. Josephus (Ant. xix. 5. 1) speaks of "Abila of Lysanias," and (xx. 7. 1) of a tetrarchy of Lysanias (comp. B. F. ii. 11. 5. 12. 8); and as the son of Ptolemy was not called tetrarch, nor was connected with Abila, and, moreover, reigned for only 5 or 6 years, it is improbable that "Abila of Lysanias" was called after him. Therefore these passages in Josephus confirm rather than oppose Lk. 4. A medal found by Pococke designates Lysanias "tetrarch and high priest." If this refers to either, it is more likely to refer to Lk.'s Lysanias. 5. Two inscriptions exist, one of which proves that Lysanias, the son of Ptolemy, left children; the other, that at the time when Tiberius was associated with Augustus there was a "tetrarch Lysanias" (Boeckh, Corp. inscr. Gr. 4523, 4521). See Davidson, Intr. to N.T. i. pp. 214-221, 1st ed.; Rawlinson, Bampton Lectures for 1859, p. 203; Wieseler in Herzog, i. pp. 87-89; and the ref. in Thayer's Grimm under Λυσανίας.

2. ἐπὶ ἄρχερεως Ἀννα καὶ Καίαφα. Lk. now passes to the ecclesiastical rulers. The singular is probably not accidental, and certainly not ironical. "Under the high priest Annas-Caiaphas," which means that between them they discharged the duties, or that each of them in different senses was regarded high priest, Annas de jure (Acts iv. 6) and Caiaphas de facto (Jn. xi. 49).

Annas had held office A.D. 7-14, when he had been deposed by Valerius Gratus, the predecessor of Pilate, who set up in succession Ismael, Eleazar (son of Annas), Simon, and Joseph surnamed Caiaphas, who held office A.D. 18-36, when he was deposed by Vitellius. Four more sons of Annas succeeded Caiaphas, the last of whom (another Annas) put to death James the "brother of the Lord" and the first bishop of Jerusalem. It is manifest that Annas retained very great influence, and sometimes acted as high priest. "Annas the high priest was there, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest" (Acts iv. 6). Perhaps, so far as it was safe to do so, he was encouraged to ignore the Roman appointments and to continue in office during the high priesthoods of his successors. This would be especially easy when his own son-in-law or son happened to be the Roman nominee.1 There were no less than twenty-eight high priests from the time of Herod the Great to the capture of Jerusalem by Titus (Jos. Ant. xx. 10).

ἔγένετο ῥῆμα θεοῦ ἐπὶ ἰωάννην. It is clear from this that what Lk. is anxious to date with precision is not any event in the life of the Messiah, but the appearance of the new Prophet, who was

1 Josephus says that David appointed Zadok high priest μετ' Ἀβαθδρου, φίλου γὰρ ήν αὐτῷ (Ant. vii. 5. 4). See Lft. Biblical Essays, p. 163.
to be the Messiah's herald, and who was by some mistaken for
the Messiah. John's preaching and baptizing is an epoch with
Lk. (Acts i. 22, x. 37, xiii. 24). As distinct from δ λόγος τοῦ
Θεοῦ, which means the Gospel message as a whole (see on
viii. 11), ἀφήμα Θεοῦ means some particular utterance (Mt. iv. 4;
comp. Lk. xxii. 61). The phrase γίνεσθαι ἀφήμα Κυρίου (not Θεοῦ)
is freq. in LXX (Gen. xv. 1; 1 Sam. xv. 10; 2 Sam. vii. 4; 1 Kings
xvii. 2, 8, xviii. 1, xx. 28, etc.); also γίνεσθαι λόγον Κυρίου (2 Sam.
xxiv. 11; 1 Kings vi. 11, xii. 22, xiii. 20, xvi. 1, etc.). It is the
O.T. formula to express Divine inspiration. In such cases the
phrase is almost always followed by πρός: but in 1 Chron. xxii. 8 (?)
and Jer. i. 1 we have ἐπί. Jer. i. 1 is a close parallel to this: τὸ
ἀφήμα τοῦ Θεοῦ ὁ ἐγένετο ἐπὶ Ιερεμίαν. The phrase occurs nowhere
else in N.T.

Ἰωάννην τὸν Ζαχαρίου τιόν. Lk. alone describes the Baptist thus.
No other N.T. writer mentions Zacharias.—ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ. The one
mentioned as his abode (i. 80). Both AV. and RV. rather obscure
this by using "deserts" in i. 80 and "wilderness" here. Mt. calls
it "the wilderness of Judaea" (iii. 1). It is the Jeshimon of 1 Sam.

3-6. Description of the New Prophet. Lk. omits the state­
ments about his dress and food (Mt. iii. 4; Mk. i. 6), and also the
going out of the people of Jerusalem and Judaea to him (Mt. iii. 5;
Mk. i. 5). The famous account of the Baptist in Jos. Ant. xviii.
5. 2 should be compared. It may have been altered by Christian
scribes, but its divergence from the Gospel narrative as to the
motive for imprisoning and killing John, is in favour of its origin­
ality.1 See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 240.

3. πᾶσαν περιχώρων τοῦ ἱορδάνου. The same as "the plain
of Jordan," which is thus rendered in LXX Gen. xiii. 10, 11; by τῷ
περιχώρῳ τοῦ 'Ι, 2 Chron. iv. 17; and by τῷ περιοίκῳ τοῦ 'Ι., 1
Kings vii. 46. The expression covers a considerable portion of
the Jordan valley at least as far north as Succoth (2 Chron. iv. 17).
The Baptist, therefore, moved north from the limestone desert on
the W. shore of the Dead Sea, and perhaps went almost the whole
length of the valley to the confines of the Sea of Galilee. For
"Bethany (Beth-Anijah = 'House of Shipping') beyond Jordan"
must have been near Galilee (Jn. i. 28), and is supposed by
Conder to be the same as Bashan (Handbook of the Bible, pp. 315;
320). See, however, D.B.2 art. "Bethabara." John was some­
times on one bank and sometimes on the other, for we read of his
working in Peræa (Jn. x. 40). His selection of the valley of the

1 "This part of John's ministry, viz. his work as a reformer, Josephus has
brought out prominently; while he has entirely failed to notice the indelible
stamp of the Baptist's labours left upon the history of the Theocracy" (Neander,
L.F.C. § 34).
Jordan as his sphere of work was partly determined by the need of water for immersion. Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 312.

κηρύσσων...διαρρηκτῶν. Verbatim as Mk. i. 4. Nowhere in N.T. has κηρύσσων its primary meaning of “act as a herald”; but either “proclaim openly” (viii. 39, xii. 3; Mk. i. 45, etc.) or “preach the Gospel” (Mt. xi. 1; Mk. iii. 14; Rom. x. 14, 15, etc.). To “preach baptism” is to preach the necessity or value of baptism; and “repentance baptism” (βάπτισμα μετανοιας) is baptism connected with repentance as being an external symbol of the inward change (Acts xiii. 24, xix. 4). The repentance precedes the baptism, which seals it and reminds the baptized of his new obligations. To submit to this baptism was to confess that one was a sinner, and to pledge oneself to a new life. The “change of mind” has reference both to past deeds and to future purposes, and is the result of a realization of their true moral significance (Wcscott. on Heb. vi. 1, 6, xii. 17). This inward change is specially insisted upon in the account of John's preaching in Jos. Ant. xvii. 5. 2. The word is rare in Mt. (iii. 8, 11) and Mk. (i. 4), and does not occur in Jn. It is freq. in Lk. (ver. 8, v. 32, xv. 7, xxiv. 47; Acts v. 31, xi. 18, etc.). We find it in Jos. Ant. xiii. 11. 3 of Aristobulus after the murder of his brother; in Plut. Pericles, x., of the Athenians after the banishment of Cimon; and in Thuc. iii. 36. 3 of the Athenians after the sentence on Mitylene. See American Ch. Rev. No. 134, pp. 143 ff. John’s “repentance baptism” was εἰς ἀφεσιν διαρρηκτῶν. This was its purpose, assuring the penitent of forgiveness, and of deliverance from the burden, penalty, and bondage of sin (Trench, Syn. xxxiii.; Crem. Lex. p. 297: comp. Lk. i. 77; Acts ii. 38; Heb. x. 18).

4. είνα διδάχας λόγον. With the exception of Phil. iv. 3, είνα διδάχας is peculiar to Lk. (xx. 42; Acts i. 20, vii. 42). The form διδάχας is usual where the meaning is a writing or document, διδάκτος where the plant or papyrus as writing material is intended (Hdt. ii. 96. 3, v. 58. 3). For λόγον in the sense of the “utterances of a teacher or prophet” comp. Acts xx. 35; Amos i. 1.

φωνῇ βοῶτος...τὰς τριβοὺς αὐτοῦ. From Mt. iii. 3 and Mk. i. 3 we see that, in the tradition of which all three make use, these words were quoted as applying to the Baptist. This is therefore a primitive interpretation; and we learn from Jn. i. 23 that it originated with the Baptist himself. John was a φωνῇ making known the Λόγος. “The whole man was a sermon.” The message was more than the messenger, and hence the messenger is regarded

1 Lactantius, in writing de Penitentia prefers resipiscantia as a better, although still inadequate, rendering. Is enim quem facti sui peccavit, errorem suum pristimum intelligit; ideoque Graeci melius et significatius resipiscantia dixerunt; quam nos latinae possimus resipiscantiam dicere. Resipisci enim suam meminisse quasi ab insania recipit, etc. (Div. Inst. vi. 24. 6).
as mainly a voice. Jn. has εἰθονάτε for εἴθειας ποιεῖτε (i. 23), and 
Lk. quotes Is. xl. 4, 5 as well as xl. 3, and 
here slightly varies from LXX, having εἴθειας for εἴθειαν, and ai 
τραχείας εἰς δόξος λείας for η τραχεία εἰς πεῦδα.1

ἐν τῇ ἑρήμῳ. It is possible to take these words with ιτομάσατε 
rather than with φωνὴ βοῶτος: but here, as in Mt. and Mk., the 
latter arrangement is more natural—νοx clamantis in deserto. 
Barnabas (ix. 3) connects them with βοῶτος. It is evident from 
the scenery which is mentioned that it is in a desert that the road 
for the coming King has to be made. The details symbolize the 
moral obstacles which have to be removed by the repentance 
baptism of John, in order to prepare the people for the reception 
of the Messiah, or (as some prefer) of Jehovah (Is. xxxv. 8—10). 
That Lk. means the Messiah is shown by the substitution of αἰτονό 
for τοῦ Θεοῦ: and that this interpretation is in accordance with the 
primitive tradition is shown by the fact that all three Gospels have 
this substitution. Just as Oriental monarchs, when making a royal 
progress, send a courier before them to exhort the population to 
prepare roads, so the Messiah sends His herald to exhort His own 
pople (Jn. i. 11) to prepare their hearts for His coming.

5. φάραγ. "A valley shut in by precipices, a ravine"; here only in 
N.T., but found in LXX (Judith ii. 8) and in class. Grk. (Thuc. ii. 67. 4). 
It is perhaps from the same root as φαρδος=“plough” and foro=“bore.”

βουνός. Herodotus seems to imply that this is a Cyrenaic word (iv. 
199. 2): but it is freq. in later writers and in LXX. Comp. xxiii. 30, and 
for the sense Zech. iv. 7; Is. xl. 4.

ἐσται τὰ σκολιὰ εἰς, κ.τ.λ. “The crooked places shall become 
straight ways, and the rough ways smooth ways”: i.e. roads shall 
be made where there were none before, and bad roads shall be 
made good roads. Comp. the account of Vespasian’s march into 
Galilee, especially the work of the pioneers (Jos. B. J. iii. 6. 2).

6. πᾶσα σάρξ. Everywhere in N.T. this expression seems to 
refer to the human race only; so even Mt. xxiv. 22; Mk. xiii. 20; 
1 Pet. i. 24; comp. Acts ii. 17; Rom. iii. 20. Fallen man, mar. 
in his frailty and need of help, is meant. In LXX it often 
includes the brutes: Gen. vi. 19, vii. 15, 16, 21, viii. 17, ix. 11,

1 Ewald says of the prophecy of which these verses form the introduction, that 
“it is not only the most comprehensive, but also, in respect of its real prophetic 
subject-matter, the weightiest piece of that time, and altogether one of the most 
important portions of the O.T., and one of the richest in influence for all future 
time. . . . It is especially the thought of the passing away of the old time, 
and the flourishing of the new, which is the life of the piece” (Prophets of O.T., 
The phrase is one of many which occur frequently in Is. xli.-lxvi., but not at all in the earlier chapters (Driver, Isaiah, p. 197).

τὸ σωτηρίου. It was obviously for the sake of this declaration that Lk. continued the quotation thus far. That "the salvation of God" is to be made known to the whole human race is the main theme of his Gospel.

7-17. John's Preaching and its Effects. This section gives us the burden of his preaching ("Ἐλέησεν, imperf.) in accordance (οὕτως) with the character which has just been indicated. The herald who has to see that hearts are prepared for the Messiah must be stern with hypocrites and with hardened sinners, because the impenitent cannot escape punishment (7-9); must supply different treatment for different classes (10-14; comp. ver. 5); and must declare the certainty of his Master's coming and of its consequences (15-17).

7. Ἐλέησεν οὖν. "He used to say, therefore": being the predicted Forerunner, his utterances were of this character. We need not regard this as a report of what was said on any one occasion, but as a summary of what he was in the habit of saying during his ministry to the multitudes who came out of the towns and villages (ἐκπεριευμένοις) into the wilderness to hear the Prophet and gain something from him. Mt. (iii. 7) represents this severe rebuke as addressed to the Pharisees and Sadducees; which confirms the view that Lk. is here giving us the substance of the preaching rather than what John said on some particular day. What he said to some was also said to all; and as the salvation offered was universal, so also was the sin. This is thoroughly characteristic of Lk.

βαπτισθῆναι. As a substitute for repentance, or as some magical rite, which would confer a benefit on them independently of their moral condition. Their desire for his baptism showed their belief in him as a Prophet; otherwise the baptism would have been valueless (Jn. i. 25; comp. Zech. xiii. 1; Ezek. xxxvi. 25). Hence the indignation of John's disciples when they heard of Jesus baptizing, a rite which they regarded as their master's prerogative (Jn. iii. 26). The title δ' βαπτιστής or δ' βαπτίζων shows that his baptism was regarded as something exceptional and not an ordinary purification (Jos. Ant. xviii. 5. 2). Its exceptional character consisted in (1) its application to the whole nation, which had become polluted; (2) its being a preparation for the more perfect baptism of the Messiah. It is only when baptism is administered by immersion that its full significance is seen.

βαπτίζω is intensive from βάπτω, like βαλλω from βαλλω: βάπτω, "I dip"; βάπτιζω, "I immerse." Εὐνόμαι is "offspring" of animals or men (Ecclus. x. 18); "fruits" of the earth or of plants (Deut. xxviii. 4, 11, 18, 42, 5; Mt. xxvi. 29; Mk. xiv. 25; Lk. xxii. 18); "rewards" of righteousness (Hos. x. 12; 2 Cor. ix. 10).
Διαδικασία Σημαντικής Εξάρτησης

Genimina (Vulg.) or generatio (βιοδίαν) or progenies (αδέας) viperarum. In Mt. this is addressed to the Pharisees, first by John and afterwards by Jesus (iii. 7, xii. 34, xxiii. 33). It indicates another parentage than that of Abraham (Jn. viii. 44), and is perhaps purposely used in opposition to their trust in their descent: comp. Aesch. Cho. 249; Soph. Ant. 531. John’s metaphors, like those of the prophecy (ver. 5), are from the wilderness;—vipers, stones, and barren trees. It is from this stern, but fresh and undesecrated region, and not from the “Holy,” but polluted City, that the regenerating movement proceeds (Is. xii. 18). These serpent-like characters are the σκολιά that must be made straight. Comp. Ps. lviii. 4, cxl. 3.

οπτεθείσεν. “Suggested” by showing to eye or ear: vi. 47, xii. 5; Acts ix. 16, xx. 35; elsewhere in N.T. only Mt. iii. 7.

τῆς μελλούσης ὑψίστης. It is possible that this refers primarily to the national judgments involved in the destruction of Jerusalem and the banishment of the Jews (xxii. 23; 1 Mac. i. 64); but the penalties to be inflicted at the last day are probably included (Rom. i. 18, ii. 5, 8, iii. 5, v. 9). The Jews believed that the judgments of God, especially in connexion with the coming of the Messiah, as threatened by the Prophets (Joel ii. 31; Mal. iii. 2, iv. 1; Is. xiii. 9), were to be executed on the heathen. The Baptist proclaims that there is no such distinction. Salvation is for all who prepare their hearts to receive the Messiah; judgment, for all who harden their hearts and reject Him. Birth is of no avail.

8. ποιήσατε οὖν καρποὺς ἄξιος τ. μ. “If you desire to escape this wrath and to welcome the Messiah (οὖν), repent, and act at once (aor. imperat.) as those who repent.” Comp. xx. 24; Acts iii. 4, vii. 53, ix. 11, xvi. 9, xxxi. 39, xxii. 13; and see Win. xliii. 3 a, p. 393. Mt. has καρπόν (iii. 8), which treats the series of acts as a collective result. Comp. S. Paul’s summary of his own preaching, esp. ἀξεῖα τῆς μετανοίας ἐργα πράσασσας (Acts xxvi. 20).

It was a Rabbinical saying, “If Israel would repent only one day, the Son of David would come forthwith”; and again, “If Israel would observe only one sabbath according to the ordinance, forthwith would the Son of David come”; and, “All the stages are passed, and all depends solely on repentance and good works.”

The phrase πουλέων καρπῶν is not necessarily a Hebraism (Gen. i. 11, 12); it occurs [Arist.] De Plant. i. 4, p. 819, ii. 10, p. 829. Comp. Jas. iii. 12; Mk. iv. 32.

μὴ ἀρέσθητε. “Do not even begin to have this thought in your minds.” Omnem excusationis etiam conatum praecidit (Beng.). If there are any passages in which ἀρέσθητε with an infin. is a mere periphrasis for the simple verb (xx. 9), this is not one of them. See Win. lxv. 7 d, p. 767; Grim-Thay. p. 79; Fritzsche on Mt. xvi. 21, p. 539.—λέγειν ἐν έαυτοῖς. “To say within yourselves”
rather than "among yourselves." Comp. vii. 49 and λέγετε ἐν ταῖς καρδίαισιν ψυμών (Ps. iv. 5). For the perennial boast about their descent from Abraham comp. Jn. viii. 33, 53; Jas. ii. 21; 2 Esdr. vi. 56-58; Jos. Ant. iii. 5, 3; B. J. v. 9, 4; Wetst. on Mt. iii. 9.

ἐκ τῶν λίθων τούτων. There is a play upon words between "children" (banim) and "stones" (abanim). It was God who made Abraham to be the rock whence the Jews were hewn (Is. li. 1, 2); and out of the most unpromising material He can make genuine children of Abraham (Rom. iv., ix. 6, 7, xi. 13-24; Gal. iv. 21-31). The verb ἐγείραι is applicable to both stones and children.

9. ἦδη. "Although you do not at all expect it." The image of the axe is in harmony with that of the fruits (ver. 8). In the East trees are valued mainly for their fruit; and trees which produce none are usually cut down. "And even now also the axe is laid unto the root."

The πρὸς after καὶταί may be explained either, "is brought to the root and lies there"; or, "lies directed towards the root." In either case the meaning is that judgment is not only inevitable, but will come speedily: hence the presents, ἐκκόπτεται and βάλλεται.

The δέ καλ (in Mt. simply δέ) is Lk.'s favourite method of giving emphasis; ver. 12, ii. 4, iv. 41, v. 10, 36, ix. 61, x. 32, xi. 18, xii. 54, 57, xiv. 12, xvi. 1, 22, xviii. 9, xix. 19, xx. 12. For μὴ with a participle, expressing a reason or condition, comp. ii. 45, vii. 30, xi. 24, xii. 47, xxiv. 23; Acts ix. 26, xvii. 6, xxi. 34, xxvii. 7; and see Win. Iv. 5 (β), p. 607. For ἐκκόπτεται, "to cut off," of felling trees, comp. xiii. 7, 9; Hdt. ix. 97. 1. See notes on vi. 43.

10-14. John's Different Treatment of Different Classes. Peculiar to Lk., but probably from the same source as the preceding verses. It shows that, in levelling the mountains and raising the valleys, etc. (ver. 5), he did not insist upon any extraordinary penances or "counsels of perfection." Each class is to forsake its besetting sin, and all are to do their duty to their neighbour. The stern warnings of the Baptist made the rulers leave in disgust without seeking baptism at his hands (vii. 30; Mt. xxi. 25); but they made the multitude anxious to comply with the conditions for avoiding the threatened judgment.

10. ἐπιρρώτων. "Continually put this question." The notion of repetition comes from the imperf. and not, as in ἐπαιτεῖν (xvi. 3, xviii. 35), from the εἰ, which in ἐπερρώτων indicates the direction of the inquiry; Plato, Soph. 249 E, 250. Comp. ἐπεδόθη in iv. 17.

Τί σον ποιήσωμεν; "What then, if the severe things which thou sayest are true, must we do?" For the conjunctivus deliberativus comp. xxiii. 31; Mt. xxvi. 54; Mk. xii. 14; Jn. xii. 27; and see Win. xii. 4, b, p. 356; Matth. 515. 2; Arnold's Madvig, p. 99; Green, p. 150.

11. δύο χιτῶνας. The χιτῶν was the under and less necessary
garment, distinguished from the upper and almost indispensable μάλατον; vi. 29; Acts ix. 39; Mt. v. 40; Jn. xix. 23. When two of these χτένων were worn at once, the under one or shirt would be the Hebrew cetoneth, the upper would be the Hebrew meil, which was longer than the cetoneth. It was common for travellers to wear two (Jos. Ant. xvii. 5, 7); but Christ forbade the disciples to do so (ix. 3; Mt. x. 10). It is not implied here that the two are being worn simultaneously. See Trench, Syn. 1.; Conder, Handb. of B. p. 195; D.B. 2 art. “Dress”; Schaff’s Herzog, art. “Clothing and Ornaments of the Hebrews.” If the owner of two shirts is to “give a share” (μεταδότω), he will give one shirt. Comp. Rom. i. 11; xii. 8; and contrast Peter’s reply to the same question Acts ii. 37, 38. With regard to βρώματα, nothing is said or implied about having superfluity or abundance. He who has any food is to share it with the starving. Comp. 1 Thes. ii. 8.

This verse is one of those cited to support the view that Lk. is Ebionite in his sympathies, a view maintained uncompromisingly by Renan (Les Évangiles, ch. xiii.; V. de J. chs. x., xi.), and by Campbell (Critical Studies in St. Luke, p. 193). For the answer see Bishop Alexander (Leading Ideas of the Gospel, p. 170). Here it is to be noticed that it is Mt. and Mk. who record, while Lk. omits, the poor clothing and poor food of the Baptist himself; and that it is Mt. who represents his sternest words as being addressed to the wealthy Pharisees and Sadducees, while Lk. directs them against the multitudes generally.

12. τελώναι. From τέλη (Mt. xvii. 25; Rom. xiii. 7) and ὄνομα; so that etymologically τελώναι = publicani, “those who bought or farmed the taxes” under the Roman government. But in usage τελώναι = portiores, “those who collected the taxes” for the publicani. This usage is common elsewhere, and invariable in N.T. Sometimes, and perhaps often, there was an intermediate agent between the τελώναι and the publicani, e.g. ἀρχιτελώνης or magister (xix. 2).

These “tax-collectors” were detested everywhere, because of their oppressiveness and fraud, and were classed with the vilest of mankind: μικρὸι καὶ πορφοδοκοί καὶ τελώναι καὶ κόλακες καὶ συκοφάνται, καὶ τοιοῦτος δύσλος τῶν πάντα κυκώνων ἐν τῷ βίῳ (Lucian. Neysi. xii.; comp. Aristoph. Equit. 248; Theophr. Charac. vi.; Grotius, in loco; Wetst. on Mt. v. 46). The Jews especially abhorred them as bloodsuckers for a heathen conqueror. For a Jew to enter such a service was the most utter degradation. He was excommunicated, and his whole family was regarded as disgraced. But the Romans allowed the Herods to retain some powers of taxation; and therefore not all tax-collectors in Palestine were in the service of Rome. Yet the characteristic faults of the profession prevailed, whether the money was collected in the name of Caesar or of Herod; and what these were is indicated by the Baptist’s answer. See Lightfoot, Opera, i. pp. 324, 325; Herzog, PRE. 2 art. Zoll; Edersh. L. & T. 1. p. 515.

18. Διδάσκαλε. Publicani majore ceteris reverentia utuntur (Beng.). Syr-Sin. omits the word.

πλέον ταρά. For παρά after comparatives comp. Heb. i. 4, iii. 3, ix. 23,
The effect is to intensify the notion of excess: so also ἀποτελείν, xvi. 8; Heb. iv. 12.

tὸ διατεταγμένον. "That which stands prescribed" (perf.); a favourite word with Lk.: viii. 55; xvii. 9, 10; Acts vii. 44, xviii. 2, xx. 13, xxii. 31, xxiv. 23. Comp. disponere, verordnen. It is from the general meaning of "transacting business" that πράσσειν acquires the special sense of "exacting tribute, extorting money": comp. xix. 23. This use is found from Herodotus onwards: Hdt. iii. 58. 4; Αἰσχ. Cho. 311; Pers. 476; Εὔμ. 624; Xen. Anab. vii. 6. 17: comp. πράκτωρ, εἰσπράσσειν, ἐκπράσσειν, and many illustrations in Wetst. Agere is similarly used: publicum quadragesima in Asia eit (Suet. Vesp. i.); but what follows is of interest as showing how rare an honourable publicanus was: manebatque imaginés in civitátibus ei posté sub hoc titulo ΚΑΛΩΣ ΤΕΛΩΝΗ-ΣΑΝΤΙ. This is said of Sabinus, father of Vespasian. After farming the quadragesima tax in Asia he was a money-lender among the Helvetii. It is to be noticed that the Baptist does not condemn the calling of a tax-collector as unlawful for a Jew. He assumes that these τελόναι will continue to act as such.

14. οὐράτωμενοι. "Men on service, on military duty"; mili­lantes rather than milites (Vulg.). In 2 Tim. ii. 4, οὐδείς οὐρατω­μενος is rightly rendered nemo militans. Who these "men on service" were cannot be determined; but they were Jewish soldiers and not Roman, and not on service in the war between Antipas and his father-in-law Aretas about the former's repudiation of the latter's daughter in order to make room for Herodias. That war took place after the Baptist's death (Jos. Ant. xviii. 5. 2), two or three years later than this, and probably A.D. 32 (Lewin, Fasti Sacri, 1171, 1412). These οὐρατωμενοι were possibly gendarmerie, soldiers acting as police, perhaps in support of the tax-collectors. Such persons, as some modern nations know to their cost, have great opportunities for bullying and delation. By their καὶ ἡμεῖς they seem to connect themselves with the τελόναι, either as knowing that they also were unpopular, or as expecting a similar answer from John.

Μηδένα διασείωτης. Like concutio, διαιεῖω is used of intimidation, especially of intimidating to extort money (3 Mac. vii. 21). Eusebius uses it of the extortions of Paul of Samosata (H. E. vii. 30. 7); where, however, the true reading may be εκτείει. In this sense σεῖω also is used (Aristoph. Εὐκίτ. 840; Παξ, 639); and it is interesting to see that Antipho couples σεῖω with συκοφαντίων. Φιλοκράτης οὐτος οἶχος τῶν ἐκπευθεύοντων ἐσμε καὶ συκοφαντεῖ (Oret. vi. p. 146, l. 22).1 This last passage, combined with the verse

1 In the Passio S. Perpetae, iii., the martyr suffers much στρατιωτῶν συκοφαντίων πείλεται, and this is represented in the Latin by concussurae militum. Comp. Tert. De Fuga in Pers. xii., xiii.
before us, renders it probable that συκοφάντης, a “fig-shower,” is not one who gives information to the police about the exportation of figs, but one who shows figs by shaking the tree; i.e. who makes the rich yield money by intimidating them. Nowhere is συκοφάντης found in the sense of “informer,” nor yet of “sycophant.” It always denotes a “false accuser,” especially with a view to obtaining money; Arist. *Ach.* 559, 825, 828. Hatch quotes from Brunet de Presle, *Notices et textes du Musée du Louvre,* a letter of B.C. 145 from Dioscorides, a chief officer of finance, to his subordinate Dorion: πειρὶ δὲ διασεισμῶν καὶ παραλειών ἐνῶν δὲ καὶ συκοφαντίσθαι προσφερόμαν τινι, βουλόμεθα ὑμᾶς μὴ διαλανθάνειν, κ.τ.λ., “in the matter of fictitious legal proceedings and plunderings, some persons being, moreover, alleged to be even made the victims of false accusations,” etc. (*Bibl. Grk.* p. 91). Comp. Lev. xix. 11; Job xxxv. 9. Hesychius explains συκοφάντης as θεωδοκατήγορος.

αἰσθήμα. From ὅψε, “cooked food” to be eaten with bread, and ὄντομα, “I buy”: hence “rations, allowance, pay” of a soldier; 1 Cor. ix. 7; 1 Mac. iii. 28, xiv. 32; 1 Esdr. iv. 56; and freq. in Polybius. John does not tell these men on service that theirs is an unlawful calling. Nor did the early Christians condemn the life of a soldier: see quotations in Grotius and J. B. Mozley, *University Sermons,* Serm. v.

15–17. The certainty of the Messiah’s Coming and the Consequences of the Coming. Mt. iii. 11, 12. The explanatory opening (ver. 15) is peculiar to Lk. The substance of ver. 16 is common to all three; but here Lk. inserts the characteristic πᾶσιν. In ver. 17 he and Mt. are together, while Mk. is silent. Lk. shows more clearly than the other two how intense was the excitement which the Baptist’s preaching caused.

15. Προσδοκῶντος. What were they expecting? The result of all this strange preaching, and especially the Messianic judgment. Would it be put in execution by John himself? For this absolute use of προσδοκῶν comp. Acts xxvii. 33. Excepting Mt. xi. 3, xxiv. 50, 2 Pet. iii. 12–14, the verb is peculiar to Lk. (i. 21, vii. 19, 20, viii. 40, xii. 46; Acts iii. 5, etc.). Syr-Sin. omits.

The Vulg. here has the strange rendering *exstitimant*; although in i. 21, vii. 19, 20, viii. 40 προσδοκῶν is rendered *expecto,* and in xii. 46 *spero.* Cod. Brix. has *sperant* here. See on xix. 43 and xxi. 23, 25 for other slips in Jerome’s work. Here d has an attempt to reproduce the gen. abs. in Latin: *et cogitantium omnium.* Comp. ix. 43, xix. 11, xxi. 5, xxiv. 36, 41.

μὴ ποτε αὐτός. “If haply he himself were the Christ.” Their thinking this possible, although “John did no sign,” and had none of the insignia of royalty, not even descent from David, is remarkable. *Non ita crassam adhuc ideam de Christo habebant, nam*
Johannes nil splendoris externi habebat et tamen talia de eo cogitabant (Beng.). That this question had been raised is shown by Jn. i. 20. The Baptist would not have declared "I am not the Christ," unless he had been asked whether he was the Messiah, or had heard the people discussing the point.

For the constr. comp. µὴ ποτὲ δόῃ αὐτῷ δὲ Θεὸς μετάνοιαν (2 Tim. ii. 25).

The opt. in indirect questions is freq. in Lk. both without ἄν (i. 29, viii. 9, Acts xvii. 11, xxi. 33) and also with ἄν (i. 62, vi. 11, xv. 26; Acts v. 24, x. 17).

16. πᾶσιν. Showing how universal the excitement on this point was. Neither Mt. (iii. 11) nor Mk. (i. 7) has the πᾶσιν of which Luke is so fond: comp. vi. 30, vii. 35, ix. 43, xi. 4, xii. 10.

The aor. mid. ἐστρέφων is rare in N.T. (xxiii. 9; Acts iii. 12; Mt. xxvii. 12; Mk. xiv. 61; Jn. v. 17, 19); also in LXX (Judg. v. 29; 1 Kings ii. 1; 1 Chron. x. 13; Ezek. ix. 11). In bibl. Grk. the pass. forms prevail: see small print on i. 19.

Ἐγὼ μὲν οὖν δεδήλω. Both with emphasis: "I with water." δ’ ἱσχύροτερος. Valebat Johannes, sed Christus multo plus (Beng.). The art. marks him as one who ought to be well known.

λῦσαι τὸν ἰμάτια τῶν ὑποδήματων. More graphic than Mt.'s τὰ ὑπόδ. βαστάσας, but less so than Mk.'s κύψας λύσας τὸν ἰμ. τῶν ὑπόδ. αὐτοῦ. Both AV. and RV. mark the difference between ὑποδήμα, "that which is bound under" the foot, and σανδάλων, dim. of σάνδαλον, by rendering the former "shoe" (x. 4, xv. 22, xxii. 35; Acts vii. 33, xiii. 25) and the other "sandal" (Mk. vi. 9; Acts xii. 8). The Vulg. has calceamenta for ὑποδήματα, and sandalia or caligæ for σανδάλια. In LXX the two words seem to be used indiscriminately (Josh. ix. 5, 13); but ὑπόδ. is much the more common, and it is doubtful whether the Jews before the Captivity wore shoes or manalim (Deut. xxxiii. 25) as distinct from sandals. Comp. οἱ ἰμάτες τῶν ὑποδημάτων αὐτῶν (Is. v. 27). To unfasten shoes or sandals, when a man returned home, or to bring them to him when he went out, was the office of a slave (See Wetst. on Mt. iii. 11). John is not worthy to be the bond-servant of the Christ.

The αὐτῶν is not so entirely redundant as in some other passages: "whose latchet of his shoes."1

αὐτός. In emphatic contrast to the speaker.

ἐν πνεύματι ἄγιῳ. See on i. 15. That the ἐν with πνεύματι ἄγιῳ and its absence from ἔσται marks a distinction of any great moment, either here or Acts i. 5, must be doubted; for in Mt. iii. 11 both expressions have the ἐν, and in Mk. i. 8 neither. The simple dat. marks the instrument or matter with which the baptism

1 Comp. Mk. vii. 25; 1 Pet. ii. 24; Rev. iii. 8, vii. 2, 9, xiii. 8, xx. 8. Such pleonasms are Hebraistic, and are specially common in LXX (Gen. i. 11; Exod. xxxv. 29, etc.); Win. xxii. 4 (b), p. 184.
is effected; the ἐν marks the element in which it takes place (Jn. i. 31). See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 244.

καὶ πῦρ. This remarkable addition is wanting in Mk. Various explanations of it are suggested. (1) That the fiery tongues at Pentecost are meant, is improbable. Were any of those who received the Spirit at Pentecost among the Baptist's hearers on this occasion? Moreover, in Acts i. 5 καὶ πῦρ is not added. (2) That it distinguishes two baptisms, the penitent with the Spirit, and the impenitent with penal fire, is very improbable. The same persons (δύσας) are to be baptized with the Spirit and with fire. In ver. 17 the good and the bad are separated, but not here. This sentence must not be made parallel to what follows, for the winnowing-shovel is not baptism. (3) More probably the πῦρ refers to the illuminating, kindling, and purifying power of the grace given by the Messiah's baptism. Spiritus sanctus, quo Christus baptisat, igneam vim habet: atque ea ignea etiam conspicua fuit oculis hominum (Beng.): comp. Mal. iii. 2. (4) Or, the fiery trials which await the disciple who accepts Christ's baptism may be meant: comp. xii. 50; Mk. x. 38, 39. The passage is one of many, the exact meaning of which must remain doubtful; but the purifying of the believer rather than the punishment of the unbeliever seems to be intended.

17. πτών. The "winnowing-shovel" (pala lignea; Vulg. ventilabrum), with which the threshed corn was thrown up into the wind (πτών = "spit").¹ This is a further description of the Messiah,—He whose πτών is ready for use. Note the impressive repetition of αἵνει after τῇ χειρί, τὴν ἄλωνα, and τῷ ἀποθήκῃν.²

τῇ ἄλωνα. The threshing-floor itself, and not its contents. It is by removing the contents—corn to the barn, and refuse to the fire—that the floor is thoroughly cleansed. Christ's threshing-floor is the world; or, in a more restricted sense, the Holy Land. See Meyer on Mt. iii. 12.

αὐστητῶ. Comp. Mk. ix. 43; Lev. vi. 12, 13; Is. xxxiv. 8-10, lxvi. 24; Jer. vii. 20; Ezek. xx. 47, 48. In Homer it is a freq. epithet of γῆς, κλέας, βοῶς, μένως, and once of φλοξ (Il. xvi. 123). As an epithet of πῦρ it is opposed to μαλακῶν and μακρῶν. See

¹ The wooden shovel, pala lignea (Cato, R. R. vi. 45. 51), ventilabrum (Varro, R. R. i. 52), seems to have been more primitive than the vannus, which was a basket, shaped like the blade of a large shovel. The πτών was a shovel rather than a basket. In Tertullian (Præscr. iii.) palam in manu portat ad purgandam aream suam is probably the true reading; but some MSS. have ventilabrum for palam.

² The form ἀστητῶ is worth noting: in later Greek ἀστητὰ for ἀστῆτὰ is not uncommon. Mt. here has ἀστηταρεῖ, but classical writers prefer ἀστηταρεῖ to ἀστηταριστεῖ.—For the details of Oriental threshing see Herzog, P.R.E. art. Ackerbau; D.B. art. "Agriculture." For ἀστητὰ comp. Joh xxi. 18, and Hdt. iv. 72. 2; the sing. is less common (Jer. xxiii. 28).
It is therefore a fierce fire which cannot be extinguished, rather than an endless fire that will never go out, that seems to be indicated: and this is just such a fire as ῥο ἄχυρον (the refuse left after threshing and winnowing) would make. But ἀφθαρσία is sometimes used of a fire that never goes out, as that of Apollo at Delphi or of Vesta at Rome (Dion. Hal. cxciv. 8). For κατακαίειν comp. Mt. xiii. 30, 40; also Ex. iii. 2, where it is distinguished from καίειν: it implies utter consumption.

18-20. § Explanation of the Abrupt Termination of the Baptist's Ministry. This is given here by anticipation in order to complete the narrative. Comp. the conclusions to previous narratives: i. 66, 80, ii. 40, 52.

18. πολλὰ μὲν 𝐨ὐν καὶ ἐπερα. The comprehensive πολλὰ καὶ ἐπερα confirms the view taken above (ver. 7) that this narrative (7-18) gives a summary of John's teaching rather than a report of what was said on any one occasion. The ἐπερα means "of a different kind" (Gal. i. 6, 7), and intimates that the preaching of the Baptist was not always of the character just indicated.

The cases in which μὲν ⲟὐν occurs must be distinguished. 1. Where, as here, μὲν is followed by a corresponding δὲ, and we have nothing more than the distributive μὲν . . . δὲ . . . combined with  окол (Acts viii. 4, 25, xi. 19, xii. 5, xiv. 3, xv. 3, 30, etc.). 2. Where no δὲ follows, and μὲν confirms what is said, while  окол marks an inference or transition, quidem igitur (Acts i. 6, ii. 41, v. 41, xiii. 4, xvii. 30; Heb. vii. 11, viii. 4, etc.). Win. iii. 8, a, p. 556.

παρακαλῶν εὐαγγελίζετο . . . ἐλεγχόμενος. These words give the three chief functions of the Baptist: to exhort all, to preach good tidings to the penitent, to reprove the impenitent. It is quite unnecessary to take ῥον λαὸν with παρακαλῶν, and the order of the words is against such a combination.

In late Greek the acc. of the person to whom the announcement is made is freq. after εὐαγγελίζεσθαι (Acts xiv. 15, xvi. 10; Gal. i. 9; i Pet. i. 12; comp. Acts viii. 25, 40, xiv. 21): and hence in the pass. we have προχοι εὐαγγελίζονται. The acc. of the message announced is also common (viii. 1; Acts v. 42, viii. 4, 12?, x. 36, xi. 20). Where both person and message are combined, the person addressed is in the dat. (i. 19, ii. 10, iv. 43; Acts viii. 35; comp. Lk. iv. 18; Acts xvii. 18; Rom. i. 15, etc.): but in Acts xiii. 32 we have double acc. Here the Lat. texts vary between evangelizabat populum (Cod. Am.) and evang. populo (Cod. Brix.).

19. Ἁρμύθης. Antipas, as in ver. 1. The insertion of the name Φιλίππου after γνωκὼς comes from Mk. and Mt. (ACKX and some versions). This Philip must be carefully distinguished from the tetrarch Philip, with whom Jerome confuses him. He was the son of Mariamne, on account of whose treachery he had been disinherited by Herod the Great; and he lived as a private
individual at Jerusalem (Jos. B. J. i. 30. 7). Josephus calls both Antipas and also this Philip simply "Herod" (Ant. xviii. 5. 4). Herodias became the evil genius of the man who seduced her from his brother. It was her ambition which brought about the downfall of Antipas. Lk. alone tells us that John rebuked Antipas for his wicked life (καὶ περὶ πάντων) as well as for his incestuous marriage. Obviously ἔλεγξαμεν means "rebuked, reproved" (1 Tim. v. 20; 2 Tim. iv. 2), and not "convicted" or "convinced" (Jn. viii. 46, xvi. 8). In the former sense ἔλεγχεν is stronger than ἐπιμαχαίριον; see Trench, Syn. iv.

Once more (see on ver. 1) we have a remarkable rendering in d: Herodes autem quaterdecatur cum argueretur ab eo, etc.

Note the characteristic and idiomatic attraction (πάντων δὲν), and comp. ii. 20, v. 9, ix. 43, xii. 45, xv. 16, xix. 37, xxiv. 25; Acts iii. 21, x. 39, xiii. 39, xxii. 10, xxvi. 2.

20. προσέθηκεν καὶ τοῦτο ἐπὶ πᾶσιν, κατέκλεισεν, κ.τ.λ. "He added this also on the top of all—he shut up John in prison"; i.e. he added this to all the other παντραί which he had been guilty. Farrar, Herods, p. 171.

Josephus, in the famous passage which confirms and supplements the Gospel narrative respecting the Baptist (Ant. xviii. 5. 2), says that Antipas put him in prison because of his immense influence with the people. They seemed to be ready to do whatever he told them; and he might tell them to revolt. This may easily have been an additional reason for imprisoning him: it is no contradiction of the Evangelists. What Josephus states is what Antipas publicly alleged as his reason for arresting John: of course he would not give his private reasons. The prison in which the Baptist was confined was in the fortress of Machærus at the N.E. corner of the Dead Sea. Seetzen discovered the site in 1807 above the valley of the Zerka, and dungeons can still be traced among the ruins. Tristram visited it in 1872 (Discoveries on the East Side of the Dead Sea, ch. xiv.). It was hither that the daughter of Aretas fled on her way back to her father, when she discovered that Antipas meant to discard her for Herodias. Machærus was then in her father's dominions; but Antipas probably seized it immediately afterwards (Jos. Ant. xviii. 5. 1, 2).

The expression προσέθηκεν τοῦτο, κατέκλεισεν must not be confounded with the Hebraisms προσέθηκε τεκεῖν (xx. ii. 11, 12), προσέθηκε σφίγξειν (Acts xii. 3). It is true that in LXX the act, as well as the mid. is used in this manner: προσέθηκε τεκεῖν (Gen. iv. 2); προσέθηκε λαθραί (Gen. xviii. 29): see also Exod. x. 28; Deut. iii. 26; and for the mid. Exod. xiv. 13. But in this Hebraistic use of προσέθηκα for "go on and do" the second verb is always in the infin. (Win. liv. 5, p. 588). Here there is no Hebraism, and therefore no sign that Lk. is using an Aramaic source.

Κατέκλεισεν is classical, but occurs in N.T. only here and Acts xxvi. 10; in both cases of imprisoning. It is freq. in medical writers, and Galen uses
it of imprisonment (Hobart, Med. Lang. of Lk. pp. 66, 67). Mt. xiv. 3 we have ἀνέθετο, and Mk. vi. 17, ἐθηκε, of Herod’s putting John into prison.

21, 22. Jesus is baptized by John.—It is remarkable, that although the careers of the Forerunner and of the Messiah are so closely connected, and so similar as regards prediction of birth, retirement, ministry, and early end, yet, so far as we know, they come into actual contact only at one brief period, when the Forerunner baptized the Christ. Once some of John’s disciples raised the question of fasting, and Jesus answered it (v. 33; Mt. ix. 14), and once John sent some of his disciples to Jesus to question Him as to His Messiahship (vii. 19-23; Mt. xi. 2-19); but there is no meeting between Christ and the Baptist. Lk., having completed his brief account of the Forerunner and his work, begins his main subject, viz. the Messiah and His work. This involves a return to the point at which the Forerunner met the Messiah, and performed on Him the rite which prepared Him for His work, by publicly uniting Him with the people whom He came to save, and proclaiming Him before them.

21. ἐν τῷ βαπτισθῆναι ἄπαντα τὸν λαὸν. “After all the people had been baptized”; cum baptizatus esset omnis populus (Cod. Brix.): not, “while they were being baptized”; cum baptizaretur (Cod. Am.). The latter would be ἐν τῷ with the pres. infin.

Both constructions are very freq. in Lk. Contrast the aorists in ii. 27, ix. 36, xii. 3, xiv. 1, xix. 15, xxiv. 30, Acts xi. 15 with the presents in v. 1, 12, viii. 5, 42, ix. 18, 29, 33, 51, x. 35, 38, xi. 1, 27, xvii. 11, 14, xxiv. 4, 15, 51; Acts viii. 6, xix. 1. Lk. is also fond of the stronger form ἀπάσα, which is rare in N.T. outside his writings. Readings are often confused, but ἀπάσα is well attested v. 26, viii. 37, ix. 15, xix. 37, 48, xxiii. 1; Acts ii. 44, iv. 31, v. 16, x. 8, xi. 10, xvi. 3, 28, xxv. 24; and may be right in other places.

That there were great multitudes present when John baptized the Christ is not stated; nor is it probable. Had Lk. written ἐν τῷ βαπτιζόμεναι, this would have implied the presence of many other candidates for baptism; but it was not until “after every one of the people had been baptized” that the baptism of Jesus took place. Possibly Jesus waited until He could be alone with John. In any case, those who had long been waiting for their turn would go home soon after they had accomplished their purpose. It was some time after this that John said to the people, “He that cometh after me . . . is standing in the midst of you, and ye know Him not” (Jn. i. 26). They could hardly have been so ignorant of Him, if large multitudes had been present when John baptized Him.

καὶ ἵσσου βαπτισθῆται. It is remarkable that this, which seems to us to be the main fact, should be expressed thus incidentally by a participle. It is as if the baptism of all the people were regarded as carrying with it the baptism of Jesus almost as a necessary com-
III. 21, 22.] PREPARATION FOR THE MINISTRY 99

plement: "After they had been baptized, and when He had been baptized and was praying." But perhaps the purpose of Lk. is to narrate the baptism, not so much for its own sake as an instance of Christ's conformity to what was required of the people, as for the sake of the Divine recognition and authentication which Jesus then received.

Jerome has preserved this fragment of the Gospel acc. to the Hebrews: "Lo, the mother of the Lord and His brethren said to Him, John the Baptist baptizeth for remission of sins: let us go and be baptized by him. But He said to them, Wherein have I sinned that I should go and be baptized by him? except perchance this very thing which I have said is ignorance" (Adv. Pelag. iii. 1). The Tractatus de Rebaptismate says that the Pauli Pradicatio represented "Christ, the only man who was altogether without fault, both making confession respecting His own sin, and driven almost against His will by His mother Mary to accept the baptism of John: also that when He was baptized fire was seen on the water, which is not written in any Gospel" (xvii.; Hartel's Cyprian, ii. p. 90). The fire in the water is mentioned in Justin (Try. lxxxviii.), but not as recorded by the Apostles; and also in the Gospel acc. to the Hebrews.

καὶ προσευχομένου. Lk. alone mentions this. On his Gospel as emphasizing the duty of prayer see Introd. § 6. Mt. and Mk. say that Jesus saw the Spirit descending; Jn. says that the Baptist saw it; Lk. that it took place (ἑξάραξα) along with the opening of the heaven and the coming of the voice. Mk. says simply τὸ πνεῦμα; Mt. has πνεῦμα Θεοῦ; Lk. τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ ἀγιοῦ. See on i. 15.

The constr. of ἐξάραξα with acc. and infin. is on the analogy of the class. constr. of συνέβη: it is freq. in Lk. See note, p. 45. The form ἀνεφώχθη is anomalous, as if assimilated to ἀνεψυχθεί: comp. Jn. ix. 10, 14; Rev. iv. 1, vi. 1.

22. σωματικῶς εἶδεν ὡς περιστεράν. "In a bodily form" is peculiar to Lk. Nothing is gained by admitting something visible and rejecting the dove. Comp. the symbolical visions of Jehovah granted to Moses and other Prophets. We dare not assert that the Spirit cannot reveal Himself to human sight, or that in so doing He cannot employ the form of a dove or of tongues of fire. The tongues were appropriate when the Spirit was given "by measure" to many. The dove was appropriate when the Spirit was given in His fulness to one. It is not true that the dove was an ancient Jewish symbol for the Spirit. In Jewish symbolism the dove is Israel. The descent of the Spirit was not, as some Gnostics taught, the moment of the Incarnation: it made no change in the nature of Christ. But it may have illuminated Him so as to complete His growing consciousness of His relations to God and to man (ii. 52). It served two purposes: (1) to make Him known to the Baptist, who thenceforward had Divine authority for making Him known to the world (Jn. i. 32, 33); and (2) to mark the official beginning of the ministry, like the anointing of a king. As at
the Transfiguration, Christ is miraculously glorified before setting out to suffer, a voice from heaven bears witness to Him, and "the goodly fellowship of the Prophets" waits on His glory.

The phrase φωνὴ γενέσθαι is freq. in Lk. (i. 44, ix. 35, 36; Acts ii. 6, vii. 31, x. 13, xix. 34). Elsewhere only Mk. i. 11, ix. 7; Jn. xii. 30; Rev. viii. 5.

Comp. ἔρχεται φωνή, Jn. xii. 28; ἔρχεται θόρυβος, Rev. xvi. 17, xix. 5.

Σῦ. Responsio ad preces, ver. 21 (Beng.). The Σῦ shows that the voice conveyed a message to the Christ as well as to the Baptist. Mk. also has Σῦ εἶ: in Mt. iii. 17 we have Οὐρός ἐστίν. Diversitas locutionum adhuc etiam utiliss. est, ne uno modo dictum minus intelligatur (Aug.). In the narrative of the Transfiguration all three have Οὐρός ἐστιν.

The reference seems to be to Ps. ii. 7; and here D and other important witnesses have Πῶς μοῦ εἶ οὖ, εἰγὼ σήμερον γεγένηκα σε. Augustine says that this was the reading of some MSS., "although it is stated not to be found in the more ancient MSS." (De Cons. Evang. ii. 14: comp. Enchir. ad Laurent. xliii.). Justin has it in his accounts of the Baptism (Try. lxxxviii., ciii.). In Mt. it is possible to take ὁ ἁγιάσμος with what follows: "The beloved in whom I am well pleased"; but this is impossible here and in Mk. i. 11, and therefore improbable in Mt. The repetition of the article presents the epithet as a separate fact: "Thou art My Son, My beloved one." Comp. μοῦνος ἐστὶν ἁγιάσμος (Hom. Od. ii. 365). It is remarkable that St. John never uses ἁγιάσμος of Christ: neither in the Fourth Gospel nor in the Apocalypse does the word occur in any connexion.

εὐδοκήσα. "I am well pleased": the timeless aorist. Comp. Jn. xiii. 3.

The voice does not proclaim Jesus as the Messiah, as a legend would probably have represented. No such proclamation was needed either by Jesus or by the Baptist. The descent of the Spirit had told John that Jesus was the Christ (Jn. i. 33). This voice from heaven, as afterwards at the Transfiguration (ix. 35), and again shortly before the Passion (Jn. xii. 28), followed closely upon Christ's prayer, and may be regarded as the answer to it. His humanity was capable of needing the strength which the heavenly assurance gave. To call this voice from heaven the Bath-Kol of the Rabbis, or to treat it as analogous to it, is misleading. The Rabbinic Bath-Kol, or "Daughter-voice," is regarded as an echo of the voice of God: and the Jews liked to believe that it had been granted to them after the gift of prophecy had ceased. The utterances attributed to it are in some cases so frivolous or profane, that the more intelligent Rabbis denounced it as a superstition.

It has been pointed out that Lk. appears to treat the baptism of Jesus by John as a matter of course. Mt. tells us that the Baptist at first protested against it; and many writers have felt that it requires explanation. Setting aside the profane suggestions that Jesus was not sinless, and therefore needed "repentance baptism for remission of sins," or that He was in collusion with John, we may note four leading hypotheses. 1. He wished to do honour to John. 2. He desired to elicit from John a declaration of His Messiahship. 3. He thereby gave a solemn sign that He had done with home life, and was beginning His public ministry. 4. He thereby consecrated Himself for His
III. 22. | PREPARATION FOR THE MINISTRY

work.—This last seems to be nearest to the truth. The other three would be more probable if we were expressly told that multitudes of spectators were present; whereas the reverse seems to be implied. John’s baptism was preparatory to the kingdom of the Messiah. For everyone else it was a baptism of repentance. The Messiah, who needed no repentance, could yet accept the preparation. In each case it marked the beginning of a new life. It consecrated the people for the reception of salvation. It consecrated the Christ for the bestowing of it (Neander, L. J. C. § 42 (5), Eng. tr. p. 68). But besides this it was a “fulfilment of righteousness,” a complying with the requirements of the Law. Although pure Himself, through His connexion with an unclean people He was Levitically unclean. “On the principles of O.T. righteousness His baptism was required” (Lange, L. of C. i. p. 355).

In the Fathers and liturgies we find the thought that by being baptized Himself Jesus elevated an external rite into a sacrament, and consecrated the element of water for perpetual use. *Baptizatus est ergo Dominus non mundari volens, sed mundare aquas* (Ambr. on Lk. iii. 21, 23). “By the Baptisme of thy wel beloved sonne Jesus Christe, thou dydest sanctifie the fludde Jordan, and al other waters to this misticalli washing away of synne” (First Prayer-Book of Edw. vi. 1549, Public Baptism); which follows the Gregorian address, “By the Baptism of Thine Only-begotten Son hast been pleased to sanctify the streams of water” (Bright, Ancient Collects, p. 161).

There is no contradiction between John’s “Comest Thou to me?” (Mt. iii. 14) and “I knew Him not” (Jn. i. 31, 33). As a Prophet John recognized the sinlessness of Jesus, just as Elisha recognized the avarice and untruthfulness of Gehazi, or the treachery and cruelty of Hazael (2 Kings v. 26, viii. 10-12); but until the Spirit descended upon Him, he did not know that He was the Messiah (Weiss, Leben Jesu, i. ii. 9, Eng. tr. i. p. 320). John had three main functions: to predict the coming of the Messiah; to prepare the people for it; and to point out the Messiah when He came. When these were accomplished, his work was nearly complete.

23-38. The Genealogy of Jesus Christ. Comp. Mt. i. 1-17.

The literature is very abundant: the following are among the principal authorities, from which a selection may be made, and the names of other authorities obtained.


Why does Lk. insert the genealogy here instead of at the beginning of his Gospel? It would be only a slight exaggeration to say that this is the beginning of his Gospel, for the first three chapters are only introductory. The use of ἀρχομένως here implies that the Evangelist is now making a fresh start. Two of the three introductory chapters are the history of the Forerunner, which Lk. completes in the third chapter before beginning his account of the work of the Messiah. Not until Jesus has been anointed by the Spirit does the history of the Messiah, i.e. the Anointed One, begin; and His genealogy then becomes of importance. In a similar way the pedigree of Moses is placed, not just before
or just after the account of his birth (Exod. ii. 1, 2), where not even the names of his parents are given, but just after his public appearance before Pharaoh as the spokesman of Jehovah and the leader of Israel (Exod. vi. 14-27).

The statement of Julius Africanus, that Herod the Great caused the genealogies of ancient Jewish families to be destroyed, in order to conceal the defects of his own pedigree (Eus. H. E. i. 7, 13), is of no moment. If he ever gave such an order, it would of necessity be very imperfectly executed. The rebuilding of the temple would give him the opportunity of burning the genealogies of the priests, which were preserved in the temple archives, but pedigrees in the possession of private families would be carefully concealed. Josephus was able to give his own genealogy, as he "found it described in the public records"—ἐν ταῖς δημουσίαις δήλοις ἀναγεγραμμένην (Vita, 1); and he tells us what great care was taken to preserve the pedigrees of the priests, not merely in Judæa, but in Egypt, and Babylon, and "whithersoever our priests are scattered" (Apion. i. 7). It is therefore an empty objection to say that Lk. could not have obtained this genealogy from any authentic source, for all such sources had been destroyed by Herod. It is clear from Josephus that, if Herod made the attempt, he did not succeed in destroying even all public records. Jews are very tenacious of their genealogies; and a decree to destroy such things would be evaded in every possible way. The importance of the evidence of Africanus lies in his claim to have obtained information from members of the family, who gloried in preserving the memory of their noble extraction; and in his referring both pedigrees as a matter of course to Joseph. It is not probable that Joseph was the only surviving descendant of David who was known to be such. But it is likely enough that all such persons were in humble positions, like Joseph himself, and thus escaped the notice and jealousy of Herod. Throughout his reign he took no precaution against Davidic claimants; and had he been told that a village carpenter was the representative of David's house, he would possibly have treated him as Domitian is said to have treated the grandsons of Judas the brother of the Lord—with supercilious indifference (Eus. H. E. iii. 20).

23. αὐτός. "He Himself," to whom these miraculous signs had reference: comp. i. 22; Mt. iii. 4. The AV. translation of the whole clause, αὐτός ἦν ἤπειρος ἄρχωμεν ωσεὶ ἐτῶν τριάκοντα, "Jesus Himself began to be about thirty years of age," is impossible. It is probably due to the influence of Beza: incipiebat esse quasi annorum triginta. But Cranmer led the way in this error in the Bible of 1539, and the later versions followed. Purvey is vague, like the Vulgate: "was bigynnynge as of thritti year,"—erat incipiens quasi annorum triginta. Tyndale is right: "was about thirty yere of age when He beganne"; i.e. when He began His ministry in the solemn way just recorded. Comp. the use of ἀρξάμενος in Acts i. 22. In both cases διδάσκειν may be understood, but is not necessary. In Mk. iv. 1 we have the full expression, ἥρκατο διδάσκειν, which is represented in the parallel, Mt. xiii. 1, by ἐκάθιστο. Professor Marshall has shown that ἥρκατο and ἐκάθιστο may be equivalents for one and the same Aramaic verb (Expositor, April 1891): see on v. 21.

It is obvious that this verse renders little help to chronology. "About thirty" may be anything from twenty-eight to thirty-two,—to give no wider margin. It is certain that our era is at least four years too late, for it begins with a.u.c. 754. Herod the Great
died just before the Passover A.U.C. 750, which is therefore the latest year possible for the Nativity. If we reckon the "fifteenth year" of ver. 1 from the death of Augustus, Jesus was probably thirty-two at the time of His Baptism.

∆ν υἱός, ὁς ἔγομενος, Ἰωσήφ τοῦ Ἡλεί. This is the right punctuation: "being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph the son of Heli." It is altogether unnatural to place the comma after Ἰωσήφ and not before it: "being the son (as was supposed of Joseph) of Heli"; i.e. being supposed to be the son of Joseph, but being really the grandson of Heli. It is not credible that υἱός can mean both son and grandson in the same sentence. J. Lightfoot proposed that "Jesus" (viz. υἱός, not υἱός) should be understood throughout; "Jesus (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, and so the son of Heli, and so the son of Matthat," etc. (Hor. Heb. on Lk. iii. 23). But this is not probable: see on τοῦ Θεοῦ (ver. 38).

It is evident from the wording that Lk. is here giving the genealogy of Joseph and not of Mary. It would have been quite out of harmony with either Jewish ideas or Gentile ideas to derive the birthright of Jesus from His mother. In the eye of the law Jesus was the heir of Joseph; and therefore it is Joseph's descent which is of importance. Mary may have been the daughter of Heli; but, if she was, Lk. ignores the fact. The difference between the two genealogies was from very early times felt to be a difficulty, as is seen from the letter of Julius Africanus to Aristides, c. A.D. 220 (Eus. H. E. i. 7; Routh, Rel. Sacr. ii. p. 228); and it is probable that so obvious a solution, as that one was the pedigree of Joseph and the other the pedigree of Mary, would have been very soon advocated, if there had been any reason (excepting the difficulty) for adopting it. But this solution is not advocated by anyone until Annius of Viterbo pronounced it, c. A.D. 1490. Yet see Victorinus (?) on Rev. iv. 7 (Migne v. 324).

The main facts of the two genealogies are these. From Adam to Abraham Lk. is alone. From Abraham to David, Lk. and Mt. agree. From David to Joseph they differ, excepting in the names of Zorobabel and his father Salathiel. The various attempts which have been made at reconciling the divergences, although in no case convincingly successful, are yet sufficient to show that reconciliation is not impossible. Nevertheless, the possibility that we have here divergent attempts of Jewish pedigree-makers may be admitted; for divergent theories, corresponding to the two genealogies, existed at the time. In addition to the authorities named above, the monographs of Hottinger, Surenhusius, and Voss may be consulted. See also the parallel tables in Resch, Kindheitsbuch, p. 188.

27. τοῦ Ζωροβαβελ τοῦ Σαλαθιήλ. It is highly improbable that these are different persons from the Zerubbabel and the Shealtiel of Mt. i. 12. That at the same period of Jewish history there should be two fathers bearing the rare name Salathiel or Shealtiel, each with a son bearing the rare name Zerubbabel, and that both of these unusually-named fathers should come in different ways into the genealogy of the Messiah, is scarcely credible, although this hypothesis has been adopted by both Hottinger and Voss. Zerubbabel (= "Dispersed in Babylon," or "Begotten in Babylon") was head of the tribe of Judah at the time of the return from the Babylonish Captivity in the first year of Cyrus; and he was
therefore an obvious person to include in the pedigree of the Messiah. Hence he was called the *Rhesa* or Prince of the Captivity. In 1 Chron. iii. 19 he is given as the son of Pedaiah and nephew of Shealtiel: and this is probably correct. But he became the heir of Shealtiel because the latter had no sons. In Mt. i. 12 and 1 Chron. iii. 17, Shealtiel is the son of Jeconiah, king of Judah; whereas Lk. makes him the son of Neri. Jeconiah is called Coniah, Jer. xxii. 24, and Jehoiachin, lxxi. 31; 2 Kings xxiv. 6; 2 Chron. xxxvi. 8, 9; and all three names mean "The Lord will establish." From Jer. xxii. 39 we learn that he had no children; and therefore the line of David through Solomon became extinct in him. The three pedigrees indicate that an heir for the childless Jeconiah was found in Shealtiel the son of Neri, who was of the house of David through Nathan. Thus the junction of the two lines of descent in Shealtiel and Zerubbabel is fully explained. Shealtiel was the son of Neri of Nathan's line, and also the heir of Jeconiah of Solomon's line; and having no sons himself, he had his nephew Zerubbabel as adopted son and heir. Rhesa, who appears in Lk., but neither in Mt. nor in 1 Chron., is probably not a name at all, but a title, which some Jewish copyist mistook for a name. "Zerubbabel Rhesa," or "Zerubbabel the Prince," has been made into "Zerubbabel (begat) Rhesa." This correction brings Lk. into harmony with both Mt. and 1 Chron. For (1) the Greek Ἰωάνᾶς represents the Hebrew Hananiah (1 Chron. iii. 19), a generation which is omitted by Mt.; and (2) Lk.'s Ἰωθα is the same as Mt.'s 'Αβιου (Jud-a = Ab-jud). Again, Ἰωθα or 'Αβιου may be identified with Hodaviah (1 Chron. iii. 24); for this name is interchanged with Judah, as is seen by a comparison of Ezra iii. 9 and Neh. xi. 9 with Ezra ii. 40 and 1 Chron. ix. 7.

36. Σαλά τοῦ Καϊνάμ τοῦ Ἀρφαξάδ. In LXX this Cainan appears as the father of Sala or Shelah, and son of Arphaxad, in the genealogy of Shem (Gen. x. 24, xi. 12; 1 Chron. i. 18). But the name is not found in any Hebrew MS., or in any other version made from the Hebrew. In LXX it may be an insertion, for no one earlier than Augustine mentions the name. D omits it here, while Ν Β Λ have the form Καϊνάμ for Καϊνάν. But the hypothesis that interpolation here has led to interpolation in LXX cannot be maintained upon critical principles.

37. Ἀδάμ. That Lk. should take the genealogy beyond David and Abraham to the father of the whole human race, is entirely in harmony with the Pauline universality of his Gospel. To the Jew it was all-important to know that the Messiah was of the stock of Abraham and of the house of David. Mt. therefore places this fact

---

1 Both forms of the name, Shealtiel and Salathiel, are found in Haggai and elsewhere in O.T.; but in the Apocrypha and N.T. the form used is Salathiel ("I have asked God").
in the forefront of his Gospel. Lk., writing to all alike, shows that the Messiah is akin to the Gentile as well as to the Jew, and that all mankind can claim Him as a brother.¹

But why does Lk. add that Adam was the son of God? Certainly not in order to show the Divine Sonship of the Messiah, which would place Him in this respect on a level with all mankind. More probably it is added for the sake of Gentile readers, to remind them of the Divine origin of the human race,—an origin which they share with the Messiah. It is a correction of the myths respecting the origin of man, which were current among the heathen. Scriptura, etiam quod ad humani generis ortum pertinet, figur satiatque cognitionem nostram; eam qui spernunt aut ignorant, pendent errantque inter tempora antemundana et postmundana (Beng.). It is very forced and unnatural to take τὸν Θεοῦ as the gen. of ὁ Θεῦ, and make this gen. depend upon ὦν ἰὼν at the beginning of the genealogy, as if Jesus and not Adam was styled the "son of God." Thus the whole pedigree from ὦν ἰὼν to Ἰάσωμα would be a gigantic parenthesis between ὦν ἰὼν and τὸν Θεοῦ. The τὸν throughout belongs to the word in front of it, as is clear from the fact that Ἰωσήφ, the first name, has no τὸν before it. Each τὸν means "who was of," i.e. either "the son of" or "the heir of." Both AV. and RV. give the sense correctly.

IV. 1-18. The Internal Preparation for the Ministry of the Christ: the Temptation in the Wilderness, Mt. iv. 1-11; Mk. i. 12, 13.


Many futile and irreverent questions have been raised respecting this mysterious subject; futile, because it is impossible to answer them, excepting by empty conjectures; and irreverent, because they are prompted by curiosity rather than by a desire for illumination. Had the answers to them been necessary for our spiritual welfare, the answers would have been placed within our reach. Among such questions are such as these: Did Satan

¹ "In the one case we see a royal Infant born by a legal title to a glorious inheritance; and in the other a ministering Saviour who bears the natural sum of human sorrow" (Wscott. Int. to the Gospels, 7th ed. p. 316). The whole passage should be read.
assume a human form, and change his form with each change of temptation, or did he remain invisible? Did he know who Jesus was, or was he trying to discover this? Did he know, until he was named, that Jesus knew who he was? Where was the spot from which he showed all the kingdoms of the world?

Three points are insisted upon in the Epistle to the Hebrews (ii. 18, iv. 15), and beyond them we need not go. 1. The temptations were real. 2. Jesus remained absolutely unstained by them. 3. One purpose of the temptations was to assure us of His sympathy when we are tempted. The second point limits the first and intensifies the third. The sinlessness of Jesus excluded all those temptations which spring from previous sin; for there was no taint in Him to become the source of temptation. But the fact that the solicitations came wholly from without, and were not born from within, does not prevent that which was offered to Him being regarded as desirable. The force of a temptation depends, not upon the sin involved in what is proposed, but upon the advantage connected with it. And a righteous man, whose will never falters for a moment, may feel the attractiveness of the advantage more keenly than the weak man who succumbs; for the latter probably gave way before he recognized the whole of the attractiveness; or his nature may be less capable of such recognition. In this way the sinlessness of Jesus augments His capacity for sympathy: for in every case He felt the full force of temptation.

It is obvious that the substance of the narrative could have had only one source. No one has succeeded in suggesting any probable alternative. There is no Old Testament parallel, of which this could be an adaptation. Nor is there any prophecy that the Messiah would have to endure temptation, of which this might be a fictitious fulfilment. And we may be sure that, if the whole had been baseless invention, the temptations would have been of a more commonplace, and probably of a grosser kind. No Jewish or Christian legend is at all like this. It is from Christ Himself that the narrative comes; and He probably gave it to the disciples in much the same form as that in which we have it here.

1 "Sympathy with the sinner in his trial does not depend on the experience of sin, but on the experience of the strength of the temptation to sin, which only the sinless can know in its full intensity. He who falls yields before the last strain" (Wsett. on Heb. ii. 18). See Neander, L. J. C. §§ 46, 47, pp. 77, 78.
IV. 1, 2.] PREPARATION FOR THE MINISTRY

1. πλήρης πνεύματος ἁγίου. These words connect the Temptation closely with the Baptism. It was under the influence of the Spirit, which had just descended upon Him, that He went, in obedience to God's will, into the wilderness. All three accounts mark this connexion; and it explains the meaning of the narrative. Jesus had been endowed with supernatural power; and He was tempted to make use of it in furthering His own interests without regard to the Father's will. And here ἀγία ἤχη ... πειρασθῆναι (Mt. iv. 1) must not be understood as meaning that Christ went into the wilderness to court temptation. That would be too like yielding to the temptation which He resisted (vv. 9-12). He went into the desert in obedience to the Spirit's promptings. That He should be tempted there was the Divine purpose respecting Him, to prepare Him for His work.

Neither Mt. nor Mk. has ἄγιον as an epithet of πνεῦμα here (see on i. 15); and neither of them has Lk.'s favourite ἅπατρεψεν.

ἡγετὸ ἐν τῷ πνεύματι ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ. "He was led in (not into) the wilderness," i.e. in His wanderings there, as in His progress thither, He was under Divine influence and guidance. The imperf. indicates continued action. Tradition, which is not likely to be of any value, places this wilderness close to Jericho. Some region farther north is more probable. The ἡμέρας τεσσεράκοντα may be taken either with ἡγετὸ (RV.) or with πειραζόμενος (AV.). As the temptation by Satan was simultaneous (pres. part.) with the leading by the Spirit, the sense will be the same, whichever arrangement be adopted. In Mk. also the words are amphibolous, and may be taken either with ἡ γν. ἐν τῷ ἐρήμῳ or with πειραζόμενος. If we had only the account in Mt. we might have supposed that the temptations did not begin until the close of the forty days. The three recorded may have come at the end of the time, as seems to be implied with regard to the first of them. Or they may be given as representative of the struggles which continued throughout the whole period.

2. πειραζόμενος. The word is here used in its commonest sense of "try or test," with a sinister motive. In N.T. it has three uses: 1. "try or attempt" to do (Acts ix. 26, xvi. 7, xxiv. 6); 2. "try or test," with a good motive (Jn. vi. 6; 2 Cor. xiii. 5; Rev. ii. 2), especially of God's sending trials (1 Cor. x. 13; Heb. xi. 33; 1 Le baptême et la tentative se succèdent l'un à l'autre dans la réalité de l'histoire, comme dans le récit des Évangélistes. Ces deux faits inévitables, qui s'élèvent en apposant dans un contraste vigoureux, sont le vrai prélude de la vie du Christ. L'un est la manifestation de l'Esprit de Dieu, l'autre, celle de l'esprit du mal; l'un nous montre la filiation divine de Jésus, l'autre, sa nature humaine vouée à la lutte et à l'épreuve; l'un nous révèle la force infinie avec laquelle il agira, l'autre, l'obstacle qu'il saura renverser; l'un nous enseigne sa intime, l'autre, la loi de son action (Didon, p. 225).
Rev. iii. 10); 3. "try or test," with a bad motive, in order to produce perplexity or failure (xi. 16; Mt. xix. 3; [Jn.] viii. 6), especially of tempting to sin (1 Cor. vii. 5; 1 Thes. iii. 5; Jas. i. 13). It is thus of much wider meaning than δοκίμαζεν (xii. 56, xiv. 19), which has only the second of these meanings. Trench, Syn. lxxiv.; Cremer, Lex. p. 494.

7οῦδα τοῦ διάβολου. All three use ἑτό of the agency of Satan. He is not a mere instrument. Comp. 2 Cor. ii. 11; Acts x. 38. In N.T. διάβολος with the art. always means Satan, "the calumniator," κατ' ἐγκωμί. In Mt., Jn., Acts, Eph., 1 and 2 Tim., Heb., James, Jude, 1 Pet., and Rev. this use is invariable. It is possible that ὁ διάβολος was originally a translation of Satan= "the adversary." In LXX εὐδιαβάλλειν sometimes means "meet, oppose" (Num. xxi. 22, 32), and διάβολος means "adversary" (1 Mac. i. 36). In Job (i. 6-12, ii. 1-7) and Zech. (iii. 1-3) ὁ διάβολος is used as in N.T. for Satan, as the accuser or slanderer of God to man and of man to God. In this scene he endeavours to misrepresent God, and to induce Jesus to adopt a false view of His relation to God.

The existence of such a being is sometimes denied, but on purely a priori grounds. To science the question is an open one, and does not admit of demonstration either way. But the teaching of Christ and His Apostles is clear and explicit; and only three explanations are possible. Either (1) they accommodated their language to a gross superstition, knowing it to be such; or (2) they shared this superstition, not knowing it to be such; or (3) the doctrine is not a superstition, but they taught the actual truth. As Keim rightly says, one cannot possibly regard all the sayings of Jesus on this subject as later interpolations, and "Jesus plainly designated His contention with the empire of Satan as a personal one" (Jes. of Naz., Eng. tr. ii. pp. 318, 325). See Gore, Dissertations on Subjects connected with the Incarnation, pp. 23-27.

οὐκ ἔφαγεν ὀδόν. This does not agree well with the supposition that Jesus partook of the scanty food which might be found in the wilderness. The νηστεύων of Mt. seems to imply the deliberate fasting which was customary in times of solemn retirement for purposes of devotion. But this does not exclude the possibility that the mental and spiritual strain was so great that for a time there was no craving for food. In any case the want of food would at last bring prostration of body and mind; and then the violence of temptation would be specially felt. Both Mt. and Lk. appear to mean that it was not until near the end of the forty days that the pangs of hunger were endured. For συντελεῖοθαι of days being completed comp. Acts xxii. 27; Job i. 5; Tobit x. 7.1

1 The fasts of Moses and Elijah were of similar duration (Deut. ix. 9; 1 K. xix. 8). The number forty in Scripture is connected with suffering. The
IV. 3. PREPARATION FOR THE MINISTRY

8. εἷς ἔρ. Mt. adds προσελθὼν, which is a very favourite expression of his. It does not necessarily imply corporal presence, although Mt. himself may have understood it in that sense. Jesus says of the approaching struggle in Gethsemane, “The prince of the world cometh” (Jn. xiv. 30). Nowhere in Scripture is Satan said to have appeared in a visible form: Zech. iii. 1 is a vision. And nothing in this narrative requires us to believe that Satan was visible on this occasion.

Εἰ vίός et τοῦ Θεοῦ. Both Mt. and Lk. have vίός τ. Θ. without the article, the reference being to the relationship to God, rather than to the office of the Messiah. The emphatic word is vίός. The allusion to the voice from heaven (iii. 22) is manifest, but is not likely to have occurred to a writer of fiction, who would more probably have written, “If Thou art the Christ.” The “if” does not necessarily imply any doubt in Satan, although Augustine takes it so; but it is perhaps meant to inspire doubt in Jesus: “Hath God said, Thou art My beloved Son, and yet forbidden Thee to give Thyself bread?” Comp. “Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of any tree of the garden?” (Gen. iii. 1). The suggestion seems to be that He is to work a miracle in order to prove the truth of God’s express declaration, and that He may doubt His relation to God, if God does not allow the miracle.

This seems better than to regard the first temptation as a temptation of the flesh. If the food had been there, would it have been sinful for Jesus to partake of it? Again, it is sometimes said that it was a temptation to use His supernatural power to supply His own necessities. Among the Laws of the Working of Signs we are told was one to the effect that “Our Lord will not use His special powers to provide for His personal wants or those of His immediate followers.” This law perhaps does not hold, except so far as it coincides with the principle that no miracle is wrought where the given end can be obtained without miracle. Some of Christ’s escapes from His enemies seem to have been miraculous. Was not that “providing for a personal want”? His rejoining His disciples by walking on the sea might be classed under the same head. The boat coming suddenly to land might be called “providing for the wants of His immediate followers.” Had He habitually supplied His personal wants by miracle, then He would have ceased to share the lot of mankind. But it would be rash to say that it would have been sinful for Him to supply Himself with food miraculously, when food was necessary for His work and could not be obtained by ordinary means. It is safer to regard this as a temptation to satisfy Himself of the truth of God’s word by a test of His own.

Deluge lasted forty days and nights (Gen. vii. 4, 12). The Israelites wandered for forty years (Num. xiv. 33, xxxii. 13). Egypt is to lie waste forty years (Ezek. xxix. 11). Ezekiel is to bear the iniquity of the house of Judah (i.e. the penalty for that iniquity) forty days, each day representing a year (iv. 6). Offenders received forty stripes as a maximum (Deut. xxv. 3). A mother was unclean for forty days after childbirth (Lev. xii. 1-4). Perhaps we are to understand that the fast of the Ninevites lasted forty days.

1 Dubitavit de illo domonum princeps, eumque tentavit, an Christus esset explorans (De Civ. Dei, ix. 21).
2 Latham, Pastor Pastorum, p. 113.
The singular τὸ ἄρτον τῶν ἁρ πίνακος of Mt. A single loaf is all that He need produce. The similarity between lumps of stone and loaves of bread perhaps explains why this material, so common in the wilderness, was selected for change into food.

For the use of ἃβα after εἰσέ (xii. 40, xix. 15, etc.) see Win. xlv. 8, pp. 420-422; B. Weiss on Mt. iv. 3; Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 177; Green, Gr. of N.T. p. 170. It is a weakening of the telic force of ἃβα rather than a mere substitute for the infinitive. See Blass, Gr. pp. 217 ff.

4. Christ does not reply to the “if” by affirming that He is the Son of God; nor does He explain why the Son of God does not accept the devil’s challenge. He gives an answer which holds good for any child of God in similar temptation. The reply is a pointed refutation, however, of the special suggestion to Himself, ὁ ἀνθρωπός having direct reference to ὅς ὁ Θεός. Satan suggests that God’s Son would surely be allowed to provide food for Himself. Jesus replies that God can sustain, not only His Son, but any human being, with or without food, and can make other things besides bread to be food. Comp. “My meat is to do the will of Him that sent Me” (Jn. iv. 34). The reply is verbatim as LXX of Deut. viii. 3. As all His replies come from this book, we may conjecture that Jesus had recently been reading it or meditating on it. The repeated use of a book which is so full of the trials of Israel in the wilderness may suggest a parallel between the forty days and the forty years. The direct reference is to the manna.

The addition of the remainder of the quotation in A D and other authorities comes from Mt. It differs in wording in the texts which insert it. If it were genuine here, its absence from the best authorities would be most extraordinary. The insertion of ὁ διάβολος and of ἐστὶ ὁ ὕπηκόος in ver. 5, and the substitution of τῷ κόσμῳ for τῆς ὁλοκλήρωσες, are corruptions of the same kind.

5. Lk. places second the temptation which Mt. places last. The reasons given for preferring one order to the other are subjective and unconvincing. Perhaps neither Evangelist professes to give any chronological order. Temptations may be intermingled. It is very doubtful whether the τότε with which Mt. introduces the temptation which he places second, and the πάλιν with which he introduces his third, are intended to specify sequence in time. Many Lat. MSS. (G b c f l q r) here place vv. 5-8 after vv. 9-11. Lk. omits the command to Satan to depart; and we have no means of knowing which temptation it immediately followed. Mt. naturally connects it with the one which he places last.

ἀναγαγόν. See on ii. 22. The word does not require us to

---

1 Trench quotes from Ambrose: Non enim quasi Deus utilitā potestate (quid enim mihi proderat), sed quasi homo commune sibi accessit auxilium.

2 It is worth noting that A.V., which follows those texts that insert “ὤς ὁ πάγος ὁ μω, Σατανᾶ in ver. 8, renders the words “Get thee behind Me, Satan” there, and “Get thee hence, Satan” in Mt.
believe that Satan had control of Christ's person and transferred Him bodily from the desert to a mountain-top. From no mountain could “all the kingdoms of the world” be visible, least of all “in a moment of time.” If Satan on the mountain could present to Christ's mind kingdoms which were not visible to the eye, he could do so in the desert. We may suppose that he transferred Jesus in thought to a mountain-top, whence He could in thought see all. For “all the kingdoms of the world” comp. Ezra i. 2, where we have τής γῆς for “of the world”: in Mt. τοῦ κόσμου, which D substitutes here.

τῆς οἰκουμένης. A favourite expression with Lk. (ii. 1, xxi. 26; Acts xi. 28, xvii. 6, 31, xix. 27, xxiv. 5): elsewhere only six times, of which one is a quotation (Rom. x. 18 from Ps. xix. 5). It describes the world as a place of settled government, “the civilized world.” To a Greek it might mean the Greek world as distinct from barbarian regions (Hdt. iv. 110. 4; comp. Dem. De Cor. p. 242). Later it meant “the Roman Empire,” orbis terrarum, as in ii. 1 (Philo, Leg. ad Cai. 25). In inscriptions the Roman Emperor is δὲ κύριος τῆς οἰκουμένης. Finally, it meant “the whole inhabited earth,” as here and xxi. 26 (Rev. xvi. 14; Heb. i. 6; Jos. Ant. viii. 13. 4: B. J. vii. 3. 3). In Heb. ii. 5 it is used of the world to come as an ordered system: see Wsctt. Lk. omits καὶ τὴν δόξαν αὐτῶν here, but adds it in Satan's offer.

ἐν στιγμῇ χρόνου. Puncto temporis; comp. ἐν δυναμεί δυναμοῦ (1 Cor. xv. 52). Not in Mt. Comp. Is. xxix. 5; 2 Mac. ix. 11. It intimates that the kingdoms were represented, not in a series of pageants, but simultaneously: acuta tentatio (Beng.). To take ἐν στιγμῇ χρῶν with ἀναγαγόν is not a probable arrangement. With στιγμή (ὀτίς εἰσιν ὁ περὶ το στιγματίζων) comp. stimulus, “stick,” and “sting.”

6. Σοὶ δυνῶσαι...δι᾽ ἐμοὶ παραδέσποται. Both pronouns are emphatic: “To Thee I will give...because to me it hath been delivered.”

The αὐτῶν after τὴν δόξαν is a constructio ad sensum, referring to the kingdoms understood in τὴν ἐξουσίαν ταύτην, “this authority and jurisdiction.” In παραδέσποται we have the common use of the perf. to express permanent and present result of past action; “it has been given over” and remains in my possession: comp. ζύγωσαντα (4, 8, 10) and ἐφησαν (12).

Satan does not say by whom it has been given over; and two answers are possible: 1. by God's permission; 2. by man's sin. But the latter does not exclude the former; and in any case constvetur tentator, se non esse conditorum (Beng.). That it refers to a Divine gift previous to his revolt against God, is a gratuitous conjecture. Christ Himself speaks of Satan as “the ruler of this world” (Jn. xii. 31, xiv. 30, xvi. 11). In the Rabbinical writings "Lord of this world" is a common name for Satan, as ruler of the heathen, in opposition to God, the Head of the Jewish theocracy. The devil is the ruler of the unbelieving and sinful; but he mixes truth with falsehood when he claims to have dominion over all the material glory of the world. Comp. Eph. ii. 2; 2 Cor.
iv. 4; Rev. xiii. 2. In φίλω the mixture of falsehood seems to be still greater. Even of those who are under the dominion of Satan it is only in a limited sense true that he can dispose of them as he pleases. But the subtlety of the temptation lies partly in the fact that it appeals to what is in a very real sense true. Satan intimates that the enormous influence which he possesses over human affairs may be obtained for the promotion of the Messiah's Kingdom. Thus all the pain and suffering, which otherwise lay before the Saviour of the world, might be evaded.

7. ἐὰν προσκυνήσῃς. Mt. adds πεσών, which, like προσελθών, indicates that he may have believed that Satan was visible, although this is not certain. Even actual prostration is possible to an invisible being, and "fall down and worship" is a natural figure for entire submission or intense admiration. In the East, prostration is an acknowledgment of authority, not necessarily of personal merit. The temptation, therefore, seems to be that of admitting Satan's authority and accepting promotion from him.

ἔνωπιον ἔρωτ. Lk.'s favourite expression (i. 15, 17, 19, 75, etc.). The usual constr. after προσκυνεῖν is the acc. (ver. 8; Mt. iv. 10; Rev. ix. 20, xiii. 12, xiv. 9, 11) or the dat. (Acts vii. 43; Jn. iv. 21, 23; Rev. iv. 10, vii. 11): but Rev. xv. 4 as here.

Εἶσαι σοῦ πάρα. "The ἐξουσία which has been delivered to me I am willing to delegate or transfer": magna superbia (Beng.). The acceptance of it would be equivalent to προσκυνήσῃς. Just as in the first case the lawful desire for food was made an occasion of temptation, so here the lawful desire of power, a desire specially lawful in the Messiah. Everything depends upon why and how the food and the power are obtained. Christ was born to be a king; but His Kingdom is not of this world (Jn. xviii. 36, 37), and the prince of this world has nothing in Him (Jn. xiv. 30). He rejects the Jewish idea of the Messiah as an earthly potentate, and thus condemns Himself to rejection by His own people. He rejects Satan as an ally, and thereby has him as an implacable enemy. The end does not sanctify the means.

8. προσκυνήσεις. Mt. also has this word in harmony with Satan's προσκυνήσῃς; but in LXX of Deut. vi. 13 we have φοβήσῃ: see on vii. 27.—λατρεύσεις. Lit. "serve for hire" (λάτρις = "hireling"). In class. Grk. it is used of the service of slaves and of freemen, whether rendered to men or to God: in N.T. always of religious service, but sometimes of the worship of idols (Acts vii. 42; Rom. i. 25). Trench, Syn. xxxv. Propositum erat Domino humilitate diabolum vincere, non potentia (Jerome).

9. τὸ πτερύγιον τοῦ ἱεροῦ. It is impossible to determine what

1 In this connexion a remark of Père Didon is worth quoting. Of the traditional scene of the Temptation he says that there Christ avait sous les yeux ce chemin de jéricho à jérusalem qu'il devait suivre, un jour, avec ses disciples, pour aller à la mort (Jésus Christ, cn. iii. p. 209).
this means. The article points to its being something well known by this name. The three points conjectured are: 1. the top of the Royal Porch, whence one looked into an abyss (Jos. Ant. xv. i. i. 5); 2. the top of Solomon's Porch; 3. the roof of the ναῶς. It was from τὸ περίγυρον τοῦ ἱεροῦ that James the Just was thrown, according to Hegesippus (Eus. H. E. ii. 23. 11, 16). Had any part of the ναῶς been intended, we should perhaps have had τ. ναῶς rather than τ. ἱεροῦ.

Εἴ νῦς εἴ τοῦ Ἐσω. The repetition of this preamble is evidence that this temptation is in part the same as the first (ver. 3). In both cases Jesus is to "tempt" (ver. 12) God, to challenge Him to prove His Fatherhood by a test of His Son’s own choosing. But, whereas in the first case Christ was to be rescued from an existing danger by a miracle, here He is to court needless danger in order to be rescued by a miracle. It may be that this is also a partial repetition of the second temptation. If the suggestion is that He should throw Himself down into the courts of the temple, so that the priests and the people might see His miraculous descent, and be convinced of His Messiahship, then this is once more a temptation to take a short cut to success, and, by doing violence to men's wills, avoid all the pain and suffering involved in the work of redemption.1 If this is correct, then this temptation is a combination of the other two. It is difficult to see what point there is in mentioning the temple, if presumptuously seeking peril was the only element in the temptation. The precipices of the wilderness would have served for that. The βάλε σεαυτόν expresses more definitely than the mid. would have done that the act is to be entirely His own. Not "Fall," nor "Spring," but "Cast Thyself"; ἐδίψε τεῖπσε. Comp. ἐαυτὸν πλανῶμεν (1 Jn. i. 8).

10. The fact that after τ. διαφυλάξαι σε Satan omits ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ὀδοῖς σου is in favour of the view that presumptuous rushing into danger is part of the temptation. To fling oneself down from a height is not going "in one's ways," but out of them. The disobedient Prophet was slain by the lion, the obedient Daniel was preserved in the lions’ den. But we are not sure that the omission of the words has this significance.

11. ἐπὶ χεῖρων. "On their hands," implying great carefulness. The πρὸς λίθον has no special reference either to the temple or the rocks below: stones abound in most places, and lie in the way of those who stumble.

12. Εἰρηται. In Mt. Πάλιν γέγραται. Jesus had appealed to Scripture; Satan does the same; and then Jesus shows that isolated texts may be misleading. They may be understood in a sense plainly at variance with some other passage. Satan had

1 See Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 304; Latham, Pastor Pastorum, p. 140.
suggested that it was impossible to put too much trust in God. Christ points out that testing God is not trusting Him.

The verb ἐκτείνεσθαι is wholly biblical (x. 25; Mt. iv. 7; Ps. lxxvii. 18). In the Heb. it is "Ye shall not tempt": but in LXX we have the sing. as here.

13. πάντα πειρασμον. "Every kind of temptation": a further indication that He was tempted throughout the forty days, and that what is recorded is merely an illustration of what took place. The enemy tried all his weapons, and was at all points defeated. Comp. πᾶσα ἀμαρτία καὶ βλασφημία, "all manner of sin and blasphemy" (Mt. xii. 31); πᾶν δένδρον, "every kind of tree (Mt. iii. 10); ὃ μὲν πάσης ἡδονῆς ἀπολαύων καὶ μηθεμίας ἀπεχόμενος ἀκόλουθος, "he who enjoys every kind of pleasure," etc. (Arist. Eth. Nic. ii. 2. 7).

ἄχρι καυροῦ. "Until a convenient season." This rendering gives the proper meaning both of ἄχρι and of καυροῦ: comp. Acts xiii. 11, xxiv. 25; Lk. xxi. 24. It is Satan's expectation that on some future occasion he will have an opportunity of better success; and an opportunity came when Judas was allowed to deliver the Christ into the hands of His enemies. That this was such an occasion seems to be indicated by Christ's own declarations: "The prince of this world cometh; and he hath nothing in Me" (Jn. xiv. 30); and "This is your hour and the power of darkness" (Lk. xxii. 53). Satan was not visible in a bodily shape then, and probably not on this earlier occasion. It is Peter who on one occasion became a visible tempter (Mt. xvi. 23; Mk. viii. 33). Not that we are to suppose, however, that Satan entirely desisted from attacks between the beginning and end of Christ's ministry: "Ye are they which have continued with Me in My temptations," rather implies the contrary (xxii. 28); but the evil one seems to have accumulated attacks at the beginning and the end. In the wilderness he employed the attractiveness of painless glory and success; in the garden he tried the dread of suffering and failure. All human temptation takes place through the instrumentality of pleasure or pain. Comp. xxii. 3.

Luke says nothing about the ministration of Angels which followed the temptation, as recorded by both Mt. and Mk., not because he doubts such facts, for he repeatedly records them (i. 11, 26, ii. 9, xxii. 43; Acts v. 19, viii. 26, xii. 23), but probably because his source said nothing about them. Mk. seems to mean that Angels were ministering to Jesus during the whole of the forty days: his three imperfects (ἡν . . . ἡν . . . δημόνων) are co-ordinate.

The Temptation is not a dream, nor a vision, nor a myth, nor a parable, translated into history by those who heard and misunderstood it, but an historical fact. It was part of the Messiah's preparation for His work. In His baptism He received strength. In His temptation He practised the use of it. Moreover, He thus as man acquired experience (Heb. v. 8) of the possibilities of evil, and of the violent and subtle ways in which His work could be ruined.

Only from Himself could the disciples have learned the history of this
struggle. Among other things it taught them the value of the Jewish Scriptures. With these for their guide they could overcome the evil one, as He had done: no special illumination was necessary (xvi. 29, 31).

IV. 14–IX. 50. The Ministry in Galilee.

Lk., like Mt. and Mk., omits the early ministry in Judæa; but we shall find that his narrative, like theirs, implies it. All three of them connect the beginning of the Galilean ministry with the Baptism and the Temptation; while Mt. and Mk. make the imprisonment of the Baptist to be the occasion of Christ’s departure from Judæa into Galilee (Mt. iv. 12; Mk. i. 14). But they neither assert nor imply that John was imprisoned soon after the Temptation; nor do they explain why the arrest of John by Herod Antipas should make Christ take refuge in this same Herod’s dominions. It is from the Fourth Gospel that we learn that there was a considerable interval between the Temptation and John’s imprisonment, and that during it Jesus went into Galilee and returned to Judæa again (ii. 13). From it also we learn that the occasion of the second departure into Galilee was the jealousy of the Pharisees, who had been told that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples even than the Baptist. Much as they disliked and feared the revolutionary influence of John, they feared that of Jesus still more. John declared that he was not the Christ, he “did no sign,” and he upheld the Law. Whereas Jesus had been pointed out as the Messiah; He worked miracles, and He disregarded, not only traditions which were held to be equal to the Law (Jn. iv. 9), but even the Law itself in the matter of the Sabbath (Jn. v. 9, 10). Thus we see that it was not to escape the persecution of Herod, but to escape that of the Pharisees, who had delivered the Baptist into the hands of Herod, that Jesus retired a second time from Judæa into Galilee. It was “after that John was delivered up” (Mk. i. 14), and “when He heard that John was delivered up” (Mt. iv. 12), that Christ retired into Galilee. In neither case was it Herod’s action, but the action of those who delivered John into the hands of Herod, that led to Christ’s change of sphere. And in this way what is recorded in the Fourth Gospel explains the obscurities of the other three.

There is a slight apparent difference between the first two Gospels and the third. The three Evangelists agree in noticing only one return from Judæa
to Galilee, and possibly each knows of only one. But whereas Mt. and Mk. seem to point to the second return, for they connect it with the delivering up of the Baptist, Lk. seems rather to point to the first return, for he connects it with “the power of the Spirit,” an expression which suggests a reference to that power which Jesus had received at the Baptism and exercised in the Temptation. It is quite possible, however, that the expression refers to the power with which He had worked miracles and taught in Galilee and Judea; in which case all three Gospels treat of the second return to Galilee.

Not very much plan is discernible in this portion of the Gospel; and it may be doubted whether the divisions made by commentators correspond with any arrangement which the writer had in his mind. But even artificial schemes help to a clearer apprehension of the whole; and the arrangement suggested by Godet is, at any rate, useful for this purpose. He takes the Development in the Position of Christ’s Disciples as the principle of his divisions.

1. iv. 14–44. To the Call of the first Disciples.
2. v. 1–vi. 11. To the Nomination of the Twelve.
3. vi. 12–viii. 56. To the first Mission of the Twelve.
4. ix. 1–50. To the Departure for Jerusalem.

These divisions are clearly marked out in the text of WH., a space being left at the end of each.

IV. 14–44. The Ministry in Galilee to the Call of the first Disciples. The Visits to Nazareth and Capernaum.

14, 15. Comp. Mt. iv. 12; Mk. i. 14. These two verses are introductory, and point out three characteristics of this period of Christ’s activity. 1. He worked in the power of the Spirit. 2. His fame spread far and wide. 3. The synagogues were the scenes of His preaching (comp. ver. 44).

14. ἐν τῇ δύναμεὶ τοῦ πνεύματος. This is perhaps to remind us that since His first departure from Galilee He has been endowed with the Holy Spirit and has received new powers (iii. 22, iv. 1, 18). Bengel’s post victoriam corroboratus connects it too exclusively with the Temptation. Unless, with De Wette, we take καὶ φήμη ἐξηλθεὶ as anticipating what follows, the statement implies much preaching and perhaps some miracles, of which Lk. has said nothing; for Jesus is famous directly He returns. The power of the Spirit had already been exhibited in Him. Jn. says that “the Galileans received Him, having seen all the things that He did in Jerusalem at the feast” (iv. 45). But it is not likely that they had heard of the wonders which attended the Birth, or of those which attended the Baptism.

There are various marks of Lk.’s style. 1. ὑπέστρεψεν, for which Mt. has ἀνεχώρησεν and Mk. ἤλθεν. Comp. ver. 1, where Lk. has ὑπέστρεψεν, while Mt. has ἀνεχώρη. 2. δύναμις of Divine power. Comp. i. 35, and see on iv. 36. 3. καθ’ ἐλημονή in this sense. Comp. xxiii. 5; Acts ix. 31, 42, x. 37:
it is peculiar to Lk. See Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 148. 4. η ηερξωρος, sc. για, is an expression of which Lk. is fond (iii. 3, iv. 37, vii. 17, viii. 37; Acts xiv. 6); not in Jn., and only twice in Mt. (iii. 5, xiv. 35) and once in Mk. (i. 28; not vi. 55).

15. καὶ αὐτὸς εἶδεν αὐτὸν. Lk. is so fond of this mode of transition that αὐτὸς possibly has no special significance; if it has, it is "He Himself," as distinct from the rumour respecting Him. The imperfect points to His habitual practice at this time, and seems to deprive what follows of all chronological connexion. All the Gospels mention His teaching in synagogues, and give instances of His doing so during the early part of His ministry (Mt iv. 23, ix. 35, xii. 9, xiii. 54; Mk. i. 21, 39, iii. 1, vi. 2; Lk. iv. 44, vi. 6; Jn. vi. 59). Towards the close of it, when the hostility of the teachers became more pronounced, there is less mention of this practice: perhaps He then taught elsewhere, in order to avoid needless collision. It should be noticed that here, as elsewhere, it is the teaching rather than the worship in the synagogues that is prominent. Synagogues were primarily places of instruction (xiii. 10; Jn. xviii. 20; Acts xiii. 27, xv. 21, etc.), and it was as such that Augustus encouraged them. Morality of a high kind was taught there, and morality is on the side of order.

ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς αὐτῶν. This means in the synagogues of the Galileans. Galilee at this time was very populous. Josephus no doubt exaggerates when he says that the smallest villages had fifteen thousand inhabitants (B. J. iii. 3. 2), and that there were over two hundred towns and villages. But in any case there were many Galileans. Among them there was more freshness and less formalism than among the inhabitants of Judæa. Here the Pharisees and the hierarchy had less influence, and therefore Galilee was a more hopeful field in which to seek the first elements of a Church. On the other hand, it was necessary to break down the prejudices of those who had known Him in His youth, and had seen in Him no signs of His being the Messiah that they were expecting: and the fame of the miracles which He had wrought in Judæa was likely to contribute towards this. Thus the Judæan ministry prepared the way for the more promising ministry in Galilee. We have no means of estimating the number of Galilean synagogues; but the fact that such a place as Capernaum had either none, or only a poor one, until a Roman centurion was moved to provide one ("himself built us our synagogue," vii. 5), is some evidence that by no means every village or even every small town possessed one. The remains of ancient synagogues exist at several places in Galilee; Tell-Hum, Irbid (the Arbela of Mac. ix. 2), Jisch (Giscalca), Metron (Mero), Kasyoun, Nabartein, and Kefr-Bereim. But it is doubtful whether any of these are older than the second or third century.
The origin of synagogues is to be sought in the Babylonish captivity; and they greatly increased in number after the destruction of the temple. The fact that Jewish legend derives the institution of synagogues from Moses, shows how essential the Jews considered it to be. The statement that there were at one time 480 synagogues in Jerusalem is also legendary; but 480 may be a symbolical number. One has only to remember the size of Jerusalem to see the absurdity of 480 places of public instruction in it. But large towns sometimes had several synagogues, either for different nationalities (Acts vi. 9; see Lumby and Blass) or different handicrafts. 1

Σοβαζόμενος ὑπὸ πάντων. Because of the power of His preaching, especially when contrasted with the lifeless repetitions and senseless trivialities of ordinary teachers.

16-30. The Visit to Nazareth. Comp. Mt. xiii. 53-58; Mk. vi. 1-6. It remains doubtful whether Lk. here refers to the same visit as that recorded by Mt. and Mk. If it is the same, he perhaps has purposely transposed it to the opening of the ministry, as being typical of the issue of Christ's ministry. He was rejected by His own people. Similarly the non-Galilean ministry opens with a rejection (ix. 51-56). In any case, the form of the narrative is peculiar to Lk., showing that he here has some special source. We are not to understand that the Galilean ministry began at Nazareth. More probably Christ waited until the reports of what He had said and done in other parts of Galilee prepared the way for His return to Nazareth as a teacher.

16. ὅτι ἦν [ἀνα]τεθραμμένος. This tells us rather more than ii. 51: it implies, moreover, that for some time past Nazareth had ceased to be His home. But the addition of "where He had been brought up" explains what follows. It had been "His custom" during His early life at Nazareth to attend the synagogue every sabbath. It is best to confine κατὰ τὸ εἰσοδόσι τοῦ τοῦτος with the clause in which it is embedded, and not carry it on to ἀνέστη ἀναγνώσας: it was possibly the first time that He had stood up to read at Nazareth. But the phrase may refer to what had been His custom elsewhere since He began His ministry; or it may be written from the Evangelist's point of view of what was afterwards His custom. We may therefore choose between these explanations. 1. He had previously been in the habit of attending the synagogue at Nazareth, and on this occasion stood up to read. 2. He had previously been in the habit of reading at Nazareth. 3. He had lately been in the habit of reading elsewhere, and now does so at Nazareth. 4. This was an early example of what became His custom. In no case must the sermon be included in the custom. That this was His first sermon at Nazareth is implied by the whole context.

1 On synagogues see Edersh. L. & T. i. pp. 430-450, Hist. of Jewish Nation, pp. 100-129, ed. 1896; Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. ii. 2, pp. 52-89; Hausrath, N.T. Times, i. pp. 84-93; Plumptre in D.B.; Leyer in Herzog, PRE. 1; Strack in Herzog, PRE. 2; and other authorities in Schürer.
In D both ἰησοῦς and αὐτῷ after ἐλθὼν are omitted, and the text runs, ἐκθὺν δὲ εἰς Ναζαρέτ ἐσοφ ἦν καὶ τὸ ἐλθός ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν; but in the Latin the former word is restored, veniens autem in Nazareth ubi erat nutricatus secundum consuetudinem in sabbato in synagogam. The omissions are perhaps due to Marcionite influence. According to Marcion, Christ came direct from heaven into the synagogue, de caelo in synagogam (see p. 131); and therefore all trace of His previous life in Nazareth must be obliterated. He was not reared there, and was not accustomed to visit the synagogue there. Only a custom of attending the synagogue existed. See Rendel Harris, Study of Codex Bezae, p. 232, in Texts and Studies, ii. 1. Comp. the insertions ix. 54, 55, which may be due to the same influence.

The phrase κατὰ τὸ ἐλθόν occurs in LXX Num. xxiv. 1; Sus. 13. It is characteristic of Lk. See on κατὰ τὸ ἔδωκα, i. 8. With the dat. κατὰ τὸ ἐλθόν occurs only here and Acts xvii. 2; and τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων occurs only here, Acts xiii. 14, and xvi. 13: but comp. Lk. xiii. 14, 16 and xiv. 5. It is a periphrasis for ἐν τοῖς σαββ., or ἐν τῷ σαβ., or τοῖς σαβ., or τῷ σαβ.

ἀνέστη ἀναγνώσας. Standing to read was the usual practice, excepting when the Book of Esther was read at the Feast of Purim; then the reader might sit. Christ's standing up indicated that He had been asked to read, or was ready to do so. This is the only occasion on which we are told that Jesus read.

The lector was close to the front seats, where those who were most likely to be called upon to read commonly sat. A lesson from the θῦρα or Law was read first, and then one from the Prophets. After the lesson had been read in Hebrew it was interpreted into Aramaic (Neh. viii. 8), or into Greek in places where Greek was commonly spoken. This was done verse by verse in the Law; but in the Prophets three verses might be taken at once, and in this case Jesus seems to have taken two verses. Then followed the exposition or sermon. The reader, interpreter, and preacher might be one, two, or three persons. Here Christ was both reader and preacher; and possibly He interpreted as well. Although there were officers with fixed duties attached to each synagogue, yet there was no one specially appointed either to read, or interpret, or preach, or pray. Any member of the congregation might discharge these duties; and probably those who were competent discharged them in turn at the invitation of the ἄρχων ἀναγνώσας (Acts xiii. 15. Comp. Philo in Eus. Prot. Evang. viii. 7, p. 360 A, and Quod omnis probus liber ii.). Hence it was always easy for Jesus to address the congregation. When He became famous as a teacher He would often be invited to do so. And during His early years He may have read without interpreting or expounding; for even those under age were sometimes allowed to read in the synagogues. We cannot infer from His being able to read that He Himself possessed the Scriptures. In N.T. ἀναγνώσας is used in no other sense than that of reading; lit. recognizing

---

1 We have no right to infer from this incident that the Hebrew Bible could still be understood by the people. Nothing is said about interpretation; but we cannot assume that it did not take place. Mk. xv. 34 is evidence of some knowledge of O.T. in Aramaic. See Classical Review, May 1894, p. 216, against Kautzsch, Grammatik des biblischen Aramäischen, p. 19.

2 Comp. ἀναστὰς δὲ τις τῶν ἐκπορευόμενων ὕψωσεν τήρατο καὶ συνοικοῦσα, οὗ ἀρτι χρὸνον ἐκπαίδευσε πρὸς τὸ βεβλίον (Philo, De Septenario, vi.). See also the fragments of Philo in Eus. Prot. Evang. viii. 7, 12, 13, and viii. 12, 10, ed. Gaissford. These three passages give us Philo's account of the synagogue services.
again the written characters; of reading aloud, Acts xiii. 27, xv. 21; 2 Cor. iii. 15; Col. iv. 16; 1 Thes. v. 27.

17. ἐπέδοθη. "Was handed" to Him, "was given over by handing": comp. ἐπέλθην (ver. 42). It does not mean "was handed to Him in addition," implying that something else had been handed to Him previously. This meaning is not common, and is not found elsewhere in N.T. The reading of the Parascha, or section from the Law, had probably preceded, and had been read possibly by someone else. This was the Ἡφθήνα, or prophetic section (Acts xiii. 15). That Is. lxi. 1, 2 was the lesson appointed for the day is quite uncertain. We do not even know whether there was at that time any cycle of prophetic lessons, nor whether it would be strictly adhered to, if there was such. Apparently Isaiah was handed to Him without His asking for it; but that also is uncertain. The cycle of lessons now in use is of much later origin; and therefore to employ the Jewish lectionary in order to determine the day on which this took place is futile. On the other hand, there is no evidence that "Jesus takes the section which He lights upon as soon as it is unrolled"; for ἐὰν quite as easily may mean the opposite;—that He intentionally found a passage which had been previously selected.

The more definite ἀναπτύξεις (โฆ D) is probably a correction of ἀνολέσις (A B L and most versions). The former occurs nowhere in N.T., while the latter is very common: see esp. Rev. v. 2, 3, 4, 5, x. 2, 8, xx. 12. Fond as Lk. is of analytical tenses, ἥν γεγραμμένον occurs nowhere else in his writings: ἐστι γεγραμ. is common in Jn. (ii. 17, vi. 31, 45, x. 34, xii. 14, 16).

18. The quotation is given by the Evangelist somewhat freely from LXX, probably from memory and under the influence of other passages of Scripture. To argue that the Evangelist cannot be S. Luke, because S. Luke was a Gentile, and therefore would not know the LXX, is absurd. S. Luke was not only a constant companion of S. Paul, but a fellow-worker with him in dealing with both Jews and Gentiles. He could not have done this without becoming familiar with the LXX.

Down to ἀπέσταλκέν με inclusive the quotation agrees with LXX. After that the text of LXX runs thus: ἱάσασθαι τοὺς συντετραμμένους τὴν καρδιάν, κηρύξει αἰχμαλώτους ἄφεν ἐκ ταυτοίς ἀνά-βλεψιν, καλέσαι ἐναντίον Κυρίου δεκτών. In many authorities the clause ἱάσασθαι τοὺς συντετραμμένους τὴν καρδιάν has been inserted into the text of Lk. in order to make the quotation more full and more in harmony with O.T. We have similar insertions Mt. xv. 8; Acts vii. 37; Rom. xiii. 9; Heb. xii. 20, and perhaps ii. 7. The evidence against the clause ἱάσασθαι . . . τὴν καρδιάν here (in Ν A Ο of LXX τὴν καρδιά) is decisive. It is omitted by Ν Β D Λ Ξ, 13-69, 33, most MSS. of
In the original the Prophet puts into the mouth of Jehovah's ideal Servant a gracious message to those in captivity, promising them release and a return to the restored Jerusalem, the joy of which is compared to the joy of the year of jubilee. It is obvious that both figures, the return from exile and the release at the jubilee, admirably express Christ's work of redemption.

**Πνεῦμα Κυρίου ἐπ' ἑμέ.** In applying these words to Himself the Christ looks back to His baptism. He is more than a Prophet; He is “the Son, the Beloved One,” of Jehovah (iii. 21, 22).

With ἐπ' ἑμέ (ἑστι) comp. ἂν ἐπ' αὐτόν (ii. 25).—οὗ ἐνεκέν. Not “wherefore,” as in Acts xix. 32, which here would spoil the sense, but “because,” a meaning which ἐνεκέν often has in class. Grk. Vulg. has propter quod. Comp. Gen. xviii. 5, xix. 8, xxii. 16, xxxviii. 26; Num. x. 31, xiv. 43, etc. The Ionic form ἐνεκέν is found xviii. 29; Acts xxviii. 20; 2 Cor. iii. 10: but ἐνεκέν is the commonest form (2 Cor. vii. 12), and ἐνεκέ also occurs before consonants (vi. 22; Acts xxvi. 21).

**ἐχρισθέν με.** The Christ was anointed with the Spirit, as Prophets and priests were anointed with oil (1 Kings xix. 16; Ex. xxviii. 41, xxx. 30). Unlike πέννης (2 Cor. ix. 9), πνεῦμός “always had a bad meaning until it was ennobled by the Gospels” (vi. 20, vii. 22; 2 Cor. vi. 10; Jas. ii. 5). It suggests abject poverty (πνεῦμα = “I crouch”). See Hatch, *Bibl. Grk.* pp. 76, 77.

**ἀπέσταλκέν με.** Change from aor. to perf. “He anointed Me (once for all); He hath sent Me (and I am here)” : comp. 1 Cor. xv. 4. We have had ἀποστέλλω of the mission of Gabriel (i. 19, 26); here and ver. 43 we have it of the mission of the Christ; vii. 27 of the Forerunner; ix. 2 of the Twelve. Whereas πέμπω is quite general and implies no special relation between sender and sent, ἀποστέλλω adds the idea of a delegated authority making the person sent to be the envoy or representative of the sender. But πέμπω also is used of the mission of the Christ (xx. 13), of Prophets (ver. 26, xx. 11, 12), and of the Apostles (Jn. xiii. 20, xx. 21). Strictly speaking, αἰχμαλώτους means “prisoners of war” (αἰχμή and ἀλωτός): freq. in class. Grk. but here only in N.T. The cognate αἰχμαλωτίζω occurs xxi. 24; 2 Cor. x. 5; 2 Tim. iii. 6; αἰχμαλωσία, Eph. iv. 8. Neither this metaphor nor that of τυφλοίς ἀνάβλεψιν harmonizes very well with the year of jubilee, to which Godet would restrict the whole passage. Both might apply to captives in exile, some of whom had been blinded by their captors, or by long confinement in a dungeon.

**ἀποστείλαι τεθραυσμένοις ἐν ἀφέσει.** These words come from another part of Isaiah (lviii. 6), and are perhaps inserted through a slip of memory. Jesus was reading, not quoting without book; and therefore we cannot suppose that He inserted the clause.

Lightfoot says that it was lawful to skip from one passage to another in reading the Prophets, but not in reading the Law (Hor. Heb. on Lk. iv. 17). That might explain the omission of a few verses, but not the going back three chapters. The insertion comes from the Evangelist, who is probably quoting from memory, and perhaps regards the unconsciously combined passages as a sort of "programme of the ministry." The strong expression τεθραυσμένος is here applied to those who are shattered in fortune and broken in spirit.

For the pregnant construction, "send so as to be in," comp. i. 17. The asyndeton throughout, first between ἔχαρσεν and ἀπέσταλκεν, and then between the three infinitives which depend upon ἀπέσταλκεν, is impressive.

19. ἐναυτῶν Κυρίου δεκτῶν. The age of the Messiah, which is Jehovah's time for bestowing great blessings on His people. Comp. καιρὸς δεκτός (2 Cor. vi. 2; Is. xlix. 8): δεκτός is not found in class. Grk. It is strange that Clement of Alexandria and Origen, who are commonly so ready to turn fact into figure, here turn an expression which is manifestly figurative into a literal statement of fact, and limit Christ's ministry to a period of twelve months (comp. Clem. Hom. xvii. 19). Keim and other modern writers have made the same limit; but the three Passovers distinguished by S. John (ii. 13, vi. 4, xi. 55) are quite fatal to it. It is, however, an equally faulty exegesis to find the three years (i.e. two years and a fraction) of Christ's ministry in the three years of Lk. xiii. 6-9 or the three days of xiii. 31-33. The first of these is obviously a parabolic saying not to be understood literally; and the other probably is such. The suggestion that the three servants sent to the wicked husbandmen mean the three years of the ministry is almost grotesque. See Nösgen, Gesch. Jesu Christi, Kap. viii., München, 1890.

20. The vivid description of what followed the reading of the lesson points to an eye-witness as the source of the narrative. But the "closed" of AV. and RV. gives a wrong impression of the first incident: it leads one to think of a modern book with leaves. The Rhemish has "folded"; but "rolled up" would be a better rendering of πτύχας. The long strip of parchment, or less probably papyrus (2 Jn. 12), would be wound upon a roller, or possibly upon two rollers, one at each end of the strip. Hence the name megalith (volumen), from γέλαλι, "to roll." Such a book was in Greek sometimes called κεφάλις (Ezr. vi. 2; Ezek. iii. 1-3) or κεφαλίς βεβηλίου (Heb. x. 7; Ps. xxxix. 8; Ezek. ii. 9): and it is said that κεφαλίς originally meant the knob (cornu or umbilicus) at the end of the roller; but no instance of this use of κεφαλίς appears to be known (Wscit. on Heb. x. 7).

ἀποθεοῦ τῷ ὑπηρέτῃ. The ἀπο- implies that it was the minister or

1 On the uncertainty respecting the length of the ministry, and the conjectures respecting it made by early Christians, see Iren. Häv. ii. 22; Eus. H. E. i. 18; Sanday in the Expositor, 1st series, xi. p. 16.
chazzan who had handed Him the book who received it back again. The τῷ may have the same meaning, just as τῷ βιβλίῳ means the book which had been given to Him. But τῷ υπηρέτῃ more probably means the minister usually found in a synagogue. It was among the duties of the chazzan to take the Scriptures from the ark and put them away again (Surenhusius, Mishna, ii. 246, iii. 266). He taught the children to read, and inflicted the scourgings (Mt. x. 17). A Roman epitaph to a Jew who held this office is quoted by Schürer, II. ii. p. 66—

Φλαβίος Ιουλιανος υπηρετης
Φλαβία Ιουλιανη θυγατρι πατρι
Εν ειρήνη η κοιμησις σου.

The chazzan of the synagogue became the deacon or sub-deacon of the Christian Church.

A υπηρέτης is lit. “an under-rower” (ἐφέσω). The word may be used of almost any kind of attendant or servant (Acts v. 22, 26, xiii. 5; Mt. xxvi. 58; Mk. xiv. 54, 65; Jn. vii. 32, 45; 1 Cor. iv. 1). For the two participles, πεποίηται ... ἐποδοθεῖ, without καλ, comp. Acts xii. 4, 25.

ἐκάθισεν. This was the usual attitude for expounding or preaching, and in the synagogues there was commonly a raised seat for the purpose. On other occasions we find Christ sitting to teach (v. 3; Mt. v. 1; Mk. iv. 1; [Jn. viii. 2]); and the disciples do the same (Acts xvi. 13).

ὁ εὐαγγελιτής. “Were fixed intently.” Their intense interest was caused by His reputation as a teacher and as a worker of miracles, as well as by His having been brought up amongst them; perhaps also by His look and manner of reading. That He had selected an unexpected passage, or had omitted the usual lesson from the Law, and that this surprised them, is pure conjecture. Comp. Acts vi. 15, where the same verb is used of the whole Sanhedrin riveting their eyes upon Stephen. It is a favourite word with Lk., who uses it a dozen times: elsewhere in N.T. only 2 Cor. iii. 7, 13. It occurs in LXX (1 Es. vi. 28; 3 Mac. ii. 26), in Aq. (Job vii. 8), and in Jos. (B. J. v. 12. 3). The analytical tense marks the continuance of the action.

21. ηρέθη δὲ λέγειν. The ηρέθη is not pleonastic: it points to the solemnity of the moment when His words broke the silence of universal expectation: comp. vii. 24, xi. 29, xii. 1, xiv. 18. What follows may be regarded as a summary of what was said. It gives us the main subject of His discourse. We are led to suppose that He said much more; perhaps interpreting to them in detail the things concerning Himself (xxiv. 27). The conversation with Nicodemus is similarly condensed by S. John (iii. 1-21). Even without this narrative we should know from vii. 22 and Mt.
xi. 5 that Christ interpreted Is. lxi. i ff. of Himself. The whole of the O.T. was to Him a prophecy respecting His life and work. And this applies not only to prophetic utterances, but also to rites and institutions, as well as to historical events, which were so ordered as to be a forecast of the salvation and judgment which He was to bring. This verse sums up His sermon.

This passage of Scripture” (Mk. xii. 10; Jn. vii. 42, etc.): for Scripture as a whole the plural is used (xxiv. 27, 32, 45; Mt. xxi. 42, xxii. 29, xxvi. 54, 56; Mk. xii. 24, etc.). His interpretation of the prophecy was at the same time a fulfilment of it; for the voice of Him of whom the Prophet wrote was sounding in their ears. Hence it is that He affirms πεπλήρωταί ἐν τοῖς δοιν ὤμοι. As Renan says, Il ne prêchait pas ses opinions, il se prêchait lui-même.

22. ἐμαρτύροντο ἀυτῷ. “They bore witness to Him,” not that what He said about Himself, but that what rumour had said respecting His power as a teacher, was true. They praised Him in an empty-hearted way. What they remembered of Him led them to think that the reports about Him were exaggerations; but they were willing to admit that this was not the case. Comp. xi. 48. This “bearing witness” almost of necessity implies that Jesus had said a great deal more than is recorded here. What follows shows that they did not believe the teaching which so startled and impressed them, any more than those whose attention was riveted on Stephen, before he began to address them, were disposed to accept his teaching. The cases are very similar. Hence θαυμάζον expresses amazement rather than admiration.

For θαυμάζειν ἐπὶ see small print on ii. 33.

toίς λόγοις τῆς χάριτος. Characterizing genitive or genitive of quality; freq. in writings influenced by Hebrew, “which employs this construction, not merely through poverty in adjectives, but also through the vividness of phraseology which belongs to Oriental languages (Win. xxxiv. 3. b, p. 297. Comp. οἰκονόμας τῆς δικλας (xvi. 8); κριτῆς τῆς δικλας (xviii. 6); ἀκροαθῆς ἐπιληψομένης (Jas. i. 25); κριτὴν διαλογισμῶν ποιημῶν (Jas. ii. 4); and perhaps the difficult προκῆς ἅπαξλεκτ.μα (Jas. i. 17). The meaning here is “winning words.” The very first meaning of χάρις (χαλιο) is “comeliness, winsomeness” (Hom. Od.

1 “Jesus acknowledged the Old Testament in its full extent and its perfect sacredness. The Scripture cannot be broken, He says (Jn. x. 35), and forthwith draws His argument from the wording of it. Of course He can only have meant by this the Scripture in the form in which it was handed down, and He must have regarded it exactly as His age did (comp. xi. 51). Any kind of superior knowledge in these matters would merely have made Him incapable of placing Himself on a level with His hearers respecting the use of Scripture, or would have compelled Him to employ a far-reaching accommodation, the very idea of which involves internal untruthfulness. All, therefore, that is narrated in Scripture He accepted absolutely as actual history, and He regarded the several books as composed by the men to whom they were ascribed by tradition.” (B. Weiss, Leben Jesu, I. iii. 5, Eng. tr. ii. pp. 62, 63).
and in all these passages it is the winsomeness of language that is specially signified. From this objective attractiveness it easily passes to subjective "favour, kindness, goodwill," esp. from a superior to an inferior (Acts ii. 47; Gen. xviii. 3, xxxii. 5, xxxiii. 8, etc.) and hence, in particular, of finding "favour" with God (i. 30; Acts vii. 46; Exod. xxxiii. 12, 13, 16, etc.). From the sense of God's favour generally (ii. 40, 52; Jn. i. 14, 16) we come to the specially theological sense of "God's favour to sinners, the free gift of His grace" (Acts xiv. 3, xx. 24, 32; and the Pauline Epistles. passim). Lastly, it sometimes means the "gratitude," which this favour produces in the recipient (vi. 32-34, xvii. 9; I Cor. x. 30). The word does not occur in Mt. or Mk. See Sanday on Rom. i. 5, and Blass on Acts ii. 47 and iv. 33.

Origen evidently had this passage in his mind when he wrote: "For a proof that grace was poured on His lips (Ps. xlv. 3, ἐξεχώρη γὰρ χαρὰς ἐν χειλεσίω σου) is this, that although the period of His teaching was short,—for He taught somewhere about a year and a few months,—the world has been filled with His teaching" (De Prin. iv. 1. 5). But the words so calculated to win did not win the congregation. They were "fulfilled in their ears," but not in their hearts. 1

A doubt at once arose in their minds as to the congruity of such words with one whom they had known all His life as the "son of Joseph" the carpenter. Here ὁδός has a contemptuous turn, as often (v. 21, vii. 39, 49, xv. 2, xxii. 56, 59, etc.) yet the Vulg. in none of these places has iste, but hic. 2 "Is not this person Joseph's son? What does he mean by using such language?" Just as a single sentence is given as a summary of His discourse, so a single question is given as a summary of their scepticism.

While the ὁδός and ὑδός is in all three, the question as a whole differs. Mk. has ὅχι ὁδός ἐστιν ὁ τέκτων, ὁ ὑδὸς τῆς Μαρίας; (vi. 3). Mt. has ὅχι ὁδός ἐστιν ὁ τοῦ τέκτων ὑδός; (xiii. 55). Lk. ὅχι ὕδος ἐστιν Ἰωάννης ὁδός; And while the others mention Christ's brothers and sisters in close connexion with His mother, Lk. mentions none of them. Lk. and Jn. seem to prefer the expression "son of Joseph" (Lk. iii. 23, iv. 22; Jn. i. 45, vi. 42). Renan thinks that "Marc ne connaît pas Joseph (V. de J. p. 71). But it may be that, as he does not record the virgin birth of Christ, he avoids the expression "son of Joseph" or "the carpenter's son," which those who have recorded the virgin birth could use without risk of being misunderstood.

23. Πάντως ἐρείτε μοι τὴν παραβολὴν ταύτην. "At all events, assuredly, ye will say," etc.: πάντως is used in strong affirmations (Acts xxi. 22, xxviii. 4; I Cor. ix. 10). Excepting Heb. ix. 9 and xi. 19, παραβολὴ occurs only in the Synoptic Gospels: in Jn. x. 6 and xvi. 25, 29, as in 2 Pet. ii. 22, the word used is παρομια. It need not be doubted that the notion of placing beside for the sake of comparison, rather than that of merely putting forth, lies at the root of παραβολὴ. From the notion of (1) "throwing beside" come the further notions of (2) "exposing" and (3) "comparing," all three of which are common meanings of παραβάλλειν. While the adj. παράβολος represents the derived notion on the one side, the subst. παραβολή represents that on the other side. A παραβολή, therefore, is "an utterance which involves a comparison." Hence various meanings: 1. a complete parable or allegory (viii. 4, xiii. 6,

1 Comp. Augustine's description of his indifference to the preaching of Ambrose, although charmed with his winning style: Rerum incuriosus et contemptor adstabami et detectabar suavitate sermonis (In Ezek. xxxiii. 32).
126 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [IV. 23.

etc.); 2. a single figurative saying, proverb, or illustration (here; v. 36, vi. 39); 3. a saying of deeper meaning, which becomes intelligible through comparison, in which sense it is sometimes joined with σκοτεινός λόγος (Prov. i. 6), προβλήμα (Ps. xlix. 5, lxviii. 2), and the like. In the teaching of Christ παραβολή is commonly used in the first sense, and is a means of making known the mysteries of the kingdom in a mixed audience; for it conceals from the unworthy what it reveals to the worthy (viii. 9, 10). See Crem. Lex. pp. 124, 657; Hatch, Bibl. Grk., p. 70; Hase, Gesch. Jesu, § 63, p. 535, ed. 1891; Didon, Jesus Christ, ch. vi. p. 391, ed. 1891; Latham, Pastor Pastorum, ch. x.

ιατρείς, θεραπευον τσαυτόν. "Heal thine own lameness" is the Hebrew form of the proverb. Similar sayings exist in other literatures: e.g. a fragment of Euripides, ἄλλων ιατρός, αὐτος ἀλευρί βρών; Ser. Sulpicius to Cicero, Neque imitate malos medicos, qui in alienis morbis profitentur tenere se medicinae scientiam, ipsi se curare non possunt (Cic. Epp. ad diversos, iv. 5). Hobart quotes from Galen, ἐγὼν οὖν αὐτὸν ἐαυτόν πρῶτον ἱκανόν ἰσότατο τὸ σώματα καὶ οἴνως ἐπίχειρεν ἐτέρως θεραπεῖαι. Comp. Aesch. P. V. 469; Ov. Metam. vii. 561; and the other examples in Lightfoot and Wetst. It is remarkable that this saying of Christ is preserved only by the beloved physician. Its meaning is disputed. Some take the words which follow to be the explanation of it: "Heal the ills of thine own town." Thus Corn. à Lap., "Cure Thine own people and Thine own country, which should be as dear to Thee as Thyself." Similarly Beng. Alf. Sadler and others. It is thus made to mean much the same as "Charity begins at home." But ιατρείς and σεαυτόν ought to be interpreted of the same person or group; not one of a person and the other of his neighbours. "Prophet, heal Thine own countrymen" is not parallel to "Physician, heal Thyself." The saying plainly refers to the passage just read from Isaiah; and although Lk. omits the words "to heal the broken-hearted," yet Christ must have read them, and He had probably explained them. He professed to be the fulfilment of them, and to be healing the miseries of mankind. The people are supposed to tell Him to better His own condition before bettering that of others. He must make His own position more secure, and give evidence of His high mission before asserting it. He must work convincing miracles, such as He is said to have worked elsewhere. Comp. σώσον σεαυτόν καὶ ζωής (xxiii. 39). Comp. also Logion vi.

δια ηκουσαμεν. They do not say δια ἑπολής, wishing to leave it open whether the report may not be untrue. We learn from Jn. ii. 12 that after the miracle at Cana, Jesus was at Capernaum for a short time; and we know also that there were many unrecorded miracles. It is probably to reports of some of these that reference is here made. For the constr. comp. Acts vii. 12 and xxiv. 10.
el·see τὴν Καφαρναοῦμ. See on ver. 31. The readings vary between el·see τὴν Καφ. (N B), el·see Καφ. (D L), εν τῇ Καφ. (X), and εν Καφ. (A K). The substitution of εν for el·see, and the omission of the article between a preposition and a proper name, are obvious corrections by a later hand. The el·see is not "put for εν." It may be doubted whether these two prepositions are ever interchanged. Rather el·see is used because of the idea of motion contained in "come to pass." It is scarcely possible that el·see contains the notion of "to the advantage of," and indicates the petty jealousy of the people of Nazareth. We have the same constr. i. 44; Acts xxviii. 6 (comp. Lk. xi. 7); and in no case is there any idea of advantage. That the jealousy was a fact, and that the people of Nazareth were inclined to discount or discredit all that seemed to tell in favour of prosperous Capernaum, is probable; but there is no hint of this in the el·see. What is said to have happened to Capernaum ought to happen here. Comp. the Cornish use of "to" for "at." In N.T. δδε is never "thus," but either "hither" (ix. 41, xiv. 21, xix. 27) or "here" (ix. 33, xxii. 38). The εν τῇ πατρίδι σου is epexegetic of δδε, and means "Thy native town," not the whole of Israel: comp. Mk. vi. 5; Mt. xiii. 58.

24. Εἶπεν δὲ. When these words occur between two utterances of Christ, they seem to indicate that there is an interval between what precedes and what follows. The report of what was said on this occasion is evidently very condensed. Comp. vi. 39, xii. 16, xv. 11, xvii. 1, 22, xviii. 9, and see on i. 8. The δὲ is "but" (Cov.) rather than "and" (all other English Versions); ait autem (Vulg.). "But, instead of gratifying them, He said." There are various proverbial sayings which declare that those who are close to what is great do not appreciate the greatness. Jesus declares that He is no exception to this rule, and implies that He will work no miracles to free Himself from its operation. In the wilderness He had resisted a similar suggestion that He should work a miracle of display, a mere τέρας (vv. 9–11). In this matter Nazareth is a type of the whole nation, which rejected Him because He did not conform to their own ideas of the Messiah. Their test resembles that of the hierarchy, "He is the King of Israel; let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on Him" (Mt. xxvii. 42). For ἐλπεν δὲ see p. lxxiii.

25. "But I am like the Prophets, not only in the treatment which I receive from My own people, but also in My principles of action. For they also bestowed their miraculous benefits upon outsiders, although there were many of their own people who would have been very glad of such blessings." Christ is here appealing to their knowledge of Scripture, not to any facts outside the O.T. Testatur hoc Dominus ex luce omniscientiae suae is not a legitimate inference. Arguments drawn from what was known to Him, but not known to them, would not be likely to influence His audience. Note ὅς = "when."

ἐν' ἀληθείας. "On a basis of truth": comp. Mk. xii. 14. We have similar adverbial expressions in ἐν' τοις (sc. μιθραίοις), ἐν τῷ σχολή, ἐν τῷ καιρῷ, ἐν' ἀληθείας.
Jesus, like His brother James (Jas. v. 17), follows Jewish tradition as to the duration of the famine. In 1 Kings xviii. 1 we are told that the rain came in the third year, which would make the drought about two years and a half. But ever since the persecution under Antiochus Epiphanes, three years and a half (=42 months = 1260 days) had become the traditional duration of times of great calamity (Dan. vii. 25, xii. 7; Rev. xi. 2, 3, xii. 6, 14, xiii. 5). The Jews would regard "in the third year" as covering three years, and would argue that the famine must have continued for some time after the rain came.

The translation of el μη in this and the following clauses by "but only" (RV.), sed (Beza), or sed tantum, is justifiable, because "save" (AV.) and nisi (Vulg.) seem to involve an absurdity which was not apparent to a Greek. It is not, however, correct to say that in such cases el μη is put for ἀλλὰ any more than in Mt. xx. 23 or Mk. iv. 22 it would be correct to say that ἀλλὰ is put for el μη. Here and in Mt. xii. 4 (comp. Rom. xiv. 14; 1 Cor. vii. 17; Gal. i. 7, ii. 16) "the question is not whether el μη retains its exceptive force, for this it seems always to do, but whether the exception refers to the whole clause or to the verb alone" (Lft. on Gal. i. 19): comp. Rev. xxi. 27.—In eis Σαρεφά, κ.τ.λ., we perhaps have a quotation from LXX of 1 Kings xvii. 9. There, as here, the readings vary between Σαφωνας and Σαδωνας (sc. γῆς or γῆ). Here the latter is right, meaning the territory of Sidon, in which Sarepta lay. Zarephath (in Syrian Tzarah, in Greek Σαρεφά, Σαρέφα, and Σάφα) is probably represented by the modern Surafend on the coast road between Tyre and Sidon.

ἐπὶ ἔτη τρία καὶ μήνας ἔλη. Here, as in Jas. v. 17, only the land of Israel need be understood; but it is possible that in each case we have a popular hyperbole, and that the whole world is meant. Lk. xxi. 23 and Rom. ix. 28 are not quite parallel, for there the context plainly limits the meaning. Lk. xxiii. 44 is another doubtful case, and there AV. has "earth" and RV. "land." Both have "land" here.

26. The spelling of Ἐλισαβάου is not well attested (WH. ii. App. p. 159). For some of the "many lepers" comp. 2 Kings vii. 3, where we have four at the gate of Samaria. In N.T. Σῶρας is the only form of the adj. that is found, viz. here and perhaps Mk. vii. 26; but Σωρος, Σωρος, and Σωρωκός occur elsewhere (Hdt. ii. 104. 6; Aesch. Pers. 83; Theophr. C. F. ii. 17. 3).

27. ἐπήκοοθεσαν πάντες θυμῶν. See on i. 66. They see the point of His illustrations; He has been comparing them to those Jews who were judged less worthy of Divine benefits than the
heathen. It is this that infuriates them, just as it infuriated the Jews at Jerusalem to be told by S. Paul that the heathen would receive the blessings which they despised (Acts xiii. 46, 50, xxii. 21, 22). Yet to this day the position remains the same; and Gentiles enjoy the Divine privileges of which the Jews have deprived themselves. His comparing Himself to such Prophets as Elijah and Elisha would add to the wrath of the Nazarenes. On the other hand, these early instances of God's special blessings being conferred upon heathen would have peculiar interest for Lk.

29. ἐως ὅφρος τοῦ ὅρους. Tradition makes the scene of this attempt to be a precipice, varying from 80 to 300 feet in height, which exists some distance off to the S.E. of the town; and we read that "they cast Him out of the town and led Him as far as the brow," etc. But modern writers think that a much smaller precipice close at hand is the spot. Van der Velde conjectures that it has crumbled away; Conder, that it is hidden under some of the houses. Stanley says that Nazareth "is built 'upon,' that is, on the side of, 'a mountain'; but the 'brow' is not beneath, but over the town, and such a cliff as is here implied is to be found, as all modern travellers describe, in the abrupt face of the limestone rock, about 30 or 40 feet high, overhanging the Maronite Convent at the S.W. corner of the town" (Sin. & Pal. p. 367). So also Robinson (Res. in Pal. ii. pp. 325, 330), Hacket (D.B. ii. p. 470), and Schulz in Herzog (PRE. x. p. 447). The ἐφ' ὅ, of course, refers to τοῦ ὅρους, not to ὅφρος. Both AV. and RV. have "the brow of the hill whereon," which might easily be misunderstood. The town is on the hill, but not on the brow of it: the brow is above the modern village. Nowhere else in N.T. does ὅφρος occur. Comp. Hom. II. xx. 151; and ὅφρνοις, II. xxii. 411, and Hdt. v. 92. 10, with other instances in Wetst. Supercilium is similarly used: Virg. Georg. i. 108; Liv. xxvii. 18, xxxiv. 29.

ἐστε κατακρημνίσαι. The ἐστε is not needed (i. 22; Mt. ii. 2, xx. 28; Acts v. 31); but it expresses more clearly the result which was intended. Comp. xx. 20, where, as here, ἐστε has been altered in some texts into the simpler ἔστιν, a constr. which Lk. does not employ elsewhere. In ix. 52 the true reading is perhaps ἔστι; but in Mt. x. 1, xxiv. 24, xxvii. 1 there is no doubt about the ἐστε. For κατακρημνίσα (here only in N.T.) comp. 2 Chron. xxv. 12; 2 Mac. xii. 15, xiv. 43; 4 Mac. iv. 25; Jos. Ant. vi. 6. 2, ix. 9. 1.

The whole attempt to put Jesus to death was perhaps an instance of the form of punishment which the Jews called the "rebel's beating," which was somewhat analogous to Lynch Law. The "rebel's beating" was administered by the people, without trial and on the spot, when anyone was caught in what seemed to be a flagrant violation of some law or tradition. Comp. the attempts to stone Jesus (Jn. viii. 59, x. 31). We have a similar attempt upon S. Paul's life (Acts xxii. 31, 32). In S. Stephen's case a formal trial seems to have ended in the "rebel's beating" (Edersh. The Temple, p. 43).

30. αὐτός δὲ οἰκεῖων διὰ μέσου αὐτῶν ἐπορεύετο. "But He (in
contrast to this attempt), after passing through the midst of them, went His way.” The addition of διὰ µέσου is for emphasis, and seems to imply that there was something miraculous in His passing through the very midst of those who were intending to slay Him, and seemed to have Him entirely in their power. They had asked for a miracle, and this was the miracle granted to them. Those who think that it was His determined look or personal majesty which saved Him, have to explain why this did not prevent them from casting Him out of the synagogue.¹ It seems better with Meyer and ancient commentators to understand a miracle dependent on the will of Jesus: comp. Jn. xviii. 6; Dan. vi. 22. Jn. viii. 59 is different: then Jesus hid Himself before escaping. For διήλθω see on ii. 15.

ἐπορεύετο. Here used in its common signification of going on towards a goal: “He went His way” to Capernaum. And, so far as we know, He did not return to Nazareth. It had become a typical example of “His own people receiving Him not” (Jn. i. 11); and apparently it had no other opportunity (but see Edersh. L. & T. i. ch. xxvii.). If Mk. vi. 1-6 and Mt. xiii. 53–58 refer to a different occasion, it probably preceded this. After the attempt on His life He would not be likely to return; and, if He did return, they could hardly, after this experience of Him, ask, “Whence has this man this wisdom?” or be astonished at His teaching.

Meyer (on Mt. xiii. 53), Wieseler (Chron. Syn. iii. 2, Eng. tr. p. 258), Godet (l.c., Eng. tr. i. p. 240), Tischendorf (Synop. Evan. §§ 29, 54), and others distinguish the two occasions. If with Caspari (Chron. Int. § 100) we identify them, then Lk. is the more full and vivid, for the others omit the text of the discourse and the attempt to kill Him. In this case Strauss may be right in supposing that Lk. has placed the incident at the beginning of the ministry, although it took place later, because he saw how typical it was of the ministry as a whole (Leben Jesu, p. 121, 1864). That it was this attempt on His life which made Christ change His abode from Nazareth to Capernaum is contradicted by ver. 16. “Where He had been brought up” implies that He had ceased to reside there: and from ver. 23 we infer that Capernaum had already become His headquarters. Thither His Mother and brethren had also moved, while His sisters remained at Nazareth (Mt. xiii. 56; Mk. vi. 3), very probably because they had married there.


31–37. The Healing of a Demoniac in the Synagogue at Capernaum.

¹ Even Godet is among these. La majesté de sa personne et la fermeté de son regard imposèrent à ces furieux. L’histoire raconte plusieurs traits semblables (i. p. 327, 3ème ed.). Better Didon: Une force divine le gardait (p. 312, ed. 1891). See Hase, Gesch. Jesu, p. 445, ed. 1891.
IV. 31.

THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

naum. Mk. i. 21-28. Both Lk. and Mk. place this first among Christ's miracles; whereas Mt. puts the healing of a leper first (viii. 2-4). Marcion began his mutilated edition of Lk. at this point with the words 'Ο ΘΕΟΣ κατηλθεν εις Καφαρναούμ'. The earlier portion, which teaches the humanity of Christ, he omitted, excepting the first clause of iii. 1 (Tert. Adv. Marc. iv. 7. 1).

31. κατηλθεν. Nazareth is on higher ground than Capernaum, which was on the shore of the lake; and therefore "went down" or "came down" is the probable meaning. But it is possible that here and Acts xviii. 5 it means "returned," as often in class. Grk. (Hdt. iv. 4. 2, v. 30. 4; Thuc. viii. 68. 3). Excepting Jas. iii. 15, the verb occurs in N.T. only in Lk. (ix. 37 and twelve times in Acts).

Καφαρναούμ. This is the correct spelling, Caphar-Nahum, of which Καφερναούμ is a Syrian corruption (WH. ii. App. p. 160). It was the chief Jewish town, as Tiberias was the chief Roman town, of the neighbourhood. It was therefore a good centre, especially as traders from all parts frequently met there (Mk. ii. 15, iii. 20, 32, etc.). It is not mentioned in O.T., and perhaps was not founded till after the Exile. Josephus mentions it only once, viz. in his description of the lake (B. J. iii. 10. 7, 8), and then not as a town but as a πηγή γαμιστάρη, which irrigates the neighbourhood: but there is no doubt that the Κεφαρναοῦμ, to which Josephus was carried, when he was thrown from his horse in a skirmish with Roman troops, is Capernaum (Vita, 72). The identification of the modern Tell Hum (Nau, Pococke, Burckhardt, Renan,1 Ritter, Rödiger, Ewald) is possible, but not certain. Many advocate the claims of Khan Minyeh, which is three miles to the south (Quaresmius, Keim, Robinson, Sepp, Stanley, Strauss, Wilson). For the chief arguments see Wilson in D.B. i. p. 530, and in Picturesque Palestine, ii. p. 81; Schulz in Herzog, RE.2 vii. p. 501; Keim, Jes. of Naz., Eng. tr. ii. p. 369; Andrews, Life of our Lord, pp. 221-239, ed. 1892. The doubts about the site show how completely the woes pronounced upon the place (Mt. xi. 23) have been fulfilled. But in any case Jesus left the seclusion of the mountains for a busy mercantile centre by the lake.

τὸν τῆς Γαλιλαίας. Lk. adds this, because this is the first time that he mentions Capernaum in his narrative. The explanation could not be made ver. 23. It is another small indication that he is writing for those who are not familiar with the geography of Palestine: comp. i. 26, ii. 4, viii. 26.

ἳ ν διδάσκων αὐτῶν ἐν τοῖς σάββασιν. Some make νν. 31, 32 a general introduction, stating the habitual practice, of which νν. 33-37 gave a particular instance. In support of this they urge the analytical tense, ἰ ν διδάσκων, and the plur. τοῖς σάββασιν: "He used to teach them on the sabbath days." But in the parallel passage ἐδίδασκεν and ἰ ν διδάσκων are equivalent, and

1 Of the cinq petites villes dont l'humanité parlera éternellement autant que de Rome et d'Atènes, Renan considers the identification of Magala (Medjde') alone as certain. Of Capharnahum, Chorazin, Dalmanutha, and Bethsaida he says, Il est douteux qu'on arrive jamais sur ce sol profondément dévasté, à fixer les places où l'humanité voudrait venir baiser l'empreinte de ses pieds (Vie de Jésus, p. 142, ed. 1883).
apparently refer to one occasion only (note the εἰδὼν, Mk. i. 22, 23); and τὰ σάββατα is often sing. in meaning (Mt. xxviii. 1; Col. ii. 16; Exod. xx. 10; Lev. xxii. 32; Jos. Ant. i. 1, iii. 6. 6, x. 1, Hor. Sat. i. 9. 69). Acts xvii. 2 is the only place in N.T. in which σάββατα is plur. in meaning, and there a numeral necessitates it, ἐπὶ σάββατα τρία; which, however, may mean "for three weeks," and not "for three sabbaths." Syr-Sin. here has "the sabbath days."

The Aramaic form of the word ends in a, the transliteration of which into Greek looked like a neut. plur. This idea was confirmed by the fact that Greek festivals are commonly neut. plur.: τὰ γενέσεα, ἡγκαινία, παρακάτωμα, κ.τ.λ. Hence σάββατα may either mean "a sabbath" or "sabbaths" or "a week." Here it is better to retain the sing. meaning, and refer the whole of 32-37 to one occasion. In N.T. σάββατα is the usual form of the dat. plur., with σάββατον as v.l. in some authorities (in B twice, Mt. xii. 1, 12). In LXX σαββάτων prevails. Josephus uses both.

32. ἐν ἑξουσίᾳ ἔν ὄ λόγος αὐτοῦ. This does not refer to the power which His words had over the demoniac, but to the authority with which they came home to the consciences of His hearers. The healing of the demoniac was not so much an example of this ἑξουσία as evidence that He had a Divine commission to exercise it. Lk. omits the comparison with the formal and ineffectual teaching of the scribes (Mk. i. 22; Mt. vii. 29).

The ἐν means "clothed in, invested with" (i. 17, iv. 36, xi. 15, 18, 19, 20, xx. 2, 8; 1 Cor. ii. 4; Eph. vi. 2; 2 Thes. ii. 9). This use of ἐν is freq. in late Grk. Green, Gram. of N.T. p. 206.

33. ἐν τῇ συναγωγῇ. "In the synagogue" in which He was teaching on that sabbath; which confirms the view that ver. 31 refers to a particular occasion. We have already been told that it was His practice to teach in the synagogues. But "in the synagogue" may mean in the only one which Capernaum possessed (vii. 5).

ἐχον πνεῦμα δαιμονίου ἀκαθάρτου. The phrase is unique, and the exact analysis of it is uncertain. The gen. may be of apposition (ii. 41, xxii. 1; Jn. ii. 21, xi. 13, xiii. 1), or of quality (see on ver. 22), or of possession, i.e. an influence which belonged to an unclean demon (Rev. xvi. 14). As to the Evangelists' use of the epithet ἀκαθάρτου, strange mistakes have been made. Wordsworth inaccurately says, "Both St. Mark and St. Luke, writing for Gentiles, add the word ἀκαθάρτου to δαιμονίον, which St. Matthew, writing to Jews (for whom it was not necessary), never does." Alford in correcting him is himself inaccurate. He says, "The real fact is, that St. Mark uses the word δαιμονίον thirteen times, and never adds the epithet ἀκαθάρτου to it (his word here is πνεῦμα only); St. Luke, eighteen times, and only adds it this once. So much for the accuracy of the data on which inferences of this kind are
founded." Edersheim is still more inaccurate in his statement of
the facts (L. & T. i. p. 479 n). Farrar has the strange misstate-
ment that "the word 'unclean' is peculiar to St. Luke, who writes
for Gentiles." It occurs in Mt., Paul, and Apoc., as well as Mk.
The facts are these. Mt. uses δαμόνον ten times, and has
δακάθαρτον twice as an epithet of πνεῦμα. Mk. has δαμόνον thirteen
times, and δακάθαρτον eleven times as an epithet of πνεῦμα. Lk. in
the Gospel has δαμόνον twenty-three times, with δακάθαρτον as an
epithet, once of δαμόνον, and five times of πνεῦμα ; and with πνοηρόν
twice as an epithet of πνεῦμα. In the Acts he has δαμόνον once;
and uses δακάθαρτον twice, and πνοηρόν four times, as an epithet of
πνεῦμα. The fact, therefore, remains, that the two Evangelists who
wrote for Gentiles (to whom demons or spirits were indifferent)
add a distinctive epithet much more often than the one who wrote
for Jews (who distinguished evil spirits from good). Moreover,
both Mk. and Lk. add this epithet the very first time that they
mention these beings (Mk. i. 23 ; Lk. iv. 33) ; whereas Mt. men-
tions them several times (vii. 22, viii. 16, ix. 33, 34) before he adds
the δακάθαρτον (x. 1). In this passage Lk. and Mk. describe the
fact of possession in opposite ways. Here the man has the unclean
spirit. There he is in the unclean spirit's power, εν πνευματι
δακάθαρτω; with which we may compare the expression of Josephus,
tων υπὸ τῶν δαμονῶν λαμβανομένων (Ant. viii. 2. 5). Similarly,
we say of a man that "he is out of his mind," or that "his mind
is gone" out of him. That a man thus afflicted should be in the
synagogue is surprising. He may have come in unobserved ; or
his malady may have been dormant so long as to have seemed to
be cured. The presence of "the Holy One of God" provokes a
crisis. For ἄνεκραζεν comp. Josh. vi. 5; 1 Sam. iv. 5; and for
φωνῇ μεγάλῃ see on i. 42.

34. Ἐα. Probably not the imperative of ἔαω, "Let alone, leave
me in peace," but an interjection of anger or dismay ; common in
Attic poetry, but rare in prose (Aesch. P. V. 298, 688; Eur. Hec.
501; Plato, Prot. 314 D). Here only in N.T. Comp. Job iv.
19?, xv. 16, xix. 5, xxv. 6. Fritzsche on Mk. i. 24 (where the word
is an interpolation) and L. and S. Lex. regard the imperative as the
origin of the interjection, which does not seem probable.

τί ἢμιν καὶ σοι; Not "What have we to contend about?" a
meaning in which the phrase has nowhere in N.T. and perhaps only
once, if at all, in O.T. (2 Chron. xxxv. 21), but "What have we in
common?" Comp. viii. 28; Mt. viii. 29; Mk. i. 24; Jn. ii. 4; 2
Judg. xi. 12; 1 Kings xvii. 18; 2 Kings iii. 13; 2 Sam. xvi. 10;
1 Esdr. i. 26; Epict. Diss. i. 1. 16, i. 27. 13, ii. 9. 16.

Ἡποδ Ναζωατη. This form of the adjective is found xxiv. 19; Mk. i.
24, x. 47, xiv. 67, xvi. 6; but not in Mt. or Jn. or Acts. Its appearance
here is no proof that Lk. is borrowing from Mk. Ναζωατη occurs Lk. xvi.
I 34 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE (IV. 34, 35.

37; Mt. vii. 23, xxvi. 71; Jn. xviii. 5, 7, xix. 19; Acts ii. 22, iii. 6, iv. 10, vi. 14, xii. 8, xxvi. 9; but not in Mk. The adjective, esp. Nàzwpaíoς, which is used in the title on the cross, sometimes has a tinge of contempt; and with the article it may be rendered "the Nazarene." Hence the early Christians were contemptuously called "the Nazarenes" (Acts xxiv. 5). Contrast ο άνω Ναζαρέτ (Mt. xxii. 11; Mk. i. 9; Jn. i. 46; Acts x. 36), which is a mere statement of fact. It is worth noting that this demoniac, who is a Jew, addresses Jesus as "of Nazareth," which the Galilean, who was possibly a heathen, does not do (viii. 28).

楼宇ς απολέσαι ήμᾶς; The ήμᾶς and the preceding ήμίν probably do not include the man, but rather other evil spirits. Communem inter se causam habent dæmonia (Beng.). It seems to be idle to speculate as to the meaning of απολέσαι: apparently it is the same as εἰς τὴν δεξιον ἀπελθεῖν (viii. 31).

οδὰ σε ὑς εἶ, ὁ ἁγίος τοῦ Θεοῦ. In Mk. οἴδας εἰ; (?), which is more in harmony with ήμίν and ήμᾶς. Godet remarks that ὁ ἁγίος τοῦ Θεοῦ explains the knowledge. It was instinctive, and therefore οδὰ is more suitable than γνώσκω. L'antipathie n'est pas moins clairvoyante que la sympathie. In the unique holiness of Jesus the evil spirit felt an essentially hostile power. The expression ὁ ἁγίος τοῦ Θεοῦ occurs in the parallel in Mk. and Jn. vi. 69; but nowhere else: comp. Acts iv. 27; 1 Jn. ii. 20; Rev. iii. 7. It may mean either "consecrated to God" or "consecrated by God." In a lower sense priests and Prophets are called ἁγιον τοῦ Θεοῦ or Κυρίου (Ps. cvi. 16). It was not in flattery (male adulans, as Tertullian says) that the evil spirit thus addressed Him, but in horror. From the Holy One he could expect nothing but destruction (Jas. ii. 19; comp. Mt. viii. 29).

36. ἐπηρήμησεν αὐτῷ. "He rebuked the demon" who had used the man as his mouth-piece. The verb is often used of rebuking violence (ver. 41, viii. 24, ix. 42; Mt. viii. 26, xvii. 18; Mk. iv. 39; Jude 9); yet must not on that account be rendered "restrain" (Fritzsche on Mt. vii. 26, p. 325).

In N.T. ἐπηρήμισε has no other meaning than "rebuke"; but in class. Grk. it means—1. "lay a value on, rate"; 2. "lay a penalty on, sentence"; 3. "chide, rate, rebuke." But while there is a real connexion between the first and third meanings of the Greek verb, in English we have a mere accident of language: "rate" = "value" is a different word from "rate" = "scold." Note that Christ required no faith from demoniacs.

ϕιμάθητι. Lit. "Stop thy mouth with a φιμός, be muzzled": used literally 1 Cor. ix. 9; 1 Tim. v. 18; and as here, Mt. xxii. 12; Mk. i. 25, iv. 39; Jos. B. J. i. 22. 3. The peculiar infin. φιμοῦν occurs 1 Pet. ii. 15. Comp. ἀποθεκατοῦν (Heb. vii. 5); κατασκηνοῦν (Mt. xiii. 32; Mk. iv. 32). The verb is probably a vernacular word: it is not found between Aristoph. (Nub. 592) and LXX (Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 41).
THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

καὶ ἐξελθεὶ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ. This is the true reading. Other writers commonly have ἔκρυσαν ἐκ; but Lk. prefers ἔκρυσαν ἀπ' δ ὁ (ver. 41, v. 8, viii. 2, 29, 33, 35, 38, ix. 5, xi. 24, etc.).

ῥίψαν αὐτὸν . . . μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτὸν. "Having thrown him down in convulsions (καράζαν Mk.) . . . without (as one might have expected) having injured him at all." With μηδὲν βλάψαν we should have had a mere statement of fact. But in N.T. we commonly have μη with participles: comp. xi. 24, xii. 47, and see Win. lv. 5. β. p. 607. For μηδὲν βλάψαν Mk. has φωνὴν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ. It was the convulsions and the loud cry which made the spectators suppose that the man had been injured. The malice of the demon made the healing of the man as painful as possible. Hobart classes both πῦτεν and βλάτεν as medical words, the one being used of convulsions, the latter of injury to the system (Med. Lang. of Lk. p. 2).

36. ἐγένετο θάμβος. Mk. has ἐθαμβήθησαν; but Lk. is fond of these periphrases with γίνομαι (i. 65, vi. 49, viii. 17, xii. 40, xiii. 2, 4, xviii. 23, etc.): see on iii. 22. The word expresses amazement akin to terror, and the subst. is peculiar to Lk. (v. 9; Acts iii. 10). Just as Christ's doctrine amazed them in comparison with the formalism of the scribes, so His authority over demons in comparison with the attempts of the exorcists: all the more so, because a single word sufficed for Him, whereas the exorcists used incantations, charms, and much superstitious ceremonial (Tob. viii. 1-3; Jos. Ant. viii. 2; Justin, Apol. ii. 6; Try. lxxxv.).

τίς ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ. Not, Quin hoc rei est? "What manner a thinge is this?" (Beza, Luth. Tyn. Cran. Grotius), but Quod est hoc verbum? "What is this word?" (Vulg. Wic. Rhem. RV.). It is doubtful whether in N.T. λόγος has the meaning of "event, occurrence, deed": but comp. i. 4 and Mk. i. 45. Whether λόγος is here to be confined to the command given to the demon, or includes the previous teaching (ver. 32), is uncertain. Mk. i. 27 is in favour of the latter. In this case we have an ambiguous ὅτι to deal with; and once more "because" or "for" is more probable than "that" (see on i. 45). But if "that" be adopted, ὁ λόγος has the more limited meaning: "What is this word, that with authority?" etc.

ἐν ἐξουσίᾳ καὶ δυνάμει. ἐξουσίᾳ, cui non potest contradici; δυνάμει, cui non potest resisti (Beng.). Mk. has κατ' ἐξουσίαν only. The beloved physician is fond of δυνάμεις, esp. in the sense of "inherent power of healing" (v. 17, vi. 19, viii. 46, ix. 1; Acts iii. 12, iv. 7, vi. 8). Mk. has it only once in this sense (v. 30), and Mt. not at all. The plural in the sense of "manifestations of power, miracles" (x. 13, xix. 37), is freq. in Mt. and Mk. See on Rom. i. 16.

37. ἐπετορευέτο ξὸς περὶ αὐτοῦ. In these sections attention is often directed to the impression which Jesus made on His audi-
ences (vv. 20, 22, 32, 36, v. 26), and to the fame which spread abroad respecting Him (vv. 14, 15, 37, 40, v. 15, 17). ἥακοσ (ὁ) occurs only here, Acts ii. 2, and Heb. xii. 19. In xxi. 25, ἥακοσ may be gen. of either ἡ ἥακοσ or τὸ ἥακοσ. But the existence of τὸ ἥακοσ is doubtful. The more classical word is ἡ ἥακοσ, of which ὁ ἥακοσ is a later form. Hobart classes it as a medical word, esp. for noises in the ears or the head (p. 64).

As already stated, this healing of a demoniac is recorded by Mk., but not by Mt. Ebrard and Holtzmann would have us believe that it is to compensate for this omission that Mt. gives two demoniacs among the Gadarenes, where Mk. and Lk. have only one.

In considering the question of demoniacal possession we must never lose sight of the indisputable fact, that our sources of information clearly, consistently, and repeatedly represent Christ as healing demoniacs by commanding demons to depart out of the afflicted persons. The Synoptic Gospels uniformly state that Jesus went through the form of casting out demons.

If the demons were there, and Christ expelled them and set their victims free, there is nothing to explain: the narrative is in harmony with the facts.

If the demons were not there, and demoniacal possession is a superstition, we must choose between three hypotheses.

1. Jesus did not employ this method of healing those who were believed to be possessed, but the Evangelists have erroneously attributed it to Him.

2. Jesus did employ this method and went through the form of casting out demons, although He knew that there were no demons there to be cast out.

3. Jesus did employ this method and went through the form of casting out demons, because in this matter He shared the erroneous belief of His contemporaries.


38, 39. The Healing of Peter’s Mother-in-law. Mk. i. 30.

It is quite beyond doubt that the relationship expressed by πνευμάτω is either “wife’s mother” or “husband’s mother” (xii. 53; Mt. viii. 14, x. 35; Mk. i. 30; Ruth i. 14, ii. 11, 18, 19, 23; Mic. vii. 6; Dem. Plut. Lucian). So also πνευμάτω is either “wife’s father” or “husband’s father” (Jn. xviii. 13; Gen. xxxviii. 13, 25; Judg. i. 16; 1 Sam. iv. 19, 21). But for “wife’s father” the more indefinite γαμβρός (“a relation by marriage”) is freq. in LXX (Exod. iii. 1, iv. 18; Num. x. 29; Judg. iv. 11, xix. 4, 7, 9). In Greek there is a distinct term for “stepmother,” viz. the very common word μητρία (Hom. Hes. Hdt. Ἀσχ. Plat. Plut.); and if Lk. had intended to designate the second wife of Peter’s father, he would have used this term. That he should have ignored a word in common use which would express his meaning, and employ another word which has quite a different meaning, is incredible. That Peter was married is clear from 1 Cor. ix. 5. Clement of Alexandria says that Peter’s wife helped him in ministering to women,—an apostolic anticipation of Zenana missions (Strom. iii. 6, p. 536, ed. Potter). He also states that Peter and Philip had children, and that Philip gave his daughters in marriage (ibid. p. 535, ed. Potter, quoted Eus. H. E. iii. 30. 1); but he gives no names. It is remarkable that nothing is known of any children of any one Apostle. This is the first mention of Peter by Lk., who treats him as a person too well known to need introduction. For other miracles of mercy on the sabbath see on xiv. 1.
38. Ἀναστὰς δὲ ἀπὸ τῆς συναγωγῆς. This may refer to Christ’s rising from His seat; but it is more natural to understand it of His leaving the synagogue. The verb is used where no sitting or lying is presupposed, and means no more than preparation for departure (i. 39, xv. 18, 20, xxiii. 1; Acts x. 20, xxii. 10): see on i. 39. Mk. has ἐξελθόντες, the plur. including Simon and Andrew, James and John. Neither Lk. nor Mt. mention the presence of disciples, but Peter, and perhaps Andrew, may be understood among those who ἔφυσαν αὐτόν περὶ αὐτῆς.

39. τὐμματα ἐπάνω αὐτῆς ἐπετίμησεν. Instead of this both Mt. and Mk. state that He touched her hand. Proximus accessus ostendebat, virtuti Jesu cedere morbum, neque ullam corporis ejus a morbo imminere periculum (Beng.). The ἐπετίμησεν of ver. 35 does not show that the use of the same word here is meant to imply that the fever is regarded as a personal agent. But comp. xiii. 11, 16; Mk. ix. 17, 23. The ἄφικεν, which is in all three narratives, harmonizes with either view. In any case this unusual mode of healing would interest and impress a physician; and Lk. alone notices the suddenness with which her strength returned. For παραχρῆμα see on v. 25. Syr-Sin. omits the standing over her.

40. διηκόνει αὐτοῖς. Mt. has αὐτῷ: the αὐτοῖς includes the disciples and others present. Her being able to minister to them proves the completeness of the cure. Recovery from fever is commonly attended by great weakness. And this seems to be fatal to the view of B. Weiss, that Christ’s cures were “momentary effects produced by His touch, which, although the result was absolutely certain, yet merely began a healing process that was completed in a perfectly natural way.” What is gained by such an hypothesis?

40, 41. Numerous Healings in the Evening. Nous rencontrons ici un de ces moments dans la vie du Seigneur où la puissance miraculeuse se déployait avec une richesse particulière: vi. 19” (Godet, i. p. 339). Comp. Mt. viii. 16, 17; Mk. i. 32–34. The healing of the demoniac (ver. 35), and of Peter’s mother-in-law, had proved that He could heal diseases both of mind and body. All three note the two kinds of healing; but “the physician separates the two with special distinctness, and lends no support to the view that possession is merely a physical disorder.”
40. Δύνατος δὲ τοῦ ἡλίου. Mt. has Ὄψις δὲ γενομένης, while Mk. has Ὄψις δὲ γενομένης, δὴ ἔδυσεν ὁ ἡλίος. We infer that here Mk. gives us the whole expression in the original tradition, of which all three make use; and that Mt. uses one half and Lk. the other half of it. See v. 13, xxii. 34, xxiii. 38, for similar cases. Some infer that Mk. has combined the phrases used by the other two, and therefore must have written last of the three. But an analysis of the passages which all three have in common shows that this is incredible. The literary skill required for combining two narratives, without adding much new material, would be immense; and Mk. does not possess it. It is much simpler to suppose that Mk. often gives the original tradition in full, and that the other two each give portions of it, and sometimes different portions. See E. A. Abbott, Ency. Brit. 9th ed. art. “Gospels,” and Abbott and Rushbrooke, The Common Tradition of the Syn. Gosp. p. x.

Δύνατος. “When the sun was setting,” or “ere the sun was set,” as the hymn gives it.1 The eagerness of the people was such that the very moment the sabbath was over they began to move the sick: comp. Jn. v. 10. Note Lk.’s favourite ἀνατιθέμενος. Lk. alone preserves this graphic detail, which emphasizes the laborious solicitude of the work. Sic singuli penitius commoti sunt ad fidem (Beng.). It does not apply to the demoniacs, who were healed λόγω, as Mt. states.

The action is a generally recognized symbol of transmission, especially in conferring a blessing (Gen. xlviii. 14; Lev. ix. 22, 23; Mk. x. 16). It is also used to symbolize the transmission of guilt (Lev. i. 4, iii. 2, viii. 14, xvi. 21, 22). The statement that “our Lord healed at first by laying on of hands, but gradually passed over to the exclusive use of the word of power, in order that He might not encourage the popular idea that there was a necessary connexion between the laying on of hands and the cure,” is not confirmed by Scripture. The nobleman’s son and the man at Bethesda were healed by a word (Jn. iv. 50, v. 8); Malchus, by a touch. There was no necessity to use either word or touch. He could heal by an act of will, and at a distance from His person (vii. 10, xvii. 14; Jn. iv. 50). But He more often used means, possibly to aid the faith of those who needed healing (viii. 13, xiv. 4, Mt. viii. 3, ix. 29; Mk. vii. 33, viii. 25, 29; Jn. ix. 6: comp. Mk. v. 23, 28, 41, vii. 32, viii. 22). The fact that Jesus commonly used some action in healing made the Jews the more irate at His healing on the sabbath. Excepting Acts xvii. 25, θεράτευω in N.T. is always “heal, cure,” not merely “serve, take care of.” Like curare, it is used of service both to God and to men; and like curare, it is both “to care for” and “to cure.” The imperfects, θεράτευεν and θεράχριστο, mark the continuance and repetition of the actions.

41. θαράχριστο δὲ καὶ δαιμόνια ἀπὸ πολλῶν. “But demons also.”

1 The form ἀνατιθέμενος seems to be Ionic, but occurs once or twice in Attic prose (Veitch, s.v.). Except θεράτευον or θερά in Mk. i. 32, the word does not occur again in N.T. It is freq. in LXX (Judg. xiv. 18; 2 Sam. ii. 24; 1 Kings xxii. 39; 2 Chron. xviii. 34, etc.). It means “sink into, enter,” πέπραξεν or the like being expressed or understood. Lk. never uses the unclassical ὄψις (ix. 12, xxii. 14, xxiii. 34, xxiv. 29), which occurs often in Mt. and Mk. and twice in Jn.
(as well as diseases) "came out of many." For δὲ καὶ see on iii. 9, and for ἔξερχονται ἀπὸ see on ver. 35: both are characteristic of Lk. He alone mentions the κράζειν of the demons. There is not much difference between ὁ νῦς τοῦ Θεοῦ here and ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ Θεοῦ in ver. 34. In both cases it is the presence of Divine holiness which is felt and proclaimed. Phil. ii. 10 is here not to the point; for καταχθοῦνα there probably does not mean devils.

οὐκ εἰσα αὐτὰ λαλεῖν, ὅτι. "He suffered them not to speak, because." Not, "suffered them not to say that"; which would require λέγειν. In N.T. λαλεῖν and λέγειν are never confused; not even Rom. xv. 18; 2 Cor. xi. 17; 1 Thes. i. 8. Excepting Mt. xxiv. 43 and 1 Cor. x. 13, εἶναι is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (xxii. 51, Acts xiv. 16, xvi. 7, xix. 30, xxiii. 32, xxvii. 32, 40, xxviii. 4); and εἶναι is the usual form of imperf.

Godet's suggestion, that the demons wished to compromise Jesus by exciting a dangerous enthusiasm among the people, or to create a belief that there was a bond of connexion between their work and His, is gratuitous. Their cries are more like involuntary exclamations of dismay. That Jesus should not allow them to make Him known was natural, although Strauss condemns it as inconsistent. Nec tempus erat, nec hi præzones (Beng. on Mk. iii. 12). "It was not meet that unclean demons should usurp the glory of the apostolic office" (Cyril Alex.). Jesus had rejected the offered assistance of the evil one in the wilderness, and could not desire to be proclaimed as the Messiah by his ministers. Moreover, while the national ideas respecting the Messiah remained so erroneous, the time for such proclamation had not yet come. Comp. Jn. vi. 15.

42, 43. The Multitude's Pursuit of Him. Comp. Mk. i. 35–39. Although Lk. has some features which Mk. has not, the latter's account is more like that of an eye-witness.

42. Γενομένης δὲ ἡμέρας. See on vi. 13. Mk. has the strong expression πρὸ ἐννυχα λίαν. It was so early that it was still like night. This shows His anxiety to escape the multitude and secure time for refreshment of His spiritual nature by converse with God: Mk. adds κακεῖ προσηγορεῖν. Jesus had probably passed the night in Simon's house; and for οἱ ὁχλοι Mk has Ἐθνῶν καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτῶν, for as yet Jesus had no fixed disciples. Peter in telling Mk. of the incident would say, "We went after Him."

οἱ ὁχλοὶ ἐπεζήτησαν αὐτῶν. "The multitudes kept seeking for Him." The ἐπὶ marks the direction of the search: comp. ἐπέδωκα (ver. 17). They wanted more of His teaching and of His miraculous cures. See on xi. 29. But neither this nor the πολλῶν in ver. 41 proves that there had not been time to heal all who came the previous evening. Would He have sent any empty away? Lk. is fond of recording the eagerness of the people to come to Christ (v. 1, 19, vi. 19, viii. 19, 40, xii. 1, xxi. 38: comp. xix. 3 and xxiii. 8).

ἠλθὼν ἦσαν αὐτῶν, καὶ κατεῖχον αὐτῶν τοῦ μὴ πορεύεσθαι ἀπ' αὐτῶν.
They did not leave off seeking until they reached Him, and they tried to stay Him from going away from them.

This use of ἔσω with a person is not classical; comp. ἔσω ἡμῶν (Acts ix. 38) and ἔσω τοῦ βασιλέως (1 Mac. iii. 26). Of place (iv. 29, x. 15) or of time (xxii. 44) ἔσω is common enough.

With κατείχον (imperf. of attempted or intended action) comp. ἐκάλουν (i. 59). The τοῦ μὴ πορεύεσθαι is not Lk.'s favourite construction to express purposes or result (see on i. 74), but the gen. after a verb of detention or prevention: comp. Rom. xv. 22. For the apparently superfluous negative comp. xxiv. 16; Acts x. 47, xiv. 18, xx. 27. Win. xliv. 4. b, p. 409; lxv. 2. β, p. 755. Blass, Gr. p. 250.

48. Καὶ ταῖς ἑτέραις πόλεσιν. Placed first for emphasis. "To the other cities also (as well as to Capernaum) I must preach the good tidings." It is a rebuke to them for wishing to monopolize Him. It is not a rebuke for interrupting His preaching by requiring Him to work miracles. There is no evidence that He ever regarded these works of mercy as an interruption of His ministry, or as an unworthy lowering of it. On the contrary, they were an essential part of it; not as evidence of His Messiahship, but as the natural work of the great Healer of body and soul. They were, moreover, an important element in His teaching, for His miracles were parables. As evidence they did not prove His Messiahship, and He did not greatly value the faith which was produced by them (Jn. ii. 23, 24). He Himself regarded them as merely auxiliary (Jn. xiv. 11). He warned His disciples that false Christs and false prophets would work miracles (Mk. xiii. 22), just as the O.T. had warned the Jews that a Prophet was not to be believed simply because he worked miracles (Deut. xiii. 1-3). And, as a matter of fact, Christ's miracles did not convince the Jews (Jn. xii. 37). Some thought that He was a Prophet (vii. 16, ix. 19; Mt. xxi. 11; Jn. ix. 17), a view taken even by His disciples after the crucifixion (xxiv. 19); while others attributed His miracles to Satanic agency (Mt. xii. 24). On the other hand, the Baptist, although he wrought no miracles, was thought to be the Messiah (see on iii. 15). The saying here recorded does not mean, therefore, "You are mistaking My work. I came to preach the good tidings, not to do works of healing": but, "You are selfish in your desires. I came to preach the good tidings and to do works of healing to all, and not to a favoured few." For εὐαγγελισθεῖν see on ii. 10.

δὲ. For the second time (ii. 49) Christ uses this word respecting His own conduct. Comp. ix. 22, xiii. 33, xvii. 25, xix. 5, xxii. 37, xxiv. 7, 26, 44. His work and His sufferings are ordered by Divine decree. The word is thus used of Christ throughout N.T. (Acts iii. 21, xvii. 3; 1 Cor. xv. 25).

τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. This is Lk.'s first use of this frequent
expression (vi. 20, vii. 28, viii. 1, 10, etc.), which Jn. employs twice (iii. 3, 5), Mt. four times (xii. 28, xix. 24, xxii. 31, 43), Mk. often. For its import see Ewald, *Hist. of Israel*, vi., Eng. tr. pp. 201–210.; Schaff's *Hersog*, art. "Kingdom of God"; Edersch. *L. & T.* i. pp. 265–270. The ἐπὶ τοῦτο refers to the whole of what precedes: "For this end," viz. "to preach the good tidings everywhere in the land." For this use of ἐπὶ comp. xxiii. 48 and Mt. xxvi. 50. It is quite classical (Xen. *Anab*. ii. 5. 22, vii. 8. 4). For ἀπεστάλην see on ver. 18. The evidence for it (B C D L X) as against ἀπέσταλμα (A Q R) is overwhelming. Yet Godet says *on peut hésiter*. It refers to the mission from the Father, as does the ἔσχάλων of Mk. But it is possible to give the latter the inadequate interpretation of leaving the house at Capernaum.

44. Καὶ ἂν κηρύσσων ἐς τὰς συναγωγὰς τῆς Ἰουδαίας. This statement forms a conclusion to the section (14–44); and the analytical tense indicates that what is stated continued for some time.

Both Lk. and Mk. have ἐς τὰς συναγωγὰς, which in both cases has been altered into the easier ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς. The ἐς may be explained as a pregn. constr., "He went into the synagogues and preached there" or as expressing the motion or direction of the preaching (Mk. iv. 15; Jn. viii. 26). *Comp. ἐς τὸν δῆμον ταύτα λέγουν* (Thuc. v. 45. 1). It seems probable that the reading Ἰουδαίας (B C L Q R) is the original one, which has been corrected to Ἰαλλαλαὶ (A D X Γ Δ Α Π) on account of its difficulty. But, as in i. 5 and vii. 17, Judæa may here mean the whole country of the Jews, Palestine. Lk. often uses Ἰουδαία in this sense (xxiii. 5; Acts ii. 9, x. 37, xi. 1, 29, xxvi. 20; comp. Gal. i. 22). Classic writers use the term in much the same manner. Strabo means by it all the region from Lebanon southwards. Syr-Sin. has "of Judæa."

V. 1–VI. 11. *From the Call of the first Disciples to the Nomination of the Twelve."

This section presents a symmetrical arrangement, which possibly is intentional. The call of a leading disciple (1–11) is followed by two healings which provoke controversy (12–16, 17–26); and then the call of another leading disciple (27–39) is followed by two incidents on the sabbath, which again provoke controversy (vi. 1–5, 6–11).

V. 1–11. The call of Simon. In Mt. iv. 18–22 and Mk. i. 16–20 the narrative is the call of Simon and Andrew, and of James and John. Here Andrew is not mentioned. And although all obey the call (ver. 11), yet Simon alone is addressed (vv. 4, 10). But
the identity of this incident with that narrated by Mt. and Mk. can neither be affirmed nor denied with certainty. In Mt. and Mk. the disciples are fishing; here they are washing their nets before putting them away. The important point is that in all narratives those called are at work. Similarly, Levi is called from his business. It would seem as if none of the Twelve were called when idle.

1. Ἐγένετο δὲ. See detached note at the end of ch. i. For τὸν όξλον see on xi. 29; for ἐν τῷ τὸν όξλον ἐπικείσθαι see on iii. 21; for τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ see on viii. 11; for καὶ introducing the apodosis see on ii. 21; and for καὶ αὐτὸς see on ver. 14. All these points, with the analytical ἦν ἑστώς (i. 7, 10, 20, 21, etc.), are characteristic of Lk. Not often do we find so many marks of his style in so small a compass. Comp. viii. 22, 37, 40, 41. For the popular desire to behold Christ see on iv. 42. With ἐπικείσθαι comp. xxiii. 23; Acts xxvii. 20; i Cor. ix. 16; Heb. ix. 10; Jos. Ant. xx. 5. 3. It is used in a literal sense Jn. xi. 38, xxi. 9. Here it is mainly figurative, but it includes the notion of physical pressure. The αὐτὸς distinguishes Jesus from the όξλος: comp. iv. 15, 30.

παρὰ τὴν λίμνην Γεννησαρήτ. With characteristic accuracy Lk. never calls it a sea, while the others never call it a lake. Except in Rev. of the "lake of fire," λίμνη in N.T. is peculiar to Lk. When he uses θάλασσα, he means sea in the ordinary sense (xvii. 2, 6, xxi. 25; Acts iv. 24, etc.).

In AV. of 1611 both here and Mk. vi. 53 the name appears as "Genesareth," following the spelling of the Vulgate; but in Mt. xiv. 34 as "Gennesaret." The printers have corrected this to "Gennesaret" in all three places. Γεννησαρήτ is the orthography of the best MSS. in all three places. Josephus writes both λίμνη Γεννησαρίτις (Ant. xviii. 2. 1) and λίμνη Γεννησάρ (B. J. iii. 10. 7). I Mac. xi. 67 we have τὸ ὕδωρ τοῦ Γεννησάρ. But in O.T. the lake is called θάλασσα Χερέθ (Num. xxxiv. 11?; Josh. xii. 3) from a town of that name near to it (Josh. xix. 35). Josephus contrasts its fertility with the barrenness of the lower lake in the Jordan valley (B. J. iv. 8. 2): the one is the "Sea of Life," the other the "Sea of Death." See Stanley's fine description of "the most sacred sheet of water that this earth contains" (Sin. & Pal. pp. 368-378); Farrar, Life of Christ, i. pp. 175-182; Conder, D. B. 2 art. "Gennesaret."

For παρὰ c. acc. after a verb of rest comp. xviii. 35; Acts x. 6, 32; Heb. xi. 12: Xen. Anab. iii. 5. 1, vii. 2. 11.

With ἦν ἑστώς (which is the apodosis of Ἐγένετο), καὶ εἶδεν is to be joined: "It came to pass that He was standing, and He saw." It is very clumsy to make καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν ἑστώς parenthetical, and take καὶ εἶδεν as the apodosis of Ἐγένετο.

2. οἱ δὲ ἀλεξῖς. "But the sea-folk" (ἀλς) or "fishermen." It is one of many Homeric words which seem to have gone out of use and then to have reappeared in late Greek. Fishing in the lake has now almost ceased. The Arabs dislike the water. The washing of the nets was preparatory to hanging them up to dry. As distinct from νιπτω, which is used of washing part of the human
body, and λοῦμι, which is used of washing the whole of it, πλύνω is used of washing inanimate objects (Rev. vii. 14, xxii. 14; Gen. xlix. 11; Exod. xix. 10). In Lev. xv. 11 all three words are used with exactly this difference of meaning. Trench, Syn. xlv.

tὰ δίκτυα. The most general term for nets of all kinds, of which ἀμφιβληστρων (Mt. iv. 18) and σαγήνη (Mt. xiii. 47) are special varieties. Trench, Syn. lxiv.; D.B. art. “Net.”

3. ἐπαναγαγεῖν. The correct word for “putting off to sea” (2 Mac. xii. 47; Xen. Hellen. vi. 2. 28): elsewhere in N.T. only Mt. xxi. 18 in the sense of “return.” For the double preposition comp. ἐπανέρχομαι (x. 35, xix. 15) and ἐπανασαῦρω (x. 6). Christ uses Peter’s boat as a pulpit, whence to throw the net of the Gospel over His hearers. We have a similar scene Mk. iv. 1, and in both cases He sits to teach, as in the synagogue at Nazareth. Peter was probably steering, and therefore both before and after the sermon he is addressed as to the placing of the boat. But the letting down of the nets required more than one person, and hence the change to the plural (χαλάσατε). Non statim promittit Dominus capturam: explorat prius obsequia Simonis (Beng.).

5. Ἐπιστάτα. Lk. alone uses ἐπιστάτης (viii. 24, 45, ix. 33, 49, xvii. 13), and always in addresses to Christ. He never uses Ραββίς, which is common in the other Gospels, esp. in Jn., but would not be so intelligible to Gentiles. The two words are not synonymous, ἐπιστάτης implying authority of any kind, and not merely that of a teacher. Here it is used of one who has a right to give orders.

διὸ ὅλης νυκτὸς κοπιάσαντες. Through the whole of the best time for fishing they had toiled fruitlessly. Only in bibl. Grk. has κοπίαω the meaning of “work with much effort, toil wearisomely” (xii. 27; Acts xx. 35; Mt. vi. 28; Josh. xxiv. 13, etc.). The original meaning is “become exhausted, grow weary” (Jn. iv. 6). Clem. Alex. quotes a letter of Epicurus, Μήτε νέος τοῦ ἔνεμον φιλοσοφεῖν, μήτε γέρων ὑπάρχων κοπιάτω φιλοσοφῶν (Strom. iv. 8, p. 594, ed. Potter).

ἐπὶ δὲ τῷ ῥήματι σου χαλάσω τὰ δίκτυα. “But relying upon Thy word I will have the nets let down.” The “nevertheless” of AV. Cran. and Gen. is too strong: for that we should have πλήν (vi. 24, 35, etc.). For this use of ἐπὶ, “on the strength of,” comp. ii. 20; Acts iv. 21. Win. xlvi. d, p. 491. The χαλάσατε and κοπιάσαντε show that the χαλάσω includes the employment of others. Excepting Mk. ii. 4 and 2 Cor. xi. 33, χαλάω is peculiar to Lk. (viii. 4, 5; Acts ix. 25, xxvii. 17, 30). With the faith involved in χαλάσω τὰ δίκτυα we may compare κέλευσον με ἐλθεῖν πρὸς σὲ ἐπὶ τὰ ὕδατα (Mt. xiv. 28).

6. συνέκλεισαν πλήθος ἱχθών πολὺ. Not a miracle of creation, but at least of knowledge, even if Christ’s will did not bring the
fish to the spot. In no miracle before the Resurrection does Jesus create; and we have no sufficient reason for believing that the food provided at the second miraculous draught of fishes was created (Jn. xxi. 9-13). There is no exaggeration, as De Wette thinks, in διερήσεω or in βυθίζονται (ver. 7). The nets "were breaking," i.e. beginning to break, when the help from the other boat prevented further mischief, and then both boats were overloaded. On the masses of fish to be seen in the lake see Tristram, Nat. Hist. of the Bible, p. 285, and D. B. 2 p. 1074: "The density of the shoals of fish in the Lake of Galilee can scarcely be conceived by those who have not witnessed them. They sometimes cover an acre or more on the surface in one dense mass."

The form βήσω occurs in poetry (Hom. II. xviii. 571, xxiv. 454) and late prose (Strab. xi. 14. 8). It is a collat. form of βήγνυμ (Veitch, s.v., and Curtius, Etym. 511, 661): but see on ix. 42.

7. κατένευσαν τοὺς μετόχους. Possibly because they were too far off for a call to be heard. The other boat was still close to the shore (ver. 2), for Simon alone had been told to put out into deep water. The verb is freq. in Hom., and occurs in Hdt. and Plato, generally in the sense of "nod assent, grant." Here only in N.T. Euthymius suggests that they were too agitated to call.

Here and Heb. i. 9 (from Ps. xlvii. 8) we have μετόχος as a subst. Comp. Heb. iii. 1, 14, vi. 4, xii. 8: and see T. S. Evans on 1 Cor. x. 16-18 in Speaker's Com. "As distinguished from κοινωνία (ver. 10; Heb. x. 33), which suggests the idea of personal fellowship, μετόχος describes participation in some common blessing or privilege, or the like. The bond of union lies in that which is shared and not in the persons themselves" (Wscet. on Heb. iii. 1). For συλλαβίζονται in the sense of "assist" comp. Phil. iv. 3. In class. Grk. the act. is more common in this sense. For ἔλθαν see on i. 59.

ἐπλησαν ἀμφότερα τὰ πλοῖα ὡστε βυθίζονται αὐτά. For ἐπλησαν see on i. 15; ἀμφότεροι is another favourite word (i. 6, 7, vi. 39, vii. 42; Acts viii. 38, xix. 16, xxiii. 8); not in Mk. or Jn. "They filled both the boats, so that they began to sink": comp. διερήσεω. The act is used 2 Mac. xii. 4 of the sinking of persons; by Polybius (ii. 10. 5) of the sinking of ships; and 1 Tim. vi. 9 of sending down to perdition. Nowhere else in N.T.

8. Ἐγέρων Πέτρος προσέπεσεν τοῖς γόνασιν ἵππου. This is the only place in his Gospel in which Lk. gives Peter both names, and it is the first mention of the surname: see on vi. 14. Syr-Sin. omits Ἱππος.

The constr. προσέπεσεν τοῖς γον. is quite classical (Eur. Or. 1332; comp. Mk. vii. 25; Soph. O. C. 1605); often with dat. of pers. (viii. 28, 47; Acts xvi. 29; Mk. iii. 11, v. 33).

"Εξέλθε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. Not "Leave my boat," which is too definite, but, "Go out of my vicinity, Depart from me." See on iv. 35.
It is quite erroneous to introduce here the notion that sailors believe it to be unlucky to have a criminal on board (Cic. De Nat Deor. iii. 37. 89; Hor. Carm. iii. 2. 26). In that case Peter, like Jonah, would have asked to be thrown into the sea. That the Twelve, before their call, were exceptionally wicked, ἵππος πᾶσαν ἀμαρτίαν ἄνωμοιρόνως (Barn. v. 9), is unscriptural and incredible. But Origen seems to accept it (Con. Cels. i. 63; comp. Jerome, Adv. Pelag. iii. 2). See Schanz, ad loc. p. 198.

Peter does not regard himself as a criminal, but as a sinful man; and this miracle has brought home to him a new sense, both of his own sinfulness and of Christ's holiness. It is not that he fears that Christ's holiness is dangerous to a sinner (B. Weiss), but that the contrast between the two is felt to be so intense as to be intolerable. The presence of the sinless One is a reproach and a condemnation, rather than a peril; and therefore such cases as those of Gideon and Manoah (Judg. vi. 22, xiii. 22), cited by Grotius and De Wette, are not quite parallel. Job (xlii. 5, 6) is a better illustration; and Beng. compares the centurion (Mt. viii. 8). The objection that Peter had witnessed the healing of his wife's mother and other miracles, and therefore could not be so awestruck by this miracle, is baseless. It frequently happens that one experience touches the heart, after many that were similar to it have failed to do so. Perhaps, without being felt, they prepare the way. Moreover, this was a miracle in Peter's own craft, and therefore was likely to make a special impression on him; just as the healing of a disease, known to the profession as incurable, would specially impress a physician.

Κύριε. The change from ἐπιστάτα (see on ver. 5) is remarkable, and quite in harmony with the change of circumstances. It is the "Master" whose orders must be obeyed, the "Lord" whose holiness causes moral agony to the sinner (Dan. x. 16). Grotius, followed by Trench, points out that the dominion over all nature, including "the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the seas" (Ps. viii. 8), lost by Adam, is restored in Christ, the ideal man and the second Adam. But that Peter recognized this is more than we know. In what follows notice the characteristic πάντας and σύν.

9. ἐπὶ τῇ ἄγρᾳ τῶν ἱχθύων. This was the basis of their amazement: see small print on ii. 33, and comp. Acts xiv. 3 and Rom. v. 14. There is no need to make ἄγρᾳ act. in ver. 4, "a catching," and pass. here, "the thing caught." "For a catch" in ver. 4; "at the catch of fish" here. If δν συνέλαβον (BDX, Goth.) is the true reading, both may be act. But if ἡ συνέλαβον is right, then in both places ἄγρᾳ is pass. In either case we have the idiomatic attraction of the relative which is so freq. in Lk. See small print on iii. 19. The word is common in poetry both act. and pass. Not in LXX, nor elsewhere in N.T. Note the change of meaning from συναλαβότα in ver. 7 to συνέλαβον. The verb is freq. in Lk., but elsewhere rare in N.T.

10. ἴακωμον καὶ ἰωάνη The first mention of them by Lk.
In Mt. and Mk. they were in their boat, mending their nets, when Jesus called them; and Mt. adds that Zebedee was with them, which Mk. implies (i. 20). For κωνώνοι see on ver. 7. Are they the same as the μέτοχοι? It is possible that Peter had his κωνώνοι in his boat, while the μέτοχοι were in the other boat. In any case the difference of word should be preserved in translation. This Tyn. Cran. and Gen. effect, with “fellows” for μέτοχοι and “partners” for κωνώνοι. But Vulg. and Beza have socii for both; and RV. follows AV. with “partners” for both.

ἐπεν πρὸς τὸν Σίμωνα ἤρους. It is still Peter who is singled out for notice. Yet some critics affirm that it is the tendency of this Evangelist to depreciate Peter. For μὴ φοβοῦ see on i. 13: excepting Mk. v. 36 and Rev. i. 17, Lk. alone uses the expression without an accusative. Peter's sense of unworthiness was in itself a reason for courage. Quo magis sibi dissplicebat hoc magis Domino placet (Grotius).

ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν. The present moment is a crisis in his life, of which he was reminded at the second miraculous draught of fishes, when the commission given to him now was restored to him after his fall. Excepting 2 Cor. v. 16 and [Jn. viii. 11], ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν is peculiar to Lk. (i. 48, xii. 52, xxii. 18, 69; Acts xviii. 6). Comp. ἐστιν τοῦ νῦν (Mt. xxiv. 21; Mk. xiii. 19) and ἄριστος τοῦ νῦν (Rom. viii. 22; Phil. i. 5). Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 80.

ἀνθρώπους ἔστη ζωγρῶν. Both substantive and verb have special point (men instead of fish; for life instead of for death); while the analytical tense marks the permanence of the new pursuit: comp. i. 20. This last is preserved in Rhem. “shalt be taking,” following Vulg. eris capiens. Beza seems to be alone in giving the full force of ζωγρῶν (ζωὸς and ἄγρευν): vivos capies homines. But to add “alive” in English deprives “men” of the necessary emphasis.1 The verb is used of sparing the lives of those taken in battle: ζώγραι, Ἀντέρωνις, σὸν δὲ ἀξία δέξαι ἄπονα (Hom. Π. vi. 46). Elsewhere in N.T. only 2 Tim. ii. 26, of the evil one. Comp. the exhortation of Socrates to Critobulus: Ἀλλὰ θαρρῶν πειρῶ ἄγαθος γίγνεσθαι, καὶ τοιῶτος γυγόμενος θηρὰν ἐπιχείρει τοὺς καλοὺς τε κάγαθους (Xen. Mem. ii. 6. 28).

11. καταγαγόντες τὰ πλοία. Like ἐπαναγαγέων in ver. 3, this is a nautical expression; freq. in Acts (ix. 30, xii. 30, xxiii. 15, 20, etc.). Comp. ἀνάγειν, viii. 22.

ἄφέντες πάντα ἥκολούθησαν αὐτῷ. Even the large draught of fishes does not detain them. They are sure that He who has given them such marvellous returns from their usual business will be ready to provide for them when, at His summons, they abandon

1 Cod. Brix. has hominum eritis captores, including James and John, although noli timere precedes. D has τοιχὼν γὰρ ἦμας ἄλλες ἄνθρωπον (from Mt. and Mk.) after the insertion μὴ γίνεσθαι ἄλλες ἓθελον.
their business. The call was addressed to Peter (ver. 10), but the
sons of Zebedee recognize that it concerns them also; and they
leave and follow.

In this late Greek ἀφήμα is preferred to λειτω and its compounds, and
ἀξιολοθέω to ἐπομα (which does not occur in N.T.) and its compounds.

The fact that other disciples besides Peter obeyed the call and followed
Jesus, is the main reason for identifying this narrative with Mk. i. 16-20 and
Mt. iv. 18-22. All three have the important word ἄφεντες, and Mt. and Lk.
have Ἂγολοιθηναν αὐτῷ, for which Mk. has ἀπῆλθεν ὁπλω αὐτοῦ. But note
that Lk. alone has his favourite πάντα after ἄφεντες (comp. vi. 30, vii. 35,
ix. 43, xi. 4, xii. 10). Against these similarities, however, we have to set the
differences, chief among which is the miraculous draught of fishes, which Mt.
and Mk. omit. Could Peter have failed to include this in his narrative? And
would Mk. have omitted it, if the Petrine tradition had contained it? It is
easier to believe that some of the disciples were called more than once, and that
their abandonment of their original mode of life was gradual; so that Mk. and
Mt. may relate one occasion and Lk. another. Even after the Resurrection
Peter speaks quite naturally of “going a fishing” (Jn. xxi. 3), as if it was still at
least an occasional pursuit. But we must be content to remain in doubt as to
the relation of this narrative to that of Mk. and Mt. See Weiss, Leben Jesu,
I. iii. 4, Eng. tr. ii. pp. 54-59.

This uncertainty, however, need not be extended to the relation of this
miracle to that recorded in Jn. xxi. 1-14. It cannot be accepted as probable
that, in the source from which Lk. drew, “the narrative of the call of Peter has
been confused with that of his reinstatement in the office which had been
entrusted to him, and so the history of the miraculous draught of fishes which is
connected with the one has been united with the other.” The contrast between
all the main features of the two miracles is too great to be explained by confused
recollection. 1. There Jesus is not recognized at first; here He is known
directly He approaches. 2. There He is on the shore; here He is in Peter’s
boat. 3. There Peter and John are together; here they seem to be in different
boats. 4. There Peter leaves the capture of the fish to others; here he is chief
actor in it. 5. There the net is not broken; here it is. 6. There the fish are
captured close to the shore and brought to the shore; here they are caught in
deep water and are taken into the boats. 7. There Peter rushes through the
water to the Lord whom he had lately denied; here, though he had committed
no such sin, he says, “Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.”
There is nothing improbable in two miracles of a similar kind, one granted to
emphasize and illustrate the call, the other the re-call, of the chief Apostle.

The way in which the Fathers allegorize the two miracles is well known, the
first of the Church Militant, the second of the Church Triumphant. R. A.
Lipsius would have it that the first is an allegory of quite another kind, the
main point of which is the μετοχα in the other boat. He assumes that James
and John are in Peter’s boat, and explains thus. That Christ first teaches and
then suddenly speaks of fishing, tells us that the fishing is symbolical. The
fishing in deep water is the mission to the heathen, which Peter at first is
unwilling (?) to undertake (comp. Acts x. 14). The marvellous draught after the
night of fruitless toil is the conversion of many heathen after the failure of the
mission to the Jews. This work is so great that Peter with the two other
Apostles of the Jews are unequal to it, and have to call Paul, Barnabas, and
others to help them. Peter then recognizes his former unwillingness (?) as a
sin, and both he and the sons of Zebedee are amazed at the success of the
mission to the heathen (Gal. ii. 9). Thus the rejection of Jesus by the people
of Nazareth (iv. 29, 30), and His preaching “to the other cities also” (iv. 43),
teach the same lesson as the miraculous draught; viz. the failure of the mission
to the Jews and the success of the mission to the heathen (Jahrb. für prot. Theol. 1875, i. p. 189). The whole is exceedingly forced, and an examination of the details shows that they do not fit. If the common view is correct, that James and John were the μητροχοι in the other boat, the whole structure falls to the ground. Had Lk. intended to convey the meaning read into the narrative by Lipsius, he would not have left the point on which the whole is based so open to misconception. Keim on the whole agrees with Lipsius, and dogmatically asserts that "the artificial narrative of Lk. must unhesitatingly be abandoned... It is full of subtle and ingenious invention... Its historical character collapses under the weight of so much that is artificial" (Jes. of Nas. iii. pp. 264, 265). Holtzmann also pronounces it to be "legendary and consciously allegorical" (in loco). Does Peter's apparently inconsistent conduct, beseeching Jesus to depart and yet abiding at His feet, look like invention?

12-16. The Healing of a Leper. Here we certainly have an incident which is recorded by all three Evangelists. The amount of verbal agreement is very great, and we may confidently affirm that all three make use of common material. Mt. (viii. 1-4) is the most brief, Mk. (i. 40-45) the most full; but Mt. is the only one who gives any note of time. He places the miracle just after Jesus had come down from delivering the Sermon on the Mount.

On the subject of Leprosy see H. V. Carter, Leprosy and Elephantiasis, 1874; Tilbury Fox, Skin Diseases, 1877; Kaposi, Hautkrankheiten, Wien, 1880; and the literature given at the end of art. Aussatz in Herzog; also in Hirsch, Handb. d. Pathologie, 1860.

12. Καὶ ἰσοῦ. Hebraistic; in Mt. viii. 2, but not in Mk. i. 40: the καί is the apodosis to ἐγένετο, as in ver. 1. No verb follows the ἰσοῦ, as if the presence of the leper were a surprise. Had the man disregarded the law in approaching the crowd? Or had the people come upon him suddenly, before he could avoid them? What follows shows a third possibility. Syr-Sin. omits καὶ ἰσοῦ.

πλήρης λέπρας. This particular is given only by the beloved physician. His face and hands would be covered with ulcers and sores, so that everyone could see that the hideous disease was at a very advanced stage. This perhaps accounts for the man's venturing into the multitude, and for their not fleeing at his approach; for by a strange provision of the law, "if the leprosy break out abroad in the skin, and the leprosy cover all the skin of him that hath the plague, from his head even to his feet, ... then the priest ... shall pronounce him clean that hath the plague" (Lev. xiii. 12, 13).

ἐδέσθη αὐτοῦ. Excepting Mt. ix. 38, the verb is peculiar in N.T. to Lk. and Paul. It is especially freq. in Lk. (viii. 28, 38, ix. 38, 40, x. 2, etc.). In LXX it represents a variety of Hebrew words, and is very common. Here Mk. has παρακαλῶν.

ἐὰν θέλητ, δύνασαι με καθαρίσῃ. All three accounts have these words, and the reply to them, Θέλω, καθαρίσθητι, without variation. The δύνασαι is evidence of strong faith in the Divine power of Jesus; for leprosy was believed to be incurable by human means.
It was "the stroke" of God, and could not be removed by the hand of man. But it is characteristic of the man's imperfect apprehension of Christ's character, that he has more trust in His power than in His goodness. He doubts the will to heal. He says καθαρίσωμαι rather than θεραπεύσωμαι or ἱδωσωμαι because of the pollution which leprosy involved (Lev. xiii. 45, 46). In O.T. "unclean" and "clean," not "sick" and "healed," are the terms used about the leper. The old rationalistic explanation, that καθαρίσωμαι means "to pronounce clean," and that the man was already cured, but wanted the great Rabbi of Nazareth to absolve him from the expensive and troublesome journey to Jerusalem, contradicts the plain statements of the Gospels. He was "full of leprosy" (Lk.); "immediately the leprosy departed from him" (Mk. Lk.). If καθαρίσωμαι means "to pronounce clean," then καθαρισθηση means "be thou pronounced clean." Yet Jesus sends him to the priest (Lk. Mk. Mt.). Contrast the commands of Christ with the prayers of Moses, Elijah, and Elisha, when they healed. See Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 43.

13. ἐκτείνεται τὴν χεῖρα. All three have this Hebraistic amplification. In LXX the phrase commonly occurs in connexion with an act of punishment: Ex. vii. 5, 19, viii. 1, 2, ix. 22, 23, x. 12, 21, 22, xiv. 16, 21, 26, 27; Ezek. vi. 14, xiv. 9, xvi. 27, xxv. 7, 13, 16, xxxv. 3; Zeph. i. 4, ii. 13; Jer. vi. 12, xv. 6. In N.T. it rarely has this meaning. Jesus touched the leper on the same principle as that on which He healed on the sabbath: the ceremonial law gives place to the law of charity when the two come into collision. His touch aided the leper's faith.

14. καὶ αὐτοῦ. Lk.'s favourite form of connexion in narrative: vv. 1, 17, 37, i. 17, 22, ii. 28, iii. 23, iv. 15, vi. 20, etc. ἕτερα. The word is specially used of commanders, whose orders are passed along the line (παράδειγμα), and is freq. in Lk. (viii. 29, 56, ix. 21); Acts i. 4, iv. 18, v. 28, 40, x. 42, etc.); rare in Mt. (x. 5, xv. 35) and Mk. (vi. 8, viii. 6); not in Jn. All the others use ἔντελεσθαι, and Mt. κελευεῖν, both of which are rare in Lk. Here Mt. and Mk. have ἕτεροι. μηδενὶ εἰπεῖν. The charge was given with emphasis (ὅρα μηδενὶ μηδὲν εἰπεῖς) and sternness (ἐμβρασμένος), as Mk. tells us. The meaning of it is variously explained. To prevent (1) the man from having intercourse with others before being pronounced clean by proper authority; (2) the man from becoming proud
through frequent telling of the amazing benefit bestowed upon him; (3) the priests from hearing of the miracle before the man arrived, and then deciding, out of hostility to Jesus, to deny the cure; (4) the people from becoming unhealthily excited about so great a miracle. Chrysostom and Euthymius suggest (5) that Christ was setting an example of humility, διδάσκων τὸ ἀκόμηστον καὶ ἀφλοίτημον, in forbidding the leper to proclaim His good deeds. Least probable of all is the supposition (6) that “our Lord desired to avoid the Levitical rites for uncleanness which the unspiritual ceremonialism of the Pharisees might have tried to force upon Him” for having touched the leper. The first of these was probably the chief reason; but one or more of the others may be true also. The man would be likely to think that one who had been so miraculously cured was not bound by ordinary rules; and if he mixed freely with others before he was declared by competent authority to be clean, he would give a handle to Christ’s enemies, who accused Him of breaking the law. In the Sermon on the Mount He had said, “Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets” (Mt. v. 17); which implies that this had been said of Him. The command ἐμνήσθη μηδὲν ἐπιγίνεται is further evidence that Jesus did not regard miracles as His chief credentials. And there are many such commands (viii. 56; Mt. ix. 30, xii. 16; Mk. i. 34, iii. 12, v. 43, vii. 36, viii. 26).

ἀλλὰ ἀπελθὼν δεῖκτον σεαυτὸν τῷ ἱερεῖ. Sudden changes to the oratio directa are common after παραγγέλλω and similar verbs (Acts i. 4, xxiii. 22; Mk. vi. 8, 9?; comp. Acts xvii. 3; Tobit viii. 21; Xen. Anab. i. 3. 16, 20). Win. i. 13, p. 725.

tῷ ἱερεῖ. As in the original (Lev. xiii. 49), the sing. refers to the priest who was on duty at the time. Note the καθώς, “exactly as”: the reference is to Lev. xiv. 4-10, which enjoins rather expensive offerings. Comp. Mt. i. 24. For the form Μωνογήσα see on ii. 22. This charge is in all three narratives almost in the same words. On its import see Hort, Judaistic Christianity, p. 30.

καθαρισμὸν. Emundatio (Vulg.), mundatio (f q) purgatio (a), purification (d).

eis μαρτύριον αὐτῶς. This addition is in all three, and various explanations have been suggested. That (1) the priests may be convinced of My Divine power; (2) the priests may see that I do not disregard the Law; (3) the people may be convinced that the cure is complete, and that the leper may be readmitted to society; (4) the people may see that I do not disregard the Law. It is the sacrifice which is the μαρτύριον, and therefore the second or fourth explanation is to be preferred. Both may be right.1

1 “It is worthy of notice, that all the places where our Lord is stated to have met with lepers are in the central districts of Samaria and Galilee. . . . It
15. διήρχετο δὲ μᾶλλον ὁ λόγος περὶ αὐτοῦ. Lk. does not state, as Mk. does, that this was owing to the man’s disobedience. Mt. omits both points. This use of διήρχομαι of the spreading of a report is quite classical (Thuc. vi. 46. 5; Xen. Anab. i. 4. 7). The word is a favourite one with Lk.; see on ii. 15. The μᾶλλον means “more than before, more than ever” (Jn. v. 18, xix. 8), or “all the more,” because of the command not to tell (xviii. 39; Acts v. 14, ix. 22, xxii. 2).

συνήρχοντο ὄχλοι πολλοὶ ἀκούειν καὶ θεραπεύοντας ἀπὸ τῶν ἀσθενείων. For miracles mentioned as being numerous, but without details, comp. iv. 40, vi. 18, vii. 21. The constr. θεραπεύοντας ἀπὸ is peculiar to Lk. (vii. 21, viii. 2). The usual constr. with θερ. is the acc. (iv. 23, 40, ix. 1, etc.). For ἀσθενείων comp. viii. 2, xiii. 11, 12; Acts xxvii. 9; Heb. xi. 34, where we have a similar constr., ἐνυπαλωθήσαν ἀπὸ ἀσθενείας.

16. αὐτὸς δὲ ἦν ὄπωρωρός ἐν ταῖς ἐρήμοις καὶ προσευχόμενος. The verse forms one of those resting-places with which Lk. frequently ends a narrative (i. 80, ii. 20, 40, 52, iii. 18–20, iv. 13, 15, 30, 44). “But He” on His part, in contrast to the multitudes who came to see Him, “was in retirement in the deserts, and in prayer.” See on iii. 21. The analytical tense expresses what Jesus was engaged in while the multitudes were seeking Him. That they were unable to find Him is not implied here, and Mk. states the opposite. For the αὐτός comp. iv. 30, vi. 8, vii. 37, 54, xi. 17, 28, xxiii. 9; and for ὄπωρωρός, ix. 10. The verb occurs nowhere else in N.T., but is freq. in class. Grk. Lk. alone uses the plur. of ἔρημος (i. 80, viii. 29). See Bede, ad loc.

For ἐν after a verb of motion, to express the rest which is the result of the motion, comp. Mt. xiv. 3; Jn. iii. 35; 2 Cor. viii. 16. Such condensed constructions are not common, if found at all, in earlier writers. The converse use of ἐλς after verbs of rest is more common (xi. 7, xxi. 37; Acts ii. 39, vii. 4, viii. 20, 23, 40, etc.). Win. 1. 4. a, p. 514.

17–26. The Healing of a Paralytic. Mt. ix. 1–8; Mk. ii. 1–12. We again have a narrative which is narrated by all three Synoptists in a way which shows that they are using common material. Mt. is again the most brief. Mk. and Lk. agree in the details, but differ considerably in the wording. Different translations of the same Aramaic original, or of two very similar Aramaic originals, would account for these similarities and differences. The cast of the opening verse is very Hebraistic, as is shown by ἐγένετο, by ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν, by καὶ αὐτός, and by δύναμις Κύριον ἤν εἰς. See on iv. 36 and on viii. 22. The ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν is an absolutely indefinite expression, which we have no right to limit. Mt. and Mk. give no date. The phrase ἐν μιᾷ τῶν is peculiar to Lk. is just in this district that to this day we find the colonies of lepers most numerous” (Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 19).
17. Φαρισαίοι. The first mention of them by Lk., who assumes that his readers know who the Pharisees were. This introduction of them stamps them as hostile to Christ; and we have here the first collision in Galilee between Jesus and the authorities at Jerusalem. On the Pharisees see Jos. Ant. xiii. 5. 9, 10, 6, xvii. 2. 4, xviii. 1. 2, 3; B. J. ii. 8. 14; Schürer, Jewish People, II. ii. § 26, p. 10; Hausrath, N.T. Times, i. p. 135; Keim, Jes. of Naz. i. p. 321; Edersh. L. & T. i. pp. 96, 97, 310–324.

νομοδιδάσκαλοι. The word is formed on the analogy of ἱεροδιδάσκαλος and χρονοδιδάσκαλος, but is not classical. Elsewhere only Acts v. 34 and 1 Tim. i. 7. In all three cases teachers of the Jewish Law are meant, and the term is almost a synonym for ὑγραμματεῖς in the N.T. sense. That they had come εἰκ πάσης κόμης τῆς Γαλιλαίας καὶ ἱσούσας is, of course, a popular hyperbolical expression, and illustrates Lk.'s fondness for τάς: comp. vi. 17.

δύναμις Κυρίου ἦν εἰς τὸ ἱάσθαι αὐτῶν. “The power of Jehovah was present for Him to heal with”; i.e. for Jesus to employ in working miracles of healing. See on iv. 36 and comp. i. 35, xxiv. 49; Acts vi. 8. Hence miracles are often called δύνάμεις, or outcomes of the power of God. Trench, Syn. xci. The failure to see that αὐτῶν is the subject, not the object, of ἱάσθαι produced the corrupt reading αὐτοῦς (A C D and versions). This corrupt reading produced the erroneous interpretation of Κυρίον as meaning Christ. Lk. often calls Christ “the Lord”; but in such cases Κύριος always has the article (vii. 13, x. 1, xi. 39, xii. 42, xiii. 15, xvii. 5, 6, xviii. 6, xix. 8, xxii. 61). Κύριος without the article means Jehovah (i. 11, ii. 9, iv. 18; Acts v. 19, vii. 26, 39, xii. 7). This verse shows us Jesus armed with Divine power and confronted by a large body of hostile spies and critics. What follows (v. 19, 26) proves that there was also a multitude of curious spectators, who had not declared for either side, like the multitude round Elijah and the prophets of Baal on Carmel (1 Kings xviii. 21).

Except in quotations from LXX (Mt. xiii. 15; Jn. xii. 40) and one other passage (Jn. iv. 47), ἱάσθαι with act. signif. is peculiar to Lk. (vi. 19, ix. 2, 11, 42, xiv. 4, xxii. 51; Acts ix. 34, x. 38, etc.).

18. δς ἦν παραλελυμένος. “Here and wherever St. Luke mentions this disease, he employs the verb παραλύεσθαι, and never παραλυτικός. The other N.T. writers use the popular form παραλυτικος, and never use the verb, the apparent exception to this, Heb. xii. 12, being a quotation from the LXX, Is. xxxv. 3. St. Luke's use is in strict agreement with that of the medical writers” (Hobart, Med. Lang. of St. Lk. p. 6).

ἐξήτων αὐτῶν εἰσεγεῖτεν. Into the house, although it has not yet been stated that Jesus was in a house. Mk. tells us that there
were four bearers, and that the place was thronged even about the door. For ἑνώπιον see small print on i. 15.

19. For μὴ with a participle expressing a reason see small print on iii. 9.
With τοιασ understand δδοῦ and comp. ἔκλειψ (xix. 4). Here we should have expected ἔδα, which some inferior MSS. insert in both places. "By what kind of a way" emphasizes their perplexity. For the omission of δδοῦ comp. iii. 5. Win. xxx. i, lxiv. 5, pp. 258, 738. The classical τὴν ἄλλων illustrates this common ellipse. Blass, Gr. pp. 106, 137.

dιὰ τῶν δύσων. "Because of the multitude"; not "through the multitude," a meaning of διὰ ἐν. acc. which is found only in poetry and freq. in Hom. It was probably by means of outside steps that they "went up on to the top of the house." Oriental houses sometimes have such steps; and in any case ladders could be used. That the δῶμα was a dwelling-house is not stated. In bibl. Grk. it means a roof rather than a house (Deut. xxii. 8; Josh. ii. 6, 8), and in N.T. seems to imply a flat roof (xii. 3, xvii. 31; Acts x. 9; Mk. xiii. 15; Mt. x. 27, xxiv. 17). It may have been over a large hall on the ground floor. Even if Jesus was teaching in the upper room of a dwelling-house (and the Rabbis often taught there), the difficulty of getting on to the roof and removing a small portion of it would not be very great. Edersh. Hist. of J. N. p. 253.

dιὰ τῶν κεράμων καθήκαν. The verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts ix. 25, x. 11, xi. 5); freq. in class. Grk. Mk. has ἀπεστήθασαν τὴν στέγην ὅπου ἦν, καὶ ἐξορύξαντες χαλῶσαν. Perhaps Lk. thinks of Greco-roman houses, Mk. of Palestinian. We need not infer from ἐξορύξαντες that under the tiles was clay or mortar to be "dug out." But, if there was anything of the kind to be cut through and removed, this could easily be done without serious consequences to those who were in the crowded room below. Men who had so much at stake, and who had got thus far, would not desist through fear of sprinkling a few persons with rubbish. To make these difficulties, which are very unsubstantial, a reason for rejecting the whole narrative as a legend, is rather childish criticism. The constructor of a legend would not have made his details conspicuously incredible. The suggestion that Jesus was in a gallery outside the house, teaching the multitude in the open court below, is not helpful. In that case, why unroof the gallery? The sick man might have been let down to the front of it.¹

σὺν τῷ κλινάω. Lk. alone has his favourite σύν. The substantive occurs here only. It is the dim. of κλίνη (viii. 16, xvii. 34), and perhaps means here a portion of the κλίνη mentioned in ver. 18. Not all of what had been used to bring him through the streets would be let down through the roof. Comp. κλίνάριον (Acts v. 15). Double forms of diminutives are not uncommon.

¹ For another explanation see Tristram, Eastern Customs, pp. 34, 35.
e.g. γυναίκων and γυναῖκαρίον (2 Tim. iii. 6); παιδίων (i. 59, 66)
and παιδάριον (Jn. vi. 9); πινάκων and πινακίδιον (i. 63). Mk. has
the inelegant κράβαττος, grabatus (Acts v. 15, ix. 33), for which
the Greeks preferred σκήμπους or σκυμπόδιον.

20. ίδεν τὴν πίστιν αὐτῶν. The faith of the man and of those
who brought him. All three accounts have the words; but Mt.
omits the persevering energy which proved how strong their faith
was. We need not assume that the paralytic himself did not share
his friends' confidence.

For a full discussion of the Meaning of “Faith” in the New Testament and
in some Jewish Writings see detached note on Rom. i. 17. Here it will suffice
to point out its four main uses for (1) belief in God; (2) belief in His promises;
(3) belief in Christ; (4) belief in some particular utterance or claim of God or of
Christ. Of these four the last is the commonest use in the Synoptic Gospels,
where it generally means belief in the power of Christ, or of God in Christ, to
work miracles. The efficacy of Christ's power is commonly dependent upon
the faith of those who are to be benefited by its exercise, as here. Comp. vii.
50, viii. 48, xvii. 19, xviii. 42. By an easy transition this faith in the power of
God or of Christ to work miracles becomes used of the conviction that the
believer himself has received power to work miracles. Comp. xvii. 6. In
xviii. 8 the faith to be found on earth means faith in the Son of Man.

"Ανθρωπος, ἀφέωνται σοι οἱ ἀμαρτίαι σου. Mk. has τέκνον, and
Mt. has θάρσει τέκνον. It is not likely that Lk., the writer of the
Gospel of grace for all, has deliberately changed the more tender
address, because it seemed to be unsuitable to one who must, as
he thinks, have been a grievous sinner. Comp. xii. 14 and xxii.
58. And we affirm more than we know, if we say that this absolu­
tion was necessary for the man's cure, because otherwise he would
not have believed that Jesus could heal him, and his faith was
essential to the cure. He probably believed, and perhaps knew,
that his malady was the direct consequence of his own sin (xiii. 2 ;
Jn. v. 14, ix. 2 ; I Cor. xi. 30). But it does not follow from this
that faith on his part was thus far absent.

Suidas seems to be right in regarding ἀφέωνται as a Doric form of the
perf. indic. for ἀφεώνται. But it was admitted rather freely, even by Attic
writers. Comp. ἀνέωνται (Hdt. ii. 165. 1; but the reading is not certain)
and εἴσαθα from ἔθα (iv. 16). Win. xiv. 3. a, p. 96; Veitch, s. v. In Mt. and
Mk. the true reading here is ἀφέωνται: but ἀφέωνται occurs again vii. 47, 48;
I John ii. 12, and probably Jn. xx. 23. Some have regarded it as a sub­
junctive: remissa sunt. Fritzsche (on Mt. ix. 2) pertinently asks, Quo usu
aut more subjunctivum in talibus locis absolute positum defendas?

21. ἔρχατο διαλογίζεσθαι. Not a mere periphrasis for διαλογι­
σαντο: see on iv. 21. Hitherto they had found nothing in His
words to excite criticism. Here they seemed to see the oppor­
tunity for which they had been watching, and their discussions
forthwith began.† The γραμματεῖς are evidently the same as the

† It has been suggested that ἔρχατο καθήμενοι (Mk. ii. 6) and ἔρχατο (= ἔρχει
ἀρχέμενοι) here are simply different translations of the Aramaic verb, which has
v. 21-28. THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

Neither Mt. nor Mk. mention the Pharisees here; and both of them imply that the criticisms were not uttered aloud: ἐν ἐαντοῖς (Mt.), ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις (Mk.). Even here utterance is not stated, for λέγοντες may be used of thoughts (xii. 17; Mt. xxi. 25).

Τίς ἔστιν οὐτός δὲ λαλεῖ βλασφημίας; An accidental iambic line. We have another ver. 39, if εἴθεως be admitted as genuine. The οὕτως is contemptuous, as often (iv. 22, vii. 39, 49, ix. 9, xiv. 30, xv. 2, etc.). In N.T., as in class. Grk., βλασφημία has the two meanings of “evil speaking” (Col. iii. 8; Eph. iv. 31; i Tim. vi. 4; Jude 9; comp. Rom. iii. 8, xiv. 16) and “blasphemy” (Mt. xii. 31, xxvi. 65; Rev. xiii. 6). These cavillers assume that Jesus has claimed to have pardoned the man on His own authority, not merely to have said that He knew that his sins have been forgiven by God. And Jesus does not say that they are mistaken in this. He acts on His own authority in accordance with the will of the Father, doing on earth what the Father does in heaven (Jn. v. 19, 21). For ἀφίειαν of sins comp. Mt. xii. 31; Mk. iii. 28; Rom. iv. 7, etc.

22. ἐπίγνωσός δὲ ὅ ἤρωσε τοὺς διαλογίσμους αὐτῶν. The compound verb implies thorough and accurate knowledge (1 Cor. xiii. 12; Rom. i. 32; Justin, Try. iii. p. 221 A). The subst. ἐπίγνωσις is used of “the knowledge of God and of Christ as being the perfection of knowledge: e.g. Prov. ii. 5; Hos. iv. 1, vi. 6; Eph. i. 17, iv. 13; 2 Pet. i. 2, 3, 8, ii. 20; Clem. Alex. Πεδ. ii. 1, p. 173” (Lft. on Col. i. 9). Comp. the climax in Apost. Const. vii. 39. 1, γνῶσις, ἐπίγνωσις, πληροφορία. On both ἐπίγνωσις and διαλογίσμους see Hatch, Bibl. Grk. p. 8. The latter seems here to mean “thoughts” (ἐνθυμήσεις, Mt. ix. 4) rather than “discussions” (ix. 46). In LXX it is used of the counsels of God (Ps. xxxix. 6, xci. 6). It is, however, more often used in a bad sense (Ps. lv. 5, xciii. 11, cxlv. 4, etc.), and is specially freq. in Lk. (ii. 35, vi. 8, ix. 47, xxiv. 38). Not in Jn., and only once each in Mt. and Mk.

ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὑμῶν. This seems to imply that there had been no utterance. Christ read their thoughts. See on Rom. i. 21.

23. τί ἔστιν εὐκοπότερον, εἰπέων ... ἢ εἰπέων. It is in this verse and the next that the three accounts are most similar—almost verbatim the same. The challenge is a very practical one, and the point of it is in the εἰπέων. It is easier to say, “Thy sins are forgiven,” because no one can prove that they are not forgiven. But the claim to heal with a word can be easily and quickly tested.

the very different meanings of “sitting at rest” and “beginning”; or possibly of two verbs which are identical in spelling (Expositor, April 1891, p. 285). See on iii. 23. But these possibilities seem to be too isolated and sporadic to be of great value in accounting for differences between the Gospels.
24. ὁ ὅδε τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. This remarkable phrase in all four Gospels is invariably used by Christ of Himself; upwards of eighty times in all. The Evangelists never use it of Him, and no one ever addresses Him by this title. Yet none of the four ever directs our attention to this strict limitation in the use of the phrase, so that their agreement must be regarded as undesigned, and as evidence of their accuracy.

In O.T. we have "son of man" used in three different connexions, and it must be noted that in each case the rendering in LXX is ὁδὸς ἄνθρωπος and not ὁ ὅδε τοῦ ἄνθρωπου. In the Psalms it is used of the ideal man: viii. 4, lxxx. 16, cxlv. 3, cxlvii. 3. In Ezekiel it is the title by which the Prophet is addressed, ii. 1, 3, 6, 8, iii. 1, 3, 4, etc. etc.; upwards of eighty times in all. In Daniel's night visions (vii. 13, 14), "One like a son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days," and received a dominion which was universal and eternal. With this should be compared various passages in the Book of Enoch, of which this is specially noteworthy. "There I saw one who had a head of days, and His head was white like wool; and with Him was a Second, whose countenance was like the appearance of a man, and His countenance was full of grace, like one of the holy angels. And I asked one of the angels who were with me, and who showed me all the secrets, concerning this Son of Man, who He was, and whence He was, and why He goes with the Head of days. And he answered and said to me: This is the Son of Man who has justice, and justice dwells with Him; and all the treasures of secrecy He reveals, because the Lord of the spirits has chosen Him, and His portion overcomes all things before the Lord of the spirits in rectitude to eternity. And this Son of Man, whom thou hast seen, will arouse the kings and mighty from their couches, and the strong from their thrones, and will loosen the bands of the strong, and will break the teeth of the sinners" (xlvi.). This Son of Man is the Messiah. He is called "the Anointed" (xlviii. 11, lii. 4), "the Righteous One" (xxxviii. 2, lii. 6), "the Elect One" (passim), and the Lord speaks of Him as "My Son" (cv. 2). That these Messianic passages in the Book of Enoch are of Christian origin is the opinion of a few critics, but it is difficult to maintain it. Everything distinctly Christian is absent. This Son of Man or Messiah is not the Word, is not God. That He has lived on the earth is nowhere intimated. Of the historical Jesus, the Crucifixion, the Resurrection, or the Ascension, there is not a hint; nor yet of baptism, or of the eucharist, or of the doctrine of the Trinity. Why should a Christian write just what any Jew might accept about the Messiah and no more? But if the whole of the Book of Enoch was written before the birth of Christ, then we have sufficient evidence to show that when Christ was teaching on earth "Son of Man" was already accepted by the Jews as one title, although not a common one, for the Messiah.¹ The idea of a weak and suffering Messiah was unwelcome to the Jews, and therefore a name

¹ Le Livre d’Henoch, en particulier, lequel était fort lu dans l’entourage de Jésus (Jude Epist. 14) nous donne la clé de l’expression de "Fils de l’homme," et des idées qui s’y rattachaient (Renan, V. de J. p. xi.). It is, of course, quite possible that the writer of the Book of Enoch took the idea from Daniel. For a discussion of the title see Dorner, Person of Christ, Eng. tr. I. i. p. 54.
V. 24–26.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE 157

which emphasized human weakness was not a favourite one. “But the very reason which induced them to avoid the title induced our Lord to take it. It expressed His Messiahship definitely enough for His purpose; but it expressed it in that veiled and suggestive way which characterised the whole of His teaching on His own person. At the same time, it conveyed to those who had ears to hear the whole secret of the Incarnation. That which the Jews shrank from and ignored He rather placed in the forefront of His mission” (Sanday in the Expositor, Jan. 1891, p. 30, art. “On the Title, ‘Son of Man’”).

ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. In all three accounts there is room for doubt as to the words which this expression qualifies. Here either ἔξοσσίαν ἔχει or ἄφιεν ἄμαρτίας. In Mk. and Mt. it may qualify οὔ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. It is best taken with ἔξοσσίαν ἔχει. But the difference in meaning is not great.

ἐπεν τῷ παραλυμένῳ. This is not the apodosis to ἵνα εἰθητε, but a parenthesis:1 the apodosis to ἵνα εἰθητε is Σοι λέγω. Note the emphasis on σοί: “to thee I say the crucial words.” Clement of Alexandria gives this address to the paralytic in singularly different language: ἀνάστα, φησὶ τῷ παρειμένῳ, τὸν σκύμπασα ἔφ’ ὅν κατάκεισαι λαβὼν ἀπίθι οἴκαδε (Pat. i. 2, p. 101, ed. Potter). Probably a paraphrase. For the pres. imperat. see Blass, Gr. p. 191.

25. παραρχήμα ἀναστάς ἐνώπιον. Every one of these words is characteristic of Lk. For παραρχήμα Μk. has his equally characteristic εἶθεν, a feature which recurs Lk. viii. 44, 55, xviii. 43, xxii. 60. Lk. has παραρχήμα ten times in the Gospel and six times in the Acts: elsewhere only Mt. xxii. 19, 20. For ἀναστάσις Mt. has ἑγερθεὶς and Mk. ἑγερθηκαί: see on i. 39. For ἐνώπιον αὐτῶν Lk. has ἐμπροσθεν πάντων.

ἀπος ἔφ’ ὁ κατέκειτο. Il doit porter maintenant ce grabat qui l’a si longtemps porté (Godet). The wording is peculiar to Lk., and is perhaps intended to suggest this inversion of relations. Lk. alone records that he glorified God. The phrase δοξάζῃ τῶν Θεῶν is specially common with him (ver. 26, vii. 16, xiii. 15, xviii. 43, xxiii. 47; Acts iv. 21, xi. 18, xxi. 20): once in Mk., twice in Mt., once in Jn.

The reading ἔφ’ ὁ (R U Λ) is an obvious correction to a more usual construction. For the acc. after a verb of rest comp. xxi. 35; Mt. xiii. 2; Mk. iv. 38; Jn. xxi. 4; also Plato, Sym. 212 D, ἐπιστήμην ἐπὶ τὰς θύρας.

26. ἔκστάσεις ἐλαβεν ἀπαντάς. Mk. has πάντας, Mt. nothing. Lk. is fond of the stronger form. He alone records all three emotions—amazement, fear, and gratitude to God. The last is in all three. For ἔκστασις comp. Mk. v. 42, xvi. 8; Acts iii. 10; Gen. xxvii. 33; 1 Sam. xiv. 15; 2 Chron. xiv. 14. Mt., whose narrative

1 That this parenthesis occurs in exactly the same place in all three proves that all three made use of a narrative, the form of which was already fixed, either in memory or in writing (Salmon, Int. to N.T. p. 121, 5th ed.). Comp. Lk. viii. 28, 29 with Mk. v. 7, 8, where we have similar agreement in arrangement.
is much the most brief, adds after ἐδοξάσαν τὸν Θεόν, τὸν δόντα ἔξωσιν τοιαύτην τούς ἀνθρώπους, which seems to refer to the preceding ἔξωσιν ἔξει. He who is the Son of Man, the ideal representative of the race, had vindicated His claim to possess authority to forgive sins.

Ἐθαμεν παράδοξα σήμερον. The adj. occurs here only in N.T. In LXX it is not rare (Judith xiii. 13; Wisd. v. 2; Ecclus. xliii. 25; 2 Mac. ix. 24; 4 Mac. ii. 13). It is used of the miracles of Jesus in the famous passage, of very doubtful origin, in Josephus: σοφὸς ἄνηρ, εἶ μὲν ἄνδρα αὐτὸν λέγειν χρῆ ὅτι παράδοξων ἐργῶν ποιήσῃς (Ant. xviii. 3. 3). Whereas ἐνδοξα (xiii. 17) has reference to the δόxa or glory of the agent, παράδοξα refers to the δόξα or opinion of the spectators; but δόξα in the sense of “opinion” or “belief” is not found in N.T. For the mixed form of aor. ἐθαμεν see small print on i. 59, and comp. 1 Sam. x. 14 and 2 Sam. x. 14.

27-29. The Calling of Levi and the Discussion about Fasting. Mt. ix. 9-17; Mk. ii. 13-22. In all three narratives this section is connected closely with the healing of the paralytic; but Mt. places both incidents much later, viz. after the return from the country of the Gadarenes.

The common identification of Levi with Matthew is probably correct; but his father must not be identified with the father of James the Less. Matthew is probably a contraction of Mattathias = “Gift of God,” and this name may have been given to Levi after His conversion, like that of Peter to Simon. Comp. Joseph Barsabbas, surnamed Justus (Acts i. 23). In Galilee it was common to have two names; and therefore both names may have been original. But if Levi was the earlier name, and was less well known among Christians, that would account for Mk. and Lk. using it, while Mt. equally naturally would let it be evident that a τελώνης had become, by Christ’s mercy, the well-known Apostle. There can be no reasonable doubt that the three narratives refer to the same incident. And, as Levi is mentioned in no list of the Twelve, and Matthew is mentioned in all such lists, the identity of Levi the τελώνης with Mt. the τελώνης and Apostle need not be doubted. Such doubts, however, are ancient. They existed in the Gnostic commentator Heracleon (Clem. Alex. Strom. iv. 9, p. 595, ed. Potter), and were shared by Origen. They have been reproduced by Grotius (on Mt. ix. 9) and Michaelis; and more recently by Sieffert, Neander, Keim, and Reuss. But a satisfactory solution, which is not contradicted by any evidence, is not to be rejected because it does not amount to demonstration.

27. ἐξῆλθεν. So also Mk., while Mt. has παράγων ἐκείθεν. Departure from the town, rather than from the house, is probably meant; and we therefore obtain no evidence as to the site of Capernaum. We may place Capernaum away from the lake, and yet suppose the τελώνης to have been close to the shore. The customs collected there went to Herod Antipas, not to the imperial fiscus (Jos. Ant. xvii. 11. 4, 5; B. J. ii. 6. 3): see on xx. 25.

ἐθεάσατο τελώνην. “Looked attentively at, contemplated, a tax-collector,” as if reading his character. The verb often implies
enjoyment in beholding (vii. 24; Jn. i. 14, 32, 38; 1 Jn. i. 1). For the τελώναι see on iii. 12. The Talmud distinguishes two classes of τελώναι: the Gabbai or tax-gatherer (e.g. of income-tax or poll-tax), and the Mokhes or custom-house officer. The latter was specially hated, as having greater opportunities for vexatious exactions, especially from the poor. Levi was one of the latter. The great commercial route from Acre to Damascus, which continued until the crusades as the via maris, passed the lake at or near Capernaum, and gave employment to excisemen (Is. ix. 1).

όνοματι Λευείν. Mk. has Λευείν τὸν τοῦ Ἀλφαίου, and Mt. has Μαθαύου. The fondness of Lk. for ένοματι in introducing a name is here conspicuous. Mt. has λεγόμενου, and Mk. has neither. Comp. i. 5, x. 38, xvi. 20, xxiii. 59, and over twenty times in the Acts. Mt. and Mk. have ένοματι once each. Jn. says ένομα αὐτῷ (i. 6, iii. 1, xviii. 10).

καθήμενον ἐπὶ τὸ τελώνιον. Excepting in the parallel passages, τελώνιον does not occur in N.T. Nor is it common elsewhere. In Strabo, xvi. 1. 27, it seems to mean "customs, taxes," and some would render ἐπὶ τὸ τελώνιον, "to receive the customs." But it is more probable that it means the place where dues were collected, "the tol bothe" (Wic.) or "the custom-house" (Rhem.). Comp. the similarly formed δεκατώνων, "the office of a collector of tenths." Very likely Levi was sitting outside the portitorium. He must have been visible from the outside: the ἐπὶ is "at," not "in."

28. καταλαγῶν πάντα. Lk alone mentions this. Note the characteristic πάντα, and comp. ver. 11. The fact illustrates the doctrine, to which Lk. often bears witness, that riches are a peril and an impediment, and that the kingdom of God is specially preached to the poor. The statement is against the supposition (D.B. ii. p. 969) that Mt. returned to his business afterwards; and it is quite gratuitous to suppose that the statement is a mere reminiscence of ver. 11. In that case why has ἀφίέναι been changed to καταλαίπειν? Syr-Sin. omits ἀναστάς.

There is a slight awkwardness in καταλαγῶν preceding ἀναστάς: the rising was the first act in the leaving all and in the following Christ. Both Mt. (?) and Lk. represent the following as habitual, ἡκολούθει. Mk. regards the single act on this occasion, ἡκολούθησαν. With the call, Ἀκολούθει μοι, comp. Jn. i. 44, and with the result comp. ver. 11 and Mt. iv. 19, 22. The two combined lead one to the view that this is a call to become an Apostle.

29. ἐποίησεν δοξὴν μεγάλην. "Made a great reception" (δέχομαι) or banquet. The word is peculiar to Lk., who has δοξὴν ποιεῖν again xiv. 13. The phrase occurs in LXX (Gen. xxi. 8, xxvi. 30; Esth. i. 3, v. 4, 8). Of course εν τῇ οἰκίᾳ αὐτοῦ

1 Ce seul mot suffit. La parole qui venait de guérir le lépreux, de rendre au paralysé le mouvement et de remettre les pêchés, transforma soudainement un publicain en disciple (Didon, J. C. ch. iii. p. 340).
means in Levi’s house, which is not included in καταλιπτών πάντα.
He was not at his house when he left all. The πάντα refers to his
whole mode of life, his business as a τελώνης.

It is strange that any one should understand the words either here or Mk.
ii. 15 as meaning “in the house of Jesus.” Had Jesus a house? If so, how
improbable that Levi should hold a reception in it! If the narrator had meant
this, must he not have given the name instead of αβρῶν, which would inevitably
be misunderstood? Mt. has simply εν τῇ οίκῳ, which possibly means “in­
doors,” as opposed to the outdoor scene ἐπὶ τὸ τελώνιον. There is no evidence
that Christ had a house at Capernaum. After the call of Simon and Andrew
He is entertained in the house of Simon and Andrew (Mk. i. 16, 29); and
after the call of Levi He is entertained in the house of Levi. The new disciple
wishes his old friends to make the acquaintance of his new Master. C’est son
premier acte missionaire (Godet).

ἡν ὁχλὸς τολοῦς τελώνων καὶ ἄλλων οἱ Ἰησοῦς κατακεί­
μενοι. This proves that the house was a large one, which the
house of Jesus would not have been; and it also shows the
character of the company, for only social outcasts would sit down
at the same table with τελῶναι.

30. ἔγονον ζυζων οἱ Φαρισαῖοι καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς αὐτῶν. The αὐτῶν
means “the scribes of the Pharisees,” i.e. who belonged to that
party. Some scribes were Sadducees. That this is the meaning
is clear from Mk. ii. 16. It is pointless, and scarcely grammatical,
to make αβρῶν refer to the inhabitants of the place, who have not
been mentioned. These scribes were probably not invited guests,
but had entered during the meal, like the woman that was a sinner
in the house of Simon. The Sinaiticus and other authorities omit
αὐτῶν, doubtless because it was not clear what it meant.

For γογγυζω, which is not in Mk. or Mt., see Lft. on Phil. ii. 14, and
Both are probably onomatop.—Note that here, as in vv. 31, 33 and iv. 43,
Lk. has πρὸς ἓ ἄκκ. after a verb of speaking, where Mk. (ii. 16-19) has the
dat. See on i. 13.

Διὰ τι μετὰ τῶν τελώνων καὶ ἀμαρτωλῶν ἐσθίετε; The single
article (so in all three) brackets them as one class. In Mt. and
Mk. the disciples are not included in the charge (ἐσθιεῖν, not ἐσθίετε); but they both mention that the disciples were sitting at
table with Jesus and the τελῶναι, and therefore were open to the
charge. Lk., on the other hand, does not mention that the
disciples were sitting at table, but his ἐσθίετε implies it. With

31. In all three accounts Jesus ignores the insinuation against His disciples,
and answers for Himself. He is responsible for the intercourse with tax­
collectors and sinners. For οἱ ἔναλτοντες Mt. and Mk. have οἱ ἴσχυοντες.
This looks like a deliberate change made by Lk., for the sake of a word which
would more definitely express health as opposed to sickness. Like παραλευ­
μένοι for παραλυτικοί (vv. 18, 24) and ἱάσθαι for ἰασώμενον (vi. 19), these changes
may be the result of Lk.'s medical training (Hobart, p. 67; Salmon, *Int. to N.T.*, p. 129, 5th ed.). But would Lk. have made changes in a report of Christ's words? There would be no need to have scruples, for of λῃστορεσ is only a translation of the Aramaic, and Lk. might think that of ἐγκαίνιοντος was a better translation. Christ's reply is an argumentum ad hominem, partly ironical. On their own showing the Pharisees had no need of a teacher, while these outcasts were in the greatest need of one.

32. εἰς μετάνοιαν. These words are peculiar to Lk., but in some texts have been transferred to Mk. and Mt. Both μετάνοια and μετανοεῖν are freq. in Lk. See on xv. 7. Obviously those who are really δίκαιοι do not need to be called to repentance; but who are δίκαιοι? That is the question which Christ's reply suggests. If we had only Mk.'s account, we might suppose that what follows took place on some other occasion; but both Lk. and Mt. (τότε) connect it with the banquet in Matthew's house.

33. οἱ δὲ εἶπαν. The same who asked the previous question, viz. the Pharisees and their scribes (ver. 30). Mt. says that it was the disciples of John who came up and put this question. Mk. states that both the disciples of John and the Pharisees were keeping a fast at that very time, and joined in asking why Christ's disciples did not do so also. We know from Jn. iii. 26 how jealous the Baptist's disciples were of Christ, and therefore ready to criticize. Perhaps they were also jealous of the freedom from legal restraints which His disciples seemed to enjoy. They leave an opening for the reply, "You have no need to fast." The four words which follow νηστείαναν, viz. the words ποιεῖτε καὶ δείχνεις ποιοῦσαντες, are peculiar to Lk. They imply that Christ's disciples habitually neglected the frequent fasts which the disciples of John and of the Pharisees kept. The fasts on Mondays and Thursdays are probably meant, which were not obligatory, but which some Pharisees observed (xviii. 12). Moses was believed to have gone up Mount Sinai on a Thursday and to have come down on a Monday. The Day of Atonement was the only fast of universal obligation. For ποιεῖσθαι δείχνεις comp. 1 Tim. ii. 1; it refers to prayers at fixed times according to rule. The disciples of Jesus seemed to have no rule respecting such things. A late tradition fixes the number of the Baptist's disciples as thirty, answering to the days of the month, as the Twelve are supposed to answer to the months of the year (*Clem. Hom.* ii. 23).—καὶ πίνουσιν. These words also are peculiar to Lk. in harmony with καὶ πίνετε in ver. 30.

34. Individuals were at liberty to choose their own days for fasting, but they must not select a sabbath or any of the great feasts. Christ suggests another exception, which very possibly was made by the Pharisees themselves. Is it possible to make the guests fast at a wedding? Mt. and Mk. omit the ποιεῖν: Can the wedding-guests fast? Would it not be morally impossible to
have such a combination? To John’s disciples this parable would come home with special force, for their master had called Jesus “the Bridegroom,” and himself “the friend of the Bridegroom.”

τοὺς οίκους τοῦ νυμφῶν. The common Hebraism to express those who are closely connected with the νυμφῶν: comp. x. 6, xvi. 8, xx. 36; Acts iv. 36; Mt. xxiii. 15; Jn. xii. 36, etc. In 1 Mac. iv. 2 οἱ νῦν τῆς ἀκρας means the garrison of the citadel. But in LXX such expressions are not very common (1 Kings i. 52; 2 Sam. xii. 5; Gen. xi. 10). The word νυμφῶν seems scarcely to occur in class. Grk., but it is rightly formed (Tobit vi. 14, 17). Comp. παρθενῶν, γυναικῶν, ἄνδρων, βασιλέων, ἀμπελῶν, κ.τ.λ.

35. ἔλευσονται δὲ ἡμέραι. “But days will come,” i.e. days very different from the joyous days of the wedding. It is best to take this clause separately. After it there is an aposiopesis, which is mournfully impressive; and then the sentence begins again.

καὶ δὲ ἀπαρθῇ ἀπ’ αὐτῶν ὁ νυμφὸς. There is no καὶ in Mt. or Mk., and some texts omit it here, because of its apparent awkwardness. We may take the καὶ as beginning a fresh sentence, or as epexegetic of the preceding clause. “But days will come—and when the bridegroom shall be taken away,” etc. Or, “But days will come, yea, days when the bridegroom,” etc. The word ἀπαρθῇ is in all three, and nowhere else in N.T. It is common in class. Grk., esp. of the moving of fleets and armies.

τότε μητεῦσουσιν. “Then they will fast”—of their own accord. He does not say, “Then ye will be able to make them fast,” which would be the exact antithesis of what goes before; and the change is significant. Compulsion will be as superfluous then as it would be outrageous now: comp. xvii. 22. This is the first intimation of His death and departure, after which fasting will be appropriate and voluntary. Its value consists in its being spontaneously adopted, not forcibly imposed. This point is further developed in the short parables which follow. Note the characteristic ἐν ἐκεῖναις ταῖς ἡμέραις (not in Mt. ix. 15), and see on ix. 36.

36. Ἐλεγεν δὲ καὶ παραβολὴν πρὸς αὐτούς. These introductory words are peculiar to Lk., and the phrase λέγειν παραβολὴν is used by no one else (xii. 41, xiii. 6, xiv. 7, xviii. 1, xx. 9). For the characteristic δὲ καὶ see small print on iii. 9, and for λέγειν πρὸς see on i. 13. For pairs of parables see on ver. 37 and xiii. 18.

ἀπὸ ἱματίου καὶ οὐχ ἱμᾶς. This also is peculiar to Lk.’s narrative, and it heightens the effect of the parable. Both Mt. and Mk represent the patch as coming from an unused piece of cloth. To tear it from a new garment is an aggravation of the folly. A good garment is ruined in order to mend, and that very ineffectually, an old one. In all three we have ἐπίβλημα for patch; in Mt. and Mk. πλήρωμα also; and Mk. for ἐπιβάλλει has ἐπιράπτει. In Plutarch and Arrian ἐπίβλημα means “tapestry” for hangings. In the
sense of “patch” it seems to occur only in Sym. Josh. ix. 11 (5). The Latin translations of ἐπιβλέπω vary: commissura (Vulg.), insimentum (a), immissura (d).

εἰ δὲ μὴ γέ (el δὲ μή γε, Lach. Treg.). “But if he acts otherwise,” i.e. if he commits this folly. Ni caveat errorem (Grotius). The formula is freq. in Lk. (ver. 37, x. 6, xiii. 9, xiv. 32), who never uses εἰ δὲ μὴ. Εἰ δὲ μὴ γε is stronger than εἰ δὲ μὴ, and follows both negative (xiv. 32; Mt. ix. 17; 2 Cor. xi. 16) and affirmative sentences (x. 6, xiii. 9; Mt. vi. 1). It is found in Plato (Rep. iv. 425 E): comp. Hdt. iv. 120. 4. See Fritzsche on Mt. vi. 1 and Meyer on 2 Cor. xi. 16.

καὶ τὸ καυνόν σχίσει. “Both he will rend the new garment.”—in tearing the patch from it. AV. here goes wrong, although (except as regards the tense) all previous English Versions were right. Reading σχίζει with A and Vulg. rumpit, Wic. Tyn. Cran. and Rhem. have “He breaketh the new,” while Cov. has “He renteth the new.” Beza has “the old breaketh the new.” Luther and AV. seem to be alone in taking τὸ καυνόν as the nom., “Both the new maketh a rent.” With σχίσει comp. Jn. xix. 24; Is. xxxvii. 1.

καὶ τὸ καυνόν . . . καὶ τῷ παλαίῳ. The double καὶ marks the double folly. RV. avoids the awkwardness of “Both he will rend . . . and the piece,” etc., by rendering, “He will rend . . . and also the piece,” etc. The combination with καὶ τῷ παλαίῳ shows that τὸ καυνόν is object and not subject.

As to the precise meaning, interpreters are not agreed, beyond the general truth that a new spirit requires a new form. But the piece torn from the new garment is probably exemption from fasting. To deprive Christ’s disciples of this freedom, while He is with them, would be to spoil the system in which they are being trained. And to impose this exemption upon the disciples of John and the Pharisees, would also spoil the system in which they have been trained. In the one case fasting, in the other non-fasting, was the natural outcome of the environment. For a variety of interpretations see Godet, who in his third ed. has changed his own (1888).

37. This second parable carries on and develops the teaching of the first. We have similar pairs of parables in the Mustard-seed and the Leaven, the Treasure hid in the Field and the Pearl of great price, the Ten Virgins and the Talents, the Lost Sheep and the Lost Coin, the Unwise Builder and the Unwise King. In three respects this second parable differs from the first. (1) The piece of new cloth represents only a fragment of the new system; the new wine represents the whole of it. (2) The new garment and the old one are only marred; the new wine is lost and the old skins are destroyed. (3) Not only is the wrong method condemned, the right method is indicated (ἀλλὰ . . . βλητοῦ). The argument is à fortiori. If it is a mistake to take the natural out-
come from one system and force it upon an alien system, much more fatal will it be to try to force the whole of a new and growing system into the worn out forms of an old one. “I thank Thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that Thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes” (x. 21). The scribes and Pharisees, wise in the letter of the law, and understanding their own cramping traditions, were incapable of receiving the free spirit of the Gospel. Young and fresh natures, free from prejudice and open to new light and new impressions, were needed to receive the new word and preserve it unchecked and untramelled for future generations. On the fitness of the twofold parable to the occasion Bengel remarks, parabolam a veste, a vino: imprimit opportunam convivio.

οδεσις βάλλει οίνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοῦς παλαιοὺς. For βάλλει of pouring liquids comp. Jn. xiii. 5; Mt. xxvi. 12; Judg. vi. 19; Επικτ. iv. 19. 12. Skin-bottles, υτρες, are still in use in the East, made of a single goat-skin (Hom. Ι. iii. 247), from which the flesh and bones are drawn without ripping up the body. The neck of the animal becomes the neck of the bottle. Gen. xxii. 14, 15, 19; Ps. cxix. 83. Comp. Hdt. ii. 121. 20, iii. 9. 2; Hom. Οδ. v. 265. In Job xxxii. 19 it is said that even new skins are ready to burst when they are full of new wine: comp. xxxviii. 37. See Herzog, PRE. 2 art. Schlauch; Tristram, Nat. Hist. of B. p. 92.

38. οίνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοῦς καινοὺς βλητέον. Here certainly, and perhaps here only in N.T., the difference between νέος and καινός must be marked in translation: “New wine must be put into fresh wine-skins.” While νέος is new in reference to time, “young” as opposed to “aged,” καινός is new in reference to quality, “fresh” as opposed to “worn out.” Trench, Syn. lx.; Crem. Lex. p. 321. But “a fresh heaven and a fresh earth” (2 Pet. iii. 13; Rev. xxi. 1), and still more a “fresh Jerusalem” (Rev. iii. 12, xxii. 2), would be intolerable. No English version prior to RV. distinguishes here between νέος and καινός; and Vulg. has novus for both. None translates ἀσκοι “skins” or “wine-skins,” but either “bottles” (Wic. Cran. Rhem. AV.) or “vessels” (Tyn. Cov. Gen.). The conclusion, καὶ ἄμφοτεροι συντηροῦνται, is an interpolation from Mt. ix. 17 (N B L and Aegyptt. omit).

39. This third parable is peculiar to Lk. While the first two show how fatal it would be to couple the new spirit of the Gospel with the worn out forms of Judaism, the third shows how natural it is that those who have been brought up under these forms should be unwilling to abandon them for something untried. The conversion of an outcast τελωνης, who has no such prejudices, may be easier than one whose life is bound up in the formalism of the past. Grotius, starting from Ecclus. ix. 15, οίνος νέος φίλος νέος ἐκν παλαιοβῆ, μετ’ εἰδροσύνης πίεσαι αὐτοῦ, interprets: Significavit hoc
proverbio Christus homines non subito ad austeriorem vitam pertransendos, sed per gradus quosdam assuefaciendos esse; which implies that Christ considered Jewish fasting the more excellent way, up to which His disciples must be gradually educated. Moreover, the subito on which this explanation turns is an interpolation: ἐθέθως is not genuine (メント C1 L, Boh. Æth. Arm. omit). Wetstein quotes a multitude of passages to show that old wine was considered to be superior to new, and concludes; Pharisaorum austeritas comparatur vino novo, Christi lenitas vino veteri; which exactly inverts the parable. The comparative merits of the old and the new wine are not touched by the parable, but the taste for them. One who is accustomed to old will not wish for new: it does not attract him by look or fragrance. See Hort, Judaistic Christianity, p. 24.

λέγει γάρ: ὁ παλαιὸς χρυσός ἐστιν. The reading of A C and Vulg. (χρυσοτίθεται, melius) is a manifest corruption. The prejudiced person will not even try the new, or admit that it has any merits. He knows that the old is pleasant, and suits him; and that is enough: he is not going to change. Pharisaorum doctrina sua antiqua magis erat ad palatum, quam genera dolina Jesu, quam illi putabant esse novam (Beng.), and which they would not even taste. Comp. Rom. vii. 6; 2 Cor. iii. 6. If we admit the undoubtedly spurious ἐθέθως, we have another iambic line in this verse as in ver. 21: πῶν παλαιῶν ἐθέθως θέλει νῦν. The whole verse is omitted in D and in most of the best MSS. of the old Latin; but WH. seem to be alone in placing it in brackets as of doubtful authority. On the three parables see Trench, Studies in the Gospels, pp. 168-183.

VI. 1-5. The first Incident on the Sabbath (see Maurice, Lectures on St. Luke, pp. 82, 83, ed. 1879). The Call of Peter was followed by two healings which provoked opposition to Christ; and now the Call of Levi is followed by two incidents on the sabbath, which lead to similar opposition. Mk. agrees with Lk. in placing these two immediately after the call of Levi; Mt. has them much later (xii. 1-14). On the connexion here see Schanz, ad loc.

1. ἐν σαββάτῳ δευτεροπρώτῳ. This passage is a well-known crux in textual criticism and exegesis. Is δευτεροπρώτῳ part of the true text? If so, what does it mean? The two questions to some extent overlap, but it is possible to treat them separately.

1. The external evidence is very much divided, but the balance is against the words being original. The reading is Western and Syrian, and "has no other clearly pre-Syrian authority than that of D aff." The internal evidence is also divided. On the one hand, "The very obscurity of the expression, which does not occur in the parallel Gospels or elsewhere, attests strongly to its genuineness" (Scriv.), for "there is no reason which can explain the insertion of this


om. Ν Β Λ six or seven good cursives, Syrr. Boh. Aeth. That evangelistaria omit is not of much moment, as they often omit notes of time.
word, while the reason for omitting it is obvious” (Tisch.) On the other hand, “all known cases of probable omission on account of difficulty are limited to single documents or groups of restricted ancestry, bearing no resemblance to the attestation of text in either variety or excellence” (WH.). Moreover, if any sabbath had really borne this strange name, which is introduced without explanation as familiar to the readers, it would almost certainly have been found elsewhere, either in LXX, Philo, Josephus, or the Talmud. In the life of Eutychius (512-582) by his chaplain Eustathius δευτεροδεκάτη χρισμή is used of the first Sunday after Easter, but the expression is obviously borrowed from this passage, and throws no light. In the whole of Greek literature, classical, Jewish, or Christian, no such word is found independently of this text. The often quoted δευτεροδεκάτη, “second tenth” (Hieron. ad Ez. xiv. 13), gives no help. The analogy of δευτερογάμος, δευτερόσαββατος, κ.τ.λ., suggests the meaning of “a sabbath which for a second time is first”; that of δευτερόσαββατος, which Heliodorus (apud Soran. Med. vet.) uses for “last but one,” suggests the meaning “first but one,” i.e. “second of two firsts.” But what sense, suitable to the passage, can be obtained from either of these? The more probable conclusion is that the word is spurious.

How then did it get into the text and become so widely diffused? The conjecture of Meyer is reasonable. An early copyist inserted πρώτη to explain ἐν ἑτέρῳ σαββάτῳ in ver. 6; this was corrected to δευτέρῳ because of iv. 31; and the next copyist, not understanding the correction, combined the two words. A few MSS. have the reading δευτέρῳ πρώτη, among them R (Cod. Nitriensis), a palimpsest of the sixth cent. in the British Museum. See Knight’s Field.

2. If the word is genuine, what can be its meaning? Jerome put this question to Gregory Nazianzen, and the latter eleganter lusit, saying, Docebo te super hac re in ecclesia (Hieron. Ep. lli.). Of the numerous conjectures the following may be mentioned as not altogether incredible. (1) The first sabbath of the second year in a sabbatical cycle of seven years. This theory of Wieseler has won many adherents. (2) The first sabbath in Nisan. The Jewish civil year began in Tisri, while the ecclesiastical year began in Nisan; so that each year there were two first sabbaths, one according to civil, the other according to ecclesiastical reckoning: just as Advent Sunday and the first Sunday in January are each, from different points of view, the first Sunday in the year. It would be possible to call the second of the two “a second first Sunday.” But would anyone use such language and expect to be understood? (3) The first sabbath of the second month. It is asserted that the story of David obtaining the shewbread would often be in the lesson for that sabbath. But the lectionary of the synagogues in the time of Christ is unknown. See on iv. 17. For other guesses see Godet, McClellan, and Meyer. Most editors omit or bracket it. Tisch. changed his decision several times, but finally replaced it in his eighth edition.

διαπορεύεσθαι αυτῶι διὰ σπορίμων. Excepting Rom. xv. 24, the verb is peculiar to Lk. (xiii. 22, xviii. 36; Acts xvi. 4). In N.T. σπορίμων occurs only here and parallels. In Theophr. (H. P. vi. 5. 4) we have ἡ σπορίμη, sc. γῆ. In Gen. i. 29 it is applied to the seed, πώς χρώνον σπορίμον σπείρων σπέρμα; so that, like σπείρεσθαι, it can be used either of the field or of the seed.

Έτιλλον οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡσθὼν τοὺς στάχνας. For this Mk. has ἴσχαντο ὁδον ποιεῖν τῆλοντες τοὺς στάχνας, which has been interpreted to mean “began to make a way by plucking the ears.” But (1) all three imply that Jesus was walking in front of the disciples. What need was there for them to make a way? (2) How would plucking the ears make a path? (3) In LXX ὁδον ποιεῖν is
used for *iter facere* (Judg. xvii. 8). All three mean that the disciples went along plucking the ears. This was allowed (Deut. xxiii. 25).

ψῶχοντες ταῖς χερεῖς. This and the τίλλοντες constituted the offence: it was unnecessary labour on the sabbath. According to Rabbinical notions, it was reaping, thrashing, winnowing, and preparing food all at once. Lk. alone mentions the rubbing, and the word ψῶχεν seems to occur elsewhere only in the medical writer Nicander (*Theriaca*, 619). It is from the obsolete ψῶ, a collat. form of ψῶ. Comp. Hdt. iv. 75. 2. For the action described see Robinson, *Res. in Pal.* i. pp. 493, 499.

2. τινὲς δὲ τῶν φαισιῶν. As in v. 30, they are represented as addressing their question to the disciples. In Mk. ii. 24 and Mt. xii. 2 the charge against the disciples is addressed to Christ, while in Mk. ii. 16 and Mt. ix. 11 the charge against Christ is addressed to the disciples. The τοῖς σάββασιν may mean either "on the sabbath days" (AV. and most English Versions) or "on the sabbath day" (RV.). Although Vulg. has *in sabbatis*, Wic. has "in the sabbath"; Cov. also "upon the sabbath." See on iv. 31.

3. οὐδὲ τούτῳ ἀνέγγυτε δ ἐποίησεν Δαυεὶδ. "Have ye not read even this that David did?" Does your knowledge not extend even thus far? RV. follows AV. in translating δ ἐποίησεν as if it were the same as the τί ἐποίησεν of Mt. and Mk., "what David did."

καὶ οἱ μετ᾽ αὐτῶν. "The young men," whom David was to meet afterwards. He came to Nob alone (1 Sam. xxi. 1).

4. εἰσῆλθεν εἰς τὸν οἶκον τοῦ Θεοῦ. This is not stated in O.T., but may be inferred from his being seen by Doeg the Edomite, who was "detained before the Lord": i.e. he was in the tabernacle as a proselyte, perhaps to be purified, or to perform a vow.

τοὺς ἄρτους τῆς προβέσωσις. Lit. "the loaves of the setting forth." These were the twelve loaves of wheaten bread placed before the Lord in the Holy Place every sabbath. The word "shewbread" first appears in Coverdale, probably from Luther's *Schaubrote*. Wic. follows the *panes propositionis* of Vulg. with "loaves of proposisiounn," which is retained in Rhem. Tyn. has "loves of halowed breed." In O.T. we have also ἄρτοι τοῦ προσώπου, i.e. of the presence of God (1 Sam. xxi. 6; Neh. x. 33), or ἄρτοι ἐνώπιον (Exod. xxv. 30), or ἄρτοι τῆς προσφορᾶς (1 Kings vii. 48), or again οἱ ἄρτοι οἱ διαπαντός, i.e. "the perpetual loaves" (Num. iv. 7). But the expression used here, Mt. xii. 4 and Mk. ii. 26, occurs Exod. xxxix. 36?, xl. 23; 1 Chron. ix. 32, xxiii. 29; comp. 2 Chron. iv. 19. For the origin of ἡ πρόβεσις τῶν ἄρτων (Heb. ix. 2) comp. 2 Chron. xiii. 11, xxix. 18. See Edersh. *The Temple*, pp. 152–157; Herzog, *PRE.*2 art. *Schaubrote.*
kai ἔδωκεν τοῖς μετ’ αὐτῶν. This also is not stated in 1 Sam. xxxi., but it is implied in David’s asking for five loaves, and in Abimelech’s asking whether the wallets of the young men were Levitically clean. For ἔδωκεν c. acc. et inf. see on xx. 22.

5. Κύριός ἐστιν τοῦ σαββάτου ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. In all three accounts Κύριος comes first with emphasis. The Son of Man controls the sabbath, not is controlled by it. This does not mean that He abrogates it (Mt. v. 17-20), but that He has power to cancel the literal observance of it in order to perform or permit what is in accordance with its spirit. Mk. gives the additional reason that “the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath,” i.e. that it was given to be a blessing, not a burden. Even the Rabbis sometimes saw this; “The sabbath is handed over to you; not, ye are handed over to the sabbath” (Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 58). Ritual must give way to charity. The Divine character of the Law is best vindicated by making it lovable; and the Pharisees had made it an iron taskmaster. And, if the sabbath gives way to man, much more to the Son of Man. In Jn. v. 17 Christ takes still higher ground. The Father knows no sabbath in working for man’s good, and the Son has the same right and liberty. For ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου see on v. 24. The point here is that Christ as the representative of man defends man’s liberty.

Cod. D transfers ver. 5 to after ver. 10, and instead of it has the remarkable insertion: τῇ αὐτῇ ἡμέρᾳ θεασάμενος των ἐργαζόμενοι τῷ σαββάτῳ εἶχεν αὐτῷ ἀνθρωπε, εἰ μὲν οἶδας τί τοιεῖς, μακάριος εἰς δὲ μὴ οἶδας, ἐπικατάρατος καὶ παραβάτης εἰ τοῦ νόμου. For ἀνθρωπε comp. xii. 14; ἐπικατάρατος, Gal. iii. 10; παραβάτης νόμου, Rom. ii. 25, 27; Jas. ii. 11. It is possible that the tradition here preserved in Cod. D is the source from which both S. Paul and S. James derive the phrase παραβάτης νόμου. In Rom. ii., where it occurs twice, we have the address ἀνθρωπε twice (vv. 1, 3). There is nothing incredible in Christ’s having seen a man working (not necessarily in public) on the sabbath. The words attributed to Christ are so unlike the undignified, silly, and even immoral inventions in the apocryphal gospels that we may believe that this traditional story is true, although it is no part of the Canonical Gospels. D has other considerable insertions Mt. xx. 28 and Jn. vi. 56. See A. Resch, Agrapha Aussercanonische Evangelienfragmente (Leipzig, 1889) pp. 36, 189.

6-11. The Second Incident on the Sabbath. Mt. xii. 9 would lead us to suppose that it was the same sabbath (μετὰ τῆς ἧλθεν ἡλικίας). Lk. definitely states that it was ἐν ἐτέρῳ σαββάτῳ, but not that it was “on the very next sabbath following.” He alone mentions that Jesus taught in the synagogue on this occasion, and that the withered hand that was healed was the right one.

6. 'Εγένετο δὲ . . . εἰσέλθεν αὐτὸν . . . καὶ ἤρπα . . . καὶ ἤρπα. The same Hebraistic constr. as in ver. 1, somewhat modified in accordance with classical usage: see note at the end of ch. i. We have ἤρπα at the Pool of Bethesda (Jn. v. 3); but outside N.T. the word seems to mean, when applied to the human body, either “not wet” or “lean.”
7. Παρετηρούντο δὲ αὐτὸν οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι. Λκ. alone tells us who the spies were. Mt. puts their inquisitiveness into words, "Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?" The verb signifies "watch narrowly," esp. with sinister intent, perhaps from looking sideways out of the corner of one's eyes, ex obliquo et occulto. As in Gal. iv. 10, the mid. gives the idea of interested observance. Mk. has παρετηροῦν: comp. xx. 20; Sus. 12, 15, 16; Polyb. xvii. 3, 2; Aris. Rhet. ii. 6, 20; Top. viii. 11, 1.

ei ἐν τῷ σαββάτῳ θεραπεύει. The present has reference to His habitual practice, of which His conduct on this occasion would be evidence. But ΝΒ with other authorities read θεραπεύει, which is probably genuine in Mk. iii. 2, and may be genuine here. The future would limit the question to the case before them.

Ἰνα εὕρωσίν κατηγορεῖν αὐτοῦ. According to what is probably the invariable rule in N.T. we have the subj. in spite of the past tense on which the final clause is dependent. The opt. for this purpose is obsolete; for γιοί (Mk. ix. 30) and similar forms are probably meant to be subj.

8. αὐτὸς δὲ ἦδει τοὺς διαλογισμοὺς αὐτοῦ. "But He," in contrast to these spies (v. 16, viii. 37, 54) "knew their thoughts." For διαλογισμός comp. ii. 35, v. 22, ix. 46; xxiv. 38. It commonly means intellectual and inward questioning rather than actual disputing: but see on v. 22 and comp. i Tim. ii. 8.

τῷ ἀνδρὶ τῷ ἥραν ἔχοντι τὴν χειρά. "To the man who had his hand withered," not "who had the withered hand." For ἀνδρὶ comp. v. 12: Mt. and Mk. have ἀνδρώπως.

Ἐγείρε καὶ στήθη εἰς τὸ μέσον. Lk. alone has καὶ στήθη. Christ's method is as open as that of His adversaries is secret. "Arise and stand into the midst"; i.e. "Come into the midst and stand there": comp. xi. 7; Acts viii. 40. Win. l. 4. b, p. 516. In what follows note Lk.'s favourite ἀναστάς (i. 39), which neither Mt. nor Mk. has here.

None of them records any words of the man; but Jerome in commenting on Mt. xii. 13 states, in evangelio quo utuntur Nazareni et Ebionitae... homo iste qui aridam habet manum comentarius scribitur, istiusmodi vocibus auxilium precans, Commentarius erat, manibus vicitur quaeritans: precor te, Jesu, ut mihi restituis sanitatem, ne turpiter mendix eis cibos. See on xviii. 25.

9. Ἐπερωτῶ ὦμᾶς, εἰ. He answers the questioning in their hearts by a direct question which puts the matter in the true light. To refuse to do good is to do evil; and it could not be right to do evil on the sabbath.

The reading of TR., ἐπερωτήσω ὦμᾶς τι, is wrong in both variations; and has the disadvantage of being ambiguous, for τι may be indefinite or interrogative. "I will ask you something, Is it lawful?" etc. Or, "I will ask you what is lawful," etc.
It was a principle of the Rabbinists that *periculum vitae pellit sabbatum*; but the life must be that of a Jew. This canon was liberally interpreted; so that a large number of diseases might be attended to on the sabbath, as being dangerous. These modifications of the rigid rule were based on the principle that it was lawful to do good and avert evil on the sabbath; and to this Jesus appeals. If the Pharisees said, "This man's life is not in danger," the answer would have been easy, "You do not know that, any more than in the cases always allowed." The addition of *happoléseai* has special point, for this was what these objectors were doing. They did not consider that they were breaking the sabbath in plotting to destroy Jesus on this day (ver. 7). Were they to be allowed to destroy, while He was forbidden to save?

10. *periblēpsiōmenos pàntas autōs.* Mk. adds, still more graphically, *métergēs, συλλυπούμενος ἐπὶ τὴν πωρώσει τῆς καρδίας αὐτῶν:* but *pàntas* is peculiar to Lk. See on vii. 35 and ix. 43. Mt. omits the whole of this, but inserts the case of the sheep fallen into a pit. Lk. has a similar question about a son or ox fallen into a well, which was asked on another occasion (xiv. 5).

"Εκτεινον τὴν χειρά σου. As His challenge to His enemies remained unanswered, He now makes trial of the man. The attempt to obey this command was evidence of his faith.

With the double augment in *ἀπεκατεστάθη* comp. *ἐπροέγεισα, ἐπροεφιένων, ἐκατεσκέψασαν, εὐνεμαρτύρουσαν, ἠφώρισαν,* which occur in various writers. Exod. iv. 7, *ἀπεκατέστη*; Jer. xxiii. 8, *ἀπεκατέστησαν;* Ign. Smyr. xi., *ἀπεκατεστάθη.* Win. xii. 7, a, p. 84.

Cod. D here inserts ver. 5.

11. *ἀνολας.* The phrensy or loss of reason which is caused by extreme excitement; *dementia* rather than *insipienia* (Vulg.) or *amentia* (Beza). Plato distinguishes two kinds of *άνοια, τὸ μὲν μανια, τὸ δ' ἀμαιλιαν* (Tim. 86 B). It is the former which is intended here. Elsewhere 2 Tim. iii. 9; Prov. xxii. 15; Eccl. xi. 10; Wisd. xv. 18, xix. 3; 2 Mac. iv. 6, etc.

τί ἁν ποιήσατε. "What they should do," if they did anything. In Lk. the opt. is still freq. in indirect questions: see on iii. 15. Mk. says that the Pharisees forthwith took counsel with the Herodians how they might destroy Him (*ἀπολέσωσιν*). They would be glad of the assistance of the court party to accomplish this end. With their help Antipas might be induced to treat Jesus as he had treated the Baptist. Lk. nowhere mentions the Herodians.

The Aeolic form *ποιήσατε* is not found in the best MSS. here. In Acts xvii. 27 *ψυλαφήσατε* is probably genuine.
VI. 12-VIII. 56. From the Nomination of the Twelve to their First Mission.

In proportion as the work of Christ progresses the opposition between Him and the supporters of moribund Judaism is intensified.

12-16. The Nomination of the Twelve. Common to all three: comp. Mk. iii. 13-19; Mt. x. 2-4. L'élection des Douze est le premier acte organisateur accompli par Jésus-Christ. Sauf les sacrements, c'est le seul. Car c'était ce collège, une fois constitué, qui devait un jour faire le reste (Godet).

12. ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις τ. See on i. 39. This expression, and ἐγένετο and ἦν with the participle, are characteristic of Lk., and are not found in the parallels in Mt. and Mk. For the constr. comp. vv. 1 and 6; for προσευχαται see Introd. § 6. The momentous crisis of choosing the Twelve is at hand, and this vigil is the preparation for it.

διανυκτερεύων. Here only in N.T., but not rare elsewhere; Job ii. 9 (where LXX has much which is not in the extant Heb.); Jos. Ant. vi. 13. 9; B. J. i. 29. 2; Xen. Hellen. v. 4. 3. The analytical tense emphasizes the long continuance of the prayer.

τῇ προσευχῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ. The phrase occurs nowhere else. It means prayer which has God for its object: comp. ξῆλος Θεοῦ (Rom. x. 2); ὁ ξῆλος τοῦ οἶκου σου (Jn. ii. 17); πίστος Ἰησοῦ (Gal. iii. 22). Win. xxx. i. a, p. 231. 1 That προσευχῇ here means an oratory or place of prayer is incredible: see on Acts xvi. 13. Lightfoot says that some Rabbis taught that God prays: “Let it be My will that My mercy overcome My wrath.” But such trifling has no place here. Mk. xi. 22 and Jas. ii. 1 are perhaps parallel.

13. ἐγένετο ἡμέρα. The phrase is freq. in Lk. (iv. 42, xxii. 66; Acts xii. 18, xvi. 35, xxiii. 12, xxvii. 29, 33, 39)—προσεφώνουσεν. “Called to Him, summoned.” This is the more correct use of the word. Elsewhere in N.T. it means “address, call to”; and, excepting Mt. xi. 16, it is used only by Lk. (vii. 32, xiii. 22, xxiii. 20; Acts xxii. 40, xxii. 2)—τοὺς μαθητὰς. These are the larger circle of disciples, out of whom He selected the Twelve. Comp. Jn. vi. 70; Mt. xix. 28; Rev. xxi. 14. That either the larger circle or the Twelve had spent the night with Him is neither stated nor implied.

ἐκλέγεμενος. This implies the telling over (λέγειν) in preference to others (ἐκ) for one’s own advantage (mid.). The word is fatal

1 Green compares ἔστι ἐκεῖθεν Θεοῦ (Jos. Ant. ii. 8. 1) and πρὸς ἐκεῖθεν τοῦ Θεοῦ (ii. 9. 3); and, for the art. before προσευχῇ “as an abstract or general term,” Mt. xxii. 22; Acts i. 14; 1 Cor. vii. 5 (Gram. of N.T. p. 87).
to Lange's theory that Judas was forced upon our Lord by the importunity of the other Apostles (L. of C. ii. p. 179).

οὗς καὶ ἀπόστολος ἰδώμασεν. Not at the time possibly, but afterwards. The καὶ marks the naming as a separate act from the election. The word ἀπόστολος is used only once each by Mt. (x. 2), Mk. (vi. 30), and Jn. (xiii. 16); by Lk. six times in the Gospel (ix. 10, xi. 49, xvii. 5, xxii. 14, xxiv. 10) and often in the Acts. In the Gospels the Twelve are generally called the Twelve. The word occurs once in LXX, ἐγὼ εἰμὶ ἀπόστολος πρὸς σε σκληρὸς (1 Kings xiv. 6); and once in N.T. it is used of Christ (Heb. iii. 1). See Lft. Galatians, pp. 92–101, 6th ed.; D.B. 2 art. "Apostle"; Harnack in Texte u. Untersuch. ii. 111 ff.; Sanday on Rom. i. 1. The theory that Lk. writes in order to depreciate the Twelve, does not harmonize with the solemn importance which he assigns to their election. And criticism is out of harmony with itself, when it adopts this theory, and then suggests that Lk. has invented this early election. See on xxii. 45. Mk. iii. 14 is doubtful.

14–16. In construction the twelve names are in apposition to ἀπόστολος, and the narrative is not resumed until ver. 17. The four lists of the Apostles preserved in the Synoptic Gospels and the Acts agree in two main features. 1. The names are arranged in three groups of four. 2. The same Apostles, Peter, Philip, and James of Alphaeus, stand first in each group. Only in respect of one name is there material difference between the lists. In the third group Lk. both here and Acts i. 13 has Judas of James; for whom Mt. (x. 3) and Mk. (iii. 18) have Thaddaeus or Lebbeus. In both places Thaddaeus is probably correct, Lebbeus being due to an attempt to include Levi among the Apostles. Levi = Lebi or Lebbi, the Greek form of which might be Λεββαίος, as Θαδδαίας of Thadd. Some MSS. read Λεββαίος, which is still closer to Levi. See WH. ii. App. pp. 12, 24. The identification of Thaddaeus with Judas of James solves the difficulty, and there is nothing against it excepting lack of direct evidence. No pairing of the Apostles is manifest in this list as in that of Mt. If the καὶ after ἰδώμασεν be omitted, there is a break between the second and third group; but otherwise the list is a simple string of names. In the first six names Lk. agrees with the first three pairs of Mt. In the other six he places Matthew before Thomas (while Mt. places himself last in his group) and Simon Zelotes before Judas of James.

14. Σύμων ἵνα καὶ ἰδώμασεν Πέτρον. The similarity to the preceding clause is marked. This certainly does not mean that Simon received the name of Peter on this occasion, and there is nothing to show that the Twelve received the name of Apostles on this occasion. But it should be noticed that henceforth Lk. always speaks of him as Peter (viii. 45, 51, ix. 20, 28, 32, 33, xii. 41, etc.) and not as Simon. In xxii. 31 and xxiv. 34 Lk. is quoting the words of others. Hitherto he has called him Simon (iv. 38, v. 3, 4, 5, 10) and once Simon Peter (v. 8), but never Peter. In the Acts he is never called Simon without the addition of the surname. The usage with regard to the names Saul and Paul is very similar. See papers by Dean Chadwick on "The Group of the Apostles"
VI. 14, 15. THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE


Ἀνδρέαν. Only in his lists of the Apostles does Lk. mention Andrew. Mt. mentions him on one other occasion, and Mk. on three others (Mt. iv. 18; Mk. i. 16, 29, xiii. 3). Nearly all that we know about him comes from Jn. (i. 41, 44, vi. 8, xii. 22). Although one of the earliest disciples, he does not become one of the chosen three, although Mk. xiii. 3 seems to indicate special intimacy. For legends respecting him see Lipsius, Apokryphen Apostelgeschichten u. Apostellegenden, i. pp. 543-622; Tregelles, Canon Muratorianus, pp. 17, 34.

Ἰάκωβον καὶ Ἰωάννην. This is their order according to age, and it is observed in all three Gospels; in Acts i. 13 John precedes James. The fact that James was the first of the Twelve to be put to death is evidence that he was regarded as specially influential. James and John were probably first cousins of the Lord; for, according to the best interpretation of Jn. xix. 25, their mother Salome was the sister of the Virgin Mary. That the title of Boanerges was given to them “at the time of the appointment of the Twelve” (D.B. i. p. 1509) is a baseless hypothesis. See Trench, Studies in the Gospels, pp. 138-146; Suicer, Thesaurus, s.v. βαονέργης. For legends see D.B. i. p. 1511; Lipsius, iii. pp. 201-228, i. pp. 348-542.

Φιλίππον. All that we know of him comes from Jn. (i. 44-49, vi. 5-7, xii. 21, 22, xiv. 8, 9). There seems to have been some connexion between him and Andrew (Jn. i. 44, xii. 22); and both in Mk. iii. 18 and Acts i. 13 their names are placed together in the lists; but the nature of the connexion is unknown. Lipsius, iii. pp. 1-53.

Βαρθολομαίον. The ancient and common identification with Nathanael is probable, but by no means certain. 1. As Bartholomew is only a patronymic, “son of Talmai,” the bearer of it would be likely to have another name. 2. The Synoptists do not mention Nathanael; Jn. does not mention Bartholomew. 3. The Synoptists place Bartholomew next to Philip, and Philip brought Nathanael to Christ. 4. The companions of Nathanael who are named Jn. xxi. 2 are all of them Apostles. Lipsius, iii. pp. 54-108.

15. Μαθθαῖον καὶ Θωμᾶ. In all three these names are combined; but Mt. reverses the order, and after his own name adds δὲ τελῶνης, which is found in none of the other lists. All that we know of Thomas is told us by Jn. (xii. 16, xiv. 5, xx. 24-29, xxii. 2). Lipsius, iii. pp. 109-141, i. pp. 225-347.

Ἰάκωβον Ἀλφαῖον. His father is probably not the father of Levi (Mk. ii. 14), and James himself is certainly not the brother of the Lord (Mt. xiii. 55; Mk. vi. 3; Gal. i. 19) who was the first overseer of the Church of Jerusalem (Acts xii. 17, xv. 13; Gal. ii. 9, 12).
The brethren of the Lord did not believe on Him at this time (Jn. vii. 5), and none of them can have been among the Twelve. But the Apostle James the son of Alphaeus is probably identical with James the Little (Mt. xxvii. 56; Mk. xv. 40; Jn. xix. 25), for Alphaeus and Clopas may be two different Greek forms of the Aramaic Chalpai; but this is uncertain. See Mayor, Ep. of S. James, pp. i-xlvi; also Expositor's Bible, S. James and S. Jude, pp. 25-30 (Hodder, 1891). In all the catalogues James of Alphaeus heads the third group of Apostles. Lipsius, iii. 229-238.

174 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [VI. 15, 16.

Rhem. leaves the word untranslated, Canaanæus, and Wic. makes it unintelligible, "Canane." All the other English Versions make it a local adj., "of Cana," or "of Cane," or "of Canan," or "of Canaan," or "the Canaanite." The last error seems to begin with Cranmer in 1539. RV. is the first to make clear that "Kanaanæus" means "Zealot." Lft. On Revision, pp. 138, 139 (154, 155, 2nd ed.); Fritzsche on Mt. x. 4. The Zealots date from the time of the Maccabees as a class who attempted to force upon others their own rigorous interpretations of the Law. S. Paul speaks of himself as περισσοτέρος ζηλωτής ὑπάρχων τῶν πατρικῶν μου παραδόσεων (Gal. i. 14), i.e. he belonged to the extreme party of the Pharisees (Acts xxii. 3, xxiii. 6, xxvii. 5; Phil. iii. 5, 6). Large numbers of this party were among the first converts at Jerusalem (Acts xxii. 20). From these extremists had sprung the revolt under Judas of Galilee (Acts v. 37; Jos. Ant. xviii. 1, 1, 6), and the Sicarii, who were the proximate cause of the destruction of Jerusalem (Jos. B. J. iv. 3, 9, 5, 1, 7, 2, vii. 8, 1, 10, 1, 11, 1). Milman, Hist. of the Jews, ii. pp. 191, 291, 299, 323, 4th ed. 1866; Ewald, Hist. of Israel, vii. 559 ff., Eng. tr.; Herzog, PRE. art, "Zeloten." Whether the Apostle Simon was called Ἰακώβος because he had once belonged to this party, or because of his personal character either before or after his call, must remain uncertain.

16. Ἰούδας Ἰακώβου. That there were two Apostles of the name of Judas is clear from Jn. xiv. 22, although Mt. and Mk. mention only one; and the identification of their Thaddæus with the Judas not Iscariot of Jn. and with this Judas of James makes all run smoothly. Ἰούδας Ἰακώβου must be rendered "Judas the son of James," not "the brother of James," for which there is no justification. When Lk. means "brother," he inserts αδελφός (iii. 1, vi. 14; Acts xii. 2). Nonnus in his Paraphrase (Μεταβολή) of Jn. xiv. 22 has Ἰούδας νῦν Ἰακώβου. Ῥουδας αδελφος Ἰακώβου (Jude 1) is quite a different person, viz. the brother of James the

1 This use of καλομένων is very common in Lk. (vii. 11, viii. 2, ix. 10, x. 39, xxii. 37, xxiii. 3, xxiii. 33), and still more so in Acts. Not in Mt. Mk. or Jn.
Lord's brother. Tyn. Cov. and Cran. rightly supply "sonne" here, and Luth. also has sohn. The error begins with Beza's fratrem. Of this James, the father of Judas Thaddeus, nothing is known. Lk. adds the name of the father, because his arrangement places this Judas next to the traitor.

Ἰσκαριώτης. This epithet probably means "man of Kerioth," which was a place in Judah (Josh. xv. 25), or possibly in Moab (Jer. xlviii. 24). Jn. vi. 71 confirms this; for there and Jn. xiii. 26 the true reading gives "Judas son of Simon Iscariot"; and if the name is a local epithet, both father and son would be likely to have it. In this case Judas was the only Apostle who was not a Galilean, and this may have helped to isolate him. Other derivations of "Iscariot," which connect the word with "lying," or "strangling," or "apron," i.e. bag, or "date-trees" (καρμωτίδες), are much less probable. We know nothing about Simon Iscariot. Farrar identifies him with Simon Zelotes, which is most improbable. Simon was one of the commonest of names. The MSS. vary between Ἰσκαριώθ, which is right here, and Ἰσκαριώτης, which is right xxii. 3. Here only is προδότης used of Judas: it occurs in the plur. Acts vii. 52; 2 Tim. iii. 4; and in the sing. 2 Mac. v. 15, x. 13. All English Versions go wrong about ἐγένετο προδότης. Nowhere in Scripture is Judas styled "the traitor," and ἐγένετο should be distinguished from ἕνεκα therefore, not "was the traitor," but "became a traitor," as the American Revisers proposed. Judas "turned traitor." The difficulty about the call of Judas is parallel to the powers bestowed upon a Napoleon. The treason of Judas shows that no position in the Church, however exalted, gives security against the most complete fall.

The verb used of the treachery of Judas is never περιστρέφω, but παραδειγόμαι (xxii. 4, 6, 21, 22, 48; Mt. x. 4; Mk. iii. 19; Jn. vi. 64, 71). In class. Grk. παραδειγόμαι commonly has this meaning; παραποίημαι rarely. Here the Lat. texts vary between proditor (Vulg.) and traditor (c f ff r) and qui tradidit eum or illum (d e).

17–19. The Descent from the Mountain, and many Miracles of Healing. The parallel passages in Mk. iii. 7-12 and Mt. iv. 24, 25 are very different from Lk. and from one another in wording.

17. ἐπὶ τόπου πεδινοῦ. This may mean a level spot below the summit; but in connexion with καταβάς, and without qualification, it more naturally means level ground near the foot of the mountain. Hither it would be more likely that multitudes would come and bring their sick, than to a plateau high up the mountain.

The Latin texts vary: in loco campestri (Vulg.), in loco campense (a), in l. plano (f) in l. pedeplano (l.).

καὶ ὀχλος οἶδας μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ. Not a nom. pendens, but
included in the preceding ἐστη: comp. the constr. viii. 1-3. He stood, and they stood. But the ἐστη is no evidence as to Christ’s attitude during the discourse, because the healings intervene: iv. 20 shows that Lk. is aware of Christ’s sitting to preach.

καὶ πλῆθος πολὺ τοῦ λαοῦ, κ.τ.λ. This is a third group. Christ and the Twelve form one group. The multitude of disciples in the wider sense form a second. And besides these there is a mixed throng from Judæa and the sea-coast: see on xi. 29.

ιάδήμων ἀπό. The prep. is not classical; but we say “to be cured from” (Mk. v. 29). In the perf., 1 aor. and 1 fut. pass. the dep. ἰδομαι is pass. in meaning (vii. 7, viii. 47, xvii. 15; not Acts iii. 11). Except in Lk., the verb is rare in N.T. writers.—There should be at least a colon at των νῦν αὐτῶν: here the long sentence which began at ver. 13 ends.

18, 19. For similarly condensed accounts of groups of miracles comp. iv. 40, v. 15, vii. 21. We once more have an amphibolous expression: see on ii. 22. Here ἀπὸ πνευμάτων ἀκαθάρτων may be taken either with ἐνοχλημένοι or with ἐθεραπεύοντο. From ver. 17 and vii. 21 we infer that the latter constr. is right: “They that were troubled with them were healed of unclean spirits.” But in the other cases the gen. with ἀπό follows the verb; so that ἐνοχλημένοι ἀπό may be right. The “and” before “were healed” in AV. is from a corrupt reading: not only Wic. and Rhem. with Vulg., but also Cov., omit the “and.” For πνευμάτων ἀκαθάρτων see on iv. 33. Note πᾶς and πάντας here and πάσης in ver. 17. They are not found in Mk. iii. 7, 10: see on ver. 30. With παρ’ αὐτοῦ ἐξήρχετο comp. Jn. xvi. 27. Lk. commonly writes ἐξερχόμεναι ἀπό: see small print on iv. 35, and comp. viii. 46, which illustrates ἀπτεσθαι, δύναμις, and ἐξήρχετο. For δύναμις and ἰάτο see on iv. 36.

20-49. The Sermon ἐπὶ τοῦτο πεδίνου.

To call it “the Sermon on the Plain,” following the AV. in ver. 17, is convenient, but scarcely justifiable. “The plain” has not been mentioned, and τὸ πεδίον does not occur in N.T. Moreover, it is by no means certain that this τοῦτο πεδίνοι was at the foot of the mount. And to talk of “the Sermon on the Plain” assumes, what cannot be proved, that the discourse here recorded is entirely distinct from “the Sermon on the Mount” (Mt. v. 1-vii. 29). The relations between the two discourses will never cease to be discussed, because the materials are insufficient for a final decision. The following are the chief hypotheses which have been suggested in order to explain the marked similarities and differences. 1. They are reports, at first or second hand, of two similar but different discourses, distinct in time, place, and circumstance (Auger, Greswell, Osmlander, Patritius, Plumtree, Sadler; so also in the main Barradius, Basil, Dodridge, Toletus, Tostatus). 2. They are reports of two different discourses delivered on the same day, Mt. giving the esoteric address to the disciples on the mountain, Lk. the exoteric address to the mixed multitude below (Augustine, Lange). 3. They are recensions, with interpolations and omissions, of two independent reports of one and the same sermon (Schleiermacher). 4. They are recensions of the same report, to which Mt. adds
material from other sources, and from which Lk. perhaps omits portions (B. Weiss).

5. Mt. gives a conflate arrangement of sayings which were uttered on various occasions, and some of these occasions are given by Lk. (Bleek, Calvin, Godet, Holtzmann, Keim, Kuinoel, Neander, Pott, Semler, Weizäcker, Wieseler).

6. Both sermons are a conglomeration of detached sayings collected into an anthology of aphorisms (Strauss, and to some extent Baur). Besides the writers mentioned above under the last four heads, a multitude of commentators adopt the view that the main portions of the reports given by Mt. and Lk. represent one and the same discourse (Bengel, Bucer, Calovius, Caspari, Chemnitz, Chrysostom, De Wette, Ebrard, Edersheim, Eillcott, Ewald, Farrar, Fritzsche, Grothus, Hilgenfeld, Keim, Lewin, Luther, McClellan, Meyer, Milman, Olshausen, Oosterzee, Origen, Robinson, Schanz, Schneckenburger, Sieffert, Stroud, Tholuck, Tischendorf, Wordsworth).

Bad or inadequate arguments are used on both sides. It is a great deal too much to say with Schleiermacher that the fact that the portions common to both appear in the same order, with the same beginning and end, “proves incontrovertibly the identity of the discourse.” Any preacher repeating a carefully prepared sermon would begin and end in the same way, and would put his points in the same order. And it is mere dogmatism without argument when Sadler asserts that “the Lord must have pronounced each [beatitude] which St. Matthew records, and yet it is equally plain that He could hardly have pronounced them according to St. Luke’s form. He would not have said, Blessed are ye meek ones, Blessed are ye merciful ones, Blessed are ye peacemakers. The four given by St. Luke are the only ones which could well have been pronounced personally on the disciples; so that the beatitudes as given by St. Matthew and St. Luke respectively, could not have been altered forms of the same discourse.” Much more reasonable is the position of Grothus, who believes that both record the same sermon: sicut facti narrationes circumstantiis congruentes non temere ad res diversas referendae sunt, ita sermones nihil vetat saepius habitos eodem aut similibus, praesertim continentes vitam totius praecipita, quae non potuerunt nimium saepe repeti (on Lk. vi. 17). We know beyond all question that some of our Lord’s words were uttered several times, and there is nothing antecedently improbable in the hypothesis that the words of this discourse, quae non potuerunt nimium saepe repeti, were delivered in one or other of these forms more than once. Nor does it follow that those portions which Lk. gives as having been uttered on other occasions were not also uttered as parts of a continuous discourse. A preacher naturally repeats fragments of his own sermons in giving catechetical instruction, and also gathers up detached items of instruction when composing a sermon. The fact that Lk. meant to record these other occasions may have been part of his reason for omitting the similar words in this discourse. Another consideration which may have determined his selection is the thought of what would best suit Gentile readers. But in any case the dictum of Grothus must be remembered, that the hypothesis of a repetition of verbally similar sayings may be used with much more freedom than the hypothesis of a repetition of circumstantially similar acts.

The conclusion arrived at by Sanday and P. Ewald is of this kind. The beatitudes originally stood in the Logia in a form similar to that in Mt. v. 3–12. Lk. used the Logia, but had also a document entirely independent of the Logia; and this contained a discourse, spoken originally on some other occasion, but yet so like the Sermon on the Mount as to be identified with it by Lk. The sermon in Luke is, therefore, a compound of the reports of two similar but different discourses; and in this compound the elements derived from the Logia are dominated by those derived from the independent document (Expositor for April 1891, p. 315). It seems, however, simpler to suppose that Lk. took the whole of his report from the document which contained this very similar, but different sermon. See Paul Feine, Ueber das gegenseitige Verhaltniss d. Texte der Bergpredigt bei Matthäus und Lukas in the Jahrb. für Protestantische Theologie, xi. 1.
The following tables will show the parallels between the two Evangelists:

**Between the Two Sermons.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lk. vi. 20, 21</th>
<th>Mt. v. 3, 4, 6</th>
<th>Lk. vi. 37, 38</th>
<th>Mt. vii. 1, 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>22, 23</td>
<td>11, 12</td>
<td>41, 42</td>
<td>3-5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27-30</td>
<td>39-42</td>
<td>43-46</td>
<td>16-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>vii. 12</td>
<td>47-49</td>
<td>24-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32-36</td>
<td>v. 42-48</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Between detached Sayings in Lk. and the Sermon in Mt.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lk. xiv. 34, 35</th>
<th>Mt. v. 13</th>
<th>Lk. xi. 34-36</th>
<th>Mt. vi. 22-23</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>viii. 16 and xi. 33</td>
<td></td>
<td>v. 15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi. 17</td>
<td></td>
<td>xvi. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii. 58, 59</td>
<td></td>
<td>xii. 22-31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi. 18</td>
<td></td>
<td>vii. 7-11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xi. 2-4</td>
<td></td>
<td>xiii. 24</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii. 33, 34</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>vi. 9-13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>25-27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>22, 23</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Between the Sermon in Lk. and detached Sayings in Mt.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lk. vi. 39</th>
<th>Mt. xv. 14</th>
<th>Lk. vi. 40</th>
<th>Mt. x. 24</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

This last saying was frequently uttered. It is recorded twice by Jn. (xiii. 16, xv. 20), and the four records seem to refer to four different occasions; besides which we have a similar utterance Lk. xxii. 27.

These tables leave three verses of the sermon in Lk. without a parallel in Mt. (or any other Gospel), viz. the four woes corresponding to the four beatitudes, vv. 24-26. The portions of the sermon in Mt. which have no parallel in Lk. amount to forty-one verses, viz. Mt. v. 5, 7-10, 14, 16, 17, 19-24, 27-31, 33-38, 43, vi. 1-8, 14-18, vii. 6, 14, 15.

The plan of both discourses is the same. 1. The qualifications of those who can enter the kingdom (Lk. 20-26; Mt. v. 1-12); 2. The duties of those who have entered the kingdom (Lk. 27-45; Mt. v. 13-vii. 12); 3. The judgments which await the members of the kingdom (Lk. 46-49; Mt. vii. 13-27). Encouragement, requirement, warning; or invitation, principles, sanction;—these are the three gradations which may be traced in these discourses; and, as Stier remarks, the course of all preaching is herein reflected.

There is considerable unanimity as to the spot where the sermon was delivered (Stanley, *Sin & Pal.* pp. 368, 369; Caspari, *Chron. and Geograph.* *Int. to the L. of C.* § 108, p. 171; Robinson, *Pal.* ii. 370, iii. pp. 241, 403; Farrar, *L. of C.* i. p. 250, and on Lk. vi. 12; Keim, *Jes. of Nas.* ii. p. 289). On the other hand, Edersheim asserts that "the locality is for many reasons unsuitable"; but he gives no reasons (L. & T. i. p. 524; see also Thomson, *Land and Book,* ii. p. 118).

20-28. The Qualifications necessary for Admission to the Kingdom: the Happiness of those who possess them (20-23), and the Misery of those who possess them not (24-26). This contrast of Blessings and Woes at the beginning of the sermon corresponds with the contrast in the parable with which it ends.
VI. 20-23. Four Beatitudes; which correspond to the first, second, fourth, and eighth in Mt. v. 3-12; those relating to the meek, the merciful, the pure in heart, and the peacemakers being omitted. In the four that Lk. gives the more spiritual words which occur in Mt. are omitted, and the blessings are assigned to more external conditions. Actual poverty, sorrow, and hunger are declared to be blessed (as being opportunities for the exercise of internal virtues); and this doctrine is emphasized by the corresponding Woes pronounced upon wealth, jollity, and fulness of bread (as being sources of temptation). It is in the last Beatitude that there is least difference between the two. Even in Lk. unpopularity is not declared to be blessed, unless it is “for the Son of Man’s sake”; and there is no Woe pronounced upon popularity for the Son of Man’s sake. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 261.

20. Καὶ αὐτὸς ἑπάρας τοῖς ὀρθαλμοῖς αὐτοῦ εἰς τοὺς μαθητάς. Lk.’s favourite mode of connexion in narrative: see on v. 14 and comp. viii. 1, 22, ix. 51, etc. With ἑπάρας τῷ ὀφθ. comp. xviii. 13 and Jn. xviii. 1. We must not take εἰς with ἔλεγεν; Lk. would have written πρός, and after ἔλεγεν: contrast xxii. 65 and Mk. iii. 29. Mt. has προσῆλθαν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ. καὶ ... ἐδίδασκεν αὐτοῖς. The discourse in both cases is addressed to the disciples; there is nothing to indicate that the discourse in Lk. is addressed to mixed multitudes, including unbelieving Jews and heathen. These Beatitudes would not be true, if addressed to them. It is to the faithful Christian that poverty, hunger, sorrow, and unpopularity
are real blessings; to others they may be mere sterile suffering. Whereas, even for the heathen, to be poor in spirit and to hunger and thirst after righteousness are blessed things. In Mt. the Beatitudes are in the third person and have a wider sweep.

μακάριοι οἱ. This is the common constr. both in LXX and N.T., the reason for the blessedness being expressed by a noun or participle which is the subject of the sentence (Ps. ii. 12, xl. 5, xlii. 2, lxxxiv. 5, 6, 13, lxxxix. 16, etc.); but the reason is sometimes expressed by the relative with a finite verb (Ps. i. 1, xxxii. 1, 2; Lk. xiv. 15; Jas. i. 12), or by ὅτι (xiv. 14; 1 Pet. iv. 14), or by ἄν (Jn. xiii. 17; 1 Cor. vii. 40).

οἱ πενήντες. See on iv. 18. We have no right to supply τῷ πνεύματι from Mt. It is actual poverty that is here meant. Nor is it the meaning that actual poverty makes men “poor in spirit.” Still less does it mean that in itself poverty is to all men a blessing. There is no Ebionite doctrine here. But “to you, My disciples, poverty is a blessing, because it preserves you in your dependence on God, and helps you to be truly His subjects”: τῷ γὰρ ὑμετέρα δεικτικῶς πρὸς πάροντας ἔλεγε τοιούτως (Eus.) Some of these disciples had made themselves poor by surrendering all in order to follow Christ. Comp. Ps. lxxii. 12, 13.

ὅμετέρα ἡ Ἑβαστεία. “Yours is the kingdom,” not “will be.” It is not a promise, as in the next Beatitudes, but the statement of a fact. But the Kingdom is not yet theirs in its fulness; and those elements which are not yet possessed are promised in the Beatitudes which follow.

21. οἱ πενήντες νῦν. “Those of you who are suffering from actual want in this life. Ye shall have compensation.”

χορτασθῆσθε. Originally the verb was confined to supplying animals with fodder (χόρτος), and if used of men implied a brutish kind of feeding (Plato, Rep. ix. p. 586). But in N.T. it is never used of cattle, and when it is used of men it has no degrading associations (ix. 17; Jn. vi. 26; Phil. iv. 12; Jas. ii. 16); not even xv. 16, if the word is genuine there, nor xvi. 21. Comp. τῶν πτωχῶν αὐτῆς χορτάσω ἄρτων (Ps. cxxxii. 15). In LXX χορτάζω and πίπτλημι are used to translate the same Hebrew word, sometimes in the same verse: ὅτι εἰχότασαν ψυχήν κενήν, καὶ ψυχὴν πενήντον ἐνεπλήσσαν ἁγαθὰν (Ps. cvii. 9). Here the filling refers to the spiritual abundance in the Kingdom of God. In all four cases, although the suffering endured is external and literal, yet the compensating blessing is spiritual.

οἱ κλαῖοντες νῦν. Mt. has πενθοῦντες, which expresses the mourning, while κλαῖοντες implies outward manifestation of grief in loud weeping, just as γελάσετε implied outward expression of mirth in laughter. Though common in LXX, γελάω occurs in N.T. only here and ver. 25.
VI. 22, 23.]  THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

22. ἀφορίσωσιν ὑμᾶς. “Mark you off from (ἀπό) by a boundary (ὅρος).” It is used both in a good sense (Acts xiii. 2; Rom. i. 1; Gal. i. 15) and also in a bad, as here. Comp. καὶ μὲ ἀπὸ γᾶς ὁριστε (Eur. Hec. 940). Excommunication from the congregation as well as from social intercourse is here meant. The usual sentence was for thirty days, during which the excommunicated might not come within four cubits of any one. Comp. Jn. ix. 22, xii. 42, xvi. 2. Whether there was at this time a more severe form of excommunication is uncertain. Herzog, PRE. 2 art. Bann bei den Hebräern; Grotius on Lk. vi. 22; Lightfoot, Hor. Heb. on Jn. ix. 22.

ἐνείδισον. The object to be supplied may be either the preceding ὑμᾶς (so most English Versions) or the following τοῦ ὄνομα ὑμῶν (Bede, Weiss). Vulg. supplies nothing; and Tyn. and Gen. have simply “and rayle” without an object. Neither AV. nor RV. has “you” in italics.

ἐκβάλλων τὸ ὄνομα ὑμῶν ὡς πονηρόν. “Throw your name contemptuously away, reject it with ignominy, as an evil thing.” There is no idea of striking a name off the list as a mark of disgrace, ex albo expungere, a meaning which ἐκβάλλων never has. It is used of hissing an actor off the stage and otherwise dismissing with contempt (Aristoph. Eq. 525; Nub. 1477; Soph. O. C. 631, 636; O. T. 849; Plato, Crito, 46 B). “Your name” means “the name by which you are known as My disciples,” as Christians. “Christian” or “Nazarene” was a name of bad repute, which it was disgraceful, and even unlawful, to bear, for Christianity was not a religio licita. For πονηρόν as an epithet of ὄνομα comp. Deut. xxii. 19.

ἐνεκα τοῦ ὑιοῦ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. A vital qualification. The hatred and contempt must be undeserved, and be endured for Christ’s sake; not merited by one’s own misconduct.

23. σκιρτήσατε. Peculiar to Lk. See on i. 41 and comp. Mal. iv. 2.

κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ γὰρ ἐποίουν τοῖς προφήταις. This implies that they are to receive “a prophet’s reward” (Mt. x. 41), as in this world, so in the next.

For the dat. comp. τοῖς μισοῦσιν ὑμᾶς (ver. 27). In class. Gk. we should have had τὰ αὐτὰ ἐποίουν τοῖς προφ. Thus, ἐγὼ δὲ ταῦτα τούτων ἑστήκα σὺν ἔκκ. (Hdt. i. 115, 3, iv. 166. 3: comp. Aristoph. Nub. 259; Vesp. 697). In later Gk. the dat. of relation becomes much more common.

οἱ πατέρες αὐτῶν. The gen. refers to οἱ ἀνθρώποι in ver. 22: “the fathers of them,” who hate and abuse you.

24-26. Four Woes corresponding to the four Beatitudes. There is no evidence that these were not part of the original discourse. Assuming that Mt. and Lk. report the same discourse, Mt. may have omitted them. But they may have been spoken on some other occasion. Schleiermacher and Weiss would have it
that they are mere glosses added by Lk. to emphasize and explain the preceding blessings. Cheyne thinks that some of them were suggested to Lk. by Is. lxxv. 13–16. We have no right to assume that no persons were present to whom these words would be applicable. Even if there were none present, yet these Woes might have been uttered as warnings both to those who heard them and to others who would learn them from those who heard. Just as the Beatitudes express the qualifications of those who are to enter the Kingdom, so these show the qualities which exclude men from it. It is possible that some of the spies and adversaries from Judæa were among the audience, and thus Jesus warns them of their condition. When the discourse as placed by Mt. was spoken there was less opposition to Christ, and hence no Woes (Pastor Pastorum, p. 256).

24. πλήν. Curtius makes πλήν an adverbial form of πλέον, so that its radical meaning would be "more than, beyond" (Gr. Etym. 282); but Lft. (Phil. iii. 16) connects it with πλάσα, in the meaning "besides, apart from this, only." For the accusatal form comp. δίκην, ἐπικλὴν, clamat, coram. It sometimes restricts, sometimes expands, what precedes. It is a favourite word with Lk., in the Gospel as an adv. (ver. 35, x. 11, 14, 20, xi. 41, xii. 31, xiii. 33, xvii. 1, xviii. 8, xix. 27, xxii. 21, 22, 42, xxiii. 28), in the Acts as a prep. (viii. 1, xv. 28, xxvii. 22). "But" is the only possible rendering here.

οὐαί δὲν τοῖς πλουσίοις. As a matter of fact the opponents of Christ came mostly from the wealthy classes, like the oppressors of the first Christians (Jas. v. 1–6). See Renan, L'Antechrist, p. xii; Ewald, Hist. of Israel, vii. p. 451. But the cases of Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimathea show that the rich as such were not excluded from the kingdom.—ἀπέχετε. "Ye have to the full"; so that there is nothing more left to have. The poor consolation derived from the riches in which they trusted is all that they get: they have no treasure in heaven. Comp. Mt. vi. 2, 5, 16; Philem. 15; and see Lft. on Phil. iv. 18. This meaning is classical: comp. ἀπολαμβάνω, ἀπεργάζομαι. Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 56. For παράκλησιν see on ii. 25, and comp. xvi. 25 of Lazarus.

26. οἱ ἐμπεπλησμένοι νῦν. "Sated with the good things of this life," like Dives (Ezek. xvi. 49). Grotius compares the epitaph, τῶν ἐχω δοσοὶ ἐπινοι καὶ ἐνήμυ. It may be doubted whether the change of word from χορτάζων to horum plenitudo non meretur nomen satietatis (Beng.) : comp. i. 53. In Lat. Vet. and Vulg. we have saturor both here and ver. 21.

πεινάσετε. This received a partial and literal fulfilment when Jerusalem was reduced to starvation in the siege: but the reference is rather to the loss of the spiritual food of the Kingdom. Comp. Is. lxxv. 13. Hillel said, "The more flesh one hath the more worms, the more treasures the more care, the more maids the more unchastity, the more men-servants the more theft The more law
the more life, the more schools, the more wisdom, the more counsel
the more insight, the more righteousness, the more peace.”

οἱ γελάντες νῦν. “Who laugh for joy over your present prosper­
ity,” the loss of which will surely come and cause grief. But
the worst loss will be that of spiritual joy hereafter (Is. lxv. 14).

26. δὴν καλῶς εἶπωσιν υἱᾶς. It is the wealthy who are com­
only admired and praised by all who hope to win their favour.
The praise of worldly men is no guarantee of merit: rather it shows
that those who have won it do not rise above the world’s standard
(Jn. xv. 19; Jas. iv. 4). Plutarch says that Phocion, when his
speech was received with universal applause, asked his friends
whether he had inadvertently said anything wrong.

τοῖς ψευδοπροφήταις. Just as the persecuted disciples are the
representatives of the true Prophets, so the wealthy hierarchy
whom all men flatter are the representatives of the false (Jer.
v. 31; comp. xxiii. 17; Is. xxx. 10; Mic. ii. 11).

Having stated who can and who cannot enter the Kingdom,
Jesus goes on to make known the principles which regulate the

27−45. Requirement: the Duties to be performed by those
who are admitted to the Kingdom of God. This forms the main
body of the discourse. Lk. omits the greater portion of what is
reported in Mt. respecting Christ’s relation to the Mosaic Law
(v. 17−19), and His condemnation of existing methods of interpret­
ing it (v. 20−48) and of fulfilling it (vi. 1−18). This discussion of
Judaic principles and practices would not have much meaning for
Lk.’s Gentile readers. The portion of it which he gives is stated
without reference to Judaism. The main point in Mt. is the
contrast between legal righteousness and true righteousness. In
Lk. the main point is that true righteousness is love; but the
opposition between formalism and the spirit of love is not urged.
The opposition which is here marked is the more universal
opposition between the spirit of selfishness and the spirit of love.
There is a break in this main portion, which Lk. marks by making
a fresh start, Εὐπεν δὲ καὶ παραβολὴν αὐτοῖς, but the second half
(39−45) continues the subject of the working of the principle of
love.

27. Ἀλλά. What is the contrast which this δὲ marks? The
emphatic position of the ψιωτὸν seems to show that the contrast is
between those on whom the Woes have been pronounced and the
faithful hearers now addressed. Others interpret, “But, although
I have denounced them, I do not allow you to hate them: you must love them." There is, however, no indication that the enemies who are to be loved are the wealthy who have just been denounced, and such a limitation of the meaning of enemies cannot be justified: comp. Mt. v. 44.

τοῖς ἄκουσιν. "Who give ear and obey," τοῖς πευθομένοις (Euthym.). It is unnatural to take it literally as meaning "My audience," in contrast to the rich who have just been addressed in their absence. Representatives of the rich may have been present among the audience. Schanz interprets "who listen with attention."

There is on the whole a double climax in what follows,—the worse the treatment received, the better the return made; but it is not quite exact. One would expect that ἀγάπη would be coupled with τοῖς μυσόντας. This is the first time that Lk. uses the word ἀγάπη, which sums up the whole spirit of the Gospel: it is most frequent in the writings of Jn. "It should never be forgotten that ἀγάπη is a word born within the bosom of revealed religion: it occurs in the Septuagint; but there is no example of its use in any heathen writer whatever" (Trench, Syn. xii.). This is not true of ἀγάπη and ἀγαπάζων, which are common in class. Grk. But Christianity has ennobled the meaning of both ἀγάπη and φιλεῖν, with their cognates: ἔρως, which is scarcely capable of such advancement, does not occur in N.T. See on xi. 42, the only place where ἀγάπη occurs in Lk. Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 80.

τοῖς ἐχθροῖς. For the combination with τοῖς μυσόντας comp. i. 71; Ps. xviii. 18, civ. 10; and for the fourfold description of enmity comp. ver. 22. In Mt. v. 44 we have only enemies and persecutors according to the best texts; and as καλῶς ποιεῖτε τοῖς μυσόντας (note the acc.) is not genuine there, this is the only passage in which καλῶς ποιεῖται = "benefit, do good to": comp. καλῶς εἰπεῖν (ver. 26), and contrast Mt. xii. 12; Mk. vii. 37; Acts x. 33; 1 Cor. vii. 37, 38; Phil. iv. 14; Jas. ii. 8, 19; 2 Pet. i. 19; 3 Jn. 6.—τοῖς μυσόσων. For the dat. comp. τοῖς προσφέραις (ver. 23) and τοῖς πεύθοπροφήταις (ver. 26). See the expansion of this principle Rom. xii. 17–21; 1 Thes. v. 15; 1 Pet. iii. 9. Comp. Exod. xxiii. 4; Job xxxi. 29; Prov. xvii. 5, xxiv. 17, xxv. 21. See detached note on the relation of Rom. xii.–xiv. to the Gospels at the end of Rom. xiii.

28. εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταραμένους ὑμᾶς. In class. Grk. εὐλογεῖν means "praise, honour," whether gods or men; comp. i. 64, ii. 28; Jas. iii. 9. The meaning "invoke blessings upon" is confined to LXX and N.T. (Gen. xiv. 19, xxii. 17, xlviii. 9; Rom. xii. 14; Acts iii. 26).

In class. Grk. καταραμέναι is followed by a dat. (Hom. Hdt. Xen. Dem.), as in Ep. Jer. 65; but in N.T. by an acc. (Mk. xi. 21; Jas. iii. 9); and the interpolation Mt. v. 44.—For προσεύχεσθε περὶ we might have expected προσεύχεσθε and the MSS. here and elsewhere are divided between ἰδρῷ and περὶ (Gal. i. 4; Col. i. 3; Rom. i. 8). But comp. Acts viii. 15; Heb. xiii. 1 Col. iv. 3. Win. xlvii. 1, 2, p. 478.
The Ministry in Galilee

28-30. Aristotle defines ἐπιρρεασμός as ἐμποδισμός τῶν βουλήσεων, οἷς ἵνα τι αὐτῶ, ἀλλ’ ἵνα μὴ ἐκεῖνο (Rhet. ii. 2. 3). It is “spiteful treatment.”

29, 30. Whereas vv. 27, 28 refer to the active ἀγάπη which returns good for evil, these refer rather to the passive μακροθυμία, which never retaliates. The four precepts here given are startling. It is impossible for either governments or individuals to keep them. A State which endeavoured to shape its policy in exact accordance with them would soon cease to exist; and if individuals acted in strict obedience to them society would be reduced to anarchy. Violence, robbery, and shameless exaction would be supreme. The inference is that they are not precepts, but illustrations of principles. They are in the form of rules; but as they cannot be kept as rules, we are compelled to look beyond the letter to the spirit which they embody. If Christ had given precepts which could be kept literally, we might easily have rested content with observing the letter, and have never penetrated to the spirit. What is the spirit? Among other things this—that resistance of evil and refusal to part with our property must never be a personal matter: so far as we are concerned we must be willing to suffer still more and to surrender still more. It is right to withstand and even to punish those who injure us: but in order to correct them and protect society; not because of any personal animus. It is right also to withhold our possessions from those who without good reason ask for them; but in order to check idleness and effrontery; not because we are too fond of our possessions to part with them. So far as our personal feeling goes, we ought to be ready to offer the other cheek, and to give, without desire of recovery, whatever is demanded or taken from us. Love knows no limits but those which love itself imposes. When love resists or refuses, it is because compliance would be a violation of love, not because it would involve loss or suffering.

29. τῷ τύπτοντι σε ἐπὶ τὴν σιαγόνα. A violent blow with the fist seems to be meant rather than a contemptuous slap, for σιαγόνω means “jaw-bone” (Judg. xv. 15, 16; Ezek. xxix. 4; Mic. v. 1; Hos. xi. 4). In what follows also it is an act of violence that is meant; for in that case the upper and more valuable garment (ματιστον) would be taken first. In Mt. v. 40 the spoiler adopts a legal method of spoliation (κροθήναι), and takes the under and less indispensable garment (χιτώνα) first. See on iii. 11 and comp. Jn. xiv. 23.

Here only do we find τύπτειν ἐπὶ σ. acc. In class. Grk. c. gen., e.g. ἐπὶ κόρρησ τύπτειν or πατάσεσε (Plato, Gorg. 486 C, 508 D, 527 A). Sometimes we have eis (Mt. xxvii. 30), which some MSS. read here and xviii. 13. Comp. Xen. Cyr. v. 4. 5. So also κωλέων ἀπό is not common. Comp. ὁδ μὴ κωλύετο τὸ μηνιεύον αὐτῶ ἀπὸ σοῦ (Gen. xxiii. 6) and ἀπὸ σοῦ κωλέων (Xen. Cyr. i. 3. 11, iii. 3. 51). The more usual constr. both in N.T. and class. Grk. is either acc. and inf. (xxiii. 2; Acts xvi. 6, xxiv. 23) or acc. of pers. and gen. of thing (Acts xxvii. 43). Note that αἱρεῖν does not mean simply “take,” which is λαμβάνειν, but either “take up” (v. 24, ix. 23) or “take away” (xix. 24, xxiii. 18).

30. παρτί αἰτοῦντι σε δίδου. There is no παρτί in Mt. v. 42, and this is one of many passages which illustrate Lk.’s fondness for πᾶς (ver. 17, vii. 35, ix. 43, xi. 4). The παρτί has been differently understood. “No one is to be excluded, not even
one's enemies” (Meyer, Weiss). *Omni potenti te tribue, non omnia petenti; ut tâ des, quod dare honeste et juste potes* (Aug.). Neither remark is quite right. Our being able to give *juste et honeste* depends not only on what is asked, but upon who asks it. Some things must not be conceded to any one. Others ought to be given to some petitioners, but not to all. In every case, however, we ought to be willing to part with what may be lawfully given to any. The wish to keep what we have got is not the right motive for refusing.

σίδου, καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ αἰροντός τὰ σὰ μὴ αἴτατε. The pres. in all three cases implies continual action, making a practice of it. “Continually give, and from him who continues to take away thy goods do not continue to ask them again.” For αἴρεων in the sense of “take as one's own, appropriate,” comp. xi. 52, xix. 21; Mk. xv. 24. It does not imply that violence is used. But the μὴ αἴτατε implies that hitherto asking them back has been usual. The verb αἴτατεων is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (xii. 20; comp. Wisd. xv. 8; Ecclus. xx. 15; Hdt. i. 3. 2). Prof. Marshall thinks that we have here another instance of different translation of the same Aramaic, and that Lk.'s αἰροντος and Mt.'s δανείσασθαι may represent the same word; also Lk.'s αἴτατε and Mt.'s ἀποστραφῆς. See on v. 21 and viii. 15. See Hastings, *D.B.* i. p. 68.

31. καὶ καθὼς θέλετε. The καὶ introduces the general principle which covers all these cases: “and in short, in a word.” How would one wish to be treated oneself if one was an aggressor? How ought one to wish to be treated? But obviously the principle covers a great deal more than the treatment of aggressors and enemies. In Tobit iv. 15 we have, “Do that to no man which thou hatest”; but this purely negative precept, which was common with the Rabbis, falls immeasurably short of the positive command of Christ. Isocrates has ἀ πᾶσχοντες ἐφ’ ἐτέρων ὀργίζωσθε, ταύτα τοῖς ἀλλοις μὴ τοιεῖτε, and the Stoics said, Quod tibi fieri non vis, alteri ne feceris; and the same is found in Buddhism. In the *Didachê* i. 2, and *Apost. Const.* vii. 2. 1, we have both the positive and the negative form. Cod. D, Iren. (iii. 12. 14), Cypr. (Test. iii. 119) and other authorities insert the negative form Acts xv. 29. How inadequate the so-called Rabbinical parallels to the Sermon on the Mount are, as collected by Wünsche and others, has been shown by Edersheim (*L. & T.* i. p. 531). Note the καθὼς, “even as, precisely as”: the conformity is to be exact. For θέλειν ἵνα comp. Mt. vii. 12; Mk. vi. 25, ix. 30, x. 35; Jn. xvii. 24, and see on iv. 3. The καὶ ὑμεῖς before τοιεῖτε is omitted by B and some Latin texts. “Do likewise” occurs only here, iii. 11, and x. 37.

32–35. Interested affection is of little account: Christian love is of necessity disinterested; unlike human love, it embraces what is repulsive and repellent.
32. ποία ὑμῖν χάρις. "What kind of thank, or favour, have you?" This may be understood either of the gratitude of the persons loved or of the favour of God. The latter is better, and is more clearly expressed by τίνα μισθὸν ἐξετε; (Mt. v. 46). Otherwise there does not seem to be much point in οἱ ἀμαρτωλοὶ. For χάρις of Divine favour comp. i. 30, ii. 40, 52; Acts vii. 46.

καὶ γὰρ. "For even": nam etiam. Comp. Mt. viii. 9; Mk. vii. 28?, x. 45; Jn. iv. 45; 1 Cor. xii. 14; and see Ellicott on 2 Thes. iii. 10; Meyer on 2 Cor. xiii. 4. Syr-Sin. omits the clause.

33. Here only is ἄγαθοποιεῖν found with an acc. after it. It does not occur in profane writers, and elsewhere in N.T. is absolute: τυ. 9, 35; Mk. iii. 4; 1 Pet. ii. 15, 20, iii. 6, 17; 3 Jn. 11. But in 1 Pet. and 3 Jn. it is used of doing what is right as opposed to doing what is wrong, whereas in Lk. and Mt. it is used, as in LXX, of helping others as opposed to harming them: Num. x. 32; Jud. xvii. 13 (Cod. B ἄγαθοποιεῖται); Zeph. i. 12. Hatch, Bibl. Grk. p. 7; but see Lft. on Clem. Rom. Cor. ii. p. 17.

For ἀμαρτωλοὶ Mt. has in the one case τελῶναι and in the other ἔθνικοι. Of course both "publicans" and "heathen" are here used in a moral sense, because of their usual bad character; and Weiss confidently asserts that Lk. is here interpreting, while Mt. gives the actual words used. But it is possible that Mt., writing as a Jew, has given the classes who to Jews were sinners κατ’ ἐξοχήν instead of the general term.

34. This third illustration has no parallel in Mt., but see Mt. v. 42; and comp. Prov. xix. 17.

δανελοῦτε. The texts are divided between this form, δανελοῦτε, δανελίζετε, and δανείζετε. In N.T. δανίζω is to be preferred to δανείζω, which is the class. form. The verb means to "lend upon interest," whereas κύριος indicates a friendly loan; and therefore τὰ ιδία would include both interest and principal.

ἀπολάβοντες. "Receive as their due, receive back," or perhaps "receive in full"; comp. αὐτέχω in ver. 24, and see Lft. on Gal. iv. 5; also Ellicott and Meyer. The phrase ἀπόλατα ιδία need not mean more than "receive equivalent services," but more probably it refers to repayment in full: comp. ἐπανίζω and ἀντεπανίζω.

35. πλὴν. See on ver. 24. "But, when this kind of interested affection has been rejected as worthless, what must be aimed at is this." Note the pres. imperat. throughout: "Habitually love, do good, and lend"; also that Christ does not change the word δανείζετε, nor intimate that it does not here have its usual meaning of lending on interest.

μηθέν ἀπελπιστοῦτες. The meaning of this famous saying depends partly upon the reading, whether we read μηθέν or μηθένα.¹

¹ The external evidence stands thus—
For μηθένα ἂν. Ν Ρ ΠII. Syr. Tisch. is almost alone among recent editors in preferring μηθένα; WH. and RV. place in the margin.
but mainly upon the interpretation of ἀπελπιζόντες. All English Versions previous to RV. adopt the common view that ἀπελπιζόντες means “hoping for in return,” a meaning which is without example, but which is supposed to be justified by the context, or rather by the corrupted context. Thus Field argues: “No doubt this use of the word is nowhere else to be met with; but the context is here too strong for philological quibbles (!). ‘If ye lend to them παρὰ διὶ ἘΛΠΙΖΕΤΕ ΑΠΟΛΑΒΕΙ, what thank have ye?’ Then follows the precept: ‘Lend μὴ δὲν ἈΠΕΛΠΙΖΟΝΤΕΣ,’ which can by no possibility bear any other meaning than μὴ δὲν ἀπελπιζόντες ἀπολαβεῖν” (Otium Norv. iii. p. 40). The argument would be precarious, even if the facts were as stated; but the true reading is παρὰ διὶ ἔλπιζε λαβεῖν (N B L Ξ, Justin), and therefore the whole falls to the ground. The usual meaning of ἀπελπιζόντες, “I give up in despair,” makes excellent sense; either “despairing of nothing,” or “despairing of no one” (μὴ δὲν). “Despairing of nothing” or “never despairing” may mean either “never doubting that God will requite you,” or “never despairing about your money.” The latter meaning is almost identical with “despairing of no one,” i.e. “never doubting that your debtor will pay.” But it has been suggested that μὴ δὲν may be neut. plur., on the authority of Steph. Thesaur. v. col. 962 [iii. col. 3645]. If this were correct, the two readings would have the same meaning. On the authority of a single passage in the Anthologia Palatina (ii. 114, p. 325, Brunck), Liddell and Scott give ἀπελπιζόντες a transitive meaning, “causing to despair”; but there ἄλλον ἀπελπιζόντων (of an astrologer who said that a person had only nine months to live) may mean “giving him up in despair”: comp. Polyb. ii. 54. 7. Therefore we may safely abandon the common interpretation and render “giving up nothing in despair” or “never despairing.” Comp. ἐπὶ φίλον ἔαν σπασαρίας ρομφαίαν, μὴ ἀπελπισθῇς (Ecclus. xxii. 21); ὅ ἐὰν ἀποκαλύψεις μυστήρια ἀπάλπασε (xxvii. 21); τὰ κατ’ αὑτὸν ἀπελπισότος (2 Mac. ix. 18), of Antiochus when stricken with an incurable disease. Galen often uses the verb of desperate cases in medicine; see Hobart, p. 118, and Wetst.1

1 What mischief the common interpretation (sanctioned by the Vulgate, nihil inde sperantes) has wrought in Europe is strikingly shown by Dollinger (Aka demische Vorträge, i. pp. 223 ff.; Studies in European History, pp. 224 ff.). On the strength of it Popes and councils have repeatedly condemned the taking of any interest whatever for loans. As loans could not be had without interest, and Christians were forbidden to take it, money-lending passed into the hands of the Jews, and added greatly to the unnatural detestation in which Jews were held. The paradox that Christians may not take interest has been revived by Ruskin. See Morfill and Charles, Book of the Secrets of Enoch, p. 58.

D and many early Latin texts have nihil desperantes. See the valuable note in Wordsworth’s Vulgate, p. 344. But he thinks it possible that Lk. may have written ἀπελπιζόντων for ἐλπίζειν ἀπό and ἀπολαβεῖν for λαβεῖν ἀπό.
VI. 35–38.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

35. pepecev oioi YfiiTou. In Mt. v. 9 peacemakers are called oioi Theoi. The moral likeness proves the parentage. Just as in vv. 32, 33 Lk. has the generic áμαρτωλοι where Mt. has the specific τελωναί and ἑβνικοί, so here we have "is kind towards the unthankful and evil" instead of "maketh His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust" (Mt. v. 45). For YfiiTou comp. i. 32, 35, 76.

36, 37. A further development of the principle of Christian love. Having told His disciples to cherish no personal animus against those who injure them, He now warns them against judging others respecting any supposed misconduct. To pose as a general censor morum is unchristian. Censoriousness is a transgression of the royal law of love, and an invasion of the Divine prerogatives. Not only vengeance but judgment belongs to God. And judgment, when it is inevitable, must be charitable (ἀρολύτερε), directed by a desire to acquit rather than to condemn. Comp. i Cor. xiii. 4; Jas. iv. 11, 12. Hillel said, "Judge not thy neighbour until thou comest into his place" (Ewald, Hist. of Israel, vi. p. 27). See on ver. 31.

The loose citations of these two verses by Clement of Rome (i. 13. 2) and Clement of Alexandria (Strom. ii. 18, p. 476, ed. Potter) are interesting. Both have the words ὑς χρυσάνθεθε, οὕτως χρυσένθεςται οἵματι immediately before ὑς μέτρα, κ.τ.λ. They represent γίνεσθε ὀκτίρμοιν in Lk., for which Justin has γίνεσθε δὲ χρυσάνθες καὶ ὀκτίρμοιον (Try. xcvi.; Apol. i. 15). Comp. Clem. Hom. iii. 57. It is probable that Clem. Alex. here quotes Clem. Rom. unconsciously.

38. The transition is easy from charity in judging others to benevolence in general. Comp. ver. 30 and iii. 11. God remains in debt to no man. "He giveth not by measure" (Jn. iii. 34), nor does He recompense by measure, unless man serves Him by measure. Disciples who serve in the spirit of love make no such calculations, and are amply repaid. We are here assured of this fact in an accumulation of metaphors, which form a climax. They are evidently taken from the measuring of corn, and Bengel is clearly wrong in interpreting ὑπερεχεχνύομενον of fluids: εἰς τὸν κόλπον is conclusive. The asyndeton is impressive.

The form ὑπερεχεχνύομενον seems to occur nowhere else, excepting as v.l. Joel ii. 24. The class. form is ὑπερεχέω.

δώσωσιν εἰς τὸν κόλπον ὑμῶν. Who shall give? Not the persons benefited, but the instruments of God's bounty. The verb is almost impersonal, "there shall be given," δοθήσεται. Comp. αἴτούσιν (xii. 20) and αἰτήσονσιν (xii. 48). The κόλπος is the fold formed by a loose garment overhanging a girdle. This was often used as a pocket (Exod. iv. 6; Prov. vi. 27; and esp. Ps. lxxix. 12; Is. lxv. 6; Jer. xxxii. 18). Comp. Hdt. vi. 125. 5; Liv. xxi. 18. 10; Hor. Sat. ii. 3. 172, and other illustrations in Wetst.
There is no inconsistency, as Weiss states (stimmt immer nicht recht), with what precedes; but he is right in condemning such interpretations as τὸ αὐτὸ μέτρῳ, οὐ μὴν τοσοῦτῳ (Theophyl.) and eadem mensura in genere sed exuberans (Grot.) as evasions. The loving spirit uses no measure in its services; and then God uses no measure in requiting. But the niggardly and grudging servant, who tries to do just the minimum, receives just the minimum in return. In Mk. iv. 24, 25 we have this saying with a different application.

39. The second half of the discourse begins here, and this is marked by a repetition of the introductory ἐντεύξεως. The connexion with what precedes perhaps is, that, before judging others, we must judge ourselves; otherwise we shall be blind leaders of the blind. This saying occurs in quite another connexion Mt. xv. 14. It may easily have been uttered several times, and it is a commonplace in literature. We are thus shown the manifold application of Christ’s sayings, and the versatility of truth. See Wetz. on Mt. xv. 14. With the exception of Mk. xii. 12, the phrase ἐντεύξεως παραβολὴν is peculiar to Lk. (xii. 16, xv. 3, xviii. 9, xix. 11, xx. 19, xxi. 29).

eis βοθύνων. “Into a pit” rather than “into the ditch,” which all English Versions prior to RV. have both here and Mt. xv. 14. In Mt. xii. 11 nearly all have “a pit.” The word is a doublet of βόθρος, puteus, and is perhaps connected with βαθός. Palestine is full of such things, open wells without walls, unfenced quarries, and the like. For δοθεῖν comp. Acts viii. 31; Jn. xvi. 13; Ps. xxiv. 5, lxxxv. 11, cxviii. 35; Wisd. ix. 11, x. 17.

40. This again is one of Christ’s frequent sayings. Here the connexion seems to be that disciples will not get nearer to the truth than the teacher does, and therefore teachers must beware of being blind and uninstructed, especially with regard to knowledge of self. In xxi. 27 and in Jn. xiii. 16 the meaning is that disciples must not set themselves above their master. In Mt. x. 24 the point is that disciples must not expect better treatment than their master. So also in Jn. xv. 20, which was a different occasion.

κατηρισμένος δὲ πᾶς ἐσται ὡς ὁ διδάσκαλος αὐτοῦ. The sentence may be taken in various ways. 1. Every well instructed disciple shall be as his master (AV.). 2. Every disciple, when he has been well instructed, shall be as his master. 3. Every disciple shall be as well instructed as his master (Tyn. Cran.). But Perfectus autem omnis erit, si sit sicut magister ejus (Vulg.), “Every one shall be perfect, if he be as his master” (Rhem.), Wenn der Jünger ist wie sein Meister, so ist er vollkommen (Luth.), is impossible. The meaning is that the disciple will not excel his master; at the best he will only equal him. And, if the master has faults, the disciple will be likely to copy them. Syr-Sin. omits.
41, 42. In order to avoid becoming a blind teacher, whose disciples will be no better than oneself, one must, before judging and attempting to correct others, correct oneself. Self-knowledge and self-reform are the necessary preparation of the reformer, without which his work is one of presumption rather than of love.

41. κάρφος. “Anything small and dry”: in class. Grk. usually in plur. of chips, twigs, bits of wood, etc. Curtius connects it with σκάρφον, “a splinter” (Grk. Etym. 683); but better with κάρφευν, “to dry up.” In Gen. viii. 11 it is used of the olive twig brought by the dove. See Wetst. on Mt. vii. 3. The δόξας is the “bearing-beam, main beam,” that which receives (δέχομαι) the other beams in a roof or floor. It is therefore as necessarily large as a κάρφος is small.

κατανοεῖς. “Fix thy mind upon.” It expresses prolonged attention and observation. Careful consideration of one’s own faults must precede attention to those of others. The verb is specially freq. in Lk. (xii. 24, 27, xx. 23; Acts xi. 6, xxvii. 39: comp. Heb. iii. 1, x. 24; Rom. iv. 19).

42. πώς δύναται λέγειν. “With what face can you adopt this tone of smug patronage?” In Mt. vii. 4 the patronizing ἀδελφεῖ is wanting.

ἀφες ἐκβάλω. For the simple subj. after ἀφίημι comp. Mt. xxvii. 49; Mk. xv. 36. Epict. Diess. i. 9. 15, iii. 12. 15. In modern Greek it is the regular idiom. Win. xii. 4. b, p. 356.—In ὅπως δύναται λέγειν we have the only instance in Lk. of ὅπως with a participle: “When thou dost not look at, much less anxiously consider” (κατανοεῖς): see small print on i. 20.

ὑποκριτά. The hypocrisy consists in his pretending to be so pained by the presence of trifling evil that he is constrained to endeavour to remove it. Comp. xiii. 15. That he conceals his own sins is not stated; to some extent he is not aware of them. The τότε means “then, and not till then”; and the διαβλέψεις is neither imperative nor concessive, but the simple future. When self-reformation has taken place, then it will be possible to see how to reform others. Note the change from βλέπειν to διαβλέπειν; not merely look at, but “see clearly.” In class. Grk. διαβλέπω means “look fixedly,” as in deep thought. Plato notes it as a habit of Socrates (Phed. 86 D).

43. ὅπως γὰρ ἔστιν. Codex D and some versions omit the γὰρ, the connexion with the preceding not being observed. The connexion is close. A good Christian cannot but have good results in the work of converting others, and a bad Christian cannot have such, for his bad life will more than counteract his efforts to reclaim others.
192 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [VI. 43-48.

The etymological connexion between καρπός (carpo, Herbst, harvest) and κάρφος is by no means certain. But if it is a fact, it has no place here. The phrase πανεύ καρπόν is not classical, but a Hebraism (iii. 9, viii. 8, xiii. 9 ; Gen. i. 11, 12 ; Ps. cxvii. 37). By σαρπάν (σάρπα) is meant (1) what is “rotten, putrid,” and (2) what is “worthless.” See Wetst. on Mt. vii. 18. A rotten tree would produce no fruit; and fishes just caught would not be putrid (Mt. xiii. 48). In both places the secondary meaning is required.

44. The unreformed can no more reform others than thorns and briars can produce figs and grapes. It is by their fruits that each comes to be known (γινώσκεται). The identification of the many Hebrew words which denote thorny shrubs is a hopeless task. Neither the originals nor their Greek representatives can be satisfactorily determined (Groser, Trees and Plants of the Bible, p. 172). Elsewhere in N.T. βάτος is used of the burning bush (xx. 37 ; Acts vii. 30, 35 ; Mk. xii. 26 ; Exod. iii. 2, 3, 4) : in Hom. it is a “thorn-bush, bramble” (Od. xxiv. 230). The verb ῥυγαω is specially used of the vintage (Rev. xiv. 18, 19 ; Lev. xix. 10, xxv. 5, 11 ; Deut. xxiv. 21). Comp. the similar sayings Jas. iii. 11, 12, which are probably echoes of Christ’s teaching as remembered by the Lord’s brother.

45. This forms a link with the next section. When men are natural, heart and mouth act in concert. But otherwise the mouth sometimes professes what the heart does not feel.

46-49. The Judgments which await the Members of the Kingdom. The Sanction or Warning. Mt. vii. 13-27. This is sometimes called the Epilogue or the Peroration: but it is not a mere summing up. It sets forth the consequences of following, and the consequences of not following, what has been enjoined.

46. The question here asked may be addressed to all disciples, none of whom are perfect. The inconsistency of calling Him Lord and yet failing in obedience to Him was found even in Apostles. What follows shows that the question applies to the whole of Christian conduct. Of the four parables in the latter half of the sermon, the first two (the blind leading the blind; the mote and the beam) have special reference to the work of correcting others; the third (the good and bad trees) may be either special or general; while the fourth (the wise and foolish builders) is quite general. With Κύριε comp. xiii. 25; Mt. xxv. 11, 12; Jas. i. 22, 26.

47. For πᾶς δ ἔρχομενος see small print on i. 66, and for ὑποδείξω see on iii. 7 and Fritzsche on Mt. iii. 7.

48. ἔσκαψεν καὶ ἐβάδισεν καὶ ἔθηκεν θεμέλιον. “He dug and went deep (not a hendiadys for ‘dug deep’) and laid a foundation.” The whole of this graphic description is peculiar to Lk.
Robinson stayed in a new house at Nazareth, the owner of which had dug down for thirty feet in order to build upon rock (Res. in Pal. ii. p. 338). The parables in Mt. and Lk. are so far identical that in both the two builders desire to have their houses near a water-course, water in Palestine being very precious. In Mt. they build on different places, the one on the rock and the other on the sand, such as is often found in large level tracts by a dry water-course. Nothing is said about the wise builder digging through the sand till he comes to rock. Each finds what seems to him a good site ready to hand.

πλημμύρας. "A flood," whether from a river or a sea: and hence a flood of troubles and the like. See Jos. Ant. ii. 10. 2 and examples in Wetst. Here only in N.T., and in LXX only Job xl. 18 (23).

οὐκ ἦχοςεν. "Had not strength to." The expression is a favourite one with Lk. (viii. 43, xiii. 24, xiv. 6, 29, xvi. 3, xx. 26; Acts vi. 10, xv. 10, xix. 16, 20, xxv. 7, xxvii. 16). For σαλέωσαι comp. vii. 24, xxi. 26; Acts ii. 25 fr. Ps. xv. 8, iv. 31: freq. in LXX.

διὰ τὸ καλὸς οἰκοδομήθαται αὐτῆς. This is certainly the true reading (Ν B L Ξ 33 157, Boh. Syr-Harcl. marg.). The common reading, τεθημέλωσε γὰρ ἐπὶ τὴν πέτραν (A C D X etc.; Latt. Syr-Goth. Arm.), is obviously taken from Mt. The Ethiopic combines the two readings. Syr-Sin. omits.

49. ἣ προσέρησεν ὁ ποταμός. Lk. gives only the main incident, the river, created by the rain, smiting the house. But Mt. is much more graphic: κατέβη ἡ βροχή καὶ ἤλθον οἱ ποταμοὶ καὶ ἐπνέωσαν οἱ ἀνεμοί καὶ προσέκοψαν τῇ ὕδατι ἐκείνη.

συνέπεσεν. "It fell in," i.e. the whole fell together in a heap: much more expressive than ἐπέσεν, which some texts (A C) here borrow from Mt.

ἔγένετο τὸ ῥήγμα. To harmonize with προσέρησεν. This use of ῥήγμα for "ruin" (so first in Rhem.) seems to be without example. In class. Grk. it is used of bodily fractures or ruptures, and also of clothes; so also in 1 Kings xi. 30, 31; 2 Kings ii. 12. But Amos vi. 11 of rents in a building, πατάζει τὸν οἶκον τὸν μέγαν θλώσαςιν, καὶ τὸν οἶκον τὸν μικρὸν ῥάγμασιν. Hobart contrasts the βροχή, προσέκοψαν, ἐπέσεν, and πτώσις of Mt. with the πλημμύρα, προσέρησεν, συνέπεσεν, and ῥήγμα of Lk., and contends that the latter four belong to medical phraseology (pp. 55, 56).

The μέγα, like μεγάλη in Mt., comes last with emphasis. Divine instruction, intended for building up, must, if neglected, produce disastrous ruin. The κεῖται εἰς πτώσιν (ii. 34) is fulfilled. The audience are left with the crash of the unreal disciple's house sounding in their ears.

Similar Rabbinical sayings are quoted, but as coming from persons who lived after A.D. 100, by which time Christ's teaching had filtered into both Jewish

13
and pagan thought. "Whosesoever wisdom is above his works, to what is he like? To a tree whose branches are many and its roots few. Then the wind cometh and rooteth it up and turneth it over. And, whosoever works are above his wisdom, to what is he like? To a tree whose branches are few and its roots many. Though all the winds come upon it, they move it not from its place" (Mishna, Pir'gè aboth, III. xxvii.). And again, "To whom is he like, that with many merits uniteth great wisdom? To him who first layeth granite blocks and then bricks. Though ever so mighty floods wash round the building, yet they cannot make it give way. But to whom is he like, who knoweth much and fulfileth little? To him who layeth the foundation with bricks, which are disturbed by the least water (Aboth R. Nathan, xxiii.). See Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 540; Nicholson on Mt. vii. 24.

VII. 1. The division of the chapters is misleading. This verse forms the conclusion of the preceding narrative quite in Lk.'s manner. Comp. iv. 30, 37, 44, v. 11, 16, 26, vi. 11, etc. It is not the introduction to what follows, for Jesus must have been in Capernaum some time before the centurion heard about Him. Lk. says nothing about the impression which the discourse made upon the people (Mt. vii. 28), or about their following Him (Mt. viii. 1).

"Επειδὴ ἐπλήρωσεν πάντα τὰ ῥήματα αὐτοῦ. This is the only place in N.T. in which ἐπειδὴ is used in the temporal sense of "after that, when now." Hence ἐπειδὴ δέ is found in many texts. K has ἐπειδή δέ, while D has Καὶ ἐγένετο ὅτε. In the causal sense of "since, seeing that," ἐπειδὴ occurs only in Lk. and Paul (xi. 6; Acts xiii. 46, xiv. 12, xv. 24; 1 Cor. i. 21, 22, xiv. 16, xv. 21). See Ellicott on Phil. ii. 26. For ἐπλήρωσεν, "completed," so that no more remained to be said, comp. Acts xii. 25, xiii. 26, xiv. 21.

εἰς τὰς ἄκουσ τοῦ λαοῦ. The εἰς marks the direction of what was said: comp. i. 44, iv. 44; Acts xi. 22, xvi. 20. Both in bibl. Grk. and in class. Grk. ἄκου is three senses: 1. "The thing heard, report" (1 Sam. ii. 24; 1 Kings ii. 28; Jn. xii. 38; Rom. x. 16). 2. "The sense of hearing" (2 Sam. xxi. 45; Job xlii. 5; 1 Cor. xii. 17; 2 Pet. ii. 8). 3. "The ear" (Mk. vii. 35; Heb. v. 11; 2 Mac. xv. 39).

2-10. The healing of the Centurion’s Servant at Capernaum. Mt. viii. 5-13. Mt. places the healing of the leper (Lk. v. 12-14) between the Sermon on the Mount and the healing of the centurion’s slave. This centurion was a heathen by birth (ver. 9), and was probably in the service of Antipas. He had become in some degree attracted to Judaism (ver. 5), and was an illustration of the great truth which Lk. delights to exhibit, that Gentile and Jew alike share in the blessings of the kingdom. The anima naturaliter Christiana of the man is seen in his affection for his slave.

2. ἤμελλεν τελευτάν. "Was on the point of dying," and would have done so but for this intervention (Acts xii. 6, xvi. 27, etc.). Burton, § 73. For ἐντυμος, "held in honour, held dear," comp. xiv. 8; Phil. ii. 29; 1 Pet. ii. 4, 6; Is. xxviii. 16. The fact explains why this deputation of elders came.
3. ἀπέστειλεν πρὸς αὐτὸν πρεσβυτέρους. These elders (no article) would be leading citizens; but they need not be identified with the ἀρχισυνάγωγοι (viii. 49, xiii. 14; Acts xiii. 15, xviii. 8, 17), as Godet formerly advocated. The compound διασώζειν, "to bring safe through," is almost peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts xxiii. 24, xxvii. 43, 44, xxviii. 1, 4; Mt. xiv. 36; 1 Pet. iii. 20).

4. οἱ δὲ παραγενόμενοι. A favourite verb (ver. 20, viii. 19, xi. 6, xii. 51, xiv. 21, xix. 16, xxii. 52; and about twenty times in Acts): elsewhere in N.T. eight or nine times, but very freq. in LXX.

δεῖδας ἐστιν ὁ παρέξῃ πούτο. "He is worthy that Thou shouldest do this for him"; 2 sing. fut. mid. The reading παρέξῃ (G Π A) is 3 sing. fut, act. and must not be taken as analogous to the exceptional forms οἶτε, ὧδει, and ἀδόκει. But beyond doubt παρέξῃ (Ν A B C D R Ξ etc.) is the correct reading.

5. ἀγαπᾷ γὰρ τὸ ἐθνὸς ἡμῶν. This would hardly be said of one who was actually a proselyte. He had learned to admire and respect the pure worship of the Jews and to feel affection for the people who practised it. This would be all the more likely if he were in the service of the Herods rather than that of heathen Rome. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 366.

τὴν συναγωγὴν αὐτῶς ψυχόμοιην ἡμῶν. "At his own expense he built us our synagogue," the one which we have; not "a synagogue" (AV.). Had Capernaum only one synagogue?

If Tell Hum represents Capernaum, and if the ruins of the synagogue there are from a building of this date, they show with what liberality this centurion had carried out his pious work. But it is doubtful whether the excellent work exhibited in these ruins is quite so early as the first century. The centurions appear in a favourable light in N.T. (xxiii. 47; Acts x. 22, xxii. 26, xxiii. 17, 23, 24, xxiv. 23, xxvii. 43). Roman organization produced, and was maintained by, excellent individuals, who were a blessing to others and themselves. As Philo says, after praising Petronius the governor of Syria, τοὺς δὲ ἀραβικός ἀραβός οὐπρεπέως ἔκτοκε γυμνὰς ὁ Θεὸς οἱ δὲ ὕψοντες ὕψε οὕρησονται (Leg. ad Caium, p. 1027, ed. Gelen.). Augustus had recognized the value of synagogues in maintaining order and morality.


ἐπεμψεν φίλους. Comp. xv. 6, Acts x. 24. Mt. says nothing about either of these deputations, but puts the message of both into the mouth of the centurion himself, who comes in person. In Lk. the man’s humility and faith prevail over his anxiety as soon as he sees that the first deputation has succeeded, and that the great Rabbi
and Prophet is really coming to him. Therefore he sends the second deputation to say that he is not worthy of a visit, and that the visit is not necessary.

Κύριε, μη σκύλλων. "Lord, cease to trouble Thyself." The verb is a marked instance of the tendency of words to become weaker in meaning: σκύλλω (σκύλλω, xi. 22) is 1. "flay"; 2. "mangle"; 3. "vex, annoy" (viii. 49; Mk. v. 35; Mt. ix. 36). See Expositor, 1st series, 1876, iv. pp. 30, 31. What follows seems to show that the centurion was not a proselyte. The house of a Gentile was polluting to a Jew; and therefore οὐ γὰρ ἰκανὸς εἶμι, κ.τ.λ., is quite in point if he was still a heathen. But it is rather strong language if he had ceased to be a heathen. For ἦν after ἰκανὸς see Burton, § 216.

7. εἰπὲ λόγῳ, καὶ ἱαθήτω ὅ παῖς μου. Lit. "Say with a word, and let my servant be healed." The word is to be the instrument with which the healing is to take place, instead of Jesus' coming in person: comp. Acts ii. 40 and Gal. vi. 11. There is no doubt that ὅ παῖς μου means "my servant." This use is found in N.T. (xii. 45, xv. 26; Mt. viii. 6, 8, 13), and is very freq. in LXX and in class. Grk.

It has been contended that in Mt. viii. 6, 8, 13 παῖς must mean "son," because the centurion calls his servant δοῦλος in ver. 9: as if it were improbable that a person in the same conversation should speak sometimes of his "servant" and sometimes of his "boy." In both narratives παῖς and δοῦλος are used as synonyms; and it is gratuitous to suppose that in using δοῦλος Lk. has misinterpreted the παῖς in the source which he employed. Comp. xv. 22, 26. Here ὅ παῖς μου is more affectionate than ὅ δοῦλος μου would have been.

8. εὖ ἄνθρωπός εἰμι ὑπὸ ἔξωσιαν τασσόμενος. The εἰμι must not be united with τασσόμενος and made the equivalent of τάσσομαι: τασσόμενος is adjectival. Thus, "For I am a man who is habitually (pres. part.) placed under authority." But, "For I am an ordinary person (ἄνθρωπος), and a person in a dependent position" is rather an exaggeration of the Greek. Comp. ὑπὸ τῆν βασιλείαν ἔξωσιαν πεσεὶν (2 Mac. iii. 6). The καὶ γὰρ shows the intimate connexion with what precedes, εἰπὲ λόγῳ καὶ ἱαθήτω: see on vi. 32. "I know from personal experience what a word from one in authority can do. A word from my superiors secures my obedience, and a word from me secures the obedience of my subordinates. Thou, who art under no man, and hast authority over unseen powers, hast only to say a word and the sickness is healed." Perhaps ἄνθρωπος hints that Jesus is superhuman. Evidently ὑπὸ ἔξωσιαν τασσόμενος means that, if an inferior can give effective orders, much more can a superior do so. It is the certainty of the result without personal presence that is the point.

9. ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἔθαύμασεν αὐτόν. This is stated in both narratives. Comp. Mk. vi. 6. Those who are unwilling to admit any limita-
tions in Christ’s knowledge have to explain how wonder is compatible with omniscience. One limitation is clearly told us by Himself (Mk. xiii. 32); so that the only question is how far such limitations extend. See on ii. 46, 52, and xvii. 14. Note the solemn Λέγω ὑμῖν, and comp. ver. 28, x. 12, 24, xi. 8, 9, 51, etc.

οὐδὲ ἐν τῷ Ἰσραήλ τοσαύτην πίστιν εὕρον. This again points to the centurion being still a heathen. Nowhere among the Jews had He found any one willing to believe that He could heal without being present. It is natural that Lk. should express this preference for a Gentile more strongly than Mt., who has παρ' οὗ ταύτην πίστιν ἐν τῷ Ἰσραήλ εὕρον. Lk. here omits the remarkable passage Mt. viii. 11, 12; but he gives it in quite a different connexion xiii. 28, 29. Such teaching, so necessary and so unwelcome to the Jews, may have been repeated.

10. ὑποστρέφατες. See on i. 56 and iv. 14. Lk.’s ὑπαίτιονta is stronger than the ἱδών of Mt. The servant was not only cured, but “in good health.” Non modo sanum, sed sanitate utentem (Beng.) Hobart remarks that Lk. “is the only N.T. writer who uses ὑπαίτειαν in this its primary sense, ‘to be in sound health,’ with the exception of S. John, 3 Ep. 2. For this meaning it is the regular word in the medical writers” (p. 10). See on v. 31 and comp. xv. 27. Here and v. 31 Vulg. has sanus; in xv. 27, salvus.

The identification of this miracle with that of the healing of the son of the royal official (βασιλικὸς) in Jn. iv. is not probable: it involves an amount of misinformation or carelessness on one side or the other which would be very startling. Irenæus seems to be in favour of it; but “centurion” with him may be a slip of memory or a misinterpretation of βασιλικὸς. Origen and Chrysostom contend against the identification. Is there any difficulty in supposing that on more than one occasion Jesus healed without being present? The difficulty is to explain one such instance, without admitting the possession of supernatural powers: this Strauss has shown, and the efforts of Keim and Schenkel to explain it by a combination of moral and psychical causes are not satisfying. There is no parallel to it in O.T., for (as Keim points out) the healing of Naaman is not really analogous.

11-17. § The Raising of the Widow’s Son at Nain. Because Lk. alone records it, its historical character has been questioned. But there were multitudes of miracles wrought by Christ which have never been recorded in detail at all (iv. 23, 40, 41, vi. 18, 19; Jn. ii. 23, iv. 45, vii. 31, xii. 37, xx. 30, xxi. 25), and among these, as ver. 22 shows, were cases of raising the dead. We must not attribute to the Evangelists the modern way of regarding the raising of the dead as a miracle so amazing, because so difficult to perform, that every real instance would necessarily become widely known, and would certainly be recorded by every writer who had knowledge of it. To a Jew it would be hardly more marvellous than the healing of a leper; and to one who believes in miracles at all, distinctions as to difficulty are unmeaning. It is not unreasonable to
suppose, either that this event never came to the knowledge of the other Evangelists, or that, although they knew of it, they did not see the necessity for recording it. It is worth noting that nearly all recorded instances of raising the dead were performed for women (1 Kings xvii. 23; 2 Kings iv. 36; Jn. xi. 22, 32; Acts ix. 41; Heb. xi. 35).

11. \( \epsilonν \, \tau\eta \, \epsilon\eta\). It is not easy to decide between the reading \( \epsilonν \, \tau\eta \, \epsilon\eta\), sc. \( \chiρ\omega\a (A\,B\,R) \), and \( \epsilonν \, \tau\eta \, \epsilon\eta\), sc. \( \eta\mu\eta\a \) (\( N\,C\,D\) ). On the one hand, Lk. elsewhere, when he writes \( \epsilonν \, \tau\eta\), has \( \kappa\alpha\theta\epsilon\theta\eta\\a \) (viii. 1); on the other, when he writes \( \tau\eta \, \epsilon\eta\\a \), he does not prefix \( \epsilonν \) (ix. 37; Acts xxii. 1, xxv. 17, xxvii. 18). The less definite would be more likely to be changed to the more definite than vice versa. Thus the balance both of external and internal evidence is in favour of \( \epsilonν \, \tau\eta \, \epsilon\eta\), and we must not limit the interval between the miracles to a single day. In N.T. \( \epsilon\eta\\a \) is peculiar to Lk. (ix. 37; Acts xxii. 1, xxv. 17, xxvii. 18). So also is \( \omega\, \eta\gamma\gamma\iota\sigma\sigma\nu \) (v. 12. xv. 25, xix. 20, 41).

\( \text{Na\o} \). The place is not mentioned elsewhere in Scripture; and the village of that name in Josephus (\( B.\,J. \) iv. 9. 4) is on the other side of the Jordan, and cannot be the same.

A hamlet called Nein was found by Robinson about two miles west of Endor, on the north slope of Little Hermon, which is where Eusebius and Jerome place it; and it would be about a day's journey from Capernaum. “One entrance alone it could have had, that which opens on the rough hillside in its downward slope to the plain” (Stanley, \( \text{Sin.} \& \text{Pal.} \) p. 357); so that the very path on which the two companies met can be identified. About ten minutes' walk on the road to Endor is a burying-place which is still used, and there are many tombs cut in the rock. Robinson, \( \text{Pal.} \) iii. p. 469; \( \text{Bibl. Res.} \) ii. 361; Thomson, \( \text{Land} \& \text{Book} \) p. 445; Tristram, \( \text{Land of Israel} \) p. 127. The expression, \( \pi\o\o\nu \, \kappa\alpha\l\o\mu\omicr\nu \, \text{Na\o} \), looks as if Lk. were writing for those who were not familiar with the country; comp. i. 26, 39, iv. 31. See on vi. 15.

\( \text{o}i \, \mu\alpha\theta\eta\tau\a \, \a\upsilon\o\upom\a \). Including more than the Twelve; vi. 13. See on xi. 29.

12. \( \kappa\alpha\i\i\o\upsilon \, \dot{\xi}\dot{\epsilon}\kappa\o\omicr\i\upsilon\zeta\eta\upsilon\, \text{τε\v\theta\nu\kappa\o} \). "Behold there was being carried out a dead man." Or, "there was being carried out dead the only son," etc. The \( \kappa\alpha\i\i\o\upsilon \) introduces the apodosis of \( \dot{\omega}\, \dot{\delta} \, \dot{\eta} \, \dot{\gamma}\gamma\iota\sigma\sigma\nu \), and must be omitted in translation: "then" would be too strong. See on v. 12. The compound verb occurs here only in N.T. and nowhere in LXX. It is equivalent to \( \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\phi\rern\upsilon \) (Acts v. 6, 9, 10) and \( \epsilon\ferr\upsilon \), and is used of carrying out to burial, Polyb. xxxv. 6. 2; Plut. \( \text{Agis} \), xxii.; \( \text{Cic. xlii.} \) In later Gk. \( \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\kappa\o\omicr\u\upsilon\upsilon\zeta\eta\upsilon \) is used for \( \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\phi\rern\upsilon \) of burial. With \( \text{τε\v\theta\nu\kappa\o} \) comp. Jn. xi. 44. "\( \mu\o\nu\o\gamma\gamma\eta\eta\upsilon \, \upos \, \tau\eta \, \mu\upsilon\tau\i\upsilon \, \text{a} \upsilon\o\upom\a \). Comp. vii. 42, ix. 38; Heb. xi. 17; Judg. xi. 34; Tobit iii. 15, viii. 17. Only in Jn. is \( \mu\o\nu\o\gamma\gamma\eta\eta\upsilon \) used of the Divine Sonship (i. 14, 18, iii. 16, 18; 1 Jn. iv. 9).

\( \kappa\alpha\i\i\o\upsilon \, \a\upsilon\o\upsilon \, \dot{\i}\nu \, \chi\i\rho\a \). The \( \dot{\i}\nu \) may safely be pronounced to be certainly genuine (\( \text{N} \, \text{B} \, \text{C} \, \text{L} \, \text{S} \, \text{V} \, \text{E} \) and most Versions). For \( \a\upsilon\o\upsilon \) some editors write \( \a\upsilon\eta \), and a few authorities have \( \kappa\alpha\i\i\o\upsilon \, \chi\i\rho\a \). The mourning of a widow for an only son is typical for the extremity of grief: \( \text{orba cum flet unicum} \)
mater (Catull. xxxix. 5). Comp. Jer. vi. 26; Amos viii. 10; Zech. xii. 10; Prov. iv. 3.

δόχλος τῆς πόλεως ἵκανός. Some of this multitude would be hired mourners, and musicians with flutes and cymbals. The mother would walk in front of the bier, and Jesus would naturally address her before touching it. This use of ἵκανός for “enough and to spare, much,” is specially freq. in Lk. (viii. 27, 32, xx. 9, xxii. 38, xxiii. 8, 9; Acts viii. 11, ix. 23, 43, xi. 24, 26, etc.). It is possibly colloquial: it occurs in Aristoph. Pax 354. See Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 79. D here has πολὺς.

13. καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτὴν ὁ Κύος ἐσταλακηνίδος ἐπ᾽ αὐτῇ. The introduction of ὁ Κύριος has special point here: it is the Lord of Life meeting sorrow and death. The expression is characteristic of Lk. Comp. xxiv. 34, and see on v. 17. Compassion is elsewhere mentioned as a moving cause in Christ’s miracles (Mt. xiv. 14, xv. 32, xx. 34; Mk. i. 41, vii. 2). The verb is peculiar to the Synoptists; and, excepting in parables (Lk. x. 33, xv. 20; Mt. xviii. 27), is used of no one but Christ. It is followed, as here, by ἐπὶ c. dat. Mt. xiv. 14; and by περί c. gen. Mt. ix. 36; but generally by ἐπὶ c. acc. (Mt. xv. 32; Mk. vi. 34, vii. 2, ix. 22).

Μὴ κλαίε. “Do not go on weeping, cease to weep”: comp. ver. 6. He is absolutely sure of the result; otherwise the command would have been unnatural. Quis matrem, nisi mentis inops, in funere nati Fiere vetat?

14. ἔψαυτο τῆς σορός, οἱ δὲ βαστάζοντες ἐστησαν. Lk. clearly intimates that the purpose of the touching was to make the bearers stand still. At such solemn times words are avoided, and this quiet sign sufficed. Perhaps it also meant that Jesus claimed as His own what Death had seized as his prey. Lk. equally clearly intimates that the resurrection was caused by Christ’s command. This is the case in all three instances of raising the dead (viii. 54; Jn. xi. 43). The σορὸς may be either the bier on which the body was carried, or the open coffin (probably wicker) in which it was laid (Gen. i. 26; Hdt. i. 68. 3, ii. 78. 1).

It is worth noting that βαστάζω, which occurs twenty-seven times in N.T. (x. 4, xi. 27, xiv. 27, xxii. 10, etc.), is found only thrice in LXX.

σοὶ λέγω. “To thee I say, Arise.” To the mother He had said, “Weep not.” The σοὶ is emphatic. For this use of λέγω, almost in the sense of “I command,” comp. xi. 9, xii. 4, xvi. 9.

15. ἀνεκάθισεν ὁ νεκρός. The verb occurs only here and Acts ix. 40 in N.T.; in both cases of persons restored to life and sitting up. Not in LXX. In this intrans. sense it is rare, excepting in medical writers, who often use it of sick persons sitting up in bed (Hobart, p. 111). The speaking proved complete restoration.
To suggest that the young man was in a trance does not get rid of the miracle. How did Jesus know that he was in a trance, and know exactly how to rouse him? And can we suppose that this happened on three different occasions, even if we could reconcile Christ’s action with a character for truthfulness? Here and in the case of Jairus’ daughter it is the Evangelist who tells us that the person was dead; but Jesus Himself declared that Lazarus was dead (Jn. xi. 14). We are told that the symmetry of the three instances is suspicious; raised from the death-bed, raised from the bier, raised from the tomb. But no Evangelist gives us the triplet. Lk. is the only writer who records more than one, and the two which he records he places in unsymmetrical order, the raising from the bier coming before the raising from the death-bed. Strauss has shown how unsatisfactory the trance theory is (Leben Jesu, ed. 1864, p. 469).

εὖθεκεν αὐτοῖν τῇ μητρὶ. The sudden change of nominative causes no obscurity. Comp. xiv. 5, xv. 15, xvii. 2, xix. 4; Acts vi. 6, x. 4. Jesus might have claimed the life which He has restored, nam juvenis jam desiderat esse matris suæ; but compassion for the mother again influences Him. Comp. viii. 55; Acts ix. 41; 1 Mac. x. 9; 1 Kings xvii. 23; 2 Kings iv. 36.

10. Ἐλάβεν δὲ φόβος πάντας. It is natural that this should be the first feeling on seeing a corpse reanimated. But a writer of fiction would rather have given us the frantic joy of the mother and of those who sympathized with her. Comp. i. 65, v. 8, 26, viii. 37; Acts ii. 43, xix. 17. See on i. 12, and also Schanz, ad loc.

λέγοντες ὅτι . . . καὶ ὅτι. It is very forced to make ὅτι in both cases argumentative: “Saying, (We praise God) because . . . and because.” It is possible to take the second ὅτι in this way; but the common method of making both to be recitative is preferable. Both, therefore, are to be omitted in translation, the words quoted being in the oratio recta (Tyn. Cran. Cov. RV.). Cases in which ὅτι may be taken either way are freq. in N.T. (i. 45, ii. 11, iv. 36, vii. 39, ix. 22, x. 21, xi. 38, xxii. 10; 1 Jn. ii. 12-14, etc.).

Ἐπεσκέψατο ὁ θεὸς τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ. Comp. i. 68, 78; Acts xv. 14; Heb. ii. 6. The verb was specially used of the “visits” of a physician. Comp. Mt. xxv. 36, 43; Jas. i. 27; Acts vi. 3, vii. 23, xv. 36, the only other passages in N.T. in which the word occurs. In the sense of visiting with judgment or punishment it is never used in N.T. and but seldom in LXX (Ps. lxxviii. 33; Jer. ix. 9, 25, xi. 22, li. 29). After the weary centuries during which no Prophet had appeared, it was indeed a proof of Jehovah’s visiting His people that one who excelled the greatest Prophets was among them. No one in O.T. raised the dead with a word.

17. ἔξηκλεν ὁ λόγος οὗτος ἐν ἀλη τῇ ἰουδαίᾳ περὶ αὐτοῦ. The λόγος is the one just mentioned,—that God had visited His people in sending a mighty Prophet. The statement does not imply that Lk. supposed Nain to be in Judæa. ἰουδαία here probably means Palestine: see on iv. 44 and xxiii. 5. But even if we take it in the
VII. 17–19.

THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

narrower sense of Judæa as distinct from Galilee, Samaria, and Pæææ, there is no need to attribute to Lk. any geographical inaccuracy. "This saying went forth (from Nain and circulated) in Judæa"; i.e. it reached the headquarters of Christ's opponents. For ἐπὶ αὐτοῦ comp. v. 15. Syr-Sin. omits δὲ λόγος.

This pregnant use of a prep. of rest after a verb of motion is perhaps found only in late Grk., for in Thuc. iv. 42. 3 and Xen. Hellen. vii. 5. 10 the readings vary between ἀνῆγαν and ἀνῆγας. Comp. viii. 7, and see Win. l. 4. a, p. 514; Blass, Gr. p. 127.

καὶ πάση τῇ περιχώρῳ. Note the position of this clause, which is added after ἐπὶ αὐτοῦ with augmented force: "and (what is more) in all the region round about"; i.e. round about Ἰουδαία, not Nain. Comp. Acts xiv. 6. The verse prepares the way for the next incident by showing how the Baptist's disciples came to hear about "all these things."

The evidence that Jesus raised the dead is that of all four Gospels and of primitive tradition. The fact seems to have been universally believed in the early Church (Justin, Apol. i. 22. 48; Try. lxix.; Orig. c. Cels. ii. 48). Quadratus, one of the earliest apologists, who addressed a defence of Christianity to Hadrian A.D. 125, says in the only fragment of it which is extant, "But the works of our Saviour were always present, for they were true; those that were healed and those that were raised from the dead, who were seen not only when they were healed and when they were raised, but were also always present; and not merely while the Saviour was on earth, but also after His departure, they were there for a considerable time, so that some of them lived even to our own times" (Eus. H. E. iv. 3. 2). This does not mean that Quadratus had seen any of them, but that there was abundance of opportunity, long after the event, to inquire into the reality of these miracles. S. Paul uses the same kind of argument respecting the resurrection of Christ (1 Cor. xv. 5–8). Weiss points out how unsatisfactory are all the attempts to explain the evidence on any other hypothesis than the historical fact that Jesus raised the dead (Leben Jesu, i. pp. 557–565, Eng. tr. ii. 178–186). He concludes thus: "In no other miracle did the grace of God, which appeared in His Messiah, manifest itself so gloriously, by overcoming the consequences of sin and thereby giving a pledge for the highest consummation of salvation." See Aug. in Joh. Trac. xlix. 2.

18–35. The message from the Baptist to the Christ. Peculiar to Lk. and Mt., who place it in different connexions, but assign to it the same occasion, viz. that John had "heard in his prison the works of the Christ" (Mt. xi. 2). Lk.'s narrative, as usual, is the more full. He does not mention that John is in prison, having already stated the fact by anticipation (iii. 20). The πρὶς πάντων τούτων shows that the works reported to the Baptist include the healing of the centurion's servant and the raising of the widow's son.

πρὸς τόν κύριον. This is probably the true reading (BLRX, a f3 Vulg.) rather than πρὸς τῷ Ἰησοῦ (K A X T, b c f). See on ver. 13.

19. Σὺ εἶ ὃ ἐρχόμενος; "Art Thou (in emphatic contrast to ἔτερον) He that cometh," i.e. whose coming is a matter of quite notorious certainty (iii. 16, xiii. 35, xix. 38; Heb. x. 37).
“Or must we look for another, different in kind?” whereas ἄλλον might be another of the same kind (Lk. on Gal. i. 6, 7). The reading ἠτερον (n B L R X Ξ) is right, and is not taken from Mt. It is ἄλλον (A D) that is the corruption. For the delib. subj. comp. iii. 10, 12, 14. See on iii. 15.

The meaning of the question thus sent to Christ has been much discussed. 1. Chrysostom and other Fathers have suggested that the question was asked for the sake of John’s disciples, who needed strengthening or correcting in their beliefs. See Oxford Library of the Fathers, x. p. 267, note e. Luther, Calvin, Beza, Grothus, Bengel, and others adopt this view. But the whole context is against it. Christ’s reply is addressed to John, not to the disciples; and it is not clear that the disciples even understood the message which they carried. 2. Weiss and other critics follow Tertullian (Marcion. iv. 18) in contending that John’s own faith was failing, because the career of Jesus did not seem to correspond with what he and the people had expected, and with what he had foretold (iii. 17). There is nothing incredible in this view; but the Baptist had had such a long and stern preparation for his work, and had received such convincing evidence that Jesus was the Messiah, that a failure in his faith is surprising. 3. Hase and others suggest that he was not failing in faith, but in patience. John was disappointed that Jesus did not make more progress, and he wished to urge Him on to take a more prominent and indisputable position. “If Thou do these things, manifest Thyself unto the world.” Perhaps John was also perplexed by the fact that one who could work such miracles did not set His forerunner free, nor “cleanse His threshing-floor” of such refuse as Antipas and Herodias. This view suits the context better than the second. John’s sending to Jesus is strong evidence that he was not seriously in doubt as to His Messiahship. For a false Christ would not have confessed that he was false; and what proof could the true Christ give more convincing than the voice from heaven and the visible descent of the Spirit? 4. The view of Strauss, that John had just begun to conjecture that Jesus is the Messiah, and that therefore this narrative is fatal to the story of his having baptized Jesus and proclaimed Him as the Messiah, is answered by Hase (Gesch. Jesu, § 39, p. 388, ed. 1891). See also Hahn, i. p. 475.

21. ὑπεραπεύειν ἀπό. See on v. 15: it is peculiar to Lk. μαστίγων. “Distressing bodily diseases”; Mk. iii. 10, v. 29, 34. In LXX it is used of any grievous trouble, but not specially of disease: Ps. xxxv. 15, lxxxviii. 32; Ecclss. xl. 9?; 2 Mac. vii. 37: comp. Hom. II. xii. 37, xiii. 812; Aesch. Sept. 607; Ag. 642. The notion that troubles are Divine chastisements is implied in the word. It is used literally Acts xxii. 24 and Heb. xi. 36.
VII. 21-24.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE 203

εχαρίσατο. "He graciously bestowed, made a free present of"; magnificum verbum (Beng.); comp. 2 Mac. iii. 31.

22. ἀπαγγέλατε ἱωάνει. See on viii. 20. The answer is expressly sent to John: there is no intimation that it is for the instruction of his disciples, who are sent back, "like the messenger from Gabii to Sextus Tarquinius," to relate a symbolical narrative, which their master is to interpret. That they can understand it is neither stated nor implied.

τυφλοὶ ἀναβλέπουσιν, κ.τ.λ. There is probably a direct reference to Is. xxxv. 5, 6, lxi. 1. It is clear, not only that Lk. and Mt. understand Jesus to refer to bodily and not spiritual healings, but that they are right in doing so. John's messengers had not "seen and heard" Christ healing the spiritually blind and the morally leprous. Moreover, what need to add τυφλοὶ εὐαγγελίζονται, if all that precedes refers to the preaching of the good tidings? It is unnatural to express the same fact, first by a series of metaphors, and then literally. All the clauses should be taken literally. They seem to be arranged in two groups, which are connected by καὶ, and in each group there is a climax, the strongest item of evidence being placed last.

πτωχοὶ εὐαγγελίζονται. This was the clearest sign of His being the Christ (Is. lxi. 1), as He Himself had declared at Nazareth (iv. 18-21). His miracles need not mean more than that He was "a great Prophet"; moreover, the Baptist had already heard of them. But it was a new thing that the poor, whom the Greek despised and the Roman trampled on, and whom the priest and the Levite left on one side, should be invited into the Kingdom of God (vi. 20). For the passive sense of εὐαγγελίζωσθαι comp. Heb. iv. 2, 6, and see Win. xxxix. i. 3. For εὐαγγέλιον see on Rom. i. 1.

23. μακάριος. Not μακάριοι, as it would have been if the direct reference were to the disciples of John. It implies that the Baptist had in some way found an occasion of stumbling in Jesus (i.e. he had been wanting in faith, or in trust, or in patience); and it also encourages him to overcome this temptation.

σκανδαλίζῃ. Only here and xvii. 2 in Lk., but frequent in Mt. and Mk. The verb combines the notions of "trip up" and "entrap," and in N.T. is always used in the figurative sense of "causing to sin." See on xvii. 1. This record of a rebuke to the Baptist is one of many instances of the candour of the Evangelists. For δια εὖ see Greg. Proleg. p. 96, and Win. xli. 6, p. 390; this use of εὖ for ἄν is common in LXX and N.T. (xvii. 33?; Mt. v. 19, 32, xii. 32, xviii. 5; Jas. iv. 4).

24. περὶ ἱωάνου. This is further evidence that the question and answer just recorded concerned John himself. The people had heard Jesus send a rebuke to the Baptist. But He forthwith
guards them from supposing that John has ceased to be worthy of reverence. He waits till his disciples are gone; because if they had heard and reported Christ's praise of John to their master, it might have cancelled the effect of the rebuke. This panegyric is almost the funeral oration of the Baptist; for soon after this he was put to death. For ἕρσατο see on iv. 21.

Τι ἔξηκατε. In each of the three questions it is possible to put the note of interrogation before the infinitive, and render, “Why went ye out? to behold?” etc. But the order of the words favours the usual punctuation. Perhaps θεᾶσανθαί implies “behold” with wonder and admiration.

καλάμον . . . σαλευόμενον. The literal meaning makes excellent sense: “Did you go out into the wilderness to admire what you would certainly find there, but which would have no interest or attraction? Or did you go out to see what would no doubt have been interesting and attractive, but which you were not likely to find there?” But it also makes good sense to interpret, “Had John been a weak and fickle person, you would not have made a pilgrimage to see him.”

25. ἀνθρωπον ἐν μαλαιχοίς. Such a person would not be found in the wilderness; although he might have attracted them. This seems to show that the καλάμον is not metaphorical, for this is obviously literal.

οἱ ἐν ἰματισμῷ ἐνδόξῳ καὶ τρυφῇ ὑπάρχοντες. “Those who live in gorgeous apparel and luxury.” The word ἰματισμός is of late origin, and is seldom used excepting of costly vesture (ix. 29; Acts xx. 33; Jn. xix. 24; 1 Tim. ii. 9; Gen. xxiv. 53; Exod. iii. 22, xii. 35; 1 Kings x. 5). See Trench, Syn. 1. For ἐνδόξῳ comp. xiii. 17, and for ὑπάρχοντες see on viii. 41. In N.T. τρυφή occurs only here and 2 Pet. ii. 13; in LXX only as ὑπάρχει. But it is freq. in class. Grk. It means an enervating mode of life (θρούττομα, “I am broken up and enfeebled”).

26. περισσότερον προφήτου. This completes the climax: καλάμον, ἀνθρωπον, προφήτην, περισσότερον προφήτου. In περισσότερον we have a late equivalent of πλέον. It may be masc. or neut., but is probably neut., like πλεῖον in xi. 32. Comp. xii. 4, xx. 47. They went out to see something more than a Prophet, and they did see it.

27. This quotation from Malachi (iii. 1) is given by Mk. at the opening of his Gospel coupled with φωνῆ βοώτος, κ.τ.λ., and attributed as a whole to Isaiah. Neither Heb. nor LXX has πρὸ προσώπου σου, which Mt. Mk. and Lk. all insert in the first clause. See on ix. 52. Moreover, they all three have ἀποστέλλω and κατασκευάσει instead of the εἰκαστέλλω and ἐπιβλέψεω of LXX. See on iv. 18. The passage was one of the common-places of Messianic prophecy, and had been stereotyped in an independent Greek form before the Evangelists made use of it.
28. ἐν γεννητοῖς γυναικῶν. A solemn periphrasis for the whole human race; that it implies weakness and frailty is not evident: in Job xiv. 1 these qualities are expressed. It is human generation as distinct from heavenly regeneration that is meant. John’s superiority lay, not in his personal character, but in his office and mission: the glory of being the immediate forerunner of the Messiah was unique. He was a Prophet, like Moses and Elijah; yet he not only prophesied, but saw and pointed out to others Him of whom he prophesied. Lk. omits the Hebrew ἀμὴν.

The word προφήτης is an interpolation. The external evidence against it is immense (rkBLMXE and most Versions), and it is improbable that the possibility of Prophets outside Israel would be indicated.

ὅ δὲ μικρότερος. There is no need to make this a superlative, as AV. alone among English Versions: better, “he that is inferior,” i.e. less than other members of the Kingdom, less than any among the more insignificant. It is most unnatural to explain ὁ μικρότερος of Christ. Chrysostom says, περὶ εαυτοῦ λέγων εἰκότως κρύπτει τὸ πρόσωπον διὰ τὴν ἐτὶ κρατοῦσαν ὑπόνοιαν καὶ διὰ τὸ μὴ δόξαν περὶ εαυτοῦ μέγα τι λέγεν (Hom. xxxvii. p. 417), and above he explains μικρότερος as κατὰ τὴν ἥλικιαν καὶ κατὰ τὴν τῶν πολλῶν δόξαν (p. 416). Much the same view is taken by Hilary, Theophylact, Erasmus, Luther, Fritzsche, and others. In that case ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ must be taken after μείζων, which is awkward; and we can hardly suppose that Jesus would have so perplexed the people as to affirm that He was inferior to the Baptist, who in all his teaching had enthusiastically maintained the contrary (iii. 16; Mt. iii. 11; Mk. i. 7; Jn. i. 15, 20, 27, 30, iii. 28–30). By his office John belonged to the old dispensation; he was its last and highest product (major prophetarum), but he belonged to the era of preparation. In spiritual privileges, in grace, and in knowledge any even of the humbler members of the Kingdom are superior to him. He is a servant, they are sons; he is the friend of the Bridegroom, they are His spouse. It is possible to understand Ἰωάνου after μικρότερος, but it is unnecessary: more probably the comparative refers to others in the Kingdom. The paradox, “He that is less than John is greater than John,” is capable of interpretation; but the principle that the lower members of a higher class are above the highest member of a lower class is simpler. The superlative of μικρὸς does not occur in N.T.

29, 30. Many have supposed that these two verses are a parenthetical remark of the Evangelist. But a comment inserted in the middle of Christ’s words, and with no indication that it is a comment, is without a parallel and improbable. Jn. iii. 16–21 and 31–36 are not parallel. There the question is whether comment is added. In both passages it is probable that there is no
comment. But, assuming that the Evangelist is in both cases commenting, he **appends** his comment: he does not **insert** it into the utterances of others. Here vv. 29 and 30 are part of Christ's address, who contrasts the effect which John's preaching had upon the people and upon the hierarchy (see Schanz). The connexion between ver. 30 and ver. 31 is close, as is shown by the οὖν.

29. πάς ὁ λαὸς ἀκούσας. “All the people, when they heard,” the preaching of the Baptist. Note the πάς, and see small print on i. 66.

εὐδικαιώσαν τὸν Θεὸν, βαπτισθέντες. “Admitted the righteousness of God (in making these claims upon them and granting them these opportunities) by being baptized.” Their accepting baptism was an acknowledgment of His justice. See on ver. 35, and the detached note on the word δίκαιος and its cognates, Rom. i. 17.

30. οἱ νομικοί. Lk. often uses this expression instead of ἔγγραμματεῖς, which might be misleading to Gentile readers (x. 25, xi. 45, 46, 52, xiv. 3). Elsewhere in N.T. the word occurs only Mt. xxii. 35; Tit. iii. 9, 13. Comp. 4 Mac. v. 4; Corp. Inscr. 2787, 8.

τὴν βούλην τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡδετησαν εἰς εαυτούς. “They frustrated the counsel of God concerning themselves”: comp. εἰς ἴμας in 1 Thes. v. 18. The rendering, “for themselves, so far as they were concerned, they rendered the counsel of God effectless,” would require τὸ εἰς εαυτοῦ. The verb is a strong one: “render ἀθέτων, placeless, inefficacious” (Gal. ii. 21, iii. 15; Jn. xii. 48; Lk. x. 16). Free will enables each man to annul God’s purpose for his salvation. The phrase τὴν βούλην τοῦ Θεοῦ is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts xiii. 36, xx. 27; comp. ii. 23, iv. 28). It occurs Wisd. vi. 4; comp. Ps. xxxii ii, cvi. 11; Prov. xix. 21. With μὴ βαπτισθέντες comp. the case of Nicodemus (Jn. iii. 4, 5).

31. The spurious reading εἰς δὲ οὗ ἄνθρωπος was interpolated at the beginning of this verse to mark vv. 29, 30 as a parenthetical remark of the Evangelist. Owing to the influence of the Vulgate the interpolation was followed by all English Versions prior to RV. Almost all MSS. and ancient versions omit the words. But their spuriousness must not be quoted as evidence against the view which they support. Many false readings are correct glosses upon the true text, although that is probably not the case here.

Τίνι οὖν ὁμοίωσω. The οὖν would not be very intelligible if vv. 29, 30 were omitted; but after ver. 30 it is quite in place. “Seeing that the rulers and teachers have rejected the Divine invitation given by John, and that ye (λέγετε, ver. 34) follow them in refusing to follow Me, to what, then, shall I liken the people of this generation?” So comprehensive a phrase as τοὺς ἄνθρωπος τῆς γενεᾶς ταύτης may include the Baptist and the Christ: and to assume that it does include them frees the true interpretation of the parable from seeming to be somewhat at variance with the
VII. 31–33.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

opening words. With the double question comp. xiii. 18; Mk. iv. 30.

32. There are two parties of children. This is more clearly marked by τοῖς ἑτέροις in Mt. than by ἄλλοις here. Which of the two groups is blamed? It has been taken both ways. (1) The children who invite the second group to play, first at dances and then at dirges, represent Jesus and the Baptist with their respective followers. The children who waywardly refuse to join in any kind of game are the Jews as represented by the hierarchy and the majority of the people. These rejected both the asceticism of John and the joyous freedom of the Gospel. Godet infers from ἄλλοις that the two groups of children change sides and take turns in proposing the form of play. But it is not necessary to give so much meaning to ἄλλοις. Yet such a change would not be difficult to interpret. The Jews may have proposed to the Baptist to become less stern. They certainly tried to force fasting on Jesus. And hence (2) the possibility of the other interpretation, which is preferred by Euthymius, Stier, and Alford, and is ably defended by Trench (Studies in the Gospels, pp. 150–153). The children sitting in the market-place and finding fault with their fellows are the Jews. John comes to them in his severity, and they want him to play at festivals. When he retains his strict mode of life, they complain and say, “We piped to you, and you did not dance.” Then Christ comes to them as the bringer of joy, and they want Him to play at funerals. When He retains His own methods, they say, “We wailed, and you did not weep.”

This interpretation has two advantages. It makes the men of this generation, viz. the Jews, to be like the children who cry, “We piped,” etc. And it gives the two complaints a chronological order. “We piped,” etc., is a complaint against the Baptist, who came first; “We wailed,” etc., is a complaint against the Christ, who came afterwards.

With καθήμενοι comp. v. 27; with ἀγορᾶ, Mk. vi. 56; with προσφωνοῦν ἄλλοις, Acts xxii. 2; with ηὐλήσαμεν, 1 Cor. xiv. 7; with ἡρεύσασθε, 2 Sam. vi. 21; with εὐθευςαμεν, Jn. xvi. 20. Of these προσφωνεῖν is a favourite word: see on vi. 13. Both ἑρυθεῖν and κλαῖεῖν refer to the outward manifestation of grief as distinct from the feeling; and here the outward expression only is needed.

33. μὴ ἐσθὼν ἄρτον μῆτε πίνων οἶνον. “Without eating bread or drinking wine”; spoken from the point of view of those who objected to John. He did not take the ordinary food of mankind; and so Mt. says, “neither eating nor drinking.” For the poetic form ἐσθῶ see on x. 7. Syr-Sin. omits ἄρτον and οἶνον.

Δαιμόνιον ἐξελ. They afterwards said the same of Jesus (Jn. vii. 20, viii. 48, x. 20); and δαιμόνιον ἐξελ shows that δαιμόνιον is acc. and not nom. Renan compares the Arabic Medjnun enté
as showing that Orientals consider all madness to be possession by a demon (V. de J. p. 263). See on iv. 33. One regrets that the American Revisers did not carry their point in getting “demon” substituted for “devil” as the rendering of δαιμόνιον. Tyn. Cov. and Cran. make great confusion by translating “hath the devil.” Wic. is better with “hath a fende.” The λέγετε in vv. 33 and 34 shows that some of those censured are present. Comp. xi. 15, where Jesus is accused of casting out demons with the help of Beelzebub.

34. φάγως. Like olvovòt7ης, this is a subst. and therefore paroxytone: φαγός, which L. and S. give, would be an adj. See Chandler, Greek Accentuation, §215. Latin Versions vary between devorator (Vulg.), vorator (q), vorax (c e), manducator (d). English Versions vary between “devourer” (Wic.), “glutton” (Tyn. Cov.), “gurmander” (Rhem.), and “gluttonous man” (Cran. AV. RV.). The ref. is to v. 33 and similar occasions. For φιλος τελωνῶν see v. 27, 29, 30.

35. καὶ εἰδικαίωθη ἡ σοφία. “And yet wisdom was justified.” In N.T. καὶ often introduces a contrast, which is placed side by side with that which it is contrasted: “and (instead of what might be expected), and yet.” This is specially common in Jn. (i. 5, 10, iii. 11, 32, v. 39, 40, vi. 36, 43, 70, vii. 28, etc.). Atque sometimes has the same force; Cic. De Off. iii. 11. 48. Although the Jews as a nation rejected the methods both of John and of Christ, yet there were some who could believe that in both these methods the Divine wisdom was doing what was right.

εἰδικαίωθη. This looks back to εἰδικαίωσαν in ver. 29, and ἡ σοφία looks back to τὴν βουλὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ in ver. 30. Here, as in Rom. iii. 4 (Ps. ii. 6), δικαίω ὁ means “Show or pronounce to be righteous, declare or admit to be just.” The analogy of verbs in -ω is often wrongly urged. An important distinction is sometimes overlooked. In the case of external qualities, such verbs do mean to “make or render,” whatever the noun from which they are derived signifies (ἐρημω, νυφλω, χρυσω, κ.τ.λ.). But in the case of moral qualities this is scarcely possible, and it may be doubted whether there is a passage in which δικαίω clearly means “I make righteous.” Similarly, ἄξιον never means “I make worthy,” but “I consider worthy, treat as worthy.” In the case of words which might apply to either external or moral qualities both meanings are possible acc. to the context: thus ὁμοιού may mean either “make like,” e.g. make an image like a man (Eur. Hel. 33, comp. Acts xiv. 11; Rom. ix. 29), or “consider like, compare” (ver. 31, xiii. 18, 20).

In εἰδικαίωθη we perhaps have an example of what is sometimes called the gnomic aorist. Comp. Jn. xv. 6; Jas. ii. 24; 1 Pet. i. 24. Burton, §43. But see Win. xl. b. 1, p. 348, where the existence of this aorist in N.T. is denied.

ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν τέκνων αὐτῆς. “At the hands of all her chil-
The justification comes from them. It is certainly incorrect to interpret ἀπό as implying rescuing or protecting "from the attacks of all her children," viz. from the Jews. The children of the Divine Wisdom are the faithful minority who have welcomed the Baptist and the Christ, not the unbelieving majority who rejected them. In Mt. xi. 19 there is no πάντων, and D L M X omit it here. But it is certainly genuine: see on vi. 30. In ἈΡΞ πάντων is placed last with emphasis: there are no exceptions. But the order of N B is to be preferred. Mt. has ἐργανεῖ for τέκνων, and N has ἐργανεῖ here. For the personification of the Wisdom of God comp. Prov. viii., ix.; Ecclus. xxiv.; Wisd. vi. 22–ix. 18.

§The Anointing by the Woman that was a Sinner.

Without note of time or express connexion. The connexion apparently is that she is an illustration of ver. 35. The proposal to identify this anointing with that by Mary of Bethany just before the Passion (Mt. xxvi. 6; Mk. xiv. 3; Jn. xii. 3) is ancient, for Origen on Mt. xxvi. 6 contends against it; and it still has supporters. Thus Holtzmann is of opinion that the act of a "clean" person in the house of "an unclean" (Simon the leper) has been changed by Lk. into the act of an "unclean" person in the house of a "clean" (Simon the Pharisee), in order to exhibit the way in which Christ welcomed outcasts, a subject which Lk. often makes prominent. But the confusion of Mary of Bethany with a notorious ἀμαρτωλός by Lk., who knows the character of Mary (x. 39, 42), is scarcely credible. And there is nothing improbable in two such incidents. Indeed the first might easily suggest the second. Simon is one of the commonest of names (there are ten or eleven Simons in N.T. and about twenty in Josephus), and therefore the identity of name proves nothing. Moreover, there are differences of detail, which, if not conclusive, are against the identification. The chief objection is the irreconcilable difference between Mary of Bethany and the ἀμαρτωλός. Strauss and Baur suggest a confusion with the woman taken in adultery. But the narrative betrays no confusion: everything is clear and harmonious. The conduct both of Jesus and of the woman is unlike either fiction or clumsily distorted fact. His gentle severity towards Simon and tender reception of the sinner, are as much beyond the reach of invention as the eloquence of her speechless affection.

On the traditional, but baseless, identification of the woman with Mary of Magdala see on viii. 2. The identification of this woman with both Mary of Magdala and Mary of Bethany is advocated by Hengstenberg. His elaborate argument is considered a tour de force, but it has not carried conviction with it. The potest non eadem esse of Ambrose is altogether an understatement. It is probably from considerations of delicacy that Luke does not name her: or his source may have omitted to do so.
The leading thought in the narrative is the contrast between Pharisees and sinners in their behaviour to Christ.

86. Ἡρώτα δὲ τις αὐτὸν τῶν Ἐφοσοιῶν ἵνα φάγῃ μετ’ αὐτῶν. There is nothing to show that the Pharisee had any sinister motive in asking Him, although he was evidently not very friendly. As the Pharisees were generally hostile to Christ, it may have been a courageous thing. He is inclined to believe that Jesus may be a Prophet (ver. 39); and Jesus rebukes him as one who loved little, not as a secret enemy. But, like Herod Antipas, he may simply have been curious. Lk. records two other instances of Christ being the guest of a Pharisee (xi. 37, xiv. 1). For ἵνα see on iv. 3, and comp. vi. 31, vii. 6; and for κατελίθη (B D L X Ξ) see on ix. 14.

87. Καὶ ἵδον γυνὴ ἡτίς ἤν. The opening words imply that her presence created surprise. The ἡτίς is stronger than ἤ and has point here: "who was of such a character as to be": comp. viii. 3. This is the right order, and ἐν τῇ πόλει follows, not precedes, ἡτίς ἤν (B L Ξ and most Versions). The exact meaning is not quite clear: either, "which was a sinner in the city," i.e. was known as such in the place itself; or possibly, "which was in the city, a sinner." The city is probably Capernaum.

ἀμαρτωλός. A person of notoriously bad character, and probably a prostitute: comp. Mt. xxi. 32. For instances of this use of ἀμαρτωλός see Wetst. To the Jews all Gentiles were in a special sense ἀμαρτωλοί (vi. 32, 33, xxiv. 7; Gal. ii. 15; 1 Mac. ii. 44); but something more than this is evidently meant here. The ἤν need not be pressed to mean, "She was even up to this time" (Alf.); nor does accessit ad Dominum immunda, ut rediret mundâ (Aug.) imply this. The ἤν expresses her public character: ἤν ἐν τῇ πόλει. She had repented (perhaps quite recently, and in consequence of Christ's teaching); but the general opinion of her remained unchanged. Her venturing to enter a Pharisee's house in spite of this shows great courage. In the East at the present day the intrusion of uninvited persons is not uncommon (Trench, Parables, p. 302 n.; Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 36). Mary of Bethany was not an intruder. Note the idiomatic pres. καταλέγεται: just equivalent to our "He is dining with me to-day," meaning that he will do so.

ἄλαβαστρον μύρου. Unguent-boxes or phials were called ἄλαβαστρον even when not made of alabaster. But unguenta optime servatur in alabastris (Plin. N. H. xiii. 3, xxxvi. 12; comp. Hdt. iii. 20. 1). See Wetst. on Mt. xxvi. 6.

The word is of all three genders in different writers; but in class. Grk. the sing. is ἄλαβαστρον, either masc. or fem. The origin of μύρον is unknown, μύρο, μύρα, σμύρα, μύρος being conjectures. In N. T. certainly, and probably in LXX also, μύρον, "ointments," is distinguished from ὕλαιον, "oil." Trench, Syn. xxxviii.
38. στάσα δόπιον παρὰ τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ. The sandals were removed at meals, and people reclined with their feet behind them; she could therefore easily approach the feet. While Lk. writes παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (viii. 35, 41, x. 39, xvii. 16; Acts iv. 35, 37, v. 2, vii. 58, xxii. 3), Mk. has πρὸς τοὺς πόδας (v. 22, vii. 25), and Jn. πρὸς τοὺς πόδας (xii. 32). Mt. has παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (xv. 30).

tois δάκρυσιν ἡβεῖατο βρέσχει τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰς θρείας, κ.τ.λ. This was no part of her original plan. She came to anoint His feet, and was overcome by her feelings; hence the ἡβεῖατο. The βρέσχει led to the ἐξεμασκεν, which was also unpremeditated. Among the Jews it was a shameful thing for a woman to let down her hair in public; but she makes this sacrifice. For βρέσχειν comp. Ps. vi. 7: it is probably a vernacular word (Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 39).

καὶ κατεφίλει. Note the compound verb and the change of tense: "She continued to kiss affectionately." The word is used of the kiss of the traitor (Mt. xxvi. 49; Mk. xiv. 45), which was demonstrative, of the prodigal's father (Lk. xv. 20), and of the Ephesian elders in their last farewell (Acts xx. 37), and nowhere else in N.T. Comp. Xen. Mem. ii. 6. 33. Kissing the feet was a common mark of deep reverence, especially to leading Rabbis (Xen. Cyr. vii. 5. 32; Polyb. xv. 1. 7; Aristoph. Vesp. 608).

39. προφήτης. Referring to the popular estimate of Jesus (vii. 16, 17). The οὖτος is contemptuous. No true Prophet would knowingly allow himself to be rendered unclean by contact with such a person. The reading δ προφήτης (B Ε) would mean "the great Prophet" of Deut. xviii. 15 (comp. Jn. i. 25, vii. 40), or possibly "the Prophet that He professes to be." The art. is accepted by Weiss, bracketed by WH., put in the margin by Treg., and rejected by Tisch.

τις καὶ ποσαπή ἢ γνω ἢτις ἀπτεταί αὐτῶ. "Who and of what character is the woman who is clinging to Him." She was notorious both in person and in life. See on i. 29. The ἀπτεταί implies more than mere touching, and is the pres. of continued action. Trench, Syn. xvii.; Lft. on Col. ii. 21. Imo si tu, Simon, scires, qualis haec jam esset femina, aliter judicares (Beng.). The ἃν comes after ἐγνωσκέν: "that she is," not "because she is." See on ver. 16, and comp. Is. lxv. 5.

40. ἀποκριθεὶς δ ἦπισκοῦν. Audivit Phariseum cogitamentum (Aug. Serm. xcix.). Jesus not only answered but confuted his doubts. Simon questioned the mission of Jesus because He seemed to be unable to read the woman's character. Jesus shows Simon that He can read his inmost thoughts: He knows τις καὶ ποσαπῆς ἐστι. For ἔξω σοί τι εἰπεῖν see on xii. 4. Christ asks permission of His host to speak. As Godet remarks, there is a tone of Socratic irony in the address. The historic present (φησίν) is very rare in Lk.
41. Δύο χρεοφίληται ἦσαν δανικτῇ τινὶ. For the orthography of the two substantives see WH. ii. App. p. 154; Greg. Proleg. p. 89. In N.T. χρεοφίληται occurs only here and xvi. 5; in LXX Job xxxi. 37; Prov. xxix. 13. The word is of late origin. All English Versions, except Rhein. and AV., rightly have “lender” and not “creditor” for δανικτής; Vulg. fænerator, Luth. Wucherer. In weight of silver the denarius was considerably less than a shilling; in purchasing power it was about two shillings, the wage of a day-labourer (Mt. xx. 2) and of a Roman soldier (Tac. Ann. i. 17. 8, where see Furneaux). The two debts were about £50 and £5.

42. μὴ ἐχότων αὐτῶν ἀποδοῦναι. “Because they had not where-with to pay”; non habentibus illis unde redderent (Vulg.). Comp. xii. 4, xiv. 14; Acts iv. 14. Others render ἐχεῖν in these passages “to be able,” like habeo quod with the subjunctive. In ἐχάρισατο, “he made them a present” of what they owed, we trace the Pauline doctrine of free grace and salvation for all. Comp. ver. 21. τίς ὅν ἀυτῶν πλείον ἀγαπήσει; This is the point of the parable, and perhaps the only point. The love and gratitude of those who have had debts remitted to them depends upon their estimate of the amount which has been remitted to them rather than upon the actual amount.

43. ὑπολαμβάνω. “I suppose,” “I presume,” with an air of supercilious indifference. Comp. Acts ii. 15; Job xxv. 3; Tobit vi. 18; Wisd. xvii. 2. It is very improbable that ἱπολαμβάνω here means “I reply,” as in x. 30; Job ii. 4, iv. 1, vi. 1, ix. 1, xxv. 1. In N.T. it is almost peculiar to Lk. The ὄρθως ἔκρινας may be compared with the τάνω ὄρθως of Socrates, when he has led the disputant into an admission which is fatal. In N.T. ὄρθως occurs only here, x. 28, xx. 21; Mk. vii. 35. Freq. in LXX. Comp. οὖν ἔκριναι ὄρθως (Wisd. vi. 4).

44. στραφεὶς πρὸς τὴν γυναῖκα. She was behind Him. His turning to her while He spoke to Simon was in itself half a rebuke. Up to this He seems to have treated her as He treated the Syrophenician woman, as if paying no attention. The series of contrasts produces a parallelism akin to Hebrew poetry, and in translating a rhythm comes almost spontaneously.

Βλέπεις ταύτην τὴν γυναίκα; This is probably a question: Simon had ignored her presence. The σου being placed before εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν gives point to the rebuke, but it hardly makes the σου emphatic. An enclitic cannot be emphatic, and σου here is enclitic. The meaning is not “I entered into thine house,” in preference to others; but rather, “I came to thee in thy house,” and not merely in the public street; “I was thy invited guest.”

ἐδωρ μοι ἐπὶ πόδας. Comp. Gen. xviii. 4; Judg. xix. 21; 1 Sam. xxv. 41; Jn. xiii. 5; 1 Tim. v. 10. The reading is somewhat uncertain, and there are many variations between μοι and μου, πόδας and τοὺς πόδας, and also of order: μοι ἐπὶ τοὺς πόδας (N L Ξ) may be right.
45. φίλημα. Comp. Gen. xxxiii. 4; Exod. xviii. 7; 2 Sam. xv. 5, xix. 39, xx. 9. The traitor's choosing it as a sign seems to mark it as usual.

ἀφ' ἢς εἰςἡλθον. The reading εἰςἡλθεν (L Vulg.) is an attempt to avoid the apparent exaggeration in "since the time I came in." But there need be no exaggeration, or difference of meaning, between the two readings. The woman very likely entered with Christ and His disciples in order to escape expulsion. Fear of it would make her begin to execute her errand directly the guests were placed. The compound καταφιλοῦσα makes the contrast with φίλημα more marked, and τῶς πόδας makes it still more so. The φίλημα would have been on the cheek, or possibly (if Simon had wished to be very respectful) on the hand.

46. ἐλαίῳ. Very cheap in Palestine, where olives abound, and very commonly used (Ps. xxiii. 5, cxli. 5; Mt. vi. 17). The μύρον would be more valuable, and possibly very costly (Jn. xii. 3, 5). This woman, whom Simon so despised in his heart, had really done the honours of the house to his guest. This fact would be all the more prominent if she entered close after Jesus, and thus at once supplied Simon's lack of courtesy. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 101.

47. This is a verse which has been the subject of much controversy. What is the meaning of the first half of it? We have to choose between two possible interpretations. 1. "For which reason, I say to thee, her many sins have been forgiven, because she loved much"; i.e. οὐ χάριν anticipates οὖν, and λέγω σοι is parenthetical. Her sins have been forgiven for the reason that her love was great; or her love won forgiveness. This is the interpretation of Roman Catholic commentators (see Schanz), and the doctrine of contritio caritate formata is built upon it. But it is quite at variance (a) with the parable which precedes; (b) with the second half of the verse, which ought in that case to run, "but he who loveth little, wins little forgiveness"; (c) with ver. 50, which states that it was faith, not love, which had been the means of salvation; a doctrine which runs through the whole of the N.T. This cannot be correct. 2. "For which reason I say to thee, her many sins have been forgiven (and I say this to thee), because she loved much"; i.e. λέγω σοι is not parenthetical, but is the main sentence. This statement, that her many sins have been forgiven, is rightly made to Simon, because he knew of her great sinfulness, he had witnessed her loving reverence, and he had admitted the principle that the forgiveness of much produces much love. This interpretation is quite in harmony with the parable, with the second half of the verse, and with ver. 50. There were two things evident,—the past sin and the present love,—both of them great. A third might be known, because (according to the principle just admitted) it explained how great love could follow great sin,—the forgiveness
of the sin. *Remissio peccatorum, Simoni non cogitata, probata a fructu, qui est evidens, quam illa sit occulta* (Beng).

αἱ ἀμαρτίαι αὐτῆς αἱ πολλαί. The second art. refers to v. 39: “The many sins of which thou thinkest.” “Her sins, yes (according to thy estimate), her many sins.”

καὶ δὲ σιλιγὼν δίκτημα. “But he to whom little is forgiven,” *i.e.* who thinks that he has committed little which could need forgiveness. It is said with evident reference to Simon. *O Pharisaec, parum diligis, quia parum tibi dimitti suspicaris; non quia parum dimittitur, sed quia parum putas quod dimittitur* (Aug. Serm. xcix.). For this use of the dat. comp. Soph. *Ant.* 904.

48. εἶπεν δὲ αὐτῇ. What He had to say to Simon (ver. 40) is finished: it is His true entertainer (44-46) who now occupies His attention.

ἀφεῖται. “Have been and remain forgiven”: see on v. 20. There is nothing either in the word or in the context to show that her sins were not forgiven until this moment: the context implies the opposite, and this is confirmed by the use of the perf. Augustine's *accessit ad Dominum immunda, ut rediret munda* is in this respect misleading. The teaching of Christ had brought her to repentance and to assurance of forgiveness, and this assurance had inspired her with love and gratitude. Jesus now confirms her assurance and publicly declares her forgiveness. He thus lends His authority to rehabilitate her with society.

49. λέγειν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. “To say within themselves” rather than among themselves; so that Jesus answered their thoughts, as He had already answered Simon’s. The ὁτοί is slightly contemptuous, as often (v. 21; Mt. xiii. 55; Jn. vi. 42, 52, etc.). The καὶ in δὲ καὶ ἀμαρτίαι ἀφέων is “even” rather than “also.” But “also” might mean “besides other outrages.”

50. εἶπεν δὲ πρὸς τὴν γυναῖκα. “But He said unto the woman.” He ignored their objection, and yet indirectly answered it, by telling her that it was her faith that had delivered her from her sins.

τοπείου εἰς εἰρήνην. “Depart into peace,” *i.e.* into a lasting condition of peace: a Hebrew formula of blessing and of goodwill, with special fulness of meaning. Comp. viii, 48; Mk. v. 34; i Sam. i. 17, xx. 42. In Acts xvi. 36 and Jas. ii. 16 we have ἐν εἰρήνῃ, which is less strong, the peace being joined to the moment of departure rather than to the subsequent life: comp. Judg. xviii. 6. In Acts xv. 33 we have μετ’ εἰρήνης.

Among the various points which distinguish this anointing from that by Mary of Bethany should be noted that here we have no grumbling at the waste of the ointment and no prediction of Christ's death, while there no absolution is pronounced and Mary is not addressed. See Hase, *Gesch. J.* § 91, p. 651, ed. 1891; also Schanz, p. 250, at the end of this section.

**VIII. 1-3. § The ministering Women.** This section is
evidence of the excellence of Lk.'s sources. The information contained in it is exact and minute. The names and other details are utterly unlike fiction. An inventor would avoid such things as likely to be refuted: moreover, no motive for invention can be discerned. The passage tells us—what no other Evangelist makes known—how Jesus and His disciples lived when they were not being entertained by hospitable persons. The common purse (Jn. xiii. 29; comp. xii. 6) was kept supplied by the generosity of pious women. This form of piety was not rare. Women sometimes contributed largely towards the support of Rabbis, whose rapacity in accepting what could ill be spared was rebuked by Christ (xx. 47; [Mt. xxiii. 14;] Mk. xii. 40) with great severity.

1. Καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ καθεδρίᾳ καὶ αὐτὸς διώδευεν. See detached note p. 45, and comp. v. 1, 12, 14: for ἐν τῷ καθεδρίᾳ see small print on vii. 11. The αὐτὸς anticipates καὶ οἱ δώδεκα, “He Himself and the Twelve.” But the καὶ before αὐτὸς comes after ἐγένετο and must not be coupled with the καὶ before οἱ δώδεκα. In N.T. διώδευεν occurs only here and Acts xvii. 1, but it is freq. in LXX (Gen. xii. 6, xiii. 17, etc.); also in Polyb. Plut. etc. Comp. ix. 6, xiii. 22.

κατὰ πόλιν καὶ κώμην κηρ. Ne quis Iudaeus præteritum se queri posset (Grotius), Jesus preached city by city (Acts xv. 21) and village by village. The clause is amphibolous. It probably is meant to go with διώδευεν, but may be taken with κηρύσσων καὶ εὐαγγ. The incidental way in which the severity of Christ's labours is mentioned is remarkable. Comp. ix. 58, xiii. 22; Mt. ix. 35; Mk. vi. 31. For εὐαγγελιζόμενος see on ii. 10. We are not to understand that the Twelve preached in His presence, if at all. Note the σὺν (not μετὰ), and see on vv. 38, 51, and i. 56.

2. πνευμάτων πονηρῶν. See on iv. 33. We cannot tell how many of these women had been freed from demons: perhaps only Mary Magdalen, the others having been cured ἀπὸ ἀσθενείων. For the ἀπὸ comp. v. 15, vii. 21.

ἡ καλουμένη Μαγδαληνή. See on vi. 15. The adj. probably means "of Magdala," a town which is not named in N.T.; for the true reading in Mt. xv. 39 is "Magadan." "Magdala is only the Greek form of Migdol, or watch-tower, one of the many places of the name in Palestine" (Tristram, Bible Places, p. 260); and it is probably represented by the squalid group of hovels which now bear the name of Mejdel, near the centre of the western shore of the lake. Magdala was probably near to Magadan, and being much better known through ἡ Μαγδαληνή, at last it drove the latter name out of the common text. See Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 382. Mary being a common name, the addition of something distinctive was convenient; and possibly a distinction from Mary
of Bethany was specially designed by the Evangelists. Mary Magdalen is commonly placed first when she is mentioned with other women (Mt. xxvii. 56, 61, xxviii. 1; Mk. xv. 40, 47, xvi. 1; Lk. xxiv. 10). Jn. xix. 25 is an exception. See on i. 36.

This fact is mentioned in the disputed verses at the end of Mk. (xvi. 9). It indicates a possession of extraordinary malignity (Mk. v. 9). We need not give any mystical interpretation to the number seven: comp. xi. 26; Mt. xii. 45. There is nothing to show that demoniacs generally, or Mary in particular, had lived specially vicious lives: and the fact that no name is given to the áµαρτωλός in the preceding section, while Mary Magdalen is introduced here as an entirely new person, is against the traditional identification of the two. Moreover, such an affliction as virulent demoniacal possession would be almost incompatible with the miserable trade of prostitution. If Lk. had wished to intimate that the áµαρτωλός is Mary Magdalen, he could have done it much more clearly. Had he wished to conceal the fact, he would not have placed these two sections in juxtaposition. Had he wished to withhold the name of the áµαρτωλός, who may possibly be included among the έπτεραι πολλαί, he would have done as he has done. The áµαρτωλός and Mary Magdalen and Mary of Bethany are three distinct persons.

8. 'Ιωάννα. She is mentioned with Mary Magdalen again xxiv. 10: all that we know about her is contained in these two passages. Godet conjectures that Chuza is the βασιλικός, who “believed and his whole house” (Jn. iv. 46-53). In that case her husband would be likely to let her go and minister to Christ. The Herod meant is probably Antipas, and his έπίτρωτος would be the manager of his household and estates: comp. Mt. xx. 8. Blunt finds here a coincidence with Mt. xiv. 2; Herod “said to his servants, This is John the Baptist.” If Herod’s steward’s wife was Christ’s disciple, He would often be spoken of among the servants at the court; and Herod addresses them, because they were familiar with the subject. Comp. the case of Manaen (Acts xiii. 1), Herod’s σύντροφος (Undesigned Coincidences, Pt. IV. xi. p. 263, 8th ed.). Of Susanna nothing else is known, nor of the other women, unless Mary, the mother of James and Joses, and Salome (Mk. xv. 40) may be assumed to be among them.

αἵτινες διηκόνουν αὐτοῖς. “Who were of such a character as to minister to them”; i.e. they were persons of substance. For ητίς see on vii. 37, and for διακονεῖν comp. Rom. xv. 25. The αὐτοίς means Jesus and the Twelve, the reading αὐτός (A L M X) being probably a correction from Mt. xxvii. 55; Mk. xv. 41. But αὐτοίς has special point. It was precisely because Jesus now had twelve disciples who always accompanied Him, that there was need of much support from other disciples.
VIII. 3, 4. THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE 217

It is this which distinguishes this passage from Mt. xxvii. 55 and Mk. xv. 41. There the διακονεῖν might refer to mere attendance on Him. We learn from this that neither Jesus nor the Twelve wrought miracles for their own support.

Here, as in xii. 15 and Acts iv. 32, τὰ ὑπάρχοντα has the dat. Everywhere else in Lk. (xi. 21, xii. 33, 44, xiv. 33, xvi. 1, xix. 8) and elsewhere in N.T. (five times) it has the gen. So also in LXX the gen. is the rule, the dat. the exception, if it is the true reading anywhere. Both τὰ ὑπάρχοντα and ὑπάρχειν are favourite expressions with Lk. See on ver. 41.

4–18. The Parable of the Sower. Mt. xiii. 1–23; Mk. iv. 1–20. We have already had several instances of teaching by means of parables (v. 36–39, vi. 39, 41–44, 47–49, vii. 41, 42); but they are brief and incidental. Parables seem now to become more common in Christ's teaching, and also more elaborate. This is intelligible, when we remember the characteristics of parables. They have the double property of revealing and concealing. They open the truth, and impress it upon the minds of those who are ready to receive it: but they do not instruct, though they may impress, the careless (ver. 10). As Bacon says of a parable, "it tends to vail, and it tends to illustrate a truth." As the hostility to His teaching increased, Jesus would be likely to make more use of parables, which would benefit disciples without giving opportunity to His enemies. The parable of the Sower is in some respects chief among the parables, as Christ Himself seems to indicate (Mk. iv. 13). It is one of the three which all three record, the others being the Mustard Seed and the Wicked Husbandmen: and it is one of which we have Christ's own interpretation.

4. Συνέωντος δὲ ὅλου πολλοῦ καὶ τῶν κατὰ πόλιν ἐπιπορευομένων π. αὐτ. The constr. is uncertain, and we have choice of two ways, according as the καὶ is regarded as simply co-ordinating, or as epexegetic. 1. "And when a great multitude was coming together, and they of every city were resorting to Him." 2. "And when a great multitude was coming together, namely, of those who city by city were resorting to Him." According to 2, the multitude consisted wholly of those who were following from different towns (ver. 1). As no town is named, there was perhaps no crowd from the place itself. In any case the imperf. part. should be preserved in translation. It was the growing multitude which caused Him to enter into a boat (Mt. xiii. 2; Mk. iv. 1).

See on xi. 29. Except Tit. i. 5, κατὰ πόλιν is peculiar to Lk.
The expression occurs nowhere else. Mt. and Mk. write ἐν παραβολαῖς λέγειν or λαλεῖν, while Lk. has παραβολὴν εἶπεν or λέγειν. See on iv. 23, v. 36, and vi. 39; and on the parable itself see Gould on Mk. iv. 1 ff.

5. ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων. So in all three accounts: "The sower went forth." The force of the article is "he whose business it is to sow" : he is the representative of a class who habitually have these experiences. Rhem. has "the sower" in all three places, Cran. in Mt. and Mk., Cov. in Mt. For the pres. part. with the article used as a substantive comp. iii. 11, v. 31, vi. 29, 30, 32, ix. 11, x. 16, etc. There is solemnity in the repetition, ὁ σπείρων τοῦ σπείραι τὸν σπόρον. The comparison of teaching with sowing is frequent in all literature; but it is possible that Jesus here applies what was going on before their eyes. See the vivid description of a startling coincidence with the parable in Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 425.

ἐν τῷ σπείρων αὐτόν. "During his sowing, while he sowed": αὐτόν is subj., not obj., and refers to ὁ σπείρων, not τὸν σπόρον. See on iii. 21. Note the graphic change of prepositions: παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν (ver. 5), ἐπὶ τὴν πέτραν (ver. 6), ἐν μέσῳ (ver. 7), εἰς τὴν γῆν (ver. 8). In this verse Lk. has three features which are wanting in Mt. and Mk.: τὸν σπόρον, καὶ κατεπατήθη, and τοῦ ὀφρανοῦ.

παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν. Not "along the way," but "by the side of the way." It fell on the field, but so close to the road that it was trampled on.

Both Lk. and Mk. here have μὲν followed by καὶ: ὁ μὲν ... καὶ ἐπέραν, Comp. Mk. ix. 12. The absence of ἐκ after μὲν is freq. in Acts, Pauline Epp., and Heb. See Blass, Gr. p. 261.

6. ἐπὶ τὴν πέτραν. The rock had a slight covering of soil; and hence is called τῇ πετράδες (Mk.) and τῇ πετρώδῃ (Mt.), which does not mean "stony ground," i.e. full of stones, but "rocky ground," i.e. with rock appearing at intervals and with "no depth of earth." The thinness of the soil would cause rapid germination and rapid withering; but Lk. omits the rapid growth. With φυέν comp. Prov. xxvi. 9; Exod. x. 5; and (for the constr.) Lk. ii. 4. For ἰχμάδα, "moisture," Mt. and Mk. have πέταν. The word occurs Jer. xvii. 8; Job xxvi. 14; Jos. Ant. iii. 1. 3; but nowhere else in N.T.

7. ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἀκανθῶν. The result of the falling was that it was in the midst of the thorns: prep. of rest after a verb of motion: comp. vii. 17. Lk. is fond of ἐν μέσῳ (ii. 46, x. 3, xxi?
THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

21, xxii. 27, 55, xxiv. 36; Acts i. 15, etc.). Elsewhere it is rare, except in Rev. Neither Mt. nor Mk. have it here.

Here only in N.T. In LXX only Wisd. xiii. 13. In Plato and Aristotle it is transitive: "cause to grow together." We are to understand that the good seed fell into ground where young thorns were growing; otherwise the growing together would hardly be possible. Indeed the ἀνέβησαν αἱ ἄκανθαι of Mt. and Mk. almost implies that the thorns were not yet visible, when the good seed was sown in the midst of them. The ἀπέπνευσαν means "choked it off," so as to exterminate it: comp. the ἀπό in ἀποκτείνω. Wic. has "strangliden it"; but that, though sufficient for suffocaverunt (Vulg.), does not express the ἀπό. The verb occurs only here and ver. 33 in N.T., and in LXX only in Nah. ii. 12 and Tobit iii. 8. Mt. xiii. 7 is doubtful.

Not merely upon, but into the soil. The double article in all three accounts presents the soil and its goodness as two separate ideas: "the ground (that was intended for it), the good (ground)." Mt. and Mk. have καλὴν. This repetition of the article is specially frequent in Jn. Lk. omits the sixty- and thirtyfold. Isaac is said to have reaped a hundredfold (Gen. xxvi. 12). Hdt. (i. 193· 4) states that in the plain of Babylon returns of two hundred- and even three hundredfold, were obtained. Strabo (xvi. p. 1054) says much the same, but is perhaps only following Hdt. See Wetst. on Mt. xiii. 8 for abundant evidence of very large returns.

This formula occurs in all three. Comp. xiv. 35; Mt. xi. 15, xiii. 43. In Rev. we have the sing., δὲ ἔχων oὸς ἄκοιντατω (ii. 7, 11, 17, 29, iii. 6, 13, 22). The introductory φωνεῖ, "He cried aloud," indicates a raising of the voice, and gives a solemnity to this concluding charge. The imperf. perhaps means that the charge was repeated. Comp. Ezek. iii. 27; Hom. II. xv. 129.

"What this parable might be in meaning." See small print on i. 29. Mt. says that the disciples asked why He spoke to the multitude in parables. Christ answers both questions. For ἐπηρῴων see on iii. 10.

"Those who are outside the circle of Christ's disciples"; ἐκεῖνος τοὶς ἔχω, as Mk. has it. This implies that it is disciples generally, and not the Twelve only, who are being addressed. Mt. is here the fullest of the three, giving the passage from Is. vi. 9, 10 in full. Lk. is very brief.

At first sight it might seem as if the ἵνα of Lk. and Mk. was very different from the ὅτα of Mt. But the principle that he who hath shall receive more, while he who hath not shall be deprived of what he seemeth to have, explains both the ἵνα and the ὅτα. Jesus speaks in parables,
because the multitude see without seeing and hear without hearing. But He also speaks in parables in order that they may see without seeing and hear without hearing. They “have not” a mind to welcome instruction, and therefore they are taught in a way which deprives them of instruction, although it is full of meaning to those who desire to understand and do understand. But what the unsympathetic “hear without understanding” they remember, because of its impressive form; and whenever their minds become fitted for it, its meaning will become manifest to them.

WH. write σύνωσιν, from the unused συνω, while other editors prefer συνώσιν, from συνησίον or the unused συνήσω. Similarly WH. have συνώσις (Mt. xiii. 13), where others give συνώσουν. II. App. p. 167. Here some authorities have συνώσις, as in LXX.

11. Having answered the question διατέλεσαν παραβολαίς λέγεις; Jesus now answers τίς ἐστιν ἄυτή αὕτη παραβολή; To the disciples “who have” the one thing needful “more is given.” The similarity between the seed and the word lies specially in the vital power which it secretly contains. Comp. “Behold I sow My law in you, and it shall bring fruit in you, and ye shall be glorified in it for ever. But our fathers, which received the law, kept it not, and observed not the statutes: and the fruit of the law did not perish, neither could it, for it was Thine; yet they that received it perished, because they kept not the thing that was sown in them” (2 Esdr. ix. 31-33).

ο λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ. Mt. never (?) xv. 6) has this phrase; it occurs only once in Mk. (vii. 13) and once in Jn. (x. 35). Lk. has it four times in the Gospel (v. 1, viii. 11, 21, xi. 28) and twelve times in the Acts. Here Mk. has τὸν λόγον (iv. 15) and Mt. has nothing (xiii. 18). So in ver. 21, where Lk. has τὸν λ. τοῦ Θ., Mk. has τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Θ. (iii. 35) and Mt. τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρός (xii. 50). Does it mean “the word which comes from God” or “the word which tells of God”? Probably the former. Comp. the O.T. formula “The word of the Lord came to.” The gen. is subjective. Lft. Epp. of S. Paul, p. 15.

12. οἱ δὲ παρὰ τὴν ὅδον. There is no need to understand σπαράντες, as is clear from Mk. iv. 15. “Those by the wayside” is just as intelligible as “Those who received seed by the wayside.”

cίτα ἔρχεται ὁ διάβολος. Much more vivid than “And the birds are the devil.” This is Christ’s own interpretation of the birds, and it is strong evidence for the existence of a personal devil. Why did not Jesus explain the birds as meaning impersonal temptations? He seems pointedly to insist upon a personal adversary. See on x. 18. Mt. has ὁ ποιητός, Mk. ὁ σατανᾶς. The concluding words are peculiar to Lk.: “in order that they may not by believing be saved.” Perhaps a sign of Pauline influence.
18. The constr. is ambiguous. In vv. 12, 14, 15 εὐαγγελία is expressed, and it is usually understood here: "And those on the rock are they which, when they have heard, receive the word with joy; and these have no root." But it is not necessary to insert the εὐαγγελία. We may continue the protasis to τῷ λόγῳ and make καὶ mean also: "And those on the rock, which, when they have heard, receive the word with joy,—these also (as well as those by the wayside) have no root." Thus οἵτωσιν exactly corresponds to οὕτως εὐαγγελία in vv. 14, 15. But the usual arrangement is better. The οὗτοι ποιεῖτε οὐσίαν is a further explanation of οὕτως. Neither Mt. nor Mk. has οὕτως, of which Lk. is fond (ii. 28, ix. 5, 48, 53, x. 8, 10, xvi. 4, 6, 7, 9, etc.). It implies the internal acceptance; whereas λαμβάνειν implies no more than the external reception.

ἐν καρπῷ πειρασμὸν ἀφίστανται. Mt. and Mk. have θλίψεως ἡ διωγμοῦ, which shows that the temptation of persecution and external suffering is specially meant: comp. Jas. i. 2. In all times of moral and spiritual revival persons who are won easily at first, but apostatize under pressure, are likely to form a large portion: comp. Heb. iii. 12. The verb does not occur in Mt. Mk. or Jn. The repetition of καρπός is impressive. As opportunity commonly lasts only for a short time, καρπός may mean "a short time."

14. τὸ δὲ εἰς τὰς ἀκάνθας πεσόν. It is not probable that this is an acc. abs.: "Now as regards that which fell among the thorns." The attraction of οὕτως (for οὕτω) to οὗτοι ἀκούσαντες is quite intelligible.

ὅτῳ μεριμνῶν καὶ πλούτου καὶ ἡδονῶν τοῦ βίου. It is usual to take this after συμπνίγονται; and this is probably correct: yet Weiss would follow Luther and others and join it with πορευόμενον, "going on their way under the influence of cares," etc. But ver. 7 is against this: the cares, etc., are the thorns, and it is the thorns which choke. This does not reduce πορευόμενον to a gehaltloser Zusatz. The choking is not a sudden process, like the trampling and devouring; nor a rapid process, like the withering: it takes time. It is as they go on their way through life, and before they have reached the goal, that the choking of the good growth takes place. Therefore they never do reach the goal. The transfer of what is true of the growing seed to those in whose heart it is sown is not difficult; and συμπνίγονται is clearly passive, not middle and transitive. The thorns choke the seed (ver. 7); these hearers are choked by the cares, etc. (ver. 14). Here only in N.T. does τελεφορεῖν occur. It is used of animals as well as of plants (4 Mac. xiii. 20; Ps. lxiv. 10, Sym.).

15. τὸ δὲ εἰς τὴν καλὰ γῆν, κ.τ.λ. It fell into the good ground (ver. 8), and it is in the right ground. Perhaps οἰκίνεις has its full meaning: "who are of such a character as to," etc. The two epithets used of the ground, ἀγαθὴ in ver. 8 and καλὴ in ver. 15, are combined for καρδία: "in a right and good heart." We must take ἐν καρδίᾳ with κατέχουσι rather than with ἀκούσαντες. Even if ἀκούσαντες be interpreted to mean "hearing gladly, welcoming," it
is not the same as κατέχειν, which means "hold fast" (1 Cor. xi. 2). It is reasonable to suppose that ἀκούειν means the same in all four cases (12, 13, 14, 15). But κατέχουσιν (Lk.), παραδέχονται (Mk. iv. 20), and συνιάζω (Mt. xiii. 23) may all be equivalents of the same Aramaic verb, meaning "to take in": see footnote on v. 21. Comp. 1 Cor. xv. 2; 1 Thes. v. 21.

ἐν δύναμιν. "With endurance, perseverance," rather than "patience," which would be μακροθυμία: in patientia (Vulg.), in tolerantia (c), in sufferentia (d), per patientiam (b f f g). See Lft. on Col. i. 11; Trench, Syn. liii. This ὑπομονή is the opposite of ἀφιστανταί (ver. 13), and is not in Mt. or Mk. Thus Lk. gives the opposite of all three of the bad classes: κατέχουσιν, non ut in via; καπνοφορόντων, non ut in spinis; ἐν ὑπομονῇ, non ut in petroso (Beng.). Neither here nor in ver. 8 does Lk. give the degrees of fruitfulness. Mt. and Mk. do so both in the parable and in the interpretation. The suggestion that Lk. has mistaken three numerals for a word which he translates ἐν ὑπομονῇ seems to be a little too ingenious (Expositor, Nov. 1891, p. 381). That Jesus knew that all four of the classes noticed in the parable were to be found in the audience before Him, is probable enough; but we have no means of knowing it. We may safely identify the Eleven and the ministering women with the fourth class. Judas is an instance of the third. But all are warned that the mere receiving of the word is not decisive. Everything depends upon how it is received and how it is retained. Grotius quotes from the Magna Moralia: ὃ τὰ ἀγαθὰ πάντα δύνατα ἀγαθὰ ἔστω, καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦτων μὴ διαφθείρεται, σὺν ὑπὸ πλούτου καὶ ἀρχῆς, οὐ τοῦτος καλὸς καὶ ἀγαθός.

16-18. Practical Inference. The connexion with what precedes need not be doubted. By answering the question of the disciples (ver. 9) and explaining the parable to them, Jesus had kindled a light within them. They must not hide it, but must see that it spreads to others. Here we have the opposite of what was noticed in the Sermon on the Mount. Here Lk. has gathered into one, sayings which Mt. has, scattered in three different places (v. 15, x. 26, xiii. 12: comp. xiii. 12, xxv. 29). Mk. and Lk. are here very similar and consecutive. Comp. xii. 33-36.

16. λύχνον ἀφας καλύπτει αὐτὸν σκέψει. "Having lighted a lamp," rather than "a candle." Trench, Syn. xlvi.; Becker, Charides, iii. 86, Eng. tr. p. 130; Gallus, ii. 398, Eng. tr. p. 308. For ἀφας see on xv. 8: it occurs again xi. 33, but not in the parallels Mt. v. 15; Mk. iv. 21. Instead of σκέψει Mt. and Mk. have the more definite ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον, which Lk. has xi. 33. As
VIII. 16-18.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

Κύριος is a “lamp,” λυχνία is a “lamp-stand,” on which several λύχνιοι might be placed or hung: for, whereas the λαμπάτηρ was fixed, the λύχνιος was portable. Other forms of λυχνία are λυχνίων and λυχνιέων (Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 40). Comp. the very similar passage xi. 33. In both passages οἱ εἰσπροενόμενοι, the Gentiles, are mentioned instead of οἱ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ, the Jews (Mt. v. 15).

17. The poetic rhythm and parallelism should be noticed. Somewhat similar sayings are found in profane writers: δέκα διὰ πρῶτος φῶς τὴν ἀληθείαν χρόνος (Menander); comp. Soph. Ajax, 646, and Wetst. on Mt. x. 26. For φανερόν γενήσεται see on iv. 36; Mt has ἀποκαλυφθήσεται, Mk. φανερωθῇ. For ἀπόκρυφον, “hidden away” from the public eye, see Lft. on Col. ii. 3. It was a favourite word with the Gnostics to indicate their esoteric books, which might not be published. Comp. the very similar passage xii. 2; and see S. Cox in the Expositor, 2nd series, i. pp. 186, 372, and Schanz, ad loc.

18. θέσητε οὖν πῶς ἀκούστε. Because the doctrine received must be handed on and made known to all, therefore it is all-important that it should be rightly heard, viz. with intelligence and a “good heart” (ver. 15). Whoever gives a welcome to the word and appropriates it, becomes worthy and capable of receiving more. But by not appropriating truth when we recognize it, we lose our hold of it, and have less power of recognizing it in the future. There is little doubt that δόκει εἴπερ means “that which he thinketh he hath.” Wic. has “weneth”; Tyn. and Cran. “supposeth”; Cov. and Rhem. “thinketh.” “Seemeth” comes from Beza’s videtur. It is self-deception that is meant. Those who received the seed by the wayside were in this condition; they failed to appropriate it, and lost it. Comp. xix. 26.

Mk. here inserts (iv. 24) the ἵπτομεν μετρεῖτε, κ.τ.λ., which Lk. has already given in the sermon (vi. 38): and both Mt. and Mk. here add other parables, two of which Lk. gives later (xiii. 18-21).

19-21. The Visit of His Mother and His Brethren. Christ’s true Relations. Mt. (xii. 46-50) and Mk. (iii. 31-35) place this incident before the parable of the Sower; but none of the three state which preceded in order of time. Comp. xi. 27, 28, and see on xi. 29. On the “Brethren of the Lord” see Lange, Leben Jesu, ii. 2, § 13, Eng. tr. i. p. 329; Lft. Galatians, pp. 253-291, in his Dissertations on the Apostolic Age, pp. 3-45, Macmillan, 1892; J. B. Mayor, Epistle of S. James, pp. v—xxxvi, Macmillan, 1892. D.B. artt. “Brother”; “James”; “Judas, the Lord’s Brother.”

1 The work as a whole, and the dissertation on this question in particular, deserve special commendation.
19. Παραγένητο δὲ πρὸς αὐτὸν ἡ μήτηρ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτοῦ. For the verb, which is a favourite with Lk., see on vii. 4. Here Mk. has ἔρχονται and Mt. ἰδοῦ. In writing the sing. Lk. is thinking only of ἡ μήτηρ. Such constructions are common, and do not imply that the first in the series of nominatives was emphatic or specially prominent, except in the writer's thoughts. Comp. Jn. xviii. 15, xx. 3; Acts xxvi. 30; Phil. 23.

The precise relationship to be understood from the expression οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτοῦ will probably never be determined or cease to be discussed. There is nothing in Scripture to warn us from what is the antecedently natural view that they are the children of Joseph and Mary, unless "I know not a man" (i. 34) is interpreted as implying a vow of perpetual virginity. The "firstborn" in ii. 7 and the imperfect followed by "till" in Mt. i. 25, seem to imply that Joseph and Mary had children; which is confirmed by contemporary belief (Mk. vi. 3; Mt. xiii. 55) and by the constant attendance of the ἀδελφοὶ on the Mother of the Lord (Mt. xii. 46; Mk. iii. 32; Jn. ii. 12). The Epiphanian theory, which gives Joseph children older than Jesus by a former wife, deprives Him of His rights as the heir of Joseph and of the house of David. It seems to be of apocryphal origin (Gospel according to Peter, or Book of James); and, like Jerome's theory of cousinship, to have been invented in the interests of asceticism and of à priori convictions respecting the perpetual virginity of Mary. Tertullian, in dealing with this passage, seems to assume as a matter of course that the ἀδελφοὶ are the children of Mary, and that she and they were here censured by Christ (Marcion. iv. 19; De Carne Christi, vii.). He knows nothing of the doctrine of a sinless Virgin. Renan conjectures that James, Joses, Simon, and Judas were the cousins of Jesus, but that the brethren who refused to believe in Him were His real brethren (V. de J. p. 23). This solution remains entirely his own, for it creates more difficulties than it solves. See Expositor's Bible, James and Jude, ch. iii., Hodder, 1891.

αὐτοῖς. Elsewhere in bibl. Grk. 2 Mac. viii. 14 only.

20. ἀπηγγέλη. A favourite word (vv. 34, 36, 47, vii. 18, 22, ix. 36, xiii. 1, etc.). Here [Mt.] has εἶπεν δὲ τις and Mk. has λέγουσιν. The λέγουσιν is certainly spurious: om. NBD Λ Δ Ε, Latt. Goth. etc.

21. μήτηρ μου καὶ ἀδελφοὶ μου. Note the absence of the article in all three accounts. This is the predicate, and οὗτοι, κ.τ.λ., is the subject. And the meaning is not are "My actual mother or brethren," which would be ἡ μήτηρ μου καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ μου, but "Mother to Me and brethren to Me," i.e. equal to such, equally dear. Mt. and Mk. have the singular here: οὗτοι οὐκ αὐτῶν μου ἀδελφος καὶ ἀδελφή καὶ μήτηρ ἑστίν. We cannot infer from καὶ
that His sisters were present: they had settled at Nazareth (Mt. xiii. 56; Mk. vi. 3). The texts of Mk. iii. 32, which represent the multitude as telling Jesus that His sisters are with His Mother and brethren, are probably the result of this inference. A D and some Latin authorities insert “and Thy sisters”; B C G K L and most Versions omit the words. Christ’s reply is not a denial of the claims of family ties, nor does it necessarily imply any censure on His Mother and brethren. It asserts that there are far stronger and higher claims. Family ties at the best are temporal; spiritual ties are eternal. Moreover, the closest blood-relationship to the Messiah constitutes no claim to admission into the Kingdom of God. No one becomes a child of God in virtue of human parentage (Jn. i. 13). Jesus does not say πατήρ μον, not merely because Joseph was not present, but because in the spiritual sense that relationship to Christ is filled by God alone. See on ver. 11.

22-25. The Stilling of the Tempest on the Lake of Gennesaret. This is the first of a pair of miracles which appear in the same order in all three Gospels (Mt. viii. 23 ff.; Mk. iv. 35 ff.), the second being the healing of the demoniacs in the country of the Gadarenes. To these two Mk. and Lk. add the healing of the woman with the issue and the raising of the daughter of Jairus, which Mt. places somewhat later. The full series gives us a group of representative miracles exhibiting Christ’s power over the forces of nature and the powers of hell, over disease and over death.

22. Ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν καὶ αὐτὸς. All these expressions are characteristic, and exhibit Aramaic influence. See note at the end of ch. i., and comp. v. 1, 12, 17, vi. 12. There is nothing like them in Mk. iv. 35 or Mt. viii. 23, and ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν is peculiar to Lk. (v. 17, xx. 1). Comp. ἐν μιᾷ τῶν πόλεων (v. 12) and ἐν μιᾷ τῶν συναγωγῶν (xiii. 10). Mt. tells us that it was the sight of the multitudes around Him that moved Jesus to order a departure to the other side of the lake; and Mk. says that the disciples “leaving the multitude, take Him with them, even as He was in the boat.” This seems to imply that He was utterly tired, overcome by the demands which the multitude made upon Him. For διέλθωμεν see on ii. 15. The nautical expression ἀναγέσθαι is freq. in Lk. and peculiar to him (Acts xiii. 13, xvi. 11, xviii. 21, xx. 3, 13, xxi. 2, xxvii. 2, 4, 12, 21, xxviii. 10, 11). Syr-Sin. omits καὶ ἀνεκθησαν.

23. πλέοντων δὲ αὐτῶν ἀφύπνωσεν. Excepting Rev. xviii. 17, πλέειν is peculiar to Lk. (Acts xxi. 3, xxvii. 2, 6, 24). In Anth. Pal. 9. 517, ἀφύπνωσεν means “awaken from sleep.” Here it means “fall off to sleep,” a use which seems to be medical and late (Heliod. ix. 12). In class. Grk. we should rather have καθυπνῶ.
226 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [VIII. 23–25.

(Lob. Phryn. p. 224). This is the only passage in which we read of Jesus sleeping.

κατέβη λαῖλαβ ἀνέμου. ‘There came down a violent squall of wind,’ from the heights which surround the lake. These are furrowed with ravines like funnels, down which winds rush with great velocity. See Thomson, Land & Book, p. 375; Keim, iv. p. 179, who quotes Rusegger, Reisen, iii. p. 136. For λαῖλαβ comp. Job xxi. 18, xxxvii. 1; Wisd. v. 14, 23; Ecclus. xlviii. 9; Hom. II. xii. 375, xvii. 57. Mt. gives the effect of it as σεσμῶς μέγας ἐν τῷ θαλάσσῃ. For the accent comp. καλαύροψ, κλίμαξ, κ.τ.λ., and see Chandler, § 668.

συνεπληρώτω. The verb occurs only here, ix. 51, and Acts ii. 1. Note the imperf. in contrast to κατέβη. The squall came down with a single rush; the filling of the boat continued and was not completed. What was true of the boat is stated of the crew. In class. Grk. the act. is used of manning ships thoroughly (Thuc. vi. 50. 2).

24. Ἐπιστάτη, ἐπιστάτη. See on v. 5. The doubling of the name is here peculiar to Lk. Comp. x. 41, xxii. 31; Acts ix. 4, xxii. 7, xxvii. 14. Mt. has Κύριε, Mk. Διδάσκαλε. Augustine has some good remarks as to the differences between the exclamations attributed to the disciples in the three narratives. ‘There is no need to inquire which of these exclamations was really uttered. For whether they uttered some one of these three, or other words which no one of the Evangelists has recorded, yet conveying the same sense, what does it matter?’ (De Cons. Evang. ii. 24, 25).

ἔπειτα μιροτynthesis τῷ ἀνέμῳ καὶ τῷ κλίδωνι. This does not prove that Lk. regarded the storm as a personal agent: both the wind and its effect are ‘rebuked,’ a word which represents the disciples’ view of the action. See on iv. 39. Α κλίδων (κλύδευν, ‘wash against’) is larger than α κύμα (Jas. i. 6; Jon. i. 4, 12; Wisd. xiv. 5; 1 Mac. vi. 11; 4 Mac. vii. 5, xv. 31).

γάλην. Mt. and Mk. add μεγάλη: the word is common elsewhere, but in N.T. occurs only in this narrative. The sudden calm in the sea showed the reality of the miracle. Wind may cease suddenly, but the water which it has agitated continues to work for a long time afterwards. In Mk., as here, the stilling of the tempest precedes the rebuke: Mt. transposes the order of the two incidents. In both the rebuke is sharper than in Lk., who ‘ever spares the Twelve’ (Schanz). See on vi. 13 and xxii. 45.

25. Ποῦ ἐ στις ὄμων; They might have been sure that the Messiah would not perish, and that their prayer for help would be answered. It is not their praying for succour that is blamed, but their want of faith in the result of their prayer: they feared that their prayer would be vain. Comp. His parents’ anguish, and see on ii. 48. τίς ἄρα οὐδός ἐστιν; Mt. has ποταμός. There is nothing in-
credible in the question. Their ideas of the Christ and His powers were very imperfect; and this was probably the first time that they had seen Him controlling the forces of nature. Their experience as fishermen told them how impossible it was in the natural course that such a storm should be followed immediately by a great calm. The fear which accompanies this question or exclamation is not that which the storm produced, but that which was caused by a sudden recognition of the presence of supernatural power of a kind that was new to them. Comp. v. 26, vii. 16. For the ἄρα comp. xxii. 23; Acts xii. 18.

One conjectures that the framer of a legend would have made the disciples accept the miracle as a matter of course: comp. v. 8, 9. Keim opposes Strauss for rejecting the whole as a myth, although he himself by no means accepts the whole as historical. "Unquestionably there rests upon this brief and pregnant narrative a rare majesty, such as does not reappear in the other nature-miracles. With a few masterly strokes there is here sketched a most sublime picture from the life of Jesus, and a picture full of truth. . . . Even His rising up against weather and sea is told by Mt. and Lk. quite simply, without any ostentation; and the tentative query of the disciples, after their deliverance was accomplished, Who is this? is the slightest possible, the only too modest and yet the true utterance of the impression which they must at that time have received" (Jes. of Naz. iv. p. 180). See Gould on Mk. iv. 41.


Gerasenes seems to be the true reading both here and Mk. v. 1, while Gadarenes is best attested Mt. viii. 28; but in all three places the authorities vary between Gerasenes, Gadarenes, and Gergesenes. The evidence here is thus summarized—

Γαδαρηνῶν, A R ␠Δ ΑΠ etc., Syrr. (Cur-Pesh-Sin-Harcl txt) Goth.  
Γερσανηνῶν, B C* (ver. 37, hiat ver. 26) D, Latt. Syr-Harcl mg.  
Γεργεσηνῶν, Ν L X Ξ minusc. sex, Syr-Hier. Boh. Arm. Aeth. See WH. ii. App. p. 11. If Lk. viii. 26 stood alone, one might adopt Γεργεσηνῶν as possibly correct there; but the evidence in ver. 37 is conclusive against it.

These Gerasenes are probably not the people of the Gerasa which lay on the extreme eastern frontier of Perea, over thirty miles from the lake: even in a loose description to foreigners Lk. would not be likely to speak of the shore of the lake as in the country of these Gerasenes. Rather we may understand the town which Thomson rediscovered (Land & Book, ii. 34-38) under the name of Gersa or Kersa on the steep eastern bank. Gergesa is merely a conjecture of Origen, adopted upon topographical grounds and not upon textual evidence. It may be rejected in all three narratives. There is no real difficulty of topography, whichever reading be adopted. The expression τὴν χώραν τῶν Γ. gives considerable latitude, and may include a great deal more than the immediate vicinity of the town. Nor is there any difficulty in the fact that Mt. knows of two demoniacs,
whereas Lk. and Mk. mention only one. The real difficulties in
the miracle, for those who believe in the fact of demoniacal
possession, are connected with the swine. 1. Can beings which
are purely spiritual enter and influence beings which are purely
animal? 2. How can we justify the destruction of the swine,
which were innocent creatures, and which belonged to persons
who do not seem to have merited such a heavy loss?

On the first of these two questions our ignorance is so great
that we do not even know whether there is a difficulty. Who can
explain how mind acts upon matter, or matter upon mind? Yet
the fact is as certain, as that mind acts upon mind or that matter
acts upon matter. There is nothing in experience to forbid us
from believing that evil spirits could act upon brute beasts; and
science admits that it has “no à priori objection to offer” to such
an hypothesis. And if there is no scientific objection to demoniacal
possession of brutes, à fortiori there is none to that of men,
seeing that men have both bodies and spirits to be influenced.
The influence may have been analogous to that of mesmerism or
hynotism. The real difficulty is the moral one. As Huxley puts
it, “the wanton destruction of other people’s property is a mis­
demeanour of evil example.” The answers are very various.
1. The whole story is a myth. 2. The healing of the demoniacs
and the repulse of the Healer by the inhabitants are historical, but
the incident of the swine is a later figment. 3. The demoniacs
frightened the swine, and the transfer of demons from them to the
swine was imagined. 4. The drowning of the swine was an
accident, possibly simultaneous with the healing, and report mixed
up the two incidents. 5. The demoniacs were mere maniacs,
whom Jesus cured by humouring their fancies; and His giving
leave to imaginary demons to enter into the swine, produced the
story of the disaster to the herd.—All these explanations assume
that the Gospel narratives are wholly or in part unhistorical. But
there are other explanations.—6. Like earthquakes, shipwrecks,
pestilences, and the like, the destruction of the swine is part of the
mystery of evil, and insoluble. 7. As the Creator of the universe,
the incarnate Word had the right to do what He pleased with His
own. 8. A visible effect of the departure of the demons was
necessary to convince the demoniacs and their neighbours of the
completeness of the cure. Brutes and private property may be
sacrificed, where the sanity and lives of persons are concerned.
9. The keepers of the swine were Jews, who were breaking the
Jewish law, which was binding on them, and perhaps on the whole
district. “In the enforcement of a law which bound the con­
science, our Lord had an authority such as does not belong to the
private individual” (W. E. Gladstone, Nineteenth Century, Feb.
1891, p. 357). Against this it is contended that the swineherds
were probably pagans, and that the district was not under Jewish law (N. C. Dec. 1890, p. 967; March 1891, p. 455). Certainty is not attainable, but it is probable that one of the last two reasons is the true explanation. See Expositor, 3rd series, 1889, ix. 303. Godet's conclusion seems to be sound, that it is one of those cases in which the power to execute the sentence guarantees the right of the judge.\(^1\) Contrast the healing of a demoniac woman as recorded in the Gospel of the Infancy, xiv.

28. κατέπλευσαν εἰς τὴν χώραν τῶν Γερασηνῶν ἣτις ἐστὶν ἀντίπερα. "They landed at the country of the Gerasenes, which is in such a position as to be opposite Galilee." The verb is quite class. of coming to land from the high seas, but is found here only in N.T. Not in LXX. See Smith, Voyage and Shipwreck of S. Paul, p. 28, and reff. in Wetst. The statement tells us nothing as to the position of the country of the Gerasenes, for "opposite" would apply to the whole of the east shore. Lk. alone mentions its being "opposite Galilee"; perhaps to justify its inclusion in the Galilean ministry.

Some texts have πέραν from Mt. or Mk., while others have ἀντιπέραν, of which ἀντιπέρα is a later form. Another form is ἀντιπέρας. For the accent see Chandler, § 867.

27. ὑπήνησεν ἀνήρ τις ἐκ τῆς πόλεως. The man belonged to the city, but he came out of the tombs to meet Jesus: ἐκ τῆς πόλεως belongs to ἀνήρ τις, not to ὑπήνησεν. For this force of ὑπό in composition comp. ὑποκρίνομαι, "answer back"; ὑπολογίζομαι, "reckon per contra"; ὑποτρέφω, "turn back." For ἰκανόν see on vii. 12; and for ἐνεδόσατο see Burton, § 48. Lk. alone mentions that the demoniac wore no clothes; but Mk. implies it by stating that he was clothed after he was cured. All three mention the tombs; and near the ruins of Khersa there are many tombs hewn in the rocks. Excepting Mk. v. 3, 5 and Rev. xi. 9, μνήμα is peculiar to Lk. (xxiii. 53, xxiv. 1; Acts ii. 29, vii. 16); but he more often uses μνημείον. With ἐμενεν comp. xix. 5, xxiv. 29.

28. Τί ἐμοὶ καὶ σοι; See on iv. 34.

Ἡσοῦς ὑπὲρ τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ υψίστου. This expression rather indicates that the man is not a Jew, and therefore is some evidence that the owners of the swine were not Jews. "The Most High" (Elyon) is a name for Jehovah which seems to be usual among heathen nations. It is employed by Melchisedek, the Canaanite priest and king (Gen. xiv. 20, 22). Balaam uses it (Num. xxiv. 16). Micah puts it into the mouth of Balaam (vi. 6); Isaiah, into the mouth of the king of Babylon (xv. 14). It is used repeatedly in the Babylonian proclamations in Daniel (iii. 26, iv. 24, 32, v. 18, 21,

\(^1\) See some valuable remarks by Sanday in the Contemp. Rev. Sept. 1892, p. 348. He inclines to the second explanation, but with reserve.
vii. 18, 22, 25, 27). The girl with a spirit of divination at Philippi employs it (Acts xvi. 17). It is found in Phcenician inscriptions also. See Chadwick, St. Mark, p. 144, and Wsctt. on Heb. vii. 1. For φωνή μεγάλη see on i. 42, and for δέομαι see on v. 12: with ἀνακράτας of demoniac cries comp. iv. 41; Acts viii. 7.

καὶ με βασιλείας. Neither the verb nor its cognate substantive is ever used in N.T. of testing metals, or of obtaining evidence by torture, but simply of pain or torment. The demoniac identifies himself with the demon which controls him, and the torment which is feared is manifest from ver. 31.

29. παρήγγειλεν γὰρ τῷ πνεύματι. Authorities are very evenly divided between the imperf. and the aor. If παρήγγειλεν be right, it almost means "He had ordered." Burton, § 29, 48. We should have expected τόν πνεύματιν, for both in ver. 27 and ver. 30 we have δαμαῖνα. But the interchange of personality between the man and the demons is so rapid, that it becomes natural to speak of the demons in the sing. Note that while Lk. has his characteristic εἴδε κάθεν ἐπὶ (vv. 33, 38, iv. 35, 41, v. 8, etc.), Mk. has the more usual ἔξεσθένειν ἐκ.

πάλλοις γὰρ χρόνοις συνεργάζεσθαι αὐτόν. "Many times," i.e. on many occasions, multōs temporebus (Vulg.), "it had seized him," or "carried him away": comp. Acts xxvii. 15. Mk. has πάλλαξι. Others explain "within a long time." See Win. xxxi. 9, p. 273. The verb is quite class., but in N.T. peculiar to Lk. (Acts vi. 12, xix. 29, xxvii. 15). Hobart counts it as medical (p. 244). In LXX, Prov. vi. 25; 2 Mac. iii. 27, iv. 41.

ἀλώσειν καὶ πέδαις. Both Lk. and Mk. use these two words to distinguish the "handcuffs and fetters," manicice et pedice, with which he was bound. See Lft. Phil. p. 8. The former is used of the chain by which the hand of a prisoner was fastened to the soldier who had charge of him. Like "chains," ἀλώσεως are of metal, whereas πέδαι might be ropes or withes. Both ἀλώσεως and πέδαι are included in τὰ δεσμάτα. The imperfects tell of what usually took place. During the calmer intervals precautions were taken to prevent the demons "carrying him away with" them; but these precautions always proved futile.

eἰς τὰς ἑρήμους. In order to take the man away from humane influences. But the wilderness is regarded as the home of evil spirits. See on xi. 24; and for the plural see on i. 80.

30. Τί σοι δονυάν ἐστιν; In order to recall the man to a sense of his own independent personality, Jesus asks him his name. It was a primary condition of his cure that he should realize that he is not identical with the evil powers which control his actions. Perhaps also Christ wished the disciples to know the magnitude of the evil, that the cure might increase their faith (ver. 25): and this purpose may have influenced Him in allowing the destruction of the swine. The peculiar word Λεγομένων, which is preserved in Mk.

1 That the man had ever seen a Roman legion, "at once one and many, cruel and inexorable and strong," is perhaps not probable. But see Trench. Miracles, p. 171, 8th ed. For other Latin words comp. x. 35, xi. 33, xix. 20.
v. 9 also, is a mark of authenticity. As Sanday points out, it is more probable that this strange introduction of a Latin word should represent something which really took place, than that it should be pure invention (Contemp. Rev. Sept. 1892, p. 349). The words δτε εἰς ἑλθεν δαίμονα πολλά εἰς αὐτόν are the remark of the Evangelist: comp. ii. 50, iii. 15, xxiii. 12.

31. παρεκάλουν αὐτόν. "They kept beseeching Him." The plurality of those who ask is emphatically marked: with δαίμονα we might have expected παρεκάλει, as in Mk. The plur. would have been less noticeable in Mk., because the masc. plur. πολλοί ἐσμέν, precedes.

That παρεκάλουν (リスト, Contemp. Rev. Sept. 1892, p. 349) and not παρεκάλει is right here, need not be doubted.

eἰς τὴν ἀβυσσον. In class. Grk. ἀβυσσος is always an adj., "bottomless, boundless," and is mostly poetical. In LXX ἄβυσσος is used of the sea (Gen. i. 2, vii. 11; Job xli. 22, 23); without the art. (Job xxviii. 14, xxxvi. 16; Ecclus. 1 3, xvi. 18); of the depths of the earth (Ps. lxiii. 20; Deut. viii. 7); but perhaps nowhere of Hades. In N.T. it means Hades (Rom. x. 7), and esp. the penal part of it which is the abode of demons (Rev. ix. 1-11, xi. 7, xvii. 8, xx. 1, 3). The latter is the meaning here. The demons dread being sent to their place of punishment. See Cremer, Lex. sub v. In Mk. the petition is "that He will not send them out of the country"; but the verb is sing., and the man is the petitioner. He still confuses himself with the demons, and desires to stay where he feels at home. This is their wish and his also. The persistent confusion of personality renders it necessary that the man should have some decisive evidence of the departure of the evil spirits from him. In this way his cure will be effected with least suffering. Prof. Marshall thinks that eἰς τὴν ἀβυσσον and εἶσαι τὰς χώρας may represent Aramaic expressions so nearly alike as readily to be confounded by copyist or translator (Expositor, Nov. 1891, p. 377). See footnote on v. 31.

32. ἀγέλη χοίρων ἰκανῶν. This illustrates the fondness of Lk. for ἰκανός in this sense: Mt. has ἀγ. χοίρων πολλῶν and Mk. ἄγ. χοίρων μεγάλη. With characteristic love of detail Mk. gives the number as ὡς δωρείσθησαν, which may be an exaggeration of the swineherds or of the owners, who wished to make the most of their loss. Had the number been an invention of the narrator, we should have had 4000 or 5000 to correspond with the legion. It is futile to ask whether each animal was possessed. If some of them were set in motion, the rest would follow mechanically. For the ἐπέτρεψεν αὐτοῖς of Lk. and Mk. we have the direct ὑπάγετε in Mt., which need mean no more than "depart, be gone." But the distinction between commanding and allowing what He
might have forbidden is not very helpful. Whatever the motive of
the demons may have been, Jesus uses it for a good end, and
secures the easy and effectual cure of their victim.

33. ὄρμησεν ἡ ἄγελη κατὰ τοῦ κρημνοῦ. These words also are
in all three. The word κρημνὸς need not mean an abrupt pre-
cipice: a steep and rocky slope suffices. MacGregor, Stanley,
Tristram, Wilson, and others believe that the spot which suits the
description can be identified. The art. implies that it was well
known. Comp. 2 Chron. xxv. 12. The use of ἀπενιγή for
suffocation by drowning is classical (Dem. p. 883).

34. τὸ γεγονός. Chiefly the destruction of the swine. In ver.
36 οἱ ἰδόντες means the disciples and others near to Jesus, not the
swineherds.

35-39. Note how the characteristics of Lk.’s diction stand out in these
verses. For τὸν διηθροσοῦν ἀφ’ ὦ τ. δ. ἐξῆλθεν (see on ver. 29) Mk. has τὸν
δαιμονιζόμενον, and παρὰ τοὺς πῦθας (see on vii. 38) has no equivalent in
Mk. For ἀπῆγγειλαν (see on ver. 20) Mk. has δηγήσαντο, while ἀπαν
(see on iii. 21), τὸ πλῆθος (see on i. 10), φῶβος μεγάλῳ (see on i. 42, vii. 16),
συνείχοντο (see on iv. 38), and ἵπποστρεφεν (see on i. 56) have no
equivalents. For εἰδεῖτο (see on v. 12) Mk. has περεκάλεσ; for ὁ ἄνθρωπος
ἀφ’ ὦ ἐξελθόντες (see on ver. 29) Mk. has the less accurate ὁ δαιμονιζόμενος; for
σύν (see on i. 56) Mk. has μετὰ; and for ἵπποστρεφε (see on i. 56) Mk. has
ὑπάγα.

35. ἰματισμένον. Some of the bystanders may have given him
clothing; but there would have been time to fetch it. The verb
is found neither in LXX nor in profane writers, but only here and
Mk. v. 15. The παρὰ τοὺς πῦθας implies an attitude of thankful­
ness rather than that he has become a disciple. It is the last of
the four changes that have taken place in the man. He is
καθῆμενον instead of restless, ἰματισμένον instead of naked, σωφρο­
νόυτα instead of raging, and παρὰ τοὺς πῦθας τοῦ Ἰ. instead of
shunning human society. Baur would have it that he is meant to
represent the conversion of the Gentiles. We are not sure that
he was a Gentile; and this would have been made clear if he was
intended as a representative. For παρὰ with the acc. after a verb
of rest comp. Acts x. 6; Mt. xiii. 1, xx. 39; Mk. v. 21, x. 46.

36. ἀπῆγγειλαν ὅ ἀὐτοῖς. This is not a repetition of ver. 34,
but a statement of additional information which was given to the
townspeople after they arrived on the scene.

37. ἤπαν τὸ πλῆθος. The desire that He should depart was
universal, and all three narratives mention it. The people feared
that His miraculous power might lead to further losses: and this
feeling was not confined to the inhabitants of the πῶλις close at
hand (ver. 34); it was shared by the whole district. Comp. iv. 29,
x. 53, and contrast iv. 42; Jn. iv. 40. Although Keim rejects
the incident of the swine, yet he rightly contends that this request
that Jesus should leave the place gives the impression of a sober
historical fact. There is nothing like it elsewhere in the history
of Jesus; and neither it nor the locality is likely to have been
invented. Why should a myth take Jesus across to Gerasa?
Some historical connexion with the locality is much more
probable. Here, as in vv. 30, 36, Syr-Sin. abbreviates.

38. ἐδεῖτο δὲ αὐτῷ ὁ ἄνηρ. The δὲ marks the contrast between
Him and the rest. Mk. says that the request was made as Jesus
was stepping into the boat. Mt. omits the whole incident. The
man fears the unfriendly populace, and clings to his preserver.

39. διηγοῦ δόσα σοι ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεὸς. In Galilee and Judaea,
where Jesus and His disciples preached, He commonly told those
who were healed to be silent about their cures. In this half-
heathen Peræa there were no other missionaries, and the man was
not fitted for permanent work with Christ elsewhere. Moreover,
here there was no danger of the miracle being used for political
purposes. Lastly, it might be beneficial to a healed demoniac to
have free converse with all after his gloomy isolation. The ὁ Θεὸς
is last with emphasis. Jesus shows the man that he must attribute
his deliverance to God. Both Lk. and Mk. preserve the highly
natural touch that, in spite of this command, the man proclaimed
what Jesus had done for him. Note also that καθ' ἀληθεῖα τὴν πόλιν
is much in excess of εἰς τὸν οἶκον σου, and κηρύσσων of διηγοῦ. See
on ix. 10.

καθ' ἀληθ. τὴν πόλιν. With κηρύσσων, not with ἀπελευθ. : Win. xlix. d.
a, p. 499. Mk. has ἐν τῇ Δεκαπόλει. Nowhere else in N.T. does καθ'
ἀληθ. occur : Lk. commonly writes καθ' ἀληθ. (iv. 14, xxiii. 5; Acts ix. 31, 42,
x. 37). He nowhere mentions Decapolis.

40–56. The Healing of the Woman with the Issue and the
Raising of the Daughter of Jairus. Mt. ix. 18–26; Mk. v. 21–43.
The name of Bernice (Veronica) for this woman first appears in
the statues, which Eusebius saw at Cæsarea, and which he believed
to represent Christ and this woman, see H. E. vii. 18. 1–3.
Sozomen says that Julian removed the statue of Christ and sub-
stituted one of himself, which was broken by a thunderbolt (v. 21).
Philostorgius says the same (vii. 3). Malalas gives the petition
in which the woman asked Herod Antipas to be allowed to erect
the memorial (Chrongr. x. 306–8). That the statues existed, and
that Christians thus misinterpreted their meaning, need not be
doubted. Pseudo-Ambrosius would have it that the woman was
Martha the sister of Lazarus.

40–48. In these verses also the marks of Lk.'s style are very conspicuous
(see above on vv. 35–39). In ver. 40 we have ἐν δὲ τῷ c. infin. (see on iii. 21),
ὑποτρέφειν (see on i. 56), ἀπεδέχατο (see on ver. 40), ἥσαν c. particip.
(see on i. 10), πάντες (see on ix. 43), and προσδοκώντες (see on iii. 15). In
40. ἀπεδέξατο. Peculiar to Lk. (ix. 11; Acts ii. 41, xviii. 27, xxi. 17, xxiv. 3, xxviii. 30, and possibly xv. 4). The meaning is they “received Him with pleasure, welcomed Him” (Euthym. Theophyl. Schanz). See on iv. 42 and on xi. 29. In class. Grk. the verb means “accept as a teacher, as an authority,” or “admit arguments as valid”: so in Xen. Plat. Arist. etc.

41. ἰδείρος. The same name as Jair (Num. xxxii. 41; Judg. x. 3). It is strange that the name (= “he will give light”) should be used as an argument against the historical character of the narrative. It is not very appropriate to the circumstances.

42. λοφογενής. As in the cases of the widow’s son and the lunatic boy (vii. 12, ix. 38), this fact may have influenced Christ. On all three occasions Lk. alone mentions the fact.

43. οὐδὲν. A critical time in a girl’s life. Not only Lk., who frequently notes such things (ii. 36, 37, 42, iii. 23, xiii. 11), but Mk. also gives the age. All three mention that the woman with the issue had been suffering for twelve years. For ἀπεθανοῦσα Mk. has ἐσχάτως ἔχει and Mt. ἀρτι ἐπελεύσθη. The reason for the difference between Mt. and the others is plain. Lk. and Mk. give the arrivals, both of the father, who says, “She is dying,” and of the messenger, who says, “She is dead.” Mt. condenses the two into one.

44. οὗτος ἐν δύσει. “Being in a condition of hemorrhage.” The constr. is quite simple and intelligible; comp. ἐν φθορᾷ, ἐν ἐκκατάσει, ἐν δίνῃ, ἐν ἐκπέλειᾳ, ἐν ἐχθρᾷ. The form ὁσιός is from the unused ὁσῳ, from which come the later forms ἐρωσα and ἐρωκα, and ἰδείσι is often a v.t. Win. xxix. 3. b, p. 230.
"in physicians." This use of ἄλος for "means of living" is freq. in N.T. (xv. 12, 30, xxi. 4; Mk. xii. 44; 1 Jn. iii. 17) and in class. Grk. In class. Grk. ἄλος is a higher word than ἐκς, the former being that which is peculiar to man, the latter that which he shares with brutes and vegetables. In N.T. ἄλος retains its meaning, being either the "period of human life," as 1 Tim. ii. 2; 2 Tim. ii. 4, or "means of life," as here. But ἐκς is raised above ἄλος, and means that vital principle which through Christ man shares with God. Hence ἄλος is comparatively rare in N.T., which is not much concerned with the duration of temporal life or the means of prolonging it; whereas ἐκς occurs more than a hundred times. See Trench, Syn. xxvii.; Crem. Lex. p. 272; Litt. on Ign. ad Rom. vii. 3.

WH. follow B D., Arm. in omitting ἀρπός . . . ἄλος. Treg. and RV. indicate doubt in marg. Syr-Sin. omits. ὁ δὲ ἱρώσεις. This use of ἱρώσεις for "be able" is freq. in Lk. See on vi. 48. It is natural that "the physician" does not add, as Mk. does, that she had suffered much at the hands of the physicians, and was worse rather than better for their treatment. The remedies which they tried in such cases were sometimes very severe, and sometimes loathsome and absurd. See Lightfoot, p. 614; Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, pp. 22, 23.

44. προσελθοῦσα διώκοντα ἡματ. She came from behind that He might not see her. Her malady made her levitically unclean, and she did not wish to own this publicly. Her faith is tinged with superstition. She believes that Christ's garments heal magically, independently of His will. In other cases those who touched Him in faith seem to have done so openly. Comp. vi. 19; Mt. xiv. 36; Mk. iii. 10, vi. 56.

For διώκοντα a has de retro: comp. Baruch vi. 5, visa itaque turba de retro (Vulg.). Hence the French derrière.

τοῦ κρασπέδου τοῦ ἱματίου. "The tassel" rather than "the fringe," or "hem of His garment." The square overgarment or Tallith had tassels of three white threads with one of hyacinth at each of the four corners. Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 624 (but see D.B. art. "Hem of Garment"). Of the four corners two hung in front, and two behind. It was easy to touch the latter without the wearer feeling the touch.

ἔστη η ῥύσις. It "stood still, ceased to flow." Mk. has ἑγράφην. "This is the only passage in the N.T. in which ἑστάναι is used in this sense. It is the usual word in the medical writers to denote the stoppage of bodily discharges, and especially such as are mentioned here" (Hobart, p. 15). Both παραχρῆμα, for which Mk. has εὐθύς, and πρωσαναλώσα, for which Mk. has δαπανήσα, are also claimed as medical (pp. 16, 96).

45. There is no reason for supposing that the miracle was wrought without the will of Jesus. He knew that someone had been healed by touching His garment; and we may believe that He read the woman's heart as she approached Him in the belief
that He could heal her. Lk. evidently dates the cure from her touching His garment; Mt. seems to place it in Christ’s words to her; Mk. in both places.

τίς ὁ ἄρσεν; This does not seem to be one of those cases in which Christ asked for information. He knew that He had been touched with a purpose, and He probably knew who had done it. Mk.’s περεξέβλεπον ἵθειν τὴν τοῦτο ποιήσασαν rather implies that He knew where to look. For the woman’s sake she must be induced to avow her act. Note the masc., which makes the question all the more general: Mk. has τίς μοι ἔγνω τῷ κυρίῳ ἰματίων. The verb implies more than touching, “laying hold of.” For other cases in which Jesus asked questions of which He knew the answer comp. xxiv. 17; Mk. ix. 33. See some good remarks in the S. P. C. K. Comm. on Lk. viii. 46.

ἀρνομένων δὲ πάντων. This explains, and to some extent excuses, Peter’s characteristic interference. Lk. alone tells us that Peter took the lead in this. See on ix. 20, and comp. Mk. i. 36. Note the πάντων, and see on ix. 43 and xi. 4. For ἐπιστάτα see on v. 5.

συνεχούσιν σε. “Hold Thee in, keep Thee a prisoner”; xix. 43, xxii. 63; comp. iv. 38. Here only in N.T. does ἀποθέλειν occur: Lat. affigere (Vulg.), comprimere (f), contribulare (d); om. a b ff.

46. έγνων δύναμιν ἐξεληλυθών αὐτ' ἐμαυ. For the constr. see Burton, § 458, and comp. Heb. xiii. 23; and for δύναμις see on iv. 36.

47. τρέμουσα ἤλθεν. The πάντων in ver. 45, if taken literally, implies that she had previously denied her action. The ἤλθεν, however, seems to show that she had gone a little way from Him after being healed. But she may also have been afraid that she had done wrong in touching His garment. Either or both would explain the τρέμουσα. She is afraid that the boon may be withdrawn. For the attraction δι' ἣν αἰτίαν see small print on iii. 19, and Burton, § 350: τοῖς λαοῖς is also characteristic.

48. ἡ πίστις σου σέωσκεν σε. All three record these words. It was the grasp of her faith, not of her hand, that wrought the cure. Thus her low view of the manner of Christ’s healing is corrected.

49. ἔρχεται τις παρὰ τοῦ ἄρχουσαναγώγου. A member of his household arrives and tells Jairus that it is now too late. The delay caused by the incident with the woman must have been agonizing to him. But this trial is necessary for the development of his faith, as well as for that of the woman, and Jesus curtails no item in His work. The τέθηκεν is placed first with emphasis. For σκύλλε see on vii. 6. See also Blass on Acts x. 44.

50. Μὴ φοβοῦ, μόνον πίστευον. Change of tense. “Cease to fear; only make an act of faith.” In Mk. v. 36 we have μόνον πίστευε, “only continue to believe.” In either case the meaning
is, "In the presence of this new difficulty let faith prevail, and all will be well." For μὴ φοβοῦ see on i. 13.

51. οὐκ ἀφηκεν εἰσελθεὶν τινὰ σὺν αὐτῷ. "Did not allow anyone to enter with Him into the room." He and the disciples had already entered the house, and the parents had been there from the first. Here, as in ver. 38, Lk. has σὺν where Mk. has μετά: see on i. 56.

Πέτρον καὶ Ἰωάννην καὶ Ἰάκωβον. The chosen three (ἐκλεκτῶν ἐκλεκτότεροι as Clem. Alex. calls them) are probably admitted for the sake of the Twelve, whose faith would be strengthened by the miracle. These three sufficed as witnesses. Moreover, they were in character most fitted to profit by the miracle. Here, as in ix. 28 and Acts i. 13, John is placed before James. Elsewhere the other order, which is almost certainly the order of age, prevails (v. 10, vi. 14, ix. 54), and always in Mt. (iv. 21, x. 2, xvii. 1) and Mk. (i. 19, 29, iii. 17, v. 37, ix. 2, x. 35, 41, xiii. 3, xiv. 33).

Irenæus had a text which omitted καὶ Ἰωάννην. Quintus autem ingressus Dominus ad mortuam puellam suscitavit eam, nullum enim, inquit, permisit intrare nisi Petrum et Jacobum et patrem et matrem puellæ (ii. 24. 4). No existing text makes this omission; but many authorities transpose James and John in order to have the usual order (ṇ A L S X L, Boh. Aeth. Arm. Goth.). But the evidence of B C D E F H K, a b c d e f g l q r Cod. Am. Cod. Brix. etc. is decisive. There is similar confusion in ix. 28 and Acts i. 13.

52. ἐκλαίον δὲ τάντας καὶ ἐκόπτοντο αὐτῆς. The mourners (2 Chron. xxxv. 25; Jer. ix. 17) were not in the room with the corpse: Mt. and Mk. tell us that Christ turned them out of the house. The τάντας is again peculiar to Lk.'s account: comp. vv. 40, 45, 47. The acc. after κόπτομαι is class. (Eur. Tro. 623; Aristoph. Lys. 396): "they beat their breasts for her, bewailed her." Comp. xxiii. 27; Gen. xxiii. 2; 1 Sam. xxv. 1.

οὐ γὰρ ἀπέθανεν ἀλλὰ καθεύδει. This declaration is in all three narratives. Neander, Olshausen, Keim, and others understand it literally; and possibly Origen is to be understood as taking the same view. A miracle of power is thus turned into a miracle of knowledge. But the εἶδοτες in ver. 53 is conclusive as to the Evangelist's meaning: not "supposing," but "knowing that she was dead." The καθεύδει is rather to be understood in the same sense as Δάξαρος κεκοίμηται (Jn. xi. 11). But the cases are not parallel, for there Jesus prevents all possibility of misunderstanding by adding Δάξαρος ἀπέθανεν. Yet the fact that Jesus has power to awaken explains in both cases why He speaks of sleep. We may, however, be content, with Hase, to admit that certainty is unattainable as to whether the maiden was dead or in a trance.

54. κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς αὐτῆς. All three mention that He laid hold of her, although to touch a dead body was to incur ceremonial uncleanness. In like manner He touched the leper: see on v. 13.
This laying hold of her hand and the raised voice (ἐφώνησεν) are consonant with waking one out of sleep, and the two may be regarded as the means of the miracle. Comp. and contrast throughout Acts ix. 36-42.

Ἡ παίς, ἔγειρε. “Arise, get up,” not “awake.” Mt. omits the command; Mk. gives the exact words, Ἀριθα συμί. For the nom. with the art. as voc. see on x. 21, xviii. 11, 13. For ἐφώνησεν comp. ver. 8, xvi. 24.

55. ἐπέστρεψεν τὸ πνεῦμα αὐτῆς. There can be no doubt that the Evangelist uses the phrase of the spirit returning to a dead body, which is the accurate use of the phrase. Only the beloved physician makes this statement. In LXX it is twice used of a living man’s strength reviving; of the fainting Samson (Judg. xv. 19), and of the starving Egyptian (1 Sam. xxx. 12). Note that Lk. has his favourite παραχρῆμα, where Mk. has his favourite εὐθὺς; and comp. ver. 44, v. 25, xviii. 43, xxii. 60.

διέταξεν αὐτῇ δοθῆναι φαγεῖν. This care of Jesus in commanding food after the child’s long exhaustion would be of special interest to Lk. In their joy and excitement the parents might have forgotten it. The charge is somewhat parallel to ἐδωκεν αὐτῶν τῇ μητρὶ αὐτῶν (vii. 15) of the widow’s son at Nain. In each case He intimates that nature is to resume its usual course: the old ties and the old responsibilities are to begin again.

56. παρῆγγελεν αὐτοῖς μηδενει εἰπεῖν τὸ γεγονός. The command has been rejected as an unintelligible addition to the narrative. No such command was given at Nain or at Bethany. The object of it cannot have been to keep the miracle a secret. Many were outside expecting the funeral, and they would have to be told why no funeral was to take place. It can hardly have been Christ’s intention in this way to prevent the multitude from making a bad use of the miracle. This command to the parents would not have attained such an object. It was given more probably for the parents’ sake, to keep them from letting the effect of this great blessing evaporate in vainglorious gossip. To thank God for it at home would be far more profitable than talking about it abroad.

IX. 1-50. To the Departure for Jerusalem.

This is the last of the four sections into which the Ministry in Galilee (iv. 14-ix. 50) was divided. It contains the Mission of the Twelve (1-9), the Feeding of the Five Thousand (10-17), the Transfiguration (28-36), the Healing of the Demoniac Boy (37-43), and two Predictions of the Passion (18-27, 43-50).

1-9. The Mission of the Twelve and the Fears of Herod. Mt. x. 1-15; Mk. vi. 7-11. Mt. is the most full. Lk. gives no note
of time or of connexion, and we may suppose that his sources gave him no information. See Weiss, L. J. ii. p. 119, Eng. tr. ii. p. 306. For mention of “the Twelve” see vi. 13, viii. 1, ix. 12, xviii. 31, xxii. 3, 47. All three mention this summons or invitation on the part of Jesus. Mt. and Mk. describe it by their usual προσκαλέσθαι, for which Lk. has συνκαλείσθαι, which he more commonly uses in his Gospel (ix. 1, xv. 6, 9, xxiii. 13), while in the Acts he generally uses προσκαλεσθαι (ii. 39, v. 40, vi. 2, xiii. 2, etc.).

1. δύναμιν καὶ ἔξουσίαν. Mt. and Mk. have ἔξουσίαν only (see on iv. 36): δύναμις is the power, ἔξουσία the authority to use it. The Jewish exorcists had neither δύναμις nor ἔξουσία, and made elaborate and painful efforts, which commonly failed. Elsewhere, when the two are combined, ἔξουσία precedes δύναμις (iv. 36; 1 Cor. xv. 24; Eph. i. 21; 1 Pet. iii. 22). The πάντα with δαμόνια is peculiar to Lk. It covers all that would come under the head of possession.

The constr. is not really doubtful: νόσους θεραπεύειν depends on δύναμιν καὶ ἔξουσίαν, and is co-ordinate with ἐπὶ πάντα δαμόνια. Others make ν. θερ. depend on δωκεν and be co-ordinate with δόν. κ. ἔξουσία. The least satisfactory way is to couple νόσους with δαμόνια, and make θεραπεύειν refer to both: “authority over all diseases and demons, to heal them.” For this meaning Lk. would almost certainly have written τοῦ θεραπεύειν. He as usual mentions the curing of demoniacs separately from other healings (iv. 40, 41, vi. 17, 18, vii. 21, viii. 2, xiii. 32).


2. κηρύσσειν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ἱκάστης. These two verbs sum up the ministration to men’s souls and bodies. See on v. 17. Mt. adds that they were to raise the dead (x. 8). Mk. tells us that they were sent out δῶ, δῶ. For ἀποστέλλω see on iv. 18, p. 121.

3. μήτε βάδδον. Mk. has εἰ μή βάδδον μόνον (vi. 8); and the attempts to explain away this discrepancy in a small matter of detail are not very happy. As between Mt. and Mk. it is possible to explain that both mean “Do not procure (κτήσεσθε) a staff for the journey, but take (αἴρωσυ) the one which you have.” But both Mk. and Lk. use αἴρειν, and the one has “Take nothing except a staff,” while the other has “Take nothing, neither a staff,” etc. Yet in all three the meaning is substantially the same: “Make no special preparations; go as you are.” From xxii. 35 we learn that the directions were obeyed, and with good results. Lk. says nothing about sandals, respecting which there is another discrepancy between Mt. and Mk., unless we are to suppose that ὑποδήματα are different from σανδάλια.

μήτε ἀργύριον. Mk. has χαλκὸν and Mt. has both, μηδὲ ἀργύριον μηδὲ χαλκὸν. Thus Lk. is Greek, and Mk. is Roman, in choice of words. In LXX ἀργύριον is very common, ἀργύριος comparatively
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [IX. 3-7.]

rare, while χαλκός is common as a metal, but not in the sense of money.

μὴ τε δύο χιτώνας ἔχειν. As no τίμα was allowed, the second tunic, if taken, would have to be worn. Hence the form in Mk., "Put not on two tunics." Comp. Jos. Ant. xvii. 5. 7.

In ἔχειν we have an anacoluthon; change from direct to oblique oration. For it is scarcely admissible to take ἔχειν as infin. for imperat. The actual imperat. both precedes (ἀπέτε) and follows (μετέ). Win. xliii. 5. d, p. 397. Mk. here is strangely abrupt in his mixture of constructions.

4. ἐκεί μενεται καὶ ἐκείθεν ἐξέρχεσθε. Vulg. has et inde ne exeatis. But only one cursive has μη (38). Cod. Brix. has donec exeatis fr. Mt. The meaning is "Go not from house to house," as He charges the Seventy in x. 7, a passage which should be compared with this. The mission both of the Twelve and of the Seventy was to be simple and quiet, working from fixed centres in each place. This is the germ of what we find in the apostolic age,—"the church that is in their house" (Rom. xvi. 5; 1 Cor. xvi. 19; Col. iv. 15; Philem. 2).

5. For δέχωνται see on viii. 13, and for ἐξέρχομαι ἀπό see on iv. 35. In Acts xiii. 51 we find Paul and Barnabas performing this symbolical action of shaking off the dust. It signified that henceforth they had not the smallest thing in common with the place. It is said that Pharisees performed this action when re-entering Judæa from heathen lands. There and in Acts xviii. 6 Lk. uses ἐκτυνάσω, which Mt. and Mk. have here. For ἀποτυνάσω. comp. Acts xxviii. 5. The ἐν αὐτοῖς means lit. "upon them," and so "against them." Comp. 2 Cor. i. 23 and Acts xiii. 51, and contrast 2 Thes. i. 10. Mk. here has αὐτοῖς.

6. εὐαγγελίζομαι καὶ θεραπεύοντες. Comp. ver. 2. Union of care for men's bodies with care for their souls is characteristic of Christ and of Christian missions. The miraculous cures of the apostolic age have given place to the propagation of medical and sanitary knowledge, which is pursued most earnestly under Christian influences. For διήρχομαι see on ii. 15, and for εὐαγγελίζομαι see on ii. 10. Excepting Mk. i. 28, xvi. 20, 1 Cor. iv. 17, πανταχοῦ occurs only here and three or four times in Acts: here it goes with both participles.

7-9. The Fears of Herod. Mt. places this section much later (xiv. 1-13); but Mk. (vi. 14-16) agrees with Lk. in connecting it with the mission of the Twelve. It was their going in all directions up and down the villages (διήρχομαι κατὰ τὰς κώμας) that caused the fame of Christ's work to reach Herod φανερῶν γὰρ ἐγένετο τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ (Mk. vi. 14), or, at any rate, excite his fears.

7. Ἡρῴδης ὁ τετράρχης. So also Mt. But Mk. gives him his courtesy title of βασιλεὺς. See on iii. 1, p. 82. The τὰ γινόμενα πάντα
IX. 7-9.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

means "all that was being done" by Jesus and His disciples. There is no πάντα in Mt. or Mk., either here or in the parallels to ver. 1. See on viii. 45. The thoroughly classical word διηπόρεσ does not occur in LXX, nor in N.T. excepting in Lk. (Acts ii. 12, v. 24, x. 17). Antipas was "utterly at a loss" as to what he was to think of Jesus. Note the change of tense: he heard once for all; he remained utterly at a loss. He had no doubt heard of Christ before. It was the startling theories about Him which perplexed Herod.

Ἰωάννης ἤγερθη ἐκ νεκρῶν. This is strong evidence of the effect of John's teaching. During his life he "did no sign," and yet they think it possible that so great a Prophet has risen from the dead and is working miracles. Comp. Mt. xvi. 14; Mk. viii. 28. For ἐκ νεκρῶν comp. xx. 35. For ἤγερθη (K_B_C_L_E 169) most MSS. have ἐγγίγνεται, which is not to be accepted because ἤγερθη is found in Mt.

8. Ἡλείας ἑφάνη. The verb is changed from ἤγερθη, because Elijah had not died. Mt. represents Antipas as saying that Jesus is the risen Baptist, and omits the suggestions about Elijah and other Prophets. The account of Lk. is intrinsically more exact. He would obtain good information at Cæsarea from Herod's steward (viii. 3), and at Antioch from Herod's foster-brother (Acts xiii. 1).

ἐπίφυτης τῶν ἀρχαίων. We know from Jn. vii. 40, 41 that some Jews distinguished the great Prophet of Deut. xviii. 15 from the Messiah. Comp. Jn. i. 21. And Mt. xvi. 14 seems to show that there was an expectation that Jeremiah or other Prophets would return at some future crisis. The τῶν ἀρχαίων is peculiar to Lk. (comp. ver. 19). It may be opposed either to a new Prophet (vii. 16), or to the later Prophets as compared with Moses and Samuel. The former is more probable.

9. Ἰωάννης ἐγώ ἀπεκεφάλισα. "As for John, I beheaded him." Mt. and Mark represent Herod as saying of Christ, "This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead": and some interpret this remark as meaning much the same: "Seeing that I put him to death, he may have risen again." But this is very unnatural. Rather, "I thought that I had got rid of this kind of trouble when I beheaded John; and here I am having it all over again." Perhaps, as Bede suggests, Antipas afterwards came to the conclusion that the Baptist had risen from the dead, a view which to his guilty conscience was specially unwelcome. Lk. mentions the imprisonment of the Baptist by anticipation (iii. 20); but, excepting in this remark of Antipas, he does not record his death.

τοιαῦτα. This may refer either to the works of Christ or to the speculations of the multitude respecting Him. Although John had wrought no miracles during his ministry (John x. 41),
yet, if he had risen from the dead, such things might be expected of him (Mt. xiv. 2).

The γῆ of TR. before ἀνέστη is of very doubtful authority (A D X Π etc.); Treg. brackets, Tisch. WH. RV. omit. It would have no point.

ἐκθέτει ἰδεῖν αὐτὸν. Not merely “he desired” (AV.), but “he continued seeking to see Him.” He made various attempts to apply a test which would have settled the question. Herod knew the Baptist; and he could soon determine whether this was John or not, if only he could see Him. Comp. xxiii. 8, where the gratification of this desire is recorded. No doubt it was not merely the wish to settle the question of identity which led Antipas to try to see Jesus. That he was a Sadducee is a guess of Scholten.

10-17. The Feeding of the Five Thousand. This is the one miracle which is recorded by all four Evangelists (Mt. xiv. 13; Mk. vi. 30; Jn. vi. 1). In all four it is the climax of the ministry. Henceforward attention is directed more and more to the death which will bring Christ’s work to a close. From S. John we learn that it took place shortly before the Passover. All four accounts should be compared. Each contributes some special features, and each appears to be to a large extent independent. The marks of Lk.’s style are abundant in his narrative.

10. ὑποστρέφεται. See small print on i. 56. Lk. connects the miracle with the return of the Twelve; but he gives no hint as to the time of their absence. We may perhaps allow a few weeks. He does not often call the Twelve ὁ ἅγιος (vi. 13, xvii. 5, xxii. 14, xxiv. 10).

ὑποκάταστα ἄντω ὡς ἔποιήσαν. What this was has already been recorded in brief (ver. 6). It is strange that anyone should infer from Lk.’s not expressly mentioning, as Mk. does (vi. 12, 13), the casting out of demons, “that Lk. wishes us to believe that they had failed in this respect,” and “had evidently been able to carry out only a part of their commission.” Lk. records the success of the Seventy in exorcizing demons (x. 17): why should he wish to insinuate that the Twelve had failed? Excepting Mk. v. 16, ix. 9; Heb. xi. 32, διηγεῖσθαι occurs only in Lk. (viii. 39; Acts viii. 33, ix. 27, xii. 17). Comp. ver. 49. Lk. perhaps wishes us to understand that it was the report which the Apostles brought of their doings that led to Christ’s taking them apart, as Mk. says, for rest. Mt. states that it was the news of the Baptist’s death which led to the withdrawal. Jn. has only a vague μετὰ τὰ ἄντων. All may be correct; but there can have been no borrowing.

παραλαμβάνειν αὐτούς. Comp. ver. 28, xviii. 31.

ὑπεχώρησεν κατ’ ἰδίαν. The verb occurs only here and v. 16 in NT. Comp. Ecclus. xiii. 9 (12). Lk. does not seem to be aware that Christ and His disciples went by boat across the lake.
IX. 10–18. THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE 243

(Mt. Mk. Jn.), while the multitude went round by land. Hence it is possible that he supposed that the miracle took place near Bethsaida on the west shore, and not at Bethsaida Julias on the Jordan near the north-east end of the lake. See D.B.2 art. "Bethsaida." Mt. Mk. and Lk. all have κατ' ἰδιαν.

The common reading, εἰς τὸ ἐρημὸν πόλεως καλούμενης Βηθσαϊδα (A.C.E.G.H.K.M.S.U.V etc., Aeth. Arm. Goth.), seems to be an ingenious conflation of the original text, εἰς πόλιν καλούμενης Βηθσαϊδα (BLXΞ33, Boh. Sah.),—which is supported by D [only κόμων for πόλιν],—with a correction of it, εἰς τὸ ἐρημὸν (K*), or εἰς τὸ ἐρημὸν Βηθσαϊδα (b c ff 1g Vulg. Syr.), or εἰς τὸ ἐρημὸν καλούμενον Βηθσαϊδα (a e f). These corrections would be suggested by ver. 12 and Mt. and Mk. and the difficulty of associating the miracle with a πόλις. See WH. ii. Intr. p. 102, and also Wordsw. Vulg. in loco. For other apparent instances of conflation see xi. 54, xii. 18, xxiv. 53. Note Lk.'s favourite καλούμενη.

11. οἱ δὲ ὀχλοὶ γνώντες ἠκολουθήσαν αὐτῷ. The Baptist was dead and the Twelve had returned to Jesus, so that there was no longer any counter-attraction. No Evangelist tells us how long Jesus and the disciples enjoyed their privacy before the multitudes arrived.

ἀποδεξάμενος αὐτοῦς. "He gave them a welcome," as they had given Him (see on viii. 40), although their arrival destroyed the retirement which He had sought. As Jn. states, it was His miracles of healing which attracted them rather than His teaching. For ἀποδεξάμενος (B D L X Ξ Ι 33 69) A C etc. have δεξάμενος: the compound is peculiar to Lk. It corresponds to ἐπιλαγχυσθη in Mt. and Mk.

ἐλάλης αὐτοῖς περὶ τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ Θεοῦ, κ.τ.λ. "He continued speaking to them about the kingdom of God; and those who had need of cure He healed." See on v. 17 and ix. 6. Neither Mt. nor Jn. say anything about His teaching the multitudes, or about His healing any of them.


προσελθόντες δὲ οἱ δώδεκα. In the three it is the Twelve who take the initiative; in Jn. it is the Lord who does so.

εἰς τὰς κύκλους κώμας καὶ ἄγροις. Being similar in meaning, the nouns have only one article, although they differ in gender: comp. i. 6 and xiv. 23, and contrast x. 21 and xiv. 26. See on i. 6.

ἐπιστημον. Here only in N.T., but quite class. It is specially used of provisions for a journey: Gen. xlii. 25, xlv. 21; Josh. ix. 5, 11; Judith ii. 18, iv. 5; Xen. Anab. i. 5. 9, vii. 1. 9.

13. Both εἰς τένευ δὲ and πρός are in Lk.'s style, and neither occurs in the parallels. The same is true of πάντα, and in ver.
14 of ἰπόσι and the second ὲσελ. Note the emphatic ὡμείς. "Ye are to find food for them, not they." There is no need to supply anything after εἰ μὴν ὡμείς ἀγοράσωμεν. "We have no more than five loaves," leads quite naturally to "unless we are to go and buy," etc.; and then the sentence is complete. The statement expresses perplexity (Weiss), not sarcasm (Schanz).

Οὐκ εἰσίν ἡμῖν πλείον ἢ πέντε. The πλείον ἢ πέντε is virtually plur. and has a plur. verb. For the subjunct. after εἰ μὴ comp. 1 Cor. xiv. 5; and see Win. xlii. 2, b, p. 368, and Burton, § 252, 253. The subjunct. after εἰ is not rare in late Grk. But this is rather a delib. subjunct.

Jn. tells us that it was Andrew who pointed out the lad with the loaves, and that they were of barley-bread. On the whole, his narrative is the most precise. The ὡμείς, like the preceding ὡμείς, is emphatic.

14. ὅσει ἄνδρες πεντακοσίων. They were roughly counted as about a hundred companies with about fifty men in each. Note the ἄνδρες: not ἄνθρωποι. The women and children, as Mt. tells us, were not included in the reckoning. They would be much less numerous than the men. Lk. says nothing about the grass, which all the others mention, and which made the companies in their Oriental costumes look like flower-beds (πρασιαί), as Mk. indicates.

Κατακλίνατε αὐτοὺς κλησίας. The verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (vii. 36, xiv. 8, xxiv. 30); in LXX Num. xxiv. 9; Exod. xxi. 18; Judg. v. 27; Judith xii. 15. The κλησίας is cogn. acc. It occurs 3 Mac. vi. 31 and here only in bibl. Grk. Comp. Jos. Ant. xii. 2. 11; Plut. Sertor. xxvi.

ὁσεὶ ἀνὰ πεντήκομα. In the spaces between the groups the Apostles would be able to move freely and distribute the food. That the arrangement (50, 5000) has any relation to the five loaves is not likely. The ἀνὰ is distributive: comp. x. 1; Mt. xx. 9; Jn. ii. 6; Rev. iv. 8.

16. Here Mt. Mk. and Lk. are almost verbatim the same. All three mention the taking the loaves and fishes, the looking up to heaven, the blessing, and the breaking, and the giving to the disciples. For εὐλογήσεν Jn. has εὐχαριστήσας. This blessing or thanksgiving is the usual grace before meat said by the host or the head of the house. The Talmud says that "he who enjoys aught without thanksgiving is as though he robbed God." We are probably to understand that this blessing is the means of the miracle. Comp. Jn. vi. 23; and of feeding the four thousand (Mt. xv. 36; Mk. viii. 6); and of the eucharist (Mt. xxvi. 26; Mk. xiv. 22; Lk. xxii. 17, 19; I Cor. xi. 24). The manner of the miracle cannot be discerned: it is a literal fulfilment of Mt. vi. 33. Lk. alone mentions that Jesus blessed the loaves, εὐλογήσεν αὐτοὺς. The preceding articles, τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους καὶ τοὺς δῶν
IX. 16, 17.] THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE 245

_λο_υ_νας_, mean those which had been mentioned before in ver. 13, where the words have no article.

_ε_β_ί_δων τω_ις μαθηταίς_. “Continued giving them to the disciples.”

The imperf. in the midst of aorists is graphic. Comp. xxiv. 30; Mk. viii. 6, and contrast xxii. 19; Mk. xiv. 22.

17. The verbal resemblance between the three accounts continues. For ἔχορτασθήσαν see on vi. 21, and take κλεσμάτων after τὸ περισσότερον (De W. Hahn). All four mention the twelve κόφινοι, as also does Mt. in referring to this miracle (xvi. 9); whereas at the feeding of the four thousand (Mt. xv. 37; Mk. viii. 8), and in referring to it (Mt. xvi. 10), the word used for basket is σπυρίς. It is the more remarkable that Lk. and Jn. both have κόφινοι because they do not mention the other miracle. The σπυρίς was large, capable of holding a man (Acts ix. 25). The κόφινος was the wallet carried by every travelling Jew, to avoid buying food from Gentiles: _Judæis quorum cophinus jenunque supellex_ (Juv. Sat. iii. 14). Comp. _nupsísti_, Gellia, cistifero, “thou hast married a Jew” (Mart. Epig. v. 17. 4). These exact details would scarcely have been maintained so consistently in a deliberate fiction or in a myth. Still less would either fiction or myth have represented one who could multiply food at will as giving directions that the fragments should not be wasted (Jn. vi. 12). The possessor of an inexhaustible purse is never represented as being watchful against extravagance.

Note the climax in ver. 17. They not only ate, but were satisfied,—all of them; and not only so, but there was something over,—far more than the original supply.

Weiss well remarks that “the criticism which is afraid of miracles finds itself in no small difficulty in the presence of this narrative. It is guaranteed by all our sources which rest upon eye-witness; and these show the independence of their tradition by their deviations, which do not affect the kernel of the matter, and cannot be explained by any tendencies whatever. In the presence of this fact the possibility of myth or invention is utterly inadmissible. . . . Only this remains absolutely incontrovertible, that it is the intention of all our reports to narrate a miracle; and by this we must abide, if the origin of the tradition is not to abide an entirely inexplicable riddle” (L. J. ii. pp. 196-200, Eng. tr. ii. pp. 381-385). The explanation that Christ’s generosity in giving away the food of His party induced others who had food to give it away, and that thus there was enough for all, is plainly not what the Evangelists mean, and it does not explain their statements. Would such generosity suggest that He was the Messiah, or induce them to try to make Him king? Still more inadequate is the suggestion of Renan: _Grâce à une extrême frugalité, la troupe sainte y vécut; on crut naturellement voir en cela un miracle_ (V. de F. p. 198, ed. 1863).

18-22. The Confession of Peter and First Announcement of the Passion. Mt. xvi. 13-21; Mk. viii. 27-31. No connexion with the miracle just related is either stated or implied. Lk. omits the sequel of the miracle, the peremptory dismissal of the
disciples and gradual dismissal of the people, the storm, the walking on the sea, the discourse on the Bread of Life, the Syro-phenician woman, the Ephphatha miracle, the feeding of the four thousand, the forgetting to take bread, and the healing of a blind man at Bethsaida Julias (Mt. xiv. 22–xvi. 12; Mk. vi. 45–viii. 26; Jn. vi. 14–71). Can he then have seen either Mt. or Mk.? So also here: both the others mention that the incident took place near Cæsarea Philippi, on the confines of heathenism. Lk. mentions no place. It is a desperate expedient to suppose with Reuss, that the copy of Mk. which Lk. knew chanced to omit these sections. From ver. 18 to ver. 50 Lk. is once more parallel in the main to the other two.

18. Καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ ἔτει αὐτοῦ προσευχόμενον. See note at the end of ch. i. and on iii. 21. For the periphrastic infinitive comp. xi. 1, and Burton, § 97. Jesus Patrem rogaret, ut discipulis se revelaret. Nam argumentum precum Jesu co!Hgi potest ex sermonibus actionibus insecutis; vi. 12, 13 (Beng.).

κατὰ μόνας. Perhaps χάρας was originally understood. But the expression is used as a simple adv. and is sometimes written as one word, κατα-μόνας. In N.T. only here and Mk. iv. 10. In LXX Ps. iv. 9, xxxii. 15; Jer. xv. 17; Lam. iii. 28.

σωνήσαν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταί. This almost amounts to a contradiction of what precedes. “When He was alone praying, His disciples were with Him.” “Alone” no doubt means “in private,” or “in a solitary spot,” and may be taken with σωνήσαν: so that the contradiction is only on the surface. Moreover we are perhaps to understand that His prayer was solitary: His disciples did not join in it. In either case κατὰ μόνας is quite intelligible, although the disciples may have been close to Him. But it is possible that the true reading is σωνήσατον, meaning, “His disciples met Him, fell in with Him,” as He was engaged in prayer. This is the reading of B*, which a later scribe has corrected to σωνήσαν. And B* is here supported by the Old Latin f (occurrerunt) and one excellent cursive (157), besides two less important authorities. Nevertheless, it is on the whole more probable that σωνήσατον is an early attempt to get rid of the apparent contradiction involved in κατὰ μόνας σωνήσαν. See Expositor, 3rd series, iv. p. 159. Elsewhere in N.T. συνεῖναι occurs only Acts xxii. 11.

20. Υμεῖς δέ. With great emphasis: “But ye—who do ye say that I am?” The impulsiveness of Peter, and his position as spokesman for the Twelve, are here conspicuous. He is οὗτος τοῦ χριστοῦ: viii. 45, xii. 41, xviii. 28. Licet aeteri apostoli sciant, Petrus tamen respondit praeceteris (Bede).

tὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ. “Whom God hath anointed” and sent: see on ii. 26. Here Mk. has simply ὁ Χριστός, and Mt. ὁ Χριστὸς
IX. 20-22. THE MINISTRY IN GALILEE

20. 

See Keim on this confession, as “a solemn event of the very highest character” (Jes. of Naz. iv. p. 263). Lk. and Mk. omit the praise bestowed on Peter for this confession, and the much discussed promise made to him (Mt. xvi. 17-19).

21. 

Because of the grossly erroneous views about the Messiah which prevailed among the people. Shortly before this they had wished to take Him by force and make Him king (Jn. vi. 15). Hence Jesus never proclaimed Himself openly to the multitude as the Messiah; and here, when He does to the Twelve, He explains the nature of His Kingdom, and strictly forbids them to make His Messiahship known. The nearest approach to exceptions to this practice are the Samaritan woman (Jn. iv. 26), and the outcast from the synagogue (Jn. ix. 37).

Others explain the command to keep silence as prompted by the fear lest the guilt of those who were about to put Jesus to death should be increased by the disciples proclaiming Him as the Messiah. Others again suggest the fear lest the people, if they knew that He was the Messiah, should attempt to rescue Him from the death which it was necessary that He should undergo. Neither of these appears to be satisfactory. In any case the Σε is adversative. What Peter said was quite true: “but He charged them, and commanded.”

22. Lk. does not tell us, as Mk. does, and still more plainly Mt., that this was the beginning of Christ’s predictions respecting His Passion: ἡρετατο διδάσκειν αὐτοὺς ὁτι Δὲ, κ.τ.λ. (Mk. viii. 31); ἀπὸ τοῦτο ἡρετατο δεικνύειν, κ.τ.λ. (Mt. xvi. 21). The first announcement of such things must have seemed overwhelming. Peter’s protest perhaps expressed the feeling of most of them.

εἰπὼν ὁτι Δὲ. The ὁτι is recitative, not argumentative. The Δὲ is here in all three; but elsewhere Lk. uses it much more often than any other Evangelist. It expresses logical necessity rather than moral obligation (ὦφελεν, Heb. ii. 17) or natural fitness (ἐπρεπεν, Heb. ii. 10). It is a Divine decree, a law of the Divine nature, that the Son of Man must suffer. Prophecy had repeatedly intimated this decree. Comp. xiii. 33, xvii. 25, xxii. 37, xxiv. 7, 26, 44; Jn. iii. 14, etc. For τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, the title which suggested, while it veiled, His Messiahship, see on v. 24.

ἀποδοκιμασθηκαί ἀπὸ τῶν, κ.τ.λ. “Be rejected after investigation at the hands of the,” etc. The δοκιμασία was the scrutiny which an elected magistrate had to undergo at Athens, to see whether he was legally qualified to hold office. The hierarchy held such a scrutiny respecting the claims of Jesus to be the Christ, and rejected Him: xvii. 25, xx. 17; I Pet. ii. 4, 7. For the ἀπό, “at the hands of,” comp. Ecclus. xx. 20; Lk. vii. 35; Acts ii. 22; Jas. i. 13; Rev. xii. 6.

τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ ἀρχιερεῶν καὶ γραμματέων. The three nouns, as forming one body, have one article. So also in Mt.
xvi. 21. In Mk. xiv. 43, 53; where the Sanhedrin is spoken of with similar fulness, all three nouns have the article. The ἀρχηγοί are rarely placed second: comp. xx. 19; Mt. xvi. 21; Mk. viii. 31. The common formulae are ἄρχον, γραμμ., πρεσβ. or ἄρχον, πρεσβ., γραμ. and ἄρχον πρεσβ. or ἄρχον, γραμ.

Ἀποκτάνθηνα. The pass. of ἀποκτάλω is late Grk. Classical writers use θνῆσκω or ἀποθνησκω. For τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ Mk. has the less accurate μετὰ τρίτης ἡμέρας. He also has ἀναστήρα, while Mt. has ἔγερθηρα, which is probably right here; but ἀναστήρα (A C D, Just. Orig.) is well supported.

Lk. omits Peter's protest against the declaration that Christ must suffer, and the severe rebuke which he received. His omission of "Get thee behind Me, Satan," is sufficient answer to those who assert that it is out of ill-will to Peter that Lk. omits "Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah." See on v. 10 and xxii. 54–62.

23–27. The Self-Renouncement required in Christ's Followers.

23. ἔρχοντας μετὰ τῶν σπείρων αὐτοῦ καθ' ἡμέραν. This is the first mention of the cross in Lk. and Mk. Its associations were such that this declaration must have been startling. The Jews, especially in Galilee, knew well what the cross meant. Hundreds of the followers of Judas and Simon had been crucified (Jos. Ant. xvii. 10. 10). It represents, therefore, not so much a burden as an instrument of death, and it was mentioned because of its familiar associations. Comp. xiv. 27; Mt. x. 38. The καθ' ἡμέραν here is peculiar to Lk.: comp. 1 Cor. xv. 31. We must distinguish between ἀκολουθεῖτω μοι, "follow Me loyally," and ὅπως μοι ἔρχεσθαι, "become My disciple." There are three conditions of discipleship: self-denial, bearing one's cross, and obedience.

24. ὅσ γὰρ ἂν θὰλη. Here, as in ver. 23, "will" (AV.) is too weak as a translation of θὰλην, being too like the simple future: "desireth" or "willeth" is better: si quis vult, qui enim voluerit. Such inadequate renderings of θὰλην are common in AV. (xix. 14; Jn. vi. 67, vii. 17, viii. 44). See small print on x. 22. Comp. xviii. 33.

25. τί γὰρ ὀφελεῖται ἀνθρωπός. The same verb is used by all three; but AV. obliterates this by rendering "profit" in Mt. and
Mk., and “advantage” in Lk. Again, ἐμισθήναι is common to all three: yet AV. has “lose” in Mt. and Mk., and “cast away” in Lk. The opposition between κέρδος and ζημία is common in Grk. See Lft. on Phil. iii. 7. In N.T. the act. ζημίων does not occur, but only the pass. with either acc. of the thing confiscated (Phil. iii. 8), or dat. with ἐν (2 Cor. vii. 9), or absol. (1 Cor. iii. 15). The ἑαυτὸν is equivalent to τὴν ψυχὴν in ver. 24 and in Mt. and Mk. To be excluded from eternal life is death. Lk. omits “What should a man give in exchange for his life?” We must keep “life” for ψυχή throughout the passage: the context shows when it means life as men desire it on earth, and when life as the blessed enjoy it in the Kingdom. The Gospel has raised the meaning of ψυχή, as of ζωή, to a higher power. Comp. Rev. xii. 11. *Frumentum si servas perdis, si seminas renovas* (Bede)

For the combination of aor. part. with fut. indic. comp. 3 Jn. 6, and Burton, § 141.

26. ἐπαισχυνθῇ με καὶ τοις ἐμοῖς λόγοις. Mt. omits. The ἐπὶ in comp. means “on account of”: this is the ground of his shame: comp. xiii. 26, 27. For the constr. comp. Rom. i. 16; 2 Tim. i. 8, 16; Heb. xi. 16. The et τῇ δόθη αὐτοῖς refers to the παρονοσία, not to the Resurrection (xii. 36, xvii. 24, xviii. 8, xix. 15, xxii. 27), and is the first mention by Lk. of Christ’s promising to return in glory. Lk. omits “in this adulterous generation” (Mk.).

27. ἀληθῶς. With λέγω, not with what follows. Mt. and Mk. have ἀμήν, which Lk. uses much less frequently than the others. In xii. 44 and xxi. 3 Lk. has ἀληθῶς, others have ἀμήν. For αὐτοῖς, “here,” comp. Acts xviii. 19; Mt. xxvi. 36. Mt. and Mk. have ἔδει.

γεύσωται θανάτου. The expression is found in the Talmud, but not in O.T. Comp. Mt. xvi. 28; Jn. viii. 52; Heb. ii. 9. It implies experience of the bitterness of death. Comp. ἰδεῖν θάνατον (ii. 26) and θάνατον θεωρεῖν (Jn. viii. 51). For γεύσεσθαι in the sense of “experience” comp. Heb. vi. 4, 5; Ps. xxxiv. 9.

τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. Mk. adds ἐληλυθὼν ἐν δυνάμει, and Mt. substitutes τ. νῦν τοῦ ἀνθρ. ἐρχόμενον ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ αὐτοῦ. The meaning is much disputed. The principal interpretations are:—1. The Transfiguration, which all three accounts closely connect with this prediction (most of the Fathers, Euthym. Theophyl. Maldon.); 2. The Resurrection and Ascension (Cajetan, Calvin, Beza); 3. Pentecost and the great signs which followed it (Godet, Hahn); 4. The spread of Christianity (Nösgen); 5. The internal development of the Gospel (Erasmus, Klostermann); 6. The destruction of Jerusalem (Wetstein, Alford, Morison, Plumptre, Mansel); 7. The Second Advent (Meyer, Weiss, Holtzmann). No interpretation can be correct that does not explain εἰσὶν τινές, which
implies the exceptional privilege of some, as distinct from the common experience of all. This test seems to exclude all but the first and the sixth of these interpretations; and, if we must choose between these two, the sixth must be right. "Shall not taste of death until" cannot refer exclusively to an event to take place the next week. But both may be right. The Transfiguration, witnessed by only three of those present, was a foretaste of Christ's glory both on earth and in heaven. The destruction of Jerusalem, witnessed by S. John and perhaps a few others of those present, swept away the remains of the Old Dispensation and left the Gospel in possession of the field. Only so far as the destruction of Jerusalem was a type of the end of the world is there a reference to the παρουσία (see on xxi. 32). A direct reference to the παρουσία is excluded by the fact that none of those present lived to witness it, except in the sense that all men will witness it. Jesus has told us that during His life on earth He was ignorant of the date of the day of judgment (Mk. xiii. 32): and we cannot suppose that in spite of that ignorance He predicted that it was near; still less that He uttered a prediction which has not been fulfilled. Moreover, the οὗ μὴ γεύσωνται θανάτου ἕως implies that the τάς will experience death after seeing the βάσι. Τ. θεοῦ, which would not be true of those who live to see the παρουσία (1 Cor. xv. 51).

28-36. The Transfiguration. Mt. xvii. 1-13; Mk. ix. 2-13. Both Lk. (vv. 31, 32) and Mt. (xvii. 6, 7) give details which Mk. omits; but Mk. has very little (part of ix. 3) which is not in either of the others.


28. ὅσεὶ ἡμέραι ὀκτώ. A nom. without construction of any kind. Comp. Acts v. 7; Mt. xv. 32; Mk. viii. 2, and πλεῖων in ver. 13. Win. lviii. 4, p. 648. The other two have "after six days," which agrees with "about eight days." We can hardly say that Lk. is "improving their chronology." It looks as if he had not seen their expression. For παραλαβων comp. ver. 10, and for the order of the names see on viii. 51. Note that Lk. changes the order of the names. He places John before James (viii. 51), which may be because he wrote after John had become the better known eis το δορος. The others have eis ὄρος υψηλῶν. Both expressions would fit Hermon, which is about 9200 feet high, and would easily
be reached in a week from Cæsarea Philippi. It is still called Jebel esh Sheikh, “the chief mountain.” It is higher than Lebanon (8500) or Anti-Lebanon (8700), and its isolated white summit is visible from many eminences throughout Palestine (Conder, Handbook of the Bible, p. 205; D.B.2 i. p. 1339; Tristram, Bible Places, p. 280). A tradition, which is first mentioned by Cyril of Jerusalem (Catech. xii. 16), places the scene of the Transfiguration on Tabor,1 which at this time seems to have had a village or town on the top, which Josephus fortified against Vespasian (B. J. iv. 1. 8). In that case the solitude (κατ' ἀδιαν) which is required for the Transfiguration would be impossible. The προσευξασθαι is peculiar to this account: see on iii. 21, a similar occasion.

29. ἐγέρετο . . . ἔφερον. The Gentile Lk. writing for Gentiles avoids the word μετεμορφώθη (Mt. xvii. 2; Mk. ix. 2), which might be understood of the metamorphosis of heathen deities. Comp ἐν ἐμέρα μορφή (Mt. xvi. 12). The λευκός need not be made adverbial. The asyndeton is not violent, if it be made co-ordinate with εἰς τάπτων, a word which occurs Ezek. i. 4, 7; Nah. iii. 3.

30. Both ἄνδρες and οἱ ἑστίες are peculiar to Lk. here: see ii. 4. The three Apostles saw the forms of two men who were such as to be recognized as Moses and Elijah,—the representatives of the Law and the Prophets. The power to recognize them was granted with the power to see them; otherwise the sight would have been meaningless. In the same way S. Paul recognized Ananias in a vision, although he had not previously known him (Acts ix. 12). We might render the οἱ ἑστίες “who were no others than.” That Moses was to reappear as well as Elijah at the beginning of the Messianic Kingdom, was a later dream of the Rabbis. See Lightfoot, Hor. Heb. ad loc. See small print on ii. 22 for the form Μωνοῦν.

31, 32. Peculiar to Lk. See on xxi. 43.

τὴν ἔξοδον αὐτοῦ. His departure from this world by means of the Passion, Resurrection, and Ascension. Comp. the use of εἰσώδες in Acts xiii. 24. For ἔξοδος in the sense of death see 2 Pet. i. 15; Wisd. iii. 2, vii. 6. That the Apostles heard this subject being discussed explains part of the meaning of the Transfiguration. It was to calm their minds, which had recently been disturbed by the prediction of Christ’s sufferings and death.2 The ἠμελλεν corresponds to δει in ver. 22. It is all ordained by God, and is sure to take place; and when it takes place it may be regarded as a fulfilment (πληρώτων), and also as a filling full. There were types and prophecies shadowing forth the Divine purpose, every detail of which must be gone through.

1 In the Greek Church the Feast of the Transfiguration, Aug. 6th, is called τό Θαύμαρον. The combination in Ps. lxxxix. 12 may be noted.
2 In transfiguratione illud principaliter agebatur, ut de cordibus discipulorum scandalum crucis tolleretur (Leo the Great, Serm. xliiv., Migne, liv. 310).
It is perhaps to be regretted that RV. retains "accomplish," which is its freq. rendering of τελεῖω (Jn. iv. 34, v. 36; Acts xx. 24; Jn. xvii. 4, etc.), instead of substituting "fulfil," which is its freq. rendering of πληρώ (xxi. 24, xxii. 16, xxiv. 44; Acts i. 16, etc.). And why not "exodus" here, and Heb. xi. 22, and 2 Pet. i. 15, for ἔξοδος?

βεβαισμένοι ὑπ' αὐτοῦ. In N.T. only the pass. of this verb is found, and the best writers do not use the pres. of either voice. In Mt. xxvi. 43 it is used of the eyes of these same three being heavy with sleep: comp. Lk. xxii. 16; 2 Cor. i. 8, v. 4; 1 Tim. v. 16.

διαγρηγορήσαντες δὲ. "But having remained awake" in spite of this sleepiness would be the common meaning of the word;¹ but perhaps here it means "having become thoroughly awake." Syr-Sin. has "when they awoke." It is a late word, and occurs nowhere else in N.T. or LXX. Lk. is fond of compounds with διά:—διαγνώσκειν, διαδέχεσθαι, διαλείπειν, διαλύειν, διανέμειν, διανυκτερεύειν, διαπονεῖσθαι, διαπορεύειν, διαπραγματεύεσθαι, etc.

As the invention of a later hand these two verses (31, 32) do not explain themselves. What is the motive for the invention? As a narrative of facts they throw much light on the whole situation.

33. ἐν τῷ διαγωρίζοντας αὐτούς ἅπ' αὐτοῦ. "As they were parting from Him." This again is in Lk. only, and it explains Peter's remark. His first impulse is to prevent Moses and Elijah from going away. He wishes to make present glory and rapture permanent.

ἐπίστρεψεν ὁ Πέτρος. Mt. and Mk. add ἀποκριθέως. It is his response to what he saw. For ἐπιστάτα see on v. 5. He says that "it is good for us to be here," not "it is better." There is no comparison with any other condition. The ἡμᾶς probably means the Apostles, not all six persons. The Apostles are ready to help in erecting the σκηναί. If they were to remain there, they must have shelter.

μὴ εἰδὼς ὁ λέγει. We need not follow Tertullian in interpreting this of a state of ecstasy (amentia), as of one rapt into another world. Mk. tells us plainly why Peter "wist not what to answer," ἐκφοβοῦ γὰρ ἐγένοντο: and this he would have from Peter himself. In any case, neither Peter's strange proposal nor the comment upon it looks like invention.

34. ἐγένετο νεφελὴ καὶ ἐπεσκίαζεν αὐτούς. Mt. calls it φωτεινή, a "luminous cloud." Here there is perhaps an association of ideas, suggested by similarity of sound, between ἐπεσκίαζεν and the Shechinah or δόξα mentioned in ver. 31. Comp. ἐπεσκίαζεν ἐπὶ τὴν σκηνὴν ἢ νεφελή (Exod. xl. 29). Strictly speaking a luminous cloud cannot overshadow; but it may veil. Light may be as blinding as darkness. We cannot be sure whether the αὐτοὺς includes the three Apostles or not. It does not include them in

¹ Comp. τασίς τῆς νυκτὸς . . . διαγρηγορήσαντες (Herodian, iii. 4. 8).
ver. 33, and probably does not include them here. The reading ἐκεῖνος ἐσελθέαν (A D P R) is meant to exclude the Apostles; but ἐσελθέαν αὐτοῖς (N B C L) is right. See D. B. 2 art. "Cloud."

35. For φωνὴ ἔγνετο see on iii. 22, and comp. Exod. xxxiii. 9. The reading ἀγαύητος (A C D P R) for ἐσελεγμένος (N B L ζ) comes from Mt. and Mk. The Versions are divided, and in many copies of the Aeth. the two readings are combined. Syr-Sin. has "the chosen."

36. ἐν τῷ γενέσθαι τὴν φωνήν. "After the voice had come", i.e. when it had ceased: see on iii. 21. Syr-Sin. has "when there was the voice." Peter had wished to make three tabernacles, as if Moses and Elijah were to be as abiding as Christ; but now the Law and the Prophets pass away, ita dimissis, quasi jam et officio et honore dispunctis (Tertul. Adv. Marcion. iv. 22), and εὐφέβη Ισχοῦς μόνος.

καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐστίντις καὶ οὕδειν ἀπῆγγελλαν ἐν ἑκεῖναις ταῖς ἡμέραις. See on v. 14, on viii. 20, and on i. 39. Lk. tells us that they kept silent; Mt. tells us that Jesus charged them to tell no one until the Son of Man was risen from the dead. Mk. relates both the command and their observance of it. The prohibition to speak of what they had seen is a strong confirmation of the incident as an historical fact. If the vision is an invention, how can we explain the invention of such a prohibition? The statement of all three, that the Transfiguration took place a week after the preceding incident, the characteristic impulsiveness of Peter, and the healing of the demoniac boy immediately afterwards, are marks of historical reality.

But, as in the case of other miracles, while we admit the fact, we must remain in ignorance as to the manner. Were Moses and Elijah were mysteriously removed from the earth, here present in the body? Or were their disembodied spirits made visible? Or was it a mere vision, in which they only seemed to be present? We cannot say: the third alternative is not excluded by the fact that all three saw it, whereas a mere vision is perceived by only one. As Weiss well remarks, "We are not here concerned with a vision produced by natural causes, but with one sent directly by God"; and he adds, "Our narrative presents no stumbling-block for those who believe in divine revelation" (L. J. ii. pp. 319, 320, Eng. tr. iii. p. 103). The silence of S. John respecting the whole incident is thoroughly intelligible. (1) It had already been recorded three times; (2) the glorification of Jesus as the Son of God, which is here set forth in a special incident, is set forth by him throughout his whole Gospel.

ἔφρακαν. With this form of the 3rd pers. plur. perf. comp. τετηρηκαν and ἔγνωκαν (Jn. xvii. 6, 7), ἐφήκαν (Rev. xix. 3), γέγοναν (Rev. xxi. 6), εἰσελθήκαν (Jas. v. 4); also Rom. xvi. 7; Col. ii. 1; Rev. xviii. 3. Such forms are common in inscriptions and in the Byzantine writers. Win. xiii. 2. c. p. 90; Gregory, Prolegom. p. 124. In meaning the perfect seems here to be passing into the aorist; Burton, § 88, but see § 78.

37-43. The Healing of the Demoniac Boy. Mt. xvii. 14-18; Mk. ix. 14-29. In all three this incident is closely connected with
the Transfiguration. The moral contrast between the peace and glory on the mount and the struggle and failure down below is intense, and is magnificently brought out by Raffaello in the great picture of the Transfiguration, which was his last work. The combination of the two scenes is fatal to the unity of the subject, which is really two pictures in one frame; but it heightens the moral and dramatic effect. It is perhaps even more instructive to regard it as three pictures. Christ and the saints in glory; the chosen three blinded by the light; the remaining nine baffled by the powers of darkness.

The marks of Lk.'s style continue with considerable frequency: ἐγένετο, ἐκείνη (ver. 37); καὶ ἔδειξεν, δέσμαι, μορομαθὴς (38); καὶ ἔδειξεν (39); ἐδείχθην (40); ἀπεστάλη (42); πάντες (43). None of these are in the parallel passages. See small print on viii. 35-39, 40-48.

37. τῇ ἑδρῇ ημέρᾳ. See on vii. 11. The Transfiguration probably took place at night. Lk. alone tells us that the descent from the mountain did not take place until next day. Thus the three Apostles had time to think over what they had seen and heard, before receiving fresh experiences. Lk. omits the conversation about Elijah. Mk., who is here much more full than either Lk. or Mt., tells us that this ὄχλος πολὺς was gathered round the other disciples, with whom scribes were disputing. The opportuné arrival of Christ caused great amazement.

38. For ἔδειξεν comp. iii. 4, xviii. 7, 38, and for δέσμαι see on v. 12.
ἐπιβλέψαί. I aor. inf. act.; not ἐπιβλέψατο, I aor. imper. mid., a tense which perhaps does not occur. It means “to regard with pity”; i. 48; 1 Sam. i. 11, ix. 16; Ps. xxiv. 16; Tobit iii. 3, 15; Judith xiii. 4.—For the third time Lk. is alone in mentioning that a child is μορομαθής: vii. 12, viii. 42. Comp. Heb. xi. 17; Tobit iii. 15, viii. 17; Judg. xi. 34.

39. The three accounts differ in describing the symptoms. Mt. has σεληνιάζεται καὶ κακῶς ἔχει. Mk. has ἀφρίζει καὶ τρίζει τοὺς δόντας καὶ ἔφειδεν. In Lk.'s description Hobart (pp. 17-20) claims ἐμφάνισε, μετὰ ἀφροῦ, and μόνη ἀποκρυπτεῖ as medical expressions, together with the preceding ἐπιβλέψαι. The μόνη occurs here only in N.T. Comp. 3 Mac. vii. 6. But μολὸς, which is found Acts xiv. 18, xxvii. 7, 8, 16; Rom. v. 7; 1 Pet. iv. 18, may be the right reading here also (BR etc.). Both μόνας and μολὸς mean “toil.” The ἀποκρυπτεῖ means cessation of convulsions.

40. ἐδείχθην ... ἵνα. See on iv. 3 and on x. 2. The disciples who failed here need not be the Apostles, who were charged to cast out demons (ver. 1). If they were, this one failure was exceptional (Mk. vi. 12, 13).

1 Hobart adds, “It is worthy of note that Aretæus, a physician of about St. Luke’s time, in treating of Epilepsy, admits the possibility of this disease being produced by diabolical agency (Sign. M orb. Diurn. 27).”
41. ὁ γενεὰ ἄπιστος. This probably is neither addressed to the disciples, who had failed to cure the lad, nor includes them. It is addressed to the father, and includes the multitude. Per unum hominem Judæos arguit infidelitis (Bede). As in the case of the paralytic (v. 20), the faith of those who had charge of the afflicted person is taken into account. This is more clearly brought out in Mk. It was a wish to see what the disciples could do, rather than faith in Divine power and goodness, which prompted the bringing of the boy to them. Possibly it was a wish to see what the disciples could not do that inspired some of them. The hierarchy sometimes attacked Jesus through His disciples (Mk. ii. 16, 18, 24, vii. 5; comp. Lk. xiii. 14). In xii. 46 ἄπιστος means "unfaithful," and in Acts xxvi. 8 "incredible."

καὶ διεστραμμένη. Not in Mk. It is a strong expression: "distorted, wrong-headed" (Acts xx. 30; Phil. ii. 15; Deut. xxxii. 5). Comp. ὁ θύμις ἄρχοντας διαιτρεῖται καὶ τοὺς ἄριστους ἄνδρας (Arist. Pol. iii. 16. 5); εἰσὶ δ’ ἄπτων ἠ ψυχαὶ διεστραμμέναι [a. l. παρεστραμ.,] τῆς κατὰ φόβον ἐξεις (viii. 7. 7).

ἐστὶν ποτὲ ζώοιοι πρὸς ὑμᾶς; The notion is that of being turned towards a person for the sake of intercourse; and the question implies that Jesus is not of that generation, or that it is alienated from Him. Comp. Is. lxv. 2. For ἐστὶν ποτὲ comp. Jn. x. 24; and for πρὸς ὑμᾶς, ἀπὸ νῦν, comp. Mt. xiii. 56; Mk. vi. 3, xiv. 49; Jn. i. 1, etc. Mt. has μεθ’ ὑμῶν. Vita Jesu perpetua tolerantia (Beng.).

In N.T. and LXX ἄνεξισθαί has the gen. But in class. Grk., as sometimes in LXX, we have the acc. after ἄνεξισθαί (Amos iv. 7; 4 Mac. xiii. 27).

42. προσερχόμενων αὐτοῦ. This is to be understood of the lad’s approach to Jesus, not of His approach to the lad. Jesus had just said, "Bring thy son hither."

ἐρρήξεν αὐτῶν τὸ δαιμόνιον. "The demon dashed him down." The word is used of boxers knocking down, and of wrestlers throwing, an opponent: and some distinguish ῥήγμα in this sense from ῥήγμα. Comp. Wisd. iv. 19; Herm. Mand. xi. 3; Apost. Const. vi. 1. There is also ῥάσω, like ῥάσω, in the sense of dashing to the ground (Is. ix. 10). The expulsion of the demon left the boy in a condition which still required healing. Lk. gives each act separately. Comp. Mk. ix. 27. For ἱάσω σοι see small print on v. 17; and with ἀπέδωκεν αὐτὸν τῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ, which Lk. alone mentions, comp. vii. 15 and viii. 55.

43. This also is peculiar to Lk., who omits the rebuke to the disciples, thus again sparing them. The division of the verses is unfortunate, half of ver. 43 belonging to one section and half to another. For μεγαλειώτητι comp. Acts xix. 27; 2 Pet. i. 16: Latin texts have magnitudo (Vulg.), magnificentia (e), magnalia (d).
The πάντες in the first half of the verse, and the πάντων ἐπὶ πᾶσιν in the second half, strongly illustrate Lk.'s fondness for πᾶσι: see on vii. 35 and xi. 4; and comp. Acts iv. 10, xvii. 30, xxi. 28, xxiv. 3.

43-45. The Second Announcement of the Passion. Mt. xvii. 23; Mk. ix. 31, 32.

Besides the πάντων and πᾶσιν, we have as marks of Lk.'s style, θαυμαζόντων ἐπί, the attraction in πᾶσιν ὦτα, πρὸς after ἐξεβαίνει (ver. 43), and the analytical ἔοις παρακαλοῦμένων (ver. 45). See on ii. 33 and iii. 19.

43. θαυμαζόντων ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ὦτα ἑποίει. See small print on ii. 33 and iii. 19. The imperfects include more than the preceding incident. It was because the people were so constantly in an attitude of empty admiration and wonder at His miracles, that Jesus again tells the disciples of the real nature of His Messiahship. He is not going to reign as an earthly king, but to suffer as a criminal.

Here d has one of several attempts to reproduce the gen. abs. in Latin: omnium autem mirantium. Comp. et cogitantium omnium (iii. 15); aurientium autem eorum (xix. 11); quorundam dicentium (xxi. 5); accipientium autem eorum (xxiv. 31); hic autem eorum loquentium (xxiv. 36).

44. θέσθω ὑμεῖς ἐις τὰ ὑμῶν. "Do ye lay up in your ears," in contrast to the gaping crowd. It perhaps means "Store My words in your memories, even if you do not understand them." Or again, "Do not let men's admiration of My miracles make you forget or doubt My declarations. It is into men's hands that I must be delivered." Comp. ὅς ἐις τὰ ὑμῶν ἰησοῦ (Exod. xvii. 14). Cod. Am. and other MSS. of Vulg. here have in cordibus vestris. All Grk. MSS. have εἰς τὰ ὑμῶν. This is one of several places in which Jerome seems to have had a Grk. text which is no longer extant. Comp. erat Petrus (xxii. 55), hic nos esse (Mk. ix. 5), Moses in quo vos speratis (Jn. v. 45); also Jn. vi. 12, vii. 25, ix. 38, x. 16. The last (οὐλε, ωυλε for αὐλη, ποίμη) is crucial.

ὁ γάρ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου μέλει. The γάρ is almost "namely": "For what you may believe without doubting is this, that the Son of Man," etc. The παραδίδοσθαι perhaps does not refer to the act of Judas, but to the Divine will. When His hour was come, the plots against Him were allowed to succeed.

45. ἕν παρακαλοῦμένων ἀπ' ἀντών. A Hebraism, occurring here only in N.T. Comp. Ezek. xxii. 26, and the subst. Wisd. xvii. 3. More often we have ἄποκρύπτειν ἀπό: x. 21; Jer. xxxii. 17; or κρύπτειν ἀπό: Mt. xi. 25; Ps. xxxvii. 10. Lk. alone states that this ignorance of the disciples was specially ordered for them. The ἔοις here has its full telic force. They were not allowed to understand the saying then, in order that they might remember it afterwards, and see that Jesus had met His sufferings with full knowledge and free will. Comp. xviii. 34, xxiv. 16.
It is strange that this mention of their want of understanding should be attributed to a wish to abase the Twelve in the interests of S. Paul: for (1) it is plainly stated that they were prevented by God from understanding; and (2) Mk. mentions their ignorance no less than Lk. We saw above that Lk. omits the rebuke for want of faith addressed to the disciples who failed to heal the demoniac boy. See on ver. 43 and viii. 24.

46–50. The Close of the Galilean Ministry. Two Lessons in Humility. Mt. xviii. 1–7; Mk. ix. 33–39. We learn from the other two that this took place after the return from the neighbourhood of Cæsarea Philippi to Capernaum (Mt. xvii. 24; Mk. ix. 33). The dispute took place during the journey, the comment on it at Capernaum. See notes on xxii. 24–30.

46. Ἐισῆλθεν δὲ διαλογισμὸς ἐν αὐτοῖς. See small print on i. 17 and viii. 17. It is not necessary to confine the διαλογισμὸς to their thoughts (see on v. 22), and thus make a difference between Mk. and Lk. But the desire of each to be pronounced the superior was probably not expressed in the discussion; and this thought Jesus read and rebuked. Bede explains the occasion of the dispute to be quia viderant Petrum, Jacobum, et Ioannem seorsum ductos in montem, secretumque essi ibi aliquod esse creditum. The ἐν αὐτοῖς, “among them,” rather implies that the reasoning did not remain unexpressed.

τὸ τίς ἐν εἰη. “The question, who perchance might be,” wer wohl wäre: see on iii. 15 and vi. 11; also Burton, § 179. For this use of τὸ see on i. 62, and comp. xix. 48, xxii. 2, 4, 23.

μεῖζων αὐτῶν. Although αὐτῶν does not here immediately follow τίς as it does xxii. 24 (see notes), yet doubtless αὐτῶν is the gen. after τίς and not after μεῖζων. Whether anyone outside their company was greater than they were, was not a question which interested them. The point in dispute was, who among themselves was greater than the rest of them; who stood nearest to the Christ, and had the highest place in the Kingdom (Mt.). The question illustrates the want of perception just mentioned (ver. 45).

47. τῆς καρδίας αὐτῶν. The discussion in words was, Who is the greatest? The thought in their hearts was, Am not I the greatest? Will the Master decide? Comp. v. 22, vi. 8.

ἐπλασθομένος παιδίων. The action indicates that the child belongs to Him, is one of His: it represents the humblest among His followers. For other instances of Christ’s attitude towards children comp. x. 21, xvii. 2, xviii. 16; Mk. x. 15, etc.

In N.T. and LXX the mid. only of ἐπλασθομένος is used, sometimes with the acc. (Acts ix. 27, xvi. 19, xviii. 17), sometimes with the gen. (Acts xviii. 19, xxii. 30, 33; with gen. always in LXX). Here and xxii. 26 the acc. is probably right (B C D, Orig.), but the reading is uncertain.

παρ’ ἐαυτῷ. The place of honour. As Jesus was sitting with His disciples round Him (Mk. ix. 35), παρ’ ἐαυτῷ would be the
same as \( \epsilonυ \ \mu\epsilon\sigma \ \alpha\nu\tau\omega\nu \) (Mt. and Mk.). Syr-Sin. has "beside them".

The late tradition, that Ignatius was the child who was thus taken up by our Lord, probably arose from a misunderstanding of the name \( \Theta\epsilon\sigma\phi\rho\nu\sigma\) , which means "bearing God" in himself, and not "borne by God" (\( \Theta\epsilon\sigma\phi\rho\nu\sigma\) ). Even if \( \Theta\epsilon\sigma\phi\rho\nu\sigma\) be the right accentuation, we must interpret "borne along and inspired by God" rather than "carried in the Divine arms." The identification was unknown to Eusebius, who does not mention it, and to Chrysostom, who states that Ignatius had not even seen Christ (Hom. in Ign. Mart. iv.).

It cannot be found earlier than the ninth century (Anastasius Bibliothecarius, Migne, cxxix. 42; Nicephorus Callistus, H. E. ii. 35, Migne, cxiii. 848). See Lft. Ignatius, i. p. 27, ii. p. 22.

48. In this saying of Christ there is again (comp. vv. 23, 24) almost exact verbal agreement in the three reports.

\( \tau\omicron\upsilon\tau\omicron\omicron\upsilon\ \tau\omicron\alpha\delta\omicron\omicron\upsilon\omicron \). Or any similar little one, \( \epsilonυ \ \tau\omicron\alpha\delta\omicron\upsilon\omicron \) (Mt.), \( \epsilonυ \ \tau\omicron\upsilon\ \tau\omicron\omicron\upsilon\upsilon\upsilon \ \tau\omicron\upsilon \) (Mk.). The child is not the type of the honoured disciple; but the honoured disciple is he who welcomes little children, not because he is fond of children, but because they belong to Christ.

\( \epsilon\nu \ \tau\omicron\upsilon \ \delta\omicron\nu\omicron\mu\alpha\tau\omicron \ \mu\omicron\upsilon \). "On the basis of My Name." He knows that he is dealing with something which concerns Christ and belongs to Him, and he welcomes it for Christ's sake. The phrase is specially common in Lk. (ver. 49, xxi. 8, xxiv. 47; Acts iv. 17, 18, v. 28, 40, xv. 14; comp. Lk. i. 59); not in Jn. or Paul.

\( \epsilon\omicron\nu \ \delta\omicron\chi\epsilon\tau\alpha\omicron \ \ldots \ \epsilon\omicron\nu \ \delta\omicron\chi\epsilon\tau\alpha\omicron \). The pronoun is emphatic.

\( \delta \ \gamma\alpha\rho \ \mu\iota\kappa\rho\omicron\tau\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\upsilon\sigma\upsilon \), k.t.l. Not in Mk. or Mt. It explains how it is that to welcome a child for Christ's sake is to welcome the Father, for promotion in the Kingdom depends upon self-abasement. Both \( \delta \ \mu\iota\kappa\rho\omicron\tau\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\upsilon\sigma\upsilon \) and \( \mu\epsilon\gamma\alpha\sigma\upsilon \) are objective; really in a lowly position, really exalted. He who does the humble work of serving the insignificant is promoted by God. It is the chief proof of the Messiah's presence that the \textit{poor} have the Gospel preached to them (vii. 22).

\( \epsilonυ \ \pi\alpha\omicron\upsilon \ \upsilon\omicron\upsilon \). "Among you all." The circle of the disciples is the sphere in which this holds good. For \( \upsilon\pi\alpha\delta\rho\chi\omicron\upsilon\upsilon \) see on viii. 41 and xxiii. 50.

\( \epsilon\omicron\tau\iota\nu \ \mu\epsilon\gamma\alpha\sigma\upsilon \). Already \( \iota\rho\omicron\omicron \ \textit{facto} \) "is great"; not merely \( \epsilon\omicron\tau\iota\nu \) (A D). Jesus does not say "is the greatest"; and He thus gives no encouragement to the desire to be above others. It is possible for all in the Kingdom to have this greatness, and there is no need for anyone to measure himself against others. The standard is Christ.

Syr-Sin. reads, "He that is small and is a child to you, that one is great."

49, 50. A Second Lesson in Humility, the Humility of Toleration. Mk. ix. 38-40. The \( \alpha\pi\omicron\kappa\rho\upsilon\theta\epsilon\upsilon\upsilon \) in ver. 49 shows that there
is connexion with what precedes, but the precise link is not certain. The common explanation, that Christ's ἐν τῷ ὄνοματί μου suggests to John's mind the case of the stranger who cast out demons ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι, is possible. But it is perhaps more likely that Christ's declaration about the blessedness of giving a welcome to the humblest of His followers has aroused misgivings in John's mind. His words are those of one who defends his conduct, or at least excuses it, and might be paraphrased, "But the principle just laid down must have limits, and would not apply to the case which I mention"; or, "But one who remains outside our body is not really a follower of Thee, and therefore ought not to receive a welcome." John does not mean that the man was not an Apostle, but that he was not a professed disciple. Jealousy for the credit of their Master, not jealousy for their own prerogatives, prompted the Apostles 1 to forbid this man from making use of the Name.

The reading ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι σου (N B L X Δ Ξ I 33 69) is to be preferred to ἐπὶ τ. ὑν. (A C D), and is not to be discarded because it is also found in Mk. ix. 38. On the expression see Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 145.

49. Ἐπιστάτα, εἰδαμέν τινα. See on v. 5 and 26. Mk. has Διδάσκαλε. The exorcist was not pretending to be a disciple of Jesus when he was not one. But, in however faulty a way, he believed in the power of the name of Jesus, and tried to make use of it for good (Acts iii. 6, xvi. 18). Contrast the mere jugglery of the Jewish exorcists who tried to use the formula ὄρκιζω ὑμᾶς τὸν Ἰησοῦν δὲν Παύλος κηρύσσει as a charm (Acts xix. 13–16).

Here the context shows that the exorcist was successful, and therefore sincere. The ἐκκολούθουμεν may mean either "we tried to forbid" or "we repeatedly forbade." The pres. ἐκκολούθει implies persistence in such conduct. For ἐκκολούθεις μετά τινος comp. Rev. vi. 8, xiv. 13: the constr. is classical.

50. Μὴ κωλύετε. "Cease to forbid," not only the person in question, but any such. Comp. vii. 13 and the reply of Moses to the demand of Joshua, Κύριε Μωυσῆ, κώλυσον αὐτούς (Num. xi. 29).

δὲ γὰρ ὅκ ἐστιν καθ' ὑμᾶς ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἐστίν. The reading ἦμων for ὑμῶν in one or both of these places comes from Mk. The saying, "He that is not with Me is against Me" (xi. 23, where see note; Mt. xii. 30) should be compared with this. There Christ gives a test by which His disciple is to try himself: if he cannot see that he is on Christ's side, he is against Him. Here He gives a test by which His disciple is to try others: if he

1 It is possible that only John and one other were concerned in ἐκκολούθουμεν. The incident may have taken place while the Twelve were working two and two. John's companion was probably James, and this may be another illustration of the brothers' fiery temper (ver. 54).
cannot see that they are against Christ's cause, he is to consider them as for it. Renan hastily pronounces the two sayings to be tout à fait opposées (V. de J. p. 229, ed. 1863).

Here the fourth and last division (ix. 1–50) of the section which treats of the Ministry in Galilee (iv. 14–ix. 50) comes to an end, and with it the first main portion of the Third Gospel. The solemn maxim stated in ver. 50 makes a good conclusion to the Galilean ministry, and the narrative manifestly makes a new beginning in ver. 51.

IX. 51–XIX. 28. THE JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM.

We may regard this as a narrative of the second main period of Christ's ministry. Galilee, with Capernaum as a centre, ceases to be the almost exclusive sphere of His teaching, and we may say that henceforward He has no centre. Although this period is only one-third as long as the preceding one, it is described with much greater minuteness, and the narrative of it is nearly one-third longer. It is manifest that Lk. is here employing material which was not used by Mk. or Mt., and we know neither its source nor its character. A great deal of it must have been either in writing or stereotyped in an oral form; and a great deal of it would seem to have had an Aramaic original, the translation of which abounds in marks of Lk.'s own style. From ix. 51 to xviii. 14 he is almost alone, and he gives us information which we obtain from no other source. Hence this large tract is sometimes called the "great interpolation" or "intercalation." It is also the "Peræan section" or "Samaritan section" (comp. ix. 51–56, x. 30–37, xvii. 11–19). An analysis, showing the parallels in Mt., is given in Birks, Horæ Evang. pp. 132 ff. Jn. gives us several important incidents belonging to the same period, viz. that which lies between the end of the Galilean ministry and the Passion; but we cannot be certain as to the way in which his narrative is to be fitted into that of Lk. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 406.

If we had only Mt. and Mk., we might suppose that the journey from Capernaum to Jerusalem for the last Passover occupied at most one or two weeks. Few incidents are mentioned; and, where distances are indicated, not much time is required for traversing them. Lk. lets us see that the time occupied must have been several months. We are constantly reminded that Jesus is on His way to Jerusalem (ix. 51, 53, xiii. 22, 33, xvii. 11, xviii. 37, xix. 11, 28) but the progress is slow, because Jesus frequently stops to preach
in different places. The direction of the journeying is only indirectly intimated, first eastwards along the southern part of Galilee, and then southwards through Perea; but, however long the time, and however circuitous the route, it is a journey from Capernaum to Jerusalem. Jesus seems never to have returned to the neighbourhood of the lake until after His death. Jn. lets us know that during this interval Jesus was twice in Jerusalem; once at the latter part of the Feast of Tabernacles, after which He healed the man born blind; and again at the Feast of the Dedication; besides which there is the visit to Bethany for the raising of Lazarus; but, although there is room in Lk.'s narrative for what Jn. tells, we do not know where to place it. We cannot with any certainty show the correspondence between the two Gospels until Jerusalem is entered for the last Passover. It seems best, therefore, not to follow Wieseler (Chron. Syn. iv., Eng. tr. pp. 289-303), Ellicott (Hulsean Lectures for 1859, pp. 242-343), and in the main Caspari (Chron. Einl. § 126-143, Eng. tr. pp. 167-189), in making Lk. narrate three distinct journeys to Jerusalem, beginning respectively at ix. 51, xiii. 22, and xvii. 11, but to take his narrative with the indistinctness which he has left. That the journeyings which Jn. has so clearly given really took place, we need not doubt; and nothing in Lk. contradicts Jn.'s narrative; but all interweaving of the two Gospels must be taken as merely tentative arrangement. The thoroughness of Lk.'s investigation is once more shown by his giving us eight or nine long chapters of material which is given by no one else; while his honesty is conspicuous in the fact of his not attempting a precision which he did not find in his sources. The whole is largely didactic.

The proposal of Halcombe, to transfer the whole of Lk. xi. 14-xiii. 21 from the place which it occupies in all MSS. and Versions to the break between viii. 21 and 22, is too violent a method of arriving at harmony (Gospel Difficulties, or the Displaced Section of S. Luke, Camb. 1886). The amount of harmony obtained in this way is trifling (Lk. xi. 14-26 with Mt. xii. 22-30 and Mk. iii. 22-30, and perhaps Lk. xiii. 18, 19 with Mt. xiii. 31, 32 and Mk. iv. 30-32), and it is simpler to suppose that Lk. xi. 14-26 and xiii. 18, 19 are given out of their chronological order, or that the sayings of Christ there recorded were uttered more than once.

The historical truth of this independent portion of Lk.'s Gospel is guaranteed (1) by the absence of discrepancy with the other Gospels, but chiefly (2) by the fact that it consists almost entirely of discourses which it would have been altogether beyond Lk.'s powers to invent. For convenience we may divide this long section into three parts: ix. 51-xiii. 35, xiv. 1-xvii. 10, xvii. 11-xix. 28. See Herzog, PRE. 2 art. Jesus Christ, p. 659.

IX. 51-XIII. 35. The Departure from Galilee and First Period of the Journey.

This section begins, as the previous one ends, with a lesson of toleration. In the one case the Apostles were taught that they were not to take upon themselves to hinder the work of an apparent outsider who seemed to be friendly. Here they are taught not to take upon themselves to punish professed outsiders who are manifestly unfriendly. Moreover, as the ministry in Galilee is made to begin with a typical rejection of Christ at
Nazareth (iv. 16–30), so this ministry outside Galilee begins with a rejection of Him by Samaritans.

The thoroughly Hebrew cast of the opening sentence seems to show that the source here used was either an Aramaic original which Lk. translated, or a translation from the Aramaic which he modified.

As marks of his style note ἐγένετο, ἐν τῷ ὑπάρχοντι, συμπληροῦσαι, ταῦτα ἡμέρας τῆς ἀναληφθείσης, καὶ αὐτὸς, τοῦ εἰσῆλθέν (ver. 51); διδᾶκα, ἐν πορευόμενον (ver. 53).

51–56. § Rejection by the Samaritans and Rebuke to the Disciples. Here we have what was perhaps a new departure in our Lord's method, viz. the sending messengers in advance to prepare for His arrival. The Baptist had prepared the way for Christ's work as a whole, but he had not gone beforehand to the places which Christ proposed to visit. The shortness of the time which still remained may have made a system of preparatory messengers necessary; and this is perhaps the meaning of the opening words.

51. ἐν τῷ συμπληροῦσαι ταῦτα ἡμέρας. "When the days were being fulfilled"; i.e. when the number of days allotted to the interval was drawing to a close. The verb occurs in N.T. only viii. 23 and (exactly as here) Acts ii. 1, but with συνπλ. See Greg., Prolegom. p. 74. Comp. εἰς συμπλήρωσιν, 2 Chron. xxxvi. 21; Dan. ix. 2 (Theod.). For the constr. see on iii. 21; and for "the days of" see on i. 39. See also on i. 57.

τῆς ἀναληφθείσης αὐτοῦ. "Of His assumption," i.e. the Ascension.

The substantive ἀναληφθείσης does not occur elsewhere in N.T. or LXX. But in Test. XII. Patr. Levi xviii. it is found, and in this sense, of the new Priest who is to be magnified in the world ἀναληφθείσης αὐτοῦ. In Ps. Sol. iv. 20 it is used in a neutral sense of mere removal from the world. The wicked man is to have his old age in the solitude of childlessness until he be taken away (εἰς ἀνάληψιν); which is perhaps the first appearance of the word in extant Greek literature. See Kyle and James, ad loc. They show that this neutral sense is exceptional, and that about the time when S. Luke wrote the word was probably becoming a sort of technical term for the "Assumption of the Blessed." Erunt enim a morte et receptione mea usque ad adventum illius tempora ce el quum fiunt (Assumpt. Mosis, x. 12). Comp. El videbunt qui recepti sunt homines, qui mortem non gustaverunt a nativitate sua (4 Est. vi. 26); Initium verborum Esdræ priscium assumetur (Inscription at 4 Est. viii. 20); Et in eis raptus est Esras et assumptus est in locum similem ejus (4 Est. xiv. 49). See also the passage in which Enoch describes his own translation (lx. i, 2). The verb ἀναληφθῆναι is freq. in N.T., and may be called the usual biblical expression for ascending to heaven: Mk. xvi. 19; Acts i. 2, 11, 22, x. 16; 1 Tim. iii. 16; comp. 1 Mac. ii. 58; Ecl. xlviii. 9, xlix. 14; 2 Kings ii. 11.

The proposal of Wieseler and Lange to make ἀναληφθείσης mean His "acceptance among men" (whether among the Galileans in particular or among Israel in general) is not worthy of much consideration. See Trench, Studies in the Gospels, p. 215; Suicer, Thesaurus, s.v.; Oosterzee, ad loc.
JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

62. δέσπεταλεν ἄγγελους. It is vain to speculate who these were. Probably it was a new measure; but perhaps was no more than a temporary precaution, owing to the probability of unfriendly treatment in Samaritan territory. See on δαπάσταλκεν, iv. 18.

63. εἴτωμάσαι αὐτῷ. This (ἡΒ), and not ὡστε, seems to be the true reading. Comp. Acts xx. 24, if ὡστε τελευταῖον is right there: also 3 Mac. i. 2; 4 Mac. xiv. 1. Purpose is implied. No case of ὡστε ἐν ἐπιπλουσίᾳ denoting result is found in N.T. Burton, § 372.
temper as "sons of thunder." Yet Lk., who alone gives this illustration of the title, does not give the title itself (Mk. iii. 17).

*Quid mirum filios tonitruui fulgurare voluisse?* (Ambrose).

**Θέλεις ἐπωμέν.** For the constr. comp. xviii. 41, xxi. 9; Mt. xx. 32; Mk. x. 51: Soph. *O. T.* 650. In class. Grk. this constr. is more common with βολῖομαι; but in N. T. θέλω is about five times as frequent as βολῖομαι, which in mod. Grk. has almost gone out of use. Note that ἡ αὐτ., which sometimes follows θέλω, is not inserted when the first verb is in the second person and the second verb in the first person. Win. xii. 4, b, p. 356; Burton, § 171. Syr-Sin. has "Our Lord" for Κύριε.

The words ὡς καὶ Ἡλίας ἐποίησεν (A C D X etc.) are probably a gloss. That they were omitted (N B L E) because some Gnostics used them to disparage the O. T., or because they want to make Christ's rebuke to the disciples a condemnation of Elijah, is not probable. Rendel Harris thinks that the insertion is due to Marcionite influence both in this case and the next (Study of Codex Beel, p. 233, in Texts and Studies, ii, 1). There is less doubt about καὶ ἔτεκεν ὁ ὄχος οὐδὲ εἶδον πολοῦ πνεύματος ἔστε (DFKM etc); and least of all about ὅ γὰρ ἦδος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ὁ Κύριος γινά φθονὸς ἀνθρώπων ἀπολέσαι ἄλλα σώσαι (FKM etc.). These two may safely be omitted as later additions to the text. In the last of them there are several variations in the witnesses which insert the words. Some omit γὰρ, some omit ἀνθρώπων, and some have ἀποκειμένως for ἀποθέουσα. WH. ii. App. pp. 59, 60; Sanday, App. ad N. T. pp. 118, 119.

It is quite possible that ὁ ὄχος οὐδὲ εἶδον πολοῦ πνεύματος ἔστε is a genuine saying of Christ, although no part of this Gospel. The remainder, ὁ γὰρ ἦδος, κ.τ.λ., may be an adaptation of Mt. v. 17 and [xviii. 11] (comp. Lk. xix. 10), and could more easily have been constructed out of familiar materials.

For other instances of what may be Marcionite influence upon the text see iv. 16 and xxiii. 2.

**55. στραφεῖς δέ.** "But (instead of assenting to their proposal) He turned." He was in front, and the disciples were following Him. Syr-Sin. omits στραφεῖς as well as the three clauses.

**56. ἐπορεύθησαν εἰς ἑτέραν κώμην.** Although ἑτέραν might very well mean a village of another kind, yet the probability is that it does not mean a non-Samaritan village. The difference lay in its being friendly and hospitable. There is no intimation that Jesus abandoned His plan of passing through Samaria and turned back to go round by Peræa. Moreover, to have gone away from all the Samaritans, because one Samaritan village had proved inhospitable, might have encouraged the intolerant spirit which He had just rebuked. With Hahn, Baur, Schenkel, and Wieseler we may assume that this other village was Samaritan also, although there is a strong consensus of opinion the other way.

**57-62.** Three Aspirants to Discipleship warned to count the cost. In part also in Mt. viii. 19-22. The section is well summarized in the chapter-heading in AV. "Divers would follow Him, but upon conditions." The first two instances are common to Lk. and Mt.; the third is given by Lk. alone. But Mt. has the first two in quite a different place, in connexion with the
crossing to the country of the Gadarenes (viii. 19–22). Lk. connects the three instances with the final departure from Galilee and with the mission of the Seventy. That he understands these aspirants to be three of the Twelve is manifestly incorrect (vi. 13); and it is uncertain whether he regards all three incidents as having taken place at one and the same time. It is probable that they were grouped together because of their similarity, and that two were already so grouped in the source which both Mt. and Lk. seem to have used.

57. Ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ. Like κλασμάτων (ver. 17) and κατὰ μόνας (ver. 18), these words can be taken either with what precedes or what follows. The Vulgate is as ambiguous as the Greek: ambulantibus illis in via dixit quidam ad illum. Beza has quidam in via dixerit; but Luther and all English Versions take the words with what precedes. Comp. iv. 1, v. 24, vi. 18, viii. 15, 39, x. 18, xi. 39, etc.

εἰπέν τις. Mt. has εἶς γραμματεὺς εἰπέν. The man had been a hearer, and now proposes to become a permanent disciple, no matter whither Jesus may lead him. To restrict the διόν ἐὰν ἀπερχόμην to the journey then in progress, or to the different routes to Jerusalem (Schleierm.), is very inadequate. On the other hand, there is no sign that the man thinks that he is making a very magnificent offer. His peril lies in relying on his feelings at a moment of enthusiasm.

Here, as in Jn. viii. 21, 22, xiii. 33, 36, xviii. 20, xxi. 18, we have διόν for διόν, a word which does not occur in bibl. Grk.

WH. have ἐὰν (A B C K L U E 33 69) in their small ed., with Lach. Treg. In the large ed. they have ἐὰν (N D), with Tisch. RV. “Predominantly ἐὰν is found after consonants, and ἐὰν after vowels; but there are many exceptions” (ii. App. p. 173).

The κύριος after ἀπερχόμην (A C G Δ Π, f q d Syr. Goth.) may safely be omitted (N B D L E, a c Vulg. Syr-Sin. Boh. Arm.).

58. Αἱ ἄλατσεκες φωλεοὺς ἔχουσιν. Jesus knows the measure of the scribe’s enthusiasm. He also knows whither He Himself is going, viz. to suffering and to death. He warns him of privations which must be endured at once. The scribe was accustomed to a comfortable home; and that must be sacrificed: comp. xviii. 22; Mt. xx. 22. For other cases in which Jesus checked emotional impulsiveness see xi. 27 and xxii. 33. Foxes and birds are
mentioned, not as representatives of the whole animal world, but as creatures which lead a vagabond life. Comp. Plut. Tib. Grac. ix.

Judg. xv. 4 the form ἀλώπηκας is well attested: φωλαῖς occurs nowhere else in bibl. Grk. excepting Mt. viii. 20, where see Wetst. for illustrations of the use of the word for lairs of animals. Syr-Sin. inserts “Verily” here.

κατασκηνώσεις. Lit. “encampings,” and so “encampments, abodes.” Therefore “roosts” would be better than “nests.” Only for a short time in each year does a bird have a nest. Here Vulg. has nidos, in Mt. tabernacula (with nidos in many MSS.). Here d has habitacula. In both places many texts add to nidos the gloss ubi requiescant. In Ezek. xxxvii. 27 and Wisd. ix. 8 κατασκήνωσις (tabernaculum) is used of Jehovah encamping among His people: comp. Tob. i. 4 and Ps. Sol. vii. 5.

οὐκ ἐχει ποῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν κλίνῃ. Not because of His poverty, but because of the wandering life which His work involved, a life which was now more unsettled than ever. Nazareth had cast Him out; of His own choice He had left Capernaum; Samaritans had refused to receive Him: in the intervals of necessary rest He had no home.1 For the constr. see xii. 17.

59. Ἐπένε δὲ πρὸς ἔτερον. Mt. tells us that this man was ἔτερος τῶν μαθητῶν, i.e. one of the casual disciples, who is now invited to become a permanent follower.

Quite without reason Clem. Alex. identifies him with Philip, probably meaning the Evangelist (Strom. iii. 4. 522, ed. Potter). So also Hilgenfeld, who identifies the scribe of ver. 57 with Bartholomew. Lange would make this second case to be the desponding Thomas, and the scribe to be Judas Iscariot (L. J. ii. p. 144, Eng. tr.). Keim more reasonably remarks that it is futile to attempt to discover the names by mere sagacity (Jes. of Nas. iii. p. 270).

Ἐπίτρεψον μοι πρῶτον ἀπελθοῦτι θάγα τῶν πατέρα μου. The most obvious meaning is the best. His father is in extremis or has just died, and the funeral will take place almost immediately (Acts v. 6, 10). Perhaps Jesus can wait; or he may be allowed to follow later, after he has performed the sacred duty of burial (Gen. xxv. 9; Tobit iv. 3). “I must first bury my father” is an almost brutal way of saying, “I cannot come so long as my father is alive”: and to have put off following Jesus for so indefinite a period would have seemed like unworthy trifling. Yet Grotius and Hase (Gesch. Jesu, § 41) adopt this.

The κόρε before ἐπίτρεψον is of doubtful authority, and may come from Mt. viii. 21: om. B* D V, Syr-Sin. For the attraction in ἀπελθοῦτι see on

1 Plutarch represents Tiberius Gracchus as saying: τά μὲν θρήνα τά τῆς Ἰταλίας νεκρῶμενα καὶ φωλαῖς ἔχει, καὶ κοιταῖς ἔστιν αὐτῶν ἐκάστω καὶ καταδύσεις τοῖς δὲ ὑπὲρ τῆς Ἰταλίας μαχαμένους καὶ ἀποδεικνύοντίν ἄνεσι καὶ φωτός, ὁλον ἄρ νεκρῶμεν, μέτεστιν.
ix. 59-61.] Journeyings Towards Jerusalem 267

iii. 19. Mt. has ἀπελθὼν καὶ θάψαι. In vv. 59 and 60 Lk. has his favourite εἰπεν ἐκεῖ, which Mt. has in neither place.

60. "Αφες τοὺς νεκροὺς θάψαι τοὺς έαυτῶν νεκροὺς. Comp. viii. 51. The apparent harshness and obscurity of the saying is a guarantee for its authenticity. "Leave the spiritually dead to bury their own dead." There will always be plenty of people who have never received or have refused the call to a higher life; and these can perform the ordinary duties of the family and of society. These lower duties are suitable to them,—τοὺς έαυτῶν νεκροὺς. For a similar change of meaning from the figurative to the literal comp. Jn. v. 21—29, where vv. 21—27 refer to spiritual resurrection from sin, vv. 28, 29 to actual resurrection from the grave; also Jn. xi. 25, 26, where "die" is used in a double manner. To take νεκροὺς in both places as figurative, implies that the father is spiritually dead. To take νεκροὺς in both places as literal, gives the harsh meaning, "Leave the dead to take care of themselves."

This disciple needs to be told, not of the privations of the calling, but of its lofty and imperative character. The opportunity must be embraced directly it comes, or it may be lost; and therefore even sacred duties must give way to it. Moreover, like the high priest (Lev. xxi. 11) and the Nazirite (Num. vi. 6, 7), his life will be a consecrated one, and he must not "make himself unclean for his father or for his mother." Comp. Mt. x. 37; Ezek. xxiv. 16. By the time that the funeral rites were over, and he cleansed from pollution, Jesus would be far away, and he might have become unwilling to follow Him.

σῦ δὲ ἀπελθὼν διάγγελλε τ. β. τ. Ἑ. Mt. omits this charge. Clem. Alex., quoting from memory, substitutes for it the preceding charge, σῦ δὲ ἀκολούθει μοι (loc. cit.). Word by word, it forms a contrast to the man's request; ἀπελθὼν to ἀπελθοῦν, διάγγελλε to θάψαι, τὴν βασιλείαν to τὸν πατέρα, τοῦ θεοῦ to μου. "Depart, not home, but away from it; not to bury, but to spread abroad; not a father, but the Kingdom; not thine own, but God's." The σῦ is emphatic: "But thou, who art not a νεκρός." Jesus recognizes in him a true disciple, in spite of his hesitation; and the seeming sternness of the refusal is explained. For διάγγελλε, "publish everywhere," comp. Acts xxi. 26; Rom. ix. 17; Ps. ii. 7, lviii. 13; 2 Mac. iii. 34. Vulg. has adnuntia; d, prædica: divulgā would be better than either.

61. εἰπεν δὲ καὶ ἔτερος. This third case is not given by Mt., and it probably comes from a different source. On account of its similarity it is grouped with the other two.

Godet regards it as combining the characteristics of the other two. Cu homme s'offre de lui-même, comme le premier; mais il temporise, comme le second. Lange takes the three as illustrations of the sanguine, melancholy, and phlegmatic temperaments, and thinks that this third may be Matthew.


ἀποτάξασθαι τοῖς εἰς τὸν οἶκόν μου. “To set myself apart from, bid farewell to, them that are at my house.” The case of Elisha (1 Kings xix. 20) may have been in the man’s mind. His heart is still with the past. He must enjoy it just once more before he gives it up. Levi had done what this man wished to do, but in a different spirit. He gave a farewell entertainment for his old associates, but in order to introduce them to Christ. The banquet was given to Him (v. 29). This man wants to leave Christ in order to take leave of his friends.

In N.T. ἀποτάσσεσθαι occurs only in the middle: xiv. 33; Acts xviii. 18, 21; Mk. vi. 46; 2 Cor. ii. 13: abrenunciare (d), renunciare (Vulg.). Comp. ἀποτάσσεσθαι τὸ βίῳ (Ign. Philad. xi.); ὁ ἀποτάσσεσθαι τῷ κόσμῳ τοῦ Ἱεροῦ (Act. Paul. et Thes. v.). The more classical expression would be αὐτὸς ἔστο σὺν αὐτοῖς (Eur. Tra. 1276; Xen. Cyr. i. 3, 2). Comp. also the use of renunciare with a dative: omnibus advertisementis renunciavi (Plin. Ep. ii. 1. 8); non multum abfuit quin vixit renunciaret (Suet. Galb. xi.). In eccles. Grk. ἀναπαύγαι, ἀναπαίζει, ἀποτάσσεται are used of renunciation of the world. See Suicer, ἀποτάσσεσθαι.

τοῖς εἰς τὸν οἶκόν μου. The τοῖς is masc. with εἰς as a pregn. constr.: “to go to my house and bid farewell to those in it.” Comp. Acts viii. 40; Esth. i. 5; and see Win. i. 4. b, p. 516. Many texts of Vulg. make τοῖς neut.; renunciare his quae domi sunt; but Cod. Am. and Cod. Brix. have qui. He would have no need to go home to take leave of his possessions. But even if τοῖς be taken as neut. it is very doubtful whether ἀποτάσσεσθαι τοῖς, κ.τ.λ., can mean “to set in order the things,” etc., as the Berlenburger Bible takes it. Tertullian has tertium illum prius suis valedicere parentem prohibit retro respectare (Ado. Marcion. iv. 23). Comp. Clem. Hom. xi. 36, xii. 23.

62. ἐπιβαλλὼν τὴν χεῖρα ἐπ’ ἄρτον καὶ βλέπων εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω. A proverb: δε ἐργάνοι μελετῶν ἤθελόν κ’ αὐλακ’ ἐλαύνοι μικρῶς παρα\-\ ταίων μεθ’ ὄμηλικας, ἀλλ’ ἐπὶ ἐργῶν θυμῶν ἑξῶν (Hes. Ὄρρ. 443). Pliny says that a ploughman who does not bend attentively over his work goes crooked: nisi incurvus prevaricatur; inde translatum hoc crimen in forum (N. H. xviii. 19. 49). With βλέπων εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω comp. xvii. 31; Jn. vi. 66, xviii. 6; Phil. iii. 13; also μὴ περιβλέψης εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω and ἐπέβλεψεν ἡ γυνὴ αὐτοῦ εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω (Gen. xix. 17, 26).

D and some Lat. texts have εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω βλέπων καὶ ἐπιβαλλὼν τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ ἐπ’ ἄρτον. For a similar inversion see xxi. 42.

ἐδείκτος ἐστιν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ. Literally, “is well-placed,” and so, “useful, fit, for the Kingdom of God”; fit to work in it as a disciple of Christ, rather than fit to enter it and enjoy it. When used of time ἐδείκτος means “seasonable” (Ps. xxxi. 6; Susan. 15). It was a Pythagorean precept, ἐλατ οἰρὸν ἐπερχόμενος μὴ ἐπιστρέφων, which Simplicius in his commentary on Epictetus explains as meaning that a man who aspires to God ought not to be of two minds, nor to cling to human interests. Jesus says to this man neither “Follow Me” (v. 27) nor “Return to thy house”
(viii. 39), but "I accept no lukewarm service" (Rev. iii. 16). For the constr. comp. Heb. vi. 7, and contrast xiv. 35.

Hahn thinks that this third follower, of whom Lk. alone tells us, may possibly be the Evangelist himself, and that this would account for his henceforward telling us so much which no one else records. He combines this conjecture with the hypothesis that Lk. was one of the Seventy, the difficulties of which have been discussed in the Introduction, § 2.

X. 1-16. § The Mission of the Seventy. The number was significant in more ways than one, and we have no means of determining which of its various associations had most to do with its use on this occasion. (1) The Seventy Elders, whom God commanded Moses to appoint, and who were endowed with the spirit of prophecy, to help Moses to bear the burden of the people in judging and instructing them: Num. xi. 16, 17, 24, 25. (2) The number of the Nations of the Earth, traditionally supposed to be seventy: Gen. x. (3) The Sanhedrin, which probably consisted of seventy members and a president, in imitation of Moses and the seventy Elders.¹

That Jesus should have followed the number given to Moses, in order to suggest a comparison between the two cases, is probable enough. That He should have used the tradition about the number of Gentile nations, in order to point out the special character of this mission, viz. to others besides the Jews, is also not improbable.² So far as we can tell, the Seventy were sent out about the time of the Feast of Tabernacles. The number of bullocks offered during the Feast was seventy in all, decreasing from thirteen on the first day to seven on the last: and, according to the Talmud, "There were seventy bullocks to correspond to the number of the seventy nations of the world" (Edersh. The Temple, p. 240; Lightfoot, Hor. Hebr. on Jn. vii. 37). It was about this time that Jesus had declared, "Other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must lead, and they shall hear My voice" (Jn. x. 16). The connexion of the mission of the Seventy with this thought cannot be regarded as unlikely. It is much less probable that the number was meant "to suggest the thought that the seventy disciples were placed by Him in a position of direct contrast" with the Sanhedrin.

The account of the appointment of the Seventy to minister to all without distinction, like the account of the appointment of the Seven to minister to

¹ That the Jews regarded seventy as the normal number for a supreme court or council is shown by the conduct of Josephus, who in organizing Galilee "chose out seventy of the most prudent men, and those elders in age, and appointed them to be rulers of all Galilee" (B. J. ii. 20. 5; Vita, 14); and also of the Zealots at Jerusalem, who set up a tribunal of seventy chief men, to take the place of the courts which they had suppressed (B. J. iv. 5. 4). Comp. the legend of the Septuagint.

² See n. 74 in Migne, vol. i. p. 1267 (Clem. Recog. ii. 42).
the Hellenists (Acts vi. 1-7), is given by Lk. alone. This fact has led to the conjecture that he himself was one of the Seventy; a conjecture apparently sanctioned by those who selected this passage as the Gospel for S. Luke's Day, but implicitly contradicted by himself in his preface (i. 1-4), which indicates that he was not an eye-witness. His mention of the Seventy and the silence of Mt. and Mk. are very intelligible. The mission belongs to a period about which he had special information, and about which they tell us little. They omit many other matters connected with this part of Christ's ministry. Had they given us the other details and omitted just this one, there would have been some difficulty. Moreover, this incident would have special interest for the writer of the Universal Gospel, who sympathetically records both the sending of the Twelve to the tribes of Israel (ix. 1-6), and the sending of the Seventy to the nations of the earth. No mention of the Gentiles is made in the charge to the Seventy; but there is the significant omission of any such command as "Go not into any way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel" (Mt. x. 5, 6). And in Perea, which was to be the scene of their labours, the proportion of Gentiles would be larger than in the districts to the west of the Jordan. The silence of Jn. respecting the mission of the Seventy is no more surprising than his silence respecting the mission of the Twelve. He omits these, as he omits many things, because they have been sufficiently recorded, and because they are not required for the plan of his Gospel.

The proposals to treat the charge to the Seventy as a mere doublet of the charge to the Twelve, or as an invention of the Evangelist in the interest of Pauline ideas, will not bear criticism. In either case, why does Lk. also give us the charge to the Twelve (ix. 1-6), and in such close proximity? In the latter case, why does he not insert a special direction to go to the Gentiles? The difference and the similarity between the two charges are quite intelligible. The mission of the Seventy was not permanent, like that of the Twelve. Yet the object of it was not, like that of ix. 52, to prepare shelter and food, but, like that of the Twelve, to prepare for Christ's teaching. The increased numbers were necessary because the time was short, and in many cases His first visit would also be His last. And when we examine the two charges in detail, we find that there is not only the prohibition noted above, which is given to the Twelve and not to the Seventy, but also several directions which are given to the Seventy and not to the Twelve. Neither in Mt. x. 5-15, nor in Mk. vi. 7-11, nor in Lk. ix. 1-5 is there any equivalent to Lk. x. 2, 8; while a good deal of what is similar in the two charges is differently worded or differently arranged. See Rushbrooke's Synopticon, pp. 35, 36. One may readily admit the possibility of some confusion between the traditional forms of the two charges; but no such hypothesis is required. The work of the Seventy was sufficiently similar to the work of the Twelve to make the directions given in each case similar. An address to candidates for ordination now would be largely the same, whether addressed to deacons or to priests. The uncritical character of the hypothesis that this section is an invention to promote Pauline doctrine is further shown by the fact that its authenticity is clearly recognized in a work of notoriously anti-Pauline tendency, viz. the Clementine Recognitions. And whatever may be the worth of the traditions

1 Renan has a remarkable passage, in which he shows how the customs of Oriental hospitality aided the preaching and spread of the Gospel (V. de J. p. 293).

2 Peter is represented as saying: Nos ergo primos elegit duodecim sibi credentes, quos apostolos nominavit, postmodum alios septuaginta duos probatissimos discipulos, ut vel hoc modo recognita imagine Moysis crederet multitudo, guia hic est, quem predixit Moyses venturum prophetam (i. 40). It is worth noting that in the Recognitions the number of the nations of the earth is given as seventy-two (ii. 42).
that this or that person was one of the Seventy, how could the traditions (some of which are as old as the second century) have arisen, if no such body as the Seventy ever existed?

As Eusebius remarks (H. E. i. 12. i), "there exists no catalogue of the Seventy." But he goes on to mention traditions as to a few of them, some of which come from the Hypotyposes of Clement of Alexandria. Barnabas (Acts iv. 36, etc.), Sosthenes (1 Cor. i. 1), Cephas (Gal. ii. 11), Matthias (Acts i. 26), Joseph called Barsabbas, who was surnamed Justus (Acts i. 23), and Thaddeus are mentioned as among the Seventy. Clement states definitely of Barnabas the Apostle that he was one of the Seventy (Strom. ii. 20, p. 489, ed. Potter), and in Clem. Recog. i. 7 he is called one of Christ's disciples. So far as we know, Clement was the first to separate the Cephas of Gal. ii. 11 from the Apostle. This second Cephas is an obvious invention to avoid a collision between two Apostles, and to free S. Peter from the condemnation of S. Paul. From Acts i. 21 we know that both Matthias and Barsabbas had been with Jesus during the whole of His ministry; and therefore the tradition that they were among the Seventy may be true. Thaddeus was one of the Twelve, and cannot have been one of the Seventy also. Eusebius gives the tradition as rumour (φαινείν). To these may be added an improbable tradition preserved by Origen, that Mark the Evangelist was one of the Seventy.

The early disappearance of the Seventy is sufficiently accounted for by (1) the temporary character of their mission; (2) the rise of the order of presbyters, which superseded them; (3) the fact that no eminent person was found among them. It is not improbable that the N.T. prophets were in some cases disciples who had belonged to this body.


1. Μετά δὲ ταῦτα. After the incidents just narrated (ix. 46-62). The historical connexion is clearly marked.

ἀνεθείξεν ὁ Κύριος. The verb is found in N.T. only here and Acts i. 24; freq. in LXX. Comp. ἀνεθείσαι (i. 80). It means "show forth, display," and hence "make public, proclaim," especially a person's appointment to an office: ἀνεθείνει τὸν νῦν μου Ἀντίοχον βασιλέα (2 Mac. ix. 25; comp. x. 11, xiv. 12, 26; 1 Esdr. i. 34, viii. 23). This meaning of the word seems to be late (Polyb. Plut. etc.). But the use of an official word of this kind points to a more important preparation for Christ's coming than is indicated ix. 52. Therefore τερέωσε points back to ix. 1-6, the mission of the Twelve. For ὁ Κύριος see on v. 17, and comp. vii. 13: describitur hoc loco actus vere dominicus (Beng.).

The τερέως is in apposition, "others, viz. seventy." The καὶ before τερέως (R.A.C.D) is of very doubtful authority, and is as likely to have been inserted in explanation as omitted because superfluous. Comp. xxiii. 32, where καὶ is certainly genuine; and see Win. lix. 7, d, p. 665.

ἐξωκοιμήτο [δύο]. Both external and internal evidence are

---

1 Steinhart in his ed. of the Scholia on Luke, by Abulfaraq Bar-Hebræus (p. 22, Berlin, 1865), questions the statement of Assemani (B. O. iii. 1. 320), that Bar-Hebræus gives a list of the Seventy. Such lists have been invented.
rather evenly balanced as to the addition or omission of δῶ. The word might have been either inserted or omitted to make the number agree with the Seventy Elders, for with Eldad and Medad they were seventy-two. The nations of the earth also are sometimes reckoned as seventy, sometimes as seventy-two. The δῶ might also be omitted to make a favourite number (Gen. xlii. 27; Exod. i. 5, xvi. 27; Judg. i. 7, ix. 2; 2 Kings x. 1; Ezra viii. 7, 14; Is. xxiii. 15; Jer. xxv. 11, etc.). See Ryle, Canon of O.T. p. 158.

εὐδοκήκοντα δῶ. ΒΔΜΡ, ας Vulg. Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Arm., Clem-Recogn. Epiph. Scrivener considers the evidence against δῶ to be “overwhelming both in number and weight.” So also Keim. WH. bracket, Treg. and Tisch. omit.

da δῶ. For companionship, as in the case of the Twelve (Mk. vi. 7), of the Baptist’s disciples (Lk. vii. 19), of Barnabas and Saul (Acts xiii. 2), of Judas and Silas (xv. 27), of Barnabas and Mark (xv. 39), of Paul and Silas (xvi. 40), of Timothy and Silas (xvii. 14), of Timothy and Erastus (xix. 22). The testimony of two would be more weighty than that of one; and they had to bear witness to Christ’s words and works. Comp. Eccles. iv. 9–12; Gen. ii. 18. The reading da δῶ δῶ (B K) seems to be a combination of da δῶ and δῶ δῶ (Mk. vi. 7; Gen. vi. 19, 20).

heimer αὐτὸς ἐρχεσθαι. “He Himself (as distinct from these forerunners) was about to come.”

2. ὁ μὲν θερισμὸς πολύς, ... eis τὸν θερισμὸν αὐτοῦ. This saying is verbatim the same as that which Mt. ix. 37, 38 records as addressed to the disciples just before the mission of the Twelve. The Twelve and the Seventy were answers to the prayer thus prescribed; and both had the warning of the fewness of the labourers and the greatness of the work. The ἐλάγχῳ has no reference to the Seventy as being too few: the supply is always inadequate. We cannot conclude anything as to the time of year when the words were spoken from the mention of harvest. So common a metaphor might be used at any season. Com. Jn. iv. 35.

Why does RV. retain the “truly” of AV. in Mt. ix. 37 while abolishing it here? It has no authority in either place, and apparently comes from the quidem of Vulg., which represents μετὰ.

dεπόθητε. The verb does not occur in Mk. or Jn., nor in Mt. excepting in this saying (ix. 38). It is a favourite with Lk. (v. 12, vii. 28, 38, ix. 38, 40, xxi. 36, xxii. 32; Acts iv. 31, viii. 22, etc.). Elsewhere rare in N.T., but very freq. in LXX. For the constr. see Burton, § 200.

ὅτως ἐργάζατος ἐκβαλή. “Send forth with haste and urgency.” The verb expresses either pressing need, or the directness with which they are sent to their destination. Comp. Mk. i. 12; Mt. xii. 20; Jas. ii. 25. There is always human unwillingness to be
overcome: comp. Exod. iv. 10, 13; Judg. iv. 8; Jon. i. 3. For ἔργατας of agricultural labourers comp. Mt. xx. 1, 8; Jas. v. 4; Ecclus. xii. 1; and of labourers in the cause of religion, 2 Cor. xi. 13; Phil. iii. 2; 2 Tim. ii. 15.

3. ἰδοὺ ἀποστέλλω ὃδε, κ.τ.λ. The same is said to the Twelve, with πρόβατα for ἄρνας (Mt. x. 16). For ἀποστέλλω see on iv. 18. In the ancient homily wrongly attributed to Clement of Rome (Lft., Clement, ii. p. 219) we have the following: λέγει γὰρ ὁ Κύριος Ἐσούθη ὡς ἄρνια ἐν μέσῳ λύκων ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ ὁ Πέτρος αὐτῷ λέγει: Ἐὰν οὖν διασπαράξωσιν οἱ λύκοι τὰ ἄρνια; εἶπεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τῷ Πέτρῳ Μὴ φοβεῖσθωσαν τὰ ἄρνια τοὺς λύκους μετὰ τὸ ἀποθάνειν αὐτά. Then follows a loose quotation of Mt. x. 28 or Lk. xii. 4, 5. See A. Resch, Agrapha, Texte u. Untersuch. v. 4, p. 377, 1889.

4. μὴ βαστάζετε βαλλάντιον, μὴ πήραι, μὴ ὑποδήματα. The Talmud enjoins that no one is to go on the Temple Mount with staff, shoes, scrip, or money tied to him in his purse. Christ's messengers are to go out in the same spirit as they would go to the services of the temple, avoiding all distractions. Edersh. The Temple, p. 42. From βαστάζετε we infer that ὑποδήματα were not to be carried in addition to what were worn on the feet. Sandals were allowed in the temple. Comp. ix. 3, xxii. 35. The whole charge means, "Take with you none of the things which travellers commonly regard as indispensable. Your wants will be supplied." In N.T. βαλλάντιον occurs only in Lk. (xii. 33, xxii. 35, 36): in LXX Job xiv. 17. The word is quite classical: Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 42. See on ix. 3 and vii. 14.

μηδένα κατὰ τὴν ὃδὸν ἀπάνηθε. They are to go straight to their destination, and not give their message of good tidings until they have reached it. It is not greetings, but greetings κατὰ τὴν ὃδὸν that are forbidden. 2 Omnia pretermittatis, dum quod injunctum est peragatis (Aug.). Comp. 2 Kings iv. 29. Like the sayings in ix. 60, 62, this prohibition implies that entire devotion to the work in hand is necessary.

5. But directly they have reached a goal, and have obtained admission to a household, a greeting is to be given. Comp. ii. 14, εἰρήνη ἐν ἄνθρωποι; Jn. xx. 19, 21, 26, εἰρήνη ὑμῖν.

6. νῖς εἰρήνης. Another Hebraism: "one inclined to peace": dignus qui illo voto potitiatur. Comp. νῖς γεέννης (Mt. xxiii. 15); τῆς ἀπολείαις (Jn. xvii. 12); τῆς ἀπευθείαις (Eph. v. 6); θανάτου (2 Sam.

1 Comp. Non dicerius nos sicut pastor grege suam in manibus luporum malignorum (4 Esr. v. 18). Ouen lupum commissisti (Ter. Eunuch. v. i. 16). Other examples in Wetst. on Mt. x. 16. Here ἄρνας ἐν μέσῳ λύκων must be taken closely together: as certain of being attacked as lambs in the midst of wolves.

2 See Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 57, for a graphic illustration of the value of the precept, "Salute no man by the way." Pulchra est salutatio, sed pulchrior materia executio (Ambr. in loco).
xii. 5). Comp. τέκνα δρογγίς (Eph. ii. 3). It was a saying of Hillel, “Be thou of Aaron’s disciples, loving peace and seeking for peace.”

éπαναπαύσαται. This is the reading of Κ B for ἐπαναπαύσαται, like ἀναπαύσωσαι (Rev. xiv. 13). A 2 aor. pass. ἑσάρην is given by Choroiboscus. Veitch, sub. παλαι, p. 456. Comp. ἐπαναπαύσατο τὸ πνεῦμα ἐν’ ἄλλοις (Num. xi. 25; 2 Kings ii. 15). Here ἐπ’ αὐτῶν probably refers to the son of peace, not to the house. For εἰ δὲ μὴ γένε (which is freq. in Lk.) see small print on v. 36, and Burton, § 275.

ἐφ’ ὑμᾶς ἀνακάμψει. “As if it had been unspoken”; or, “as if it had been spoken to you, instead of by you.” Comp. Mt. ii. 12; Acts xviii. 21; Heb. xi. 15; Exod. xxxii. 27; 2 Sam. i. 22, viii. 13, etc. But they have no discretion as to giving this salutation, however unworthy the recipient may seem to be.

7. ἐν αὐτῇ δέ τῇ οἰκίᾳ μένετε. Not “in the same house” (as all English Versions, Vulg. and Luther), which would be ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ οἰκίᾳ, but “in that very house,” viz. the one which has given a welcome. Comp. ii. 38, xii. 33, xiii. 1, 31, xx. 19, xxiii. 12, xxiv. 13, 33; in all which places RV. has rightly “that very.” But here it has “that same,” and ver. 21 it changes “that” (AV.) to “that same.” Lk. prefers ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ὁρφῇ, ἡμέρᾳ, κ.τ.λ. The other Evangelists prefer ἐν ἑκείνῃ τῇ ὁρφῇ, κ.τ.λ.

ἐσθοντες. The poetic form ἐσθον ἐσθον is very rare in prose: comp. vii. 33, xxii. 30; Mk. i. 6; Lev. xvii. 10; Is. ix. 18; Eccles. xx. 18.

τὰ παρ’ αὐτῶν. What their entertainers provide: they are to consider themselves as members of the family, not as intruders; for their food and shelter are salary and not alms. Comp. τὰ παρ’ ὑμῶν, “the bounty which you provide” (Phil. iv. 18), and see Lft. on Gal. i. 12. The injunction is parallel to 1 Cor. ix. 7, not to 1 Cor. x. 27. Christ is freeing them from sensitiveness about accepting entertainment, not from scruples about eating food provided by heathen.

ἄξιος γὰρ ὁ ἐργάτης τοῦ μισθοῦ αὐτοῦ. Mt. x. 10 has τῆς τροφῆς αὐτοῦ. Epiphanius combines the two with Lk. iii. 14: ἄξιος γὰρ ὁ ἐργ. τ. μισθ. αὐτοῦ καὶ ἄρκετον τῷ ἐργαζομένῳ ἡ τροφή αὐτοῦ (Hebr. lxxx. 5, p. 1072 A). Much more interesting is the quotation in 1 Tim. v. 18, which has been made an objection to the genuineness of the Epistle. But it is probable (1) that Λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή applies only to θῶν ἀλογότα ὁ φιμώσεις, and (2) that ἄξιος ὁ ἐργάτης τοῦ μισθοῦ αὐτοῦ is given as a well-known proverb or saying of Christ. See Introduction, § 6, i. a.

μὴ μεταβαίνετε ἐξ οἰκίας εἰς οἰκίαν. “Do not go on changing,” i.e. μένετε. They were not to fear being burdensome to their first entertainers, nor to go back to those who had rejected them, still

1 Quod semel a dei opulentia exit, non frustra exit, sed aliquem certe invenit, cui id obtingat. Solatium ministerorum, qui sibi videntur nil edificare (Beng.).

“Talk not of wasted affection; affection never is wasted” (Longfellow).
less to seek more pleasant quarters. Perhaps also this is a warning against accepting numerous invitations which would waste precious time. To this day in the East travellers who arrive at an Arab village are overwhelmed with a round of invitations (Lasserre, *Évangiles*, p. 324). Note the exact and original antithesis between ες and ες, "out of" and "into the interior of."

8. καὶ εἰς ἥν ἀν πόλιν. Apparently vv. 5–7 apply to single dwellings, vv. 8–12 to towns. For δέχωνται see small print on viii. 13. We might expect εὰν δέχωνται for καὶ δέχωνται.

τὰ παραπληθεμένα ύμῖν. Just "what is offered," without demanding more or anything different. They must be neither greedy nor fastidious. Comp. ix. 16; Gen. xxiv. 33, xliii. 31; 1 Sam. xxviii. 22; 2 Sam. xii. 20; 2 Kings vi. 22; 4 Mac. vi. 15.

9. καὶ λέγετε αὐτοῖς. "And continue saying to them"; i.e. to the inhabitants generally, not merely to the sick.

"Εγγίκεν εφ' ὑμᾶς ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ. So that the last preaching resembled the first: Mt. iii. 2, iv. 17; Mk. i. 15. The Kingdom of Heaven is naturally thought of as coming "upon" men, down from above. For εγγίζειν ἐπὶ τινα see Ps. xxvi. 2; 1 Mac. v. 40, 42. Comp. Mt. xii. 28. Note Lk.'s favourite εγγίζειν.

10. One house might receive them, but the town as a whole reject them. In that case they are to leave the house (ἐξελθόντες) and deliver a public warning before leaving the town.

ἐὰς τὰς πλατείας. "Into the open streets" (πλάξ, πλάτος): It is the fem. of πλατός with δῶς understood: xiii. 26, xiv. 21; Acts v. 15; Prov. vii. 6; Is. xv. 3; Ezek. vii. 19. Not in Mk. or Jn.

11. Καὶ τὸν κοινορτὸν τὸν κολληθέντα ἡμῖν. "Even the dust that cleaveth to us." "Not even the smallest thing of yours will we have." Hobart claims κολλάω as a medical word (pp. 128, 129). In N.T. it is used only in the passive with reflexive force. It occurs seven times in Lk. (xv. 15; Acts v. 13, viii. 29, ix. 26, x. 28, xvii. 34) and five times elsewhere (Mt. xix. 5; Rom. xii. 9; 1 Cor. vi. 16, 17; Rev. xviii. 5), two of which are quotations from LXX, where it is frequent; once in the active (Jer. xiii. 11). Neither in LXX (excepting Tobit vii. 16 Χ) nor in N.T. does ἀπομάσσειν occur again: comp. ἐκμᾶσσειν (vii. 38, 44).

πλῆν τοῦτο γινώσκετε δτι. "But, although you reject us, the fact remains that you must perceive, that," etc. See on vi. 24, 35. Note that there is no ἐφ' ὑμᾶς (om. Β Δ Λ Ξ) after ἡγγίκεν. The message of mercy has become a sentence of judgment. "The Kingdom has come nigh, but not on you, because you have put it from you."

Lk. alone of the Evangelists uses τοῦτο . . . δτι (xii. 39; Acts xxiv. 14). Jn. has δτι after δὰ τοῦτο, but after τοῦτο has ἰδα.
12. ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἐκείνῃ. The day of judgment following on the completion of the Kingdom, as is clear from ver. 14. Comp. xxi. 34; Mt. vii. 22; 2 Thes. i. 10; 2 Tim. i. 12, 18, iv. 8. Lk. vi. 23 is different. As in ver. 24, Lk. omits the introductory ἄμην: he also omits καὶ Γομόρροις. The people in the cities of the plain had had no such opportunities as those to whom Christ's own disciples preached. Comp. Mt. xi. 23.

αὐξεὶτοπέτωρον. Remissius (Vulg.); tolerabilis (Lat. Vet.). Only the comparative of ἀνέκτος (ἀνέχομαι) occurs in N.T., and always in this phrase: Mt. x. 15, xi. 22, 24. Not in LXX.

13-15. The Solemn Farewell to the Cities in which He had preached and manifested Himself in vain. The mention of the judgment which awaits the towns that shall reject His forerunners naturally leads to the mention of those places which have already rejected Him. It is plain from ver. 16 that this lamentation over the three cities is part of the address to the Seventy. The wording is almost the same as Mt. xi. 21-24, but there the comparison with Sodom is joined to the denunciation of Capernaum.

18. Χοραζεῖν. Excepting here and the similar Woe in Mt. xi. 21, Chorazin is not mentioned in N.T. This shows us how much of Christ's work is left unrecorded (Jn. xxii. 25). The name does not occur in O.T. nor in Josephus. It may be identified with the ruins now called Kerāzeh, about two miles N.E. of Tell Hûm, which is supposed to be Capernaum; and Jerome tells us that Chorazin was two miles from Capernaum: est autem nunc desertum in secundo lapide a Capharnaum. Some identify Tell Hûm with Chorazin; but Conder, who does not believe that Tell Hûm is Capernaum, nevertheless regards Kerāzeh as certainly Chorazin (Handbook to the Bible, pp. 324-326): and this is now the prevailing view. D.B. s.v.

ἐν σάκκῳ . . . καθήμεναι. Constructio ad sensum: comp. ver. 8. Χοραζεῖν and Βηθσαϊδα are feminine, and hence the reading καθήμεναι (D).

ἐν σάκκῳ. Our "sackcloth" gives a wrong idea of σάκκος, which was made of the hair of goats and other animals, and was used for clothing. But sacks were made of it (Gen. xlii. 25; Josh. ix. 4) as well as garments. Comp. Jon. iii. 6. The πᾶλαι points to a ministry of considerable duration in these cities.

μετενόησαν. Like μετανοεῖν (see on iii. 3), μετενόησαν is much more frequent in Lk. (xi. 32, xiii. 3, 5, xv. 7, etc.) than in Mt. and Mk. Neither is found in Jn. See on v. 32.

14. πλὴν Τύρῳ καὶ Σιδῶνι. "But, guilty as Tyre and Sidon are, yet," etc. They were both of them heathen commercial towns, and are frequently denounced by the Prophets for their wickedness: Is. xxiii.; Jer. xxv. 22, xlvi. 4; Ezek. xxvi. 3-7, xxviii. 12-22. Of Chorazin and Bethsaida the paradox was true,
that the Kingdom of God had come nigh to them, and yet they were far from the Kingdom of God.

15. \( \mu \eta \; \zeta \omega s \; o\delta r a n o u \; \psi \omega \theta \epsilon \iota \gamma \); "Shalt thou be exalted as far as heaven? Thou shalt be thrust down as far as Hades." Both here and Mt. xi. 23 the reading \( \eta \; \ldots \; \psi \omega \theta \epsilon \iota \gamma \) is found in many authorities; but the evidence against it (\( B \; D \; L \; E \)) is conclusive. Godet supports it as being \textit{parfaitement claire et simple}; which is the explanation of the corruption. There is less certainty as to whether \( \kappa a t a \beta \theta \iota \varsigma \eta \), which is probably right in Mt., is right here (\( B \; D \)): \( \kappa a t a \beta \iota \beta \alpha \sigma \theta \iota \varsigma \eta \) is well supported.

In Ezek. xxxi. 16, 17 we have both \( \kappa a t e \beta \beta \alpha \zeta \omicron \varsigma \; \epsilon i \zeta \; \zeta \omicron \) and \( \kappa a t e \beta \beta \sigma \varsigma \alpha \varsigma \; \epsilon i \zeta \; \zeta \omicron \). Heaven and Hades (not Gehenna) here stand for height of glory and depth of shame (Is. xiv. 13–15). The desolation of the whole neighbourhood, and the difficulty of identifying even the sites of these flourishing towns, is part of the fulfilment of this prophecy. See Jos. B. J. iii. 10. 9; Farrar, \textit{Life of Christ}, ii. 101; Tristram, \textit{Bible Places}, 267; Renan, \textit{L'Antechrist}, p. 277.

16. \( ' o \; \alpha \kappa o \omega \nu \; \upsilon \mu \dot{o} \nu \; \epsilon \mu o \nu \; \alpha \kappa o \iota \iota \). Note the \textit{chiasmus}. This verse connects the work of Christ with the work of His disciples (Acts ix. 4), and forms a solemn conclusion to the address to the Seventy. Those who reject their message will share the lot of those who rejected Christ: \(^1\) all alike have rejected God. Comp. Mt. x. 40; Jn. xiii. 20; i Thes. iv. 8; i Sam. viii. 7. The Seventy must do their utmost to avert so miserable a result of their labours. For \( \delta e t e c i \) see on vii. 30. Syr-Sin. paraphrases.

17–24. The Return of the Seventy. They would not all return at once, and probably did not all return to the same place, but met Jesus at different points as He followed them. Contrast the very brief account of the return of the Twelve (ix. 10). Trench, \textit{Studies in the Gospels}, p. 225.

17. \( ' y p e t r e p \tau a \; d e \; o i \; \epsilon \beta \theta \omicron \mu \iota \kappa o \tau a \). Most of the authorities which add \( \delta i o \) in ver. 1 add it here also. By "returned" is meant that they came back to Jesus. He meanwhile had been moving. See on iv. 14 and i. 56.

\( k a i \; t a \; \delta a m \omicron \omicron \omicron \; \upsilon \sigma t a \sigma s e t a i \). "Even the demons are being subjected." This was more than they expected, for they had only been told to heal the \textit{sick} (ver. 9); whereas the Twelve were expressly endowed with power to cast out demons (ix. 1). There is nothing to show that Lk. considers exorcizing evil spirits to be the highest of gifts; but the Seventy were specially elated at possessing this power. They think more of it than of their success in proclaiming the Kingdom; yet they recognize that it is derived from their Master. It is in His name that they can exorcize. His reply is partly (ver. 20) like the reply to the woman who pro-

\(^1\) \( \text{Il cherchait de toute mani\'ere \`a \`etablir en principe que ses ap\'tres c'\'etait lui-m\'eme} \) (Renan, \textit{V. de J.}, p. 294).
nounced His Mother to be blessed (xi. 27, 28). They may admire this; but there is something much more admirable.

18. Ἐθεώρων τῶν Σατανάν. At the very time when His ministers were casting out Satan's ministers,—nay, even as He was sending them forth to their work, Jesus knew that Satan was being overcome. In the defeat of the demons He saw the downfall of their chief. This passage is again conclusive evidence as to Christ's teaching respecting the existence of a personal power of evil. See on viii. 12, and comp. xiii. 16, xxii. 31. In all these cases it would have been quite natural to speak of impersonal evil. See D.B. art. "Satan"; Edersh. L. § 2. ii. App. xiii. § ii.

In N.T. the form is Σατανᾶς (not excepting 2 Cor. xii. 7), which is declined, and almost invariably has the art.; but xxii. 3 and Mk. iii. 23 are exceptions. In LXX the word is rare. We have σατάν, indecl. and without art., 1 Kings xi. 14, [23, 23], in the sense of "adversary," a human enemy; and τῶν Σατανᾶ, or τῶν Σαταν, Ecclus. xxi. 27.

For the imperf. comp. Acts xviii. 5, and see Win. xl. 3. d, p. 336.

δός ἀδραπῆν. It was as visible and unmistakable: comp. xvii. 24; Mt. xxiv. 27. The words are amphibolous, but are better taken with ἔθεωρων than with ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, which is to be joined with πεσόντα: comp. ix. 17, 27, 57, xiii. 1, etc. In B 254 ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ precedes δός ἀδραπῆν. As in ver. 15, heaven is here put for the height of prosperity and power: comp. Is. xiv. 12 and τὰ ἐπουράνια (Eph. vi. 12).1

πεσόντα. Last with emphasis. The "fallen" of RV. is no improvement on the "fall" of AV. "I beheld Satan fallen" means "saw him prostrate after his fall." The aor. indicates the coincidence between the success of the Seventy and Christ's vision of Satan's overthrow; and neither "fallen" nor "falling" (cadentem, Vulg.) express this so well as "fall" in English. See Burton, § 146, and T. S. Evans, Expositor, 2nd series, iii. p. 164. Some refer the fall to the original fall of the Angels (Jude 6), in which case ἔθεωρων refers to the Son pre-existing with the Father. Others to the Incarnation, or the Temptation. Rather, it refers to the success of the disciples regarded as a symbol and earnest of the complete overthrow of Satan.2 Jesus had been contemplating evil as a power overthrown. In any case there is no analogy between this passage and Rev. xii. 12: the point is not that the devil has come down to work mischief on the earth, but that his power to work mischief is broken.

This verse is sometimes quite otherwise explained. "You are elated at

1 Comp. πρὸς ὀφρανῶν βιβλίων (Soph. O. C. 381); Cæsar furtur in caelum (Cic. Phil. iv. 3), collegam de cælo detraxisti (Phil. ii. 42).
2 Cum vos nuper mitterem ad evangelizandum videbam daemonem sub potestate a me privatum quasi de cælo cadere, ac per vos magis casurum (Corn. à Lap.).
your victory over the demons, and are proud of your spiritual powers. Beware of spiritual pride. There was a time when I beheld Satan himself fall even from heaven owing to this sin.” Others make it a rebuke to complacency and elation, but in another way. “You are overjoyed at finding that demons are subject to you. That is no very great thing. I once beheld their sovereign cast out of heaven itself; and their subjection was involved in his overthrow.” Both these interpretations depend upon a misunderstanding of τοῦ ὀθρανοῦ, which does not mean the abode of the Angels, but the summit of power (Lam. ii. 1). This is well expressed in the Clementine Liturgy, in the Collect at the dismissal of the energumens, δὴ ἴσας αὐτῶν ὡς ἀνατρεπτὴν ἐξ ὀθρανοῦ εἰς γῆν, οὐ τοπικῶ ὑγματὶ, ἀλλὰ ἀπὸ τιμῆς εἰς ἀτιμῶν, δἰ ἐκοῦσον αὐτοῦ κακόν τινα. Hammond, Liturgies Eastern and Western, Oxford, 1878, p. 5.

19. δεῦκα ὑμῖν τὴν ἐξουσίαν. The powers which they have received are larger than they had supposed. They possessed during their mission, and still retain, the εξουσία to vanquish the powers of evil. Note the article, which is almost peculiar to this passage. Contrast v. 24, ix. 1, xii. 5, xix. 17; Acts ix. 14. The passage is possibly moulded on Ps. xci. 13: εἰς ἀσπίδα καὶ βασιλικὸν ἐπιθήμη, καὶ καταπατήσεις λέοντα καὶ δράκοντα; but comp. Deut. viii. 15: τοῦ ἀγαγόντος σε διὰ τῆς ἐρήμου τῆς μεγάλης καὶ τῆς φοβερᾶς ἐκείνης, οὐ δόμη δάκνων καὶ σκορπίων. The meaning is that no fraud or treachery shall prevail against them.

καὶ ἐπὶ π. τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ ἐχθροῦ. Contrast the δύναμις of the enemy with the εξουσία given by Christ. Nor shall any hostile strength or ability succeed. The promise in both cases refers to victory over spiritual foes rather than to immunity from bodily injuries. “The enemy” means Satan: Mt. xiii. 25; Rom. xvi. 20; 1 Pet. v. 8. But protection from physical harm may be included (Acts xxviii. 3–5). The appendix to Mk. more clearly includes this (xvi. 18). Comp. the story of S. John being preserved from being harmed by boiling oil (Tertul. Præscr. Hær. xxxvi.), or by drinking hemlock (Lips. Apokr. Apostelgesch. i. pp. 426, 428, 432, 480, etc.). This latter story is unknown to the Fathers of the first six centuries.

ἐπὶ πᾶσαν τὴν δυν. This does not depend upon πατεῖν, as is shown by the change of prep. and case, but upon εξουσίαν. They have εξουσία over every δύναμις. Syr-Sin. omits πᾶσαν.

πατεῖν ἐπάνω. Not of trampling under foot as vanquished, but of walking upon without being hurt.

οὐδὲν ομάσ αὐτῇ ἀδικήσῃ. Strong negation: οὐδὲν is probably the subject of ἀδικήσῃ. We might translate, “and the power of the enemy shall not in anywise hurt you.” For ἀδικεῖν with double acc. comp. Acts xxv. 10; Gal. iv. 12; Phil. 18; and for ἀδικεῖν in the sense of “injure” comp. Rev. vii. 3, ix. 4. The reading ἀδικήσῃ (B C) looks like a grammatical correction.

1 Thus Gregory the Great: Mire Dominus, ut in discipulorum cordibus elationem premeret, max judicium ruine retulit, quod ipso magister elationis accepti; ut in auctore superiori discerent, quid de elationis vitio formidarent (Moral. xxiii. 6, Migne, lxxvi. 259).
This last clause sums up the other two. They have power over fraud and force; nothing shall harm them. Comp. Jn. x. 28, 29; Is. xi. 8, 9.

20. ἡλὴν ἐν τούτῳ μὴ χαίρετε. "But (although you may well rejoice, yet) cease to rejoice in this, but continue to rejoice in something better." Pres. imperat. in both cases. Ἰστα λατιτίτια περικολος συμβιω καταλλήλω συμβεβεβυκτο: ἱλα δεμίουσα γραμμανε γαμυμέναν ανεμνθ ἂναμπο (Grotius). The casting out of demons gives no security for the possession of eternal life. It is not one of τὰ χαίρετα τὰ μεῖκον: still less is it the καθ' ἑπερβολὴν δόνον (1 Cor. xii. 31). A Judas might cast out demons. Comp. "I will have mercy, and not sacrifice" (Hos. vi. 6), which does not mean that sacrifice is forbidden, but that mercy is greatly superior. See on xxii. 28 and comp. xiv. 12, 13. For ἡλὴν comp. vii. ii, 14.

τὰ ὁνόματι δικαίαν ἐγγεγραμματε ἐν τοῖς οἰδανοῖς. "Your names have been written, and remain written, in heaven," as citizens possessing the full privileges of the heavenly commonwealth: ἐν καλίς ύπερ ἄθανατοι δικαιοσυνίας (Beng.). But there is probably no reference to ἐν τῷ ὁνόματι σου (ver. 17). "Do not rejoice because you exorcize demons in My name, but rejoice because your names are written in heaven," is a false antithesis. There is no emphasis on ὑμῶν. Comp. Heb. xii. 23; Rev. iii. 5, xvii. 8, 12, 15, xxi. 27, xxi. 19; Phil. iii. 20. The figure is one of many taken from O.T. and endued with a higher meaning: Is. iv. 3; Ezek. xiii. 9; Dan. xii. 1. Comp. Hermas, Vis. i. 3. 2; Sim. ii. 9. Contrast Jer. xvii. 13. For Rabbinical illustrations see Wetst. on Phil. iv. 3. Allusion to the Oriental custom of recording in the archives the names of benefactors (Esth. x. 2; Hdt. viii. 90. 6) is not probable. And it is clear from Rev. iii. 5, 19; Exod. xxxii. 32; Ps. lxix. 28 that absolute predestination is not included in the metaphor. For the Hebr. plur. τοῖς οἰδανοῖς comp. xii. 33, xxi. 26; Acts vii. 56.

21-24. The Exultation of Jesus over the Divine Preference shown to the Disciples. Mt. xi. 25-27. Nowhere else is anything of the kind recorded of Christ. Mt. connects it with the Woes on the three cities, and connects these with the message from the Baptist.

21. ἐν αὐτῷ τῇ ὁρᾷ. "In that very hour" (see small print on ver. 7), making the connexion with the return of the Seventy close.

1 Justin Martyr says to the Roman Emperors, ὤμεσ ὡς ἀποκτείνας μὲν δύναμεν, ῥήματα δ' ὑπὸ (Apol. i. 2). He is probably adapting Plat. Apol. 30 C.

2 Augustine seems to suggest it Enarr. in Ps. xci. But Enarr. in Ps. cxxx. he says well: Non omnes Christiani boni dæmonia excitant; omnium tamen nominum scripta sunt in celo. Non eos voluit gaudere ex eo quod proprium habebant, sed ex eo quod cum ceteris salutem tenebant.
and express. Both this and \( a^\nu \varphi \) \( \tau \varphi \) \( \delta \rho \eta \) (without \( \delta \nu \)) are peculiar to Lk. (vii. 21?, xii. 12, xx. 19: and ii. 38; Acts xvi. 18, xxii. 13). In the parallel passage we have \( \varepsilon\nu \varepsilon\acute{\iota}i\nu\nu \tau \rho \) \( \tau \rho \) \( \kappa \alpha \rho \rho \) (Mt. xi. 25).

\( \varepsilon\gamma\alpha\lambda\lambda\iota\alpha\varsigma\tau\iota \) \( \pi\nu\varepsilon\mu\varsigma\tau\iota \) \( \tau \theta \) \( \alpha\gamma\iota \). “Exulted in the Holy Spirit,” i.e. this holy joy is a Divine inspiration. The fact is analogous to His being “led by the Spirit in the wilderness” (iv. 1). Nowhere else is anything of the kind recorded of Christ. The verb is a strong one: comp. i. 47; Acts ii. 26, xvi. 34; 2 Sam. i. 20; 1 Chron. xvi. 31; Hab. iii. 18; Is. xii. 6, xxv. 9; Psalms passim. Mt. has merely \( \alpha\tau\omicron\kappa\omicron\rho\iota\beta\iota\epsilon\iota\varsigma\iota\).

The strangeness of the expression “exulted in the Holy Spirit” has led to the omission of \( \tau \rho \) \( \alpha\gamma\iota \) in A Syr-Sin. and some inferior authorities. There is no parallel in Scripture. Rom. i. 4; Heb. ix. 14; 1 Pet. iii. 18, are not analogous.

\[ 'E\xi\omicron\omicrom
The latter form avoids the difficulty about thanking God for hiding from the wise. In application the ἔχομαι are made to be the Gentiles. The Marcionians had the future,—ἔχομαι (Iren. i. 20. 3).

The word ἔχομαι (ἐχθέοις, τηλαγοῦν) represents the Latin infants. Lat. Vet. and Vulg. have parvulis here and Mt. xi. 25; but infantium, Mt. xxi. 16. It is opposed to ἄνθρωπος, 1 Cor. xiii. 11; Eph. iv. 14; and to τέλειος, Heb. v. 13.

This resumes the expression of thanks; and hence the second ἐγνωκαί, like the first, depends upon ἔχομαι. "I thank Thee that thus it was well-pleasing." Comp. Phil. iv. 3; Phil. 20; Rev. xvi. 7, xxii. 20.

ὁ πατήρ. The nom. with the art. often takes the place of the voc. in N.T., and generally without any difference in meaning. This is specially the case with imperatives (viii. 54, xii. 32; Mt. xxvii. 29?; Mk. v. 41, ix. 25; Col. iii. 18; Eph. vi. 1, etc.), and may often be due to Hebrew influence (2 Kings ix. 31; Jer. xlvii. 6). Here there is perhaps a slight difference between πατέρα and ὁ πατήρ, the latter meaning, "Thou who art the Father of all." The use of ὁ πατήρ for πατέρα may be due to liturgical influence. Comp. Mk. xiv. 36; Rom. viii. 15; and see Lft. on Gal. iv. 6 and Col. iii. 18; also Wis. xxix. 2, p. 227; Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 76.

εἰδοκία ἐγνώκαί ἐμπροσθέν σου. A Hebraism, with εἰδοκία first for emphasis. See on ii. 14.

22. The importance of this verse, which is also in Mt. (xi. 27), has long been recognized. It is impossible upon any principles of criticism to question its genuineness, or its right to be regarded as among the earliest materials made use of by the Evangelists. And it contains the whole of the Christology of the Fourth Gospel. It is like "an aerolite from the Johannine heaven" (Hase, Gesch. Jesu, p. 527); and for that very reason causes perplexity to those who deny the solidarity between the Johannine heaven and the Synoptic earth. It should be compared with the following passages: Jn. iii. 35, vi. 46, viii. 19, x. 15, 30, xiv. 9, xvi. 15, xvii. 6, 10.1

The introductory insertion, καὶ στραφεῖς πρὸς τοὺς μαθητὰς εἶπεν (AC) is one of the few points in which the TR. (which withospel Ε omits the words) differs from the third edition of Steph.

22. Πάντα μοι παραδόθη. The πάντα seems primarily to refer to the revealing and concealing. Christ has full power in executing

1 "This passage is one of the best authenticated in the Synoptic Gospels. It is found in exact parallelism both in Mt. and Lk., and is therefore known to have been part of that 'collection of discourses' (cf. Holtzmann, Synopt. Evangelien, p. 184; Ewald, Evangelien, pp. 20, 255; Weissacker, pp. 166-169), in all probability the composition of the Apostle St. Matthew, which many critics believe to be the oldest of all the Evangelical documents. And yet once grant the authenticity of this passage, and there is nothing in the Johannine Christology that it does not cover. Even the doctrine of pre-existence seems to be implicitly contained in it" (Sanday, Fourth Gospel, p. 109). Keim affirms that "There is no more violent criticism than that which Strauss has introduced" of repudiating a passage so strongly attested (Ies. of Naz. iv. p. 63).
the Divine decrees. But it is arbitrary to confine the πάντα to the potestas revelandi.

γνῶσκε τις οἶτιν ὁ θεός. “ Comes to know what His nature is, His counsel, His will.” Mt. has ἐπιγνῶσκει τὸν θεόν, where the compound verb covers what is here expressed by the τίς. Both might be translations of the same Aramaic.

On purely subjective grounds Keim contends for the Marcionite reading ἔγνω, which is certainly as old as Justin (Apol. i. 63), although he has γνῶσκει, Try. c. Even Meyer thinks that ἔγνω may be original. But the evidence against it is overwhelming.

Syr-Sin. makes the two clauses interrogative: “Who knoweth the Son, except the Father? and who knoweth the Father, except the Son?”

πως λέγει... ἀποκαλύψαι. “Willing to reveal” (RV.); “will reveal” (AV.), is the simple future. There is a similar weakening of βολεσθαι in AV. Acts xviii. 15, and of θέλειν, xix. 14. See small print on ix. 22, 24.

23, 24. In Mt. xiii. 16, 17 this saying, with some slight differences, occurs in quite another connexion, viz. after the explanation of the reason for Christ’s speaking in parables. If the words were uttered only once, Lk. appears to give the actual position. The καὶ ἵνα seems to imply some interval between vv. 22 and 23. Christ’s thanksgiving seems to have been uttered publicly, in the place where the returning Seventy met Him.

23. ἰδόντες. The absence of ἰδεῖς is remarkable. Contrast ἱδὼν ἐς μακάριοι οἱ ὁφθαλμοί (Mt. xiii. 16). Lk. has no equivalent to καὶ τὰ ἵνα [جماعة] ὅτι ἀκούσαν. Comp. μακάριοι οἱ γυνόμενοι ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις εἰκοίναι ἰδεῖν τὰ ἀγαθά (Ps. Sol. xvii. 50, xviii. 7).

24. πολλοί προφήται καὶ βασιλεῖς. Balaam, Moses, Isaiah, and Hezekiah. For βασιλεῖς Mt. has ἰδίκαιοι, and for ἡσύχασαν has ἐπεθύμησαν. Vulg. has voluerunt here and cupidírunt in Mt. Neither AV. nor RV. distinguishes. Note that Lk. again omits the introductory ὅπως, as in ver. 12. See on xii. 44. As to the Prophets comp. 1 Pet. i. 10, 11.

ἀνθρώπῳ ἵναις. ἰδέῃς ἱδόντες. Here Mt., who has given the emphatic contrast between “you” and the ancients at the outset, omits the ἰδεῖς. One suspects that his arrangement of the pronouns is the original one. Lk. has no ἰδεῖς with ἁκούσετε. In 2 Cor. xi. 29 we have an emphatic pronoun with the second verb and not with the first.

25–29. The Lawyer’s Questions. This incident forms the introduction to the Parable of the Good Samaritan. Comp. xii. 13–15, xiv. 15, xv. 1–3. The identification of this lawyer with the one who asked, “Which is the great commandment in the law?” (Mk. xii. 28–32; Mt. xxii. 35–40) is precarious, but perhaps ought not to be set aside as impossible. There the question is theological and speculative; here it is practical. Place, introduction, and issue are quite different; and the quotation from the Law
which is common to the narratives is here uttered by the lawyer, there by Christ. An identification with the man who had great possessions, and who asked the very same question as the lawyer asks here, although in a very different spirit (Mt. x. 17-22; Mt. xix. 16-22), is impossible, because Lk. himself records that in full (xviii. 18-23). The opening words of this narrative point to an Aramaic source.

25. νομικός τις ἀνέστη ἐκπειρᾶς τὸν αὐτὸν. See on vii. 30. Excepting Mt. xxii. 35, which is possibly parallel to this, νομικός is used by no other Evangelist. The ἀνέστη implies a situation in which the company were seated. Neither this question nor the one respecting the great commandment was calculated to place Jesus in a difficulty, but rather to test His ability as a teacher: the ἐκπειρᾶς (see small print on iv. 12) does not imply a sinister attempt to entrap Him. This use of τις (vii. 30, 31, 33, 38) is freq. in Lk.

τί ποιήσας. The tense implies that by the performance of some one thing eternal life can be secured. What heroic act must be performed, or what great sacrifice made? The form of question involves an erroneous view of eternal life and its relation to this life. Contrast the Philippian gauler (Acts xvi. 30).

ζωὴν αἰώνιον κληρονομῆσαι. The verb is freq. in LXX of the occupation of Canaan by the Israelites (Deut. iv. 22, 26, vi. 1, etc.), and thence is transferred to the perfect possession to be enjoyed in the Kingdom of the Messiah (Ps. xxiv. 13, xxxvi. 9, 11, 22, 29; Is. lx. 21); both uses being based upon the original promise to Abraham. See Wsctt. Hebrews, pp. 167-169. Lk. like Jn., never uses αἰώνιος of anything but eternal beatitude (xvi. 9, xviii. 18, 30). The notion of endlessness, although not necessarily expressed, is probably implied in the word. See Wsctt. Ep. of St. John, pp. 204-208; App. E, Gosp. of S. John in Camb. Grk. Test.; and the literature quoted in Zoeckler, Handb. d. Theol. Wissjt. iii. pp. 199-201. With the whole expression comp. oi δὲ ὅσιοι κυρίον κληρονομήσοντες ζωὴν ἐν ἐθνοφυσίᾳ (Ps. Sol xiv. 7), and ὅσιοι κυρίον κληρονομήσοντες ἐπαγγελίας κυρίον (xii. 8).

26. ἐν τῷ νόμῳ. First with emphasis. A νομικός ought to know that ἐν τῷ νόμῳ the answer to the question is plainly given: ἐπὶ τὸν νόμον αὐτὸν παρατέμπει (Euthym.).

πῶς ἀναγινώσκεις; Equivalent to the Rabbinical formula, when scriptural evidence was wanted, “What readest thou?” But perhaps the πῶς implies a little more, viz. “to what effect”? The form of question does not necessarily imply a rebuke. For ἀναγινώσκειν see iv. 16. That Jesus pointed to the man’s phylactery and meant, “What have you got written there?” is conjecture. That he had “Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself” on his phylactery, is improbable. The first of the two laws was written on phylacteries, and the Jews recited it morning and evening,
from Deut. vi. 5, xi. 13; hence it was the natural answer to Christ's question. That he adds the second law, from Lev. xix. 18, is remarkable, and it may be that he was desirous of leading up to the question, "And who is my neighbour?" See D.B.2 art. "Frontlets"; Schaff's Herzog, art. "Phylactery."

27. Here, as in Mk. xii. 30, we have four powers with which God is to be loved. Mt. xxii. 37 follows Heb. and LXX in giving three. They cover man's physical, intellectual, and moral activity. Mk. and LXX have εκ throughout; Mt. has εν throughout; Lk. changes from εκ to εν. For the last words comp. Rom. xiii. 9.

28. Ὄρθως ἀπεκρίθης. Comp. Ὄρθως ἐκρώνας (vii. 43). In Mk xii. 32 it is the scribe who commends Jesus for His answer.

τούτο ποιεῖ. Pres. imperat. "Continually do this," not merely do it once for all; with special reference to the form of the lawyer's question (ver. 25). See Rom. ii. 13, x. 5; Lev. xviii. 5.

29. θέλων δικαιώσαι ἐαυτόν. Not merely "willing," but "wishing to justify himself." For what? Some say, for having omitted to perform this duty in the past. Others, for having asked such a question, the answer to which had been shown to be so simple. The latter is perhaps nearer the fact; but it almost involves the other. "Wishing to put himself in the right," he points out that the answer given is not adequate, because there is doubt as to the meaning of "one's neighbour." Qui multa interrogant non multa facere gestiunt (Beng.). For δικαιώσαι see on vii. 35 and Rom. i. 17.

καὶ τις ἐστίν μου πλησίον; The question was a very real one to a Jew of that age. Lightfoot, ad loc., quotes from Maimonides, "he excepts all Gentiles when he saith, His neighbour. An Israelite killing a stranger inhabitant, he doth not die for it by the Sanhedrim; because he said, If any one lift up himself against his neighbour."

καὶ τις ἐστίν μου πλησίον; The καὶ accepts what is said, and leads on to another question: comp. xviii. 26; Jn. ix. 36; 2 Cor. ii. 2. Win. liii. 3. a, p. 545. For the omission of the art. before πλησίον (μου perhaps taking its place) see Win. xix. 5. b, p. 163: but πλησίον may be an adverb.

30-37. § The Parable of the Good Samaritan. Entirely in harmony with the general character of this Gospel as teaching that righteousness and salvation are not the exclusive privilege of the Jew. The parable is not an answer to the original question (ver. 25), and therefore in no way implies that works of benevolence secure eternal life. It is an answer to the new question (ver. 29), and teaches that no one who is striving to love his neighbour as himself can be in doubt as to who is his neighbour. We may believe that the narrative is not fiction, but history. Jesus would not be likely to invent such behaviour, and attribute it to priest,
Levite, and Samaritan, if it had not actually occurred. Nowhere else does He speak against priests or Levites. Moreover, the parable would have far more point if taken from real life.\(^1\)

30. ὑπολαβῶν. "Took him up" to reply to him. Here only in N.T. has ὑπολαμβάνω this meaning, which is quite classical and freq. in Job (ii. 4, iv. 1, vi. 1, ix. 1, xii. 1, xv. 1, xvi. 1, etc.). Contrast vii. 43; Acts ii. 15; Job xxv. 3, where it means "I suppose."

Here Vulg. has suscipiens, with suspiciens as v.l. in many MSS. Besides these two, Lat. Vet. has subiciens (e) and respondens (f); but not excipiens, which would be an equivalent. Syr-Sin. omits.

"Ανθρωπός τις κατέβαινεν. The road is downhill; but besides this we commonly talk of “going down” from the capital. The narrative implies that the man is a Jew. Jericho is about twenty miles from Jerusalem; and the road still, as in Jerome’s day, has a bad name for brigandage from "the Arabian in the wilderness" (Jer. iii. 2), i.e. the Bedawin robbers who infest the unfrequented roads. Sir F. Henniker was murdered here in 1820.\(^2\) It is possible that Jesus was on this road at the time when He delivered the parable; for Bethany is on it, and the next event takes place there (vv. 38-42).

λησταίς περιέπεσαν. Change from imperf. to aor. "Fell among robbers," so that they were all round him. Quite classical; comp. Jas. i. 2. Wetst. gives instances of this very phrase in profane authors, and it is in correct to classify περιέπεσαν as a medical word. For ληστής, "robber" (xix. 46, xxii. 52; Jn. xviii. 40), as distinct from κλέπτης, "thief" (xii. 33, 39; Jn. xii. 6), see Trench, Syn. xlv.

οὶ καὶ ἐκδύσατες αὐτὸν. “Who, in addition to other violence, stripped him.” Robbers naturally plunder their victims, but do

\(^1\) "The spot indicated by our Lord as the scene of the parable is unmistakable. About half-way down the descent from Jerusalem to Jericho, close to the deep gorge of Wady Kelt, the sides of which are honeycombed by a labyrinth of caves, in olden times and to the present day the resort of freebooters and outlaws, is a heap of ruins, marking the site of an ancient khan. The Kahn el Ahmar, as the ruin is called, possessed a deep well, with a scanty supply of water. Not another building or trace of human habitation is to be found on any part of the road, which descends 3000 feet from the neighbourhood of Bethany to the entrance into the plain of Jordan. Irregular projecting masses of rock and frequent sharp turns of the road afford everywhere safe cover and retreat for robbers" (Tristram, Eastern Customs, pp. 220).

\(^2\) It was near Jericho that Pompey destroyed strongholds of brigands (Strabo, Geogr. xvi. 2. 41). Jerome explains “the Going up to Adummim” or “Ascent of the Red” (Josh. xv. 7, xviii. 17), which is identified with this road, as so called from the blood which is there shed by robbers. The explanation is probably wrong, but the evidence for the robbers holds good (De Locis Heb. s.v. Adummim). The Knights Templars protected pilgrims along this road. For a description of it see Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 424; Keim, Jes. of Naz. p. 71.
not always strip them. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 28; with double accusative, Mt. xxvii. 31; Mk. xv. 20. It was because he tried to keep his clothes, and also to disable him, that they added blows to robbery. For the phrase πληγάς ἔπιθετες comp. Acts xvi. 23; Rev. xxii. 18: in class. Grk. πλ. ἐμβάλλεν. Cicero has plagam alicui imponere (Pro Sest. xix. 44); also vulnera alicui imponere (De Fin. iv. 24. 66). For ἰμμαθανή comp. 4 Mac. iv. 11.

31. κατὰ συγκυρίαν. Not exactly “by chance,” but “by way of coincidence, by concurrence.” Vulg. has accidit ut; Lat. Vet. fortuito (a ff q r), forte (d), derepente (e), while several omit (b c i l). The word occurs here only in N.T. and is rare elsewhere. In Hippocrates we have δι’ ἄλλην τινα συγκυρίαν and τὰ ἀπὸ συγκυρίας. Neither συντυχία nor τίχυχ occurs in N.T.; and τίχη only once or twice, συντυχία not once, in LXX. Mult. bona occasiones latent sub his quæ fortuita videantur. Scriptura nil describit fidemere ut fortuitum (Beng.).

ἰερεὺς οὗς καταβαινειν. This implies that he also was on his way from Jerusalem. That he was going home after discharging his turn of service, and that Jericho was a priestly city, like Hebron, is conjecture.

ἀντιπαρῆλθεν. “Went by opposite to him.” A rare word; here only in N.T. In Wisd. xvi. 10 it has the contrary meaning, “came by opposite to them” to help them; τὸ ἄλος γὰρ σου ἰντιπαρῆλθεν καὶ λάσπατο αὐτοῦ. Comp. Mal. ii. 7–9.

32. The insertion of γενήμενος before κατὰ τὸν τόπον (A) makes ἐλθὼν belong to ἴδων, “came and saw”; and thus the Levite is made to be more heartless than the priest, whom he seems to have been following. The priest saw and passed on; but the Levite came up to him quite close, saw, and passed on. But B L X Z omit γενήμενος, while D and other authorities omit ἐλθὼν; and it is not likely that both are genuine. Syr-Sin. omits one. Most editors now omit γενήμενος, but Field pleads for its retention, and would omit ἐλθὼν (Otium Norvic. iii. p. 43).

33. Σαμαρείτης δὲ τίς ὀδεύων. A despised schismatic, in marked contrast to the orthodox clergy who had shown no kindness. He is not said to be καταβαινών: he would not be coming from Jerusalem. See on xvii. 18.

ἀλθεῖν κατ’ αὐτὸνν. “Came down upon him,” or “where he was,” or “towards him” (Acts viii. 26, xvi. 7; Phil. iii. 14). The fear of being himself overtaken by brigands, or of being suspected of the robbery, does not influence him. “Directly he saw him, forthwith (aor.) he was moved with compassion.” See on vii. 13.

34. προσελθὼν. This neither of the others seems to have done:

1 Blunt sees here a possible coincidence. Christ may have chosen a Samaritan for the benefactor, as a gentle rebuke to James and John for wishing just before this to call down fire on Samaritans (ix. 54). See Undesignated Coincidences, Pt. IV. xxxii. p. 300, 8th ed.
they avoided coming near him. He was half-unconscious, and they wished to get past without being asked to help.

κατεδοθεὶ τὰ τραύματα αὐτοῦ ἐπιχέων ἐλαίων καὶ ὀίνῳν. These medical details would be specially interesting to Lk. “Bound up, pouring on, as he bound, oil and wine.” Neither compound occurs elsewhere in N.T. Comp. τραύμα ἐστὶν καταδέσει (Ecclus. xxvii. 21); and, for ἐπιχέων, Gen. xxviii. 18; Lev. v. 11. Oil and wine were recognized household remedies. The two were sometimes mixed and used as a salve for wounds. See evidence in Wetst. Both τραύμα and τραυματίζω are pec. to Lk.

ἐπιβιβάσας δὲ αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸ ἵδιον κτήνος. The verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (xix. 35; Acts xxiii. 24), but classical and freq. in LXX. Comp. ἐπιβιβάσατε τὸν νῖον μου Σαλωμᾶν ἐπὶ τὴν ἡμίονον τὴν ἐμὴν (1 Kings i. 33). Κτήνος (κτάωμα) is lit. “property,” and so “cattle,” and especially a “beast of burden” (Acts xxiii. 24; 1 Cor. xv. 39; Rev. xviii. 13). The πανδοκεῖον was probably a more substantial place of entertainment than a κατάλυμα: see on ii. 7. The word occurs here only in bibl. Grk., and here only is stabulum used in the sense of “inn”: comp. stabularius in ver. 35. It is perhaps a colloquial word (Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 74). Attic πανδοκέτου.

35. ἐπὶ τὴν αἵρεσιν. “Towards the morrow,” as Acts iv. 5 and ἐπὶ τὴν ὄραν τῆς προσευχῆς (Acts iii. 1). Syr-Sin. has “at the dawn of the day.” In Mk. xv. 1 some texts read ἐπὶ τό τρυμ. This use of ἐπὶ is rare. Comp. ἐπὶ τὴν ἑω (Thuc. ii. 84. 2). The ἐξελθὼν after αἴρεσιν (AC) is not likely to be genuine; but it would mean that he went outside before giving the money, to avoid being seen by the wounded man. ΒDLXΣ and most Versions omit.

ἐκβάλων δύο δηνάρια. The verb does not necessarily imply any violence: “having put out, drawn out,” from his girdle; not “flung out”; comp. vi. 42; Mt. xii. 35, xiii. 52. The two denarii would equal about four shillings, although in weight of silver much less than two shillings. See on vii. 41.


ἔγω ἐν τῷ ἐπανέφρεσμαι με. The ἔγω is very emphatic: “I, and not the wounded man, am responsible for payment.” Note the pres. infin. “While I am returning, in the course of my return journey”: see on iii. 21. The verb occurs elsewhere in N.T. only xix. 15, but is classical and not rare in LXX.

36, 37. The Moral of the Parable. Christ not only forces the lawyer to answer his own question, but shows that it has been asked from the wrong point of view. For the question, “Who is my neighbour?” is substituted, “To whom am I neighbour? Whose claims on my neighbourly help do I recognize?” All the
three were by proximity neighbours to the wounded man, and his claim was greater on the priest and Levite; but only the alien recognized any claim. The γέγονέναι is very significant, and implies this recognition: "became neighbour, proved neighbour": comp. xix. 17; Heb. xi. 6. "The neighbouring Jews became strangers, the stranger Samaritan became neighbour, to the wounded traveller. It is not place, but love, which makes neighbourhood" (Wordsworth). RV. is the only English Version which takes account of γέγονέναι: Vulg. Luth. and Beza all treat it as ελαλ.

37. ὁ ποιήσας τῷ ἔλεος μετ’ αὐτοῦ. The lawyer goes back to his own question, τι ποιήσας; He thereby avoids using the hateful name Samaritan: "He that showed the act of mercy upon him," the ἔλεος related of him. Comp. ποιήσαι ἔλεος μετὰ τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν (i. 72), and ἐμεγάλυνεν τῷ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ μετ’ αὐτῆς (i. 58). The phrase is Hebraistic, and in N.T. peculiar to Lk. (Acts xiv. 27, xv. 4): freq. in LXX (Gen. xxiv. 12; Judg. i. 24, vii. 35, etc.).

Πορεύονταi καὶ συ ποιεῖ δόμων. Either, "Go; thou also do likewise"; or, "Go thou also; do likewise." Chrysostom seems to take it in the latter way: πορεύονται σὺν, φησί, καὶ σὺ, καὶ ποιεῖ δόμως (xi. p. 109, B). There is a rather awkward asyndeton in either case; but καὶ σὺ must be taken together. Comp. Mt. xxvi. 69; 2 Sam. xv. 19; Obad. 11. "Go, and do thou likewise" would be πορεύονται καὶ ποιεῖ σὺν δόμως. Field, Otium Norvic. iii. p. 44. Note the pres. imperat. "Thou also habitually do likewise." It is no single act, but lifelong conduct that is required. Also that καὶ ξῆσῃ does not follow ποιεῖ, as in ver. 28; perhaps because the parable says nothing about loving God, which does not come within its scope. It is an answer to the question, "Who is it that I ought to love as myself?" and we have no means of knowing that anything more than this is intended. Comp. vi. 31.

The Fathers delight in mystical interpretations of the parable. For references and examples see Wordsw. Comm. in loco; Trench, Par. xvii. notes. Such things are permissible so long as they are not put forward as the meaning which the Propounder of the Parable designed to teach. That Christ Himself was a unique realization of the Good Samaritan is unquestionable. That He intended the Good Samaritan to represent Himself, in His dealings with fallen humanity, is more than we know.1

38-42. § The Two Sisters of Bethany. That this incident took place at Bethany can hardly be doubted. If the sisters had not yet settled at Bethany, the place could hardly have been called ἡ κόμη Μαρίας καὶ Μάρθας (Jn. xi. 1). Jesus is on His way to

1 Augustine’s attempt to prove the latter point is almost grotesque. The Jews said to Christ, “Thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil” (Jn. viii. 48). Jesus might have replied, “Neither am I a Samaritan, nor have I a devil”; but He said only, “I have not a devil.” Therefore He admitted that He was a Samaritan (Serm. clxxi. 2).
or from a short visit to Jerusalem which Lk. does not mention. He perhaps inserts it here as a further answer to the question, "What must one do to inherit eternal life?" Mere benevolence, such as that of the Samaritan, is not enough. It must be united with, and be founded upon, habitual communion with the Divine. "The enthusiasm of humanity," if divorced from the love of God, is likely to degenerate into mere serving of tables. But the narrative may be here in its true chronological position. It is one of the most exquisite among the treasures which Lk. alone has preserved; and the coincidence between it and Jn. xi. with regard to the characters of the two sisters, the incidents being totally different, is strong evidence of the historical truth of both.¹ Comp. for both thought and language I Cor. vii. 34, 35.

38. Ἕν δὲ τῷ πορεύεσθαι αὐτῶς. "Now during their journeyings": see on iii. 21. As Lk. does not name the village, we may conjecture that he did not know where this occurred. One does not see how the mention of Bethany would have put the sisters in danger of persecution from the Jerusalem Jews. If that danger existed, the names of the sisters ought to have been suppressed.

γυνὴ δὲ τίς ὅνυματι Μάρθα ὑπεδέχατο αὐτῶν. She was evidently the mistress of the house, and probably the elder sister. That she was a widow, is pure conjecture. That she was the wife of Simon the leper, is an improbable conjecture (Jn. xii. 1, 2). The names Martha, Eleazar (Lazarus), and Simon have been found in an ancient cemetery at Bethany. The coincidence is curious, whatever may be the explanation. Martha was not an uncommon name. Marius used to take about with him a Syrian woman named Martha, who was said to have the gift of prophecy (Plut. Mar. 414). It means "lady" or "mistress": κυρία. For ὅνυματι see on v. 27, and for ὑπεδέχομαι comp. xix. 6; Acts xvii. 7; Jas. ii. 25. The verb occurs nowhere else in N.T.

eἰς τὴν οἰκίαν. This is probably the right reading, of which εἰς τῷ οἴκῳ αὐτῆς is the interpretation. Even without αὐτῆς there can be little doubt that Martha’s house is meant.

39. ἦ καὶ παρακαλεθείσα πρὸς τοὺς πόδας. The καὶ can hardly be "even," and the meaning "also" is not clear. Perhaps "Martha gave Him a welcome, and Mary also expressed her devotion in her own way," is the kind of thought; or, "Mary joined in the welcome, and also sat at His feet." The meal has

¹ "But the characteristics of the two sisters are brought out in a very subtle way. In St. Luke the contrast is summed up, as it were, in one definite incident; in St. John it is developed gradually in the course of a continuous narrative. In St. Luke the contrast is direct and trenchant, a contrast (one might almost say) of light and darkness. But in St. John the characters are shaded off, as it were, into one another" (Lit. Biblical Essays, p. 38).
X. 39-41. JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

not yet begun, for Martha is preparing it; and Mary is not sitting at table with Him, but at His feet as His disciple (Acts xxi. 3). For τοῦ Κυρίου see on v. 17 and vii. 13. The verb is class., but the 1 aor. part. is late Greek (Jos. Ant. vi. 11. 9). Note the imperf. ἤκοιν: she continued to listen. Comp. 1 Cor. vii. 35.

40. περιπεσάτο. “Was drawn about in different directions, distracted.” The word forms a marked contrast to παρακαθεσθείσα. Comp. Eccles. i. 13, iii. 10, v. 19; Eccles. xlii. 4.

ἐπιστάσαν δὲ εἶπεν, Κύριε. “And she came up and said”: see on ii. 38. Cov. has “stepte unto Him.” Other Versions previous to AV. have “stood.” The word perhaps indicates an impatient movement. Her temper is shown in her addressing the rebuke to Him rather than to her sister. Her saying ἡ αἰδέλφη μου instead of Μαρία is argumentum quasi ab iniquo (Beng.), and μόνην is placed first for emphasis. The imperf. κατέλειπεν expresses the continuance of the neglect. The word does not imply that Mary began to help and then left off, but that she ought to have helped, and from the first abstained.

For εἶπον ... ἵνα comp. Mk. iii. 9, and for ἀντλαμβάνω see on i. 54.

Here the meaning of συναντ. is “take hold along with me, help me.” Comp. Rom. viii. 26; Exod. xviii. 22; Ps. lxxix. 22. See Field, Otium Norvic. iii. p. 44.

41. Μάρθα, Μάρθα, μερίμνας. The repetition of the name conveys an expression of affection and concern: xxii. 31; Acts ix. 4; Mt. vii. 21. Comp. Mk. xiv. 36; Rom. viii. 15; Gal. iv. 6, and see on viii. 24.1 The verb is a strong one, “thou art anxious,” and implies division and distraction of mind (μερίζω), which believers ought to avoid: Mt. vi. 25, 28, 31, 34; Lk. xii. 11, 22, 26; Phil. iv. 26. Comp. μέριμνα, viii. 14, xxi. 34, and especially 1 Pet. v. 7, where human anxiety (μέριμνα) is set against Divine Providence (μέλει).

καὶ θορυβάζῃ. “And art in a tumult, bustle.” The readings vary much, and certainty is not obtainable, respecting the central portion of Christ’s rebuke. The form θορυβάζομαι seems to occur nowhere else: τυρβάζω is fairly common: περί ταύτας τυρβάζομαι (Aristoph. Pax. 1007). An unusual word would be likely to be changed into a familiar one. In any case μερίμνας refers to the mental distraction, and the second verb to the external agitation. Martha complains of having no one to help her; but it was by her own choice that she had so much to do.

1 Repetitio nominis indicium est delectionis, aut movendae intentionis ut audiret intentius (Aug.). D doubles neavócke in vii. 14. It is not serving, but excess in it, that is rebuked; and this is not rebuked until Martha begins to find fault with her sister. See Wordsw. It is characteristic of Mary that she makes no reply, but leaves all to the Master.
The difference between θαυμάζῃ (ο Β Κ Δ Λ) and τυρφάζῃ (Α Π) is unimportant: the question is as to the words which ought to stand between Μάρια and Μάρια. As regards the first part the decision is not difficult. Nearly all Greek MSS. have μεριμνᾷ καὶ θαυμάζῃ (or τυρφάζῃ) περὶ πόλλα after Μάρια, and have γὰρ or δὲ after Μαρία or Μαρία. But on the evidence of certain Latin authorities (A b e f i i Amb.) the Revisers and WH. give a place in the margin to θαυμάζῃ only after Μάρια, with neither γὰρ nor δὲ after Μαρία: and these same authorities with D omit all that lies between θαυμάζῃ and Μαρία. This curt abrupt reading may be rejected. It is less easy to determine the second part. We may reject διάλυε γὰρ Μάρια, which has very little support. Both this reading and εἶνός γὰρ Μάρια (Α Π Ρ Γ Δ II) are probably corruptions of διάλυε γὰρ Μάρια ἢ ἐνός (ο Β Κ Λ). The last might be a conflate reading from the other two, if the evidence did not show that it is older than διάλυε γὰρ Μάρια; it is found in Boh. and Aeth. and also in Origen. See Sanday, App. ad N.T. p. 119. Syr·Sin. has “Martha, Martha, Mary hath chosen for herself the good part, which,” etc.

διάλυε γὰρ Μάρια ἢ εἰνός. The διάλυε is opposed to περὶ πολλά, and εἶνός has a double meaning, partly opposed to περὶ πολλά, partly anticipatory of the ἀγαθὴ μερὶς. There was no need of an elaborate meal; a few things, or one, would suffice. Indeed only one portion was necessary;—that which Mary had chosen. Both χρεία and μερὶς are used of food; τὰ πρὸς τὴν χρείαν being necessaries as distinct from τὰ πρὸς τὴν τροφὴν. For μερὶς as a “portion” of food comp. Gen. xliii. 34; Deut. xviii. 8; ι Sam. i. 4, ix. 23; Neh. viii. 12, xii. 47; Eccles. xi. 2. For μερὶς in the higher sense comp. Κύριος ἢ μερὶς τῆς κληρονομίας μου (Ps. xv. 5). See also Ps. lxxiii. 26, cxix. 57, cxlii. 5; Lam. iii. 24; Ps. Sol. v. 6, xiv. 3.

Neither διάλυε nor εἰνός can be masc., because the opposition is to πολλά. And if the meaning were “Few people are wanted for serving, or only one,” we should require μᾶς, as only women are mentioned.

42. Μαρία γὰρ. Explanation of εἰνός, and hence the γὰρ. Not many things are needed, but only one, as Mary’s conduct shows.

The γὰρ (ο Β Λ Δ) would easily be smoothed into δὲ (Α Π Ρ), or omitted as difficult (D). Versions and Fathers support all three readings. WH. and RV. adopt γὰρ.

τῆν ἀγαθὴν μερίδα. “The good part.” No comparison is stated; but it is implied that Martha’s choice is inferior. In comparison with Mary’s it cannot be called “the good part,” or “the one thing” necessary, although it is not condemned as bad. Her distracting anxiety was the outcome of affection. Ecce pars Marthae non reprehenditur, sed Mariae laudatur (Bede). Confirmata Mariae immunitas (Beng.). Comp. Jn. vi. 27.

1 Comp. Lucian, “But what if a guest at the same table neglects all that great variety of dishes, and chooses from those that are nearest to him one that suffices for his need, and is content with that alone, without even looking at all the rest, is not he the stronger and the better man?” (Cynic. 7).
The omission of the prep. before the gen. (א B D L, ει a e, illl b i l q) is unusual. Hence AC Pr .etc. insert ἀν' before αὐτῆς (ab ea Vulg. f).

In this narrative of the two sisters in the unnamed village Lk. unconsciously supplies historical support to the Johannine account of the raising of Lazarus. If that miracle is to be successfully discredited, it is necessary to weaken the support which this narrative supplies. The Tübingen school propose to resolve it into a parable, in which Martha represents Judaic Christianity, with its trust in the works of the Law; while Mary represents Pauline Christianity, reposing simply upon faith. Or, still more definitely, Martha is the impulsive Peter, Mary the philosophic Paul. But this is quite incredible. Even Lk. has not the literary skill to invent so exquisite a story for any purpose whatever. And Martha was not occupied with legal ceremonial, but with service in honour of Christ. This service was not condemned: it was her excitement and fault-finding that were rebuked. The story, whether an invention or not, is ill adapted to the purpose which is assumed as the cause of its production.

XI. 1-18. §On Prayer. Lk. shows no knowledge of time or place, and it is possible that the paragraph ought to be placed earlier in the ministry. Mt. places the giving of the Lord's Prayer much earlier, in the Sermon on the Mount (vi. 5-15). Both arrangements may be right. Christ may have delivered the Prayer once spontaneously to a large number of disciples, and again at the request of a disciple to a smaller group, who were not present on the first occasion. But if the Prayer was delivered only once, then it is Lk. rather than Mt. who gives the historic occasion (Neander, De Wette, Holtzmann, Weiss, Godet, etc. See Page, Expositor, 3rd series, vii. p. 433). Mt. might insert it to exemplify Christ's teaching on prayer. Lk. would not invent this special incident.

The section has three divisions, of which the second and third belong to the same occasion: the Lord's Prayer (1-4); the Friend at Midnight (5-8); Exhortation to Perseverance in Prayer (9-13).

1-4. The Lord's Prayer. For abundant literature see Herzog, PRE.2 iv. p. 772; Keim, Jes. of Naz. iii. p. 337. For the liturgical use of the Prayer see D. Chr. Ant. ii. p. 1056; Kraus, Real-Enc. d. Chr. Alt. i. p. 562.

Note the marks of Luke's style: ἔγένετο, ἐν τῷ εἶναι, εἶναι προσευχ-μένον, εἶπεν πρός, εἶπεν δὲ, τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν, αὐτῷ, παντι. The last three, which are in the Prayer itself, point to the conclusion that at least some of the differences in wording between this form and that in Mt. are due to Lk., and that the form in Mt. better represents the original, which would be in Aramaic. The differences cannot be accounted for by independent translation. The Greek of the two forms is too similar for that, especially in the use of the
perplexing word ἐπιούσιος. Both Evangelists must have had the Prayer in Greek. F. H. Chase supposes that the disciples adapted the Prayer for use on special occasions, either by alterations or additions, and that both forms exhibit the Prayer as changed for liturgical purposes, ἐπιούσιος being one of these later features (Texts & Studies, vol. i. No. 3, Camb. 1891).

1. προσευχόμενον. See Introd. § 6. i. b. That this was at dawn, or at one of the usual hours of prayer, is conjecture. Nothing is known of a form of prayer taught by the Baptist; but Rabbis sometimes drew up such forms for their disciples.

2. εἶπεν δι' αυτοῖς. The disciple had said δίδαξον ήμᾶς, and Jesus includes all in His reply.

After προσευχήσεθε D inserts much from Mt. vi. 7, and in the Lat. has the form multiloquentia for multiloquium: putant enim quidam quia in multiloquentia sua exaudientur.

Πάτερ. There is little doubt that the texts of Lk. which give the more full form of the Prayer have been assimilated to Mt. by inserting the three clauses which Lk. omits.1 The temptation to supply supposed deficiencies would be very strong; for the copyists would be familiar with the liturgical use of the longer form, and would regard the abbreviation of such a prayer as intolerable. The widespread omission is inexplicable, if the three clauses are genuine; the widespread insertion is quite intelligible, if they are not. The express testimony of Origen, that in the texts of Lk. known to him the clauses were wanting, would in itself be almost conclusive; and about the second and third omitted clauses we have the express testimony of Augustine also (Enchir. cxvi. : see Wordsworth's Vulg. in loco). Syr-Sin. has “Father, hallowed be Thy name. And Thy kingdom come. And give us the continual bread of every day. And forgive us our sins; and we also, we forgive everyone who is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation.” A few authorities, which omit the rest, add ἡμῶν to Πάτερ, and four have sancte for nosier (a c f 2 i).

In O.T. God is seldom spoken of as a Father, and then in reference to the nation (Deut. xxxii. 6; Is. lxiii. 16; Jer. iii. 4, 19, xxxii. 9; Mal. i. 6, ii. 10), not to the individual. In this, as in many things, the Apocrypha links O.T. with N.T. Individuals begin to speak of God as their Father (Wisd. ii. 16, xiv. 3; Ecclus. xxiii. i. 4, ii. 10; Tobit xiii. 4; 3 Mac. vi. 3), but without showing

---

1 For the details of the evidence see Sanday, App. ad N.T. p. 119. In general it is N, B, L, Vulg. Arm., Orig. Tert., which omit the clauses in question; but N is on the other side with regard to γεννηθήσομεν τῷ θεῷ καὶ τοῖς ημίσεσιν, κ.τ.λ. Other authorities omit one or more of the clauses. Those which contain the clauses vary as to the wording of the first two. “Neither accident nor intention can adequately account for such clear evidence as there is in favour of so large an omission, if S. Luke’s Gospel had originally contained the clauses in question” (Hammond, Textual Criticism applied to N.T. p. 83, Oxford, 1890).
what right they have to consider themselves sons rather than servants. Christ gave His disciples \textit{εξουσίαν τεκνα Θεοῦ γενέσθαι} (Jn. i. 12; comp. iii. 3; Rom. viii. 23; Gal. iv. 5). But we must notice how entirely free from Jewish elements the Prayer is. It is not addressed to the "Lord God of Israel," nor does it ask for blessings upon Israel. See Latham, \textit{Pastor Pastorum}, p. 416.

\textit{ἀνασθήτω}. "Let it be acknowledged to be holy, treated as holy, venerated." Comp. 1 Pet. iii. 15; Is. xxix. 23; Ezek. xx. 41, xxxviii. 23; Ecclus. xxxiii. (xxxvi.) 4.

tο δομά σου. A common expression in both O.T. and N.T. It is not a mere periphrasis for God. It suggests His revealed attributes and His relation to us. Comp. οἱ ἄγαπώντες τὸ δομά σου (Ps. v. 12); οἱ γεννώσκοντες τὸ δομά σου (Ps. ix. 11); οἱ βεβηλοῦσί τὸ δομα τὸ ἁγίον (Lev. xviii. 21). It is freq. in Ps. Sol. (v. 1, vii. 5, viii. 18, xv. 4, etc.). Codex D adds to this petition the words \textit{ἐφ' ἡμᾶς, super nos}, which may be an independent addition, or a survival of the petition for the coming of the Spirit of which there are traces elsewhere.\footnote{There is evidence from Tertullian (\textit{Adv. Marc.} iv. 26), from Gregory Nyssen (\textit{De Orat. Dom.} ed. Krabinger, p. 60), and from an important cursive (Cod. Ev. 604 = 700 Gregory), elaborately edited by Hoskier (1890), that the Lord's Prayer in Lk. sometimes contained a petition for the gift of the Spirit, instead either of "Thy kingdom come" or of "Hallowed be Thy name." In Gregory and Cod. Ev. 604 the petition runs thus: \textit{Ἐλθέτω τὸ πνεύμα σου [τὸ ἁγίον] ἐφ' ἡμᾶς καὶ καθαρίστω ἡμᾶς}; but in Gregory τὸ ἁγίον is doubtful. This addition may have been made when the Prayer was used at the laying on of hands, and thus have got into some texts of Lk. Chase in \textit{Taxis & Studies}, i. 3, p. 28. The \textit{ἐφ' ἡμᾶς} of D may have come from this addition. Comp. Zu \textit{wirs komme dein Reich.}}

\textit{αἰθάτω ἡ βασιλεία σου.} It is asserted that in bibl. Grk. βασιλεία is the abstract noun, not of βασιλεύς, but of κύριος, and should therefore be rendered "dominion" rather than "kingdom." Had "kingdom" been meant, βασιλεύω would have been more distinct, a word current then, and still the only designation in modern Greek. The petition therefore means, "Thy sway be extended from heaven to this world (now ruled by the adversary), so as to extirpate wickedness." See A. N. Jannaris in \textit{Contemp. Rev.} Oct. 1894, p. 585. For Rabbinical parallels to these first two petitions see Wetst. on Mt. vi. 9, 10.

For such mixed forms as \textit{αἰθάτω}, which is specially common, see on i. 59.

8. From prayers for the glory of God and the highest good of all we pass on to personal needs.

tὸν ἐπιθύμιον. We are still in ignorance as to the origin and exact meaning of this remarkable word. It appears here first in Greek literature, and is the only epithet in the whole Prayer. And it is possible that in the original Aramaic form there was nothing
equivalent to it. The presence of the ἐπιούσιος, not ἐπιούσιος makes the derivation from ἐπείγου, ἐπων, or ἐπι and οὐσία very doubtful. With Grotius, Scaliger, Wetstein, Fritzsche, Winer, Meyer, Bishop Lightfoot, and others, we may suppose that ἐπιούσιος comes from ἐπιούν, perhaps with special reference to ἡ ἐπιούσια, “the coming day.” The testimony of the most ancient Versions is strongly in favour of the derivation from ἐπείγαν and of a meaning having reference to time, whether “of to-morrow,” or “that cometh,” or “for the coming day,” or “daily,” “continual,” or “for the day.”

Jerome found quotidiana as the translation both in Mt. and Lk. He substituted supersubstantiale in Mt. and left quotidiana in Lk., thus producing a widespread impression that the Evangelists use different words. Cod. Gall. has supersubstantiale in Lk. See Lf. On a Fresh Revision of the N.T. App. i. pp. 218–260, 3rd ed. For the other views see McClellan, The N.T. pp. 632–647. Chase confirms Lf., and contends that (1) This petition refers to bodily needs; (2) The epithet is temporal, not qualitative; (3) The epithet is not part of the original form of the petition, and is due to liturgical use; (4) All the phenomena may be reasonably explained if we assume that the clause originally was “Give us our (or the) bread of the day” (Texts & Studies, i. 3, pp. 42–53). See Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 41.

Jannaris contends that the word has nothing to do with time at all. He points to the use in LXX of περιούσιος in the sense of “constituting a property” (Exod. xix. 5; Deut. vii. 6, xiv. 2, xxvi. 18), as obviously coined from περιουσία, “wealth, abundance,” for the translation of the Hebrew segulla. And he interprets, “Ask not for bread περιούσιον, to be treasured up as wealth (segulla, ἑθσαράς), but for bread ἐπιούσιον, mere bread.” Accordingly the term ἐπιούσιος is a new formation coined for the purpose, on the analogy of, and as a direct allusion and contrast to, περιούσιον, that is, intended to imply the opposite meaning. He considers that the formation περιούσιος was apparently facilitated by the existence of such words as πλουσίος, ἐκούσιος, ἠθλουσίος, and that it was the existence of περιούσιος which produced the form ἐπιούσιος instead of ἐπιούσιος. So also in the main Tholuck.

διδόν ἡμῖν. “Continually give to us,” instead of δῶς in Mt. The change of tense brings with it a corresponding change of adverb: διδόν ἡμῖν τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν for δῶς ἡμῖν σήμερον: “continually give day by day” for “Give once for all to-day.” In N.T. τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν is peculiar to Lk. (xix. 47; Acts xvii. 11). This fact and the insertion of his favourite παντὶ with ὀφείλοντι, and the substitution of his favourite καὶ αὐτοὶ for καὶ ἡμῖς with ὀφείλονε, incline us to believe that some of the differences between this form of the Prayer and that in Mt. are due to Lk. himself. The petition in Lk. embraces more than the petition in Mt. In Mt. we pray, “Give us to-day our bread for the coming day,” which in the morning would mean the bread for that day, and in the evening the bread for the next day. In Lk. we pray, “Continually give us day by day our bread for the coming day.” One stage in advance is asked for, but no more: “one step enough for me.”

D here has σήμερον, and most Latin texts have hodie. But Codd. Amiat. Gat. Turon. Germ. 2 support τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν with cotidie or quotidie.
4. τὰς ἀμαρτίας ἡμῶν. Mt. has τὰ διαφθοράτα ἡμῶν, and there is reason for believing that Mt. is here closer to the Aramaic original. The δέσμωντι of Lk. points to this, and so does τὴν διαφθοράν ἡμῶν in the Didaché (viii. 2). Anyone accustomed to LXX would be likely to prefer the familiar ἀφέσει τὰς ἀμαρτίας (Ps. xxiv. 18; comp. Num. xiv. 19; Ex. xxxii. 32; Gen. l. 17), even if less literal. Moreover, διαφθοράτα would be more likely to be misunderstood by Gentile readers.

καὶ γὰρ αὐτοῖ άφίμεν. For this Mt. has ὥς καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφήκαμεν. The Old Syriac has the future in both Mt. and Lk., and in Lk. it has what may be the original form of the petition: “Remit to us, and we also will remit.” Tertullian seems to have had the future in his mind when he wrote Debeatibus denique dimissuros nos in oratione profitemur (De Pudicit. ii.). If this is correct, ἀφίμενει is closer to the original than ἀφήκαμεν is. But the connexion is the same, whether we ask for forgiveness because we have forgiven, or because we do forgive, or because we will forgive. It was a Jewish saying, Dies expiationis non expiationis donec cum proximis in gratiam redieritis.

The form ἀφίμεν is found Mk. i. 34, xi. 16; Rev. xi. 9. Comp. σωλω, Mt. xiii. 13; WH. ii. App. p. 167.

παντὶ δέσμων ἡμῖν. Here the τοὺς διαφθοράς ἡμῶν of Mt. looks more like the original form, as being simpler. The introduction of παντὶ is in harmony with Lk.’s usage: see on vi. 30, vii. 35, ix. 43.

εἰσενέγκης. “Bring into.” The verb occurs five times in Lk. (v. 18, 19, xii. 11; Acts xvii. 20) and thrice elsewhere (Mt. vi. 13; 1 Tim. vi. 7; Heb. xiii. 11); and everywhere, except in the Lord’s Prayer, it is rendered in AV. by “brings,” not “lead.” In Lk. εἰσάγεται is also very common (ii. 27, xiv. 21, xxii. 54; Acts vii. 45, ix. 8, etc.). The latter word implies guidance more strongly than εἰσφέρεται does. For examples of the petition comp. xii. 40, 46; Mk. xiv. 38; Mt. xxvi. 41. The inconsistency between this petition and Jas. i. 2 is only apparent, not real. This petition refers especially to the internal solicitations of the devil, as is shown by the second half of it, as given in Mt., “but deliver us from the evil one.”

1 S. James refers chiefly to external trials, such as poverty of intellect (i. 5), or of substance (i. 9), or persecution (ii. 6, 7). Moreover, there is no inconsistency in rejoicing in temptations when God in His wisdom allows them to molest us, and yet praying to be preserved from such trials, because of our natural weakness. Aug. Ep. cxxi. 14, cxlv. 7, 8; Hooker, Eccles. Pol. v. 48. 13.

1 Gregory Nyssen goes so far as to make δὲ πειρασμός a name for the devil: ἢσα δὲ πειρασμός τε καὶ δο πορήδε ἐν τι καὶ κατὰ τὴν συμμορίαν ἐστίν (De Orat. Dom. v., Migne, xliv. 1192). So also Nilus, the friend and pupil of Chrysostom: πειρασμὸς μὲν λέγεται καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ διάβολος (Ep. l., Migne, lxxix. 573).
There is a very early Latin gloss on *ne nos inducas* which found its way into the text of the Prayer itself. *Quis non singet nos deduci in temptationem?* asks Tertullian (*Adv. Marciun. iv. 26*). *Ne patiaris nos induci, or ne passus fueris induci nos,* is Cyprian’s form (*De Dom. Orat. xxv. *). Augustine says, *Multi præcando ita dicunt, Ne nos patiaris induci in temptationem* (*De Serm. Dom. ix. 30, Migne, xxxiv. 1282; De Dono Persav. Migne, xlv. 1000*). And several MSS. of the Old Latin have these or similar readings (*Old Latin Biblical Texts, No. ii. Oxford, 1886, p. 32*). Dionysius of Alexandria explains the petition as meaning this: *καὶ δὴ καὶ μὴ ἔσεν ημᾶς ἐσὶς πειρασμοί, τοῦτο ἐστὶ μὴ ἔκαστος ἡμᾶς ἐμπεσεῖ ἐσὶς πειρασμοῖς* (*Migne, x. 1601*). Evidently the idea of God’s leading us into temptation was from early times felt to be a difficulty; and this gloss may have been used first in private prayer, then in the liturgies, and thence have found its way into Latin texts of the Gospels.

Jannaris contends that this is not a gloss, but a correct translation of the Greek. He holds that in the time of Christ the active of this verb was fast acquiring the force of the middle, and that *εἰσενέγκειν = εἰσενέγκασθαι,* “to have one brought into.” The petition then means, “Have us not brought into temptation.” And he suggests that the true reading may be the middle, *εἰσενέγκη,* to which οὐ has been added by a mistake. The evidence, however, is too uniform for that to be probable.

There is yet another gloss, which probably has the same origin, viz. the wish to avoid the difficulty of the thought that God leads us into temptation: *ne inducas nos in temptationem quam ferre non possimus* (*Jerome in Ezech. xlviii. 16; comp. Hilary in Ps. cxviii. *). Pseudo-Augustine combines the two: *ne patiaris nos induci in temptationem quam ferre non possimus* (*Serm. lxxiv. *). “The fact that these glosses occur in writers who are separated from each other in time and circumstance, and that they are found in Liturgies belonging to different families, shows very clearly that they must be due to very early liturgical usage” (*Chase, pp. 63-69*). That Lk. omitted *ἀλλὰ ἰδοὺ ημᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πονηροῦ* because he saw that deliverance from the tempter is included in preservation from temptation, is less probable than that this clause was wanting (very possibly for this reason) in the liturgical form which he gives. All authorities here, and the best authorities in Mt., omit the doxology, which is no doubt a liturgical addition to the Prayer. *See Treg. on Mt. vi. 13.*

**5-8. § The Parable of the Friend at Midnight.** This parable is parallel to that of the Unjust Judge (xviii. 1-8). Both of them are peculiar to Lk., whose Gospel is in a special sense the Gospel of Prayer; and they both teach that prayer must be importunate and persevering. So far as they differ, the one shows that prayer is never out of season, the other that it is sure to bring a blessing and not a curse.

5, 6. *Τίς ἐξ ὑμῶν.* The sentence is irregularly constructed: (1) the interrogative is lost in the prolongation of the sentence; (2) the future (*ἐξεῖ, πορεύσεται*) drifts into the deliberative subjunctive (*εἰτήρι*), which in some texts has been corrected to the future (*ἐρεῖ*). Excepting Mt. vi. 27, *τίς ἐξ ὑμῶν* is peculiar to Lk. (xii. 25, xiv. 28, xv. 4, xvii. 7). *Win. xli. 4. b, p. 357.* Excepting Mk. xiii. 35, *μετανόικισθαι* is peculiar to Lk. (Acts xvi. 25, xx. 7). In the East it is common to travel by night to avoid the heat.

*Φιλε, χρήσον μοι πρεῖς άρτους.* As distinct from *δανεῖζω* (“I lend on interest” as a matter of business), *κίρχημι,* which occurs
here only in N.T., is "I allow the use of" as a friendly act. There is no need to seek any meaning in the number three. For παρατίθημα of food comp. ix. 16; Mk. vi. 41, viii. 6.

7. Μή μοι κόπος πάρεξέ. It is the trouble that he minds, not the parting with the bread. When he has once got up (ἀναστάς, ver. 8), he gives him as much as he wants. For κόπος πάρεξεν comp. Mt. xxvi. 10; Mk. xiv. 6; Gal. vi. 17; and for κόπος see Lft. Ἐξηθ. p. 26.

μετ’ ἔμοι ἐλα τὴν κοίτην εὐσίν. Prep. of motion after verb of rest; comp. Mk. [ii. 1], x. 10; Acts viii. 40: and plur. verb after neut. plur., the persons being animate; comp. Mt. x. 21; Mk. iii. 11, v. 13. Win. l. 4. b, pp. 516, 518, lviii. 3. β, p. 646.

8. οὗτος ὁ δήμος. As distinct from καὶ εἰ, καὶ καὶ implies that the supposition is a fact, "although": xviii. 4; 2 Cor. xii. 11, vii. 8; 1 Pet. iii. 14. For καὶ καὶ ... γε comp. xviii. 4, 5; Win. liii. 7, b, p. 554.

ἐν δῷ ὑμῖν. "Will refuse to rise and give." The negative is part of the verb and is not affected by the δ. Otherwise we should have had μὴ: xvi. 31, xviii. 4; Rom. viii. 9; Mt. xxvi. 42; 1 Cor. vii. 9. The use is classical. Soph. Af. 1131. Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 184; Win. lv. 2. c, p. 599.

διά γε. In N.T. γε is rare, except as strengthening other particles: xviii. 5; 1 Cor. iv. 8: "At least because of."

ἄναδιαν. "Absence of αἰδώς, shamelessness"; Ecclus. xxv. 22; here only in N.T.

9–13. Exhortation to Perseverance in Prayer, based on the preceding parable and confirmed (11–13) by personal experience. Mt. has the same almost verbatim as part of the Sermon on the Mount (vii. 7–11).

9. καὶ γὰρ ὑμῖν λέγω. "I also say to you": the ἐγώ is emphatic by being expressed, the ὑμῖν by position; contrast ver. 8, and see on xvi. 9. The parable teaches them; Jesus also teaches them. The parable shows how the urgent supplicant fared; the disciples may know how they will fare. The three commands are obviously taken from the parable, and they form a climax of increasing earnestness. They are all pres. imperat. "Continue asking, seeking, knocking." Comp. Jn. xvi. 24; Mt. xxi. 22; Mk. xi. 24.

10. λαμβάνει ... εὑρίσκει. The parallel with ver. 9 would be more exact if these two verbs, as well as ἀνοιγήσεται, were futures. But here, as in Mt. vii. 8, ἀνοιγήσεται (B D) is possibly the true reading.

11. τὸν πατέρα. "As being his father." Mt. has ἀνθρώπος, "as a human being," or (more simply) "person." The construction is broken, and can scarcely be rendered literally. "Of which of you as being his father will the son ask for a fish? Will he for a fish hand him a serpent?" The question ought to have continued, "and for a fish receive a serpent"; but the abrupt change to the father's side of the transaction is very emphatic.
For μὴ interroig. when a negative reply is expected comp. v. 34, x. 15, xvii. 9, xxii. 35. Syr-Sin. omits “father” and inserts “perhaps.”

μὴ ἐπιδώσει. “Will he give over, hand to him”: xxiv. 30, 42; Acts xv. 30.

The text is confused, and it is doubtful whether we ought to have two pairs, as in Mt., or three. If two, they are not the same two as in Mt. There we have the loaf and the stone with the fish and the serpent. Here we have the fish and the serpent with the egg and the scorpion. But perhaps before these we ought to have the loaf and the stone, although B and some other authorities omit. The insertion from Mt., however, is more intelligible than the omission.

12. σκόρπιον. x. 19; Rev. ix. 3, 9, 10; Deut. viii. 15; Ezek. ii. 6. When its limbs are closed round it, it is egg-shaped. Bread, dried fish, and hardboiled eggs are ordinary food in the East. It is probable that some of these pairs, especially “a stone for a loaf,” were proverbial expressions. “A scorpion for a fish,” ἀντὶ πέρκης σκόρπιον, seems to have been a Greek proverb. The meaning here is, that in answer to prayer God gives neither what is useless (a stone) nor what is harmful (a serpent or scorpion).

13. πονηροὶ ὑπάρχοντες. “Being evil from the first, evil already”: much stronger than ὅντες (Mt.). Illustre testimonium de peccato originali (Beng.). See on viii. 41 and xxiii. 50.

δόματα. Mt. vii. 11; Eph. iv. 8; Phil. iv. 17. The word is very freq. in LXX, where it represents ten different Hebrew words.

ὁ εἶς οὕρανοῦ. Pregnant construction for ὁ ἐν οὕρανῳ εἶς οὕρανοῦ ἔδωκε: comp. ix. 61; Col. iv. 16. Win. lxvi. 6, p. 784. With the assurance here given comp. αὐτοί τοι δίδακτος Θεοῦ πᾶσιν ἄπλως καὶ μὴ ἄνεδεξιόντος (Jas. i. 5). The change from ἐπιδώσει to δόσει in both Lk. and Mt. is noteworthy: the idea of “handing over” would here be out of place.

πνεῦμα ἄγιον. See on i. 15. Mt. has ἁγαθόν: One of the latest maintainers of the theory that Lk. is strongly influenced by Ebionism, remarks on this difference between Mt. and Lk., “From this important deviation in Luke’s version of this passage we learn that the course of thought is from the material to the spiritual: temporal mercies, even daily bread, are transcended altogether. . . . This is one of the most important passages in Luke that can be cited in support of an Ebionite source for much of his Gospel.” This may well be correct: in which case the total amount of support is not strong.

D and some other authorities have ἁγαθὸν δόμα here. Hence various confusions: πνεῦμα ἁγαθὸν (L.8), bonum donum spiritus sancti (Aeth.). From bonum datum (b c d ff, i l r), bona data (a), spiritum bonum (Vulg.), spiritum bonum datum (E), etc. Assimilation to the first half of the verse is the source of corruption. Syr-Sin. has “good things.”
14-26. The Dumb Demoniac and the Blasphemy of the Pharisees. Mt. xii. 22-30; Mk. iii. 19-27 may be parallels.

14. διαμόνων κωφόν. The demon is called dumb because it made the man dumb: Mt. has τυφλόν και κωφόν. When the demon is cast out, it is the man who speaks, ἐλάλησεν ὁ κωφός. For ἔγενετο see p. 45.

15. τινὴς δὲ ἕξ αὐτῶν εἶπαν. This is very vague. Mt. says οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, and Mk. still more definitely οἱ γραμματεῖς οἱ ἀπὸ Ἰεροσολύμων καταβάντες. They had probably come on purpose to watch Him and oppose Him. It was at Jerusalem about this time that they had said, “Thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil,” and, “He hath a devil, and is mad” (Jn. viii. 48, x. 20).

16. περίδοντες. The demand for a mere wonder to compel conviction was a renewal of the third temptation (iv. 9-12). Comp. Jn. ii. 18, vi. 30. See Martensen, Chr. Dogm. § 105.

17. τὰ διανοήματα. “Thoughts,” not “machinations,” a meaning which the word nowhere has. Here only in N.T., but freq. in LXX and classical: Prov. xiv. 14, xv. 24; Is. lv. 9; Ezek. xiv. 3, 4; Plat. Prot. 348 D; Sym. 210 D.

18. ὁικὸς ἐπὶ ὁικόν. Mt. xii. 25 and Mk. iii. 25 do not prove that

diaemerwthes is here to be understood. In that case we should expect ἐν' ἐκατόν or καὶ ἐκατοῦ rather than ἐπὶ οἷκον. Comp. πίπτειν ἐπὶ τε, viii. 6, xiii. 4, xx. 18, xxiii. 30. It is better, with Vulg. (domus supra domum cadet) and Luth. (ein Haus fällt über das andere), to keep closely to the Greek without reference to Mt. xii. 25 or Mk. iii. 25. We must therefore regard the clause as an enlargement of ἐρημοῦται: “house falleth on house”; or possibly “house after house falleth.” Comp. ναός τε καὶ προσέπιπτε (Thuc. ii. 84. 3). Wetst. quotes πύργος δὲ πύργοις ἐνέπιπτον (Aristid. Rhodiac. p. 544). In this way Lk. gives one example, a divided kingdom; Mk. two, kingdom and house; Mt. three, kingdom, city, and house.

In class. Grk. ἐπὶ after verbs of falling, adding, and the like is commonly followed by the dat. In bibl. Greek the acc. is more common: λίπναι ἐπὶ λόπναι (Phil. ii. 27); λίθος ἐπὶ λίθον (Mt. xxiv. 2); ἀνεμωλαι ἐπὶ τὴν ἀνεμωλαι (Ps. lxviii. 28); ἁγγελιὰ ἐπὶ ἁγγελιὰν (Ezek. viii. 26). In Is. xxviii. 10 we have both acc. and dat., ὀλίψῃ ἐπὶ ὀλίψῃ, ἢπιδα ἐπὶ ἢπίδα.

18. ei δὲ καὶ ὁ Σατανᾶς. Satan also is under the dominion of the same law, that division leads to destruction. The fondness of Lk. for δὲ καὶ is again manifest: see on iii. 9. Contrast ei καὶ in ver. 8. Here καὶ belongs to ὁ Σατ., and means “also.” Burton, § 282. Mt. and Mk. here have simply καὶ ei.

ὁτι λέγετε. Elliptical: “I use this language, because ye say,” etc. Comp. Mk. iii. 30, and see on vii. 47.

19. An argumentum ad hominem.

οἱ υἱοὶ υἱῶν. First with emphasis. See Acts xix. 13 and Jos. Ant. viii. 2. 5 for instances of Jewish exorcisms; and comp. Ant. vi. 8. 2; B. J. vii. 6. 3; Tobit viii. 1–3; Justin M. Try. lxxv.; Apol. ii. 6; 1 Sam. xvi. 14, 23.

20. ei δὲ ἐν δακτὺλῳ Θεοῦ.1 As distinct from the charms and incantations used by Jewish exorcists, who did not rely simply upon the power of God. Mt. has ἐν πνεύματι Θεοῦ. Lk. seems to be fond of Hebraistic anthropomorphisms: i. 51, 66, 73. But it is not likely that “the finger of God” indicates the ease with which it is done. Comp. Exod. viii. 19, xxxi. 18; Deut. ix. 10; Ps. viii. 4. See foot-note p. 473.

1 ἐγὼ after ei δέ (D) or after Θεοῦ (B C L R) is of doubtful authority: in the one case it probably comes from ver. 19, in the other it may come from Mt. xii. 28.
XI. 21-23.] JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM 303

21. ὁ ἀρχωρός καθωπλισμένος. Here Lk. is very different from Mt. xii. 29 and Mk. iii. 27, while they resemble one another. “The strong one” is Satan, and the parable is very like Is. xlix. 24-26, which may be the source of it. Luther is certainly wrong in translating, Wenn ein starker Gewapneter: καθωπλισμένος is an epithet of ὁ ἀρχωρός. Coverdale is similar: “a strong harnessed man.” RV. restores the much ignored article: “the strong man fully armed.”

22. ἡμείς ἄνευ τοῦ αὐλῆς. “His own homestead.” Mt. and Mk. have οἴκιαν. Comp. Mt. xxvi. 3, 58; Mk. xiv. 54, xv. 16; Jn. xviii. 15. Meyer contends that in all these places αὐλή retains its meaning of “court, courtyard,” as in Mt. xxvi. 69; Mk. xiv. 66; Lk. xxii. 55. But there is no hint here that “our Lord encountered Satan in the αὐλή of the High Priest.” For τὰ ὑπάρχοντα see on viii. 3: substantia ejus (d), facultates ejus (a₂c), ea quae possidet (Vulg.). Mt. and Mk. have τὰ σκεύη.

23. ὁ ἀρχωρός αὐτοῦ ἐπελθὼν. This is Christ: ἀπεκδυσάμενος τὸς ἄρχας καὶ τὰς ἐξοικολήθης ἐδαπατήσεως ἐν παραγγελίᾳ θρησκεύως αὐτοῦ (Col. ii. 15). For ἐπέρχομαι in a hostile sense comp. 1 Sam. xxx. 23; Hom. Η. xii. 136, xx. 91. See on i. 35. Here Mt. and Mk. have ἐσχίλθων.

24. ὁ ἀρχωρός αὐτοῦ ἐφ’ ἑαυτοῖς. Because it had been so efficacious. Comp. Eph. vi. 11.

25. τὰ σκῦλα αὐτοῦ. Bengel explains, quæ Satanas generi humano eripuerat, identifying τὰ σκῦλα with τὰ ὑπάρχοντα (ver. 21: comp. Esth. iii. 13). But τὰ σκῦλα may be identified with τὴν πανοπλίαν. In either case Christ makes the powers of hell work together for the good of the faithful. Some who identify τὰ σκῦλα with τὰ ὑπάρχοντα interpret both of the souls which Satan has taken captive, and especially of demoniacs. Comp. τῶν ἱσχυρῶν μερεὶ σκῦλα (Is. liii. 12).

26. ὁ μὴ ὁνεὶ ἐμοὶ κατ’ ἐμοὶ ἑστιν. Verbatim as Mt. xii. 30. The connexion with what precedes seems to be that the contest between Christ and Satan is such that no one can be neutral. But that the warning is specially addressed to those who accused Him of having Beelzebub as an ally (ver. 15), or who demanded a sign (ver. 16), is less evident. See on ix. 50

27. συνάγων. Comp. iii. 17, xii. 17, 18. But the metaphor is perhaps not from gathering seed and fruit, but from collecting a flock of sheep, or a band of followers. Comp. συνάγει τοὺς
Hillel had said, "Whoso revileth the Name, his name perisheth; and whoso doth not increase it, diminisheth."

Ionic and Hellenistic for the more classical σκέδασμον; comp. Jn. x. 12, xvi. 32; 1 Mac. vi. 54; 2 Sam. xxii. 15.

Almost verbatim as Mt. xii. 43-45, where see Alford. It is not likely that there is any reference to the success of the Jewish exorcists, as being only temporary, and leading to an aggravation of the evil. The disastrous conclusion is the result, not of the imperfect methods of the exorcist, but of the misconduct of the exorcized. The case of a demoniac who is cured and then allows himself to become repossessed is made a parable to illustrate the case of a sinner who repents of his sins, but makes no effort to acquire holiness. Such an one proves the impossibility of being neutral. He flees from Satan without seeking Christ, and thus falls more hopelessly into the power of Satan again.

24. τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. "The man" who had been afflicted by it.
δι' ἀνδρων τόπων. "Through waterless places" (Tyn. RV.). The wilderness is the reputed house of evil spirits; Tobit viii. 3, where Vulg. has Angelus apprehendit daemonium, et religavit illud in deserto superioris Aegypti. Comp. Bar. iv. 35; Lev. xvi. 10; Is. xiii. 21; Rev. xviii. 2. 1 Martensen, Chr. Dogm. § 103.

ἀνάπαυσιν. "Cessation" from wandering (Gen. viii. 9): the demon seeks a soul to rest in. In LXX ἀνάπαυσις is common of the sabbath-rest: Exod. xvi. 23, xxiii. 12; Lev. xxiii. 3, etc. The punctuation is here uncertain. We may put no comma after ἄναπαυσιν and make μὴ εὑρίσκων co-ordinate with ζητοῦν: "seeking rest and finding none." This necessitates a full stop at εὑρίσκων and the admission of τότε before λέγει as genuine. But τότε (N B L Ξ) is probably an insertion from Mt. xii. 44 (om. A C D R, Vulg. Aeth. Arm.); and, if it be omitted, we must place a comma after ἀνάπαυσιν and take μὴ εὑρίσκων with λέγει. This is to be preferred.

μὴ εὑρίσκων [τότε] λέγει. "Because he doth not find it [then] he saith."

εἰς τὸν οἶκον μου ἀθέν εἰσῆλθον. He still calls it "my house." No one else has taken it, and he was not driven out of it; he "went out." No mention is made of exorcism or expulsion.

25. [σχολάζωντα]. This also may be an insertion fr. Mt., but the evidence is stronger than for τότε (N B C L R Ξ, Aeth. f1r). Tisch. omits; WH. bracket the word. If it is genuine, it is placed first as the main evil. It is "standing idle," not occupied

1 See Gregory Nazianzen's interpretation of "waterless places" as the unbaptized; "dry of the divine stream" (Oration on Holy Baptism, xxxv.; Post-Nicene Library, vii. p. 373). For the application of the parallel to the Jews, the Christian Church, and individuals, see Alford on Mt. xii. 44.
by any new tenant. The Holy Spirit has not been made a guest in place of the evil spirit.

σεσαρωμένον καὶ κεκοσμημένον. Ready to attract any passer-by, however undesirable. The three participles form a climax, and perhaps refer to the physical and mental improvement in the man. There is much for the demon to ruin once more, but there is no protection against his return. He brings companions to share the enjoyment of this new work of destruction, and to make it complete and final.

The verb σαρω (σάρων = "a broom") is a later form of σαίρω, and occurs again xv. 8. For κεκοσμημένον comp. Rev. xxi. 2.

26. παραλαμβάνει. Comp. ix. 10, 28, xviii. 31; Acts xv. 39. Here again we have a climax. He brings additional spirits, more evil than himself, seven in number. Comp. the seven that went out from Mary of Magdala (viii. 2). Here in the best texts ἐπτά comes last, in Mt. first. In either case the word is emphatic. See Paschasius Radbertus on Mt. xii. 43, Migne, cxx. 478.

eὐσελέβτα κατοικεῖ. There is nothing to oppose them; "they enter in and settle there," taking up a permanent abode: xiii. 4; Acts i. 19, 20, ii. 9, 14, iv. 16, etc. The verb is freq. in bibl. Grk., esp. in Acts and Apocalypse. In the Catholic and Pauline Epp. it is used of the Divine indwelling (Jas. iv. 5; 2 Pet. iii. 13; Eph. iii. 17; Col. i. 19, ii. 9). Contrast παρουσιά of a temporary sojourn (xxiv. 18; Heb. xi. 9; Gen. xxii. 23). In Gen. xxxvii. 1 both verbs occur.

χείρονα τῶν πρῶτων. The expression is proverbial; Mt. xxvii. 64. Comp. 2 Pet. ii. 20; Heb. x. 29; Jn. v. 14. Lk. omits the words which show the primary application of the parable: Οὕτως ἐσται καὶ τῇ γενεᾷ ταύτῃ τῇ πονηρᾷ. The worship of idols had been exorcized, but that demon had returned as the worship of the letter, and with it the demons of covetousness, hypocrisy, spiritual pride, uncharitableness, faithlessness, formalism, and fanaticism.

27, 28. These two verses are peculiar to Lk., and illustrate his Gospel in its special character as the Gospel of Women. Christ’s Mother is once more declared by a woman to be blessed (i. 42), and Mary’s prophecy about herself begins to be fulfilled (i. 48). The originality of Christ’s reply guarantees its historical character. Such a comment is beyond the reach of an inventor.

27. ταύτα. Apparently this refers to the parable about the demons. Perhaps the woman, who doubtless was a mother, had had experience of a lapsed penitent in her own family. Bene sentit, sed muliebriter loquitur (Beng.). For a collection of similar sayings see Wetst.

ἐπάρασα φωνήν. The expression is classical (Dem. De Cor. § 369, p. 323: comp. vocem lollit, Hor. A. P. 93); in N.T. it is peculiar to Lk. (Acts
But it is not rare in LXX (Judg. ii. 4, ix. 7; Ruth i. 9, 14; 2 Sam. xiii. 36).

Μακάρια ἡ κοιλία. Mt. xii. 46 tells us that it was at this moment that His Mother and His brethren were announced. The sight of them may have suggested this woman’s exclamation. Lk. records their arrival earlier (viii. 19-21), but he gives no connecting link. Edersheim quotes a Rabbinical passage, in which Israel is represented as breaking forth into these words on beholding the Messiah: “Blessed the hour in which the Messiah was created; blessed the womb whence He issued; blessed the generation that sees Him; blessed the eye that is worthy to behold Him” (L. & T. ii. p. 201). For κοιλία = “womb” comp. i. 15, 41, 42, 44, ii. 21, xxiii. 29; Acts iii. 2, xiv. 8.

28. Μενοῦν. This compound particle sometimes confirms what is stated, “yea, verily”; sometimes adds to what is said, with or without confirming it, but virtually correcting it: “yea rather,” or “that may be true, but.” Here Jesus does not deny the woman’s statement, but He points out how inadequate it is. She has missed the main point. To be the Mother of Jesus implies no more than a share in His humanity. To hear and keep the word of God implies communion with what is Divine. The saying is similar to viii. 21. The relationship with Christ which brings blessedness is the spiritual one. For τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ see on viii. 11.

Here and Phil. iii. 8 some authorities have μενοῦνγε (Rom. ix. 20, x. 18); but in N.T. μὲν οὖν is more common (Acts i. 18, v. 41, xiii. 4, xviii. 30, xxiii. 22, xxvi. 9). In class Grk. neither form ever comes first in a sentence. Of the Lat. text Wordsworth says, Codices hic tantum variant quantum vix alibi in evangeliiis in uno saltem vocabulo (Vulg. p. 388). Among the renderings are quiique enim, quippe, qui nimi, immo, manifestissime, etiam. Many omit the word. See Blass, Gr. p. 264.

καὶ φυλάσσοντες. Comp. Jas. i. 22-25. S. James may have been present and heard this reply. He also says μακάριος is the man who hears and does τὸν λόγον.

29-36. The Rebuke to those who Demanded a Sign (ver. 16). A longer account of the first half of the rebuke is given Mt. xii. 39-42.

29. Τῶν δὲ ὀχλῶν ἐπαθροιζομένων. Lk. once more notes how the multitude was attracted by Christ’s words and works: comp. ver. 27, iv. 42, v. 1, vi. 17, vii. 11, viii. 4, 19, 40, ix. 1, 37, xi. 1, 54, xiv. 25, xv. 1, xviii. 36, xix. 37, 48. The verb is a rare compound; here only in bibl. Grk. For ἔργα τοῦ λέγειν see on iv. 21 and iii. 8. Το παντρά Mt. adds καὶ μοιχαλίς.

εἰ μὴ τὸ σημεῖον ἑων. At first sight Lk. appears to make the parallel between Jonah and Christ to consist solely in their preaching repentance. He omits the explanation that Jonah was a type of the burial and resurrection of Christ. But δοθησται and ἔσται show that this explanation is implied. Christ had for long been
preaching; yet He says, not that the sign has been given or is being given, but that it shall be given. The infallible sign is still in the future, viz. His resurrection. Nevertheless, even that ought not to be necessary; for His teaching ought to have sufficed. Note the emphatic repetition of οὐ δοθήσεται thrice in one verse.¹

Some have interpreted οὐ δοθήσεταί as meaning, either that Jesus wrought no miracles, or that He refused to use them as credentials of His Divine mission. It is sufficient to point to ver. 20, where Jesus appeals to His healing of a dumb and blind demoniac as proof that He is bringing the kingdom of God to them. The demand for a sign and the refusal to give it are no evidence as to Christ’s working miracles and employing them as credentials. What was demanded was something quite different from wonders such as Prophets and (as the Jews believed) magicians had wrought. These scribes and Pharisees wanted direct testimony from God Himself respecting Jesus and His mission, such as a voice from heaven or a pillar of fire. His miracles left them still able to doubt, and they ask to be miraculously convinced. This He refuses. See Neander, L. J. C. §92, Eng. tr. p. 144.

31. βασίλεισσα νότου. Lk. inserts this illustration between the two sayings about Jonah. Mt. keeps the two sayings about Jonah together. Lk. places the Ninevites after the Queen of Sheba either for chronology, or for effect, or both: their case was the stronger of the two. There is a threefold contrast in this illustration: (1) between a heathen queen and the Jews; (2) between the ends of the earth and here; (3) between Solomon and the Son of Man. There may possibly be a fourth contrast between that enterprising woman and the men of this generation implied in τῶν ἀνδρῶν, which is not in Mt.

νότου . . . ἐκ τῶν περάτων τῆς γῆς. Sheba was in the southern part of Arabia, the modern Yemen, near the southern limits of the world as then known. Comp. Ps. ii. 8.

πλείον Σολομῶνος. There is no need to understand οὐ: “a greater thing, something greater, than Solomon.”

32. ἄνδρες Νινευταί. No article: “Men of Nineveh.” RV. retains “The men of Nineveh.”

eἰς τὸ κήρυγμα. “In accordance with the preaching,” they repented; i.e. they turned towards it and conformed to it; comp. ἐξωγρημένου τιν ἀυτοῦ εἰς τὸ ἐκεῖνον θέλημα (2 Tim. ii. 26); or else, “out of regard to it” they repented; comp. ὁπῶς ἔλαβεν τὸν

¹ Sanday inclines to the view that Mt. xii. 40 “is a gloss which formed no part of the original saying, but was introduced, very naturally though erroneously, by the author of our present Gospel” (Bampton Lectures, 1893, p. 433). On the question whether Christ’s appeal to Jonah requires us to believe that the story of the whale is historical see Sanday’s Bampton Lectures, pp. 414-419; Gore’s Bampton Lectures, 1891, pp. 195-200; with the literature there quoted.
308 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [XI. 32–35.

νόμον εἰς διαταγὰς ἀγγέλων (Acts vii. 53); δ ἀποκρυφὸς δίκαιον εἰς ὅνομα δικαίου (Mt. x. 41). See on x. 13; and for κήρυγμα, as meaning the subject rather than the manner of preaching, see Lft. Notes on Epp. p. 161.

33–36. The Light of the inner Eye. There is no break in the discourse, and this should hardly be printed as a separate section: the connexion with what goes before is close. Christ is still continuing His reply to those who had demanded a sign. Those whose spiritual sight has not been darkened by indifference and impenitence have no need of a sign from heaven. Their whole soul is full of the light which is all around them, ready to be recognized and absorbed. This saying appears to have been part of Christ's habitual teaching. Lk. gives it in a rather different form after the parable of the Sower (viii. 16–18). Mt. has it as part of the Sermon on the Mount (v. 15, vi. 22, 23), but does not repeat it here. Mk. has a portion of it after the parable of the Sower (iv. 21). See S. Cox in the Expositor, 2nd series, i. p. 252.

33. λόγχον ἄψας. See on viii. 16.—εἰς κρύπτην. "Into a vault, crypt, cellar." But no ancient Version seems to give this rendering, although Euthym. has τὴν ἀπόκρυφον οἰκίαν. Win. xxxiv. 3. b, p. 298. For the word comp. Jos. B. J. v. 7. 4; Athen. v. (iv.) 205 A; and the Lat. crypta; Suet. Cal. lviii.; Juv. v. 106.

ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον. "Under the bushel," i.e. the one in the room, or in the house; as we say "the sofa, the shovel." In capacity a modius is about a peck = 16 sextarii or 1/6 μέδιμνος (comp. Nep. Att. ii.): elsewhere only Mt. v. 15; Mk. iv. 21. Syr-Sin. omits.

34. λόγχος τοῦ σώματος. "The lamp of the body." To translate λόγχος "candle" in ver. 33 and "light" in ver. 34 (Tyn. Cov. Cran. Gen. AV.) is disastrous. Vulg. has lucerna in both; Wic. has "lanterne" in both, and Rhem. "candel" in both; RV. still better, "lamp" in both.

ὅταν . . . ἔταν. See on ver. 22. Here both are followed by the pres. subj., and there is no appreciable difference.

ἀπλοῦς. "Free from distortion, normal, sound."—πονηρός. "Diseased": πονηρία ὀφθαλμῶν occurs Plat. Hipp. min. 374 D. Comp. πονηρὰ ἐκεῖ σώματος (Plat. Tim. 86 D) and the common phrase πονηρὸς ἔχει. Faith, when diseased, becomes the darkness of superstition; just as the eye, when diseased, distorts and obscures. Comp. Mt. vi. 22, 23.

35. σκότειν οὖν. Here, and not in the middle of ver. 34, the meaning passes from the eye of the body to the eye of the soul.1

μὴ τὸ φῶς τὸ ἐν σοὶ σκότος ἐστὶν. This happens when the eye of the soul is so diseased that it cannot receive any ray of Divine

1 Comp. Seneca, Effugisse tenebras, bono lucis frui, non tenui visu clara prospectere, sed totum diem admittere.
truth. The μή is interrogative, and the indicative after it suggests that the case contemplated is an actual fact: “look whether it be not darkness”; considera num, schaue ob wohl nicht. The vide ne of Vulg. is not exact. Comp. Gal. iv. 11; Thuc. iii. 53. 2. Win. lvi. 2. a, p. 631; Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 109.

36. The tautology is only apparent. In the protasis the emphasis is on δέκαν, which is further explained by μή ἡξον μέρος τι σκοτεινόν: in the apodosis the emphasis is on φωτινόν, which is further explained by ὅσ ὅταν ὁ λύχνος, κ.τ.λ. “If thy whole body... it shall be wholly full of light.” Complete illumination is illumination indeed, and those who possess it have no need of a sign from heaven in order to recognize the truth. Syr-Sin. condenses.

37-54. § The Invitation from a Pharisee. Christ's Denunciation of Pharisaic Formalism and Hypocrisy. A similar condemnation of the Pharisees is placed by Mt. somewhat later, and is given with great fulness (xxiii.). If these sayings were uttered only once, we have not much material for determining which arrangement is more in accordance with fact. See on ver. 54.

37. Ἐν δὲ τῷ λαλησάν. “Now after He had spoken” (aor.), rather than “As He spake” (AV. RV.). See on iii. 21. There is nothing to show that the invitation was the result of what Christ had just been saying. Indeed, there may have been a considerable interval between vv. 36 and 37. Syr-Sin. omits.

δῶρος ἄριστος. Here, as in Jn. xxi. 12, 15, the early meal of breakfast or lunch is meant rather than dinner or supper: comp xiv. 12; Mt. xxii. 4. At this time the first meal of all was called ἄκρατιμα. Becker, Charicles, vi. excurs. i., Eng. tr. p. 240.

38. ἐθάλαμασεν. We are not told that he expressed his surprise. Jesus read his thoughts and answered them. Jesus had just come from contact with the multitude, and, moreover, He had been casting out a demon; and the Pharisee took for granted that He would purify Himself from any possible pollution before coming to table. This was not enjoined by the Law but by tradition, which the Pharisees tried to make binding upon all (Mk. vii. 3). This man's wonder is evidence that his invitation was not a plot to obtain evidence against Jesus: he was not expecting any transgression.

ἐβαπτίσθη. This need not be taken literally of bathing. Probably no more than washing the hands is meant; and this often took place at table, the servants bringing water to each person. Edersh. L & T. ii. pp. 204-207. We may understand Christ's omission to wash before coming to table, or refusal of the water offered to Him at table, as a protest against the attempt to "bind burdens" upon men, and to substitute trivialities for the weightier matters of the Law. Comp. Derenbourg, Hist. de la Pal. p. 134.

39. εἶπεν δὲ ὁ Κύριος. The use of ὁ Κύριος here (see on v. 14
and vii. 13) perhaps has special point. The Pharisee might regard Him as an ordinary guest; but He has a message to deliver to him.

Νῦν. The meaning is not certain; but it probably refers to time, and is not merely concessive. "It was not so formerly, but this is the fact now." Comp. 2 Cor. vii. 9 and Col. i. 24, where see Lft. Or, "Here we have a case in point." Comp. 2 Kings vii. 6. Or, "This is what you as a matter of fact do," in contrast to what you ought to do—πλὴν τὰ ἐνότα δότε. With the whole saying comp. Mt xxiii. 25. For πῦλακος Mt. has παροψίδος: comp. Mk. vi. 25; Mt. xiv. 8.

to δὲ ἐσωθεν υμῶν. Here the outside of the cup and platter is contrasted with the hearts of the Pharisees. In Mt. the point is that the outside of the vessels is kept clean, while the meat and drink in them are the proceeds of rapacity and the means of excess (ἀκραιαίας). Comp. ἐν ποικιλίᾳ ἀμαρτίων καὶ ἀκραιαίας (Ps. Sol. iv. 3): amantes convivia devoratores gula (Assump. Moys. vii. 4). Here some make το ἐσωθεν mean the inside of the vessels, and take υμῶν with ἀρπαγής κ. τοιχωρίας. But the position of υμῶν is conclusive against this. Others make το ἐσωθεν υμῶν mean "your inward parts" in the literal sense. "You can keep the vessels from polluting the food; but that will not prevent the food, which is already polluted by the way in which it was obtained, from filling you with uncleanness." But this is not probable. For Jewish trifling about clean and unclean vessels see Schoettg. and Wetst. on Mt. xxiii. 25, 26; and for the moral sterility of such teaching, Pressensé, Le Siècle Apostolique, p. 90.

40. ἀφορομένες. A strong word: quite classical, but in N.T. almost confined to Lk (xii. 20) and Paul (Rom. ii. 20; 1 Cor. xv. 36; 2 Cor. xi. 16, 19, xii. 6, 11; Eph. v. 17). See on xxiv. 25.

οὐχ ὁ ποιήσας τὸ ἐξωθεν. This is almost certainly a question, "Not he who has done the outside has thereby done the inside," makes sense, but it is harsh and hardly adequate. It is better with most Versions to make οὐκ = nonne. "Did not God, who made the material universe, make men's souls also?"1 It is folly to be scrupulous about keeping material objects clean, while the soul is polluted with wickedness.2

41. πλὴν τὰ ἐνότα δότε ἐλεημοσύνην. The πλὴν is here expans-

1 We may get the same sense from the text of C D G and some cursive, which transpose ἐξωθεν and ἐσωθεν. So also from some Latin texts: nonne qui fecit interiora et exteriora fecit (a), qui fecit quod intus est et quod foris est (c e)

2 Ergo miser trepidas, ne stercore jeda camino
Atria displaceant ocults sementis amici,
Ne perfusa luto sit porticus: et tamen uno
Semodio scobis hunc emundat servitus unus.
Ilid non agitas, ut sanctam filius omni
Auspiciat sine labo domum vitisque carentem (Juv. xiv. 64).
ive and progressive, "only." See on vi. 24. The meaning of τὰ ἐνόντα is much disputed, and the renderings vary greatly: quae sunt (b d g); ex his quae habeitis (f); quod superest (Vulg.); ea quae penes vos sunt (Beza); quantum potestis (Grot.); von dem, das da ist (Luth.). Quod superest is impossible; and the others are not very probable. Nor is it satisfactory to follow Erasmus, Schleiermacher, and others, and make the saying ironical: "Give something to the poor out of your luxuries, and then (as you fancy) all your ἀρπαγή and πονηρὰ will be condoned." According to this τὰ ἐνόντα means either what is in the cups and platters, or what is in your purses. And this is perhaps right, but without irony. "The contents of your cup and platter give ye in alms, and, lo, all things are clean to you," i.e. benevolence is a better way of keeping meals free from defilement than scrupulous cleansing of vessels. We are told that this is "a peculiarly Ebionitic touch." But it is very good Christianity. Others make τὰ ἐνόντα = τὸ ἐσωθεν: "As for that which is within you, as for the care of your souls, give alms." See Expositor, 2nd series, v. p. 318. Or, "Give your souls as alms," i.e. give not merely food or money, but your heart. Comp. ἰδίς πεινώντι τὸν ἀρπον ἐκ ψυχῆς σου (Is. lvi. 10). In any case, πάντα refers specially to the vessels used at meals. They will not defile where benevolence prevails. With the passage as a whole comp. Mk. vii. 18, 19 and the Baptist's commands (Lk. iii. 11).

42. ἀλλὰ οὐκ ὡμῖν. "But, far from acting thus and obtaining this blessing, a curse is upon you." Rue is mentioned in the Talmud as a herb for which no tithe need be paid.

παρέρχεσθε. "Ye pass by, neglect": comp. xv. 29; Deut. xvii. 2; Jer. xxxiv. 18; Judith xi. 10; 1 Mac. ii. 22. Elsewhere in N.T. it means "pass by" literally (xviii. 37; Acts xvi. 8), or "pass away, perish" (xvi. 17, xxii. 32, 33, etc.). Here Mt. has ἀφικατε.

τὴν κρίσιν. "The distinction between right and wrong, rectitude, justice." This use of κρίσις is Hebraistic; comp. Gen. xviii. 19, 25; Is. v. 7, lvi. 1, lx. 8; Jer. xvii. 11; 1 Mac. vii. 18.

τὴν ἀγάπην τοῦ Θεοῦ. Here only does Lk. use the word ἀγάπη, which occurs once in Mt. (xxiv. 12), and not at all in Mk. It is fairly common in LXX, esp. in Cant. (ii. 4, 5, 7, etc.).

κάκεια μὴ παρεῖναι. Their carefulness about trifles is not condemned, but sanctioned. It is the neglect of essentials which is denounced as fatal. It is not correct to say that Christ abolished the ceremonial part of the Law while retaining the moral part: see Hort, Judaistic Christianity, pp. 30, 31.

43. ἀγαπάτε τὴν πρωτοκαθεδρίαν. "Ye highly value (Jn. xii. 43) the first seat." This was a semicircular bench round the ark, and facing the congregation. Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 436. Comp. xx. 46; Mt. xxiii. 6; Mk. xii. 39.
Some Latin texts agree with C D in adding to this verse *et primos discubitos in conviviis* (b1q r), or *et primos adcubitos in cenis* (d).

44. έστε ὃς τὰ μνημεία τὰ ἄδηλα. “Whosoever in the open field toucheth a grave shall be unclean seven days” (Num. xix. 16). Hence the Jews were accustomed to whitewash such graves to make them conspicuous. People mixed freely with Pharisees, believing them to be good men, and unconsciously became infected with their vices, just as they sometimes walked over a hidden grave and were polluted without knowing it. In Mt. xxiii. 27 the Pharisees are compared to the whitewashed graves, which look clean and are inwardly foul.

45. τῶν νομικῶν. See on vii. 30. Not all the Pharisees were professional students (νομικοὶ), or teachers of the Law (νομοδιδάσκαλοι).

καὶ ἡμᾶς ὑβρίζεις. “Thou insultest even us,” the better instructed among the Pharisees. The verb implies outrageous treatment (xviii. 32 ; Acts xiv. 5 ; Mt. xxii. 6 ; 1 Thes. ii. 2), and “reproachest” is hardly strong enough. Comp. ἐνυβρίζειν (Heb. x. 29). In class. Gk. ὑβρίζειν is commonly followed by εἰς, esp. in prose. “Reproach” would be ὀνειδίζειν (Mt. xi. 20).

46. There is a triplet of Woes against the lawyers (vv. 46, 47, 52), as against the Pharisees (42, 43, 44). With this first Woe comp. Mt. xxiii. 4. In both passages Φορτίον occurs ; and, as distinct from βάρος and ἄγκος, it means that which a man is expected to bear (Mt. xi. 30). But Lk. shows his fondness for cognate words by writing Φορτίζετε Φορτία, while Mt. has δεσμεύσων Φορτία. See on xxiii. 46, and comp. Gal. vi. 2.

δυσβάστακτα. Prov. xxvii. 3. The word probably occurs here only in N.T., and has been inserted Mt. xxiii. 4 from here. The reference is to the intolerably burdensome interpretations by which the scribes augmented the written Law. They made it far more severe than it was intended to be, explaining every doubtful point in favour of rigorous ritualism.

οὐ προσψαύετε. Touching with a view to removing seems to be meant ; but it may indicate that, while they were rigorous to others, they were evasive themselves. They were scrupulous about their own traditions, but they did not keep the Law. It is not admissible, however, to interpret τοὺς Φορτίους in a different way from Φορτία δυσβάστακτα, making the latter refer to traditions, and τοὺς Φορτίους to the Law. Both mean the same, the force of the article being “the Φορτία just mentioned.” Seeing that the νομικοῦ were not neglectful of traditions, τοὺς Φορτίους must mean the Law ; and therefore Φορτία δυσβάστακτα must have this meaning.

47. Comp. Mt. xxiii. 30 ; Acts. vii. 52.

οἰκοδομεῖτε τὰ μνημεῖα τῶν προφητῶν οι δὲ πατέρες ὑμῶν. “Ye build the tombs of the prophets, while your fathers.” The “Tombs
of the Prophets,” near the top of the Mount of Olives, are still “an enigma to travellers and antiquarians.” All that can safely be asserted is that they are not the “tombs of the prophets” mentioned here. Robinson, Res. in Pal. iii. p. 254.

48. μάρτυρες ἐστε καὶ συνευδοκεῖτε. “Ye are witnesses and consent to”; or, “Ye bear favourable witness to and approve”: not, “Ye bear witness that ye approve.”Mt. has μαρτυρεῖτε only (xxiii. 31), which some texts introduce here (A C D). Comp. Saul, who was συνευδοκῶν to the murder of Stephen (Acts viii. 1). The ἔρα as first word is not classical: comp. Acts xi. 18.

τῶν πατέρων ὑμῶν. “Your fathers, morals as well as actually; for you carry on and complete their evil deeds.” Externally the Pharisees seemed to honour the Prophets. Really they were dishonouring them as much as those did who slew them; for they neglected the duties which the Prophets enjoined, and ignored their testimony to Christ.

49. διὰ τοῦτο καί. “Because of your complicity with your fathers’ murderous deeds, there is this confirmation of the Woe just pronounced.” Comp. Mt. xxiii. 34.

ἡ σοφία τοῦ Θεοῦ εἶπεν Ἀποστελώ. The words which are here ascribed to the “Wisdom of God” are in Mt. xxiii. 34 Christ’s own words, spoken on a later occasion. It is improbable that Christ is here quoting what He said on some previous occasion. Nowhere does He style Himself “the Wisdom of God”; nor does any Evangelist give Him this title; nor does Θεοῦ σοφίαν or σοφία ἀπὸ Θεοῦ (1 Cor. i. 24, 30) warrant us in asserting that this was a common designation of Christ among the first Christians, so that tradition might have substituted this name for the ἐγὼ used by Jesus. That He is quoting from a lost book called “The Wisdom of God” is still less probable. Written words would be introduced with λέγει rather than εἶπεν, and the context seems to imply some Divine utterance. In the O.T. no such words are found; for Prov. i. 20-31; 2 Chron. xxiv. 22, xxxvi. 14-21 are quite inadequate. And we obtain nothing tangible when we make the passage “a general paraphrase of the tenor of several O.T. passages.” Rather it is of the Divine Providence (Prov. viii. 22-31), sending Prophets to the Jewish Church and Apostles to the Christian Church, that Jesus here speaks: “God in His wisdom said.” Comp. vii. 35. Jesus here speaks with confident knowledge of the Divine counsels: comp. x. 22, xv. 7, 10.

1 Vulg. has testificamini quod consentitis, and a few cursives read οἱ συνευδοκεῖτε. Lat. texts vary greatly: quia consentitis (r), et consentitis (C T), consentitis (E), consentire (cil), consentientes (f), non consentientes (a b q), non consentire (d) following μὴ συνευδοκεῖν (D).

2 See Ryle, Canon of O.T. p. 155; and for apparent quotations from Scripture which cannot be found in Scripture comp. Jn. vii. 38; 1 Cor. ii. 9; Eph. v. 14.

Of Mt. has σοφός καὶ γραμματέας, and mentions crucifixion and scourging along with death and persecution. By coupling the persecuted Apostles with the persecuted Prophets, Jesus once more indicates the solidarity of the Pharisees with their wicked forefathers: comp. Mt. v. 12. For εἰς αὐτῶν (τῶν) comp. Jn. xvi. 17; 2 Jn. 4; Rev. ii. 10. For διώκουσιν (B C L X) in the sense of "persecute" comp. xxi. 12; Acts vii. 52, ix. 4, xxii. 4, 7, etc.

50. ἵνα ἐκζητηθῇ τὸ αἷμα. This is the Divinely ordered sequence. The verb is almost unknown in profane writings; and nowhere else in N.T. is it used of "demanding back, requiring as a debt." Comp. 2 Sam. iv. 11; Ezek. iii. 18, 20, xxxiii. 6, 8; Gen. ix. 5, xlii. 22.

τὸ ἐκχειμένον ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου. Comp. Mt. xxv. 34; Heb. iv. 3, ix. 26; Rev. xiii. 8, xvii. 8. The expression καταβολὴ κόσμου does not occur in LXX. Comp. ἀπ' ἀρχῆς (Ps. lxxviii. 2).

ἐκχειμένον. This is the reading of B and a few cursives; but almost all other authorities have ἐκχειμένων, which may easily have come from Mt. The grammarians condemn ἐκχέων or ἐκχέων (Aeolic) as a collateral form of ἐκχεω. It is used of bloodshed Acts xxii. 20, and the pres. part., if genuine here, is very expressive: "the blood which is perpetually being shed."

ἀπὸ τῆς γενεᾶς ταύτης. To be taken after ἐκζητηθῇ. The reference is specially to the destruction of Jerusalem (xxi. 32).

51. The murders of Abel and Zacharias are the first and last murders in the O.T., which in the Jewish Canon ends with Chronicles. In both cases the ἐκζητησίς is indicated: “The voice of the brother’s blood crieth unto me from the ground” (Gen. iv. 10); “The Lord look upon it, and require it” (2 Chron. xxiv. 22). Chronologically the murder of Uriah by Jehoiakim (Jer. xxvi. 23) is later than that of Zachariah the son of Jehoiada. Zachariah the son of Barachiah was the Prophet, and there is no mention of his having been murdered: in Mt. xxiii. 35 “the son of Barachiah” is probably a mechanical slip. For τοῦ οἴκου Mt. has τοῦ ναοῦ, and the ναός is evidently the οἶκος meant here.

ναὶ, λέγω δὲ μιν. Comp. vii. 26, xii. 5. Not elsewhere in N.T.

52. τὴν κλειδὰ τῆς γνώσεως. “The key which opens the door to knowledge,” not “which is knowledge”; the gen. is not one of apposition. There is no reference to a supposed ceremony by which a “doctor of the law” was “symbolically admitted to his office by the delivery of a key." No such ceremony appears to have existed. The knowledge is that of the way of salvation, which can be obtained from Scripture. But the scribes had cut off all access to this knowledge, first, by their false interpretations; and, secondly, by their contempt for the people, whom they considered to be unworthy of instruction or incapable of enlightenment. Their false interpretations were fatal to themselves (αὐτοὶ ὅσ
XI. JOURNEYS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

elσήλβατε) as well as to others. See Hort, Judaistic Christianity, p. 141; Recog. Clem. i. 54, ii. 39, 46. Excepting in the Apocalypse (i. 18, iii. 7, ix. 1, xx. 1), κλέος occurs only Matt. xvi. 19. The reading ἐκρύβατε (D and some Versions) for ἦρατε is an interpretative gloss. Note that here Lk. has νομικός where Mt. (xxiii. 14) has γραμματεύς, and comp. xii. 44.

Those who were continually trying to enter (imperf. part.). The aorists indicate what was done once for all and absolutely.

53. Κάκειθεν ἐξελθόντος αὐτοῦ. In their vehemence they followed Him out of the Pharisee’s house. But it by no means follows from what they did in their excitement that “the Pharisee’s feast had been a base plot to entrap Jesus.”

The text of this verse exhibits an extraordinary number of variations. The above is the reading of ΝΒCL 33, Boh. For it ADX, Latt. Syr-Cur. substitute Λέγουντος δὲ αὐτοῦ ταῦτα πρὸς αὐτοῦ or πρὸς τὸν λαὸν: and to this DX Latt. Syr-Cur. add φωνίων παντὸς τὸν λαοῦ or τοῦ ὄχλου. For οἱ γραμματεῖς κ. οἱ Φαρ. D and various Lat. texts give οἱ Φαρ. κ. οἱ νομικοὶ, ἀγίας περί τις (Vulg. c d e f). For δεινὸς ἐνέχειν C has δεινὸς ἐπέχειν, Η δ. σωθέχειν, and D S with various Lat. texts. ἔχειν: male habere (b d q), male se habere (a), graviter habere (c e i), graviter ferre (l), and moleste ferre (r), representing δ. ἔχειν, while graviter insister (Vulg.) is Jerome’s correction to represent δ. ἐνέχειν. Again, for ἀποστοματίζειν αὐτῷ D and most Lat. texts substitute συμβάλλειν αὑτῷ: comminare illi (a), committere cum illo (b i q r), committere illi (d), conferre cum eo (c), conferre illi (e), altercari cum illo (f) representing συμβάλλειν αὑτῷ, while os ejus oppressere (Vulg.) represents ἐπιστομίζειν. Not one represents ἀποστοματίζειν.

ἔνεχειν. In Mk. vi. 19 and Gen. xlix. 23 (the only place in which the act. occurs in LXX) this verb is followed by a dat. It may be doubted whether χάρου, which is expressed Hdt. i. 118. i, vi. 119. 2, viii. 27. i, is here to be understood. If anything is to be understood, τὸν νοῦν is more probable, as in the analogous cases of ἐνέχειν (which C here reads) and προσέχειν. The meaning appears to be that they “watched Him intensely, were actively on the alert against Him”; which suits Gen. xlix. 23 (ἐνείχον αὑτῷ κύριοι τοξεμάτων) as well as the context here. But external pressure may be the meaning in both places, although in Mk. vi. 19 internal feeling suits the context better (“cherished a grudge against”). In the gloss of Hesychius, ἔνεχειν μυστικάκειν, ἐγκείται (ἢ ἐγκοτεί), it is possible that μυστικάκει refers to Mk. vi. 19 and ἐγκείται (or ἐγκοτεί) to Lk. xi. 53. See Field, Otium Norvic. iii. pp. 22, 45, and the note in Wordsworth’s Vulgate.

ἀποστοματίζειν. Originally, “to dictate what is to be learned by heart and recited” (Plato, Euthyd. 276 C, 277 A); hence τὰ ἀποστοματίζομενα, “the dictated lesson” (Arist. Soph. El. iv. 1). Thence it passed, either to the pupil’s part, mere recitation, as of the Sibyl reciting verses (Plut. Thes. xxiv.); or to the teacher’s
part, the plying with questions "to provoke to answer," as here. See Wetst. ad loc., and Hatch, Bib. Grk. p. 40.

54. Confusion in the text still continues; but the true reading is not doubtful. WH. give this as a good instance of conflations; the common reading being compounded of the original text and two early corruptions of it. Comp. ix. 10, xii. 18, xxiv. 53.


(c) ἐνεδρεύοντες αὐτῶν, ἐνεδρεύσας τι ἐκ τοῦ στήματος αὐτοῦ, ἵνα κατηγορήσωσιν αὐτοῦ. A C E G H K M U V Γ Δ Δ, and with small variations X, all cursives, Vulg. etc. WH. ii. Introduction, p. 102.

ἐνεδρεύοντες. Elsewhere in N.T. only Acts xxiii. 21: comp. Deut. xix. 11; Prov. xxvi. 19; Wis. ii. 12; Ecclus. xxvii. 10, 28; Lam. iv. 19; Jos. Ant. v. 2. 12; in all which places it has, as here, the acc. instead of the usual dat.

θηρεύσαν.¹ Here only in N.T. Comp. Ps. lviii. 4. Both this word and ἐνεδρεύοντες are very graphic. Godet remarks that we have here une scène de violence peut-être unique dans la vie de Jésus: and hic vehementiss suberat fraudulentia (Beng.). We infer from xii. 1 that now the disciples are present.

It is possible that in Mt. xxiii. what took place on this occasion is combined with what was said in the temple just before the Passion. Lk. gives only a very brief notice of the later denunciation (xx. 45-47; comp. Matt. xxiii. i-7). But the fact that he gives two denunciations is against the theory that only one was uttered, which he assigns to one occasion and Mt. to another. It may, however, easily have happened that some of what was said on the first occasion has been transferred to the second, or vice versa.

XII. The greater part of the utterances of Christ which Lk. records in this chapter are also recorded in different parts of Mt., for the most part either in the Sermon on the Mount (v.-vii.), or in the Charge to the Twelve (x. 5-42), or in the Prophecy of the Last Days (xxiv. 4-51). Here they are given in the main as a continuous discourse, but with marked breaks at vv. 13, 22, 54. Lk. evidently regards vv. 1-21 as spoken immediately after the commotion at the Pharisee's house; and there is little doubt that vv. 22-53 are assigned by him to the same occasion. How much break there is between vv. 53 and 54 is left undetermined. The fact that many of Christ's sayings were uttered more than

¹ Comp. Ἐπέ μοι, δ' Ἐκκρατεῖτε, οὐκ ἂν θηρεύσατε, τῆλε κοιτάστων δι', δύναμα θηρεύων καὶ ἄν τις δηματί ἄμαρτῃ, έρμαιον τοῦτο ποιούμενον; (Plat. Gorg. 489 B).
once, and were differently arranged on different occasions, will partly explain the resemblances and differences between Lk. and Mt. here and elsewhere. But it is also probable that there has been some confusion in the traditions, and that words which one tradition placed in one connexion were by another tradition placed in another.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Lk. xii. } & 2-9 = \text{Mt. x. } 26-33. & \text{Lk. xii. } 51-53 = \text{Mt. x. } 34-36. \\
22-32 = & \text{vi. } 25-34. & 54-56 = \text{[xvi. } 2, 3]. \\
33, 34 = & \text{vi. } 19-21. & 57-59 = \text{v. } 25, 26. \\
39-46 = & \text{xxiv. } 43-51.
\end{align*}
\]

1-12. Exhortation to Courageous Sincerity. This is closely connected with what precedes. The commotion inside and outside the Pharisee's house had attracted an immense crowd, which was divided in its sympathy, some siding with the Pharisees, others disposed to support Christ. His addressing His words to His disciples rather than to the multitude indicates that the latter were in the main not friendly. But the appeal made to Him by one of them (ver. 13) respecting a purely private matter shows that His authority is recognized by many. The man would not have asked Him to give a decision in the face of a wholly hostile assembly. But this warning to His followers of the necessity for courageous testimony to the truth in the face of bitter opposition implies present hostility. The connexion with the preceding scene is proved by the opening words, 'Εν οίς, "In the midst of which, in the meantime."

1. τῶν μωρίδων τοῦ ὀχλου. Hyperbolical, as in Acts xxi. 20. The article points to what is usual; "the people in their myriads." Comp. οὐ φοβηθήσομαι ἀπὸ μωρίδων λαοῦ τῶν κύκλῳ ἑπταπεμένων μοι (Ps. iii. 7).

ἡρέατο λέγειν. The ἡρέατο gives a solemn emphasis to what follows: see on iv. 21, and comp. xiv. 18 and Acts ii. 4. It may possibly refer to πρώτον; He began to address the disciples, and then turned to the people. The πρώτον means that His words were addressed primarily to the disciples, although the people were meant to hear them. After the interruption He addresses the people directly (ver. 15). It makes poor sense to take πρώτον with προσέχετε, "First of all beware" (Tyn. Cran. Gen.), for to beware of Pharisaic hypocrisy cannot be considered the first of all duties. For other amphibolous constructions see on ii. 22.

Προσέχετε ἐαυτοῖς ἀπό. "Take heed to yourselves and avoid; beware of." The warning phrase προσέχετε ἐαυτοῖς is peculiar to Lk. (xvii. 3, xxi. 34; Acts v. 35, xx. 28); but in LXX πρόσεχε σεαυτῷ is common (Gen. xxv. 6; Exod. x. 28, xxxiv. 12; Deut. iv. 9, etc.). For the reflexive see on xxi. 30.
This constr. is common after verbs of avoiding, ceasing from, guarding against, and the like; παύω, καλώ, φυλάσσομαι, κ.τ.λ. Comp. τίθηοντο τοις πάσης φωτείας (Tobit iv. 12). The pronoun is often omitted, xx. 45; Mt. vii. 15, x. 17, xvi. 6, 11; Deut. iv. 23.

This warning seems to have been given more than once (Mk. viii. 15). Leaven in Scripture is generally a type of evil which corrupts and spreads, disturbing, puffing up and souring that which it influences. The parable of the Leaven (xiii. 20, 21; Mt. xiii. 33) is almost the only exception. Ignatius (Magnes. x.) uses it in both a good and a bad sense. In profane literature its associations are commonly bad. The Flamen Dialis was not allowed to touch leaven or leaven bread (Aulus Gellius, x. 15): comp. Juv. iii. 188. The proverb μικρὰ ζύμη δόλον τὸ φύμα ξυμοῦ, is used of pernicious influence (1 Cor. v. 6; Gal. v. 9). Fermentation is corruption.

If τῶν Φαρισαίων is rightly placed last (B L), it is epexegetic. “Beware of the leaven which is hypocrisy,—I mean the Pharisees’ leaven.” In Mt. xvi. 12 “the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees” is interpreted as meaning their doctrine.

2. ὡσ′ ὅτι συγκεκαλυμμένον ἀστιν. “But there is nothing covered up, which shall not,” etc. Hypocrisy is useless, for one day there will be a merciless exposure. It is not only wicked, but senseless.

3. ἀνθ' ὅν. This is commonly rendered “wherefore,” like ἀντὶ τοῦτον, “for this cause” (Eph. v. 31). But in i. 20, xix. 44; Acts xii. 23 it = ἀντὶ τοῦτον, δότι; and it may have the same meaning here. “There is nothing hid, that shall not be known: because whatever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light,”—quoniam quae in tenebris dixistis in lumine dicentur (Vulg.). Christ is continuing to insist that hypocrisy is folly, for it is always unmasked at last. There was a saying of Hillel, “Think of nothing that it will not be easily heard, for in the end it must be heard.” See small print on i. 20. It is in wording that this is parallel to Mt. x. 26, 27: the application is very different.

ἐν τοῖς ταμείοις . . . ἐπὶ τῶν δωμάτων. “Store chambers” are commonly “inner chambers, secret rooms,” especially in the East, where outer walls are so easily dug through: comp. Mt. vi. 6, xxiv. 26; Gen. xliii. 30; Judg. xvi. 9; 1 Kings xxii. 25. To this day proclamations are often made from the housetops: comp. ἐπὶ τῶν δωμάτων (Is. xv. 3; Jer. xix. 13, xlviii. 38). See D.B. 2 i. p. 1407; Renan, Les Évangiles, p. 262 n.

The Latin Versions give a variety of renderings: in cellariis (i1r), in promptalibus (d), in promptuariis (e), in cubilibus (Vulg. f; om. b q). Comp. ver. 24.

4. λέγω δὲ οὖν τοῖς φίλοις μου. “My friends are not likely
to be hypocrites, although persecution will tempt them to become such"; comp. Jn. xv. 15.

μὴ φοβηθῆτε ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποκτεινόντων. The use of ἀπὸ here is analogous to that in ver. 1, of that which one turns away from. It is Hebraistic (Lev. xix. 30, xxvi. 2; Deut. i. 29, iii. 22, xx. 1; Josh. xi. 6; 1 Sam. vii. 7; Jer. i. 8, 17; 1 Mac. ii. 62, viii. 12, etc.). It is not used of fearing God.

μετὰ ταῦτα. The plural may refer to the details of a cruel death, or to different kinds of death. Not in Mt. x. 28.

μὴ ἔχωντων. Lk. is fond of this classical use of ἔχων: ver. 50, vii. 40, 42, xiv. 14; Acts iv. 14, xxiii. 17, 18, 19, xxv. 26, xxviii. 19. Here Mt. (x. 28) has μὴ δυναμένων.

5. φοβηθῆτε τὸν μετὰ τὸ ἀποκτειναί ἔχοντα ἔχοντα, κ.τ.λ. There is little doubt that this refers to God and not to the devil. The change of construction points to this. It is no longer φοβηθῆτε ἀπὸ τοῦτον, but τοῦτον φοβηθῆτε, "fear without trying to shun," which is the usual construction of fearing God. Moreover, we are not in Scripture told to fear Satan, but to resist him courageously (Jas. iv. 7; 1 Pet. v. 9); τὸν θεὸν φοβηθῆτε, τὸ διαβόλῳ ἀντίστητε is scriptural doctrine. Moreover, although the evil one tries to bring us to Gehenna, it is not he who has authority to send us thither. This passage (with Mt. x. 28), the king with twenty thousand (see on xiv. 33), and the Unjust Steward (see on xvi. 1), are perhaps the only passages in which the same words have been interpreted by some of Satan and by others of God.

ἐμβαλεῖν εἰς τὴν γέενναν. Excepting here and Jas. iii. 6, γέεννα occurs only in Mt. and Mk. in N.T. Not in LXX. The confusion caused in all English Versions prior to RV. by translating both γέεννα and ᾧν.'<"hell" has been often pointed out. Lrt. On Revision, pp. 87, 88; Trench, On the AV. p. 21. Γέεννα is a transliteration of Ge-Hinnom, "Valley of Hinnom," where children were thrown into the red-hot arms of Molech. When these abominations were abolished by Josiah (2 Kings xxiii. 10), refuse of all kinds, including carcases of criminals, was thrown into this valley, and (according to late authorities) consumed by fire, which was ceaselessly burning. Hence it became a symbolical name for the place of punishment in the other world. D.B. artt. "Gehenna," "Hinnom," and "Hell."

6. πέντε στροφεῖα . . . ἄσσαρίων δύο. Mt. has δύο στροφεῖα ἄσσαριῶν. Both have ἐν ἐξ αὐτῶν ὧδε, which is more expressive than ὑστερ ἐξ αὐτῶν, throwing the emphasis on ἐν: "not even one of them," although five cost so little. Both στροφεῖος and στροφεῖον commonly mean "sparrow," although sometimes used vaguely for "bird" or "fowl": e.g. Ps. xi. 1, lxxxiv. 4. The Heb. ṣârâpâr, which it often represents, is still more commonly generic, and was applied to any variety of small passerine birds, which are specially
numerous in Palestine, and were all allowed as food. Tristram, *Nat. Hist. of B.* p. 201. It is unfortunate that *δοράμων* and its fourth part *κοδράντης* (Mt. v. 26; Mk. xii. 42) should both be translated "farthing," while *δινάρων*, which was ten to sixteen times as much as an *δοσάρων*, is translated "penny." "Shilling" for *δινάρων*, "penny" for *δοσάρων*, and "farthing" for *κοδράντης* would give the ratios fairly correctly, although a shilling now will buy only about half what a *denarius* would buy then.

ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ. A Hebraism, very freq. in Lk. (i 19, xvi. 15; Acts iv. 19, vii. 46; comp. Lk. i. 6, 15, 75; Acts viii. 21, x. 4). It implies that each bird is individually present to the mind of God. Belief in the minuteness of the Divine care was strong among the Jews: *Non est vel minima herbula in terra cui non praecipue sit aquis in celo.*

7. ἄλλα καὶ οἱ τρίχες τῆς κεφαλῆς. "But (little as you might expect it) even the hairs of your head." Comp. xxi. 18; Acts xxvii. 34; 1 Sam. xiv. 45; 2 Sam. xiv. 11; 1 Kings i. 52; Dan. iii. 27. μὴ φοβεῖσθε . . . διαφέρετε. "Cease to fear (pres. imper.) . . . ye are different from, i.e. are superior to": Mt. vi. 26, xii. 12; 1 Cor. xv. 41; Gal. iv. 1. This use of διαφέρω is classical.

8. Λέγω δὲ ὅμιν. The "also" of AV. ("Also I say unto you") is impossible. The fear of men, which lies at the root of hypocrisy, as opposed to the fear of a loving God, appears to be the connecting thought.

πᾶς. *Nom pend.* placed first with much emphasis. For similar constructions comp. xxi. 6; Jn. vi. 39, vii. 38, xvii. 2.

δομολογήσεις εἰν ἐμοί. The expression comes from the Syriac rather than the Hebrew, and occurs only here and Mt. x. 32. The phrase δομινι. εἰν (Mt. v. 34–36) is not quite parallel. Here perhaps the second δομολογήσει requires εἰν, and this leads to its being used with the first. That Christ will confess His disciples is not true in the same sense that they will confess Him: but they will make a confession in His case, and He will make a confession in theirs; their confession being that He is the Messiah, and His that they are His loyal disciples. As early as the Gnostic teacher Heracleon (c. A.D. 170–180), the first commentator on the N.T. of whom we have knowledge, this εἰν after δομολογήσει attracted notice.¹

9. ἀπαριθμηθῆσαι εἰνώπιον τῶν ἄγγελων. This expressive compound verb is used of Peter's denial of Christ (xxii. 34, 61; Mt. xxvi. 34, 75; Mk. xiv. 30, 72). In Mt. we have ἀρνήσομαι κάγιον εἴπροσθεν τοῦ πατρὸς μου. Note that Lk. has his favourite εἰνώπιον for εἴπροσθεν (see on i. 15), and that he has "the Angels of God" where Mt. has "My Father": comp. xv. 10.

10. Comp. Mt. xii. 31, 32 and Mk. iii. 28, 29, in both which places this difficult saying is closely connected with the charge brought against our Lord of casting out demons through Beelzebub; a charge recorded by Lk. without this saying (xi. 15-20). We cannot doubt that Mt. and Mk. give the actual historical connexion, if these words were uttered only once.

τὸ αὐτὸν πνεῦμα. Here again Lk. has a favourite word (see on vii. 35); Mt. has δι', and Mk. has δέ. Also for εἰς τὸν υἱὸν Μt. has κατά τὸν υἱὸν. For this use of εἰς after βλασφημεῖν and the like comp. xxii. 65; Acts vi. 11; Heb. xii. 3. After ἄμαρτάνειν it is the regular construction, xv. 18, 21, xvii. 4; Acts xxv. 8, etc. The Jewish law was, “He that blasphemeth the name of the Lord, he shall surely be put to death: all the congregation shall certainly stone him” (Lev. xxiv. 16).

οὐκ ἀφεθήσεται. Constant and consummate opposition to the influence of the Holy Spirit, because of a deliberate preference of darkness to light, renders repentance, and therefore forgiveness, morally impossible. Grace, like bodily food, may be rejected until the power to receive it perishes. See on 1 Jn. v. 16 in Camb. Grk. Test., and comp. Heb. vi. 4-8, x. 26-31. The identity of the “blasphemy against the Holy Spirit” with the “sin unto death” is sometimes denied (D.B. i. p. 442); but a sin which will never be forgiven must be a sin unto death. Schaff’s Herzog, i. p. 302. In each case there is no question of the efficacy of the Divine grace. The state of him who is guilty of this sin is such as to exclude its application (Wscott. on Heb. vi. 1-8, p. 165). Blasphemy, like lying, may be acted as well as uttered: and it cannot safely be argued that blasphemy against the Spirit must be a sin of speech (Kurzg. Kom. N.T. i. p. 75). See Aug. on Mt. xii. 31, 32; also Paschiasius Radbertus, Migne, cxx. 470-472.

11, 12. Comp. xxi. 14, 15, which is parallel to both Mt. x. 19, 20 and Mk. xiii. 11, but not so close to them in wording as these verses are. The connexion here is evident. There is no need to be afraid of committing this unpardonable blasphemy by ill-advised language before a persecuting tribunal; for the Holy Spirit Himself will direct their words.

11. εἰσφέρων ὄμοι ἐπὶ τὰς συναγωγὰς. In all four passages their being brought before synagogues is mentioned. The elders of the synagogue were responsible for discipline. They held courts, and could sentence to excommunication (vi. 22; Jn. ix. 22, xii. 42, xvi. 2), or scourging (Mt. x. 17), which was inflicted by the ἑπηρέτης (see on iv. 20). Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. II. ii. pp. 59-67; Dernbourg, Hist. de la Pal. pp. 86 ff. The ἄρχαί and ἐξουσίας would include the Sanhedrin and Gentile tribunals.

μὴ μεριμνήσῃτε πῶς ἐὰν ἀπολογηθοῦσιν. Neither the form nor
the matter of the defence is to cause great anxiety beforehand. See on ver. 22 and x. 41. Excepting Rom. ii. 15 and 2 Cor. xii. 19, ἀπολογεῖσθαι is peculiar to Lk. (xxi. 14 and six times in Acts). Here Mt. and Mk. have λαλήσεις.

D 157, a b c d ε 1 l q Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Aeth. omit ἣ ἡ, which may possibly come from Mt. x. 19. If so, this is a Western non-interpolation. See note at the end of ch. xxiv. WH. bracket.

12. ἐν αὐτῷ τῇ ὁρᾷ. "In that very hour": see small print on x. 7, and comp. Exod. iv. 12 and 2 Tim. iv. 17. Renan points out the correspondence between this passage and Jn. xiv. 26, xv. 26 (V. de J. p. 297, ed. 1863). Comp. Ex. iv. 11.

13-15. § The Avaricious Brother rebuked. This incident forms the historical introduction to the Parable of the Rich Fool (16-21), just as the lawyer’s questions (x. 25-30) form the historical introduction to the Parable of the Good Samaritan. Comp. xiv. 15, xv. 1-3. We are not told whether the man was making an unjust claim on his brother or not; probably not: but he was certainly making an unjust claim on Jesus, whose work did not include settling disputes about property. The man grasped at any means of obtaining what he desired, invading Christ’s time, and trying to impose upon his brother an extraneous authority. Facile ii, qui doctorem spiritualem admirantur, eo delabuntur, ut velit eo abuti ad domestica componenda (Beng.). Compare Christ’s treatment of the questions respecting the payment of the didrachma, the woman taken in adultery, and payment of tribute to Cæsar.

18. εἶπε τῷ ἄδελφῳ μοι. He does not ask Jesus to arbitrate between him and his brother, but to give a decision against his brother. There is no evidence that the brother consented to arbitration.

14. Ἀνθρωπε. A severe form of address, rather implying disapprobation or a desire to stand aloof, xxii. 58, 60; Rom. ii. 1, ix. 20. Comp. Soph. Aj. 791, 1154. As in the case of the lepers whom He healed (v. 14, xvii. 14), Jesus abstains from invading the office of constituted authorities. No one appointed Him (κατέστησεν) to any such office. Comp. Τὸς σε κατέστησεν ἄρχοντα καὶ δικαστὴν ἐφ’ ἡμῶν; (Exod. ii. 14), words which may have been familiar to this intruder. Comp. Jn. xviii. 36.

μεριστής. Here only in N.T. Not in LXX. There is no need to interpret it of the person who actually executes the sentence of partition pronounced by the κριτής. The κριτής who decides for partition is a μεριστής. Syr-Sin. omits.

15. φιλάσσεσθε ἀπό. The expression is classical (Xen. Hell. vii. 2. 10; Cyrr. ii. 3. 9), but the only similar passage in N.T. is φιλάσσετε ἐνυμά ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων (1 Jn. v. 21): it is stronger than προσέχετε ἀπό.
"Every form of covetousness": comp. πάντα πειρασμῶν, "every kind of temptation" (iv. 13); πᾶσα ἀμαρτία καὶ βλασφημία (Mt. xii. 31). On πλεονεξία, "the greedy desire to have more," as a more comprehensive vice than φλαργυρία, see Lk. Ἐφ. p. 56 and on Col. iii. 5. He quotes φυλάξασθε οὖν ἀπὸ τῆς πορνείας καὶ τῆς φιλαργυρίας (Test. XII. Patr. Jud. xviii.), and somewhat differs from Trench, Syn. xxiv. Jesus, knowing what is at the root of the brother's unreasonable request, takes the opportunity of warning the whole multitude (πρὸς αὐτούς) against this prevalent and subtle sin.

οὐκ ἐν τῷ περισσεύειν τινι. "Not in the fact that a man has abundance is it the case that his life is the outcome of his possessions"; i.e. it does not follow, because a man has abundance, that his life consists in wealth. Some render, "For not because one has abundance, is his life part of his possessions," i.e. so that he can secure it. But the other is simpler. Life depends for its value upon the use which we make of τὰ ὑπάρχοντα, and for its prolongation upon the will of God. It is unlikely that ἡ ζωὴ here means or includes eternal life; but it includes the higher life as distinct from βίος. Comp. οὐ γὰρ ἐν τῇ ὑπερβολῇ τὸ αὐτάρκης οἴε ἡ πράξεως, δυνατὸν δὲ καὶ μὴ ἀρχοντα γῆς καὶ θαλάττης πράττειν τὰ καλὰ καὶ γὰρ ἀπὸ μετρίων δύναι ἄν τις πράττειν κατὰ τὴν ἀρετὴν (Arist. Εθ. Νικ. x. 8. 9).

For the dat. after περισσεύειν comp. xxi. 4 and Tobit iv. 16, and for that after τὰ ὑπάρχοντα see on viii. 3.

16–21. § The Parable of the Rich Fool, which illustrates both points;—that the life that is worth living does not depend upon wealth, which may be a trouble and anxiety; and that even mere existence cannot be secured by wealth.

16. Εἶπεν δὲ παραβόλήν πρὸς. Each separate combination is characteristic: εἶπεν δὲ, εἶπεν παραβολήν, and εἶπεν πρὸς. See on vi. 39, and comp. xv. 3.

εὐφόρισεν. Here only in bibl. Grk. Josephus uses it of Galilee as productive of oil (B. J. ii. 21. 2); but elsewhere it occurs in this sense in medical writers only (Hobart, p. 144): comp. τελεσφόρειν (viii. 14).

ἡ χώρα. Comp. xxi. 21; Jn. iv. 35; Jas. v. 4. There is no hint that the man's wealth was unjustly acquired; and this is some slight confirmation of the view that the brother's claim was not unjust (ver. 13). There is perhaps a reference to Ecclus. xi. 18, 19 or to Ps. xlix. 16–20.

17. Τί ποιήσω; Comp. Eccles. v. 10.

οὐκ ἔχω ποιτίς συνάδω. Quasi nusquam essent quibus passendis possent impendi (Grot.). Ἰνοποίον σινὺς, κοιταρίων δομος, ορα ἵππων... ἢ τευματηκαὶ qua mancanti in æternum (Ambr.)
Note the repetition of μοῦ: "my fruits, my barns, my goods, my soul." It is just here that there is some resemblance to the story of Nabal: "Shall I take my bread, and my water, and my flesh that I have killed for my shearers and give it unto men of whom I know not whence they be?" (I Sam. xxv. 11): but it is too much to say that there is an evident reference to Nabal.

18. καθελώ. First with emphasis: he is eager to set to work. But pauperum nulla mentio (Beng.). Comp. aφελέω, which is the true reading, Rev. xxii. 19; and see Veitch, p. 25. Note the chiasmus between καθελώ and οἰκοδομήσω.

The text of the words which follow καὶ συνάξω ἐκεῖ is much confused, but πάντα τὸν σιτὸν καὶ τὰ ἄγαθα μου (K a c B L T X, Syr-Harc. Boh. Sah. Aeth. Arm.) is probably correct, the μοῦ after σιτὸν (K a c X, Syr-Harc. Boh. Sah. Aeth.) being rejected as an insertion.

WH. give the evidence in full (ii. p. 103), and regard it as a marked instance of conflation. Comp. ix. 10, xi. 54, xxiv. 53. The main facts are these. The expression τὰ γενήματα is very common in LXX for the fruits of the earth, and the phrase συνάξει τὰ γενήματα occurs Exod. xxii. 10; Lev. xxv. 20; Jer. viii. 13. The familiar τὰ γενήματα μου was substituted in some documents for the unusual combination τὸν σιτὸν καὶ τὰ ἄγαθα (K a D), in others for τὸν σιτὸν (A Q E F G H etc.), in one for τὰ ἄγαθα μου (346); yet another variation is caused by the substitution of τῶν καρπῶν μου (from ver. 17) for the whole of the unusual combination (39), omnes fructus meas (a c d e). Thus we have—

(a) τὸν σιτὸν [μοῦ] καὶ τὰ ἄγαθα μου.
(b) τὰ γενήματα μου.
2. τῶν καρπῶν μου.
(d) τὰ γενήματα μου καὶ τὰ ἄγαθα μου.
2. τὸν σιτὸν μου καὶ τὰ γενήματα μου.

The common reading (δ. 1) is a conflation of β. 1 and α.

19. ἐρω τῇ ψυχῇ μου. There is probably no irony in making him address, not his body, but his soul: the ψυχῇ is here used as the seat of all joyous emotions. Comp. μὴ μεριμνάτε τῇ ψυχῇ τῇ φάγγσα (ver. 22). Field quotes καρτέρησον, ψυχῇ, προθεσμίαν σύντομον, ἵνα τὸν πλεῖον χρόνον ἀπολαῦσῃ ἁσφαλῶς ἠδύνης (Charit. Aphrod. ii. 2); and Wetst. quotes θαρρῶν ἐμαυτὸν καὶ πρὸς τὴν ἐμαυτοῦ ψυχῆν εἰστῶν. Ἀθηναίος ἔλαμ (Libanius, D xvi. p. 463). See Stallbaum on Plat. Repub. ii. 8, p. 365 A.

κειμενα εἰς ἐτη πολλᾶ· ἀναπαύον, φάγε, πλα. These words are omitted in D and some Latin authorities (a b c d e f g). With εἰς ἐτη πολλᾶ comp. Jas. iv. 13-17; Prov. xxvii. 1; Ecclus. xxix. 12; and with φάγε, πλα comp. Tobit vii. 10 and the remarkable parallel Ecclus. xi. 19. The asyndeton marks the man's confidence and eagerness.

20. εἶπεν δὲ αὐτῷ ὁ Θεός. This is a parable, not history. It is futile to ask how God spoke to him. For Ἀφρων see on xi. 40 and xxiv. 25. The τοιῇ τῇ νυκτὶ is placed first in emphatic contrast to the ἐτη πολλᾶ. See Schanz, pp. 347, 348.

τὴν ψυχήν σου αἰτοῦντι ἀπὸ σοῦ. "They are demanding thy
soul of thee": the present tense is very impressive. They do not demand it for themselves, and so we have act. and not mid. Comp. 2 Cor. xi. 20; and see the parallel lesson Wisd. xvi. 8. For the impersonal plural comp. vv. 11, 48, vi. 38, xvi. 9, xxiii. 31. There is no need to think of ἄγγελοι βαναυσάροι (Job xxxiii. 23), or of ἀρτονία (x. 30).

اء δε ἡτοίμασας, τίν εἶσταί; Vulg. Rhem. and RV. preserve the telling order: quem autem paraest? cujus erunt? "And the things which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be?" Comp. Ps. xxxix. 6, xlix. 6; Eccles. ii. 18–23; Job xxvii. 17–22. When not even his ψυχή is his own to dispose of, what will become of his ἄγαθα?

21. ἑσουρίζων αὕτη. Comp. Mt. vi. 19; 2 Cor. xii. 14; and for the εἰς before Θεόν comp. xvi. 8. It is to be regretted that the εἰς is rendered differently in the two passages in both AV. ("in, towards") and RV. ("for, toward"). "Being rich toward God" means being rich in those things which are pleasing to Him. Amassing wealth without reference to the God who bestows it is πλεονεξία, and πλεονεξία is ἀφροσύνη.

The change from αὐτῷ to εἰς Θεόν, instead of Θεόν, is intentional, and Juvenal’s dives tibi, pauper amicis (v. 113) is not quite parallel; nor again Hecato in Cic. De Off. iii. 15. 63: Neque enim somium nobis divites esse voluimus, sed liberis, progenquis, amicis, maximeque rei publicae. The whole verse is omitted in D and ab d.

22-53. God’s Providential Care and the Duty of Trust in Him (22–34) and of Watchfulness for the Kingdom (35–48) which Christ came to found (49–53). The address to the people (vv. 15–21) being ended, Jesus once more turns specially to the disciples; and it should be noticed that in doing so He no longer speaks in parables. That what follows was spoken on the same occasion as what precedes seems to be intended by Lk., but is not stated. The δε τοῦτο is included in the traditional report (see Mt. vi. 25), and proves nothing as to the original historical connexion. It is more to the point to notice that covetousness and hoarding are the result of want of trust in God (Heb. xiii. 5), and that an exhortation to trust in God’s fatherly care follows naturally on a warning against covetousness. There is logical, but not necessarily chronological connexion. More convincing is the coincidence between details. The mention of sowing, reaping, store-chamber, and barn (ver. 24) may have direct reference to the abundant harvests and insufficient barns in the parable (vv. 17, 18). But it does not follow, because this lesson was given immediately after the parable of the Rich Fool, that therefore it was not part of the Sermon on the Mount; any more than that, because it was delivered there, it cannot have been repeated here.

22. Εἰπεν δε πρὸς τοὺς μαθητάς. Note both the δε and the
πρός, and comp. ver. 16, vii. 50, ix. 13, 14, 59, 62, etc. Assuming a connexion with what precedes, Διὰ τοῦτο will mean, “Because life does not depend on riches.”

μὴ μεριμνάτε. “Be not anxious”: comp. ver. 11 and x. 41. See Lit. On Revision, 2nd ed. p. 190; Trench, On the A.V. p. 39; T. L. O. Davies, Bible English, p. 100, for evidence that "thought" in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries meant distressing anxiety. Comp. i Sam. ix. 5 with x. 2. S. Paul reiterates Christ’s teaching (1 Cor. vii. 32; Phil. iv. 6).

τῇ ψυχῇ. Not, “in your soul,” but, “for your soul.” Here again the reference to the parable (ψυχή, φάγε) seems to be direct. If so, the necessity for translating ψυχή in the same way in both passages is all the stronger. The ψυχή is the source of physical life and physical enjoyment.

23. πλείον ἐστιν τῆς τροφῆς. “Is something greater than the food” (comp. xi. 31, 32). Therefore He who gave the greater will not fail to provide the less.

24. κατανοήσατε. A favourite verb: see on ver. 27. Mt. has ἔμβλέψατε; and for τοὺς κόρακας he has τὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ. Ravens are mentioned nowhere else in N.T., but often in O.T. See especially τῇς ἐπτομασίας κόρακι βοράν (Job xxxviii. 41), and καὶ ἐδόντω τοῖς κτήνεσι τροφήν αὐτῶν καὶ τοῖς νοστοῖς τῶν κοράκων τοῖς ἐπικαλομένοις αὐτῶν (Ps. cxlvii. 9). The name (Heb. "oreb") covers the whole of the crow tribe (including rooks and jackdaws) which is strongly represented in Palestine. Like the vulture, the raven acts as a scavenger: but it is a fable that it turns its young out of the nest, leaving them to feed themselves, and that this is the point of our Lord’s mention of them. The raven is very careful of its young; and God feeds both old and young. Tristram, Nat. Hist. of B. pp. 198–201.

Here Vulg. b f l have cellarium for ταμείον, while d has promptuarium. See on ver. 3.

διαφέρετε τῶν πετεινῶν. See on ver. 7. “The birds are God’s creatures; but ye are God’s children” : ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν (Mt.), not αὐτῶν.

25. τῆς δὲ ἐξ ὁμῶν. See on xi. 5.

μεριμνῶν δύναται ἐπὶ τὴν ἡλικίαν προσθειναι πῆχυν. “By being anxious can add a span to his age.” That ἡλικία here means “age” (Heb. xi. 11; Jn. ix. 21, 23), and not “stature” (xix. 3), is clear from the context. It was prolongation of life that the anxiety of the rich fool failed to secure. Not many people give anxious thought to the problem of adding to their stature; and the addition of a πῆχυς (the length of the forearm) would be monstrous, and would not be spoken of as ἐλάχιστον. Many persons do give anxious thought to the prolongation of their allotted age, and
that by any amount, great or small. Westt. quotes Mimnermus, πηχαίων ἐπὶ χρόνων ἀνδείον ἡβης τερπόμεθα. See on ii. 52, where ἡλικία probably means stature. For πηχαίς see D.B., iii. pp. 1736 ff.; and for the literature on Hebrew Weights and Measures, Schaff’s Herzog, iv. p. 2486.

26. αἰ σὺν αὐτῷ ἀλαχίωστον δύνασθαι. These words have no equivalent in Mt. and are omitted in D, which for the whole verse has simply καὶ περὶ τῶν λαυτῶν τι μεριμνάτε. So also a b c d ff i l r: et de ceteris quid solliciti estis. By τῶν λαυτῶν are meant clothing (Mt.), food, and other bodily necessities.

For αὐτό we might have expected μονέ. But εἶ = εἴη, and the sentence is conditional in form only. “If (as is certain) ye cannot” = “Since ye cannot.” Comp. Jn. iii. 12, v. 47; 1 Cor. xi. 6; Heb. xii. 25. Win. iv. 2, a, p. 600. Or we may consider αὐτό as belonging to δύνασθε, and not to the whole sentence: “If ye are unable.” Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 183. But the former is better.

27. τὰ κρίνα. Mt. adds τοῦ ἄγρῳ. The word occurs nowhere else in N.T., but is freq. in LXX, esp. in Cant. (ii. 16, iv. 5, v. 13, vi. 2, 3, etc.): Heb. shushan or shoshannah. Some flower with a brilliant colour is evidently meant, and the colour is one to which human lips can be compared (Cant. v. 13). Either the scarlet Martagon (Lilium Chalcedonicum) or the scarlet anemone (anemone coronaria) may be the flower that is thus named. Like στροβίλα, however (ver. 7), κρίνα may be generic; and to this day the Arabs call various kinds of flowers “lilies.” See D.B. art. “Lily”; and comp. Stanley, Sin. & Pal. pp. 139, 430. Note that, while Mt. has καταμανθάνειν, Lk. has his favourite κατανοεῖν (ver. 24, vi. 41, xx. 23; Acts vii. 31, 32, xi. 6, xxvii. 39). For κοπία see on v. 5: it covers the works of men, νῆθει that of women.

After τὰ κρίνα πῶς D has ὦστε νῆθες ὦστε διψαίνει, while d has quomodo neque neunt neque texunt, and a has quomodo non texunt neque neunt. Several other Lat. texts have texunt. Thus, quomodo crescent non laborant neque neunt neque texunt (b 1r); quomodo crescent non nent neque texunt (c); quomodo crescent non laborant non neunt neque texunt (ff); and, by a curious slip, quomodo non crescent non laborant neque neunt neque texunt (i).

28. εἶ δὲ ἐν ἄγρῳ. First with emphasis. “If in the field,” where such care might seem to be superfluous. AV. wrongly takes ἐν ἄγρῳ with ἄνατα σῆμερον, following Vulg. quod hodie in agro est. Both here and in Mt. the right connexion is, “which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven.” For κλίβανος, a portable oven, as distinct from ἱπνός, see D.B. The κλίβανος is often mentioned in LXX, generally as a simile for great heat (Ps. xx. 9; Hos. vii. 4-7, etc.); ἱπνός neither in LXX nor in N.T. Wood being scarce in Palestine, grass is commonly used as fuel. For ἀμφιάζει, which is a late word (Job xxix. 14, xxxi. 19), see Veitch.
29. καὶ ὑμεῖς μὴ ξητείτε. "And do you cease to seek": comp. ver. 11, vi. 30, 37; vii. 13, viii. 49, 50, 52, etc. Mt. has the aor. μεριμνήστητε.

μὴ μετεωρίζεσθε. In class. Grk. and in LXX (Ps. cxxx. 1; 2 Mac. v. 17, vii. 34) this would probably mean, "Be not lifted up, do not exalt yourselves, seek not high things." So the Vulg. nolite in sublime tolli. Old Latin texts differ: nolite solliciti esse; nec solliciti sitis (c); non abalienetis vos (d): and many omit the passage. Luth. fahret nicht hoch her. Tyn. Cov. and Cran. "neither clyme ye up an high." But most commentators interpret it as a metaphor from ships tossing at sea: "Waver not anxiously, be not tossed about with cares." Comp. μετέωρον ἐν φοβῷ of a criminal expecting punishment (Jos. B. J. iv. 2. 5); and see S. Cox, who turns the word into a parable, Expositor, 1st series, i. p. 249, 1875. Edersheim contends for the LXX meaning, "be not uplifted" (L. & T. ii. p. 217). The verb is one of the rarer words which are common to N.T., Philo, and Plutarch.

30. ταῦτα γὰρ πάντα. This is the right combination; not πάντα τὰ ἐθνή: hac enim omnia gentes mundi quarrunt. The heathen seek anxiously after all these things, because they know nothing of God's providential care. The phrase τὰ ἐθνὴ τοῦ κόσμου occurs nowhere else in N.T. or LXX, but represents an Aramaic expression common in Rabbinical writings.

The plural verb shows that the different nations are considered distributively; and the compound expresses the anxiety with which they seek. Each nation seeks laboriously after the sum-total of these things. On the difference between ταῦτα πάντα here and πάντα ταῦτα, Mt. vi. 32, see Win. lxi. 2. b, p. 686. In both places ἐπιζητοῦσιν is the true reading, and ἐπιζητεῖ ἡ grammatical correction.

ὑμῶν δὲ ὁ πατὴρ. But you, who know that you have such a Father, have no need to be disturbed about these wants.

31. Lk. alone has his favourite πάλιν. See on vi. 24. "But (dismissing all this useless anxiety) continue to seek," etc. Mt. adds πρῶτον to ξητείτε.

Origen quotes εἰπε γὰρ ὁ Πατής τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ Αιτεῖτε τὰ μεγάλα καὶ τὰ μικρὰ υμῖν προσερχόμενα, καὶ αἰτεῖτε τὰ ἑπωφάνα καὶ τὰ ἐντέλεια προσερχόμενα υμῖν (De Orat. § 2). Comp. Clem. Alex. Strom. i. 24, p. 416, ed. Potter, and iv. 6, p. 579.

32. This verse has no parallel in Mt., and it is the only verse in this section which is entirely without equivalent in the Sermon on the Mount. The passage reads so well both with and without it, that it is difficult to see why it should have been either inserted or omitted without authority. In it the Good Shepherd assures His flock that, while the anxious seeking of the ὀλιγόπωροι after food and raiment is vain, their seeking after the Kingdom of God will
not be vain. He gives the Kingdom to those who seek it, and with it gives the necessaries of life. Whereas those who neglect the Kingdom that they may secure the necessaries, may lose both. 

\[ \text{Kýrios τομαίνει με, καὶ οὐδὲν με ὑστερήσει (Ps. xxiii. 1).} \]

The μικρὸν τομμύνον are the disciples as contrasted with the μυριάδες τοῦ δύναμ (ver. 1).

\[ \text{πολὺν = πολέμευν, which is not a diminutive, and therefore μικρὸν is neither superfluous nor an epithet of affection, but an expression of fact.} \]

On the nom. with the art. for the voc. see on x. 21; and for εὐδόκησεν see Lft. on Col. i. 19, and comp. Rom. xv. 26.

33. The first half of this verse (to παλατούμενα) has no parallel in Mt. As in vi. 29, 30, we have a rule given, not that it may be kept literally, but that it may illustrate a principle. So far as attachment to our possessions is concerned, we must be ready to part with them (1 Cor. vii. 30). Our fondness for them is not our justification for keeping them. But there is no Ebionism here, no condemnation of possessions as sinful.¹ As Bede points out, Christians are not commanded to retain nothing for their own use (for Christ Himself had a purse out of which He gave alms), but to take care that fear of poverty does not interfere with benevolence. Almsgiving is not to be a mere giving of what we can spare. Nor is it merely for the sake of the receiver. It is also for the good of the giver, that his heart may be freed from covetousness. The attempt to keep the letter of the rule here given (Acts ii. 44, 45) had disastrous effects on the Church of Jerusalem, which speedily became a Church of paupers, constantly in need of alms (Rom. xv. 25, 26; 1 Cor. xvi. 3; 2 Cor. viii. 4, ix. 1). For τὰ υπάρχοντα see on viii. 3; and for βαλλάντια see on x. 4.

\[ \text{ἄνεκλειτων} \]

Not elsewhere in N.T. or LXX. Comp. xvi. 9, xxii. 32; and, for the command, Mk. x. 41. Heaven is not to be bought with money; but, by almsgiving, what would be a hindrance is made a help.² In ρής the reference perhaps is to costly garments, which are a favourite form of wealth in the East. The word occurs Is. l. 9, li. 8; Job iv. 19, xxvii. 18; Prov. xiv. 30; but in N.T. only here and Mt. vi. 19.

34. Almost verbatim as Mt. vi. 21. S. Paul states a similar

¹ On the alleged Ebionism of Lk. see Introd. § 3. b, and also Alexander, Leading Ideas of the Gospels, pp. 163-180, 2nd ed.

² Margoliouth quotes from El-Ghazzali's Revival of the Religious Sciences many striking sayings attributed to Christ by Mahometan writers: among them these. "He that seeks after this world is like one that drinks sea-water. The more he drinks the thirstier he becomes, until it slay him" (iii. 161). "There are three dangers in wealth. First, it may be taken from an unlawful source. And what if it be taken from a lawful source? they asked. He answered: It may be given to an unworthy person. They asked, And what if it be given to a worthy person? He answered, The handling of it may divert its owner from God" (iii. 178). See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 68.
principle 1 Cor. vii. 32-34. Wealth stored up in this world has many enemies; that which is stored in heaven is safe from them all. The γάρ is specially to be noted. The reason why treasure must be stored in heaven is that the hearts of those who bestow it may be drawn heavenwards.

35-48. The Duty of Loyal Vigilance. From ver. 35 to ver. 38 this section has no parallel in Mt. The interpellation of Peter (ver. 41) is also peculiar to Lk. But vv. 39, 40 and 42-46 are parallel to Mt. xxiv. 43-51. The discourse once more takes a parabolic turn, watchfulness being inculcated by the parables of the Master’s Return (35-38, 42-48) and of the Thief’s Attack (39, 40).

35. ἐστιν γὰρ ὁ ὅμων αἱ ὠφέλες περιπλῆσομέναι. The long garments of the East are a fatal hindrance to activity. Comp. xvii. 8; Acts xii. 8; 1 Kings xviii. 46; 2 Kings iv. 29, ix. 1; Job xxxviii. 3, xl. 7; Jer. i. 17. Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 158. Note the emphatic position of ὅμων and ὄμεις. “Whatever others may do, this is to be your condition.”

36. προσδεχόμενοι. Expectantibus (Vulg.) cum desiderio et gaudio (Beng.): comp. ii. 25, 38, xxiii. 51. τότε ἀνάλογον ἐκ τῶν γάμων. If the rendering “when he shall return from,” etc., is correct, this is the only place in N.T. in which the verb has this meaning: comp. 2 Mac. viii. 25, xiii. 7, xv. 28; 3 Mac. v. 21; Wisd. ii. 1. The more usual sense is “break up (a feast, camp, etc.), depart”: comp. Phil. i. 23; Judith xiii. 1; 2 Mac. ix. 1: and this may be the meaning here. See instances in Wetst. So Luther, wenn er aufbrechen wird. The wedding is not his own, but that of a friend which he has been attending. In Esther (ii. 18, ix. 22) γάμων is used of any banquet or festival: but the literal meaning is better here.¹

37. περιβάλεται καὶ ἀνακλίνει αὐτοῦς. Comp. Rev. iii. 20, 21. Christ acted in this way when He washed the disciples’ feet: not, however, in gratitude for their faithful vigilance, but to teach them humility. Nevertheless, that was a type of what is promised here: comp. Rev. xix. 9. References to the Saturnalia, when Roman masters and slaves changed places in sport, are here

¹ Kimchi on Is. lxv. mentions a saying of R. Johanan ben Zacchai, who invited his servants without fixing a time: sapientes se ornarunt, stolidi aberunt ad opera sua. Thus some went ornati and others sordidi, when the time came, and the latter were disgraced (Keim, Jes. of Naz. v. p. 256. Comp. Schoettgen, i. p. 216).
quite out of place. The parable xvii. 7–10 sets forth the usual course between master and man.

38. δεύτερα. The first watch is not mentioned, because then the wedding-feast was going on. These are probably the two last of the three Jewish watches (Judg. vii. 19), not the two middle watches of the Roman four (Mk. xiii. 35; Acts xii. 4). See on xxii. 34 and D.B. art. "Watches of Night." In D, Marcion, Irenæus, and some other authorities, the first watch (τῇ ἐσπερίᾳ φυλακῇ) is inserted. WH. ii. App. p. 61.

39. γυνάκειτε. Probably indic. But Vulg. Luth. Beza, and all English Versions make it imperat. There is nothing strange in the sudden change of metaphor, especially in Oriental language. The "thief in the night" is a proverb for unexpected events (1 Thes. v. 2; 2 Pet. iii. 10; Rev. iii. 3, xvi. 15). Comp. the changes of metaphor in the parallel passage Mt. xxiv. 40–44.

ἀφῆκεν. "Left his house" (RV.). AV. makes no distinction between ἀφῆκεν here and ἔλασεν in Mt. xxiv. 43, rendering both "suffered." But the RV. elsewhere renders ἀφῆκεν by "suffer" (viii. 51, xviii. 16); and ἀφῆκεν here cannot mean that he went out of the house, for "he would have kept awake" implies that he remained in it. If the distinction between ἔλασεν and ἀφῆκεν is to be marked, the latter might be translated "allowed," a word which the Revisers nowhere use, except in the margin of Mk. iv. 29.

dioρυξθήματι. "To be dug through," the walls being made of mud. Wic. has "to be myned" here and "to be undermynde" in Mt. for perfodiiri of Vulg. Comp. διώρυξεν ἐν σκότει οἰκίας (Job xxiv. 16); εἰς δὲ ἐν τῷ διώρυγματε εὕρεθη ὁ κλέπτης (Exod. xxii. 2); οὐκ ἐν διώρυγμασιν εὑρον αὐτούς (Jer. ii. 34).

41. Ἐπεν δὲ ὁ Πέτρος. This interruption should be compared with that in ix. 33. Each of them connects the discourse in which it appears with a definite incident. It illustrates Peter's impulsiveness and his taking the lead among the Twelve. Perhaps it was the magnificence of the promise in ver. 37 which specially moved him. He wants to know whether this high privilege is reserved for the Apostles. For παραβολὴν λέγεις see on v. 36, and for πρὸς = "in reference to" comp. xviii. 1; Rom. x. 21; Heb. i. 7, 8, xi. 18, and possibly Lk. xix. 9 and xx. 19. Here πρὸς ἡμᾶς comes first with emphasis.

ἤ καὶ πρὸς πάντας. Peter is sure that it has reference to the Twelve: the question is whether others are included. The employment of parables would make him suppose that the multitude was being addressed, as in ver. 16; for Jesus did not commonly employ this kind of teaching with His permanent disciples. The spirit of the question resembles Jn. xxi. 21, and the answer resembles Jn. xxi. 22. In Mk. xiii. 37 we have what looks like a direct answer to the question here asked by S. Peter, "What I say to you I say to all, Watch."
42. Τίς ἀρα ἐστίν. Christ answers one question by another, which does not tell the questioner exactly what he wishes to know, but what it concerns him to know. It is enough that each who hears recognizes that he is an οἰκονόμος with responsibilities. This was true in the highest sense of the Apostles. The οἰκονόμος here is a dispenser (Vulg.) or dikaios (d), a superior slave left in charge of the household and estate (see on xvi. 1). Other names are ordinarius, actor, procurator, the meanings of which seem to have varied at different periods and on different estates. Becker, Gallus, Excursus iii. p. 204, Eng. tr. Hatch seems to assume that dispenser and dikaios were terms of fixed and invariable meaning (Bibl. Grk. p. 62). With πιστός comp. Num. xii. 7; 1 Sam. xxii. 14; and with φίλος comp. xvi. 8; Gen. xli. 39. With θεραπείας (abstr. for concr.) comp. ἐκάρη δὲ Φαραώ καὶ ἡ θεραπεία αὐτοῦ (Gen. xlv. 16). Contrast Lk. ix. 11.

σιτομέτρων. "A measured portion of food, ration." These rations on Roman estates were served out daily, weekly, or monthly. The word occurs nowhere else, but σιτομετρέω is found (Gen. xlvii. 12, 14). Comp. Hor. Ep. i. 14. 40. See instances in Wetst., and in Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 156.

44. ἀλήθως λέγω ὃμιν. Here, as in ix. 27 and xxi. 3, Lk. has ἀλήθως, others have ἀλήθεια. See on x. 12. Comp. νομικό (xi. 52) where Mt. has γραμματεῦς (xxiii. 14), and his never using Παρθεία.

ἐπὶ πάντων τοῖς ὑπάρχουσιν αὐτοῦ. See on viii. 3. This passage and Mt. xxiv. 47 seem to be the only instances in N.T. of this use of ἐπί. Elsewhere we have the gen. (ver. 42) or acc. (ver. 14), the former being more common (Mt. xxiv. 45, xxv. 21, 23).

45. Χρονίζει ὁ κύριός μου. Comp. 2 Pet. iii. 3, 4; Eccles. viii. 11. The "But and if" of AV. is simply "But if" (RV.); "and if" being "an if," a double conditional, which was common in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.

ἀρέσκει. He begins to do this, but the arrival of his lord puts a stop to it: comp. v. 21, xiii. 25; Acts xi. 15. This οἰκονόμος has a large familia of slaves under him. Perhaps he makes merry on what he ought to have given them. For παιδίσκη as a vernacular word for a female slave see Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 40. Μεθύσκεσθαι is "to get drunk," as distinct from μεθύειν "to be drunk" (Acts ii. 15).

46. For the attraction in ἐν ἀρα ἡ ὁ γεννάσκει see on iii. 19.

δικαστήσῃ. To be understood literally; for his having his portion with the unfaithful servants does not imply that he still lives: their portion is a violent death. For the word comp. Ex. xxix. 17; and for the punishment 2 Sam. xii. 31; 1 Chron. xx. 3; Susannah 59; Amos i. 3 (LXX); Heb. xi. 37. There is no
example of the word being used of scourging or other severe treatment. There is a gradation of punishments: for vile misconduct and tyranny, death; for deliberate neglect, many stripes; for unintentional neglect, few stripes. Herodotus uses διαρέματα: ii. 139. 2, vii. 39. 5. Comp. Suet. Caligula, xxvii.: multis honesti ordinis . . . medios serra dissecuit.

tὸ μέρος αὐτοῦ μετὰ τῶν ἀπίστων θήσει. “Will appoint his portion with the unfaithful servants,” i.e. those guilty of a gross abuse of trust. “Unbelievers” here has no point. Mt. has τῶν ὑποκριτῶν, which means much the same as τῶν ἀπίστων. This unfaithful steward expected to be able to play the part of a trusty agent at the time of his lord’s arrival. For τὸ μέρος we have ἓ μερὶς in LXX, Is. xvii. 14; Jer. xiii. 25.

Here the parallel with Mt. xxiv. 43–51 ends. What follows is preserved by Lk. alone.

47. ἐκεῖνος δὲ ὁ δοῦλος. “But that servant,” Ille autem servus. Both AV. and RV. have “and.” The δὲ marks the contrast between this transgressor and the οἰκονόμος, for μὴ ἐτοιμάσας ἢ ποιήσας πρὸς τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ is a less serious offence than the outrages which are described in vv. 45, 46, and one which all servants may commit.

διαρέσεται πολλὰς. Understand πληγάς and comp. ταῖεον ὀλίγας (Xen. Anab. v. 8. 12). In N.T. δέρω is never “I flay,” but always “I beat.” Comp. the vulgar “hide, giving a hiding to.” In LXX δέρω does not occur, except as v.l. in Lev. i. 6; 2 Chron. xxix. 34, xxxv. 11; but in all three places the meaning is “flay,” and the true reading possibly ἐκδέρω. Comp. Mic. ii. 8, iii. 3. The doctrine of degrees of punishment hereafter is taught here still more plainly than in x. 12, 14. See Aug. De Civ. Dei, xxi. 16.

There are two classes not mentioned here: ὁ γνων καὶ ποιήσας and (so far as that is possible) ὁ μὴ γνων καὶ ποιήσας: see on Rom. ii. 14.

48. ὁ μὴ γνων. Seeing that he is a servant, he might have known his master’s will, had he been anxious to find it out. Nevertheless it is true that even he, who, in ignorance for which he is not responsible, commits ἅξια πληγῶν, has to suffer. The natural consequences of excess or transgression must follow.

In the second half of the verse it is doubtful whether the two parallel statements mean exactly the same thing or not. Either, “He who receives much is expected to exhibit much gratitude, and also readiness to make return; and is expected to do more than those who have received less”: or, “He who receives a gift (εἴδοθη), must make a proportionate return: and he who receives a deposit (παρέθεσα), must restore more than he has received.” In the latter case the second half states the principle of the parables of the Talents and the Pounds. Note the impersonal plurals, and comp. ver. 20.

49–58. The discourse seems to return to its starting-point
(vv. 1–2). Christ’s teaching inevitably provokes opposition and a division between those who accept it and those who reject it. There is no parallel in Mt. or Mk. to vv. 49, 50.

49. πῦρ. First for emphasis. “It is fire that I came to cast upon the earth.” The context seems to show that the fire of division and strife is meant: or, comparing iii. 16, we may understand the fire of holiness, which excites hostility and controversy. *Ignis ille non est nativus terrae* (Beng.). Elis κρίμα ἐγὼ ἐἰ τὸν κόσμον τοῦτον ζῆλον (Jn. ix. 39: comp. iii. 19).

καὶ τί θέλω εἰ ἡδὴ ἀνήφθη; A passage of well-known difficulty, the translation of which remains doubtful. With this punctuation we may follow AV. and RV., “What will I, if it be (is) already kindled?” the meaning of which is not clear: comp. LXX of Josh. vii. 7. Or, with De Wette, Weiss, and many others, “How I wish that it were already kindled!” which does rather serious violence to the Greek. Or, with Origen, Meyer, etc., we may punctuate, καὶ τί θέλω; εἰ ἡδὴ ἀνήφθη. “And what will I? Would that it were already kindled!” (Win. liii. 8, c, p. 562); which is rather abrupt and harsh: but comp. xix. 42 and Jn. xii. 27. Perhaps the first is best, meaning, “What more have I to desire, if it be already kindled.” The next verse does not imply that it is not kindled; and the history of Christ’s ministry shows that it was kindled, although not to the full extent. Comp. Ps. lxxvii. 21. Christ came to set the world on fire, and the conflagration had already begun. Mal. iii. 2. Comp. the constr. in Ecclus. xxiii. 14.

50. βάπτισμα δὲ ἔγω βαπτισθῆναι. Having used the metaphor of fire, Christ now uses the metaphor of water. The one sets forth the result of His coming as it affects the world, the other as it affects Himself. The world is lit up with flames, and Christ is bathed in blood: Mk. x. 38. His passion is a flood in which He must be plunged. The metaphor is a common one in O.T. Ps. lxix. 2, 3, 14, 15, xiii. 7, cxxiv. 4, 5, cxliv. 7; Is. xiii. 2. Jordan in flood and mountain torrents in spate would suggest such figures. See on ix. 22.

πῶς συνέχομαι ἐὼς ἄτοι τελεσθῇ. “How am I oppressed, afflicted, until it be finished”: comp. viii. 37; Job iii. 24. The prospect of His sufferings was a perpetual Gethsemane: comp. Jn. xii. 27. While He longed to accomplish His Father’s will, possibly His human will craved a shortening of the waiting. Comp. συνέχομαι δὲ ἐκ τῶν δυό (Phil. i. 23). With τελεσθῇ comp. τετέλεσται, Jn. xix. 28, 30.

51. With vv. 51 and 53 comp. Mt. x. 34, 35. It was the belief of the Jews that the Messiah would at once introduce a reign of peace and prosperity. Jesus does not wish His followers to live in a fool’s paradise. He is no enthusiast making wild and delusive promises. In this world they must expect tribulation.
“Except, but.” Although the ἀλλ’ has no accent, it seems to represent ἀλλο rather than ἀλλά: “I came not to send any other thing than division.” Or there may be a mixture of ὀδηγὸν ἄλλο ἂ and ὀδηγὸν ἄλλα, ἀλλά: comp. 2 Cor. i. 13; Job vi. 5; Ecclus. xxvii. 12, xliv. 10. The expression is common in class. Grk.; and in Hdt. i. 49, 1, ix. 8, 3 the origin of it seems to be shown. See Stallbaum on Phædo, 81 B; Win. liii. 7. n. 5, p. 552.

διαμερισμός. Comp. Mic. vii. 12; Ezek. xlvii. 29; here only in N.T. Again Christ prepares them for disappointment.

52. This verse has no parallel in Mt. x. Comp. Mic. vii. 6, on which what follows seems to be based. Godet says that there are five persons here and six in ver. 53. There are five in both cases, the mother and mother-in-law being the same person. Excepting 2 Cor. v. 16, ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν is peculiar to Lk. (i. 48, v. 10, xxii. 18, 69; Acts xviii. 6). It is not rare in LXX (Gen. xlvi. 30; Ps. cxii. 2, cxiii. 26, cxx. 8, cxxiv. 2, cxxx. 3, Is. ix. 7, etc.).

53. πατὴρ ἐπὶ νῦν ἐπὶ θυγατέρα ἐπὶ τὴν νυμφην. The change from the dat. to the acc. possibly indicates that the hostility is more intense in the case of the women. But LXX of Mic. vii. 6 more probably was the cause of the change. There we have ἐπὶ τῆς of the women, but νῦν ἀντιμάζει πατέρα of the men. In Mt. x. 35 we have κατὰ c. gen. in all three cases. Lk. omits “A man’s foes shall be those of his own household.” Comp. Mal. iv. 6.

For νυμφην=“daughter-in-law” comp. Mt. x. 35; Gen. xi. 31, xxxviii. 11; Lev. xviii. 15, etc.; Jos. Ant. v. 9. In Jn. iii. 29; Rev. xviii. 23, etc., it has the classical meaning of “bride.”

54–59. §Ignorance of the Signs of the Times. Christ once more addresses the multitude (ver. 15), apparently on the same occasion; but it is by no means certain that Lk. means this. If so, this is a last solemn word by way of conclusion. The parallel passage Mt. xvi. 2, 3 is of very doubtful authority. It can hardly be derived from Lk., from which it differs almost entirely in wording, but perhaps comes from some independent tradition.

54. Ἐλεγεν δὲ καὶ. The formula is suitable for introducing a final utterance of special point. Comp. v. 36, ix. 23, xvi. 1, xviii. 1. For τοὺς ὑπόλοις see on xi. 29.

ἐπὶ δυσμῶν. In the West, and therefore from the Mediterranean Sea, which was a sign of rain (1 Kings xviii. 44). Robinson, Res. in Pal. i. p. 429; D.B. art. “Rain.”

ἐιθέως λέγετε ὅτι ὁμβρός ἔρχεται. Both the εἰθέως and the pres. ἔρχεται point to the confidence with which the announcement is made: “at once ye say, Rain is coming.” Comp. ἔρχεται ἄφρα. ὁμβρός is “heavy rain, a thunder-shower”: Deut. xxxii. 2; Wisd. xvi. 16; Ecclus. xlix. 9; Jos. Ant. ii. 16. 3.

55. ὅταν νότον πνέουτα. Understand ὁπλε. One sees that it is a south wind by the objects which it moves. Lk. alone uses νότος
of the south wind (Acts xxvii. 13, xxviii. 13). Elsewhere it means the South, as frequently in LXX (xi. 31, xiii. 29; Mt. xii. 42; Rev. xxi. 13; i Sam. xxvii. 10, xxx. 1, 14, 27; 2 Sam. xxiv. 7; i Kings vii. 25, 39 [13, 25], etc.).

καύσων. "Scorching heat": Mt. xx. 12; Jas. i. 11; Is. xlix. 10; Ecclus. xvi. 16, xliii. 22. Perhaps nowhere in N.T. does καύσων mean the burning east wind (Job xxvii. 21; Hos. xii. 1); but Jas. i. 11 is doubtful.

56. ὑποκριταί. Comp. Mt. xxiii. 14 ff. They professed to be unable to interpret signs, such as the birth, preaching, and death of the Baptist, the preaching and miracles of Jesus. But their weather-wisdom proved that they could be intelligent enough where their worldly interests were concerned.

δοκιμάζειν. "To test." In τὸ πρόσωπον τοῦ οἴκουν καὶ καύσων we have almost the only words that are common to this passage and Mt. xvi. 2, 3. With τὸν καύσων (tempus Messia) comp. xix. 44.

57. Τί δὲ καὶ ἄφ' ἑαυτῶν. "But why even of yourselves, out of your own hearts and consciences," without information from externals: comp. xxi. 30. Or possibly, "Of yourselves also," as readily (εὕθεως) as in the case of the weather. In either case ἄφ' ἑαυτῶν comes first for emphasis. For δὲ καί see small print on iii. 9.

58. ὡς γὰρ ὑπάγεις. γὰρ s. se ponitur, ubi propositionem excipit tractatio. Here ἐν τῷ ἄδει stands first with emphasis; no time is to be lost. And the Latinism dōs ἐργασίαν, da operam, occurs here only. Wetst. quotes Hermogenes, De Inventione, iii. 5. 7. Excepting Eph. iv. 19, ἐργασία in N.T. is peculiar to Lk. (Acts xvi. 16, 19, xix. 24, 25). Hobart regards it as medical (p. 243), but it is very freq. in LXX. Note ὃς = "he when."

ἀπολλάξατο. "To be quit of him" by coming to terms with him. Christ is perhaps taking the case of the two brothers (vv. 13, 14) as an illustration. The ἀπὸ before the ἀδέον is omitted in B, but is certainly right Acts xix. 12. In class. Grk. both constructions are found, but the simple gen. is more common. Plat. Leg. 868 D; Xen. Mem. ii. 9. 6.

κατασώμα. Here only in N.T. and only once in LXX of ruining or demolishing: ἔτη ἔγω κατέσώμα τὸν Ἡσαῦ (Jer. xliii. 10). In Lat. detraho is used of dragging into court. For examples see Wetst. Mt. has παραδώσῃ τῷ κρίτῃ.

παραδώσει τῷ πράκτορι καὶ δὲ πράκτωρ σε βαλεί εἰς φυλακήν. Tradat te exactori et exactor mittat te in carcerem (Vulg.). For exactor Cod. Palat. (e) has the strange word pignerarius. Nowhere else in bibl. Grk. does πράκτωρ occur. At Athens the magistrate who imposed a fine gave notice to the πράκτορες, who entered it as due from the person fined; but they did not enforce payment, if the fine was not paid. They merely kept the record. See D. of Ant.2 art. Practores. For πράκτορι Mt. has ὑπηρέτῃ.

59. λέγω σοι. He addresses each individual. Mt. has ἀμὴν λέγω σοι (comp. ver. 44), and for λεπτὸν has κοδράντην. The
λεπτόν (λεπτός = "peeled, thin, small") was half a quadrans and the eighth of an as: see on ver. 6, and comp. xxi. 2; Mk. xii. 42. Can the payment be made ἐν φυλακῇ? The parable gives no answer to this question. But it teaches that the proper time for payment is before judgment is given, and that release is impossible until full payment is made. The Talmud says: "The offences between man and God the Day of Atonement doth atone for. The offences between man and his neighbour the Day of Atonement atoneth for, only when he hath agreed with his neighbour." There is no need to interpret the details in the parable, and make the ἀντίδικος mean the law of God, and the ἀφέων God Himself, and the κριτής the Son of God.

XIII. 1-9. § Three Exhortations to Repentance, of which two (1-3; 4, 5) are based upon recent occurrences, while the third (6-9) is a parable. All three seem to have been omitted by Marcion in his mutilated Gospel; but it is not easy to see what he disliked in them. They are peculiar to Lk., and both external and internal evidence guarantee their authenticity. Time and place are indefinite; but the connexion with what precedes is expressly stated, and the scene must have been away from Jerusalem.

1-3. The Moral of the Massacre of the Galilæan Pilgrims. There is no record of this massacre in any other source. But the turbulent character of the Galilæans, and the severity of Pilate and other Roman governors, make the incident more than credible. Horrible massacres are recorded by Josephus (Ant. xvii. 9. 3, xviii. 3. 1, xx. 5. 3; B. J. ii. 3. 5, 9, 4, v. 1. 5). The fact that such things were common accounts for the absence of other records; and possibly not very many were slain. But such an outrage on Galilæans may have been one of the causes of the enmity between Herod and Pilate (xxiii. 12); and Keim conjectures that it was on this occasion that Barabbas was imprisoned. So also Lewin, Fasti Sacri, 1407.

Others have conjectured the occasion to have been the insurrection under Judas of Galilee, the Gaulonite of Gamala (Ant. xviii. 1. 1; B. J. ii. 8. 1); but that was many years earlier (c. A.D. 6), and these new-comers evidently report some recent event. On the other hand, the insurrection of the Samaritans (Ant. xviii. 4. 1) took place later than this, being the immediate cause of the recall of Pilate (A.D. 36). And what had Samaritan rebellion to do with the massacre of Galilæans? Comp. Philo's summary of the enormities of Pilate: τὰς δυσροδικίας, τὰς ὄβρεις, τὰς ἀραγάς, τὰς αἰκίας, τὰς ἐπιθείας, τῶν ἀκροτῶν καὶ ἐπαλλήλους φόνους, τὴν ἄνθρωπον καὶ ἄργαλωτάς ἀμοίβης (Leg. ad Gaïm, xxxviii. p. 1034 c, ed. Galen.). Again he says of him: ἦν γὰρ τὴν φῶς ἀκαμήθη καὶ μετὰ τοῦ αὐθάδους ἀμελεῖτος; and, οὐ ποτὲ ἐγκώτος ἔχων καὶ βαρύμην ἄνθρωπος. See Lewin, 1493; Derenbourg, p. 198.

1. παρῆσαν. Not, "there were present," as all English Versions render, but, "there came," venerunt (Cod. Brix.). These informants were not in the crowd which Jesus had been addressing, but brought the news afterwards. For this use of παρεῖναι comp. Acts
338  THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE  [XIII. 1-3.

x. 21; Mt. xxvi. 50; Jn. xi. 28: sometimes followed by πρός (Acts xii. 20; Gal. iv. 18, 20), or by εἰς (Col. i. 6); comp. Lk. xi. 7. In Mt. xxvi. 50; Acts x. 21, xii. 20, Vulg. has venio; in Col. i. 6, pervenio. Wetst. quotes a close parallel: παρῆσαν τινες ἀπαγγέλλωντες πολλοὺς τῶν Ἑλλήνων νεωτέρισεν (Diod. Sic. xvii. 8) ἐν αὐτῷ τῷ καιρῷ. "At that very opportunity," viz. just as He was speaking about the signs of the times. Possibly they had heard His last words, and thought that their story would be regarded as a sign: τῷ καιρῷ may look back to τὸν καιρὸν (xii. 56: comp. i. 20, iv. 13).

διὸ τὸ αἷμα Πιλάτου ἐμείλην μετὰ τῶν θυσίων αὐτῶν. These pilgrims from Galilee had come up to Jerusalem for one of the Feasts, probably Tabernacles, and had come into collision with the Romans, no doubt through some fanatical act of rebellion. The merciless procurator, himself in Jerusalem to keep order during the Feast, sent troops to attack them as they were sacrificing in the temple courts, and their blood was mingled with that of the slaughtered beasts. The expression, "mingling blood with blood," occurs elsewhere. Schoettgen quotes (of Israelites who were circumcised in Egypt at the Passover): et circumcisi sunt, et commixtus est sanguis paschatis cum sanguine circumcisionis (Hor. Hebr. p. 286). And again : David swore to Abishai, if he laid hands on Saul, "I will mingle thy blood with his blood" (ibid. p. 287; Lightfoot, Hor. Hebr. ad loc.).

2. We gather the object of these informants from Christ's answer. They did not want Him as a Galilæan to protest against Pilate's cruelty, perhaps by heading another Galilæan revolt. Rather, like Job's friends, they wanted to establish the view that this calamity was a judgment upon the sufferers for exceptional wickedness (Job iv. 7, viii. 4, 20, xxii. 5; comp. Jn. ix. 1, 2). Perhaps they had heard about the threatened "cutting asunder" (xii. 46), and thought that this was a case in point. There is no hint that they wished to entrap Him into strong language respecting Pilate.

παρὰ πάντας ἐγένοντο. "Showed themselves to be (comp. x. 36) sinners beyond all the Galilæans." Comp. the use of παρὰ after comparatives, iii. 13.

3. πάντες ὅμοιος ἀπολείπθε. The suffering of a whole nation is more likely to be produced by the sin of the nation than the suffering of an individual by the sin of the individual. Exempla sunt omnium tormenta paucorum. Jesus condemns neither the Galilæans nor Pilate, but warns all present of what must befall them unless they free themselves from their guilt. It is this approach of judgment upon His whole people which seems to fill Christ's thought, and to oppress Him far more than the approach of His own suffer-
ings. Grotius points out how exact the δρᾶμας is. Vide quam omnia congruerint. Paschatis enim diee occisi sunt, magna pars in ipso templo pecudum ritu, ob eandam causam seditionis. But it is unlikely that this massacre took place at the Passover. The rest is right. Πολλοὶ . . . πρὸ τῶν θυμάτων ἐπεσον αὐτοὶ καὶ τὸν Ἑλλησ τάσι καὶ βαρβάρως σεβάσμου βαρών κατέστησαν ἰδίω φόνῳ (B. J. v. 1. 3). See Martensen, Chr. Dogm. § 110.

4, 5. The Moral of the Catastrophe at Siloam. This incident also is recorded here only. Jesus mentions it spontaneously as something fresh in their memories. "The tower" means the well-known tower.

4. ἐν τῷ Σιλωάμ. The ἐν perhaps indicates that it was surrounded by buildings.

The Greek form of the name varies. Σιλωάς in LXX and Josephus; Σιλώδες in Josephus; Σιλωάδ in Aquila, Symmachus, and Theodotion. Note the article, which agrees with Jewish usage. In Jn. ix. 7 and in LXX the article occurs: comp. τὸν Σαρώνα (Acts ix. 35). Few sites have been identified with more certainty than Siloam: Conder, Handbk. of B. p. 335; Stanley, Sin. & Pal. pp. 180, 428; Tristram, Bible Places, p. 162.

δοκεῖται. vii. 41, xi. 4; Mt. vi. 12, xviii. 24–34. The change of word from ἀμαρτωλοὶ (ver. 2) ought to be marked in translation, as by Vic. Rhem. and RV.; and also the change from δρᾶμας (ver. 3) to ὁσαίνως (ver. 5), as by RV., although there is little change of meaning. If Ewald's guess is correct, that these eighteen were working at the aqueducts made by Pilate, to pay for which he had used τὸν ἱερὸν θησαυρὸν (καλεῖται δὲ κορβανάς), then ὅσειται may be used in allusion to this, implying that it was held that these workmen ought to pay back their wages into the treasury (Jos. B. J. ii. 9. 4). Jesus reminds the people that they are all sinners, and that all sinners are debtors to Divine justice (xii. 58).

5. μετανοήσατε. The change of tense, if this be the right reading (N A D L M T U X), points to the need of immediate repentance, as distinct from a state or continued attitude of repentance, μετανοήσατε (ver. 3). Vulg. expresses the difference by nisi penitentiam habueritis (ver. 3) and si penitentiam non egeritis (ver. 5). See on iii. 3 and v. 32.

πάντες ὁσαίνως ἀπολείποντε. The ὁσαίνως is stronger than ὁμολογ., as "in the same manner" than "in like manner." In both verses the MSS. are divided, but with a balance in ver. 3 for ὁμολογ. and for ὁσαίνως here. See Jos. B. J. vi. 5. 4, 7. 2, 8. 3, etc., for the similarity between the fate of these eighteen and that of the Jews at the fall of Jerusalem.

6–9. § The Parable of the Barren Fig tree. It sets forth the longsuffering and the severity of God. His visitation of sin, however long delayed in order to give opportunity of repentance, is sure. The fig tree, as in Mk. xi. 13, is the Jewish nation, but also any individual soul. Comp. Hos. ix. 10; Joel i. 7. It is arbitrary.
to assert that the withering of the barren fig tree in Mt. xxi. and MK. xi. is a transformation of this parable into a fact, or that the supposed fact has here been wisely turned into a parable.

6. "Εἰλεγεν δὲ ταύτην τὴν παραβολήν. See on v. 36. The parable is a continuation of the warning, "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

Συκῆν . . . ἐν τῷ ἀμπελώνι αὐτοῦ. The main subject of the parable is placed first. Deut. xxii. 9 forbids the sowing of corn in vineyards, but to plant other fruit trees there was not a violation of this. At the present day fruit trees of various kinds are common in vineyards and in cornfields in Palestine (Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 421). "The fig tree ripeneth her green figs, and the vines are in blossom" (Can. ii. 13), perhaps implies this combination.

7. τρία ἐτη ἀπ' ὧν ἔρχομαι. Lit. "It is three years from the time when I continue coming": comp. Thuc. i. 18. 1. A fig tree is said to attain maturity in three years, and a tree that remained fruitless for so long would not be likely to bear afterwards. See quotations in Wetst. The three years of Christ's ministry cannot well be meant. The tree had been fruitless long before He began to preach, and it was not cut down until forty years after He ceased to do so. Cyril suggests Moses and Aaron, Joshua and the Judges, and the Prophets (Migne, vol. lxxii. 753). Ambrose proposes the annunciations to Abraham, Moses, and Mary (Migne, vol. xv. 1743). Other triplets equally good might be easily devised; but none are required. See Schanz, ad loc. p. 369.

Τι καὶ τῇ γῇ καταργεῖ; "Why, in addition to doing no good, does it sterilize the ground?" Ut quid etiam terram occupat (Vulg.). Excepting here and Heb. ii. 14, the verb is used in N.T. only by S. Paul. He has it often, and in all four groups of his Epistles. In LXX only in Ezra (iv. 21, 23, v. 5, vi. 8). Latin Versions vary between occupat, evacuat, detinet, and intricat; English Versions between "occupy," "keep barren," "cumber," and "hinder." All the latter, excepting Rhem. and RV., miss the καταργεῖ: it not only gives no fruit, it also renders good soil useless (ἀργῶν). ¹

8. κόπτω. Here only in N.T. In Jer. xxi. 33 (xxxii. 19) and Ecclus. xxii. 2 this plur. occurs as here without the art. The curious reading κόπτων κοπρίων is found in D, and is supported by coffinum stercore or cophinum stercore of various Latin texts, d having qualiam stercore.

9. ἐστὶ τῷ μελλὼν. In the true text (B L 33, Boh. Aeth.) this expression precedes et de mēγε, and we have an apopiiesis as in Acts xxii. 9; Rom. ix. 22-24. Comp. Exod. xxxii. 32, where LXX supplies the apodosis. The ellipse of καθως ἔχει occurs in class. Gk. It is perhaps possible to make εστὶ τῷ

¹ Both ἀργῶν (contr. from ἀργῶς) and ἀργία are used of land that yields no return: Xen. Cyr. iii. 2. 19; Theophr. H. Phys. v. 9. 8. Comp. Rom. vi. 6, "that the body as an instrument of sin may be rendered unproductive, inactive" (καταργηθῇ); also 1 Cor. xv. 26; 2 Cor. iii. 14; 2 Tim. i. 10.
XIII. 9-11. JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

μὴλλαν τον apodosis: "if it bear fruit, we may postpone the question; but if not," etc. That εἰς τὸ μῆλλαν may mean "against next year" is clear from Plutarch's use of it for magistrates designate: ἕτερον Πελαπωνα καταστησέν ἐπιστον εἰς τὸ μῆλλαν (Cas. xiv.); and perhaps it may mean "next year (Syr-Sin.)," the prep. being redundant, as in εἰς τὴν τρίτην: comp. Jos. Ant. i. 11. 2. But that ἕτος need not be understood, and that the prep. need not be redundant, is clear from 1 Tim. vi. 19, where εἰς τὸ μῆλλαν means "against the time to come." Only if the prep. be made redundant is the transfer of εἰς τὸ μῆλλαν to εἰς κόρφες (A.D) possible; for "against next year thou shalt cut it down" would here make no sense; but the external evidence is conclusive against the transfer. Comp. Acts xiii. 42; Hom. Od. xiv. 384.

For the change from ἐὰν to εἰ to εἰς (καὶ . . . εἰς μήτε) comp. Acts v. 38, 39. It occurs in class. Grk.; and in most cases of this kind either conjunction might just as well have been used twice. Here it is possible that the first alternative is given as more problematical than the second.

ἐκκόψεις αὐτήν. "Thou shalt (have) it cut down," shalt give the order for it. The vine-dresser will not even then cut it down without express command. He does not say ἐκκόψω. Comp. the Baptist's warning, in which this same verb (ἐκκόπτεσαι) is used (iii. 9). Trench gives a striking parallel in an Arabian recipe for curing a barren palm tree (Par. p. 359, 10th ed.).

10-17. § Healing of a Woman on the Sabbath from a Spirit of Infirmity. The details are manifest tokens of historical truth. The pharisaic pomposity of the ruler of the Synagogue, with his hard and fast rules about propriety; Christ's triumphant refutation of his objections; and the delight of the people, who sympathize with the dictates of human nature against senseless restrictions;—all this is plainly drawn from life. See Keim, Jes. of Naz. iv. pp. 15, 162. Here, as in vi. 1-11, Christ claims no authority to abolish the sabbath. He restores it to its true meaning by rescuing it from traditions which violated it. See Hort, Judaistic Christianity, p. 32.

10. This is the last mention of His teaching in a synagogue, and the only instance of His doing so in the latter part of His ministry. In many places where He was known the elders would not have allowed Him to preach, seeing that the hierarchy had become so hostile to Him. It is evident that τοῖς σαῦββαυν is sing. in meaning, as always in the Gospels. See on iv. 31, where, as here, we have the periphrastic imperfect.

11. πνεῦμα ἔχουσα ἀθενείας. "Who had a spirit that caused infirmity." See Sanday on Rom. viii. 15. Similarly a demon that caused dumbness is called a "dumb spirit" (xi. 14; Mk. ix. 17, 25). Weiss would have it that this expression is the Evangelist's own inference, and a wrong inference, from ἣν ἔδοξαν ὁ Σατανᾶς (ver. 16), which probably means that Jesus knew her malady to be the consequence of her sinful life. Therefore Satan, who caused the sin, caused the malady. Weiss asserts that the laying on of hands never occurs in the case of demoniacs. And
he appeals to \textit{θεραπεύουσος} (ver. 14), observing that exorcisms are not healings (\textit{L, J.} ii. p. 53, Eng. tr. ii. p. 239). But we know too little to affirm that Jesus never laid His hands on demoniacs; and both \textit{θεραπεύω} (viii. 2; Mt. xvii. 16) and \textit{λάθη} (ix. 42) are used of healing them. Jesus generally cured ordinary diseases with a touch or laying on of hands (iv. 40, v. 13, viii. 44, 54, xiv. 4, xxii. 51); but He sometimes healed such with a word (iv. 39, v. 24, vi. 10, vii. 10). Although He commonly healed demoniacs with a word (iv. 35, 41, viii. 29, ix. 42), He may sometimes have touched them. And it should be noted that \textit{ἀπολέλυσα}, which implies that she has already been freed from the \textit{πνεύμα ἀσθενείας} (comp. v. 20), precedes the laying on of hands. Therefore this act, like the laying hold of the demoniac boy (Mk. ix. 27), may have been added in order to complete the physical cure. There is nothing to show that the woman had come expecting to be healed by Jesus. For \textit{συνκύπτωσος} see Ecclus. xii. 11, xix. 26.

\textit{ἔτη δέκα ὅκτω}. To suggest that this is a reminiscence of the eighteen on whom the tower fell, and that the twelve in viii. 43 is a reminiscence of the twelve in viii. 42, is hardly sober criticism. Do numbers never come a second time in real life? And he must be a poor inventor who is incapable of varying numbers. Syr-Sin. has “had a spirit eighteen years.”

\textit{μὴ δυναμένη}. As usual in N.T., we have \textit{μὴ} with the participle, although it refers to a matter of fact. Comp. i. 20; Acts ix. 9; and see Simcox, \textit{Lang. of N. T.} p. 188.

\textit{ἀνακύψαι εἰς τὸ παντελῆς}. “Wholly to lift up herself, to straighten herself properly.” Nearly all English Versions follow the Vulgate in taking \textit{εἰς τὸ παντελῆς} with \textit{μὴ δυναμένη}; \textit{nece omnino poterat}, “could not in any wise, could not at all.” But it may go with \textit{ἀνακύψαι}, after which it is placed: “could not well loke up” (Cov.); \textit{konnte nicht wohl aufsehen} (Luth.). Comp. σοφεῖν \textit{εἰς τὸ παντελῆς δύναται} (Heb. vii. 25), the only other passage in N.T. in which it occurs. Not in LXX. Josephus always has it next to the word to which it belongs (\textit{Ant.} i. 18. 5, iii. 11. 3, 12. 1, vi. 2. 3, vii. 13. 3).


13. \textit{παραχρῆμα ἀνωρθόθη}. See on v. 25. The verb occurs in N.T. only here, Acts xv. 16, and Heb. xii. 12; but is freq. in LXX. Hobart shows that it is used by medical writers of straightening abnormal or dislocated parts of the body (p. 22).

14. \textit{ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ ὁ ἀρχισυνάγωγος}. Comp. viii. 41. No one had spoken to him, but he replies to what had been done. He indirectly censures the act of Jesus by addressing the people as represented by the woman.

15. \textit{Ὑποκριταί}. All who sympathize with this faultfinder are addressed, especially \textit{οἱ ἀντικείμενοι αὐτῷ} (ver. 17). There was
hypocrisy in pretending to rebuke the people, when he was really censuring Jesus; and in professing to have a zeal for the Law, when his motive was animus against the Healer. There was no evidence that people had come in order to be healed. And, if they had done so, would they have broken the Law? Cyril has a very animated attack on this man, whom he addresses as βαρκανίας ἀνδρόπωδον, rebuking him for not seeing that Jesus had not broken even the letter of the Law in keeping its spirit (Migne, vol. lxxii. 770; Payne Smith, p. 454). See also Iren. iv. 8. 2. For δ Κύριος see on v. 17 and vii. 13.

The sing. υποκριτά (D U X and some Versions) is an obvious correction. All English Versions prior to RV., even Wic. and Rhem., have the sing., in spite of hypocrites in Vulg.

λαεί τον βούν αὐτοῦ. Christ appeals from his perverted interpretation of the law to a traditional and reasonable interpretation. But here the Talmud makes the characteristic reservation that, although water may be drawn for the animal, it must not be carried to the animal in a vessel (Edersh. L. & T. ii. App. xvii.). For other arguments used by Christ respecting the Sabbath, see vi. 3, 5, 9; Mk. ii. 27, 28; Jn. v. 17. We may place them in an ascending scale. Jewish tradition; charity and common sense; the Sabbath is a blessing, not a burden; the Son of Man is Lord of it; Sabbaths have never hindered the Father’s work, and must not hinder the Son’s. Such appeals would be varied to suit the occasion and the audience.

16. An argument à fortiori. If an animal, how much more a daughter of Abraham; if one whom yourselves have bound for a few hours, how much more one whom Satan has bound for eighteen years. Comp. Job ii. ; Acts x. 38; 1 Cor. v. 5; 2 Cor. xii. 7; 1 Tim. i. 20: and with ίδον δέκα καὶ ὁκτὼ ἐτη comp. ίδον τεσσεράκοντα ἐτη (Deut. viii. 4); also Acts ii. 7, xiii. 11.

ἓνει λυθήναι. Not only she may be loosed, but she ought to be. The obligation was for the healing on the Sabbath. It was a marked fulfilment of the programme of the ministry as announced in the synagogue at Nazareth (iv. 18). There is no prescription against doing good; and a religion which would honour God by forbidding virtue is self-condemned.

17. λέγοντος αὐτοῦ. “As He said” (RV.), not “When He had said” (AV.).

κατηγοροῦντο. “Were put to shame”: comp. 2 Cor. vii. 14, ix. 4; 1 Pet. iii. 16; in all which passages RV. is more accurate than AV. See also LXX of Is. xlv. 16.

ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τοὺς ενδόξοις τοὺς γινομένους ὑπ’ αὐτοῦ. “Over all the glorious things that were being done by Him.” For τοῖς ενδόξοις comp. Exod. xxxiv. 10; Deut. x. 21; Job v. 9, ix. 10, xxxiv. 24;
and for the pres. part. Mk. vi. 2. It refers to much more than the healing of this woman: *quae gloriosae fiebant ab eo* (Vulg.).

Some would put a full stop at αὐτῷ, and make Καὶ πᾶς ὅ δεχότας τοῦρος the introduction to what follows. But this robs the statement of all point. As a revolt of the popular conscience against the censoriousness of the hierarchy it is full of meaning.

18–21. The Parables of the Mustard Seed and of the Leaven. The former is given by all three (Mt. xiii. 31, 32; Mk. iv. 30–32), the latter by two (Mt. xiii. 33). Thus Mt. as well as Lk. places them together. Both parables set forth the small beginning, gradual spread, and immense development of the Kingdom of God, the one from without, the other from within. Externally the Kingdom will at last embrace all nations; internally, it will transform the whole of human life. Often before this Jesus has mentioned the Kingdom of God (vi. 20, vii. 28, viii. 10, ix. 2, 27, 60, 62, x. 9, 11, xi. 20): here He explains some of its characteristics. Mk. places the Mustard Seed immediately after the parables of the Sower and of the Seed growing secretly; Mt. after those of the Sower and of the Tares. But neither gives any note of connexion. Whereas the ὁμόν of Lk. clearly connects this teaching with the preceding incident.¹

18, 19. The Parable of the Mustard Seed.

18. "Ἐλεγεν οὖν. It is a needlessly violent hypothesis to regard this as a fragment torn from its context, so that the οὖν refers to something not recorded. On the other hand, it is a little forced to connect the οὖν with the enthusiasm of the multitude for His teaching and miracles. This success is but an earnest of far greater triumphs. It is safer to refer it back to ver. 11. After the interruption caused by the hypocritical remonstrance He continued His teaching. With the double question which introduces the parable comp. τίνι ὑμιοίσατε κύριον, καὶ τίνι ὑμιοίσατε ὑμιοίσατε αὐτῶν; (Is. xl. 18). The parable itself is more condensed in Lk. than in Mk. and Mt.

19. κόκκως σινάτευσός. It is the smallness of the seed in comparison with the largeness of the growth that is the point. Whether other properties of mustard need be taken into account, is doubtful.

It is not quite certain what plant is meant. Stanley is inclined to follow Royle and others in identifying it with the *Salvadora Persica*, called in the East *Khardel*, the very word used in the Syriac Version to translate σινατή. It is said to grow round the lake of Gennesareth, and to attain the height of twenty-five feet in favourable circumstances. Its seeds are small and pungent.

¹With this pair of Parables comp. the Garments and the Wine-skins (v. 36–39), the Rash Builder and the Rash King (xiv. 28–32), the Lost Sheep and the Lost Coin ( xv. 3–10). Other pairs are not in immediate juxtaposition; e.g. the Friend at Midnight (xi. 5–8) and the Unjust Judge (xviii. 1–8).
and are used as mustard (Sin. & Pal. p. 427). Edersheim follows Tristram and others in contending for the Sinapis nigra. “Small as a mustard-seed” was a Jewish proverb to indicate the least drop of blood, the least defilement, etc. Even in Europe the Sinapis sometimes reaches twelve feet (L. & T. i. p. 593; Nat. Hist. of B. p. 472).

Edersheim follows Tristram and others in contending for the Sinapis nigra. “Small as a mustard-seed” was a Jewish proverb to indicate the least drop of blood, the least defilement, etc. Even in Europe the Sinapis sometimes reaches twelve feet (L. & T. i. p. 593; Nat. Hist. of B. p. 472).

δένθρωπος. Comp. xx. 9. Lk. commonly writes δένθρωπος τις: x. 30, xii. 16, xiv. 16, xv. 11, xvi. 1, 19, xix. 12; comp. xviii. 2.

eis κῆπον έαυτοῦ. See Introd. § 6. i. f. Not merely “the earth” (Mk.) or “his field” (Mt.), but “his own garden,” viz. Israel.

γινώσκει εἰς δόλῳ. All three use γινώσκει, Lk. alone adding εἰς; but μέγα before δόλῳ is not genuine either here or in Mt. For γινώσκει εἰς comp. xx. 17; Acts iv. 11, and v. 36, etc. The expression is freq. in LXX, and is also classical.

tὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ κατεσκήνωσεν, κ.τ.λ. All three have this expression. See on ix. 58, and comp. ὑποκάτω αὐτοῦ κατεσκήνωσεν τὰ θρησκεία τὰ άγρια, καὶ εἰ τοῖς κλάδοις αὐτοῦ κατέφυγον τὰ δρένα τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (Dan. iv. 9, 18) and ἐν ταῖς παραφύσεσιν αὐτοῦ ἐνόσσεσαν πάντα τὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (Ezek. xxxi. 6: comp. xvii. 23), passages which show that this was a recognized metaphor for a great empire giving protection to the nations.¹


ἐκφυγεῖν εἰς ἀλέυρον σάτα τριά. The beginnings of the Kingdom were unseen, and Pagan ignorance of the nature of the Gospel was immense. But the leaven always conquers the dough. However deep it may be buried it will work through the whole mass and change its nature into its own nature. Josephus says that a σάτον was one and a half of a Roman modius (Ant. ix. 4. 5). It was a seah, or one third of an ephah; which was an ordinary baking (Gen. xviii. 6). There is no more reason for finding a meaning for the three measures than for the three years (ver. 7). But Lange is inclined to follow Olshausen in interpreting the three measures as the three powers in human nature, body, soul, and spirit; and he further suggests the material earth, the State, and the Church.

In class. Gk. we generally have the plur. ἀλεύρῳ (ἀλεύρω). It means “wheaten meal” (Hdt. vii. 119. 2; Plat. Κρι. ii. 372 B).

εἰς οὗ. Comp. Acts xxii. 26. In Lk. xxiv. 49 it is followed by the subj., as often.

22–30. The Danger of being excluded from the Kingdom of God. The warning grows out of the question as to the number of

¹ Wetst. quotes from the Talmud, “There was a stalk of mustard in Sichin from which sprang out three branches, of which one was broken off, and out of it they made a covering for a potter’s hut, and there were formed on it three cabs of mustard. Rabbi Simeon, son of Calaphia, said, A stalk of mustard was in my field into which I was went to climb, as men are went to climb into a fig tree.”
the saved, but no note is given of time or place. The introductory διεπορεύετο seems to point back to ix. 51, “He was continuing His journey” (see on vi. 1). In any case it is part of the last journeyings which ended in the Passion. For the substance of the discourse comp. Mt. vii. 13, 14, 22, 23, xix. 30; Mk. x. 31.

22. κατὰ πόλεις καὶ κώμας. Once more we have an amphibolous phrase: see on ver. 11, x. 18, xi. 39, xii. 1, etc. Either, “He went on His way, teaching through cities and villages”; or, “He went on His way through cities and villages, teaching.”

23. Εἶπεν δὲ τις αὐτῷ. We have no means of knowing whether he was a disciple or not, or what his motive was. The question has always been an attractive one to certain minds (2 Esdras viii.).

eἰ δέν γοι οἱ σωζόμενοι. The questioner perhaps supposes that, at any rate, none but Jews will be saved. Comp. Acts ii. 47; 1 Cor. i. 18; 2 Cor. ii. 15. In all these passages the pres. part. should be marked; “those who are being saved, who are in the way of salvation.”

For εἰ introducing a direct interrogative comp. xxii. 49; Acts i. 6, xix. 2; Mt. xii. 10, etc. The constr. is not classical, and may be explained as arising from the omission of θαυμάζω, γνωσκέων θέλω, or the like. In German we might have, Ob Wenige selig werden?

eἶπεν πρὸς αὐτούς. Note the plur. As in xii. 15, 42, Jesus gives no answer to the question asked, but replies in a way that may benefit others as well as the interrogator far more than a direct answer would have done.

24. Ἁγωνίζεσθε εἰσέλθειν. “Keep on striving to enter,” or, “Strain every nerve.” Questio theoretica initio vertitur ad praxin (Beng.). Comp. 1 Tim. vi. 12; 2 Tim. iv. 7; Ecclus. iv. 28; Dan. vi. 14 (Theod.). In Mt. vii. 13 we have εἰσέλθατε διὰ τῆς στενῆς πύλης. But the context is quite different; and there it is an outside gate, while here the door leads directly into the house, and is so narrow that only those who are thoroughly in earnest (βασταί) can pass through it. Vulg. has per angustam portam in both places; but some Lat. texts have januam or ostium here.

Σημείους εἰσέλθειν καὶ οὐκ ἰσχύσουσι. The futures are most important, whether we place a comma or a full stop after the second. Jesus does not say that there are many who strive in vain to enter, but that there will be many who will seek in vain to enter, after the time of salvation is past. Those who continue to strive now, succeed. The change from “strive” to “seek” must also be noted. Mere ξημεία is very different from ἁγωνίζεσθαι (1 Tim. vi. 12). Comp. Jn. vii. 34.

οὐκ ἰσχύσουσιν. “Will not have strength to” (vi. 48, xvi. 3): appropriate to the attempt to force a closed door.
25. ἰδοὺ ὦ ἐγερθη. Connect this closely with what precedes: "Shall not be able, when once the master of the house shall have risen up," etc. With this arrangement a full stop is placed at πόθεν ἐστέ, and τότε begins a new sentence.

Those who place a full stop at ἐρχόμενος differ much as to the apodosi of ἰδο. Some make it begin at καὶ ἀρέσθε, more at καὶ ἀποκρίθης, and others at τότε. Of these three the first is the worst, making ἀρέσθε = ἀρέσθε, and the last is the best (AV. RV.).

26, 27. Comp. Mt. vii. 22, 23. When the attempt to force the door has failed, ye will begin to use this plea; but it will be cut short by the reply, Οὐκ ἀδικά ὑμᾶς. The plea is almost grotesque in its insufficiency. To have known Christ after the flesh gives no claim to admission into the kingdom.

ἀπόστητε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ πάντες ἐργάται ἀδικίας. A quotation from Ps. vi. 9, where we have πάντες οἱ ἐργαζόμενοι τὴν ἀνωμαλίαν. Aristotle says that as δικαστήριον sums up the whole of virtue, so ἀδίκια sums up the whole of vice (Eth. Nic. v. 1. 19). Contrast the quotation of the same text in Mt. vii. 23. Vulg. preserves one difference by having qui operamini there and operarium here; but ignores another in using iniquitas for ἀνωμαλία there and also for ἀδίκια here. Similarly AV. and RV. have "iniquity" in both. With ἐργάται ἀδίκιας comp. οἱ ἐργάται τῆς ἀνωμαλίας (1 Mac. iii. 6); τῶν καλῶν καὶ σεμῶν ἐργάτην (Xen. Mem. ii. 1. 27); τῶν πολεμικῶν (Cyr. iv. i. 4).

28. Ἐκεῖ ἐσται ὁ κλάωμος. There is no need to interpret ἔκεῖ of time, a use which is rare in class. Grk. and perhaps does not occur in N.T. Here the meaning is, "There in your exclusion, in your place of banishment." Note the articles with κλάωμος and βροχήμος, "the weeping and the gnashing," which are indeed such. Elsewhere in N.T. βροχήμος occurs only in Mt. (viii. 12, xiii. 42, 50, xxii. 13, xxiv. 51, xxv. 30). In LXX Prov. xix. 12; Ecclus. li. 3; also Aq. Ps. xxxvii. 9. These two verses (28, 29) occur in Mt. (viii. 11, 12) in a different connexion and with some difference of wording.

Ἄβραμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακὼβ καὶ πάντας τ. προφήτας. For all this Marcion seems to have substituted πάντας τοὺς δικαλούς, in order to avoid a direct reference to O.T. (Tert. Adv. Marcion, iv. 30). The evidence is wholly against the conjecture that Marcion's reading was the original one, which was altered in order to oppose him and agree with Mt. viii. 11. In Mt. πάντας τοὺς προφήτας is wanting. Some Lat. texts add dei to prophetas, and many add introire, or intrare, or introcuentes before in regno or in regnum.

ὑμᾶς δὲ ἐκβαλλόμενους ἔξω. "But yourselves being cast forth without," in the attempt to enter. They never do enter; but, as they would have entered, but for their misconduct, their exclusion is spoken of as "casting out." Syr-Sin. omits the words.

29. ἥξουσιν ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν, κ.τ.λ. A combination of Is. xlv. 6 and xlix. 12: comp. lix. 19; Jer. iii. 18; Mal. i. 11. In Mt. viii. 11, 12 the exclusion of the Jews and admission of the Gentiles is
still more clearly expressed. This was the exact opposite of Jewish expectations. *In mundo futuro mensam ingerent vobis sternam, quod gentes videbunt et pudeint* (Schoettgen, *Hor. Heb.* p. 86); *e.g.* the Gentiles were to be put to shame at the sight of the Jews in bliss. Here it is the Jews who gnash their teeth, while the Gentiles are in bliss. There is no *πολλοὶ* with *ζέοντι*, so that the man’s curiosity remains unanswered; but the context implies many rather than few. In Mt. *πολλοὶ* is expressed; and this also seems to have been against Jewish expectations. *Vidi filios cænaculi qui numero admodum pauci sunt* (Schoettgen, p. 80). The Jews commonly spoke of the Messianic Kingdom as a banquet (xiv. 15; Rev. xix. 9). For the four quarters of the globe comp. Ps. cvii. 3; l Chron. ix. 24. Of the order in which they are given here Bengel remarks, *Hoc fere ordine ad fidelem conversi sunt populi*. Mt. has only East and West. Comp. 2 Esdr. viii. 1.

Even if *δύσεθε* (*B* D X) were the right reading for *δύσεθε* (*A B² R T, Ληθης Ν*) in ver. 28, there would be no need to make *ζέοντι* depend upon *ετῶν*. There should in any case be a full stop at *ἐξο*.

30. *εἰσὶν ἐσχατοὶ . . . εἰσὶν πρῶτοι*. There are some of each class who will be transferred to the other. Mt. xx. 16 we have *ἐστονται οἱ ἐσχατοὶ πρῶτοι καὶ οἱ πρῶτοι ἐσχατοὶ*. From that passage coupled with Mt. xix. 30 = Mk. x. 31 we infer that this was a saying which Jesus uttered more than once. But here only is it introduced with *καὶ ἔδοιχ*, of which Lk. is so fond (i. 20, 31, 36, v. 12, vii. 12, 37, etc.), and for which Mt. and Mk. have *πολλοὶ δὲ*. The practical answer to the question in ver. 23 remains, “Whatever be the number of those who are in the way of salvation, that which concerns you is, that you should without delay secure a place among them.”

31–35. § The Message to Herod Antipas and the Lament over Jerusalem. From *ἐν αὐτῷ τῇ ἀρᾳ* it is clear that the scene does not shift. It probably lies in Pææa, but we cannot be certain. Both Pææa and Galilee were under the jurisdiction of Antipas. The Pharisees wanted to frighten Jesus into Judæa, where He would be more in the power of the Sanhedrin; but that they did not invent this alarm about Antipas is clear from Christ’s reply. He would have denounced the Pharisees for cunning and deceit, if they had brought Him a lying report; and it is very unnatural to make *τῇ ἀλώτεκε ταύτῃ* refer to the inventor of the report, or to the Pharisees as a body, or indeed to anyone but Herod. For the same reason we need not suppose that the Pharisees were in a plot with Herod. They reported his words without consulting him. Although the tetrarch wished to see Christ work a miracle, yet he probably regarded Him as a dangerous leader like the Baptist; and that he should openly threaten to put Him to death,
in order to induce Him to leave his province, is probable enough. The wish to disturb Jesus in His work, and to create a panic among His followers, would make the Pharisees report this threat, even if they had no hope of driving Him into the power of the hierarchy. The incident is remarkably parallel to the attempt of Amaziah, priest of the golden calf at Bethel, who first denounced the Prophet Amos to Jeroboam II., and then tried to frighten Amos out of Israel into Judah, equally in vain (Amos vii. 10-17). See Trench, Studies in the Gospels, p. 238.

31. \thle\ve \se \d\p\o\k\t\e\i\n\a\i. "Would fain kill Thee" (RV.). The "will" of all other English Versions is too like the simple future: comp. ix. 23. They do not say, "has determined to kill." Possibly Jesus was in the very district in which John had been captured by Antipas; and this may have suggested the threat or the report of it, or both.

32. \e\i\p\a\p\e \t\h \d\l\o\p\t\e\k\i \t\a\u\t\t. As \d\l\o\p\t\h\e is usually fem. (ix. 58; Mt. viii. 20; Judg. i. 35; 1 Kings xxi. 10; and also in class. Grk.), we cannot infer that the fem. is here used in a contemptuous sense; but the masc. occurs Cant. ii. 15. Here, as usual, the fox is used as a symbol of craftiness, not of rapacity, as some maintain. Herod's craftiness lay in his trying to get rid of an influential leader and a disquieting preacher of righteousness by a threat which he had not the courage to execute. He did not wish to bring upon himself a second time the odium of having slain a Prophet.1 In the Talmud the fox is called "the sliest of beasts." See examples in Keim, Jes. of Naz. iv. p. 344, and Wetst. Foxes of more than one species are very common in Palestine. D.B.2 art. "Fox."

\e\k\b\a\l\l\w \d\a\m\o\n\a \k\a \i\d\e\s\e\i \d\p\o\t\e\l\w. As in the reply to the Baptist (vii. 22), Jesus gives the casting out of demons and the healing of the sick as signs of the Messiah's works. In N.T. \i\a\s\o\t\s is peculiar to Lk. (Acts iv. 22, 30); in LXX Prov. iii. 8, iv. 22. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 593.

The reading \e\i\p\e\l\w (A R) is a correction to a more familiar verb, for \d\p\o\t\e\l\w occurs elsewhere in bibl. Grk. only Jas. i. 15; 1 Esdr. v. 73 (same \v.t. as here); 2 Mac. xv. 39. It means, "I bring quite to an end."

\s\m\e\r\o\n \k\a \a\f\r\i\o \k\a \t\h \t\r\i\t. The three days have been interpreted to mean (1) three actual days, (2) the three years of the ministry, (3) a long time, (4) a short time, (5) a definite time.

1 Cyril argues that, because we have \t\a\u\t\t and not \e\k\e\l\h with \t\h \d\l\o\p\t\e\k\i, the fox must be some one nearer the spot than Herod, viz. the Pharisees (Migne, vol. lxxii. p. 582). Theophylact uses the same argument. But it is the common use of \o\t\r\o\s for that which is condemned or despised, \v\u\l\i\p\ i\s\i; or still more simply, "that fox of yours," i.e. whom you put forward and make use of. Comp. \o\t\r\o\s, v. 21, vii. 39, 49; Jn. vi. 42, vii. 15, 36, 49, ix. 16, xii. 34.
The last is probably right. The course of the Messiah is determined, and will not be abbreviated or changed because of the threats of a Herod. For the same expression of three actual days comp. Ex. xix. 10, 11. See also Hos. vi. 2.

teleioμαι. “I am perfected,” consummāt (Vulg.). Comp. Heb. ii. 10. In both cases the idea is that of “bringing Christ to the full moral perfection of His humanity, which carries with it the completeness of power and dignity” (Wssct.). This is the only passage in N.T. outside the Epistle to the Hebrews in which this verb is used of Christ. In that Epistle it is thus used thrice (ii. 10, v. 9, vii. 28), and the idea which it represents is one of the main characteristics of the Epistle. It is doubtful whether there is here any reference to the special phrase τελεων τας χειρας, which is used in LXX of the installation of priests in their office (Exod. xxix. 9, 29, 33, 35; Lev. viii. 33, xvi. 32; Num. iii. 3: comp. Lev. xxi. 10; Exod. xxviii. 37 (41); Jud. xvii. 5); although such a reference would be very appropriate on the approach of Christ’s sacrifice of Himself. See Wssct. on The idea of teleioσις and on The teleioσις of Christ (Hebrews, pp. 63–67).

teleioμαι is probably pass. and not mid.; pres. and not Attic fut. Elicott, Hulsean Lectures, 1859, p. 264, 4th ed.; Keim, iv. p. 344.

33. πλην δει με σημερον κ. αυτον κ. τη χειμη μη πορευεσθαι. “Howbeit” (see on vi. 24, 35) “it is ordained by Divine decree (see on iv. 43, ix. 22) that I go on My way hence, as Herod desires; not, however, because you suggest it, but because My work at this time requires it.” The same verb is used in both places: πορευον εντεθην and δει με πορευεσθαι. But, as εξελθειν is not repeated, the repetition of πορευεσθαι (comp. πορευθέντες εἴπατε) may be accidental. The expression τη χειμη for “the next day” occurs elsewhere in bibl. Grk. only Acts xx. 15; 1 Chron. x. 8; 2 Mac. xii. 39: comp. Acts xiii. 44?, xxi. 26; 1 Mac. iv. 28?.

To understand χειμη instead of υμέρα and translate “I must go on My way to-day and to-morrow in the adjoining region also,” is against the context: τη χειμη plainly = τη τρίτη.

οὐκ ἐνδεχεται προφήτην ἀπολέσθαι ἐξω 'ιερουσαλήμ. “It cannot be allowed,” non convenit, non sieri potest: 2 Mac. xi. 18; Plat. Rep. vi. 501 C. The saying is severely ironical, and that in two ways. (1) According to overwhelming precedent, Jerusalem is

1 “The number three seems here, as in the three years (ver. 7), to denote a period of time as complete in itself, with a beginning, middle, and end” (Andrews, L. of our Lord, p. 396). Universi temporis requisiti ad opus suum perfectio significatur (Cajetan).

2 Maldonatus, whom Trench approves, makes the πληρη signify, “Although I must die on the third day, yet threats will not interfere with My continuing My work until then.” Rather, “Although I must go to Jerusalem, yet it is not threats which send Me thither.”
the place in which a Prophet ought to be put to death. *Quae urbs ius illud occidendi Prophetas quasi usu ceparet* (Grotius). Jewish usage has determined that Jerusalem is the right place for such crimes. (2) When the conditions of place and time have been fulfilled, it is not Herod that will be the murderer. “You profess to be anxious for My safety, if I remain in Herod’s dominions. Do not be alarmed. I am in no danger here, nor from him. But I must go to your capital: and it is there, and at your hands, that I shall die.” Jesus is not referring to the Sanhedrin as having the exclusive right to try a Prophet; nor does He mean that no Prophet had ever been slain outside Jerusalem. The Baptist had been murdered at Machærus. But such cases were exceptional. By long prescription it had been established that Jerusalem was the proper scene for these tragedies.

**προφήτην.** Any Prophet. To make it equivalent to *τὸν προφήτην*, and interpret it of Christ in particular, does violence to the Greek.

34, 35. The Lament over Jerusalem. This lament is called forth by the thought of the previous verse. What sorrow that the Messiah should have to speak thus of the metropolis of His own people! The connexion is natural; all the more so if the Pharisees (ver. 31) came from Jerusalem. But the connexion in Mt. xxiii. 37 is not less natural; and there Christ is at Jerusalem. To decide between the two arrangements is not easy: and to suppose that such words were spoken on two different occasions is rather a violent hypothesis; which, however, is adopted by Alford, Andrews, Ellicott, and Stier. The wording is almost identical in both places, especially in the remarkable turn from the third sing. (*αὐτήν*) to the second sing. (*σοὺ*), and thence to the second plur. (*θελήσατε*). On the whole it seems to be more probable that the lament was uttered when Jerusalem was before His eyes, than when it and its inhabitants were far away. For the repetition of the name see on x. 41.

34. η ἀποκτείνουσα τοὺς προφήτας. “The slayer of Prophets”; pres. part. This is her abiding character; she is a murderess, *lantæa prophetarum, προφητοκτόνος*. Comp. Acts vii. 52.

Λιβαδολούσα τοὺς ἀπεσταλμένους πρὸς αὐτήν. As the wicked husbandmen did (Mt. xxi. 35); comp. Heb. xii. 20. This is a repetition in a more definite form of the preceding clause. It is arbitrary to make *τοὺς ἀπεσταλμένους* refer to the Apostles and other messengers of the Gospel: they are the same class as *τοὺς προφήτας*. See Paschasius Radbertus on Mt. xxiii. 37, Migne, cxx. 789.

1 But perhaps even in the case of the Baptist the hierarchy at Jerusalem had a hand. He was “delivered up” by some party. Comp. *παραδοθῆναι* (Mk. i. 14), *παρεδόθη* (Mt. iv. 12).
These words, which are found in both Mt. and Lk., are evidence from the Synoptists themselves respecting much work of Christ in Jerusalem which they do not record. As S. John tells us, He ministered there at other times than just before His Passion. The context forbids us from taking *tά τέκνα σου* in any other sense than the inhabitants of Jerusalem. (Comp. xix. 44, and see Neander, L. J. C. § 110, Eng. tr. p. 165.) This is fully admitted by Strauss, if the words were really spoken by Christ. He suggests therefore that they come from an apocryphal source, and probably the same from which he supposes xi. 49-51 to have been taken. In this he has been followed by Loman and Pfleiderer (see Hahn, ii. p. 255). But, like x. 22, this verse—so strongly confirming the Johannine tradition—is far too well attested to be got rid of by any suppositions. The prepositions in *ἐπισωνάζαι* mean “together to one place—to Myself.” Comp. Ps. ci. 23?, cv. 47.

-ref- 

Even as a hen her own brood.” For ref. trpovan comp. Exod. ii. 14. Like “fowl” in English, *ἀρνις* is used specially of domesticated hens (Xen. Anab. iv. 5. 25; Aesch. Eum. 866). Mt. has *τὰ νοσσία αὐτῆς,* “her chickens.” This similitude is not found in O.T., but is frequent in Rabbinical literature. Schoettgen, pp. 207-210. Comp. tā keînu tēkî ἐ̄ξων ὑπὲ πτεροίς σῶζα τάξε (Eur. Heracl. 10). Jerome quotes Deut. xxxii. 11 in illustration: “As an eagle that stirreth up her nest, that fluttereth over her young, He spread abroad His wings, He took them, He bare them on His pinions.” With ὑπὸ *tās πτέρυγας* comp. Ruth ii. 12; Is. xxxi. 5; Mal. iv. 2; Ps. xvii. 8, xxxvi. 8, lvii. 2, lxi. 5, lxiii. 8.

καὶ οὖσα ἡθῆσατε. In tragic contrast with ποσάκις ἡθήσασα: comp. Jn. i. 5, 10, 11.

Neither here (DEGHMUX A, Latt. Boh. Syr.) nor in Mt. xxiii. 38, where it is better attested, is ἔρημος more than a gloss. Comp. ὅτι εἰς ἔρημωσιν ἔσται ὑος ὁθῶς (Jer. xxii. 5), and ἑγκαταλέλοιπα τῶν ὁμοίων μοι, ἀφῆκα τὴν κληρονομίαν μοι (Jer. xii. 7). “Is being left to you” means “You have it entirely to yourselves to possess and protect; for God no longer dwells in it and protects it.” Comp. ἀφεθήσεται (xvii. 34, 35). By “your house” is meant the home of *tά τέκνα σου,* the city of Jerusalem. Note the repetition ὑμῖν . . . ὑμῖν. Syr-Sin. here has, “Your house is forsaken”; in Mt. it is defective.

λέγω δὲ ὑμῖν όù μὴ ἔσητε με. With great solemnity and with strong assurance. Comp. Jn. vii. 34, viii. 21.

Their seeing Him is dependent upon their repent-

1 Hier sind alle Ausflüchte vergebens, und man muss bekennen: sind diese wirkliche Worte Jesu, so muss er öfter und länger, als es den synoptischen Berichten nach scheint, in Jerusalem thätig gewesen sein (L. J. 1864, p. 249).
XIII. 35.] JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

ance; and this is left uncertain; for the ἢ ἐμ ὅτε or ἄν ἢ ἔτι after ἐσ (A D, Vulg.) is not genuine.¹ There are three interpretations of the point of time indicated by this declaration. (1) The cries of the multitude on Palm Sunday (xix. 38; Mt. xxi. 9; Mk. xi. 9). But this is quite inadequate. Christ would not have declared with this impressive solemnity the fact that He would not enter Jerusalem for some weeks, or possibly months. (2) The Second Advent. But where are we told that the unbelieving Jews will welcome the returning Christ with hymns of praise? (3) The conversion of the Jews throughout all time. This last no doubt is right. The quotation ἐν ἴδιαι ᾠδῃ ἀγαθήν ἴδιοι, τῷ κ.τ.λ., is verbatim from LXX of Ps. cxviii. 26, and ἐν ἰδίαι Κυρίοι mean as the representative of Jehovah. Converted Israel will thus welcome the spiritual presence of the Messiah.


This forms a new division of the section which has been styled “the Journeyings towards Jerusalem”: see on ix. 51. The first portion of it (xiv. 1–24) may be thus subdivided. A Sabbath-meal in the House of a Pharisee, including the Healing of a Dropsical Man on the Sabbath (1–6), a Discourse about taking the lowest seats (7–11) and inviting Lowly Guests (12–14), and the Parable of the Great Supper (15–24). The whole is peculiar to Lk., and probably comes from some source unknown to Mt. and Mk.

1–24. § A Sabbath-meal in the House of a Pharisee. Time and place are quite undetermined. The chief men among the Pharisees no doubt lived mostly at Jerusalem. Beyond that we have no clue.

1–6. The Cure of a Dropsical Man at the Sabbath-meal. The cure of the man with the withered hand (vi. 6–11; Mt. xii. 9–14; Mk. iii. 1–6) should be compared but not identified. Although Lk. records both cures, with very important differences of detail, Strauss and Keim maintain that this is a mere doublet of the other, and reject both. The style of the opening words indicates an Aramaic source.

Of the seven miracles of mercy on the sabbath, Lk. records five: the Demoniac at Capernaum (iv. 31), the Withered Hand (vi. 6), the Woman bowed down eighteen years (xiii. 14), Simon’s wife’s mother (iv. 38), and this. The others are: the Paralytic at Bethesda (Jn. v. 10), the Man born blind (Jn. ix. 14).

¹ Not only do B K L M R X, Syr. Boh. Arm. and some Lat. texts here omit ἢ ἐμ ὅτε, but no authorities insert the words Mt. xxiii. 39, which adds to the weight of the evidence against them here.
1. Kai égéneto en tō ἐλθεῖν αὐτῶν. "And it came to pass after He had entered" (aor.), not "as He entered" (AV.) nor "when He entered" (RV.): cum intrasset or introisset (some MSS. of Vulg.) rather than cum intraret (Vulg.). See on iii. 21 and the note at the end of ch. i. p. 45.

τινὸς τῶν ἄρχοντων τῶν Φαρισαίων. "Of one of the chief men of the Pharisees." We have no knowledge of official rulers of the Pharisees; but of course they had their leading men. That the invitation of a leading Pharisee was accepted (ver. 12) after what is recorded xi. 37-54 might seem surprising, especially as Jesus knew the minds of those whom He was to meet (ver. 3). But there was still the possibility of influencing some of them for good. We know of no case in which Jesus refused an invitation.

σαββάτῳ φαγεῖν ἁρτὸν. Sabbath banqueting was common, and became proverbial for luxury. Observa diem sabbati, non Judaeis deliciis; and Hodie nus dies sabbati est, hunc in presenti tempore otio quodam corporaliter languido et fluxo et luxurioso celebrant Judæi (Aug.). See Wetst. ad loc. and Polano, The Talmud; Selections translated from the original, p. 259.

καὶ αὐτοὶ ἦσαν παρατηροῦμενοι αὐτῶν. Lk.'s favourite construction. See on v. 14 and vi. 20. The καὶ introduces the apodosis of ἐγένετο: "it came to pass . . . that the Pharisees themselves were persistently watching Him." For παρατηροῦμαι of interested and sinister espionage see on vi. 7. Excepting Mk. iii. 2 and Gal. iv. 19, the verb occurs only in Lk. (xx. 20; Acts ix. 24).

The translation "were there, watching" is erroneous: ἦσαν παρατηροῦμενοι is the periphrastic imperf. It is also an error to carry on the construction of ἐγένετο beyond ver. 1: vv. 1 and 2 are quite independent statements.

2. καὶ ἦδον ἄνθρωπός τις. We are left in doubt whether the man was placed there as a trap, which the absence of γάρ does not disprove, or was there by accident, or had come in the hope of being healed. The last is probable: but the ἦδον seems to imply that his presence was unexpected by the company, and perhaps by the host. He was probably not an invited guest, as ἀπέλυσεν (ver. 4) appears to show. But in an Eastern house he would have no difficulty in obtaining admission (Tristram, Eastern Customs, pp. 36, 81): and, if he hoped to be healed, he would take care to appear ἐμπροσθεν αὐτῶν. Note the τις v. 2, 19, 20.

ὑδρωπικός. Not elsewhere in bibl. Grk., but freq. in medical writers. The disease seems to be indicated as a curse Num. v. 21, 22; comp. Ps. cix. 18. Comp. Hor. Carm. ii. 2. 13.

3. ἀποκρύθησις . . . πρὸς τοὺς νομικοὺς καὶ Φαρισαίους. He answered their thoughts implied in ἦσαν παρατηροῦμενοι. This watching had now a definite object owing to the presence of the dropsical man. Comp. v. 22, vii. 40. The νομικοὶ (see on
vii. 30) and Φαρσαῖοι are put as one class, and are a more definite description of the αὐτοῖ in ver. 1. Note the Hebraistic εἶπεν λέγων.

... Comp. ἀγαθοποιήσαν ἡ κακοποιήσαν (vi. 9); εἷς οὖν ἢ εἷς ἅπατον (xx. 4). The dilemma, if they had planned one against Him, is turned against themselves. These lawyers were bound to be able to answer such a question: and if rigorist Pharisees made no objection when consulted beforehand, they could not protest afterwards. They take refuge in silence; not in order to provoke Him to heal, but because they did not know what to say. They did not wish to say that healing on the sabbath was allowable, and they did not dare to say that it was not. For ἡσυχάζω in this sense comp. Acts xi. 18, xxii. 14; Job xxxii. 6; Neh. v. 8.

The εἰ before ἔστε (A, Syrr. Arm.) probably comes from Mt. xii. 10 (om. B D L 59, Latt. divided). If it is genuine, comp. xiii. 23. Most of the authorities which insert εἰ have ἑραπέεσθαι for ἑραπέεσθαι (also from Mt. xii. 10) and omit ἡ ὁ.

4. ἐπιλαβόμενος ἰάσατο. That the laying hold of him is to be regarded as the means of the cure is not certain. The touching in order to heal is more often expressed by ἀπεσθαί (v. 13, xxii. 51; Mk. i. 41, vii. 33, viii. 22; Mt. viii. 3, 15; xvii. 7, xx. 34) or by ἐπισήνατο τὰς χεῖρας (iv. 40, xiii. 13; Mk. vi. 5, viii. 23, 25, etc.). Both ἰάσθαι (see small print on v. 17) and ἐπιλαβότθαι (ix. 47, xx. 26, xxiii. 26, etc.) are freq. in Lk. Christ read the man's faith, as He read the hostility of the Pharisees, and responded to it.

ἀπέλυσεν. This probably means something more than the letting go after the ἐπιλαβόμενος, viz. "dismissed him" from the company, to prevent interference with him.

5. Τίνος ὦ μων υἱὸς ἢ βοῦς. The emphatic word is ὦ μων. "How do you act, when your interests are concerned? When your son, or even your ox, falls into a well?" Palestine abounds in unprotected cisterns, wells and pits. Wetst. quotes from the Mishna, Si in puteum bos aut asinus... filius aut filia. The argument is that what the Pharisees allowed themselves for their own benefit must be allowed to Christ for the benefit of others. Their sabbath help had an element of selfishness; His had none.

The reading ὦνος ἢ βοῦς probably comes from xiii. 15. The correction was doubly tempting: 1. because ὦνος seemed rather to spoil the a fortiori argument; 2. because ὦνος is more naturally coupled with βοῦς. Comp. Deut. xxii. 4. The reading τριβάτον (D) for υῖος has a similar origin, while δός is a conjecture as the supposed original of both υἱὸς and ὦνος. The evidence is

---

1 There is possibly a reference to the wording of the fourth commandment, in which son stands first among the rational creatures possessed, and ox first among the irrational (Deut. v. 14). But comp. Ex. xxii. 33.
thus divided: υἱὸς A B E G H M S U V Γ Δ L etc., e f g Syrr., Cyr-Alex.—
Sanday, App. to Grk. T. p. 120. The ἀποκρίσεις before πρὸς αὐτοὺς εἶπεν
(8 A, Vulg.) is probably an insertion.

Note the Hebraistic construction instead of τίς δFromBody οὗ ὦ ιερ., κ.τ.λ., οὐκ
εὐθέως ἀναστάσει αὐτῶν;

6. οὐκ ἴχουσαν ἀνταποκριθῆναι. Stronger than ἴχοςαν (ver. 3): “They had no power to reply.” Lk. is fond of noting that people are silenced or keep silence (xx. 26; Acts xi. 18, xii. 17, xv. 12, xxii. 2). For the compound verb comp. Rom. ix. 20; Judg. v. 29; Job xvi. 8, xxxii. 12.

7-11. Discourse on choosing the Lowest Seats at Entertainments. We may suppose that the healing of the dropsical man preceded the meal. This now begins; and, as they settle round the tables, there is a manoeuvring on the part of some of the guests to secure the best places. To suggest a comparison between healing the dropsy and dealing with duplicem animi hydropem, superbire tumorem et pecuniā situm is almost as fanciful as supposing that “falling into a well” is meant to refer to the dropsy. The latter supposition (Aug. Bede) still finds favour.

7. Ἐλεγεν δὲ ... παραβολήν. Comp. v. 36, xiii. 6, xviii. 1. The “parable” is not in the form of a narrative, but in that of advice, which is thus called because it is to be understood metaphorically. Christ is not giving counsels of worldly wisdom or of good manners, but teaching a lesson of humility. Every one before God ought to feel that the lowest place is the proper place for him. There is no need to suppose that this was originally a parable in the more usual sense, and that Lk. has turned it into an exhortation; still less that ver. 7 is a fictitious introduction to a saying of which the historical connexion had been lost.

ἀπέκλινεν. Sc. τὸν ποδὸν: comp. Acts iii. 5; 1 Tim. iv. 16; Ecclus. xxxi. 2.
He directed his attention to this: not the same as its attracting or catching his attention. Syr-Sin. omits.

tὰς πρωτοκλίσιας. In the mixture of Jewish, Roman, Greek, and Persian customs which prevailed in Palestine at this time, we cannot be sure which were the most honourable places at table. Josephus (Ant. xv. 2. 4) throws no light. But the Talmud says that, on a couch holding three, the middle place is for the worthiest, the left for the second, and the right for the third (Edersh. L. & T. ii. pp. 207, 494). Among the Greeks it was usual for each couch to have only two persons (Plat. Sym. 175 A, C), but both Greeks and Romans sometimes had as many as four on one couch. D. of Grk, and Rom. Ant. artt. Cena, Symposium, Triclinium; Becker, Charicles, Sc. vi. Exc. i.; Gallus, Sc. ix. Exc. i. ii. Comn. Lk. xx. 46; Mt. xxiii. 6; Mk. xii. 39.
XIV. 7-10.] JOURNEYS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

ἐξελέγοντο. "They were choosing out for themselves; eligebant (b c d e ff,) rather than eligent (Vulg.)." The same thing seems to have taken place at the Last Supper (xxii. 24), and the washing of the disciples' feet may have been intended as a rebuke for this.

8. εἰς γάμους. Probably sing. in meaning; "to a wedding-feast": see on xii. 36. The meal at which this was said was an ordinary one, as is shown by φαγεῖν ἁρπν (ver. 1), the common Hebrew phrase for a meal (ver. 15; Mt. xv. 2; Mk. iii. 20; Gen. xxxvii. 25, xiii. 16; Exod. ii. 20, etc.). Jesus singles out a marriage, not perhaps because such a feast is a better type of the Kingdom of God, but because on such occasions there is more formality, and notice must be taken of the rank of the guests.


9. οδε καὶ αὐτὸν καλέσας. It is misplaced ingenuity to render, "thee thyself also," dich auch selbst. "Thee and him," te et illum (Vulg.), is right. His inviting both gave him the right to arrange both guests as he pleased. Contrast ii. 35.

ἐφεί. For the change from subjunct. to fut. indic. comp. xii. 58. See also ἐφεί after ἵνα, ver. 10.

Δῶς τούτῳ τόπον . . . τὸν ἵσχατον τόπον. Here AV. is inferior to all previous versions. Vulg. has locum in both places. Luth. omits in both. Tyn. Cov. Cran. Gen. have "rowme" in both: Wic. and Rhem. "place" in both. "The lowest room" means "the lowest place"; but in that case "give this man room" should precede. Otherwise "lowest room" will seem to mean the bottom chamber.


ἀρέτη . . . κατέχειν. The αρέτη marks the contrast between the brief self-assumed promotion and the permanent merited humiliation. Comp. Prov. xxv. 6, 7, which Christ seemed to have had in His mind. The displaced guest goes from top to bottom, because the intermediate places have meanwhile been filled.

10. ἵνα . . . ἐφεί σοι. Perhaps ἵνα is here used ἐκβατικῶς, of the result rather than of the purpose: "so that he will say to thee." But if the idea of purpose be retained, it is Christ's purpose in giving the advice, not the purpose with which the hearer is to adopt the advice. There is no recommendation of "the pride that apes humility," going to a low place in order to be promoted. See small print on xx. 10.
The fut. indic. after ἔρα is common in late Greek: xx. 10; Mk. xv. 20; Jn. vii. 3, xvii. 2; Acts xxi. 24; Gal. ii. 4, etc. Win. xii. b. 1, p. 360; Simcox, *Lang. of N.T.* p. 109; Burton, § 109.

προσανάβηθι ἀνώτερον. Perhaps "Come up higher," i.e. to where the host is sitting: *accede* (a c f ff2 i qr) rather than *ascende* (Vulg.). Comp. ἀνάβαινε πρὸς με (Prov. xxv. 7). The verb is classical and frequent in LXX, esp. in Joshua of geographical description (xi. 17, xv. 3, 6, 7, xviii. 12, xix. 11, 12; Exod. xix. 23, etc.). The adv. occurs elsewhere in bibl. Grk. only Heb. x. 8; comp. ἀνώτερος (Neh. iii. 25), ἄνωτάτος (Tobit viii. 3), ἐσωτέρος (Acts xvi. 24; Heb. vi. 19), κατώτερος (Eph. iv. 9).

ἐξώτειν πάντων. Both words are characteristic: see on i. 15 and vi. 30. The πάντων is unquestionably to be retained (N A B L X 1, 33 69, Syrr. Boh. Aeth.).

11. πᾶς ὁ υψὸν ἐαυτὸν. One of our Lord’s repeated utterances: xviii. 14; Mt. xxiii. 12. In all three places AV. spoils the antithesis by varying the translation of ταπεινώ, “abase,” “humble.” The saying here guards against the supposition that Christ is giving mere prudential rules of conduct or of good taste. Humility is the passport to promotion in the Kingdom of God. Comp. for the first half x. 15; and for the second half Jas. iv. 10; 1 Pet. v. 6. Note that while Lk. in both places has πᾶς with the participle (see on i. 66), Mt. has διατις.

12-14. The Duty of inviting Lowly Guests. The previous discourse was addressed to the guests (ver. 7): this is addressed to the host. It is a return for his hospitality. We cannot be sure that all the other guests were of the upper classes, and that this moved Jesus to utter a warning. Some of His disciples may have been with Him, and they were not wealthy. Still less may we assert that, if all the other guests were of the upper classes, this was wrong. All depends upon whether the motive for hospitality was selfish. But it is wrong to omit benevolence to the poor, in whose case the selfish motive is excluded. As before, we have a parable in a hortatory form; for Jesus is not merely giving rules for the exercise of social hospitality.

12. "Ελεγεν δὲ καὶ τῷ κεκληκτῷ αὐτῶν. “But He was saying to him also that had bidden Him”; qui invitaverat eum (d f), invitanti eum (8), invitatori (a b c ff2 i qr): convivatori suo benigne rependens, πνεumatikά αἵτι σαρκικών (Grotius). For ἀριστον see on xi. 37.

μὴ φωνεῖ. Pres. imperat. “Do not habitually call.” It is the exclusive invitation of rich neighbours, etc., that is forbidden.

As distinct from καλεῖ, φωνεῖ would specially apply to invitation by word of mouth: and the use of φωνεῖ for invitations is very rare. Neither Vulg. nor any English Version before RV. distinguishes between φωνεῖ here and καλεῖ, ver. 13, although in vv. 7, 8, 12 καλεῖ is rendered *invitare* and ver. 12 φωνεῖ, *vocare*.

πλούσιος. With γελτόνας only. It is pleasant to entertain
one’s friends, seemingly to entertain one’s relations, advantageous to entertain rich neighbours. But these are not high motives for hospitality; and we must not let our hospitality end there.

μὴ ποτὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ ἀντικαλέσωσίν σε. Godet remarks that this warning is playful. Prends-y garde: la pareille à recevoir, c’est un malheur à éviter! Car, une fois la retribution reçue, c’en est fait de la remuneration future. Comp. οὐτε μὲν ὃς ἀντικαλεθησόμενος καλεῖ με τοὺς (Xen. Symp. i. 15).

13. δοκήν ποιήσ. See on v. 29.

κάλει πτωχοὺς, ἀναπείρους. The former would not have the money, the latter would not have the strength, to give an entertainment. That ἀναπείρους is here generic, and that χαλονύς and τυφλούς are species under it, is improbable: comp. ver. 21. The πτωχοὶ are one class,—those wanting in means; and all the rest belong to another class,—those wanting in physical strength. Beyond this we need not specify; but in Plato we have ἀνάτηρος containing the other two classes, οἱ χαλινεῖς καὶ τυφλοῖς καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι ἀνάτηροι (Crito, p. 53 A). The ἀνὰ is intensive: “very maimed.”

For the command comp. ver. 21 and Neh. viii. 10.

14. μακάριος ἡμ., ὅτι οὐκ ἔχουσιν ἀνταποδοῦναι σοι. The οὗτος is strictly logical. Good deeds are sure to be rewarded either in this world or in the world to come. Those persons are blessed whose good deeds cannot be requited here, for they are sure of a reward hereafter. For οὐκ ἔχουσι see on xii. 4. For ἀνταποδοῦναι in a good sense comp. Rom. xi. 35; 1 Thess. iii. 9; in a bad sense, Rom. xii. 19; Heb. x. 30. The ἀντὶ expresses retaliation, exact repayment. Comp. Arist. Eth. Nic. ix. 2. 5, where we have δόσις, ἀποδοτέων, and ἀνταποδοτήσις.

ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει τῶν δικαίων. It is possible that there is here a reference to the doctrine of a double resurrection, first of the righteous, and then of all. Comp. 1 Cor. xv. 23; 1 Thess. iv. 16; Rev. xx. 5, 6. If so, this is the ἀνάστασις ἐκ νεκρῶν (xx. 35; Acts iv. 2; Phil. iii. 11; 1 Pet. i. 3: comp. Mk. ix. 9, xii. 25; Mt. xvii. 9; Gal. i. 1), which implies that some are for the present left unraised, as distinct from the ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν (Acts xvii. 32; 1 Cor. xv. 17, 21; Heb. vi. 2), which is the general resurrection. See Lift. on Phil. iii. 11. But τῶν δικαίων may be added merely to indicate the character of those who practise disinterested benevolence.

15–24. The Parable of the Great Supper. The identity of this with the Parable of the Marriage of the King’s Son, often called the Parable of the Wedding Garment (Mt. xxii. 1–14), will continue to be discussed, for the points of similarity and of difference are both of them so numerous that a good case may be made for either view. But the context, as well as the points of difference, justifies

1 The form ἀνάτηρος seems to be a mere misspelling of ἀνάτηρος (Tobit xiv. 2 ἀσ.; 2 Mac. viii. 24 A V); but it is well attested. WH. ii. App. p. 151.
a distinction. The parable in Mt. is a comment on an attempt to arrest Christ (xxi. 46), and tells of rebels put to death for insulting and killing their sovereign's messengers; this is a comment on a pious remark, perhaps ignorantly or hypocritically made, and tells of discourteous persons who, through indifference, lose the good things to which they were invited. It is much less severe in tone than the other; and even in those parts which are common to the two has very little similarity of wording.

15. τις τῶν συνανακειμένων. "The resurrection of the just" suggests the thought of the Kingdom, and this guest complacently assumes that he will be among those who will enjoy it. With this introductory incident comp. x. 25-30, xii. 13-15, xv. 1-3.

φάγεται ἄρτον. A Hebraism: comp. ver. 1; 2 Sam. ix. 7, 10; 2 Kings iv. 8, etc., and see on ver. 8. It points to the Jewish idea that the Messianic age will be inaugurated by a banquet and will be a prolonged festival (Is. xxv. 6). The reading ἄρτον ἐσκεριτων (E H M S U V I) is a mere corruption of ἄρτον.

16. ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτῷ. "But He said to him" (Rhem.). "And" (Wic.) and "Then" (Tyn. Gen. AV.) obscure the fact that Christ is opposing the comfortable self-complacency of the speaker. What he says is correct, but the spirit in which he says it is quite wrong. Only those who are detached from earthly things, and treat them as of small account in comparison with the Kingdom of God, will enter therein.

ἐποιεὶ δεῖπνον μέγα. "Was about to make a great supper," similar to that at which Jesus was now sitting. One might expect the mid., but comp. ver. 12; Acts viii. 2; Xen. Anab. iv. 2. 23. The πολλοὶ are the Jews who observe the Law. In Mt. it is ἄνθρωπος βασιλεύς who made a marriage-feast for his son.

17. τοῦ δούλου. The vocator, who was sent to remind them, according to custom, and not because they were suspected of unwillingness. Comp. Esth. v. 8, vi. 14. This custom still prevails. To omit the second summons would be "a grievous breach of etiquette, equivalent to cancelling the previous more general notification. To refuse the second summons would be an insult, which is equivalent among the Arab tribes to a declaration of war" (Tristram, Eastern Customs, p. 82). The δοῦλος represents God's messengers to His people, and specially the Baptist and Jesus Christ. Comp. Mt. xi. 28-30.

"Ἐρχομεν, δοιτί ήδη ἐτιμα ἄστιν. The true reading may be ἔρχομαι οὗτοι (N A D K L P R A) to follow εἰτιμα (Syr-Sin.), dicere invitatis ut venirent (Vulg.). See small print note on xix. 13. But the πάτα after ἐπι (A P, Syr-Sin. Vulg. f) or before παμα (D, a e) comes from Mt. xiiii. 4. Ν* B L R, b c f g i l q omit.

1 Vocatores suos ostendenti, ut dicere at quibus invitatus esset (Plin. N. H. xxxv. 10. 36. 89). Comp. Suet. Calig. xxxix. ; Sen. De Ira, iii. 37. 3.
18. ἃπό μιᾶς πάντες παρατείνοι. Every word is full of point. The very beginning of such conduct was unexpected and unreasonable, and it lasted some time. There was no variation; it was like a prearranged conspiracy: they all pleaded that they were at present too much occupied to come. And there was not a single exception. The παρατείνοι comes as a surprise at the end, there being no ἀλλὰ or δὲ at the outset to prepare for a contrast. This absolute unanimity prepares us for a joyous acceptance of the courteously repeated invitation. On the contrary, they begin “to beg off,” deprecari (Acts xxv. 11; 2 Mac. ii. 31). In Jos. Ant. vii. 8. 2 the verb is used, exactly as here, of excusing oneself from an invitation. They ought to have excused themselves when the first invitation came, if at all. Their begging off now was breaking their promise; and the excuses were transparently worthless. In Mt. there is no begging off. Those invited simply ἄρξεσθαι ἀπόλλον; and some of them insulted, and even killed the vocatores. For ἄρξεσθαι of proceedings which last some time comp. vii. 38, xii. 45; xix. 37; 45; xxii. 23, xxiii. 2. Here the further idea of interruption is not present.

ἀπὸ μιᾶς. The expression is unique in Greek literature. Comp. ἀπὸ εὐθείας, ἀπὸ τῆς τοπίας, ἐς ὀρθὴν, διὰ πάντης. We are probably to supply γνώμης: ἀπὸ μιᾶς καὶ τῆς αὐτῆς γνώμης (Philo, De Spec. Legg. ii. p. 311). Both ἐκ μιᾶς γνώμης and ἐκ μιᾶς φωνῆς are also found. We might also supply πυθήσης. Less probable suggestions are ὣπασ, συνθῆκης (Vulg. simul), οἰκίας, οὐκοῦ. ἐκάκγης. A manifest exaggeration. He had already bought it, probably after seeing it; and now inspection could wait. For the phrase, which is classical, comp. 1 Cor. vii. 37; Heb. vii. 27; Jude 3; and the insertion Lk. xxiii. 17. Not in LXX.

ἐκέ με παρηγμένον. It is doubtful whether this is a Latinism, habe me excusatum, i.e. “Consider me as one who has obtained indulgence.”¹ But certainly με, which is enclitic, cannot be emphatic: “Whatever you do about others, I must be regarded as excused.” This would require ἐμὲ, and before rather than after ἐκέ. Comp. οὗ θαρρουντά με ἔκες (Xen. Cyr. iii. 1. 35).

19. πορεύομαι. “I am on my way.” He pleads no ἀνάγκη, and is too indifferent to care about the manifest weakness of his excuse. That he had bought the oxen “on approval” is not hinted. Both these two seem to imply that they may possibly come later, if the host likes to wait, or the feast lasts long enough. Hence the host’s declaration ver. 24.

20. οὗ δύναμαι. He is confident that this is unanswerable. See on ver. 26. “When a man taketh a new wife, he shall not go

¹ Invitas tune me, cum scis, Nasica, vocasse. Excusatum habeas me rogo: coxo domi.

—(Mart. ii. 79.)
out in the host, neither shall he be charged with any business: he shall be free at home one year" (Deut. xxiv. 5). Comp. Hdt. i. 36. 5.

21. The πάντες (ver. 18) probably means more than three. But three suffice as examples. Some said that they would not come now; others declared that they could not come at all. Comp. the parable of the Pounds, where three servants are samples of the whole ten, and represent two classes (xix. 16–21).

Εξελθε ταχέως. Not because his anger makes him impatient; but because he has no intention of putting off anything to please the discourteous persons who have insulted him. He goes on with his arrangements at once.

eἰς τὰς πλατείας καὶ ῥύμας. We have the same combination Is. xiv. 3. This use of ῥύμα is late: Acts ix. 11, xii. 10; Ecclus. ix. 7; Tobit xiii. 18. A lane resembles a stream; and the original sense of ῥύμα is the rush or flow of what is in motion. See Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Greek, p. 16. The two words combined stand for the public places of the town, in which those who have no comfortable homes are likely to be found. Comp. 1 Cor. i. 26–28.

tοὺς πτωχοὺς καὶ ἀνατείρους, κ.τ.λ. The Jews who do not observe the Law; the publicans and sinners. These were not asked simply because the others refused, and in order to fill the vacant places. They would have been asked in any case; but the others were asked first. They both live in the city: i.e. both are Jews. But those who respected the Law had a prior claim to those who rebelled against it. The similarity of wording shows the connexion with the preceding discourse (ver. 13); and therefore Bengel’s attractive distinction is probably not intended. He points out that the poor would get no other invitation; the maimed would not be likely to marry; the blind could not go to see farms; and the lame would not go to prove oxen. Contrast Mt. xxii. 9, 10.

eἰσάγαγε ὅδε. See on ii. 27. It is assumed that they can be “brought in” at once, without formal invitation. They are not likely to refuse. The mixture of guests of all classes is still seen at Oriental entertainments.

22. Κύριε, γέγονεν δ ἔπεταξας. He executes the order, and then makes this report. There is no ἔφη, and we are not to suppose that he had anticipated his master’s order; which would have been audacious officiousness, and could hardly have been done without his master’s knowledge.

ἐκ τότος ἐστιν. Comp. ver. 9. No such expression is found in Mt. xxii. 10. It is added because the servant knows that his master is determined to fill all the places, and that the banquet cannot begin till this is done.

23. φραγμοῦς. “Hedges” (φράσσω = “I fence in”): Mt. xxi. 33; Mk. xii. 1. Just as πλατείας καὶ ῥύμαι represent the
public roads inside the city, so δδοι καὶ φραγμοῖ the public roads outside the city; and this command is the invitation to the heathen.

ἀνάγκασων εἰσελθεῖν. By persuasion. A single servant could not use force, and those who refused were not dragged in. Comp. Mk. vi. 45 and παρεβίασαντο (xxiv. 29; Acts xvi. 15). The text gives no sanction to religious persecution. By showing that physical force was not used it rather condemns it.

να γεμισθῇ μου ὁ οἶκος. Nec natura nec gratia patitur vacuum (Beng.). We are not told the result of this third invitation; but we may conclude that the Gentiles fill the void which the unbelief of the Jews has left (Rom. xi. 25). In Mt. the result of the second invitation is ἐπλήσθη ὁ νυμφῶν, and there is no third. Augustine interprets this third summons as a call to heretics, which cannot be correct.

24. λέγω γὰρ ὑμῖν. Solemn introduction of the main point of the parable. The transition from sing. (ἐξελθεῖ) to plur. (ὑμῖν) is variously explained. (1) That some of the πτωχοί (ver. 21) are present and are included in the address. (2) That there is a transition from the parable to its application, and Christ speaks half as the host to his servant and others, and half in His own person to the Pharisee and his guests. (3) That the host addresses, not only the servant, but all who may hear of what he has done. In favour of (2) we must not quote xi. 8, xv. 7, 10, xvi. 9, xviii. 14; Mt. xxi. 43. In all these places it is Jesus who is addressing the audience; not a person in the parable who sums up the result. Here the ἐκείνων and the μου show that the latter is the case. In Mt. the conclusion to the parable is πολλοὶ γὰρ εἰσίν κλητοὶ, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί (xxii. 14), and these are the words of Christ, not of the βασιλεὺς.

25-35. §Warnings against Precipitancy and Half-heartedness in Following Christ. The Parables of the Rash Builder, the Rash King, and the Savourless Salt. The section has been called "The Conditions of Discipleship." These are four. 1. The Cross to be borne (25-27; Mt. x. 37, 38). 2. The Cost to be counted (28-32). 3. All Possessions to be renounced (33). 4. The Spirit of Sacrifice to be maintained (34, 35; Mt. v. 13; Mk. ix. 49).

The journeying continues, but we are not told the direction; and a large multitude is following. They are disposed to believe that Jesus is the Messiah, and that the crisis of the Kingdom is at hand. They therefore keep close to Him, in order not to miss any of the expected glories and blessings. This fact is the occasion of the address. They must understand that following Him involves a great deal. Like the guest in the Pharisee's house (ver. 15), they have not realized what the invitation to enter the Kingdom implies.

25. Συνεπορεύομαι δὲ αὐτῷ. "Now there were going with Him,"
of what continued for some time. Comp. vii. 11, xxiv. 15. Elsewhere only Mk. x. 1 of people assembling, but often in LXX (Gen. xiii. 5, xiv. 24, xviii. 16, etc.).

26. ὃδ μισεῖ τὸν πατέρα ἑαυτοῦ, κ.τ.λ. Does not hate them so far as they are opposed to Christ. The context and the parallel passages (Mt. vi. 24, x. 37) show that the case supposed is one in which choice must be made between natural affection and loyalty to Christ. In most cases these two are not incompatible; and to hate one's parents as such would be monstrous (Mt. xv. 4). But Christ's followers must be ready, if necessary, to act towards what is dearest to them as if it were an object of hatred. Comp. Jn. xii. 25. Jesus, as often, states a principle in a startling way, and leaves His hearers to find out the qualifications. Comp. vi. 29, 30; Mt. xix. 12. The καὶ τὴν γυναῖκα here is a comment, whether designed or not, on γυναῖκα ἔγνμα in ver. 20. Comp. xviii. 29. 

τὴν ψυχὴν ἑαυτοῦ. Not merely his carnal desires, but his life (ix. 24, xii. 23); all his worldly interests and affections, including life itself. 

Nec tamen sufficit nostra relinquere, nisi relinquamus et nos (Greg. Mag. Hom. xxxii.). So that μισεῖν τὴν ψυχὴν ἑαυτοῦ is ἀπαρνήσασθαι ἑαυτὸν (ix. 23) carried to the uttermost.

εἶναι μοῦ μαθητὴς. The emphasis is on μαθητής, not on μοῦ, which is enclitic. “He may be following Me in some sense, but he is no disciple of Mine.” Would any merely human teacher venture to make such claims? Syr-Sin. omits v. 27.

27. οὐ βαστάζει τὸν σταυρὸν ἑαυτοῦ. Comp. ix. 23; Mt. x. 38, xvi. 24; Mk. viii. 34. Only here and Jn. xix. 17 is βαστάζειν used of the cross; here figuratively, there literally. “Carrying his own cross” would be a familiar picture to many of Christ's hearers. Hundreds had been crucified in Galilee for rebellion under Judas the Gaulonite (A.D. 6). See Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 97.

In late Gk. βαστάζειν seems to be more common than φέρειν, when the carrying is figurative: LXX of 2 Kings xviii. 14; Job xxi. 3. It is specially common in the later versions of Aq. Sym. and Theod. All three have it Is. xl. 11, lxvi. 12; Jer. x. 5; and both Sym. and Theod. have it Prov. ix. 12; Is. lxiii. 9. But in none of these places does it occur in LXX.

28–33. Two Parables upon Counting the Cost: the Rash Builder and the Rash King. Comp. Mt. xx. 22; Mk. x. 38. It is possible that in both parables Jesus was alluding to recent instances of such folly. It was an age of ostentatious building and reckless warfare. The connexion with what precedes (γὰρ) seems to be that becoming a disciple of Christ is at least as serious a matter as any costly or dangerous undertaking.

28. τίς γὰρ ἐξ ὑμῶν θέλων. “For which of you (see on xi. 5), if he wishes.”

κἀθισας. In both parables (ver. 31) this represents long and
serious consideration. The matter cannot be settled off-hand. Comp. Virg. *Aen.* x. 159.

ψηφίζει. "Calculates" (ψήφος = calculus). In class. Gk. commonly in mid. of voting. Comp. Rev. xiii. 18; not in LXX. Neither ἀπαρχάωσιν nor δαπάνη occur again in N.T., but δαπάνη is fairly common in LXX, and ἀπαρχάωσιν is very rare in Greek literature.¹ In LXX ἀπαρτίζειν occurs (1 Kings ix. 25); also in Aq. and Sym. See Suicer, ἀπαρτίζω.

29. μὴ ἵσχυστος ἐκτελέσαι. "Not having the means to finish." For ἐκτελέσαι comp. Deut. xxxii. 45; 1 Kings xiv. 15; 2 Chron. iv. 5; 2 Mac. xv. 9; Dan. iii. 40 (Theod.). Not elsewhere in N.T.

30. οὐτος. Contemptuous: v. 21, vii. 39, xiii. 32, where see reff. The lesson conveyed is not so much, "It is better not to begin, than to begin and fail," as, "It is folly to begin without much consideration."

31. συνβάλειν εἰς πόλεμον. To be taken together: "to engage with another king for the purpose of war." The verb. is intrans., as 1 Mac. iv. 34; 2 Mac. viii. 23, xiv. 17; and often in Polyb. The more common expression is συμβάλλειν εἰς μάχην (Jos. *Ant.* vi. 5. 3; so also in Polyb.). Comp. configere.

ἐν δέκα χιλίαις. "Equipped with ten thousand," a meaning which readily flows from "clad in, invested with." Comp. i. 17; Rom. xv. 29; 1 Cor. iv. 21; Heb. ix. 25; Jude 14. The very phrase occurs 1 Mac. iv. 29.

32. εἰ δὲ μὴγε. See small print on v. 36.

ἐρωτᾷ [τὰ] πρὸς εἰρήνην. "Asks for negotiations with a view to peace." The τὰ is omitted in N B (? homoaotel.), and the meaning will then be, "negociates for peace." B K II have εἰς for πρὸς (perhaps from ver. 28). Comp. xix. 42 and examples in Wetst. There is a remarkable parallel to this second parable Xen. *Mem.* iii. 6. 8.

33. This verse shows the futility of asking what the tower means, and who the king with the twenty thousand is.² These details are part of the framework of the parables, and by themselves mean nothing. The parables as a whole teach that to become Christ's disciple involves something which ought to be well weighed beforehand. This something was explained before, and is shown in another form here, viz. complete self-renunciation.

¹ Dion. Hal. *De Comp. Verb.* xxiv., and Apoll. *Dysc. De Adv.* p. 532, 7, seem to be almost the only quotations. The Latin renderings here are ad perficiendum (if Vulg.), ad consummandum (a r), ad consummationem (e), ad perfectum (d).

² Those who insist on explaining the king with the twenty thousand commonly make him mean Satan. But would Christ suggest that we should come to terms with Satan? To avoid this difficulty others regard the king as representing God. But would Christ place the difference between the power of God and the power of man as the difference between twenty thousand and ten thousand? Contrast the ten thousand talents and the hundred pence (Mt. xviii. 24, 28). See on xii. 5 and xvi. 1.
"Renounceth all his own belongings," the chief of which were specified ver. 26. See on ix. 61 and viii. 3. All disciples must be ready to renounce their possessions. Many of the first disciples were called upon actually to do so. Comp. the sarcasm of Julian: "In order that they may enter more easily into the Kingdom of Heaven in the way which their wonderful law bids them, I have ordered all the money of the Church of Edessa to be seized" (Ep. xliii.). Note the characteristic πᾶς and πᾶσιν. Comp. v. 11, 28.

It is very forced to put a full stop at πᾶς καὶ ὑμῶν, and make two independent sentences. "Such is the case therefore with all of you. Whoever renounceth not," etc.

MSS. vary much as to the order of the three words εἰςαλμὸς καὶ ἄλας.

34. 35. The Spirit of Sacrifice. The similitude respecting salt was probably uttered more than once, and in more than one form. Comp. Mt. v. 13; Mk. ix. 50. The salt is the self-sacrifice spoken of vv. 26, 27, 33. The figure of salt is not found in O.T., but comp. Job. vi. 1...

34. Καλὸν οὖν τὸ ἄλας. The οὖν (N B L X 69, Boh.) perhaps refers to previous utterances: "Salt, therefore (as I have said before), is good." Nihil utilius sale et sole (Plin. H. N. xxxi. 9. 45. 102).

εἰς καὶ καὶ τὸ ἄλας. The καὶ (N B L X, Vulg. codd. Syr., Bede) must be preserved. "But if even the salt." In Mt. v. 13 there is no καὶ. Note the characteristic δὲ καὶ, and see small print on iii. 9.

In LXX and N.T. ἄλας is the common form, with ἄλα as v.l. in good MSS. In class. Gk. ἄλαs prevails.

In class. Gk. μουραλῶ is "I am foolish" (Eur. Med. 614); in bibl. Grk. μουραλῶμαι has this meaning (Rom. i. 22; Mt. v. 13), μουραλῶ being "I make foolish" (1 Cor. i. 20). Mk. has ἄναλον γίνεσθαι. Vulg. has evanuerit; a d e infatuation fuerit.

ἐν τίνι ἀρτοφυτεῖς; Quite impossibly Tyn. and Cran. have "What shall be seasoned ther with?" From meaning simply "prepare," ἀπρῶω came to be used of preparing and flavouring food (Col. iv. 6).

35. It is futile to discuss what meaning is to be given to "the land" and "the dunghill." They do not symbolize anything. Many things which have deteriorated or become corrupt are useful as manure, or to mix with manure. Savourless salt is not even of this much use: and disciples without the spirit of self-devotion are like it. That is the whole meaning.1 If this saying was uttered only once, we may prefer the connexion here to that in the Sermon on the Mount. Mk. so far agrees with Lk. in placing it after the Transfiguration. But all three arrangements may be right.

---

1 For this savourless salt in Palestine see Maundrell, Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem, pp. 161 ff. (quoted by Morison on Mk. ix. 50); also Thomson, "I saw large quantities of it literally thrown into the street, to be trodden under foot of men and beasts" (Land & Book, p. 381).
XIV. 35–XV. 1.] JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM 367

κοπραπ. The word is one of many which seem to be of a colloquial character, and are common to N.T. and the comic poets. See Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. pp. 72–76. In N.T. only here. Comp. xiii. 8.

Ὁ ἐχὼν διὰ ἀκοῦεν ἀκούετω. A solemn indication that attention to what has been said is needed, and will be rewarded. It is another of Christ’s repeated sayings. See on viii. 8.

XV. 1–32. Three Parables for the Encouragement of Penitent Sinners. The Love and Free Forgiveness of God. The Lost Sheep (3–7) and the Lost Coin (8–10) form a pair. Like the Mustard Seed and the Leaven (xiii. 18–21), and the Rash Builder and the Rash King (xiv. 28–32), they teach the same lesson, which the Prodigal Son (11–32) enforces and augments. In the first two Jesus justifies His own conduct against the criticisms of the Pharisees. In the third He rebukes their criticisms, but at the same time continues the lesson to a point far beyond that touched by the objectors. When we regard them as a triplet, each parable teaching a separate lesson, Bengel’s classification will stand: 1. Peccator stupidus; 2. sui plane nesciens; 3. sciens et voluntarius.

But the insertion of εἰπεὶ δὲ (ver. 11) clearly marks off the third parable from the first two, whereas these are closely connected by ἦν, which almost implies that the second is little more than an alternative way of saying the same thing as the first.

1–3. The Murmuring of the Pharisees against Christ’s Intercourse with Publicans and Sinners. We have had several other cases in which Jesus has made a question, or an appeal, or a criticism, the occasion of a parable: ver. 15, x. 25–29, xii. 13–15, xiv. 15. There is once more no indication of time or place; but connexion with what precedes is perhaps intended. There a thoughtless multitude followed Him, intending to become His disciples, and He warns them to count the cost. Here a number of publicans and sinners congregate about Him, and He rebukes the suggestion that He ought to send them away. It was well to check heedless enthusiasts, that they might be saved from breaking down afterwards. It would have been a very different thing to have sent away penitents, that He might be saved from legal pollution.

1. Ἡσαν δὲ αὐτῷ ἐγγίζοντες πάντες οἱ τελώναι καὶ οἱ ἁμαρτωλοί. The meaning of πάντες determines the meaning of the tense. We may regard it as hyperbolical for “very many,”—a common use of “all.” Or it may mean all the tax-collections and other outcasts of the place in which He then was. In either of these cases Ἡσαν ἐγγίζοντες (see on i. 10) will mean “were drawing near” on some particular occasion. Or we may take πάντες literally of the whole class of publicans and sinners; and then the verb will mean “used to draw near,” wherever He might be. This was constantly happening, and the Pharisees commonly cavilled (imperf.), and on one occasion He uttered these parables (aor.). It was likely that He
would attract these outcasts more and more. Comp. vii. 29, 37, and see on xi. 29. For the characteristic πάντες see on i. 66, vi. 30, xii. 10, etc. Note the repeated article: the τελώναi and the ἀμαρτωλοί are grouped together as one class by the Pharisees themselves (v. 30; Mt. ix. 11); not so here by the Evangelist.

2. διεγόγγυλον. "Murmured among themselves, throughout their whole company." In N.T. only here and xix. 7, which is very similar. Comp. Exod. xvi. 2, 7, 8; Num. xiv. 2; Josh. ix. 18. "The scribes" are usually placed before "the Pharisees" (v. 21, vi. 7, xi. 53; Mt. xii. 38, etc.). Here perhaps the Pharisees took the lead: comp. v. 30 (true text); Mk. vii. 1, 5.

προσδέχεται. "Allows them access, gives them a welcome": Rom. xvi. 2; Phil. ii. 29.

συνεσβίει. A much more marked breach of Pharisaic decorum than προσδέχεται. He accepted invitations from Levi and other tax-collectors, and in His outdoor teaching He took His meals with them.

3. εἴπεν δὲ. "But (in answer to this cavilling) He said." Cov. and Cran. have "But"; Tyn. and Gen. "Then." Something stronger than "And" (AV. RV.) is needed. Note εἴπεν δὲ, εἴπεν πρός, and εἴπεν τῇ παραβολήν as marks of Lk.'s style. None of them is found in Mt. xviii. 12.

4-7. The Parable of the Lost Sheep. Comp. Mt. xviii. 12-14, where this parable is given in a totally different connexion, and with some differences of detail. Comp. also Jn. x. 1-18. We have no means of knowing how often Jesus used the simile of the Good Shepherd in His teaching. No simile has taken more hold upon the mind of Christendom. See Tert. De Pud. vii. and x. Comp. Ezek. xxxiv.; Is. xl. 11; 1 Kings xxi. 17.

4. Τις ἄνθρωπος ἐξ ὑμῶν. Once more He appeals to their personal experience. See on xi. 5, and comp. xii. 25, xiv. 5, 28. The ἄνθρωπος inserted here marks one difference between this parable and the next.

ἐκὼν ἐκατόν πρόβατα. The point is, not that he possesses so much, but that the loss in comparison to what remains is so small.

ἀπολέσας ἐξ αὐτῶν ἑν. This is the point of the first two parables,—the particular love of God for each individual soul. In Mt. we have πλανηθῇ (Exod. xxiii. 4; Is. iii. 6; Jer. xxvii. 17) for ἀπολέσας.

καταλείπει τὰ εἰκόνες του ἐννέα. He is the owner, not the shepherd. His leaving them does not expose them to danger. The wilderness (in Mt. τὰ ὀρη) is not a specially perilous or desolate place, but their usual pasture, in which they are properly tended. He does not neglect them, but for the moment he is absorbed in the recovery of the lost. Cyril Alex. and Ambrose make the ninety and nine to be the Angels, and the one the human race. Ambrose
adds, *Dives igitur pastor cujus omnes nos centesima portio sumus.* Migne, xiv. xv. 1756; lxxii. 798; Payne Smith, p. 497.


For *éti* of the goal comp. Acts viii. 26, ix. 11; Mt. xxii. 9; in each case after *πορεύεσθαι.* Mt. has here *πορεύεσθαι* ἣδει τὸ πλανώμενον.

ἐὼς εὗρη αὐτό. Peculiar to Lk. There is no cessation of the seeking until the lost is found. See Lange, L. of C. i. p. 497.

5. ἐπιτίθησιν ἐπὶ τοὺς ἄμους αὐτό. This also is peculiar to Lk. The owner does not drive it back, nor lead it back, nor have it carried: he carries it himself. Comp. Is. xl. 11, xlix. 22, lx. 4, lxvi. 12. In LXX ἂμος is common; in N.T. only here and Mt. xxiii. 4.

χαίρων. There is no upbraiding of the wandering sheep, nor murmuring at the trouble. Comp. the use of χαίρων, xix. 6; Acts viii. 39.

6. συνκαλεῖ τοὺς φίλους. See on ix. 1. In Mt. there is nothing about his calling others to rejoice with him. Only his own joy is mentioned. It is a mark of great joy that it seeks sympathy.

tὸ ἄπολωλος. Not δὲ ἀπώλεσα (ver. 9). The sheep went astray through its own ignorance and folly (Ps. cxix. 176): the coin was lost through the woman’s want of care. This is another mark of difference between the first parable and the second.

7. λέγω ὑμῖν. Mt. has the characteristic ἀμιν λέγω ὑμῖν.

ἡ ἐπὶ. For ὡς without a previous comparative see small print on xvii. 2, and comp. Mt. xviii. 8; Mk. ix. 43, 45, 47; 1 Cor. xiv. 19. Win. xxxv. 2, c, p. 302; Simcox, p. 92. Perhaps ἡ may be said to imply μᾶλλον by a usage which was originally colloquial. It is freq. in LXX; Gen. xlix. 12; Num. xxii. 6, etc. In Mt. xviii. 13 the μᾶλλον is expressed.

δικαίοις οὖν χρείαν ἔχουσιν μετανοίας. “Righteous who are of such a character as to have no need of repentance.” The οὖν does not prove that δικαίοις means those who are really righteous. It will fit any explanation of δικαίοις and οὖ χρείαν ἔχουσιν. If both expressions be taken literally, the ninety-nine represent a hypothetical class, an ideal which since the Fall has not been reached. But as Jesus is answering Pharisaic objections to intercourse with flagrant sinners, both expressions may be ironical and refer to the external propriety of those whose care about legal observances prevents them from feeling any need of repentance. Comp. v. 31.

Mt. here has τοῖς μὴ πεπλανημένοις. In any case the χαίρων, ver. 5, and the χαρά here are anthropomorphic, and must not be pressed. *Inesperata aut prope desperata magis nos afficiunt* (Grotius); but such unlooked for results are impossible to Omniscience. We must hold to the main lesson of the parable, and not insist on interpreting all the details.

1 In the Midrash there is a story that Moses, while tending Jethro’s flocks, went after a lamb which had gone astray. As he thought that it must be weary,
Note the confidence with which Jesus speaks of what takes place in heaven, and compare it with the claims made upon His followers, xiv. 26, 33.

μετανοοῦτι . . . μετανοήσις. Both verb and substantive are much more common in Lk. than in Mt. or Mk. Neither occurs in Mt. xviii. 14 or anywhere in Jn. See on v. 32 and iii. 3.

8-10. §The Parable of the Lost Coin. The main points of difference between this and the preceding parable are the changes from a man to a woman, and from a sheep, which could stray of its own accord, and feel the evil consequences, to a coin, which could do neither. From this it follows that, while the man might be moved by pity rather than by self-interest to bring back the sheep, the woman must be moved by self-interest alone to recover the coin; also that the woman can blame herself for the loss of the coin (ἥν ἀπελευσα), which the man does not do with regard to the sheep (τὸ ἀπολελοχός). Hence we may infer that the woman represents the Church rather than the Divine Wisdom, if she represents anything at all. The general result of the two parables is that each sinner is so precious that God and His Ministers regard no efforts too great to reclaim such.

8. τίς γυνή; No εἴ δυνών is added, perhaps because no women were present. Yet there may be something in the remark of Wetst. Cum varios haberet auditores Christus, mares, feminas, juiores, iis parabolas accommodat: de pastore, de muliere frugi, de filio prodigo. Women also may work for the recovery of sinners.

δραχμάς. The word occurs here only in N.T., but often in LXX (Gen. xxiv. 22; Ex. xxxix. 2; Josh. vii. 21, etc.). The Greek drachma was a silver coin of nearly the same value as a Roman denarius (vii. 41, x. 35, xx. 24), which is not mentioned in LXX. It was the equivalent of a quarter of a Jewish shekel (Mt. xvii. 24). Ten drachmas in weight of silver would be about eight shillings, but in purchasing power about a pound. Wic. has “besant,” Tyn. and others have “groat,” Luth. has Groschen. That the ten coins formed an ornament for the head, and that the loss of one marred the whole, is a thought imported into the parable.

ἀπετελ. The act. is peculiar to Lk. in N.T., and always in the sense of kindling (viii. 16, xi. 33; Acts xxviii. 2, and perhaps Lk. xxi. 55; comp. Ex. xxx. 8; Tob. viii. 13; Jud. xiii. 13). Oriental houses often have no windows, and a lamp would be necessary for a search even in the day.

he carried it back on his shoulders. Then God said, that, because he had shown pity to the sheep of a man, He would give him His own sheep, Israel, to feed (Edersh. Z. & T. ii. p. 257; Wetst. on Lk. xv. 5).

1 Nearly all Latin texts have dragesmas, dracmas, or drachmas here; but Cod. Palat. and Ad Novatianum xv. (Hartel's Cypr. App. p. 65) have denarios.
XV. 8–10.) JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

Non sine pulvere (Beng.). It may be doubted whether there is any lesson intended in the coins being lost in the house, whereas the sheep strays from the fold; as showing that souls may be lost in the Church as well as by going out of it. In any case, the details are graphic, and express great and persevering activity. “The charge against the Gospel is still the same, that it turns the world upside down” (Trench, Par. p. 386).

9. τὰς φίλας καὶ γείτονας. “Her women friends and neighbours.” No meaning is to be sought in the change of gender, which merely preserves the harmony of the picture. It is women who congratulate Naomi and Ruth (Ruth iv. 14, q).

10. γίνεται χαρά ἐνώπιον. “There comes to be joy,” etc. The γίνεται = ἐσται in ver. 7. Joy will arise in any case that may occur. “In the presence of” means “in the judgment of.” The angelic estimate of the facts is very different from that of the Pharisees: comp. xii. 8, xvi. 22; Eph. i. 4-14.

ἐπὶ ἐνὶ ἄμαρτῳλά. This is the moral throughout,—the value of a single sinner. The Pharisees condemned Jesus for trying to reclaim multitudes of sinners. They had a saying, “There is joy before God when those who provoke Him perish from the world.”

11–32. § The Parable of the Prodigal Son. It completes the trilogy of these parables of grace, but we cannot be sure that it was uttered on the same occasion as the two other parables. The Evangelist separates it from them by making a fresh start: Εἰπεν δὲ (comp. xxiv. 44). But this may mean no more than that Jesus, having justified Himself against the murmuring of the Pharisees, paused; and then began again with a parable which is a great deal more than a reply to objections. Even if it was delivered on some other occasion unknown to Lk., he could not have given it a more happy position than this. The first two parables give the Divine side of grace; the seeking love of God. The third gives the human side; the rise and growth of repentance in the heart of the sinner. It has been called Evangelium in Evangelio, because of the number of gracious truths which it illustrates. It has two parts, both of which appear to have special reference to the circumstances in which Lk. places the parable. The younger son, who was lost and is found (11–24), resembles the publicans and sinners; and the elder son, who murmurs at the welcome given to the lost (25–32), resembles the Pharisees. In the wider application of the parable the younger son may represent the Gentiles, and the elder the Jews. Like the Lost Coin, it is peculiar to Lk., who would take

MSS. of the Vulg. nearly all read everit, which Wordsworth conjectures to be a slip for everrit. Lat. Vet. has scopis mundavit (b f g l), scopis mundabit (i q), scopis commundat (a), scopis mundal (c r), mundat (d), emundat (e).

2 Inter omnes Christi parabolae haec sana eximia est, plena affectuum et pulcherrimis picta coloribus (Grotius on ver. 20).
special delight in recording a discourse, which teaches so plainly
that God’s all-embracing love is independent of privileges of birth
and legal observances. Its literary beauty would be a further
attraction to the Evangelist, who would appreciate the delicacy,
picturesqueness, and truth of this description of human circum-
stances and emotions. See Jerome, Ep. xxxi., for a commentary.

11. "Ἀνθρωπὸς τής εἰκόνης. The appeal to the personal experience
of each is no longer made; but the idea of possession still continues
(ἐξών, ἐξουσία, εἰκόνη). In each case it is the owner who exhibits the
self-sacrificing care.

12. τὸ ἐπιβάλλων μέρος τῆς ὁσίας. According to Jewish law
this would be half what the eldest received, i.e. one-third (Deut.
xxi. 17): but had he any claim to it in his father’s lifetime?
Very possibly he had. We have here perhaps a survival of
that condition of society in which testaments “took effect immedi-
ately on execution, were not secret, and were not revocable”
(Maine, Ancient Law, ch. vi. p. 174, ed. 1861), and in which it
was customary for a father, when his powers were failing, to abdi-
cate and surrender his property to his sons. In such cases the
sons were bound to give the father maintenance; but the act of
resignation was otherwise complete and irrevocable. Both in
Semitic and in Aryan society this seems to have been the primitive
method of succession, and the Mosaic Law makes no provision for
the privileges of testatorship (ibid. p. 197). The son of Sirach
warns his readers against being in a hurry to abdicate (Ecclus.
xxiii. 19–23), but he seems to assume that it will be done before
death. We may say, then, that the younger son was not making
an unheard-of claim. His father would abdicate some day in any
case: he asks him to abdicate now. See Expositor, 3rd series.

This intrans. use of ἐπιβάλλω occurs Tobit iii. 17, vi. 11; 1 Mac. x. 30.
Comp. τηματῶν τὸ ἐπιβάλλων (Hdt. iv. 115. 1). Other examples in Suicer.
For ὁσία comp. Tobit xiv. 13; 3 Mac. iii. 28.

διείλεν αὐτοῖς τὸν βίον. The verb occurs elsewhere in bibl.
Grk. 1 Cor. xii. 11; Num. xxxi. 27; 1 Mac. i. 6, etc. For τὸν βίον
see on vii. 43. Here it means the same as ἡ ὁσία: comp. ver. 31.

18. μετ’ οὐ πολλᾶς ἡμέρας. He allows no delay between the
granting of his request and the realization of his freedom. On
the fondness of Lk. for such expressions as οὗ πολλοί, οὗ μακράν,
and the like, see on vii. 6.

Συμμαγάγων πάντα. He leaves nothing behind that can minister
to his desires; nothing to guarantee his return. The stronger
form ἀπαντα is well attested (N. A etc.).

Εἰς χώραν μακράν. There is no reason for making μακράν an adv. (ver.
20) rather than an adj. either here or xix. 12: μακρός in the sense of “dis-
tant, remote” is quite classical.
Away from his father's care and restraint, and from the observation of those who knew him.

The opposite of συναγάγων πάντα. It had cost him nothing to collect it together, and he squanders it as easily as he acquired it.

The expression occurs Jos. Ant. xii. 4. 8; but ἀσωτός is not found again either in N.T. or LXX. The ἀσωτός is “one who does not save, a spendthrift, a prodigal”; Prov. vii. 11; comp. Arist. Eth. Nic. ii. 8. 2, iv. 1. 5. For ἀσωτία see Eph. v. 18; Tit. i. 6; 1 Pet. iv. 4; Prov. xxviii. 7; 2 Mac. vi. 4. Sometimes ἀσωτός is taken in a passive sense, “one who cannot be saved, abandoned”; perditus rather than prodigus, as if for ἀσωτός (Clem. Alex. Ped. ii. 1, p. 168, ed. Potter). But the active signification is appropriate here. Trench, Syn. xvi.; Suicer and Suidas s. aσωτός. Syr-Sin. adds “with harlots.”

The working of Providence is manifested in coincidences. Just when he had spent everything, a famine, and a severe one, arose in precisely that land to which he had gone to enjoy himself, and throughout (κατὰ) the land. And he himself (καὶ αὐτός), as well as the country, began more and more to be in want.

λίμὸς ἴσχυρά. See small print on iv. 25. For καὶ αὐτός see on i. 17; v. 14, vi. 20. For ὑπερείσθαι, “to feel want” (mid.), comp. 2 Cor. xi. 9; Phil. iv. 12; Ecclus. xi. 11. Syr-Sin. omits the clause.

15. πορευεῖσθαι ἐκκολλήθη ἐνὶ τῶν πολιτῶν. He has to leave his first luxurious abode and attach himself, in absolute dependence, to one of another nation, presumably a heathen. Evidently his prodigality has not gained him a friend in need. Godet sees in this young Jew, grovelling in the service of a stranger, an allusion to the τελῶναι in the service of Rome. Excepting the quotation from LXX in Heb. viii. 11, πολίτης in N.T. is peculiar to Lk. (xix. 14; Acts xxii. 39): in LXX Prov. xi. 9, 12, xxiv. 43, etc. For ἐκκολλήθη see on x. 11. For the sudden change of subject in ἐπεμψεν comp. vii. 15, xiv. 5, xvii. 2, xix. 4; Acts vi. 6.

βόσκειν χοίρους. A degrading employment for anyone, and an abomination to a Jew. Comp. Hdt. ii. 47. 1. But the lowest degradation has still to be mentioned.

16. ἐπεθύμησε χορτασθῆναι. Exactly as in xvi. 21, of the pangs of hunger. See on vi. 21. There is no doubt that χορτασθῆναι (B D L R) is not a euphemism for γεμίσαι τὴν κοιλίαν αὐτοῦ (A P Q X Τ Δ), but the true reading: cupiebat saturari (d f), con cupiscerbat saturari (e). Syr-Sin. supports A.

ἐκ τῶν κερατίων ὁν ἡσύχων οἱ χοίροι. The pods of the “carob tree,” or “locust tree,” or “John the Baptist’s tree,” or “S. John’s Bread”; so called from the erroneous notion that its pods were
the locusts which were the Baptist’s food. The carob tree, ceratonia siliqua, is still common in Palestine and round the Mediterranean. It is sometimes called Siliqua Graeca. But it is rash to assume that the siliqua of Hor. Ep. ii. 1. 123; Pers. iii. 55; Juv. xi. 58, are carob pods (D.B. i. p. 1412). For the attraction in εν see on iii. 19.

οὐδεὶς ἐδίδευ αὐτῷ. “No one used to give him” even this miserable food, so that the quantity which he got was small. The neighbours cared nothing about this half-starved foreigner, who even in this vile employment could not earn enough to eat.

17. εἰς εαυτὸν δὲ ἔλθων. Implies that hitherto he has been “beside himself”: comp. εἰς εαυτὸ γενόμενος (Acts xii. 11). The expression is classical both in Greek (Diod. Sic. xiii. 95; Epictet. iii. 1. 15) and Latin, redire ad se (Hor. Ep. ii. 2. 138; Lucret. iv. 1020; Ter. Adelph. v. 3. 8). This “coming to himself” is manifested in the thought of home and the longing for it. Want rekindles what his revelry had extinguished. See Blass on Acts xii. 11.

Πόσοι μίσθῳ . . . περισσεύοντα αὐτῶν. There is no emphasis on ἄρτῳ in contrast to κερατίων: the contrast lies in their having plenty to eat. Godet sees the proselytes in these μίσθιοι. The word occurs in N.T. only here and ver. 19: in LXX Lev. xxv. 50; Job vii. 1; Tobit v. 11; Ecclus. vii. 20, xxxiv. 27, xxxvii. 11.

Only in late Greek is περισσεύοντα trans. In N.T. both act. (xii. 15, xxi. 4) and pass. (Mt. xiii. 12, xxv. 29) are used in much the same sense.

ἐγὼ δὲ λιμῷ ὅδε ἀπλυμαί. Comp. τῷ αἰτχύστῳ ἀλεθρῷ, λιμῷ τελευτήσαι (Thuc. iii. 59. 4). The ὅδε is after λιμῷ in B Λ, before λιμῷ in D R U, ego autem hic fame pereo (Vulg.), while A E F etc. omit. The transfer to before λιμῷ caused it to be lost in ἐγὼ δὲ.

18. ἀναστάς περεύσωμαι. Not mere Oriental fulness of description (i. 39; Acts x. 20, xxi. 10). The ἀναστάς expresses his rousing himself from his lethargy and despair (Acts v. 17, ix. 6, 18).

εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν. “Against heaven.” This is not a rare use of εἰς: comp. xvii. 4; Mt. xviii. 21; I Cor. vi. 18, viii. 12. It is common in LXX and is found also in class. Grk. Comp. Pharaoh’s confession, Ἡμῶρτηκα ἐναντίον Κυρίου τοῦ Θεοῦ ὑμῶν καὶ εἰς ὑμᾶς (Exod. x. 16); also Plat. Rep. iv. 396 A; Phadr. 242 C; Hdt. i. 138. 2; Soph. O. C. 968. Filial misconduct is a sin utterly displeasing to God. But the εἰς does not mean “crying to heaven for punishment,” himmelschreien, which is otherwise expressed (Gen. iv. 10, xviii. 21). For ἀναρτάνω ἐνωπίων τινος comp. I Sam.

1 “These ‘husks’ are to be seen on the stalls in all Oriental towns, where they are sold for food, but are chiefly used for the feeding of cattle and horses, and especially for pigs” (Tristram, Nat. Hist. of B. p. 361).
vii. 6, xx. 1; Tobit iii. 3; Judith v. 17; Sus. 23. The sin is regarded as something to be judged by the person who regards it.

κληθήναι υιός σου. By the father himself. What other people may call him is not in question.

19. ὃς ἔνα τῶν μοθίων σου. This will be promotion from his present position. He asks it as a favour.

20. ἀναστάς ἤλθεν. The repentance is as real and decided as the fall. He prepares full confession, but no excuse; and, having made a good resolution, he acts upon it without delay. Here the narrative respecting the younger son practically ends. What follows (20-24) is mainly his father’s treatment of him; and it is here that this parable comes into closest contact with the two others. Every word in what follows is full of gracious meaning. Note especially ἐαυτῷ, “his own father,” αὐτῷ μακρὰν ἀπέχοντος, ἔπιλαγχων, and δραμὼν. In spite of his changed and beggarly appearance, his father recognizes him even from a distance.

ἐπέσεσεν ἐπὶ τῶν παραχθὼν αὐτῷ καὶ κατέφιλησεν αὐτόν. The exact parallel in Acts xx. 37 should be compared. Excepting Mk. iii. 10 and the quotations Rom. xv. 3 and Rev. xi. 11, πιτιπτέειν is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (i. 12; Acts viii. 16, 44, etc.), and he alone uses it in this sense: comp. Gen. xxxiii. 4, xlv. 14, xlvii. 29. Latin texts vary much in rendering ἐπέσεσεν: cecidit (Vulg.), incubuit (ad Hier. ad Dam.), procidit (r), superjedt se (e). None of them marks the ἐκκαθαρίσεως, “kissed him tenderly,” deosculatus est. See on vii. 38, and comp. Tobit vii. 6; 3 Mac. v. 49. As yet the son has said nothing, and the father does not know in what spirit he has returned; but it is enough that he has returned. The father has long been watching for this.

With the constr. αὐτῷ ἀπέχοντα εἶδεν αὐτόν, for αὐτῶν ἀπέχοντα εἶδεν, comp. xii. 36.

21. He makes his confession exactly as he had planned it: but it is doubtful whether he makes his humiliating request. The words πολὺρον με ὦς κ.τ.λ., are here attested by ΝΒΔUX; but almost all other MSS. and most Versions omit them. They may be taken from ver. 19, and internal evidence is against them. Augustine says, Non addit quod in illa meditatione dixerat, Fac me sicut unum de mercenariis tuis (Quast. Evang. ii. 33). He had not counted on his father’s love and forgiveness when he decided to make this request; and now emotion prevents him from meeting his father’s generosity with such a proposal. But the servants are not present. They would not run out with the father. Not till the two had reached the house could the order tc them be given.

22. Ταχὺ ἔξενέγκατε. “Bring forth quickly”; cito proferte.
The father says nothing to his son; he continues to let his conduct speak for him.


στόλην τὴν πρώτην. Not, "his best robe," still less "his former robe," which without αἰτία is scarcely possible; but, "the best that we have, the finest in the house." Comp. Ezek. xxvii. 22.

The στόλη (στέλλω) was any long and stately robe, such as the scribes loved to promenade in (xx. 46), the talar: Mk. xii. 38, xvi. 5; Rev. vi. 11, vii. 9, 13; Esth. vi. 8, 11; 1 Mac. x. 21, xiv. 9. It is the common word for the liturgical vestments of Aaron: Exod. xxviii. 2, xxix. 21. Trench, Syn. i.; D.B. 2 i. p. 808.

The τήν before στόλην (D² R) has been inserted because of the τήν before πρώτην, for an epithet joined to an anarthrous noun is commonly itself anarthrous. But comp. Rom. ii. 14, ix. 30; Gal. iii. 21.

δακτύλιον. Here only in N.T., but freq. in LXX and in classical writers. Comp. ἄνθρωπος δακτυλίον (Jas. ii. 2). We are probably to understand a signet-ring, which would indicate that he was a person of standing and perhaps authority in the house (Esth. iii. 10, viii. 2; Gen. xli. 42). The ὀποθήματα were marks of a freeman, for slaves went barefoot. None of the three things ordered are necessaries. The father is not merely supplying the wants of his son, who has returned in miserable and scanty clothing. He is doing him honour. The attempts to make the robe and the ring and the sandals mean distinct spiritual gifts are misapplied labour.

23. θύσιν. Not "sacrifice" (Acts xiv. 13, 18; 1 Cor. x. 20), for the context shows that there is no thought of a thank-offering but "slay" for a meal (Acts x. 13, xi. 7; Jn. x. 10): it implies rather more ceremony than the simple "kill."

τὴν μόσχον τὸν σιτεύτων. There is only one, reserved for some special occasion. But there can be no occasion better than this. Comp. i Sam. xxviii. 24; Judg. vi. 25, 28 (A); Jer. xlv. 21. With σιτεύτως comp. ἀπαλλεύτως, γνωστῶς, θεόπνευτος, χωνεύτως.

εὐφρανθόμεν. Excepting 2 Cor. ii. 2, this verb is always pass. in N.T., but with neut. meaning, "be glad, be merry" (xii. 19, xvi. 19; Acts vii. 41, etc.).

24. Note the rhythmical cadence of this refrain (24, 32), and comp. Exod. xv. 1, 21; Num. xxiii., xxiv.; 2 Sam. i. 19-27. Carmine usi veteres in magno effectu (Beng.). There is probably no difference in meaning between the two halves of the refrain; but νεκρός means "dead to me," and ἀπολλων "lost to me." Would the father speak to the servants of his son's being morally
dead? Whereas he might well speak of one who had gone away, apparently for ever, as practically dead. And if we give a moral sense to nēkrōs, why not to ἀπολωλὼς (xix. 10; [Mt. xviii. 11])?

Here the first part of the parable ends. The welcome which Jesus gave to outcasts and sinners is justified. The words καὶ ἔρξαντο εὐφραίνεσθαι should be given to ver. 25 rather than to ver. 24. An interval elapses during which the father's command is executed; and then the banquet, which is the setting of the second part of the parable, begins.

26-32. In the episode of the elder son the murmuring of the Pharisees is rebuked, and that in the gentlest manner. They are reminded that they are sons, and that to them of right belongs the first place. God and His gifts have always been accessible to them (ver. 31), and if they reject them, it is their own fault. But self-righteousness and exclusiveness are sinful, and may be as fatal as extravagance and licentiousness.

25. ἐν ἀγρῷ. Doing his duty, but in no loving spirit. This explains why he was not present when his brother returned.

συμφωνίας καὶ χορῶν. Performed by attendants, not by those at the banquet. Comp. Discumbens de die inter choros et symphonias (Suet. Calig. xxxvii.). Neither word occurs again in N.T. In LXX χορός is freq. (Exod. xv. 20, xxxii. 10; Judg. xi. 34, etc.); συμφωνία (Dan. iii. 5, 10) is a musical instrument. D.B.2 art. "Dulcimer"; Pusey, Daniel, p. 29. There were some who understood symphonia in this passage to mean a musical instrument, for Jerome (Ep. xxi.) protests against the idea. It almost certainly means a band of players or singers, and probably fluteplayers (Polyb. xxvi. 10, 5, xxxi. 4. 8). D. of Ant.2 art. Symphonia.

26. τῶν παιδῶν. Perhaps not the same as the δοῦλοι (ver. 22), who are occupied with the banquet.

Vulg. has servi for both; Cod. Vercell. has παιεῖ for both; Cod. Palat. has παιεῖ for παιδῶν and servi for δοῦλοι. No English Version distinguishes the two words, and RV. by a marginal note implies that the same Greek word is used.

τι ἀν εἶνα ταῦτα. "What all this might mean." Comp. Acts x. 17, and contrast Lk. xviii. 36, where there is no ἀν. Here N A D omit ἀν. His not going in at once and taking for granted that what his father did was right, is perhaps an indication of a wrong temper. Yet to inquire was reasonable, and there is as yet no complaint or criticism. See second small print on i. 29.

27. Ἐστι. Recitative, and to be omitted in translation: see on i. 45 and vii. 16. Not, "Because thy brother is come." There is no hint that the servant is ridiculing the father's conduct.

ὑγιεῖνοντα. Not to be taken in a moral sense, about which the servant would give no opinion, but of bodily health. The house
hold knew that the father had been anxious about his son's safety. See on vii. 10, and comp. Tob. v. 21. For ἀπελαθεν of “receiving back” comp. vi. 34.

28. ὣργίσθη δὲ καὶ οὖκ ἢθελεν. Note the characteristic δὲ καὶ here and ver. 32 (see on iii. 9), and the change of tense: the unwillingness to go in was a state which continued. Hence the father’s entreaties continue also (παρεκάλει). He treats both sons with equal tenderness: the ἐξελθὼν here is parallel to ὁρμῶν in ver. 20.

The reading ἢθελεν (A L P Q R X) arose from a wish to harmonize the tenses. The reading ὅν (P Q T Δ) instead of δὲ (N A B D L R X) is followed in Vulg. (pater ergo illius) and AV. (“therefore came his father out”): but it is a correction for the sake of smoothness. Lat. Vet. either vero or autem.

29. τοσαῦτα ἔτη δουλεύω σοι. His view of his relation to his father is a servile one. With τοσαῦτα comp. Jn. xii. 37, xxi. 11.

οὐδὲποτε ἐντολὴν σου παρηλθον. The blind self-complacency of the Pharisee, trusting in his scrupulous observance of the letter of the Law, is here clearly expressed. This sentence alone is strong evidence that the elder brother represents the Pharisees rather than the Jewish nation as a whole, which could hardly be supposed to make so demonstrably false a claim. For παρηλθον in the sense of “neglect, transgress,” see on xi. 42.

ἐμοὶ οὐδὲποτε ἐδωκας ἔριφον. The pronoun first with emphasis: “Thou never gavest me a kid,”—much less a fatted calf. He is jealous, and regards his father as utterly weak in his treatment of the prodigal; but what specially moves him is the injustice of it all. His own unflagging service and propriety have never been recognized in any way, while the spendthrift has only to show himself in order to receive a handsome recognition.

Both here and Mt. xxv. 32, B has ἔριφον for ἔριφοι. Here the diminutive has point. In LXX ἔριφοι prevails.

τοι μετὰ τῶν φίλων μου εὐφρανθά. He does not see that he is exhibiting much the same spirit as his brother. He wants to have his father’s property in order that he may enjoy himself apart from him.

30. μετὰ παρην. Contemptuous: “This precious son of yours.” He will not say “my brother.”

μετὰ παρην. This is mere conjecture, thrown out partly in contrast to μετὰ τῶν φίλων μου (who of course would be respectable), partly to make the worst of his brother’s conduct. That it shows how he would have found enjoyment, had he broken loose, is not so clear. But although there is contrast between παρην and τῶν φίλων μου, and between τὸν αὐτέου μοῦσχον and ἔριφον, there is none between ἔθυσας and ἔδωκας, as if the one implied more exertion and trouble than the other, and therefore more esteem.
There is no bitterness in this, as if to imply that a stranger had come rather than a member of the family returned. Throughout the parable the prodigal is said to "come," not to "return" (N. 20, 27; comp. 18). But there may be bitterness in ὧν τὸν βίον. As the father had freely given the younger son his share, it would more fairly have been called τὸν βίον αὐτοῦ.

31. Τέκνον. More affectionate than γεί, although the son had not said, "Father." Comp. ii. 48, xvi. 25; Mt. xxii. 28; Mk. x. 24; 2 Tim. ii. 1.

οὐ πάντοτε. In emphatic contrast to the one who has been so long absent, and perhaps in answer to his own emphatic ἤμοι (ver. 29). "What he is enjoying for this one day, thou hast always been able to command." But, like the Pharisees, this elder son had not understood or appreciated his own privileges. Moreover, like the first labourers in the vineyard, he supposed that he was being wronged because others were treated with generosity.

πάντα τὰ ἐμαυτά ὑπάρχουσα. If he wanted entertainments he could always have them; the property had been apportioned: διεῖλεν αὐτοῖς τὸν βίον (ver. 12).

Thus the first reproach is gently rebutted. So far from the elder son's service never having met with recognition, the recognition has been constant; so constant that he had failed to take note of it. The father now passes to the second reproach,—the unfair recompense given to the prodigal. It is not a question of recompense at all; it is a question of joy. Can a family do otherwise than rejoice, when a lost member is restored to it?

32. εὐφρανθήσαι δὲ καὶ χαρῆται ἐδέχθεται. Note the emphatic order. "To be merry and be glad was our bounden duty." The εὐφρανθήσαι of the external celebration, the χαρῆται of the inward feeling. The imperf. perhaps contains a gentle reproof: it was a duty which the elder son had failed to recognize.

δ ἀδελφὸς σου οὖν ὑπάρχει. The substitution of δ ἀδελφὸς σου for ὧν ὑπάρχει, and the repetition of οὖν, clearly involve a rebuke: "this thy brother, of whom thou thinkest so severely. If I have gained a son, thou hast gained a brother."

Not the least skilful touch in this exquisite parable is that it ends here. We are not told whether the elder brother at last went in and rejoiced with the rest. And we are not told how the younger one behaved afterwards. Both those events were still in the future, and both agents were left free. One purpose of the parable was to induce the Pharisees to come in and claim their share of the Father's affection and of the heavenly joy. Another was to prove to the outcasts and sinners with what generous love they had been welcomed. Marcion omitted this parable.

XVI. 1–31. On the Use of Wealth. This is taught in two parables, the Unrighteous Steward (1–8) and the Rich Man and
Lazarus (19–31). The intermediate portion is partly supplementary to the first parable (9–13), partly introductory to the second (14–18). The first is addressed to the disciples (ver. 1), but is felt by the Pharisees who heard it to apply to them (ver. 14). The second appears to be addressed directly to the Pharisees. Both of them teach that riches involve, not sin, but responsibility and peril. They are a trust rather than a possession; and the use made of wealth in this world has great influence upon one's condition in the great Hereafter. The steward seems to illustrate the case of one who by a wise use of present opportunities secures a good condition in the future; while the rich man exhibits that of one who by misuse of his advantages here ruins his happiness hereafter.

Attempts have been made to connect these two parables with the three which precede, and also with the three which follow. A connexion in fact with what precedes cannot be established. There is no clear intimation of a break, but there is intimation of a fresh start, which may or may not be upon the same occasion. But in thought a connexion may be admitted. These two parables, like the previous three, are directed against special faults of the Pharisees. The former three combated their hard exclusiveness, self-righteousness, and contempt for others. These two combat their self-indulgence. It is still harder to establish a connexion in fact between these two and the three which follow; but Edersheim thinks that the thought which binds all five together is righteousness. The five run thus: the Unrighteous Steward, the Unrighteous Owner (Dives), and the Unrighteous Judge; the Self-righteous Pharisee and the Self-righteous Servant (L. & T. ii. p. 264). Milligan gives a somewhat similar grouping (Expositor, August, 1892, p. 114).

1–8. § The Parable of the Unrighteous Steward. The difficulty of this parable is well known, and the variety of interpretations is very great. A catalogue of even the chief suggestions would serve no useful purpose: it is sufficient to state that the steward has been supposed to mean the Jewish hierarchy, the tax-collectors, Pilate, Judas, Satan, penitents, S. Paul, Christ. Here again, therefore, we have absolutely contradictory interpretations (see on xiv. 33). But the difficulty and consequent diversity of interpretation are for the most part the result of mistaken attempts to make the details of the parable mean something definite. Our Lord Himself gives the key to the meaning (ver. 9), and we need not go beyond the point to which His words plainly carry us. The steward, however wanting in fidelity and care, showed great prudence in the use which he made of present opportunities as a means of providing for the future. The believer ought to exhibit similar prudence in using material advantages in this life as a means of providing for the life to come. If Christians were as sagacious
and persevering in using wealth to promote their welfare in the
next world, as worldly men are in using it to promote their in-
terests here, the Kingdom of God would be more flourishing than
it is. We may put aside all the details of the parable as mere
setting. Every parable contains details which are not intended to
convey any lesson, although necessary to complete the picture, or
to impress it upon the memory. In this parable the proportion
of such details is larger than in others. It should, however, be
noticed that the steward provides for his future by means of goods
which are not his own, but are merely entrusted to his care. The
wealth out of which the Christian lays up treasure in heaven is in
like manner not his own, but is held in trust. The method of the
parable is very similar to that in the parable of the Unrighteous
Judge (xviii. 2). In both we have an argument à fortiori. In that
case the argument is, If an unrighteous judge will yield to the
importunity of a stranger, how much more will a righteous and
loving Father listen to the earnest prayers of His own children?
Here the argument is, If an unrighteous steward was commended
by his earthly master for his prudence in providing for his future
by a fraudulent use of what had been committed to him, how
much more will a righteous servant be commended by his heavenly
Master for providing for eternity by a good use of what has been
committed to him? But see the explanation given by Latham in
Pastor Pastorum, pp. 386-398. The literature on the subject is
voluminous and unrepaying. For all that is earlier than 1800 see
Schreiber, Historico-critica explanationum parabolae de improbo aec.
descriptio, Lips. 1803. For 1800-1879 see Meyer-Weiss, p. 515,
or Meyer, Eng. tr. p. 209.

1. Ἐλεγεν δὲ καὶ πρὸς τοὺς μαθητάς. For Ἐλεγεν δὲ of a new
start in the narrative see xviii. 1. The meaning of the καὶ is
that at this time He also said what follows, and it was addressed
to the disciples. The latter would include many more than the
Twelve. Note both δὲ καὶ (xv. 28, 32) and πρὸς.

Ἀνθρωπῶς τις ἦν πλουσίος. The rich owner is almost as
variably interpreted as the steward. The commonest explana-
tion is God; but the Romans, Mammon, and Satan have also
been suggested. Grave objections may be urged against all of
these interpretations. It is more likely that the owner has no
special meaning. We are probably to understand that he lived
in the town while the steward managed the estate. Note the τις.

οἰκονόμον. Here he is a superior person to the one mentioned
xii. 42. There the steward is a slave or freedman, left in charge
of other slaves, corresponding on the whole to the Roman dis-
pensator or villius. Here he is a freeman, having the entire
management of the estate, a procurator. Comp. Si mandandum
aliquid procuratori de agricultura aut imperandum villico est (Cic.
De Orat. i. 58. 249). But the procurator was often a slave, and perhaps in some cases was not superior to the dispensator or the villicus. See D. of Ant. i. pp. 496, 957. Vulg. has villicus here and dispensator xii. 42 (where see note) and arciarius Rom. xvi. 23.

διεξάλθη αὖτος. This use of διαβάλλειν of hostile information presumably true is not common in class. Grk. It probably implies accusing behind a person's back (Dan. iii. 8, vi. 24 (Theod.); 2 Mac. iii. 11; 4 Mac. iv. 1; Hdt. viii. 110. 1; Thuc. iii. 4. 4); but ἐν διαβάλλειν is used Num. xxii. 22 of mere hostility. Eusebius (perhaps quoting Papias) says of the woman, who may be identical with the woman taken in adultery, διαβληθεὶς ἐπὶ τοῦ κυρίου (H. E. iii. 39. 16). Vulg. here has diffamatus est; Beza, delatus est; Luther, der ward berüchtiget. The ὅς by no means implies that the charge was false (Jas. ii. 9), but is in accordance with the best authors, who use it after κατηγορεῖν as well as after διαβάλλειν. The steward does not deny the charge.

ὅς διασκορπίζων. Not quasi dissipavit (Vulg.), "that he had wasted" (AV.); but "as wasting" or "as a waster of." For τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὖτος see on viii. 3. The epithet τῶν οἰκονόμων τῆς ἀδικίας (ver. 8) does not refer to this culpable neglect and extravagance, but to the fraudulent arrangement with the creditors. Nevertheless there is no hint that his fraud was a new departure.

2. φωνήσας αὖτον. For φωνεῖν of summoning by a message comp. xix. 15; Jn. ix. 18, 24, xi. 28.

τί τοῦτο οἰκοῦν περὶ σοῦ; No emphasis on σοῖ, as if it meant "of thee among all people." The question is taken in three ways. "What? do I hear this of thee?" 2. "What is this that I hear of thee?" (RV.). 3. "Why do I hear this of thee?" Acts xiv. 15, where τί ταύτα ποιεῖτε; means, "Why do ye these things?" is in favour of the last. See Blass on Acts xiv. 15.

ἀπόδος τοῦ λόγου. "Render the (necessary) account." This is commonly understood of the final account, to prepare for the surrender of the stewardship. But it might mean the account to see whether the charge was true; and the use elsewhere in N.T. rather points to this (Mt. xii. 36; Acts xix. 40; Rom. xiv. 12; Heb. xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5). In that case the thought to be supplied is, "a steward who cannot disprove charges of this kind is an impossibility." The steward, knowing that he cannot disprove the charges, regards this demand for a reckoning as equivalent to dismissal.

With the originally Ionic form δῦνη (K B D P) contrast φάγεσαι and πιεσαι (xvii. 8).

3. εἶπεν ἐν ἑαυτῷ. Not then and there, but when he thought the matter over afterwards. Comp. vii. 39, xviii. 4; Mt. ix. 3
Note the pres. ἀφαιρεῖται, “is taking away,” i.e. what he is doing amounts to that. He does not say, “has taken away.”

σκάπτειν οὐκ ἵσχυς. “I have not strength to dig.” Comp. σκάπτειν γὰρ οὐκ ἔπισταμαι (Aristoph. Aves, 1432). Only here and xviii. 35 does ἐπαιτεῖν occur in N.T. Comp. Ps. cviii. 10; Ecclus. xl. 28. It means “to ask again and again, ask importunately,” and so “to beg for alms.” Soph. O. C. 1364. Comp. προσαυτεῖν, Jn. ix. 8.

4. ἄγνων. The asyndeton and the aor. express the suddenness of the idea: subito consilium cepit (Beng.). This aor. is sometimes called aorístus tragicus. Burton, § 45. The subject of δέχωνται is the debtors mentioned afterwards. See Blass on Acts xiii. 22.

5. χρεοφιλετών. Comp. vii. 41; Prov. xxix. 13; Job xxxi. 37. They paid in kind, and the steward had sometimes received more from them than he had put down in the accounts. This time he makes the amount paid agree with the amount entered by reducing the amount paid. He thus curries favour with the debtors, and to some extent lessens the number of his manifest defalcations. The covenants were kept by the steward; and he now hands to each debtor his written agreement,—Δέξαι σου τὰ γράμματα,—in order that the debtor may reduce the amount which he covenanted to pay. The debtor gained on this last payment. The steward gained on the previous payments.

6. βάτος. Here only in N.T. Comp. Aq. Sym. Theod. Is. v. 10 (where LXX has κεράµον), and Jos. Ant. viii. 2. 9. The bath was for liquids what the ephah was for solids. It equalled about 8½ gallons, being the μετρηθῆς of Jn. ii. 6; and 100 bath of oil would probably be worth £10. See Edersh. Hist. of J. N. p. 283, ed. 1896. For καθάρας see on xiv. 28.

7. κόρος. Here only in N. T. Comp. Lev. xxvii. 16; Num. xi. 32; Ezek. xlv. 13; Jos. Ant. xv. 9. 2. The cor or homer=10 ephahs=30 seahs or σάρα (xiii. 21; Mt. xiii. 33). It equalled about 10 bushels, and 100 cor of wheat would be worth £100 to £120. But there is very great uncertainty about the Hebrew measures, for data are vague and not always consistent. We are to understand that there were other debtors with whom the steward dealt in a similar manner; but these suffice as examples. The steward suits his terms to the individual in each case, and thus his arbitrary and unscrupulous dealing with his master’s property is exhibited. See Schanz, ad loc. Syr-Sin. omits “Take thy bill.”

Both βάτος and κόρος are instances of Hebrew words which have assumed regular Greek terminations. See Kennedy, Sources of N.T. Grk. p. 44.

8. τῶν οἰκονόμων τῆς ἀδικίας. These words are to be taken together, as τοῦ μαμώνα τῆς ἀδικίας shows. In both cases we have a characterizing genitive. Comp. κρίτης τῆς ἀδικίας (xviii. 6). Win. xxx. 9. b, p. 254, xxxiv. 3. b, p. 297; Green, p. 95.
It is grammatically possible to take τὸς ἄδικος after ἐρώτῃσθεv (4 Mac. i. 10, iv. 4); but in that case ὅτι φρονίμως ἐρώτῃσθεv would be very incongruous.

φρονίμως. "Prudently, intelligently," with a shrewd adjustment of means to ends. It is the man's prompt savoir faire that is praised. Wic. has "prudently" from prudenter (Vulg.); but all other English Versions have "wisely." Some have erroneously concluded from this that the scrutiny of the accounts ended favourably for the steward; others that, although he did not escape detection, yet he was allowed to remain steward for his shrewdness. The original charge was not disproved, and the steward was dismissed. His master saw that in spite of this he had found friends and a home, and for this commended him. Comp. Syr. Eho, queso, laudas qui heros fallunt? Chr. In loco ego vero laudo. Recte sane. Ter. Heaut. iii. 2. 26. The adv. occurs here only in N.T., but φρονίμως is common (xii. 42; Mt. vii. 24, x. 16, xxiv. 45, etc.).

ὅτι οἱ οἱ οἱ οὐκ ὁ αἰώνος τοῦ τοῦ. "He was justified in praising his shrewdness, because"; or, "I cite this example of shrewdness, because." This is the moral of the whole parable. Men of the world in their dealings with men like themselves are more prudent than the children of light are in their intercourse with one another. Worldly people are very farsighted and ready in their transactions with one another for temporal objects. The spiritually minded ought to be equally ready in making one another promote heavenly objects. "The sons of this world" occurs only here and xx. 34; but comp. Acts iv. 36; Mk. ii. 19.

ἀντίς τοὺς ἔναλλος τοῦ φωτὸς. We have νοὶ φωτὸς, Jn. xii. 36; i Thes. v. 5; and τέκνα φωτὸς, Eph. v. 8; comp. 2 Thes. ii. 3. Is the expression found earlier than N.T.? Comp. i. 78, ii. 32; and see Lk. Eph. p. 74. Comp. also Enoch cviii. 11; Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 163.

eis τὴν γενεὰν τὴν εὐαγγ. Not, "in their generation," but, "towards their own generation"; erga idem sentientes; im Verkehr mit ihres Gleich. The clause belongs to both ὅτι νοὶ τ. αἰώνος τοῦτου and τοὺς νοὶ τ. φωτὸς, not to the former only. The steward knew the men with whom he had to deal: they would see that it was to their own interest to serve him. The sons of light ought to be equally on the alert to make use of opportunities.

Vulg. has in generatione sua; but Cod. Palat. reads in sēculum istut, which respects the eis, while it misrepresents εὐαγγελίαν.

9–14. Comments respecting the Parable and its Application, which are still addressed to the disciples. To prevent possible
misunderstanding owing to the commendation of a dishonest servant, Christ here insists upon the necessity of fidelity in dealing with worldly possessions. He shows clearly that it is not the dishonesty of the steward which is commended as an example, but his prudence in using present opportunities as a means of providing for the future.

9. καὶ ἐγὼ ὑμῖν λέγω. “And I say to you,” or “I also say to you”; balancing what the master said to the steward. The disciples ought to earn similar commendation in spiritual matters.

Here, as in ii. 48 and Acts x. 26, the correct reading seems to be καὶ ἐγὼ: but almost everywhere else κἀγώ is right (xi. 9, xix. 23, xx. 3, xxii. 29, etc.). So also κἀμοι and κἀμε rather than καὶ ἐμοι and καὶ ἐμε. Greg. Proleg. p. 96.

ἐαυτοῖς ποιήσατε φίλους. The pronoun stands first with emphasis. “In your own interest make friends.” The friends are those in need, who are succoured by the benevolent use of wealth, and show their gratitude by blessing their benefactors and praying for them. The poor are the representatives of Christ (Mt. xxv. 40), and it is well worth while having them as friends. Comp. 1 Tim. vi. 10. Mammon is not personified here as it is in ver. 13. Comp. μη ἐπέχε ἐπὶ χρήμασιν ἄδικος (Ecclus. v. 8).

The word appears to mean “that which is trusted in.” Lucrum Punice mammon dicitur (Aug. De Serm. Dom. in Monte, ii. 14. 47). But although found in Punic it is of Syrian origin and was in use in the Targums. The expression occurs in the Book of Enoch: “Our souls are satisfied with the mammon of unrighteousness, but this does not prevent us from descending into the flame of the pain of Sheol” (lxiii. 10). There are rabbinical sayings which are akin to what Jesus here says: e.g. that “alms are the salt of riches,” and that “the rich help the poor in this world, but the poor heir the rich in the world to come.” See Schöttg. i. p. 299; Herzog, PRE, art. Mammon. The spelling μαμωνᾶς, with double μ, is not correct.

ίνα ὅταν ἐκλήσης δέσωνται ὑμᾶς. Here, as in xiv. 10, the ἵνα, if it expresses purpose and not result, refers to Christ’s purpose in giving this advice rather than to that of the disciples in following it. “When it shall fail” means when the wealth shall have come to an end. The subject of ἐκλήσης is ὁ μαμωνᾶς. The reading ἐκλήσητε or ἐκλήσητε would mean “when ye die” (Gen. xxv. 8, xlix. 33; Ps. civ. 29; Jer. xliii. (xlix.) 17, 22; Tobit xiv. 11; Wisd. v. 13). In either case the verb is intrans. No acc. is to be understood. Comp. Ps. Sol. iii. 16, xvii. 5.

The evidence although somewhat confused, is quite decisive for the sing. ἐκλήσης or ἐκλήσητε (A B D L R X Π etc., Syr. Boh. Arm. Aeth.) as against the plur. ἐκλήσητε or ἐκλήσητε (F R U T Λ Α etc. etc., Vulg. Goth.) Wordsw. is almost alone in defending ἐκλήσητε. Sadler represents the choice as between “ye fail” and “they fail.”

δέσωνται. This may be impersonal, like aἰτουν in xii. 20.
But possibly the φιλοί are to be understood as procuring the reception: qui eos introduciant in tabernacula extera, qui necessitatibus suis terrena bona communicaverint (Aug. Quast. Evang. ii. 34); or again, as giving them a welcome when they enter. Comp. the use of δέξεσθαι ix. 5, 48; Jn. iv. 45.

eis τῶν αἰώνιων σκηνῶν. The emphasis is on αἰώνιος, "into the eternal tabernacles," in contrast to the uncertain and transitory houses of the debtors (ver. 4). The steward secured a home for a time; but a wise use of opportunities may secure a home for eternity. In 5 Esdras ii. 11 God is represented as promising to Israel, dabo eis tabernacula extera, quae preparaveram illis (Fritzsche, p. 643). Some such idea Peter seems to have had in his mind at the Transfiguration (ix. 33). The combination of "eternal" with "tabernacles" is remarkable, because σκηναί is commonly used of dwellings which are very temporary.

10. We have here a general principle which is capable of application in a variety of spheres. The reference to the parable is less direct than in ver. 9.

ἐν ἀλαχίστῃ. "In very little" rather than "in that which is least." Comp. xix. 17. We find in Irenæus, Si in modico fideles non fuisse, quod magnum est quís dabíbit tóbís (ii. 34. 3), which is probably a loose quotation of Lk. made from memory. In the so-called 2 Ep. Clem. Rom. we have a similarly fused citation: el τὸ μικρὸν πάρεσθαι, τὸ μέγα τὰς ὑμῶν δώσει τέρμα τὸ πιστὸς ἐν ἀλαχίστῃ και ἐν πολλῷ πιστὸς ἔστων (viii.), which some suppose to have come from an apocryphal gospel, and others to be the source used by Irenæus. Comp. Hippol. Hær. x. 29, ἵνα ἐπὶ τῷ μικρῷ πιστὸς εἰρέθη καὶ τῷ μέγα πιστευθῆναι δυνηθῆς. All three are probably reminiscences of Lk. Comp. Mt. xxv. 21, 23.

11. τῷ ἀδίκῳ μαμωνᾷ. Obviously this means the same as the μαμωνᾶ τῆς ἀδίκαια, i.e. the wealth which is commonly a snare and tends to promote unrighteousness. Some, however, make τῷ ἀδίκῳ balance τῷ ἁληθινῷ, and force ἀδίκος to mean "deceitful," and so "false," wealth, which is impossible.

τῷ ἁληθινῷ. That which is a real possession, genuine wealth. We are not to supply μαμωνᾶ, which is masc. Heavenly riches would not be called "mammon." It is clear that this is parallel to πολλῷ in ver. 10, as ἀδίκῳ μαμωνᾷ to ἀλαχίστῳ, and that this genuine wealth means much the same as the "ten cities" (xix. 17). The connexion between πιστὸς and πιστεύετε, "trusty" and "entrust," is perhaps not accidental. Neither Latin nor English Versions preserve it. Cran. has the impossible rendering, "who will believe you in that which is true."

12. ἐν τῷ ἀλλοτρίῳ. Earthly wealth is not only trivial and unreal; it does not belong to us. It is ours only as a loan and a trust, which may be withdrawn at any moment. Heavenly possessions are immense, real, and eternally secure. With οὐκ ἐγενέσθε, "ye did not prove to be," comp. γεγονότεν (x. 36).
Journeyings Towards Jerusalem

XVI. 12-14.

Who will give you (in the world to come) that which is entirely your own, your inheritance, "the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world" (Mt. xxv. 34). The case sketched in these three verses (10-12) is that of a wealthy owner who educates his son for managing the estate to which he is heir, and proves his fitness for it by allowing him to have control of something that is of little value except as an instrument for forming and discerning character. If the son proves faithless in this insignificant charge, he is disinherited.

It seems to be impossible to make satisfactory sense of the notable reading τὸ ἡμέτερον, attested by B L and Origen, and to some extent by Tertullian, who has meum (Adv. Marc. iv. 33): et i l also have meum, and 157 has ἐμῶν. Almost all other witnesses (N A D P R X Γ Δ Λ Π etc., Versions, Cypr. Cyr-Alex. etc.) have τὸ ἵματερον, which, however, would be an inevitable correction, if τὸ ἡμέτερον were genuine.

18. This verse forms a natural conclusion to the comments on the parable; and, if it was uttered only once, we may believe that this is its original position, rather than in the Sermon on the Mount, where it is placed by Mt. (vi. 24). So Schanz, Weiss.

Οὐδεὶς οἰκήτης δύναται δυοί κυρίως δουλεύειν. "No domestic can be a slave to two masters": comp. Jas. iv. 4. To be a servant to two masters is possible, and is often done. But to be at the absolute disposal of two masters is not possible. The force of δουλεύειν must be preserved, and the special meaning of οἰκήτης is also worth noting.

Ἡ ἐνὸς ἀνθρώπου. The omission of the article makes very little difference: "one or other of the two." As the second clause is less strong than the first, the ἢ may be understood in the sense of "or at least he will hold on to"—so as to stand by and support.

οὐ δύνασθε. It is morally impossible, for each claims undivided service. Mammon is here personified as a deity, devotion to whom is shown in "covetousness which is idolatry" (Col. iii. 5). No vice is more exacting than avarice.


14. Ἡκοῦν δὲ ταῦτα πάντα. This shows that the occasion is the same; but the scoffs of the Pharisees diverted Christ's words from the disciples (ver. 1) to themselves. Note the πάντα.

ἱλαργυροὶ ὑπάρχουσιν. Avarice was their constant characteristic: for the verb see on viii. 41 and xxiii. 50. The adj. occurs 2 Tim. iii. 2 and nowhere else in bibl. Grk., but is quite classical. 2 Mac. x. 20 we have ἱλαργυρεῖν. The covetousness of the Pharisees is independently attested, and they regarded their
wealth as a special blessing for their carefulness in observing the Law. Hence their contempt for teaching which declared that there is danger in wealth, and that as a rule it promotes unrighteousness. They considered themselves an abiding proof of the connexion between riches and righteousness: moreover, they had their own explanation of the reason why a Rabbi who was poor declared against riches. Comp. xx. 47.

ξεμωκτηριζον. "Turned up the nose (μυκτήρ) at": xxiii. 35; Ps. ii. 4, xxxiv. 16. Here deridebant (f), inridebant (a), subsannabat (d). In class. Grk. μυκτηρίζειν is more usual: Gal. vi. 7; 2 Kings xix. 21; Pr. i. 30; Is. xxxvii. 22; Jer. xx. 7. In medical writers it means "bleed at the nose."

15. ενώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων. This is the emphatic part of the statement. The Pharisees succeeded in exhibiting themselves as righteous persons in the judgment of men; but God's judgment was very different. Comp. Mt. vi. 2, 5, 16, xxiii. 5, 6, 7, 25.

ό δὲ θεὸς γινώσκει τὰς καρδίας. The use of γινώσκειν, which commonly implies the acquisition of knowledge, rather than εἰδεναι, is remarkable. We find the same word used of Christ, even where the knowledge must have been supernatural (Jn. ii. 24, 25, x. 14, 27, xvii. 25). The exact antithesis would have been, "but before God ye cannot justify yourselves." This, however, would have implied that there were no Pharisees who were not hypocrites: that God reads their hearts is true in all cases. Comp. ο δὲ θεὸς διδασκαί εἰς καρδιάν (1 Sam. xvi. 7), and again, πάσας καρδίας ἐτάξει κύριος καὶ πάν ἐνθύμημα γινώσκει (1 Chron. xxviii. 9).

δι' τό ἐν ἀνθρώποις υψηλόν. We must understand something before δι' : "But God knoweth your hearts [and He seeth not as man seeth], because that which is exalted in the eyes of men," etc. For this use of εὖ comp. 1 Cor. xiv. 11, and perhaps Jude 1: it is clear that ἐν ἀνθρώποις ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων above. Comp. Job x. 4; 1 Sam. xvi. 7.

βδέλυγμα. Here only in N.T. in the general sense of an abomination: comp. Gen. xliii. 31, xlvi. 34. Elsewhere (Mt. xxiv. 15; Mk. xiii. 14; Rev. xvii. 4, 5, xxi. 27) of the special abominations of idolatry: comp. 1 Kings xi. 5, 33, xx. 26; 2 Kings xvi. 3, xxi. 2. The word belongs to Hellenistic Greek, and is very freq. in LXX. It meant originally that which greatly offends the nostrils, and it is very much in excess of the usual antithesis τῷ υψηλῷ, viz. ταπεινῷ. See Suicer, s.v.

16-18. The discourse has been so greatly condensed that the connecting links have been lost. It is possible that the connexion is something of this kind. "To be justified before God is all the more necessary now when the Kingdom of God among men is being founded. The Law has been superseded. Its types have been fulfilled, and its exclusiveness is abolished: everyone now can force his way to salvation. But the moral principles of the Law are imperishable;
you cannot abolish them. And thus your frequent divorces violate the spirit of
the Law.” Others regard ver. 18 as symbolical. “You and those whom you
instruct are wedded to the Divine revelation, and if you desert it for anything
else you are guilty of spiritual adultery.” But in that case what meaning can
the second clause have? How can anyone commit spiritual adultery by accept­
ing the revelation which the Jews rejected? See on ver. 18 for another attempt
at a parabolic interpretation.

16. ὁ νόμος καὶ οἱ προφηταὶ. A common expression for the
O.T. Dispensation. It may point to a time when the Hebrew
Canon consisted only of the Law and the Prophets (Mt. v. 17,
vii. 12, xxii. 40; Acts xiii. 15, xxviii. 23). See Ryle, Canon of O.T.
p. 118.

μέχρι ἱωάνου. We supply ἦσαν: “they existed and had
authority until John.”

This is the only passage in which μέχρι is found preceding a vowel; else­
where μέχρις is used (Mk. xiii. 30; Heb. xii. 4). See on ἔχρι, i. 20.

πᾶς εἰς αὐτὴν βιάζεται. “Every one forces his way into it,”—
perhaps not always in the right spirit. See Hort, Judaistic
Christianity, p. 26. The πᾶς is to be noticed: the Jew has no
longer any exclusive rights. Here βιάζεται is mid. according to
class. usage: in Mt. xi. 12 it is pass.—“the Kingdom of God is
forced, taken by storm.” Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 85.

17. Εἴκοσιτερόν. See on v. 23. The τὰ which follows it is
“But” (RV.), not “And” (AV.). Many English Versions omit
the conjunction. Facilius est autem (Vulg.).

κεφαλ. Minimae literae minimus apex, i.e. one of the little horns
(κέφαλα) or minute projections which distinguish Hebrew letters,
otherwise similar, from one another. There are several Jewish
sayings which declare that anyone who is guilty of interchanging
any of these similar letters in certain passages in O.T. will destroy
the whole world. Wetst. on Mt. v. 18; Schoettg. i. p. 29; Edersh.
L. & T: i. pp. 537, 538.

For the form κεφάλα = κεφαλα comp. ii. 13, and see WH. ii. App. p. 151.
Marcion read τῶν λόγων μου, or τῶν λόγων τοῦ Κυρίου, instead of τοῦ νόμου.
The reading has no support; and μου κεφαλ is more applicable to the written
law than to the as yet unwritten words of Christ. See Tert. Adv. Marcion,
iv. 33, and contrast Lk. xxi. 33.

πεσεῖν. “To fall to the ground” as devoid of authority:
comp. Rom. ix. 6?; 1 Cor. xiii. 8. The moral elements in the Law
are indestructible, and the Gospel confirms them by giving them a
new sanction.

18. Perhaps this introduces an example of the durability of the moral law in
spite of human evasions. Adultery remains adultery even when it has been
legalized, and legalized by men who jealously guarded every fraction of the
letter, while they flagrantly violated the spirit of the Law. “Because he hath
found some unseemly thing in her” (Deut. xxiv. 1), was interpreted with such
frivolity, that Hillel is said to have taught that a man might divorce his wife for spoiling the dinner. Comp. Mk. x. 11, 12 and Mt. v. 32 for other statements of Christ's doctrine. Mt. v. 32 states the one exception.

It is very forced to take the whole utterance as a parable. "It is spiritual adultery to cast off all the obligations of the Law; and it is also spiritual adultery to maintain all those obligations which have been rescinded by the Gospel." But this does not fit the wording; and, if it did, would it have been intelligible to those who heard it? According to this explanation the wife unlawfully put away = those elements in the Law which are eternal; and the divorced wife unlawfully married to another man = those elements of the Law which are obsolete. But in the parable (if it be a parable) we have not two women but one. It is better to take the words literally, and leave the connexion with what precedes undetermined.

19-31. § The Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus; in two scenes, one on earth (19-22) and the other in Hades (23-31). It continues the lesson respecting the right employment of earthly possessions. The unjust steward showed what good results may follow from a wise use of present advantages. The rich man shows how disastrous are the consequences of omitting to make a wise use of such things. This second parable illustrates in a marked way some of the utterances which precede it. "That which is exalted among men" describes the rich man in his luxury on earth. "An abomination in the sight of God" describes him in his misery in Hades. "It is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fail," shows that Moses and the Prophets still avail as the teachers of conduct that will lead a man to Abraham's bosom rather than to the place of torment. There is no taint of "Ebionitic heresy" in the narrative. It emphasizes the dangers of wealth; but it nowhere implies the unlawfulness of wealth. (See Milligan, A Group of Parables, in the Expositor for September 1892, p. 186.) It is not suggested that the rich man ought to have renounced his riches, but that he ought not to have found in riches his highest good. He ought to have made his earthly possessions a means of obtaining something much higher and more abiding. Out of this mammon, which in his case was unrighteous mammon, he might have made Lazarus and others his "friends," and have secured through them eternal tabernacles. His riches were "his good things," the only good things that he knew; and when he lost them he lost everything. "What doth it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his life?" There is no reason for supposing that the second half of the parable is a later addition, or that it is the only part which has a meaning. It is when both are combined that we get the main lesson,—that to possess great wealth and use it solely for oneself, without laying up treasure in heaven, is fatal.

The parable is sometimes understood quite otherwise. Lazarus is the Jewish people, ill-treated by earthly powers, such as the Romans and their underlings; and Dives and his five brothers are the Herods: (1) Herod the Great,
(2) Archelaus, (3) Philip, (4) Antipas, (5) Agrippa I., (6) Agrippa II. Father, sons, and grandsons are thus all put together as brothers for simplification. It is a natural consequence of such an interpretation as this that the parable is assumed to be the invention of a later age, and to have been wrongly attributed to Christ. It is difficult to believe that He could have wished to suggest any such meaning. Moreover, this interpretation destroys the connexion with the context.

19. "And rich is de tis h n plousios. "Now a certain man was rich" is less probable than "Now there was a certain rich man"; comp. ver. 1, xiii. 11. Note the tis.

τορφύραν και βύσσων. The former for the upper garment, the latter for the under. Both were very costly. The former means first the murex, secondly the dye made from it (1 Mac. iv. 23), and then the fabric dyed with it (Mk. xv. 17, 20). Similarly, βύσσων is first Egyptian flax, and then the fine linen made from it (Exod. xxvi. 1, 31, 36; Ezek. xvi. 10, xxvii. 7). The two words are combined Prov. xxxi. 22: comp. Rev. xviii. 12, 16. For ἐφραμινόμενος comp. xii. 19, xv. 23, 29: λαμπρῶς occurs nowhere else in bibl. Grk.

20. ὠνόματι Αδὰρος. For ὠνόματι see on v. 27: the expression is freq. in Lk. Nowhere else does Christ give a name to any character in a parable. That this signifies that the name was "written in heaven," while that of the rich man was not, is far-fetched. Tertullian urges the name as proof that the narrative is not a parable but history, and that the scene in Hades involves his doctrine that the soul is corporeal (De Animâ, vii.). It is possible that the name is a later addition to the parable, to connect it with Lazarus of Bethany. He was one who "went to them from the dead," and still they did not repent. As he was raised from the dead just about this time, so far as we can determine the chronology, there may be a reference to him. But it is more probable that the name suggests the helplessness of the beggar; and some name was needed (ver. 24). Tradition has given the name Nineuis to the rich man. The theory that the story of the raising of Lazarus has grown out of this parable is altogether arbitrary.

ἐβαλεν πρὸς τὸν πυλῶνα αὐτοῦ. Not "had been flung at his gate," as if contemptuous roughness were implied. In late Greek βάλλειν often loses the notion of violence, and means simply "lay, place": v. 37; Jn. v. 7, xii. 6, xviii. 11, xx. 25, 27, xxi. 6; Jas. iii. 3; Num. xxii. 38. By πυλῶνa is meant a large gateway or portico, whether part of the house or not (Acts x. 17, xii. 14; Mt. xxvi. 71; 2 Chron. iii. 7; Zeph. ii. 14). It indicates the grandeur of the house.

1 Jesus se serait-il abaissé à de pareilles personnalités? asks Godet, with some reason.
2 Ambrose also takes it as history: Narratio magis quam parabola videtur, quando etiam nomen exprimitur (Migne, xv. 1768).
εἰλκωμένος. The verb occurs here only in bibl. Grk., but is common in medical writers, especially in the pass., "be ulcerated."

The irregular augment, instead of the usual ἰλκωμένος, is well attested here, and perhaps arose from analogy with ἠλκω. Comp. κατεργάσατο (Rom. xvi. 18). WH. ii. App. p. 161; Greg. Proleg. p. 121. Syr-Sin. omits.

21. ἐπιθυμῶν χορτασθῆναι. This does not imply (Iren. ii. 34. 1) that his desire was not gratified. His being allowed to remain there daily, and his caring to remain there daily, rather indicates that he did get the broken meat. He shared with the dogs (Mk. vii. 28). But perhaps it does imply that what was given to him did not satisfy his hunger. Some authorities insert from xv. 16 καὶ οὐδεὶς τίδαυ αὐτῷ, et nemo illi dabat, which even as a gloss seems to be false.

The silence of Lazarus throughout the parable is very impressive. He never murmurs against God's distribution of wealth, nor against the rich man's abuse of it, in this world. And in Hades he neither exults over the change of relations between himself and Dives, nor protests against being asked to wait upon him in the place of torment, or to go errands for him to the visible world.

ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ κόνες. "Nay, even the dogs." This shows his want and his helplessness. Not only was his hunger unsatisfied, but even the dogs came and increased his misery. He was scantily clad, and his sores were not bound up; and he was unable to drive away the unclean dogs when they came to lick them. The suggestion that the dogs were kinder to him than the rich man was, is probably not intended; although the main point of vv. 20, 21 is to continue the description of Dives rather than to make a contrast to him. Here was a constant opportunity of making a good use of his wealth, and he did not avail himself of it.

ἀπέλειψαν. "Licked the surface of." Here only in bibl. Greek. The reading ἀπέλειψαν has very little authority. For ἀλλὰ καὶ comp. xii. 7, xxiv. 22.

22. This verse serves to connect the two scenes of the parable. The reversal of the positions of the two men is perhaps intimated in the fact that Lazarus dies first. The opportunity of doing good to him was lost before the rich man died, but the loss was not noticed.

ἀπενεχθῆναι αὐτῶν. "His soul was carried," a loco alieno in patriam. Clearly we are not to understand that what never happened to anyone before happened to him, and that body and soul were both translated to Hades. In saying that he died (ἀποθανεῖν) the severance of soul and body is implied. And the fact that his burial is not mentioned is no proof that it is not to be understood
Jesus would scarcely have shocked Jewish feeling by the revolting idea that close to human habitations a corpse was left unburied. In each case the feature which specially characterized the death is mentioned. See Aug. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 10. 2.

υτὸ τῶν ἄγγελων. The transition was painless and happy. A Targum on Cantic. iv. 12 says that the souls of the righteous are carried to paradise by Angels. Comp. the λειτουργία πνεύματα of Heb. i. 14 and the ἄγγελοι λειτουργοὶ of Philo. But it is no purpose of the parable to give information about the unseen world. The general principle is maintained that bliss and misery after death are determined by conduct previous to death; but the details of the picture are taken from Jewish beliefs as to the condition of souls in Sheol, and must not be understood as confirming those beliefs. The properties of bodies are attributed to souls in order to enable us to realize the picture.

εἰς τὸν κόλπον Ἄβραάμ. This is not the objective genitive, "the bosom which contained Abraham," but the subjective, "that in which Abraham received Lazarus." Comp. Mt. viii. 11. Lazarus in Sheol reposes with his head on Abraham's breast, as a child in his father's lap, and shares his happiness. Comp. Jn. i. 18. The expression is not common in Jewish writings; but Abraham is sometimes represented as welcoming the penitent into paradise. Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 280. Comp. οὕτω γὰρ παθόντας (v.l. θανόντας) ἡμᾶς Ἄβραμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακώβ ὑποδέξονται (4 Mac. xiii. 17). Such expressions as "go to one's fathers" (Gen. xv. 15), "lie with one's fathers" (Gen. xlvii. 30), "be gathered to one's fathers" (Judg. ii. 10), and "sleep with one's fathers" (1 Kings i. 21), apply to death only, and contain no clue as to the bliss or misery of the departed. "Abraham's bosom" does contain this. It is not a synonym for paradise; but to repose on Abraham's bosom is to be in paradise, for Abraham is there (Jn. viii. 56: Diptychs of the Dead in the Liturgy of S. James).

καὶ ἔταφη. It is not the contrast between the magnificence of his funeral (of which nothing is stated) and the lack of funeral for Lazarus (of which nothing is stated) that is to be marked, but the contrast between mere burial in the one case and the ministration of Angels in the other.

Some authorities seem to have omitted the καὶ before ἐν τῷ ᾠδη and to have joined these words with ἔταφη. Vulg. has et sepultus est in inferno: elevans autem oculos suos. Aug. has both arrangements. Comp. Jn. xiii. 30, 31 for a similar improbable shifting of a full stop in some texts. Other examples Greg. Proleg. p. 181.

28. καὶ ἐν τῷ ᾠδή. "In Hades," the receptacle of all the departed until the time of final judgment, and including both paradise and Gehenna. That Hades does not mean "hell" as
a place of punishment is manifest from Acts ii. 27, 31; Gen. xxxvii. 35, xlii. 38, xlv. 29; Job xiv. 13, xvii. 13, etc. That Hades includes a place of punishment is equally clear from this passage. In the Psalms of Solomon Hades is mentioned only in connexion with the idea of punishment (xiv. 6, xv. 11, xvi. 2). See Suicer, s.v.

The distinction between Hades and Gehenna is one of the many great advantages of RV. Dives "lifts up his eyes," not to look for help, but to learn the nature of his changed condition.

ὑπάρχων ἐν βασάνωι. Torment is now his habitual condition: not ὄν, but ὑπάρχων. That he is punished for his heartless neglect of great opportunities of benevolence, and not simply for being rich, is clear from the position of Abraham, who was rich. Comp. μέγας γὰρ ψυχής ἄγων καὶ κίνδυνος ἐν αἰώνιῳ βασάνῳ κείμενος τοῖς παραβασάν ῆν ἐντολήν τοῦ Θεοῦ (4 Mac. xiii. 15); and contrast δικαίων δὲ ψυχαῖς ἐν χειρὶ Θεοῦ, καὶ οὗ μὴ ἀνηταί αὐτῶν βάσανος (Wisd. iii. 1). Luxurioso careere deliciis poena est (Ambr).

ὁρᾷ Ἀβραὰμ. The Jews believed that Gehenna and paradise are close to one another: Edersh. Hist. of Jewish Nation, p. 432 ed. 1896. We need not suppose that the parable teaches us to believe this. The details of the picture cannot be insisted upon.

ἀπὸ μακρόθεν. The ἀπὸ is pleonastic, and marks a late use, when the force of the adverbial termination has become weakened: Mt. xxvii. 51; Mk. v. 6, xiv. 54, xv. 40, etc. In LXX we have ἀπὸ δισθήθεν (freq. in 1 and 2 Sam.), ἀπὸ ἐπάνωθεν, ἀπὸ πρώτῃθεν: and in Aq. ἀπὸ ἀρχῆθεν and ἀπὸ κυκλάθεν.

With κόλποι comp. ἱμάτια of a single garment (Acts xviii. 6; Jn. xiii. 4, xix. 23) and γῆμοι of a single wedding (xii. 36). We have similar plurals in late class. Grk.

24. Πάτερ Ἀβραὰμ. He appeals to their relationship, and to his fatherly compassion. Will not Abraham take pity on one of his own sons? Comp. Jn. viii. 53. Note the characteristic καὶ αὐτός (see on i. 17, v. 14). The φωνήσας implies raising his voice, in harmony with ἀπὸ μακρόθεν.

πέμψειν Λάζαρον. Not that he assumes that Lazarus is at his beck and call, although Lange thinks that this is "the finest masterstroke of the parable" that Dives unconsciously retains his arrogant attitude towards Lazarus. See also his strange explanation of the finger-drop of water (L. of C. i. p. 507). On earth Dives was not arrogant; he did not drive Lazarus from his gate; but neglectful. In Hades he is so humbled by his pain that he is willing to receive alleviation from anyone, even Lazarus.

ἐνα βάψῃ τὸ ἄκρον τοῦ δακτύλου αὐτοῦ ἑδατος. The smallest alleviation will be welcome. On earth no enjoyment was too extravagant: now the most trifling is worth imploring.
With the part. gen. ὀδοσ ἐπὶ τοῦ δάκτυλῳ τοῦ δεξιῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ θαλαύ (Lev. xiv. 16). To understand τι and make ὀδος τι nom. to βάψῃ is an improbable constr. See Win. xxx. 8, c, p. 252.

ὀδυνώμαι εὖ τῇ φλογὶ τούτῃ. "I am in anguish in this flame" of insatiable desires and of remorse: a prelude to the γέννα τοῦ πυρός (Mt. v. 22). For ὀδυνώμαι see on ii. 48.

26. Τέκνον. He does not resent the appeal to relationship: the refusal is as gentle as it is decided. The rich man cannot fail to see the reasonableness of what he experiences.

ἀπελάβες. "Thou didst receive in full." This seems to be the meaning of the ἄπο. Nothing was stored up for the future: comp. ἀπέχειν, vi. 24; Mt. vi. 2, 5, 16. Note the μνήμην. It is only in the mythological Hades that there is a river of Lethe, drowning the memory of the past. See second small print, p. 425.

τὰ ἀνάθά σου. Herein also was fatal error. He had no idea of any other good things, and he kept these to himself.

καὶ Λάξαρος ὄριοῦς τὰ κακὰ. There is no αὐτοῦ. His evil things were not his own, but he accepted them as from God, while the rich man took his good things as possessions for which he had no account to render. Comp. νν. ii, 12.

νῦν δὲ ὅσσος. Contrast of time and place: "But now here." The ὅ ὅς of TR. has scarcely any authority. The same corruption is found in Cor. iv. 2. Comp. οὐκ ἐστιν ἐν ἄνθρωπῳ τρυφήν (Ecclus. xiv. 16). There is, however, no hint that during their lives Dives had been sufficiently rewarded for any good that he had done, and Lazarus sufficiently punished for any evil that he had done. And there is also no justification of the doctrine that to each man is allotted so much pleasure and so much pain; and that those who have their full allowance of pleasure in this world cannot have any in the world to come. Abraham's reply must be considered in close relation to the rich man's request. Dives had not asked to be freed from his punishment. He accepted that as just. He had asked for a slight alleviation, and in a way which involved an interruption of the bliss of Lazarus. Abraham replies that to interfere with the lot of either is both unreasonable and impossible. Dives had unbroken luxury, and Lazarus unbroken suffering, in the other world. There can be no break in the pangs of Dives, or in the bliss of Lazarus, now. Ἀποκ. Baruch, lxxv. 9.

ὀδυνάσαι. An intermediate form between ὀδυνάσαι and ὀδυψά. Such things belong to the popular Greek of the time. Comp. καυχάσαι (Rom. ii. 17; I Cor. iv. 7), κατακαυχάσαι (Rom. xi. 18), and see on φάγεσαι and τίσαι (Lk. xvii. 8). See Expos. Times, viii. p. 239.

26. εὖ πάσι τούτοις. In his omnibus (Vulg.). The ἐπὶ (A, etc.) for εὖ (N B L) is a manifest correction. While ver. 25 shows that on equitable grounds no alleviation of the lot of Dives is admis-
sible, ver. 26 shows that the particular kind of alleviation asked for is impossible. Can it mean, "In all these regions, from end to end"? χάσμα μέγα ἐστήρικται. "Has been and remains fixed." Evidence is lacking to show that the Jews pictured the two parts of Hades as divided by a chasm. Here only in bibl. Grk. is χάσμα found: not Num. xvi. 30.

Chaos magnum firmatum est (Vulg. f), chas magnum confirmatus est (d), chaos magnus firmatus est (l). For this use of chaos comp. Postia est mithi regio cela: Possidet alter aquas, alter inane chaos (Ovid, Fast. iv. 599). Bentley conjectured chasma, the ma having been lost in magnum and chas expanded into chaos. This conjecture finds support in two MSS. of Vulg., M having chasma and Y chasmagnum. Jerome would be likely to correct chaos into chasma.

οὐχ οὖν... μὴ δύνωνται. Not, "so that they cannot" (AV.); but, "in order that they may not be able."

μὴ δέ. "Nor yet": this would be still less permissible. The ότι before ἐκείθεν is probably not genuine, but we may understand a new subject. Groups from each side are supposed to contemplate crossing; not one group to cross and recross.

27. But perhaps there is no χάσμα between paradise and the other world; and Dives makes another request, which, if less selfish than the first, is also less humble. It implies that he has scarcely had a fair chance. If God had warned him sufficiently, he would have escaped this place of torment.

28. διαμαρτύρητα αὐτοῖς. "May bear witness successfully," right through to a good issue. But the δια- need not mean more than "thoroughly, earnestly" (Acts ii. 40, viii. 25, x. 42, xviii. 5, xx. 21, 23, 24, xxiii. 11, xxvii. 23). Elsewhere in N.T. only five times, but freq. in LXX. That any five persons then living, whether Herods, or sons of Annas, or among the audience, are here alluded to, is most improbable. That the request is meant to illustrate the Pharisees' craving for signs is more possible: and the lesson that the desire to warn others from vicious courses may come too late is perhaps also included. But the simplest explanation of the request is that it prepares the way for the moral of the parable,—the duty of making use of existing opportunities.

29. ἀκουσάτωσαν αὐτῶν. Nemo cogit. Auditi fideli salvamur, non apparitionibus. Herodes, audire non cupiens, miraculum non cernit (Beng.). Wonders may impress a worldly mind for the moment; but only a will freely submitting itself to moral control can avail to change the heart.

30. οὐχί, πάτερ Ἀβραὰμ. Not, "No, they will not repent for Moses and the Prophets," which Abraham has not asserted; but, "No, that is not enough." He speaks from his own experience.

It is better to take ἀπὸ νεκρῶν with τορέων than with τίτ. Vulg. is as amphibolous as the Greek: si quis ex mortuis ierit ad eos. See on i. 8.
μετανοήσωσιν. "They will repent." Not, "they will give all to the poor," or "they will leave all and become as Lazarus." There is no hint that being rich is sinful, or that the poor are sure of salvation. In ver. 28 he did not say that wealth had ruined himself.

81. Εἰ. . . οὐκ ἄκοινωσιν. "If, as matters now stand, they are refusing to hear." We go beyond the tenour of the reply when we make it mean that "a far mightier miracle than you demand would be ineffectual for producing a far slighter effect." Does ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστηθή imply "a far mightier miracle" than ἀπὸ νεκρῶν πορευθή? And does πεισθήσονται imply "a far slighter effect" than μετανοήσωσιν? "Persuaded" obviously means "persuaded to repent"; and one who "goes from the dead" to warn the living must "rise from the dead." By this conclusion Christ once more rebukes the demand for a sign. Those who ask for it have all that they need for the ascertainment of the truth; and the sign if granted would not produce conviction. Saul was not led to repentance when he saw Samuel at Endor, nor were the Pharisees when they saw Lazarus come forth from the tomb. The Pharisees tried to put Lazarus to death and to explain away the resurrection of Jesus. For allegorical interpretations of the parable see Trench, Parables, p. 470, 10th ed.

In οὐκ ἄκοινωσιν the negative belongs to the verb so as almost to form one word, and is not influenced by the εἰ: "If they disregard." Comp. xi. 8, xii. 26, xviii. 4. The pres. indic. represents the supposition as contemporaneous. Note the change from εἰ with pres. indic. to ἐὰν with aor. subjunc. The latter is pure hypothesis.

The Idea of Hades or Sheol in the Old Testament.

It is surprising how very little advance there is in O.T., respecting conceptions of the unseen world, upon Greek mythology. It is scarcely an exaggeration to say that, until about B.C. 200, the Jewish Sheol is essentially the same in conception as the Hades of Greek poetry. There are no moral or spiritual distinctions in it. Good and bad alike are there, and are apparently much in the same condition. Moreover, there is no thought of either of them rising again. In some places, possibly, Sheol or Hades is merely a synonym for the grave or death, which receives good and bad alike, and retains them: e.g. Gen. xxxvii. 35, xiii. 38; 1 Sam. ii. 6. But in passages in which the unseen world of spirits is plainly meant, the absence of the religious element is remarkable. Nay, in one way the bad are better off than the good; for while the just have lost the joys which were the reward of their righteousness, the wicked have ceased to be troubled by the consequences of their iniquity. See Davidson on Job iii. 16–19. Sheol is a place of rest; but also of silence, gloom, and ignorance. In the only passage in which the word occurs in Ecclesiastes we are told that there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Sheol, whither thou goest (ix. 10). Those who have gone thither return no more, and none escape it (Job vii. 9, 10, x. 21, 22, xx. 9). It is a land of forgetfulness, in which there

1 Near the end of the Koran are two passages worth comparing. (Sale's Koran, chs. cii., civ.)
is no more remembrance of God or possibility of serving Him (Ps. vi. 5, xxx. 9, lxxxviii. 12; comp. Is. xxxviii. 11, 18). And it is insatiable (Prov. i. 12, xxvii. 20, xxx. 16; comp. Is. v. 14). In some Psalms there is some trace of hope for eternal life in God in the other world (xlix. 15), but not of hope for resurrection. In xvii. 15 "when I awake" probably does not mean awake from death, but from sleep. It is the daily renewal of communion with God that is desired. In Is. xxv. 8, and still more in Is. xxvi. 19, hope in a resurrection from Sheol is expressed; and in Dan. xii. 2 we reach the idea of resurrection with rewards and punishments. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 740.

Side by side with the hope of a resurrection (2 Mac. xii. 43-45, xiv. 46) comes the belief that Sheol is only an intermediate state, at any rate for the righteous (2 Mac. vii. 9, 11, 14, 36, 37; Enoch ii.); and along with the idea of a resurrection to rewards and punishments comes the idea that there is retribution in Sheol itself, and consequently a separation of the righteous from the wicked (Enoch xxii.). But the idea of rising again to be punished does not seem to have prevailed. The view rather was that only the righteous were raised, while the wicked remained for ever in Sheol (Enoch lxiii. 8-10, xcix. 11). In this way Hades becomes practically the same as Gehenna (Ps. Sol. xiv. 6, xv. 11, xvi. 2). In the parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus there is nothing to show whether Hades is intermediate or final; but the doctrine of its being a place of retribution, with a complete separation of the righteous from the wicked, could hardly be more clearly marked. In the Talmud, Sheol is identical with Gehenna, just as in popular English "hell" is always a place of punishment, and generally of final punishment. See DB.2 art. "Hell"; Herzog, PRE.2 art. Hades; Charles, Book of Enoch, p. 168.

XVII. 1-10. Four sayings of Christ. These are, The Sin of Causing Others to Sin (1, 2); The Duty of Forgiveness (3, 4); The Power of Faith (5, 6); and, The Insufficiency of Works (7-10). They have no connexion with the much longer utterances which precede them. Some of them are given by Mt. and Mk. in other positions. And the four sayings appear to be without connexion one with another. It is possible to make them into two pairs, as RV. does by its paragraphs. But the connexions between the first and second, and between the third and fourth, are too uncertain to be insisted upon.

1, 2. The Sin of Causing Others to Sin. These two verses are found in reverse order, and somewhat differently worded, Mt. xviii. 6, 7, and ver. 2 is found Mk. ix. 42.

1. ἀνέβεδεκτον. Here only in bibl. Grk., and rare elsewhere, excepting in writers who knew this passage. In xiii. 33 we have ἐνδέκται, from which this comes; and the intermediate ἐνδέκτον ἐστί is found in Apollonius. The meaning is "it is unallowable, it cannot be," οὐκ ἐνδέκται. The gen. in τού... μὴ ἔλθειν may be variously explained, but best as an expression of design, implied in what is not allowed, a construction of which Lk. is very fond: see on ii. 21. Win. xlv. 4. b, p. 408. Others refer it to the notion of hindering implied in ἀνέβεδεκτον (Burton, § 405); while Meyer makes ἀνέβ., a substantive on which the gen. depends, "There is an impossibility of offences" not coming. Here only does σκάνδαλον occur in Lk. It is a late form of σκανδάληθρον (Aristoph. Ach. 687), the "bait-stick" in a trap, and combined the ideas of ensnaring and tripping up. It is a bibl. and eccles. word, freq. in LXX.

πλὴν οὐδὲ ἀνέβεδεκτό. See on vi. 24, and comp. xxii. 22.
2. λυσιτελεῖ ἀυτῷ. "It is well for him, is worth his while": ht. "it pays the taxes (λαβεὶ τὰ τέλη), repays the outlay." Here only in N.T., but found Tobit iii. 6; Ecclus. xx. 10, 14, xxix. 14, and quite classical.

In Tertullian (Adv. Marcion. iv. 35) we have an insertion from Mt. xxvi. 24: expedisse ei, si natus non fuisset, aut si molino saxo ad collum deligato, etc. A similar mixture of texts is found in Clem. Rom. (Cor. xlv.), who has ἑατὶ τῶν εὐκλετῶν for τῶν μικρῶν τούτων ἑατὶ.

λίθος μυλικός. "A stone fit for a mill" (μυλη). Mt. xviii. 6 and Mk. ix. 42 we have μύλος δύνικός for λίθος μυλικός. Neither occurs in LXX.

cαὶ ἐφτιάτα. Mk. has βέβληται. The change from pres. to perf. is graphic: "It is good for him if a millstone is hanged about his neck and he has been hurled." As to the double pp see Greg. Proleg. p. 121.

§ The Duty of Forgiveness. Those who connect this saying with the one which precedes it, make an unforgiving spirit to be set forth as a common way of causing others to stumble. Others regard it as an a fortiori argument. If we must avoid doing evil to others, much more must we forgive the evil which they do to us. A better link is found in the severity of vv. 1 and 2, "when thou sinnest against another," and the tenderness of vv. 3 and 4, "when others sin against thee."

The δὲ, which A etc. insert after ἑατὶ, is perhaps an attempt to mark a contrast between the two sayings and thus link them. Or it may come from

ἐπτύμησον. The tenderness is not to be weakness. The fault is not to be passed over without notice (Lev. xix. 17).

4. ἐπτάκεις τῆς ἡμέρας. In Peter’s question (Mt. xviii. 21, 22) there is no τῆς ἡμέρας, which is genuine here after the first ἐπτάκεις only: and there is no μετανοῶ. See on xv. 7. The “seven times” is of course not to be taken literally. Comp. “Seven times a day do I praise thee” (Ps. cxix. 164). Unlimited forgiveness is prescribed. But too much meaning is put into λέγων, when it is explained to mean that the mere expression of repentance is to suffice. Professed repentance may be ostentatiously unreal.

5, 6. The Power of Faith. There is no sign of connexion with what precedes. The fact that we have τοῦ μαθητᾶς in ver. 1 and οἴ διάστολοι here points to different occasions. Mt. connects this saying of Christ with the Apostles’ question, “Why could not we cast it out?” (xvii. 19, 20). Mk. has a similar saying after the withering of the barren fig tree (xi. 23). Marcion omitted vv. 5-10.

5. τῷ κυρίῳ. See on v. 17 and vii. 13. The expression has point here. The Apostles ask the Lord who had given them their office to supply them with what was necessary for the discharge of that office.

Πρὸς ὅμως πᾶσιν. “Give us faith in addition: add it to the gifts already bestowed.” The “faith” here meant is faith in Christ’s promises. It is very forced to make it refer to what precedes; the faith that enables one to forgive a brother seven times in a day. Power to fulfil that duty would have been otherwise expressed. See Sanday on Rom. i. 5 and additional note pp. 31-34.

6. Εἰ ἔξητε... ἔλεγεν δὲν. Irregular sequence, which has produced the reading εἰ εἶξητε (D E G H) as a correction. In the protasis the supposition is left open: in the apodosis it is implicitly denied. See Moulton’s note 5. Win. p. 383. We have a further change of tense in ἐπὶ κωνωπίων ἐν, implying that the obedience would at once have followed the command. Comp. Xen. Anab. v. 8. 13.

ὅς κάκον συνάπεως. It is not a question of additional faith. Is there genuine faith to any extent? See on xiii. 19.

τῇ συκαμίνῳ. At the present time both the white and the black mulberry are common in Palestine; and in Greece the latter is still called συκαμίνα. It is not certain that the συκάμινος here is a different tree from the συκομορία (xix. 4). But in any case

“Two points may be urged in favour of those who identify the two trees: (1) In LXX every instance in which the Hebrew has שיקמין the Greek has συκάμινος, although the fig, and not the mulberry, is certainly intended. (2) As
both are different from the English sycomore, which is a maple. The συκάμινος is mentioned 1 Chron. xxvii. 28; 2 Chron. i. 15, ix. 27; Ps. lxxviii. 47; Is. ix. 10. In Mt. xvii. 20 we have τῷ ὅρει τοῦ, for τῇ συκάμινῳ τοῦτος, the saying being uttered just after the descent from the Mount of Transfiguration. Comp. Mt. xxi. 21. Here Christ's reply seems to indicate that it is faith in His promise that they should work miracles that is desired by the Apostles.

To treat the saying as a parable, and make the tree mean the Kingdom of God and the sea the heathen world, is fanciful.

7-10. § The Insufficiency of Works, or, the Parable of the Unprofitable Servant. The attempts to find a connexion between this and the preceding saying are forced and unsatisfactory. Obviously these four verses are not concerned with miracles, which cannot be meant by τὰ διαταχθέντα ὑμῖν (ver. 10). It is the ordinary duties of the Christian life that are meant. See the illustration in Hermas (Sim. v. 2. 1-11), and comp. Seneca, De Benef. iii. 18.

7. Τὰς δὲ ἔξ ὑμῶν. There is no need to seek for explanations as to why Jesus speaks to "the poor Apostles" as if they had slaves who ploughed for them, or to point out that Zebedee had had hired servants (Mk. i. 20). There is no evidence that these words were addressed to the Twelve; and the words almost necessarily imply that they were addressed to a mixed audience of well-to-do persons. For τὰς ἔξ ὑμῶν see on xi. 5, 6.

Εἰθέως: belongs to παρελθὼν rather than to ὅρει, as is shown by the μετὰ ταῦτα afterwards, which balances εἰθέως: "Come straightway and sit down to eat." Wic. Tyn. Cov. Cran. Rhein. RV. with Vulg. and Luth. adopt this arrangement. AV. follows Gen. with "say unto him by and by," where "by and by" has its original meaning of "immediately": AV. of xxi. 9; Mt. xiii. 21; Mk. vi. 25. Comp. "presently," Mt. xxvi. 53; 1 Sam. ii. 16 (T. L. O. Davies, Bible English, p. 109; Lit. On Revision, p. 196, 2nd ed.; Trench, On the A. V. of N.T. p. 48).

παρελθὼν ἀνάπεσε. "Come forward and sit down to meat." This use of παρέρχομαι is classical, but in N.T. is peculiar to Lk. (xii. 37). Comp. the insertion Acts xxiv. 7 and 2 Chron. xxv. 7 A.

8. 'Ετοίμασον τῷ δειπνήσῳ... διακόνει. Change from aor. to pres. "Prepare once for all... continue to serve." With τῷ δειπνήσῳ comp. Mt. x. 19: in class. Grk. we should have δι αὐτῷ, as in Acts ix. 6.

The forms φέρεσαι and πίεσαι are analogous to διδομάσαι (xvi. 25) and δίνασαι (Mt. v. 36). They belong to the popular Greek of the time, but are not quite constant; Mk. ix. 22 we have δόται. See Veitch, s.v.; Win. xv.

to the mulberry it has yet to be shown that it was then known in Palestine; and further the mulberry is more easily plucked up by the roots than any other tree of the same size in the country, and the thing is oftener done" (Grosier, Trees and Plants in the Bible, pp. 121, 123). 26
pp. 109, 110; WH. ii. p. 304. Both φάνερα and πίσεοι are found Ruth ii. 9, 14; Ezek. xii. 18.

With ἄξιον χάριν comp. 1 Tim. i. 12; 2 Tim. i. 3; Heb. xii. 28: the expression is classical. The od δοκῶ of A D, Vulg. etc. is an insertion.

10. οὐτῶς καὶ ὑμεῖς, ὅταν ποιήσητε πάντα. A purely hypothetical case. Nothing is gained by placing a full stop at ὑμεῖς. With τὰ διαταγέντα ὑμῖν comp. τὸ διαταγμένον ὑμῖν (iii. 13; Acts xxiii. 31).

ἀξιοῦν. Not "vile" as in 2 Sam. vi. 22, nor "good for nothing" as in Ep. Jer. 15, the only places in which the word occurs in LXX; but "unprofitable," because nothing has been gained by them for their master. He has got no more than his due. Comp. Mt. xxv. 30, the only other passage in N.T. in which the word is found. That God does not need man's service is not the point. Nor are the rewards which He gives in return for man's service here brought into question. The point is that man can make no just claim for having done more than was due. Miser est quem Dominus servum inutilem appellat (Mt. xxv. 30); beatus qui se ἑψε (Beng.). Syr-Sin. omits ἀξιοῦν.


11-19. Here begins the last portion of the long section (ix. 51-xix. 28), for the most part peculiar to Lk., which we have called "the Journeyings towards Jerusalem": see on ix. 51. For the third time (ix. 51, 52, xiii. 22) Lk. tells us that Jerusalem is the goal, but we have no means of knowing whether this represents the beginning of a third journey distinct from two previous journeys. Marked breaks may be made at the end of xiii. 35 and xvii. 10. But we have no data for determining what the chronology of the different divisions is; and the geography is almost as indistinct as the chronology. This last portion, however, brings us once more (x. 38) to Bethany, and to the time which preceded the triumphal entry into Jerusalem.

11-19. § The Healing of the Ten Lepers. The gratitude of the Samaritan leper illustrates the special theme of this Gospel. The opening of the narrative indicates an Aramaic source; but that it is placed here "to contrast man's thanklessness to God with the sort of claim to thanks from God, which is asserted by spiritual pride," is not probable.

11. ἐν τῷ πορεύεσθαι. "As He was on His way." See on iii. 21 and comp. ix. 51, the beginning of this main portion, where the construction is
similar. The *aivōn* is probably a gloss (om. N B L), but a correct gloss. As no one else is mentioned it is arbitrary to translate "as they were on their way." Latin texts all take it as singular: *dum iret, cum iret, dum vadit, dum iter faceret*. So also Syr-Sin., which omits *eγένετο*.

καὶ *αὐτός διήρχετο*. The apodosis of *eγένετο*: see on v. 12, 14, vi. 20; also on ii. 15. There is no emphasis on *αὐτός*.

διὰ *μέσον*. This is the reading of N B D L, accepted by Tisch. Treg. WH. and RV. It means "through what lies between," i.e., along the frontier, or simply, "between." This is the only passage in N.T. in which διὰ c. acc. has its original local significance. Even if διὰ *μέσον* were the right reading, we ought to translate it "between" and not "through the midst of." This use is found in Xenophon: διὰ *μέσον* δὲ ρεὶ τοὺων ποταμῶς (Anab. i. 4. 4), of a river flowing between two walls; and in Plato: ἃ τὸ τοῦτον δὴ διὰ *μέσον* φοµέν (Leg. vii. p. 805 D), of an intermediate course. "Through the midst of Samaria and Galilee" would imply that Jesus was moving from Jerusalem, whereas we are expressly told that He was journeying towards it. Samaria, as being on the right, would naturally be mentioned first if He was going eastward along the frontier between Samaria and Galilee possibly by the route which ends at Bethshean, near the Jordan. In order to avoid Samaritan territory (ix. 52–55), He seems to have been making for Perea, as Jews often did in going from Galilee to Jerusalem. On the frontier He would be likely to meet with a mixed company of lepers, their dreadful malady having broken down the barrier between Jew and Samaritan. See Conder, Handbk. of B. p. 311; Tristram, Bible Places, p. 222; Eastern Customs, pp. 19, 21. In the leper-houses at Jerusalem Jews and Mahometans will live together at the present time.

There is no doubt that ver. 11 forms a complete sentence. To make from καὶ *αὐτός* to Γαλαλαῖαν a parenthesis, and take *ἀπῆμησαν* as the apodosis of *eγένετο*, is quite gratuitous clumsiness.

12. ἕκα *λεπροὶ ἄνδρες*. Elsewhere we read of four (2 Kings vii. 3), but so large a company as ten was perhaps at that time unusual. Now it would be common, especially in this central region. These ten may have collected on hearing that Jesus was approaching. No meaning is to be sought in the number.

*ἔστησαν πάρροδον*. In accordance with the law, which the leper of v. 12 possibly did not break: see notes there. The precise distance to be kept was not fixed by law, but by tradition, and the statements about it vary. See Lev. xiii. 45, 46; Num. v. 2, and the evidence collected in Wetst. The adv. occurs Heb. xi. 13 and often in LXX, esp. in Isaiah (x. 3, xiii. 5, xxxiii. 13, 17, xxxix. 3, etc.). On the authority of B F, WH. adopt ἄνεστησαν in the text, with *ἔστησαν* in the margin. Lk. is very fond of this compound.
13. καὶ αὐτοὶ ἦραν φωνὴν. They took the initiative. Here ἦραν φωνὴν agrees with πόρρωθεν, just as in xvi. 24 φωνήσως agrees with ἀπὸ μακρὸθεν. Comp. ἐπαιρέειν φωνὴν (xii. 27) and ψοῦν φωνὴν (Gen. xxxix. 15, 18). This phrase occurs Acts iv. 24; Judg. xxi. 2; 1 Sam. xi. 4. For ἐπιστάτα see on v. 5.

14. καὶ ἰδὼν. “And directly He saw”: which seems to imply that, until they cried out, He had not perceived who they were. This previous supernatural knowledge was not necessary. But He knows, without seeing or hearing, that they all were cleansed (ver. 17). This knowledge was necessary.

ἐπιδείξετε ἑαυτοὺς τοῖς ἱερεῦσιν. “Show yourselves to the priests” appointed for this purpose. Each of the ten would go to the priest near his own home. In v. 14 we have τῷ ἱερεῖ, there being then only one leper. The Samaritan would go to a priest of the temple on Mount Gerizim.

ἐν τῷ ὑπάγειν. Their faith was shown in their obedience to Christ’s command, and on their way the cure took place. As they were no longer companions in misery, the Jews would rejoice that the Samaritan turned back and left them.

15. ὑπηύρεσεν. See on iv. 14 and vii. 10. Even Hahn follows Schleiermacher in referring this to the Samaritan’s return from the priest. In that case he would have inevitably returned without the others. It was because he saw (ἰδὼν) that he was healed (not after he had been declared to be clean) that he came back to give thanks. The μετὰ φωνῆς μεγάλης may mean that he still “stood afar off” (see on i. 42), as having not yet recovered the right to mix with others: for παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (see on vii. 38) need not imply close proximity. But if the loud voice be only an expression of great joy, a man in the jubilation of such a cure would not be punctilious about keeping the exact distance, especially when he knew that he was no longer a leper. It is most improbable that he did not see that he was cleansed till the priest told him that he was.

16. καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν Σαμαρείτης. Here the αὐτὸς has point: “and he was a S.” The only one who exhibited gratitude was a despised schismatic. That all the others were Jews is not implied.

17. ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ ἦν Ἰησοῦς. See small print on i. 19, p. 16. Here first we learn that Jesus was not alone; for His “answer” is addressed to the bystanders, and is a comment on the whole incident rather than a reply to the Samaritan.

Οὐχ οἱ δέκα. “Were not the ten,” etc.—all the ten who had asked Him to have mercy on them. The ποῦ with emphasis at the end, like σὺ in ver. 8. These questions imply surprise, and surprise implies limitation of knowledge (vii. 9; Mt. viii. 10; Mk. vi. 6).

18. This sentence also may be interrogative: so WH. and RV.
text. The εὐρέθησαν is not a mere substitute for ἴδον: it marks or implies the discovery or notice of the quality in question (1 Pet. ii. 22; Rev. xiv. 5).

δάλλογενής. The classical word would be δάλλόφυλος (Acts x. 28) or δάλλοεθής. But δάλλογενής is very freq. in LXX, especially of the heathen (Exod. xii. 43, xxix. 33, xxx. 33; Lev. xxii. 10, etc.).

The Samaritans were a mixed people, both as regards race and religion. They were Israelites who had been almost overwhelmed by the heathen colonists planted among them by the Assyrians. Those from Cuthah (2 Kings xvii. 24, 30) were probably the most numerous, for the Jews called the Samaritans Cuthites or Cutheans (Jos. Ant. ix. 14. 3, xi. 4. 4, 7. 2, xiii. 9. 1). These heathen immigrants brought their idolatry with them, but gradually mixed with it the worship of Jehovah. Both as regards race and religion it was the Jewish element which grew stronger, while the heathen element declined. Refugees from Judæa settled among them from time to time; but we do not hear of fresh immigrants from Assyria. The religion at last became pure monotheism, with the Pentateuch as the law of worship and of life. But in race the foreign element no doubt predominated, although Christ's use of δάλλογενής does not prove this. He may be speaking with a touch of irony: "this man, who is commonly regarded as little better than a heathen." See Schürer, Jewish People in T. of J. C. ii. 1, pp. 6–8; Edershe. Hist. of Jewish Nation, pp. 249, 486, 499, ed. 1896; Derenbourg, Hist. de la Pal. i. p. 43; Jos. Ant. xi. 8. 6, xii. 5. 5.

19. ἣ πίστις σου σέωσκέν σε. He did well to be thankful and publicly express his thankfulness; but he had contributed something himself, without which he would not have been cured. Comp. viii. 48, xviii. 42. Others refer the saying to some benefit which the Samaritan received and which the nine lost, and explain it of moral and spiritual salvation. Comp. vii. 50, viii. 48, 50.

20–37. The Coming of the Kingdom of God and of the Son of Man. The introductory verses (20–22) are peculiar to Lk. For the rest comp. Mt. xxiv. 23 ff.; Mk. xiii. 21 ff.

20. Ἐπερωτήθησες. There is no evidence that the question of the Pharisees was asked in contempt. Jesus had taught that the Kingdom was at hand, and they ask when it may be expected. Perhaps they wanted to test Him. If He fixed an early date, and at that time there were no signs of the Kingdom, they would know what to think. His reply corrects such an idea. There will be no such signs as would enable a watcher to date the arrival. A spiritual Kingdom is slow in producing conspicuous material effects; and it begins in ways that cannot be dated.

With this rather loose use of πορε for διπορε in an indirect question comp. xii. 36; Mk. xiii. 4, 33, 35; Mt. xxiv. 3. Nowhere in N.T. is διπορε found.

παρατηρήσεως. Here only in bibl. Grk. and not classical, although παρατηρῆσεων is not rare either in N.T. or LXX, and occurs in medical writers of watching the symptoms of a disease (Hobart,
p. 153). It implies close rather than sinister watching, although the latter sense occurs. See on xiv. 1. The interpretation cum multa pompa, cum regio splendore, fits neither the word nor the context. The meaning is that no close observation will be able to note the moment of its arrival, which will not be marked by external sounds.

21. οδε ἐροῦν. “Neither will they say” (with any reason): non erit quod dictatur (Grot.). In ver. 23 they do say this; but it is a groundless statement. The ιδον before τικύ (A D, Vulg.) is an insertion from ver. 23.

ιδον γάρ. See on i. 44. This ιδον introduces the true statement in contrast to the previous ιδον, which introduced a false one. The γάρ marks the reason why “Lo here” or “There” cannot be accepted. Note the solemn repetition of ἤ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ.

ἐντὸς ὑμῶν ἐστιν. Usage sanctions either translation: “within you, in your hearts” (Ps. xxxviii. 4, cviii. 22, cii. 1; Is. xvi. 11; Dan. x. 16 (Theod.); Ecclus. xix. 23 [26]: comp. Mt. xxiii. 26); or, “among you, in your midst” (Xen. Anab. i. 10. 3; Hellen. ii. 3. 19; Plat. Leg. vii. 789 A). The latter seems to suit the context better; for the Kingdom of God was not in the hearts of the Pharisees, who are the persons addressed. The meaning will then be, “so far from coming with external signs which will attract attention, the Kingdom is already in the midst of you (in the person of Christ and of His disciples), and you do not perceive it.” Note the contrast between ἐροῦν, the supposition that the Kingdom is still in the future, and ἐστιν, the fact that it is really present. But this rendering of ἐντὸς lacks confirmation in Scripture, and the context is not decisive against the other. If “within you” be adopted, the meaning will be, “Instead of being something externally visible, the Kingdom is essentially spiritual: it is in your hearts, if you possess it at all.”

All Latin texts have intra vos est. But the interpretation of “within you” varies considerably. Gregory Nyssen explains it of the image of God bestowed upon all men at their birth (De Virg. xii.; comp. De Beat. i.), which cannot be right. Cyril of Alexandria makes it mean, “lies in your power to appropriate it,” ἐν ἑαυτὰς κεῖται τὸ λαβεῖν αὐτὸν (Migne, lxxii. 841). Similarly Maldonatus, quia poterant, si vellent, Christum recipere. But this is translating ἐντὸς ὑμῶν “within you,” and interpreting “within you” as much the same as “among you.” If they had not received Christ or the Kingdom, it was not yet within them. Against “in your hearts” Maldonatus points that not only does Lk. tell us that the words were addressed to the Pharisees, in whose hearts the Kingdom was not; but that he emphasizes this by stating that the next saying was addressed to the disciples. Among moderns, Godet argues ably for “within you” (see also McClellan): Weiss and Hahn for “among you.” Syr-Sin. has “among.” Comp. x. 9, xi. 20.

22. Εἰπεν δὲ πρὸς τοὺς μαθητὰς. Apparently this is the same
occasion (comp. xii. 22); and perhaps the Pharisees have retired. But we cannot be certain of either point. Christ takes up the subject which the Pharisees had introduced, and shows that it is the Second Advent that will be accompanied by visible signs. But with regard to these, discrimination must be used. Comp. Mt. xxiv. 23, 26 and Mk. xiii. 21, to which this is partly parallel.

'Ελεύσονται ἡμέραι. No article: "Days will come"; as in v. 35, xxi. 6; Mt. ix. 15; Mk. ii. 20. Even RV. has "The days will come." Comp. the Johannean phrase, ἐρχεται ὁ χρόνος, "There cometh an hour" (Jn. iv. 21, 23, v. 25, 28, xvi. 2, 25, 32). But it is erroneous to make this passage mean the same as v. 35; Mt. ix. 15; Mk. ii. 20:—"Days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them; then will they fast in those days." This means, not that hereafter there will be a time when the disciples will long in vain for one day of such intercourse with Christ as they are constantly enjoying now; but that there will be days in which they will yearn for a foretaste of the coming glory, a glory which must be waited for and cannot be anticipated. "Oh for one day of heaven in this time of trouble!" is a futile wish, but it will be framed by some. It is clear from ver. 26 what "the days of the Son of Man" must mean. But what does μίαν τῶν ἡμερῶν, κ.τ.λ., mean? The common rendering, "one of the days," etc., makes good sense. But the possibility of taking the expression as a Hebraism, "one" being used for "first," as in μία τῶν σαββάτων (Mk. xvi. 2), is worth noting. Comp. xxiv. 1; Mt. xxviii. 1; Acts xx. 7; 1 Cor. xvi. 2; Jn. xx. 1. In this case the desire would be for "the first of the days of the Son of Man," the day of His return.

καὶ οὐκ ὅψησθε. Not because it will never come; but because it will not come in those days of longing.

23. There is no contradiction between this and ver. 21. That refers to true signs of the First Advent; this to false signs of the Second. It covers all premature announcements of the approach of the Last Day. All predictions of exact dates, and all statements as to local appearances, are to be mistrusted.

μὴ ἀπελθῆτε μηδὲ διώξητε. "Do not leave your ordinary occupation, still less go after those who offer to lead you to the place of the Son of Man's appearing."

24. Ὁσπέρ γὰρ ἡ ἄστραπη. As sudden, and as universally visible. None will foresee it, and all will see it at once; so that no report respecting it can have any value. Non ejus ergo venturi tempus aut locus potest a mortalibus observari, qui fulguris instar omnibus coruscus videlicet et repentinus adventet (Bede). See on ii. 8, xi. 46, xiii. 46 for Lk.'s fondness for cognate words. The wording here is almost identical with Mt. xxiv. 27.
The art. before ἀποδικαιοθήκηαι is probably an insertion: om. Β Λ Χ Γ. Without it translate, "when it lightens." For fulgur e has choruscatio and d has scoruscus. In what follows we again have an amphibolous expression (ix. 17, 18, 27, 57, x. 18, etc.) but ἐκ τῆς... ὑπὸ ὄφραν should be taken with λέγετε rather than with ἀποδικαιοθήκηαι. For the ellipse of χῦρα after ἡ ὑπὸ ὄφραν or ἡ ὑπὸ τὸν ὄφραν comp. Deut. xxxv. 19; Job i. 7, ii. 2, xviii. 4, xxiv. 13, xxxviii. 18, xlii. 15. The words ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ αὐτοῦ after ἀνθρώπων are of doubtful authority: om. Β Δ, a b c d e i Aeth., while I has in adventu suo (comp. Mt. xxiv. 27); om. filius hominis in die sua, ff. Syr-Sin. has "so shall be the day of the Son of Man."

25. πρῶτον δὲ δεῖ αὐτῶν... ἀποδικαιοθήκηαι. "But there is no need to be expecting this now": the events immediately impending are very different. For δεῖ see on iv. 43, and for ἀποδικαιοθήκηαι see on ix. 22, and comp. xviii. 31. Just as the thought of impending suffering needs to be cheered by that of future glory, so the thought of future glory needs to be chastened by that of impending suffering. Comp. ix. 44.

26. Having told the disciples that the Son of Man will not come as soon as they wish (22), in what way He will not come (23), in what way He will come (24), and what will happen first (25), Christ now states in what condition the human race will be when He comes.

καὶ καθὼς ἐγένετο. Not ὡσπερ, as in ver. 24. There something analogous was introduced; here something exactly similar is cited. "Just as, even as." Comp. xi. 30; Jn. iii. 14; 2 Cor. i. 5, x. 7, etc. In Attic Greek we should rather have καθό (Rom. viii. 26), καθά (Mt. xxvii. 10), or καθάπερ (Rom. xii. 4).

27. ἡσθίων, ἐπινόων, ἐγάμων, ἐγαμίζωντο. The imperfects and the asyndeton are very vivid: "They were eating, they were drinking," etc. The point is not merely that they were living their ordinary lives, but that they were wholly given up to external things.

It is of no moment whether καὶ ἤλθεν δ κατακλυσμὸς is made to depend upon ἄχρι ἡ ἡμέρας or not: probably it is independent. But certainly ὁμολογία belongs to καθὼς ἐγένετο (similiter sicut factum est, Vulg.), and not to ἀπώλεσαν πάντας (perdidit omnes pariter), which is pointless. The ὁμολογία anticipates κατὰ τὰ αὐτά in ver. 30.

28, 29. There is no parallel to this in Mt. xxiv. It is a second instance of careless enjoyment suddenly overwhelmed. Comp. 2 Pet. ii. 5, 6.

29. ἔβρεξεν πῦρ καὶ θείων. The subject of ἔβρεξεν is Κόριος, which is expressed in Gen. xix. 24 (comp. Mt. v. 45) and must be supplied here, because of ἀπώλεσαν. The verb is not impers., as in Jas. v. 17. Grotius makes πῦρ καὶ θείων the nom. and compares τὰ μὴ βρέχων λέγετο (Rev. xi. 6). Gen. xix. 24 and the sing. verb are against this. Comp. Hom. Od. xxii. 493.

30. ἀποκαλύπτεται. A technical expression in this connexion (1 Cor. i. 7; 2 Thes. i. 7; 1 Pet. i. 7, 13, iv. 13). The present
indicates the certainty of the veil being withdrawn. Up to that
day He is hidden from man's sight: then at once He is revealed.

31. In Mt. xxiv. 17, 18 and Mk. xiii. 15, 16 these words are
spoken of flight before the destruction of Jerusalem. Here flight is
neither expressed nor understood. The point is absolute indifference
to all worldly interests as the attitude of readiness for the Son of Man.
We need not discuss whether the words were spoken in a literal
sense, as in Mk. and Mt., and Lk has applied them spiritually; or
in a spiritual sense, and Mt. and Mk. have taken them literally.
Christ may have used them in both senses. The warning about
flight from Judaea is recorded by Lk. elsewhere (xxi. 21). On the
oratio variata of the constr. see Win. lxiii. 2. 1, p. 722, 723.

32. μη μονευετε της γυναικος Λωτ. Lot's wife looked back with
a wish to recover worldly possessions and enjoyments. She proved
herself to be unworthy of the salvation that was offered her. In like
manner the Christian, whose first thought at the Advent of the Son
of Man was about the safety of his goods, would be unfit for the
Kingdom of God.

Note that Christ says, "Remember," not "Behold." Nothing
that is in existence is appealed to, but only what has been told.
Attempts have been made to identify the Pillar of Salt. Josephus
believed that he had seen it (Ant. i. 11. 4). Comp. Wisd. x. 7;
Clem. Rom. Cor. xi.; Iren. iv. 31. 3; Cyr. Hier. Catech. xix. 8.

33. περιτομησαθαι. "To preserve for himself": elsewhere
"to gain for oneself" (Acts xx. 28; 1 Tim. iii. 13). The reading
σωσαι (A R) comes from ix. 24.

ζωογονησει. "Shall preserve alive": Acts vii. 19; 1 Tim. vi. 13;
Exod. i. 17; Judg. viii. 19; 1 Sam. ii. 6, xxvii. 9, 11; 1 Kings
xxi. 31. The rendering "shall bring to a new birth" has been
rightly abandoned by Godet. In bibl. Grk. it is not used of
"bringing forth alive," "viviparous." From ix. 24; Mt. x. 39,
xvi. 25; Mk. viii. 35; Jn. xii. 25 it appears that this solemn warn­
ing was often uttered for most of these passages refer to different
occasions. It is the one important saying which is in all four.

34, 35. The closest intimacy in this life is no guarantee of
community of condition when the Son of Man comes. The
strangest separations will take place between comrades, according
as one is fit to enter the Kingdom and another not.

34. ταυτη τη νυκτι. This must not be pressed to mean any­
thing, whether a time of great horror or actual night. Christ is not
intimating that His return will take place in the night-time.
"Night" is part of the picture, for it is then that people are in
bed.

δυο επι κλινης μας. "Two on one bed." Not necessarily two
men, although that is probably the meaning. AV. was the first
English Version to insert "men," and RV. retains it. The "being
taken” probably means “taken from destruction” (Jn. xiv. 3), ὃς ἄλλοτριος τῆς ὀργῆς (Eus.), as Lot from Sodom; while “left” means “left to his fate” (xiii. 35). Or, “taken into the Kingdom” and “left outside” may be the meaning.

35. This image presupposes day rather than night, and refers to a fact which is still of everyday occurrence in the East. Whether people be sleeping or working when the Lord comes, those who still cling to things earthly will be left without share in the Messianic joy. And in this matter “no man may deliver his brother”: ἔσται πλείωτη καὶ ἀκριβὴς τῶν τρόπων ἡ δοκιμασία (Cyr.).


37. Ποῦ, κύριε; The question is one of curiosity which Christ does not gratify. Moreover, it assumes, what He has just been denying, that the Second Advent will be local—limited to one quarter of the earth.

“Ὅπου τὸ σῶμα, ἐκεῖ καὶ οἱ ἄρτοι. This was perhaps a current proverb. The application is here quite general. “Where the conditions are fulfilled, there and there only will the revelation of the Son of Man take place.” Or possibly, “Where the dead body of human nature, clinging to earthly things, is, there the judgments of God will come”: ubi peccatores, ibi Dei judicia. Jesus thus sets aside all questions as to the time (ver. 20) or the place (ver. 37) of His return. One thing is certain; that all who are not ready will suffer (vv. 27, 29). Upon all who are dead to the claims of the Kingdom ruin will fall (37). The πτώμα of Mt. xxiv. 28 expresses more definitely than σῶμα that the body is a dead one: comp. Mt. xiv. 12; Mk. vi. 29, xv. 45; Rev. xi. 8, 9. But σῶμα for a dead body is quite classical, and is always so used in Homer, a living body being δέμα: comp. Acts ix. 40.

οἱ ἄρτοι. “The vultures.” Here, as in Mic. i. 16, the griffon vulture (Vultur fulvus) is probably meant: comp. Job xxxix. 27–30; Hab. i. 8; Hos. viii. 1, and see Tristram, Nat. Hist. of B. p. 172; DB. art. “Eagle.” Eagles neither fly in flocks nor feed on carrion. During the Crimean War, griffon vultures, which had previously been scarce round Sebastopol, collected in great numbers, “from the ends of the earth,” as the Turks said. In the less general interpretation of this saying of Christ the ἄρτοι are the ministers of judgment which overtake the ungodly. A reference to the eagles of the Roman standards is not in point here, although it is possible Mt. xxiv. 28. The patristic interpretation of the saints gathering round the glorified body of Christ is equally unsuitable to the context.1 See Didon, J. C. ch. ix. p. 613, ed. 1891; also Hastings, DB. i. p. 632.

1 Ὑπάν ὁ οὐδὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραγένηται, τότε δὴ πάντες οἱ ἄρτοι, τουσέστων οἱ τὰ υφηλα πετόμενοι, καὶ τῶν ἐπιγελών καὶ κοσμικῶν ἀνεννηγμένοι πραγμάτων, ἐπ'
XVIII. 1-8. § The Parable of the Unrighteous Judge. Comp. xv. 8-10, 11-32, xvi. 1-9, 19-31, xvii. 7-10. The connexion with what precedes is close, and is implied in the opening clause; for αὐτοῖς naturally refers to the same audience as before. Had there been no connexion, αὐτοῖς would have been omitted: comp. xiii. 6. Godet appeals also to the formula ἐλεγεν δὲ καί; but here the καὶ is not genuine. The connexion is, that, although the time of Christ's return to deliver His people is hidden from them, yet they must not cease to pray for deliverance. Both here and xxi. 36 we have the command to be unremitting in prayer immediately after a declaration that the hour of Christ's coming is unknown; and the same connexion is found Mk. xiii. 33. See Resch, Agrapha, p. 297.

1. Ἐλεγεν δὲ παραβολὴν. See on v. 36.

πρὸς τὸ δεῖν. Not merely the duty, but the necessity of perseverance in prayer is expressed; and prayer in general is meant, not merely prayer in reference to the Second Advent and the troubles which precede it. Only here and ver. 9 is the meaning of a parable put as the preface to it; and in each case it is given as the Evangelist's preface, not as Christ's.

πάντοτε προσεύχεσθαι. Comp. πάντοτε καίρετε. ἀδιαλείπτως προσεύχεσθε (1 Thes. v. 17). Grotius quotes Proclus ad Timmum, χρή ἀδιαλείπτως εὐγενεῖσθαι τῆς περί τὸ θείον βρογκείας. See Origen, περί εὐρήκας, xii.; Tert. De Orat. xxix.; Lft. Epp. p. 81. On the other hand, we have the Jewish doctrine that God must not be wearied with incessant prayer. Tanchuma, fol. 15. 3. A man ought not to pray more than three times a day. Hourly prayers are forbidden. Si quis singulis horis ad te salutandum accedit, hunc diet's te contem­tui habere: idem ergo quoque valeti de Deo, quem nemo hominum singulis horis defatigare debet (Schoettgen, i. 305).

The form ἐγκακεῖν is right here, and perhaps Gal. vi. 9; Eph. iii. 13; 2 Thes. iii. 13; ἐγκακεῖν, 2 Cor. iv. 16; but in all six places some texts have ἐκκακεῖν. See Gregory, Proleg, p. 78. Ellicott makes ἐγκακεῖν mean "to lose heart in a course of action," and ἐκκακεῖν "to retire through fear out of it"; but authority for any such word as ἐκκακεῖν seems to be wanting. Perhaps ἐγκακεῖν is not found earlier than Polybius. See Suicer.

2. Κρίτης τις ἦν ἐν τινὶ πόλει. We are probably to understand a Gentile official. He had no respect for either the vox Dei or the vox populi, consciously (ver. 4) defying Divine commands and public opinion. See numerous parallels in Wetst., and contrast 2 Cor. viii. 21. The Talmud speaks of frequent oppression and venality on the part of Gentile magistrates; and for a striking illustration of the parable witnessed by himself see Tristram, Eastern Customs in Bible Lands, p. 228. Note the τις.

The idea of ἐπιτρέπωμαι seems to be that of "turning towards" a person, and so "paying respect" (xx. 13; Mt. xxi. 37; Mk. xii. 6; 2 Thes. iii. 14; Heb. xii. 9). But as ἐπιτρέπω means "I put to shame" (1 Cor. iv. 14), ἐπιτρέπωμαι may possibly have the notion of "being abashed, having a feeling of awe," before a person. In class. Grk. it is commonly followed by a gen.

3. χήρα δὲ ἤν. Typical of defencelessness: she had neither a protector to coerce, nor money to bribe the unrighteous magistrate. The O.T. abounds in denunciations of those who oppress widows: Exod. xxii. 22; Deut. x. 18, xxiv. 17, xxvii. 19; Job xxii. 9, xxiv. 3; Jer. xxii. 3; Ezek. xxii. 7, etc. Comp. Non, ita me ditti ament, auderet facere hanc viduae mulieri, quae in me factit (Ter. Hœaut. v. 1. 80).

ἡρέτευο. "Continued coming, came often," ventitabat. The imperf. indicates her persistence.

'Εκδικησόν με ἀπό. "Give me a sentence of protection from; vindicate my right (and so protect me) from." Asser me jure dicundo ab injurîa adversarii mei (Schleusn.). For the ἀπό comp. xii. 15, 58, xiii. 16, xx. 46: it does not express the penalty exacted from the adversary, but the protection afforded from him, as in ῥόσας Ἰμας ἀπὸ τοῦ ποιητοῦ. The meaning is "preserve me against his attacks" rather than "deliver me out of his power," which would require ἔκ. For ἀντίδικος comp. xii. 58; Mt. v. 25.

As often, the ἀπό follows up the idea suggested by the ἔκ in the compound verb: see on ἐκέρχομαι ἀπό (iv. 35), and comp. also ἐκλέγομαι ἀπό (vi. 13), ἐκτήτω ἀπό (xi. 50, 51), ἐκθέσω ἀπό (Joel ii. 20; Dan. iv. 22, 29, 30, Theod.), etc. Here d has devindica me ab.

4. οὐκ ἦθελεν. The imperf. (v A B D L Q R X A) has more point than the aor. (E etc.): he continued refusing, just as she continued coming. With ἔπι χρόνον comp. ἔπι πλείων χρ. (Acts xviii. 20); ἐφ' ἄυνυ χρ. (Rom. vii. 1; 1 Cor. vii. 39; Gal. iv. 1).

Εἰ καὶ τῶν Θεῶν οὐ φοβοῦμαι. "Although I fear not God," implying that this is the actual fact (2 Cor. xii. 11), whereas καὶ ἐλ would have put it as an hypothesis (1 Cor. viii. 5; 1 Pet. iii. 1). Win. liii. 7. b, p. 554.

Perhaps its being given as a fact explains the use of οὐδὲ rather than καὶ: or the οὐ δεισεῖς with the verb, and thus escapes the influence of the ei': comp. xi. 9, xiv. 26, xvi. 11, 12, 31; 2 Cor. xii. 11. Burton, §§ 284, 469. But see Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 184.

οὐδὲ. "Nor yet, nor even": a climax.

5. διὰ γε τὸ παρέχειν μοι κόπον. "Yet because she troubleth me." Comp. διὰ γε τὴν ἀναίδιαν αὐτοῦ (xi. 8), where, as here, ei kai is followed by οὐ and γε. Both κόπον and ὑπωπτιάζῃ are strong words, and express the man's impatience.

On the reading τὴν χήρα ταὐτὴν see Gregory, Prolegom. p. 58.

εἰς τέλος ἐρχομένη ὑπωπτιάζῃ με. "Unto the end, to the utter-
most “easily passed in meaning to either “continually” or “at last”; and either of these makes sense here, according as we join eis τέλος with the participle or the verb or both. Either, “by continually coming wear me out”; or, “at last by her coming wear me out”; or, “be for ever coming and plaguing me.” The first is best: it was her perpetual coming that was so trying. Both τέλος and eis τέλος are frequent in class. Grk. In LXX eis τέλος is frequent.

υπωπιὰδη. From ὑπώπτον, which means (1) the part of the face below the eyes; (2) a blow there, a black eye; (3) any blow. Hence υπωπιὰδω means (1) hit under the eye, give a black eye; (2) beat black and blue; (3) mortify, annoy greatly (1 Cor. ix. 27). Comp. αἱ πόλεις υπωπιασμέναι (Aristoph. Pax, 541). There is no doubt that “annoy greatly” is the meaning here. Comp. Qui me sequatur quaquo eam, rogitando obtundat, enecet (Ter. Eun. iii. 5. 6). Meyer, Godet, Weiss and others advocate the literal meaning, and regard it as a mauvaise plaisanterie or an exaggeration on the part of the judge. But, as Field points out (Otium Norvic. iii. p. 52), the tenses are fatal to it. “Lest at last she come and black my eyes for me” would require ἐλθοῦσα ὑπωπιάδη. The judge was afraid of being annoyed continually, not of being assaulted once.

The Latin Versions vary much in their rendering both of eis τέλος and of υπωπιὰδη: in novissimo (Vulg.), in novissimo die (q), in tempus (d), usque ad finem (e), usque quaque (l), in finem (r); sugzillet (Vulg.), constringat (b sqq), molestior sit mihi (e), invidiae mihi faciat (l).

Strauss has pointed out similarities of feature between the parables of the Rich Fool, the Friend at Midnight, and the Unrighteous Judge, especially with regard to the soliloquies in each case: διελογιζετο ἐν αὐτῷ λέγων Τι ποιήσω, ὁτι κ.τ.λ., τοῦτο ποιήσω (xii. 17, 18); εἰπεν δὲ ἐν ἐαυτῷ ὁ οἰκονόμος Τι ποιήσω, ὁτι κ.τ.λ., ἐγὼν τι ποιήσω (xvi. 3, 4); εἰπεν ἐν ἐαυτῷ (xviii. 4), One may admit that these are “signs of a common origin,” but that they are also “signs of a Jewish-Christian, or indeed of an Ebionite source,” is not so evident. He says that this “mimic” repetition, “What shall I do? . . . This will I do,” is thoroughly Jewish. But as Christ was a Jew, speaking to Jews, there is nothing surprising in that. He says also that the Ebionites laid great stress on prayer, and inculcated a contempt for riches; and that two of the three parables do the one, while the third does the other. But assuredly the Ebionites were not peculiar in advocating prayer, nor in despising riches, although in the latter point they went to fanatical excess. See Strauss, L. J. § 41, p. 257, ed. 1864.

6. Εἴπεν δὲ ὁ κύριος. The insertion indicates a pause, during which the audience consider the parable, after which Jesus makes a comment and draws the moral of the narrative. For ὁ κύριος of Christ see on v. 17 and vii. 13; and for ὁ κρῖτις τῆς ἀδικίας see on xvi. 8.

7. οὐ μὴ ποιήσῃ. This intensive form of the simple negative may be used in questions as well as in statements, and expresses the confidence with which an affirmative answer is expected: comp. Jn. xviii. 11. Rev. xv. 4 is not quite parallel. The argu-
ment here is à fortiori, or (as Augustine, *Quæst. Evang.* ii. 45) ex dissimilitudine, and has many points. If an unjust judge would yield to the importunity of an unknown widow, who came and spoke to him at intervals, how much more will a just God be ready to reward the perseverance of His own elect, who cry to Him day and night? Comp. the very similar passage Ecclus. xxxv. 13–18 [xxxii. 18–22], and the similar argument Lk. xi. 13. The treatment of the Syrophoenician woman (Mt. xv. 22–28) is an illustration of the text. With τῶν βοῶντων αὐτῷ comp. the souls of the saints under the altar (Rev. vi. 9–11). In both cases it is deliverance from oppression that is prayed for.

καὶ μακροθυμεῖ ἐπ’ αὐτοῖς. “And He is long-suffering over them” (RV.). This, and not μακροθυμῶ (E), is the reading of almost all uncials and of other important authorities: *et patiens est in illis* (d e), *et patientiam habebit in illis* (Vulg.).

The exact meaning of the different parts of the clause cannot be determined with certainty; but the general sense is clear enough, viz. that, however long the answer to prayer may seem to be delayed, constant faithful prayer always is answered.

The chief points of doubt are (1) the construction of καὶ μακροθυμεῖ, (2) the meaning of μακροθυμεῖ, (3) the meaning of ἐπ’ αὐτοῖς. (1) We need not join καὶ μακροθυμεῖ to ὁ μὴ πυθομένη, but may take it with τῶν βωῶντων, which is equivalent to ὁ βωῶν ὁ ἐκλεκτὸς, the elect cry and He μακροθυμεῖ ἐπ’ αὐτοῖς. (2) We need not give μακροθυμεῖ its very common meaning of “is slow to anger”; it sometimes means “to be slow, be backward, tarry,” and is almost synonymous with βραδὺν. Comp. Heb. vi. 15; James v. 7; Job vii. 16; Jer. xv. 15; and the remarkably parallel passage Ecclus. xxxv. [xxxii.] 22, καὶ δὸ Κύριος οὗ ὁ βραδὺς ὁ μή μακροθυμησει ἐπ’ αὑτοῖς. So also μακροθυμῆσαι may mean “slow persistency” as well as “slowness to anger.” Comp. 1 Mac. viii. 4, and see Trench, *Syn.* liii. (3) This being so, there is no need to make ἐπ’ αὑτοῖς refer to the enemies of the elect, although such loose wording is not impossible, especially if Lk. had the passage in Ecclus. in his mind. The words naturally, and in strict grammar necessarily, refer to the elect, and indicate the persons in respect of whom the slowness of action takes place. Comp. μακροθυμῶν ἐπ’ αὑτῷ (James v. 7). The meaning, then, seems to be, “And shall not God deliver His elect who cry day and night to Him, while He is slow to act for them?” That is, to them in their need the μακροθυμησα of God seems to be βραδύτης (Rev. vi. 10), just as it does to the ungodly, when they see no judgment overtaking them (2 Pet. iii. 1–10). But it is possible that μακροθυμεῖ means “is not impatient.” The unjust judge heard the widow’s frequent request with impatience and dislike. God listens to the ceaseless crying of His saints with willingness and pleasure. In this sense μακροθυμεῖν is the opposite of ἑξετυμοῖν, “to be quick-tempered.”

8. ἐν τάχει. “Quickly, without delay”; *celeriter* (a), *confestim* (d), *citto* (Vulg.). Although He bears long, and to those who are suffering seems to delay, yet He really acts speedily. This interpretation is confirmed by Acts xii. 7, xxii. 18, xxv. 4; Rom. xvi. 20; 1 Tim. iii. 14; Rev. i. 1, xxii. 6. Others prefer *repente, inopinato*. Thus Godet says, that although God delays to act, yet,
when the moment comes, He acts swiftly, as at the Deluge and the destruction of Sodom. So Didon, l'heure sonnée, la vengeance sera foudroyante (J. C. ch. ix. p. 614). In any case, the ἐν τὰξεῖ is placed last with emphasis.

πλὴρ. "Howbeit (certain as the Messiah's deliverance of His people is, a sorrowful question arises) the Son of Man, when He is come, will He find faith on the earth?" The πλὴρ is not im Üebrigen (Weiss), nor seulement (Godet), but doch (Luther), cependant (Lasserre). Latin Versions have verum (d), tamen (b 1 q), or veruntamen (Vulg.). Note the emphatic order, both διὸ τῶν ἀνθ. and ἰδιθαν being placed before the interrogative particle. Yet Syr-Sin. has, "Shall the Son of man come and find."

Only here and Gal. ii. 17 (where some prefer δῶρα) is δῶρα found in N.T. In LXX it is always followed by γε (Gen. xviii. 13; xxvi. 9, xxxvii. 10; Ier. iv. 10), but without γε it is freq. in Sym. Latin Versions have numquid (b 1 q) or putas (Vulg.). See Blass on Acts viii. 39.

τὴν πίστιν. "The necessary faith, the faith in question, faith in Jesus as the Messiah and Saviour." Others prefer "the faith which perseveres in prayer," or again "loyalty to Himself," which is much the same as faith in Christ. The answer to this desponding question, which seems, but only 'Seems, " to call in question the success of our Lord's whole mediatorial work," has been given by anticipation xvii. 26: the majority, not only of mankind but of Christians, will be absorbed in worldly pursuits, and only a few will "endure to the end" (Mt. xxiv. 12, 13). No doubt is expressed or implied as to the coming of the Son of Man, but only as to what He will find.

There is therefore no reason for conjecturing that the parable received its present form at a time when belief in the Second Advent was waning. Still less reason is there for interpreting it of the Christian Church seeking help from pagan magistrates against Jewish persecutors, and then concluding that it must have been composed after the time of S. Luke (De Wette). On the other hand, Hilgenfeld sees in the thirst for vengeance, which (he thinks) inspires the parable, evidence of its being one of the oldest portions of the Third Gospel.

9-14. § The Parable of the Pharisee and the Publican. This has no connexion either with the parable which precedes it or with the narrative which follows it. The two parables were evidently spoken on different occasions and addressed to different audiences, the first to the disciples on a specified occasion, the second to the persons described in ver. 9 on some occasion not specified. They are placed in juxtaposition, probably because tradition assigned them to the same portion of Christ's ministry (Hahn); or possibly because they both (but in very different ways) treat of prayer (Keil). That Lk. brackets the two parables for
some reason is shown by the *kaî*. But note the *δὲ* also, and see on iii. 9.

The *kaî* is genuine (*B D L M Q R X Δ*, Vulg.) although A etc. with several Versions omit.

9. As in ver. 1, this preface to the parable is the Evangelist's: *εἶπεν* *δὲ* *καî*. *εἶπεν* *πρὸς* and *εἶπεν* *παράβολήν* are all marks of his style. It is possible to take *πρὸς* here as meaning "with a view to," as in ver. 1, or "against," as in xx. 19. But it is much more likely that it means "unto" after *εἶπεν*, because (1) this construction is specially common in Lk. and (2) we here have persons and not the substantial infinitive after *πρὸς*: *διίστη αυτον et ad quasdam qui* (Vulg.). Syr-Sin. has "against."

*tou̇s* *πεποιθώτας* *εἶπ̄* *ἐαυτοῖς* δτ. They themselves were the foundation on which their confidence was built: xi. 22; 2 Cor. i. 9; Heb. ii. 13; Deut. xxviii. 52; 2 Sam. xxii. 3; Is. viii. 17, xii. 2, etc. The constructions *ἐν τινι*, *ἐπὶ τινα*, and *εἰς τινα* are less common. Grotius and others render δτ. "because," making the righteousness a fact and the ground of their self-confidence; which is incredible. Comp. Prov. xxx. 12; Is. lxv. 5. The Talmud inveighs against the Pharisaism of those "who implore you to mention some more duties which they might perform."

*ἐξουθενώντας*. A strong word, common to Lk. and Paul: "utterly despised, treated as of no account," xxiii. 11; Acts iv. 11; Rom. xiv. 3, 10. Comp. *P. Sol.* ii. 5.

*tou̇s* *λοιποῦ*. "The rest, *all* others" (RV.): comp. *ὁ λοιπον* (ver. 11). The "other" of AV. and most English Versions has been silently altered into "others" by the printers: "other" means "other folk," but *tou̇s* *λοιποῦ* means "all other folk."

10. *ἀνεβησαν*. "They went up" from the lower city to Mount Moriah, the "Hill of the House," on which the temple stood. We are probably to understand one of the usual hours of prayer (i. 10; Acts ii. 15, iii. 1, x. 9).

11. *σταθείς*. This perhaps indicates the conscious adopting of an attitude or of a conspicuous place: *debout et la tête haute* (Lasserre); *après s'être placé en évidence* (Reuss); *in loco conspicuo instar stature stans erectus* (Valck.). Contrast ver. 13 and comp. ver. 40, xix. 8; Acts ii. 14, xvii. 22, xxvii. 21. The expression is peculiar to Lk. Standing was the common posture at prayer among the Jews (1 Sam. i. 26; 1 Kings viii. 14, 22; Mt. vi. 5; Mk. xi. 25). See Lightfoot on Mt. vi. 5.

*πρὸς* *ἐαυτόν*. These words probably follow *ταῦτα* (B L, Vulg. Boh. Arm. Orig.); but, even if they precede, they must be taken with *προσηχετο* (comp. 2 Mac. xi. 13): *intra se precabatur (e)*, *apud se orabat* (Vulg.). This use of *πρὸς* *ἐαυτόν* is classical. "Standing by himself" would be *καθ' ἑαυτόν*, *seorsum*, which D here reads: comp. Acts xxviii. 16; Jas. ii. 17. The char-
acter of his prayer shows why he would not utter it so that others could hear.

eὐχαριστῶ σοι. There is no prayer, even in form; he asks God for nothing, being thoroughly satisfied with his present condition. And only in form is this utterance a thanksgiving; it is self-congratulation. He glances at God, but contemplates himself. Indeed he almost pities God, who but for himself would be destitute of faithful servants.

οἱ λοιποὶ τῶν ἰδρώπων. "The rest of men" (RV.), "all other men," ceteri hominum (Vulg.). He is in a class by himself; every one else in a very inferior class. For other vainglorious thanksgivings used by Jews see Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 297. Contrast S. Paul's declaration 1 Cor. xv. 9, 10, and see Schoettgen, i. p. 306. Noli in precibus bona tua enumerare.

ἀρπαγεῖς, ἀδικοὶ, μοιχοὶ. Gratias agit, non quia bonus, sed quia solus; non tam de bonis quae habet, quam de malis quae in aliis videt (Bernard, De Grad. Humil. v. 17). But there is no hint that he was lying in acquitting himself of gross and flagrant crimes. Such falsehood in a silent address to God is scarcely intelligible. His error lay in supposing that all other men were guilty of these things, and that he himself was not guilty of sins that were as bad or worse. Hillel had taught, "Endeavour not to be better than the community, and trust not in thyself until the day of thy death." The ὅστος is contemptuous, as often. The τελώνης is pointed out to the Almighty as a specimen of οἱ λοιποὶ τ. ἰδρώπων.

12. He cites these good works as instances of the ways in which he is still further superior to other men. He is superior not only in what he avoids, but in what he performs. Characteristically he names just those things on which Pharisees prided themselves (Mt. ix. 14, xxiii. 23).

διὰ τοῦ σαββάτου. Mondays and Thursdays. Moses was supposed to have ascended the mount on the fifth day, and to have come down on the second. For the sing. of σαββάτον in the sense of "a week" comp. Mk. xvi. 9; 1 Cor. xvi. 2. It is amazing that any should have taken this as meaning "I fast twice on the sabbath," which would be unintelligible. The jejunus bis in sabbato of the Vulg. might mislead those who knew no Greek. The frequent statement that the Pharisees observed the second and fifth days as fasts all through the year (D.B. i. 2. p. 1054), and held that this was enjoined by the oral Law, is without foundation: and those who make it are inconsistent in saying that this Pharisee boasts of works of supererogation. In that case he merely states that he keeps the Law in its entirety. The Mosaic Law enjoins only one fast in the year, the Day of Atonement. Other annual fasts were gradually established in memory of national calamities (Zech. viii. 19). Occasional fasts were from time to time ordered
in seasons of drought and other public calamities, and these additional fasts were always held on Mondays and Thursdays. Thus, a five days' fast would not last from Monday to Friday inclusive, but would be held on all Mondays and Thursdays until the five days were made up (see the Didache, viii. 1; Apost. Const. vii. 23. 1). But many individuals imposed extra fasts on themselves, and there were some who fasted on Mondays and Thursdays all the year round. Such cases would be commonest among the Pharisees, and the Pharisee in the parable is one of them: but there is no evidence that all Pharisees adopted this practice or tried to make it a general obligation (Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. II. ii. p. 118; Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 291; Wetstein and Lightfoot, ad loc.). The man, therefore, is boasting of a work of supererogation.

What is told us about Jewish fasting in the N.T. (v. 33; Mt vi. 16, ix. 14; Mk. ii. 18; Acts xxvii. 9) is confirmed by the Mishna. Note that the Pharisee has dropped even the form of thanksgiving.

With δις τοῦ σαββάτου comp. ἐπάκοις τῆς ἡμέρας (xvii. 4). The genitives in xxiv. 1; Mt. ii. 14, xxv. 6, xxviii. 13; Gal. vi. 17 are not parallel.

ἀποδεκατεύω πάντα. Here again, in paying tithe of everything, he seems to boast of doing more than the Law required. Tithe was due (Num. xviii. 21; Deut. xiv. 22), but not of small garden herbs (Mt. xxiii. 23). There is something for which God owes thanks to him.

The rare form ἀποδεκατεύω is found in B Η* here in place of the not very common ἀποδεκατῶ or ἀποδεκατώ. WH. ii. App. p. 171. The simple δεκατεύω is more usual.

διὰ κτῶμαι. “All that I get” (RV.): quæcunque acquiror (i q), quae acquiror (d). It was on what he acquired, not on what he possessed, that he paid tithe; on his income, not on his capital. All English Versions prior to RV. go wrong here with Vulg. (quæ possideo), Luth. (das ich habe), and Beza. “Possess” would be κέκτημαι. There is a similar error xxi. 19. Excepting Mt. x. 9 and 1 Thes. iv. 4, the verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts i. 18, vii. 20, xxii. 28): it is freq. in LXX.

18. μακροδεήν ἐστώς. Far from the Pharisee: nothing else is indicated. In his self-depreciation he thinks himself unworthy to come near in worship to one who must be a favoured servant of God. But we need not suppose that he remained in the Court of the Gentiles (Grot.), in which case the Pharisee in the Court of Israel would hardly have seen him. Comp. xxiii. 49. The change from σταθείς (ver. 11) to ἐστώς perhaps implies less of a set, prominent position in this case. Vulg. has stans in both places; but Cyprian has cum statisset for σταθείς and stabat et for ἐστώς (De Dom. Orat. vi.). Comp. Tac. Hist. iv. 72. 4.

οὐκ θέλειν σοοβε τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς ἐπάραι. The common explana-
tion, "would not lift up even his eyes," much less his hands and his face (1 Tim. ii. 8; 1 Kings viii. 22; Ps. xxviii. 2, lxiii. 4, cxxxiv. 2), does not seem to be satisfactory. The οὐδὲ strengthens the previous οὐκ and need not be taken exclusively with τοῦς ὄφθαλμοὺς: "would not even lift up his eyes to heaven," much less adopt any confident or familiar attitude towards God. See Maldonatus, ad loc. Some Rabbis taught that it was necessary to keep the eyes down or to close them in praying (Schöttgen, i. p. 307).

ἐτυπτε. "He continued to smite"; tundebat (d), percutiebat (Vulg.). Comp. viii. 52, xxiii. 48. Om. εἰς after ἐτυπτε κ Β D.

οὖσαντι μοι τῷ ἀμαρτωλῷ. "Be merciful (Dan. ix. 19) to me the sinner." He also places himself in a class by himself; but he makes no comparisons. Consciousness of his own sin is supreme; de nemine alicio homine cogitat (Beng.). For similar self-accusation comp. Ps. xxv. 11, xl. 12, li. 3; Ezra ix. 6; Dan. ix. 8; 1 Tim. i. 15. The verb occurs elsewhere in N.T. only Heb. ii. 17, with acc. of the sin. In LXX it is not common. Ps. lxiv. 3, with acc. of the sin. Ps. xxiv. 11, lxvii. 38, lxxviii. 9, with dat. of the sin. 2 Kings v. 18, with dat. of the person, as here. The compound εὐδακ-κομαί is the more usual word. The classical construction with acc. of the person propitiatus is not found in bibl. Grk., because the idea of "propitiating God" is not to be encouraged. "The 'propitiation' acts on that which alienates God and not on God, whose love is unchanged throughout" (Wscott. on Heb. ii. 17, and Additional Note on 1 Jn. ii. 2, Ἐπφ. of S. John, p. 83).

The Latin Versions have propitiare (c ff 1), repropitiare (b), miserare (d), propitius esto (Vulg.). See Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 52.

14. λέγω ὅμων. As often, this formula introduces an important declaration uttered with authority (vii. 26, 28, ix. 27, x. 12, 24, xi. 9, 51, xii. 4, 5, 8, 27, 37, 44, 51, xiii. 3, etc.). Here Christ once more claims to know the secrets both of man's heart and of God's judgments.

κατέβη οὗτος δεδικαιωμένος. The pronoun perhaps looks back to the contemptuous οὗτος in ver. 11. "This despised man went down justified in the sight of God," i.e. "accounted as righteous, accepted." Comp. vii. 35, x. 29, xvi. 15; Is. l. 8, liii. 11; Job xxxiii. 32. The Talmud says, "So long as the temple stood, no Israelite was in distress; for as often as he came to it full of sin and offered sacrifice, then his sin was forgiven and he departed a just man" (Schöttgen, i. p. 308).

πάρ' ἐκείνῳ. The expression is one of comparison, and of itself does not exclude the possibility of the Pharisee being justified in some smaller degree. Comp. xiii. 2, 4. But the context perhaps excludes it. Thus Tertullian (Adv. Marcion. iv. 36), ideoque
alterum reprobatum, alterum justificantum. Also Euthym. (ad loc.), δικαιωσεις μονον εαυτον κατευκισθη παρα Θεοι, δε κατευκισθας μονον εαυτον εδικαιωθη παρα Θεοι. Aug., however, points out that the Scripture does not say that the Pharisee was condemned (Ep. xxxvi. 4. 7).

The readings are various, but παρ' εκείνου (B L, Boh. Sah., Orig. Naz.) may be safely adopted: ab illo (Vulg.) is a misrepresentation of this, and μαλλον παρ' ακείνων των φαρισαίων (D) an amplification of it. The η εκείνων (min. pauc.) of Elz. is a gloss; which, however, may have helped to produce the common reading η γαρ εκείνος (A E G H K M P Q etc.), ΠΑΓ being changed to ΓΑΓ. If η γαρ εκείνος (Tisch., Treg. marg.) be adopted, it must be interrogative: "I say to you, this man went down to his house justified—or did the other do so?" Other Latin variations are prae illum pharissium (a), magis quam ille pharisaeus (b c e), to which some add qui se exallabat (f ff 7 1 q r). η παρ' εκείνον (Hofm. Keil) and ηπερ εκείνος (Hahn) are conjectures. See Blass, Gr. pp. 106, 139.

δε ΠΑΣ ο διστων, κ.τ.λ. Verbatim as xiv. xi (where see note), which Weiss pronounces to be its original position, while its appearance here is due to Lk. Why is it assumed that Jesus did not repeat His sayings?

The suggestion (Aug. Bede) that the Pharisee represents the Jews and the publican the Gentiles cannot be accepted. Nor need we suppose (Godet) that Lk. is here showing that the Pauline doctrine of justification was based on the teaching of Christ. There is nothing specially Pauline here. We are not told that the publican was justified by faith in Christ, but by confession of sin and prayer. The meaning is simple. Christ takes a crucial case. One generally recognized as a saint fails in prayer, while one generally recognized as a sinner succeeds. Why? Because the latter's prayer is real, and the former's not. The one comes in the spirit of prayer,—self-humiliation; the other in the spirit of pride,—self-satisfaction.

15-17. Little Children brought to Christ. Mt. xix. 13-15; Mk. x. 13-16. The narrative of Lk., which has been proceeding independently since ix. 51, here rejoins Mt. and Mk. The three narratives are almost verbatim alike. Where Lk. differs either he has an expression peculiar to himself, as τα βρεφη (ver. 15) or προσεκαλεσατο (ver. 16); or he and Mk. agree against Mt., as in αυτων οπτηται (ver. 15), ἔρχονται and του Θεου (ver. 16), δε αν μη δεξιται, κ.τ.λ. (ver. 17), where Mt. varies considerably in wording. Only in the και before μη κωλυετε (ver. 16) does Lk. agree with Mt. against Mk.

15. Προσέφερον δε αυτω και τα βρεφη. The δε and και τα βρεφη are peculiar to Lk. For δε Mk. has και and Mt. τοτε: for και τα βρεφη both have simply παιδα. "Now people were bringing to Him even their babes," or "their babes also," as well as sick folk. In any case βρεφος must be rendered here as in ii. 12, 16; comp. i. 41, 44; Acts vii. 19; i Pet. ii. 2. AV. has "babe," "infant," and "young child." Vulg. has infans throughout.
XVIII. 15-18.] JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM 421


The pres. subj. after imperf. indic. is a constr. that is freq. in LXX. It shows how the opt. is going out of use. But here it might be explained as expressing the thought of those who brought the babes, a thought put in a direct form for the sake of vividness: “that He may touch” for “that He might touch.” Win. xii. b. i. a, p. 360.

ἐπετίμων αὐτοῖς. Not because, as Chrysostom and Theophylact suggest, they thought that little children were unworthy to approach Him; but because they thought it a waste of His time and an abuse of His kindness; or, as Jerome, followed closely by Bede, puts it, eum in similitudinem hominum offereantium importunitate lassari. On the first anniversary of their birth Jewish children were sometimes brought to the Rabbi to be blest.

Lk. has the imperf. in both places, προσέφερον ... ἐπετίμων: Mt. προσερχόμενοι ... ἐπετίμησαν: Mk. προσέφερον ... ἐπετίμησαν.

16. προσεκαλέσατο. Even if with B we omit αὐτά, this would mean that He called the children (with their parents), and then addressed the disciples. Mk. has ἰδὼν ... ἡγανάκτησεν, Mt. simply ἐπένεν.

μὴ καλύπτε. “Cease to forbid.” The wording is almost identical in all three narratives. Jerome and Euthym. (on Mt. xix. 14) point out that Christ does not say τοῦτων but τοιούτων, ut ostenderet non statem regnare sed mores. It is not these children, nor all children, but those who are childlike in character, especially in humility and trustfulness, who are best fitted for the Kingdom.

17. Verbatim as in Mk. x. 15. Mt. gives a similar saying on a different occasion (xviii. 3, 4). The δέηται explains the τοιούτων: a child receives what is offered to it, in full trust that it is good for it, μηδὲν διακρινόμενος, μηδὲ ἀμφιβάλλων περὶ αὐτοῦ (Euthym.).

18-30. The Rich Young Ruler who preferred his Riches to the Service of Christ. Mt. xix. 16-30; Mk. x. 17-31. In all three narratives this section follows immediately upon the one about bringing children to Christ. This young ruler is humiliated by being told that there is still a great deal to be done before he is qualified for ζωῆς αἰώνως. Thus the lessons supplement one another. The children, like the publican, are nearer the Kingdom than they could suppose themselves to be; the rich young man, like the Pharisee, is farther from it than he supposed himself to be. Those who can be benefited by being abased (9, 22), are abased; while those who cannot be harmed by being exalted (16), are exalted. Here again Lk. often agrees with Mk. in small details of wording against Mt., and only once (ἀκούσας in ver. 23) with Mt. against Mk.

18. ἀρχων. Lk. alone tells us this, and we are in doubt what
he means by it. His being a νεανίσκος, as Mt. tells us (xix. 20, 22),
is rather against his being a member of the Sanhedrin or a ruler
of a synagogue. Weiss, Neander, and others conjecture that
νεανίσκος is an error, perhaps an inference drawn by Mt. from
Christ's charge, especially τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου, κ.τ.λ. Certainly
ἐκ νεότητος (which is wanting in the best texts of Mt.) does not
seem appropriate to a νεανίσκος. Yet Holtzmann supposes that
νεανίσκος has been added through a misconception of ἐκ νεότητος.
But the rich ruler's self-confidence might easily make him pose as
an older man than he really was. Keim seems to be nearer the
truth when he says that "the whole impression is that of an eager
and immature young man" (Jes. of Naz. v. p. 36). The statement
of Mk., that he ran to Jesus and kneeled to Him (x. 17), indicates
youthful eagerness.

τί ποιήσας, κ.τ.λ. See on x. 25, where the same question is
asked. In Mt. the "good is transferred from "Master" to "what,"
Διδάσκαλε, τί ἀγαθόν ποιήσας; and hence Christ's reply is different,
Τί με ἐρωτᾷς περὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ; The ruler thought that by some
one act, perhaps of benevolence, he could secure eternal life: he
was prepared for great expenditure. Similar questions were dis­
cussed among the Rabbis: see Wetst. on Mt. xix. 16.

19. Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; So also in Mk. In none of the
three is there any emphasis on "Me," which is an enclitic. There
is no instance in the whole Talmud of a Rabbi being addressed
as "Good Master": the title was absolutely unknown among the
Jews. This, therefore, was an extraordinary address, and perhaps
a fulsome compliment. The Talmud says, "There is nothing else
that is good but the Law." The explanation of some ancient and
modern commentators, that Jesus is here speaking merely from
the young man's standpoint, is not satisfactory. "You suppose
Me to be a mere man, and you ought not to call any human being
good. That title I cannot accept, unless I am recognized as
God."1 The young ruler could not understand this; and the
reply must have had some meaning for him. His defect was
that he trusted too much in himself, too little in God. Jesus
reminds him that there is only one source of goodness whether
in action (Mt.) or in character (Mk. Lk.), viz. God. He Himself
is no exception. His goodness is the goodness of God working
in Him. "The Son can do nothing of Himself, but what
He sees the Father doing. . . . For as the Father hath life in
Himself, even so gave He to the Son also to have life in Him-

1 So Cyril, ad loc., El μὴ πειστευκας δι Θεός εσμ, τῶς τὰ μὴν πρέπουσα
tῇ αὐτοτάτῳ φόρου πετεθεικάς μοι, καὶ ἀγαθόν ἀποκαλεῖς, δι δι καὶ νεότητα
ἀνθρώπων εἶναι κατά σέ; and Ambrose, Quid me dicas bonum, quem negas
Deum? Non ergo se bonum negat, sed Deum designat. See also Jerome,
Basil, Epiphanius, etc. Maldonatus and Wordsworth follow.
self. . . . I can of Myself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and
My judgment is righteous, because I seek not My own will, but
the will of Him that sent Me” (Jn. v. 19-30). *Non se magistrum
non esse, sed magistrum absque Deo nullum bonum esse testatur
(Bede). There is no need to add to this the thought that the
goodness of Jesus was the goodness of perfect development (see
on ii. 52), whereas the goodness of God is that of absolute per­
fection (Weiss on Mk. x. 18).

οδηλες ἁγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς Ὀ θεὸς. So also Mk. Here the article is
wanting in N.B. The saying appears in a variety of forms in quotations.
Justin has two: οδηλες ἁγαθὸς εἰ μὴ μῦνος ὁ Θεὸς ὁ ποιήσας τὰ πάντα (Apol.
1. 16), and εἰς ἑτίν ἁγαθὸς, ὁ πατήρ μου ὁ ἐν τοῖς ὁμοίων (Try. ci.).
Marcion seems to have read ἑτίν ἁγαθὸς, ὁ Θεὸς ὁ πατήρ. In Hippol.
Philosoph. v. 1 εἰς ἑτίν ἁγαθὸς, ὁ πατήρ ἐν τοῖς ὁμοίων, and a similar
reading appears four times in Clem. Rom. See Zeller, Apostelg. pp. 32 ff.,

20. τὰς ἐντολὰς οἶδας. Jesus securos ad Legem remittit; con­
tritos Evangelice consolatur (Beng.). This is, however, not the
main point. Nothing extraordinary or not generally known is
required for salvation: the observance of well-known commands
will suffice.

Here again Lk. exactly agrees with Mk., except that he places the
seventh before the sixth commandment, and omits, as Mt. does, μὴ ἀπο­
esthöς, which perhaps represents the tenth. In Rom. xiii. 9, Jas. ii. 11,
and in Cod. B of Deut. v. 17 adultery is mentioned before murder. Philo
says that in the second πατάσ of the decalogue adultery is placed first as
μὲγαρτὸν ἀδικημάτων (De decem orac. xxiv., xxxii.). In all three of the Gospels
the fifth commandment is placed last and none of the first four is quoted.
In Mt. they are in the same form as in Exod. xx. and Deut. v., Οὐ φονέως,
κ.τ.λ. So also Rom. xiii. 9. In Mk. and Jas ii. 11, Μὴ φονεως.

21. ταῦτα πάντα ἐφιλαξά ἐκ νεότητος. Not so much a boast.
as an expression of dissatisfaction. “I wanted to be told of
something special and sublime; and I am reminded of duties
which I have been performing all my life.” The reply exhibits
great ignorance of self and of duty, but is perfectly sincere.

That it was possible to keep the whole Law is an idea which is frequent
in the Talmud. Abraham, Moses, and Aaron were held to have done so.
R. Chanina says to the Angel of Death, “Bring me the book of the Law,
and see whether there is anything written in it which I have not kept”
(Schettg. i. pp. 160, 161. See also Edersh. L. & T. i. p. 536).
Here, as in Mt. xix. 20; Gen. xxvi. 5; Exod. xii. 17, xx. 6, we have the
act. of φιλαττῶ: Mk. x. 20; Lev. xviii. 4, xx. 8, 22, xxvi. 3, the mid.
without difference of sense.

22. ἀκούσας δὲ ὁ Ἰησοῦς. Mk. has the striking ἐμβλέψας
αὐτῷ ἡγάπησεν αὐτόν, which is strong evidence that behind Mk.
is one who was intimate with Christ. From ἡγάπησεν, πάντα
πώλησον, and ἀκολούθει μοι (v. 27, ix. 59) we may conjecture that this was a call to become an Apostle.

"Ετι ἐν σοι λειτεί. Mk. has ἐν σε ὑστερέ. Mt. transfers the words to the young man, τι ἐτι υστερώ; Christ neither affirms nor denies the ruler's statement of his condition. Assuming it to be correct, there is still something lacking, viz. detachment from his wealth. In what follows we have two charges, one to sell and distribute; the other to follow Christ: and the first is preparatory to the second. But we may not separate them and make the first the one thing lacking and the second the answer to τι ποιήσας in ver. 18. In ἔξεις θησαυρόν ἐν τοῖς ὀφρανοῖς we have a clear reference to ξωὴν αἰώνιον, and this promise is attached to the first charge. The πάντα (comp. vi. 30, vii. 35, ix. 43, xi. 4) and the compound διάδος (xi. 22; Acts iv. 35; elsewhere only Jn. vi. 11) are here peculiar to Lk.

Mt., having transferred the words about "lacking something yet" to the rich young man, gives Christ's reply Ἐλ θέλεις τέλειον εἶναι in place of Ἐτι ἐν σοι λειτεί. These words cannot mean a perfection superior to the fulfillment of the Law, for no such perfection is possible (xvii. 10). A misconception of this point led to the distinction between the performance of duty and moral perfection, which has produced much error in moral theology. Clem. Alex. rightly says, ὅταν εἴπῃ Ἐλ θέλεις τέλειον γενέσθαι (sic), παλιγγεν tά ὑπάρχοντα δός πιστοί, ἐλέγχει τόν καυχόμενον ἐπί τῷ πᾶσα τάς ἐντολάς ἐκ νεότητος τητηρήκειν οὐ γὰρ πεπληρώκει τό, Ἀγαπήσεις τόν πλησίον σου ὡς ἑαυτῷ τότε δέ, ἢ τῷ Κυρίῳ εὐτελεύθεμον, ἐδιδάκετο δι' ἀγάπην μεταδίδοναι (Strom. iii. 6, p. 537, ed. Potter). Neander, L. J. C. § 226, Eng. tr. p. 367.

In class. Grk. this use of λειτείν for ἄλλειτείν is mostly poetical.

For διάδος (B E F etc.) Ν A D L M R Δ have δός from Mt. and Mk. And for ἐν τοῖς ὀφρανοῖς (B D) Ν A L R have ἐν ὀφρανοῖς from Mt., and P, Vulg. Goth. have ἐν ὀφραναί from Mk. The plur. is supported by in cellis (a d e), but the article is doubtful.

23. περιλύπως. Stronger than λυπούμενος (Mt. Mk.), to which Mk. adds the graphic στυγνάσας (Ezek. xxxii. 10; [Mt. xvi. 3]). For περιλύπως comp. Mk. vi. 26, xiv. 34; Mt. xxvi. 38. He wanted to follow Christ's injunctions, but at present the cost seemed to him to be too great.

πλοῦτος σφόδρα. The statement explains, and perhaps in some measure excuses, his distress. He possessed a great deal more than a boat and nets; and Peter, James, and John were not told to sell their boats and nets and give the proceeds to the poor; because their hearts were not wedded to them.

24. πῶς δυσκόλως. All three have this adv., which occurs nowhere else in bibl. Grk. Clem. Alex. seems to allude to the saying when he writes ὁ λόγος τούς τελεύτας λέγει δυσκόλως σωθήσεται (Strom. v. 5. p. 662, ed. Potter). Lk. omits the departure of the ruler, which took place before these words were uttered. Mk. alone records (x. 24) the constellation which they excited in
the disciples, and Christ's repetition of them. It was perhaps largely for the sake of Judas that these stern words about the perils of wealth were uttered to them.

25. In the Talmud an elephant passing through the eye of a needle is twice used of what is impossible; also a camel dancing in a very small corn measure. See Lightfoot, Schöttgen, and Wetstein, *ad loc.* For *eikónopátera* see small print on v. 23. The reading *kámmalos*="cable" here and Mt. xix. 24 is an attempt to tone down a strong statement. It is found only in a few late MSS. The word *kámmalos* occurs only in Suidas and a scholiast on Aristoph. *Vesp.* 1030. Some would give the meaning of "cable" to *kámmalos* (so Cyril on Mt. xix. 24), but no doubt the animal is meant. Others would make the "needle's eye" into a narrow gateway for foot-passengers; but this also is erroneous. See *Expositor*, 1st series, iii. p. 369, 1876; WH. ii. App. p. 151. For *bēlôn* which occurs nowhere else in bibl. Grk., Mt. and Mk. have ῥαβίδος, and for τρῆμα, Mk. has τρυμαλίας. Hobart claims both *bēlôn* and τρῆμα as medical, the former with good reason (p. 60).

Celsus said that this saying of Christ was borrowed along with others from Plato. But the passage which he quoted from the *Laws* (v. p. 742) merely says that a man cannot be at once very good and very rich. There is nothing about a camel or a needle. Orig. *Con. Cels.* vi. 16. 1. The saying in the Koran (vii. 38), "Neither shall they enter into paradise, until a camel pass through the eye of a needle," is probably taken from the Gospels (Sale, p. 108).

It is specially to be noted that this hard saying about the difficulty of those who have riches entering into the Kingdom of God is in all three Gospels and not merely in the one which is supposed to be Ebionite in tone. Comp. Mt. vii. 19-21; Mk. xii. 41, 42. Lk. omits the great amazement, ἔξετελφσαντο σφόδρα (Mt.), ἑρμεσας ἔξετελφσαντο (Mk.), which this second utterance on the impediments caused by wealth excited in the disciples.

The Latin translator of Origen's comm. on Mt. xix. has the following extract from "a certain Gospel which is called *According to the Hebrews.*" But neither this preface nor the extract are in the Greek text of Origen. *Dixit ad eum alter divitum, Magister, quid bonum faciens vivam? Dixit ei, Homo, legem et prophetas fac. Respondit ad eum, Feci. Dixit ei, Vade, vende omnia quae possides et divide pauperibus et veni, sequare me. Coepit autem dives scalpere caput suum (*sic*), et non placuit ei. Et dixit ad eum Dominus, Quem modo dixis Legem faci et prophetas? quoniam scriptum est in legi Diliges proximum tuum sicut te ipsum, et ecce multi fratres tui, filii Abrahams, amici sunt sternore, mortientes pro fame, et domus tua plena est multis bonis, et non egevaditur omnino aliquid ex ea ad eos. Et conversus dixit Simoni discipulo suo, sedentis apud se, Simon, fili Johannes, facilium est camino intrare per foramen acus quam divitem in regnum cœlorum. See also the fragment quoted from the narrative of the man with the withered hand (Lk. vi. 8). These specimens explain why the Gospel according to the Hebrews was allowed to pass into oblivion, and it is difficult to believe that this Nazarene Gospel was the
original Hebrew of our Mt. If it was, "our Greek Evangelist must have been a most unfaithful translator" (Salmon, Int. to N.T. p. 166, 5th ed.). We may add that he must have been a person of very superior taste and ability.

26. Καὶ τίς δύναται σωτηρία; Not "what rich man" (Weiss), but "what person of any description"; Num. xxiv. 23. The whole world either possesses or aims at possessing wealth. If, then, what every one desires is fatal to salvation, who can be saved? The καὶ adds emphasis to the question, which arises out of what has just been said: comp. x. 29; Jn. ix. 36; 2 Cor. ii. 2.

27. Τὰ δύνατα παρὰ ἀνθρώπου. This shows that ver. 25 means an impossibility, not merely something difficult or highly improbable. It is a miracle of grace when those who have wealth do not put their trust in it. Lk. omits the steadfast look (ἐμβλήματος) with which Mt. and Mk. say that this declaration was accompanied. He sympathizes with their perplexity and hastens to remove it.

Not only before proper names which begin with a vowel (Mt. xxviii. 15; Jn. i. 40), but also in other cases, παρὰ sometimes is found unelided; παρὰ ἀμαρτωλαῖ (xix. 7). This is commonly the case before ἀνθρώπου: comp. Mt. xix. 26; Mk. x. 27; Jn. v. 34, 41; Gal. i. 12.

δύνατα παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ. Zacchæus proved this (xix. 1-10). Comp. Zech. viii. 6; Job xiii. 2. For parallels from profane writers see Grotius and Wetstein on Mt. xix. 26. But παρὰ ἀνθρώπου and παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ certainly do not mean hominum judicio and Dei judicio (Fri. Ew.): they refer to what each can do. Man cannot, but God can, break the spell which wealth exercises over the wealthy. Comp. i. 37; Gen. xviii. 14; Jer. xxxii. 17, 27; Zech. viii. 6.

28. εἶπεν δὲ ὁ Πέτρος. His being the one to speak is characteristic; but he does not speak in a spirit of boastfulness. Rather it is the reaction from their consternation which moves him to speak: spe ex verbis Salvatoris concepta (Beng.). He wants to be assured that God's omnipotence has been exerted on their behalf, and that they may hope to enter the Kingdom. Mt. adds τι ἄρα ἐσταὶ ἡμῖν; Note the εἶπεν δὲ, which neither Mt. nor Mk. has.

29. Ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν. In all three: it is a declaration of great moment. Not only has God done this for the Twelve, but for many others: and every one who has had grace to surrender is sure of his reward. Lk. alone has γυναικα, and alone omits ἁγροῦς, among the things surrendered. The omission is noteworthy in connexion with his supposed Ebionitism.

30. πολλαπλασίων. Job's family was exactly restored; his goods were exactly doubled. The dramatic compensations of the
O.T. are far exceeded by the moral and spiritual compensations of the Gospel: and it is evident from this passage that material rewards are included also. What is lost in the family is replaced many times over in Christ and in the Church. This would apply in a special way to converts from heathen families, who found loving fathers and brethren to replace the cruel relations who cast them out. Lk. and Mt. omit (but for no imaginable dogmatic reasons) the important qualification μετὰ διωγμον. “He only is truly rich,” said the Rabbi Meir, “who enjoys his riches.” The Christian sacrifices what is not enjoyed for what brings real happiness.

Mk. has ἐκατοσταλάσσων. D supported by many Latin authorities (a b c d e f g h i k l m n p q r, Cypr. Ambr. Aug. Bede) here has ἑπταπλάσσων. Cyprian quotes the passage thrice, and each time has septies tantum in isto tempore. WH. conjectures “some extraneous source, written or oral.” Vulg. and I have multo plura in hoc tempore.

Between λάβῃ (B D M, Arm.), which may come from Mk., and ἀπολάβῃ (Ν Α Π Ρ etc.) it is not easy to decide. With ἀπολάβῃ comp. xxxii. 41; Rom. i. 27; Col. iii. 24; 2 Jn. 8. It is often used with τ. μοθών (Xen. Anab. vii. 7. 14; Her. viii. 137. 6). Vulg. has et non recipiat.

ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τούτῳ. Note the contrast with τῷ αἰῶνι: not merely in this world, but in this season. So also in Mk. Comp. ἐν τῷ νῦν καιρῷ (Rom. iii. 26, viii. 18), and τῶν καιρῶν τῶν ἑκκατοκόπτα (Heb. ix. 9), which means the same: see Wsct. ἐν τῷ αἰῶνι τῷ ἑρχόμενῳ. “In the age which is in process of being realized.” See on vii. 19, and comp. Eph. i. 21, ii. 7; Heb. vi. 5. Bengel remarks that Scripture in general is more explicit about temporal punishments than temporal rewards, but about eternal rewards than eternal punishments.

Millenarians made use of this promise as an argument for their views. It would be in the millennium that the faithful would receive literally a hundredfold of what they had given up for the Kingdom’s sake: non intelligentes quod si in aeternis digna sit repressio, in uxoris apparat turpitudo; ut qui unam pro Domino dimiserit, et centum recipiat in futuro (Jerome on Mt. xix. 29).

Lk. omits the saying about last being first and first last, having already recorded it in a different connexion (xiii. 30).

31–34. The Third Announcement of the Passion. Mt. xx. 17–19; Mk. x. 32–34. For previous announcements (just before and just after the Transfiguration) see ix. 22, 44. The raising of Lazarus should probably be placed here. The decree of the Sanhedrin for the arrest of Jesus had very likely already been passed when our Lord made this new announcement of His death. Aposolis septius dixit et indies expressius, ut in posterum testes essent præscientio ipsius (Grotius).

The οὕτω (ver. 31) is the one item which Lk. and Mt. have in common against Mk. In several expressions in vv. 32, 33 Lk. agrees with Mk.
against Mt. The \( \epsilon \lambda \tau \nu \nu \tau \rho \delta \), the \( \pi \nu \nu \tau \alpha \) (see on vii. 35, ix. 43, xi. 4), \( \tau \alpha \ \gamma \epsilon \gamma \rho \rho \mu \mu \mu \nu \alpha \) (see on xxii. 37), and all of ver. 34 are peculiar to Lk.'s account.

31. \( \Pi \alpha \rho \alpha \lambda \beta \alpha \beta \alpha \nu \) “Took to Himself” (ix. 28, xi. 26; Acts xv. 39). The notion of taking \( \alpha \nu \delta \iota \tau \iota \), away from the multitude, is involved, but is not prominent. In class. Grk. it is freq. of taking a wife, a companion, an ally, or adopting a son. This announce­ment specially concerned the Twelve who were to accompany Him to Jerusalem. See the graphic account of their behaviour Mk. x. 32.

\[ \delta \iota \delta \ \tau \omega \nu \ \pi \rho \omicron \phi \eta \tau \omicron \nu \]  
This is the regular expression for the utterances of prophecy: they are spoken \textit{by means of} the Prophets.”

The Prophet is not an originating agent, but an instrument. But this is the only place in which the phrase occurs in Lk., who says little to his Gentile readers about the fulfilment of prophecy. Comp. Mt. i. 22, ii. 5, 15, 23, iv. 14, viii. 17, xii. 17, xiii. 35, etc.

In Mt. ii. 17 and iii. 3 \( \upsilon \tau \omicron \) is a false reading. Comp. Hag. ii. 2.—See Gould on Mk. x. 33, 34.

\[ \tau \omicron \ \upsilon \ \iota \delta \omicron \ \tau \omicron \ \alpha \nu \theta \rho \alpha \omicron \pi \omicron \omicron \]  
Once more an amphibolous expression. It can be taken with either \( \tau \epsilon \lambda \omicron \sigma \theta \iota \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \alpha \) or \( \tau \alpha \ \gamma \epsilon \gamma \rho \rho \mu \mu \mu \nu \alpha \). If with the former it may mean either “\textit{by} the Son of Man” (which is not probable, for it is not what He does, but what others do to Him that is predicted), or “unto the Son of Man” (RV. Hahn, Nösgen). Comp. \( \alpha \nu \alpha \pi \lambda \rho \rho \omicron \omicron \tau \alpha \nu \omicron \iota \delta \omicron \ \pi \omicron \phi \eta \tau \omicron \nu \) (Mt. xiii. 14). But for this Lk. elsewhere has \( \epsilon \nu \ \tau \omicron \ \upsilon \ \iota \delta \omicron \ \tau \OMICRON \ \alpha \nu \theta \rho \alpha \omicron \omicron \ ) (xxii. 37). It seems better to take the dat. with \( \tau \alpha \ \gamma \epsilon \gamma \rho \rho \mu \mu \mu \nu \alpha \): “\textit{for} the Son of Man,” \textit{i.e.} prescribed for Him as His course (Weiss, Godet), or “\textit{of} the Son of Man” (Vulg. Wic. Tyn. Cov. Cran. Rhem. AV. Alf.). Hence the ancient gloss in the text of D, \( \pi \rho \iota \ \tau \omicron \ \upsilon \omicron \delta \omicron \ \tau \OMICRON \ \alpha \nu \theta \rho \alpha \omicron \omicron \ ) (Win. xxxi. 4, p. 265. Green, p. 100).

32. \( \pi \rho \alpha \theta \omicron \phi \omicron \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \alpha \gamma \nu \tau \omicron \ \iota \omicron \sigma \theta \omicron \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \nu \) \( \gamma \alpha \rho \tau \omicron \ \iota \omicron \sigma \theta \omicron \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \nu \). This is a new element of definiteness in the prophecy, and it almost carries with it, what Mt. xx. 19 distinctly expresses, that the mode of death will be cruci­fixion.

It is said that this prediction has been made more definite by the Evangelist, who has worded it in accordance with accomplished facts. But, in that case, why were not ix. 22 and 44 made equally definite? That Christ should gradually reveal more details is in harmony with probability. Lk., however, omits the high priests and scribes, and their condemning Christ to death before handing Him over to the heathen, although both Mt. (xx. 18) and Mk. (x. 33) say that Jesus predicted these details on this occasion. Here Lk. alone has \( \upsilon \beta \rho \omicron \sigma \theta \omicron \phi \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \alpha \gamma \nu \tau \omicron \ \iota \omicron \sigma \theta \omicron \sigma \tau \epsilon \tau \nu \) (xi. 45; Acts xiv. 5; elsewhere twice).

33. \( \tau \omicron \ \acute{\epsilon} \mu \acute{\epsilon} \rho \omicron \ \tau \omicron \ \tau \acute{\iota} \gamma \omicron \). Mk. has the less accurate \( \mu \epsilon \tau \alpha \ \tau \rho \epsilon \iota \acute{\epsilon} \mu \acute{\epsilon} \rho \omicron \), which can hardly have been invented to fit the facts. While the prediction of His death might shake the disciples' faith
in His Messiahship, the prediction of His rising again was calculated
to establish it.

34. Καὶ αὐτῷ ὁδὲν τούτων συνήκαν. Comp. ii. 50. Note the
characteristic καὶ αὐτῷ and ἦν κεκρυμμένον. Lk. alone mentions
the appeal to prophecy (ver. 31), and he alone states—with three-fold emphasis—that the Twelve did not at all understand. But
Mt. and Mk. illustrate this dulness of apprehension by the request
of the sons of Zebedee for the right and left hand places in the
Kingdom, which Lk. omits. Their minds were too full of an
earthly kingdom to be able to grasp the idea of a Messiah who
was to suffer and to die: and without that they could not under­
stand His rising again, and did not at first believe when they
were told that He had risen. Their dulness was providential,
and it became a security to the Church for the truth of the
Resurrection. The theory that they believed, because they ex­
pected that He would rise again, is against all the evidence. Comp.
ix. 45.

κεκρυμμένον ἀπ’ αὐτῶν. This was changed when He δεῖπνος ἐν
ἀυτῶν τῶν νοῦν τοῦ συνίει τὸς γράφας (xxiv. 45). For ἀπ’ αὐτῶν
comp. ix. 45, x. 21, xix. 42; 2 Kings iv. 27; Ps. cxviii. 19; Is.
xl. 27; Jer. xxxix. 17. This statement is not identical with either
of the other two. It explains the fact that they not only did not understand any of this at the time, but “did not get to know
(ἐγίνωσκον) the things that were said.”

35-43. The Healing of Blind Bartimeus at Jericho. Mt.
xx. 29-34; Mk. x. 46-52. This miracle probably took place in
the week preceding that of the Passion.

The three narratives have exercised the ingenuity of harmonizers. Lk. and
Mk. have only one blind man; Mt. again mentions two (comp. Mt. ix. 27).
Lk. represents the miracle as taking place when Jesus was approaching Jericho;
Mt. and Mk. as taking place when He was leaving it. Lk. says that Jesus
healed with a command, ἀναβέλεψα, Mk. with a word of comfort, ἀπολάγει, ἥ
πάσις σου σαῦρον σε; Mt. with a touch, ἣπατο τῶν ὄμματων αὐτῶν. Only those
who have a narrow view respecting inspiration and its effects will be concerned
to reconcile these differences and make each of the three verbally exact. These
make many suggestions. 1. There were three different healings (Euthym. on
Mt. xx. 34). 2. As Christ entered Jericho, Bartimeus cried for help, and was
not healed; he then joined a second blind man, and with him made an appeal
as Jesus left Jericho, and then both were healed (Calvin and Maldon. followed
by Wordsw.). 3. One blind man was healed as He entered, Bartimeus, and
another as He left (Aug. Quest. Evang. ii. 48). 4. One was healed as He entered
and one as He left; and Mt. combines the first with the second (even Neander
inclines to this, L. J. C. § 236, note). 5. There were two Jerichos, Old and
New, and Lk. means that Jesus was approaching New Jericho, Mt. and Mk.
that He was leaving Old Jericho (Macknight), although there is no evidence
that Old Jericho was still inhabited, or that “Jericho” without epithet could at
this time mean anything but the city which was given by Antony to Cleopatra,
and afterwards redeemed by Herod the Great (Jos. Ant. xv. 4, 2, 4). See
Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 310; also some good remarks by Sadler on Mk. x. 46,
to the effect that “the inspiration of the Evangelists did not extend to minutiae
of this sort"; and by Harvey Goodwin against forced explanations (Gosp. of S. Luke, p. 311, Bell, 1865). 6. See below on ver. 35. The narrative of Mk., who gives the name Bartimeus and other details, is probably the most exact of the three. See Wsctt. Intr. to the Gospels, ch. vii. p. 357, 7th ed.

The attempts of Hitzig and Keim to use the name, which in Syriac may perhaps mean "son of the blind," to discredit the whole narrative, are rightly condemned by Weiss (L. J. ii. p. 439, Eng. tr. iii. p. 222). Strauss suggests that the name comes from χερτίων (ver. 39; Mk. x. 48) and χερτίως (Mt. xx. 31) (L. J. § 71, p. 429, 1864). For other possible meanings see Lightfoot, Hor. Heb. ad loc.

35. εν τῷ ἐγγίζειν αὐτῶν εἰς ἱερείῳ. The translation, "When He was not far from Jericho," i.e. as He had just left it (Grotius, Nösgen), is perhaps the worst device for harmonizing Lk. with Mt. and Mk. The meaning of ἐγγίζειν is decisive; and there is the εἰς in addition. Both Herod the Great and Archelaus had beautified and enlarged Jericho, which at this time must have presented a glorious appearance (D.B. 2 art. "Jericho"). It was here that Herod had died his horrible death (Jos. B. J. i. 33. 6, 7). Note the characteristic εὐερετά and εν τῷ ἀν. infin. See on iii. 21, and comp. 2 Sam. xv. 5.

In class. Grk. ἐγγίζειν is not common, and usually has the dat. In bibl. Grk. it is very frequent; sometimes with dat., esp. in the phrase ἐγγίζειν τῷ Ἐλεως (Ias. iv. 8; Exod. xix. 22; Lev. x. 3; Is. xxix, 13, etc.); sometimes with πρὸς (Gen. xlv. 4, xlviii. 10; Exod. xix. 21, etc.); and also with εἰς (xix. 29, xxiv. 28; Mt. xxi. 1; Mk. xi. 1; Tob. vi. 10N, xi. 1). In N.T. ἐγγίζειν is always intrans.

For ἐπιτίων (A B D L, Orig.) A P Q R etc. have προσαιτῶν. Comp. xvi. 3.

36. ὁ χιλιοῦ διαπορομένου. The caravan of pilgrims going up to the Passover. See on vi. 1 and on xi. 29; also Edersh. Hist. of J. N. p. 255, ed. 1896. Leaving His place of retirement (Jn. xi. 54, 55), Jesus had joined this caravan; and it is probable that He came to Jericho in order to do so. The crowd was there, according to all three narratives, before the miracle took place. This shows how untenable is the view of Keim, Holtzmann, and Weiss, that Lk. has purposely transferred the healing from the departure to the entry in order to account for the crowd at the meeting with Zacchæus (xix. 3): the miracle produced the crush of people. But according to Lk. himself the crowd was there before the miracle.

ἐπυρήσατο τῷ εἰπ. τοῦτο. In N.T. πυρόδαιοναι is almost peculiar to Lk. (xv. 26, where see note; Acts iv. 7, x. 18, 29, etc.). Omitting δν with A B P etc. against D K L M Q R X, "He enquired what this was," not "what this possibly might be." Mt. ii. 4; Jn. iv. 52.

37. For ἐπιγγείλαν see on viii. 20; for Ναζαρηνός see on iv. 34 (Mk. here has Ναζαρηνός, and Mt. omits the epithet); and for παρέχεται see on xi. 42.

καὶ Δαυὶδ. This shows that he recognizes Jesus as the Messiah (Mt. ix. 27, xii. 23, xv. 22, xxi. 9, 15). It is not this which the multitude resents, but the interruption: comp. v. 15. They regard him as an ordinary beggar, asking for money. And Jesus was perhaps teaching as He went. Mk. tells us how the attitude of the people changed towards him, when they saw that Jesus had decided to listen to him. See Gould on Mk. x. 47.

39. συγγένες. Excepting Rom. xvi. 25 and 1 Cor. xiv. 28, 30, 34, the verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (ix. 36, xx. 26; Acts xii. 17, xv. 12, 13). Mt. and Mk. have συγγένες, which N A Q R, Orig. read here.

ἐκραζεῖν. Note the change of verb and tense from ἔβοησεν. While βοῶ is specially an intelligent cry for help, κραζω is often an instinctive cry or scream, a loud expression of strong emotion. In class. Grk. κραζω is often used of the cries of animals. The two words are sometimes joined (Dem. De Cor. p. 271; Aristoph. Plut. 722). Mt. and Mk. have κραζω in both places, and Mt. has the aor. in both. The man’s persistency is evidence of his faith, which Christ recognizes.

40. σταθεῖσι. See on ver. 11: the others have στάσις. Excepting in Mt. and Acts, where the verb is common, κελεύω occurs here only in N.T. In LXX it is found only in the Apocrypha. Mk. here describes the man’s casting away 1 his ἰματιον and leaping up to come to Jesus, when the people had passed on to him Christ’s command. Christ’s making those who had rebuked him to be the bearers of His invitation to him is to be noted.

With the constr., ἐγγελσατο αὐτόν . . . αὐτὸν instead of ἐγγελσατα, comp. xii. 36, xv. 20, xvii. 12, xxii. 10, 53; Acts iv. 1, xxi. 17.

41. Τί σοι θέλεις ποιήσω; Not that Jesus gives him carte blanche (Godet) to have anything that he likes; but that He will make clear to the multitude that this is no ordinary beggar, but one who has faith to ask to be healed. For the constr. see on ix. 54. Both Mt. (xiv. 19, xx. 34) and Lk. (xiii. 5) use ἀναβλέψω in both senses, “look up” and “recover sight.”

42. ἢ πίστις σου. The multitude had called Jesus “the Nazarene,” and had tried to silence the blind man. He had called Him the “Son of David,” and had persevered all the more. Mt. says that Jesus touched the eyes, but omits these words. Comp. vii. 50, viii. 48, xvii. 19.

43. ἀναφέρω. Mk. has ἐβοήσε: comp. v. 25, viii. 44, 55, xxii. 60. Lk. alone records that the man glorified God, and that the people followed his example; comp. ix. 43. The poetical word ἀναφέρω is not rare in LXX, but occurs in N.T. only here and in a

1 In Syr-Sin. Timai Bar-Timai “rose and took up his garment, and came to Jesus.” Comp. Jn. xxi. 7. In Diatess.-Tat. he asks for sight, “that I may see Thee.”
quotation from Ps. viii. 2 in Mt. xxi. 16. With ἀλλον διδόναι comp. δόθαν διδόναι (xvii. 18; Rom. iv. 20; Rev. iv. 9).

It is worth while to collect together the characteristics of Lk.'s style which are very conspicuous in this section, especially when it is compared with Mt. and Mk. In ver. 35 we have ἐγέρθη, ἐν τῷ c. infin., and ἐπαίτων (only here and xvi. 3); in ver. 36, διαπορευομένου (vi. i, xiii. 22) and ἐπιθυμάντος (xv. 26); in ver. 37, διὰ γυμνὰν (viii. 20) and παρέρχεται (xi. 42); in ver. 38, ἔβδομεν (iii. 4, ix. 38, xviii. 38); in ver. 39, σιγήσῃ (ix. 36, xx. 26) and αὕτως; in ver. 43, παραχρήμα (v. 25) and πᾶς (vii. 35, xi. 4). In all these cases, either other expressions are used by Mt. and Mk., or they omit the idea which Lk. thus expresses.

XIX. 1-10. § The Visit to Zacchæus, the Tax-collector of Jericho. The on other grounds improbable conjecture, that we have here a distorted variation of the Call of Matthew, the Tax-collector of Capernaum, is excluded by the fact that Lk. has recorded that event (v. 27-32). Even if the two narratives were far more similar than they are, there would be no good reason for doubting that two such incidents had taken place. The case of Zacchæus illustrates the special doctrine of this Gospel, that no one is excluded from the invitation to the Kingdom of God. The source from which Lk. obtained the narrative seems to have been Aramaic. In time it is closely connected with the preceding section.

1. διήρχετο τὴν 'ιρείνα. "He was passing through Jericho," and the meeting took place inside the city. For the verb see on ii. 15, and for the constr. comp. ii. 35; Acts xii. 10, xiii. 6, xiv. 24, etc. Apparently the meeting with Zacchæus was what detained Him in Jericho: otherwise He would have gone through without staying: comp. xxiv. 28.

2. ὁνύματι καλοῦμενος Ζακχαῖος. For the dat. comp. i. 61. The name, which means "pure," shows him to have been a Jew: Ezra ii. 9; Neh. vii. 14. Tertullian says, Zacchæus, etsi allophylus, fortasse tamen aliqua notitia scripturarum ex commercio Judaico afflatus (Adv. Marcion. iv. 37. 1). But the Jews murmured because Jesus lodged with a man that was a sinner. They would have said a heathen, if it had been true. See below on ver. 9. The Clementines make Zacchæus a companion of Peter, who appoints him, much against his wish, to be bishop of Cæsarea (Hom. iii. 63; Recog. iii. 66); and the Apost. Const. say that he was succeeded by Cornelius (vii. 46). Clem. Alex. says he was identified with Matthias (Strom. iv. 6. p. 579). The Talmud mentions a Zacchæus who lived at Jericho and was father of the celebrated Rabbi Jochanan. He might be of the same family as this Zacchæus. The use of ἀνήρ here (comp. i. 27, vii. 41, xxiii. 50) rather than ἀνθρωπός (comp. ii. 25, vi. 6) perhaps is no mark of dignity: see ver. 7
XIX. 2-4.] JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM 433

καὶ αὐτὸς ἂν ἀρχιτελωνής καὶ αὐτὸς πλούσιος. Note the double καὶ αὐτὸς, and see on v. 14 and vi. 20.

The second καὶ αὐτὸς (BK U II, Vulg.) is doubtful: om. D, de; καὶ αὐτὸς ἂν (AQR); καὶ ἂν (N L, Boh. Goth.). The last may be right.

ἀρχιτελωνής. This is evidently an official title, and means more than that Zacchæus was a very rich tax-collector (Didon). Had that been the meaning, we should have ὅτι or γὰρ instead of καὶ. Perhaps we may render, “Commissioner of Taxes.” The word occurs nowhere else, and the precise nature of the office cannot be ascertained. Probably he was intermediate between the portitores and the publicani, and by the Romans would have been called magister. Jericho, as a large frontier city, through which much of the carrying trade passed, and which had a large local trade in costly balsams, would be a likely place for a commissioner of taxes. This is the sixth notice of the tax-collectors, all favourable, in this Gospel (iii. 12, v. 27, vii. 29, xv. 1, xviii. 10).

3. ἔδησε ἵλειν. Not like Herod (xxiii. 8), but like the Greeks (Jn. xii. 21). He had heard of Him, and perhaps as mixing freely with publicans and sinners. Fama notum vultu noscere cupiebat (Grotius). For the indic. after τίς dependent comp. Acts xxi. 33. οὐκ ἣδυνατο ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου. The multitude was the source of the hindrance. Comp. xxi. 26, xxiv. 41; Acts xii. 14, xxii. 11; Jn. xxi. 6; Heb. v. 7. His being unable to free himself from the throng is not the meaning of the ἀπὸ. In class. Grk. we should have διὰ with acc. For ήλικία see on ii. 52.

4. eis τὸ ἑμπροσθεν. Strengthens the προδραμοῦν. He ran on to that part of the city which was in front of Christ’s route. There is nothing to show that he wished to hide, and that Christ’s call to him was like His making the woman with the issue disclose her act (Trench). On the other hand, there is no evidence that he braved the derision of the crowd. We may say, however, that no thought of personal dignity or propriety deterred him from his purpose.

TR. omits eis τό, which is sufficiently attested by N B L, processit in priore et (e), antecedens ab ante (d), D having προλαβὼν for προδραμοῦν.

συκομορέαν. “A fig-mulberry,” quite a different tree from the fig and the mulberry and the common sycomore. Its fruit is like the fig, and its leaf like the mulberry, and hence the name. The συκάμυνος of xvii. 6 is commonly held to be the mulberry, but may be another name for the fig-mulberry, as Groser thinks. The fig-mulberry “recalls the English oak, and its shade is most pleasing. It is consequently a favourite wayside tree. . . . It is very easy to climb, with its short trunk, and its wide lateral branches forking out in all directions” (Tristram, Nat. Hist. of B. p. 398).
The MSS. vary much, but all early uncials except A have -μορεα and not -μοραία; and -μορεα is much better attested than -μορεα or -μοραία. The common form is συνκώμορος.

With ἐκείνης sc. δόθ' comp. πολας, v. 19.

For the sudden change of subject, ἀνέβη ... κελαλεῖν, comp. xiv. 5, xv. 15, xvii. 2; and for the subjunctive after a past tense, ἀνέβη ... ἦν τὸ γ', comp. vi. 7, xviii. 15, 39; Jn. iv. 8, vii. 32.

5. Ζακχαῖος. There is no need to assume that Jesus had supernatural knowledge of the name: Jn. iv. 17, 18 is not parallel. Jesus might hear the people calling to Zacchæus, or might enquire. And He seems not to use His miraculous power of knowledge when He could obtain information in the usual way (Mk. viii. 5; Jn. xi. 34). The explanation that He thereby showed Zacchæus that He knew all about him, is not adequate. Would Zacchæus have inferred this from being addressed by name?

οπεύσασα κατάβηθι. He had made haste to see Christ: he must make haste to receive Him. Accept plus quam sperabat, qui, quod potuit, fecit (Maldon.). As in the case of Nathanael (Jn. i. 47), Jesus knew the goodness of the man's heart. Here supernatural knowledge, necessary for Christ's work, is quite in place. For οπεύσασα see on ii. 16.

ομέρον γὰρ ἐν τῷ ὀίκῳ σου. First, with emphasis. "This very day; in thy house." For δε of the Divine counsels see on iv. 43. Taken in conjunction with καταλύσαι (ver. 7), μένων possibly means "to pass the night." But neither word necessarily means staying for more than a long rest.

7. Πάντες διεγόγγυζον. Note the characteristic πάντες, and comp. v. 30, xv. 2. It was not jealousy, but a sense of outraged propriety, which made them all murmur.

Παρὰ ἀμαρτωλῷ. First, with emphasis. They allude, not to the personal character of Zacchæus, but to his calling. For παρὰ unelided before a vowel see small print on xviii. 27, and Gregory, Prolegom. p. 95.

καταλύσαι. Only here and ix. 12 in N.T. has καταλύω the classical meaning of "loosing one's garments and resting from a journey": comp. Gen. xix. 2, xxiv. 23, 25; Ecclus. xiv. 25, 27, xxxvi. 31. Elsewhere in N.T. it means "throw down, destroy" (xxi. 6; Acts v. 38, vi. 14, etc.).

8. σταθεῖσα. Perhaps indicates a set attitude: see on xviii. 11. It is a solemn act done with formality. The narrative represents this declaration as the immediate result of personal contact with the goodness of Christ. He is overwhelmed by Christ's condescension in coming to him, and is eager to make a worthy acknowledgment. That he was stung by the reproach παρὰ ἀμαρτωλῷ ἄνδρι, and wished to prove that he was not so great a sinner, is less probable. The δὲ does not show that Zacchæus is answering his accusers, but that Lk. contrasts his conduct with theirs.
The solemn declaration is addressed πρὸς τὸν κύριον, not to them; and the ἵσος with which it begins indicates a sudden resolution, rather than one which had been slowly reached.

τὰ ἡμῖσις. “MSS. clearly certify to τὰ ἡμῖσις (L alone has ἡμῖσις), apparently from a form ἡμίσιος, against τὰ ἡμῖσον and still more against τὰ ἡμῖν: this peculiar form occurs in an inscription from Selinus in Cilicia (C.F.G. 4428),” WH. ii. App. p. 158. But editors are much divided. Lach. ἡμῖσις, Treg. Tisch. and Weiss ἡμῖσις, TR. and RV. ἡμῖν, WH. ἡμῖν. May not ἡμῖσις and ἡμῖσις be mere mistakes for ἡμῖσις, and ἡμῖσις be a supposed improvement? The neut. plur. depends upon the neut. plur. of τῶν ὑπαρχόντων. Comp. τῶν νήσων τὰς ἡμῖσις (Hdt. ii. 10. 4); αἱ ἡμῖσις τῶν ἄρτων (Xen. Cyr. iv. 5. 4). For τὰ ὑπαρχόντα see on viii. 3.

tοῖς πτωχοῖς δίδωμι. “I hereby give to the poor”: it is an act done there and then. The present tense might mean “I am in the habit of giving” (Godet); but this is not likely. For (1) this makes Zacchæus a boaster; (2) τῶν ὑπαρχόντων has to be interpreted “income,” whereas its natural meaning is “that which one has possessed all along, capital”; (3) ἀποδίδωμι must follow δίδωμι, and it is improbable that Zacchæus was in the habit of making fourfold restitution for inadvertent acts of injustice; and a man so scrupulous as to restore fourfold would not often commit acts of deliberate injustice. Standing in Christ’s presence, he solemnly makes over half his great wealth to the poor, and with the other half engages to make reparation to those whom he has defrauded. So Iren. Tertul. Ambr. Chrys. Euthym. Theoph. Maldon. etc. Aug. and Euthym. suggest that he kept one half, not to possess it, but to have the means of restitution. That he left all and became a follower of Christ (Ambr.) is not implied, but may eventually have taken place.

εἰ τινὸς τι ἐσυκοφάντησα. The indic. shows that he is not in doubt about past malpractices: “if, as I know is the case, I have,” etc. Comp. Rom. v. 17; Col. ii. 20, iii. 1. For συκοφάντησα see on iii. 14, the only other place in N.T. in which the verb occurs: in LXX it is not rare. The constr. τινὸς τι is on the analogy of ἀποστρεφεῖν and similar verbs.

ἀποδίδωμι τετραπλῶν. This was almost the extreme penalty imposed by the Law, when a man was compelled to make reparation for a deliberate act of destructive robbery (Exod. xxii. 1; 2 Sam. xii. 6). But sevenfold was sometimes exacted (Prov. vi. 31). If the stolen property had not been consumed, double was to be paid (Exod. xxii. 4, 7). When the defrauder confessed and made voluntary restitution, the whole amount stolen, with a fifth added, was sufficient (Lev. vi. 5; Num. v. 7). Samuel promises only simple restitution if anything is proved against him (1 Sam. xii. 3). Zacchæus is willing to treat his exactions as if they had been destructive robberies. In thus stripping himself of the chief part
even of his honestly gained riches he illustrates xviii. 27. Ecce enim camelus, deposita gibbi sarcina, per foramen acus transit, hoc est dives et publicanus, relictà onere dòvitiarum, contempto sensu fraudium, angustam portam arctamque viam quæ ad vitam ducit ascendit (Bede).

9. πρὸς αὐτόν. Although Christ uses the third person, this probably means “unto him” (Mey. Hahn) rather than “in reference to him” (Grot. Nösg. Godet): see on xviii. 9. Ewald reads πρὸς αὐτόν, like πρὸς ἑαυτόν, xviii. 11, as if Jesus were thinking aloud.

To avoid the difficulty some texts have the plur. πρὸς αὐτοὺς (R), ad illos (a b c ff i s), and some omit (d e, Cypr.). Some MSS. of Vulg. have ad eos or ad illos for ad eum.

δέ Σήμερον. The δέ is merely recitative and is not to be translated. The σήμερον confirms the view that δόωμι and ἀποδίωμι refer to a present resolve and not to a past practice.

σωτηρία . . . ἐγένετο. A favourite constr. with Lk. See on iv. 36. Only on this occasion did Jesus offer Himself as a guest, although He sometimes accepted invitations. Just as it was to a despised schismatic (Jn. iv. 26), and to a despised outcast from the synagogue (Jn. ix. 37), that He made a spontaneous revelation of His Messiahship, so it is a despised tax-collector that He selects for this spontaneous visit. In each case He knew that the recipient had a heart to welcome His gift: and it is in this welcome, and not in the mere visit, that the σωτηρία consisted.

That τῷ ὑιῷ τοῦ Ἰσραήλ is said rather than τῷ ἄνδρι τοῦ Ἰσραήλ probably means that the blessing extends to the whole household; rather than that Jesus is alluding to the hospitality which He has received under this roof. In any case it is to be noted that it is the house which has suddenly lost half its wealth, and not the poor who have the promise of abundant alms, that Jesus declares to have received a blessing. To this occasion we may apply, and possibly to this occasion belongs, the one saying of Christ which is not recorded in the Gospels, and which we yet know to have been His, “It is more blessed to give than to receive” (Acts xx. 35).

καθότι καὶ αὐτὸς ὑιὸς Ἀβραάμ. This is conclusive as to Z. being a Jew. The words cannot be understood exclusively in a spiritual sense, as Cyprian seems to take them (Ep. lxiii. 4, ed. Hartel). Chrysostom points out the moral sonship: Abraham offered his heir to the Lord, Zacchæus his inheritance. Comp. xiii. 16, and see Weiss, L. J. ii. p. 438, Eng. tr. iii. p. 221. For καθότι, which is peculiar to Lk., see small print on i. 7. The meaning is that he also, as much as any one else, is an Israelite.

1 In the Roman Church this verse is part of the gospel in the service for the dedication of churches.
"His detested calling has not cancelled his birthright. My visit to him, and his receiving salvation, are entirely in harmony with the Divine Will" (ver. 5).

10. ἐλήλουντα. First with emphasis: "He came for this very purpose." The γάρ explains σωτηρία εὐεργετή: salvation to such as Z. is the object of His Epiphany. For the neut. of a collective whole, τὸ ἄπολωλός, comp. Jn. vi. 37, xvii. 2, 24; and for the thought, Lk. xv. 6, 9, 32; Ezek. xxxiv. 16. The expression is no evidence that Zaccheus was a heathen. Comp. τὰ ἄπολωλότα οἴκου Ἰσραήλ (Mt. x. 6, xv. 24).

11-28. § The Parable of the Pounds. It is probable that this is distinct from the Parable of the Talents (Mt. xxv. 14-30; comp. Mk. xiii. 34-36). It is more likely that Jesus should utter somewhat similar parables on different occasions than that Mt. or Lk. should have made very serious confusion as to the details of the parable as well as regards the time and place of its delivery.

Here Jesus is approaching Jerusalem, but has not yet entered it in triumph: apparently He is still in Jericho. In Mt. He is on the Mount of Olives a day or two after the triumphal entry. Here He addresses a mixed company publicly. In Mt. He is speaking privately to His disciples (xxiv. 3). Besides the difference in detail where the two narratives are parallel, there is a great deal in Lk. which is not represented in Mt. at all. The principal items are: (1) the introduction, ver. 11; (2) the high birth of the chief agent and his going into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, ver. 12; (3) his citizens hating him and sending an ambassadors after him to repudiate him, ver. 14; (4) the signal vengeance taken upon these enemies, ver. 27; (5) the conclusion, ver. 28. Strauss supposes that Lk. has mixed up two parables, the Parable of the Pounds, which is only another version of the Parable of the Talents in Mt., and another which might be called the Parable of the Rebellious Citizens, consisting of vv. 12, 14, 15, 27. Without denying the possibility of this hypothesis, one may assert that it is unnecessary. As regards the Talents and the Pounds, Chrysostom pronounces them to be distinct, while Augustine implies that they are so, for he makes no attempt to harmonize them in his De Consensu Evangelistarum. Even in the parts that are common to the two parables the differences are very considerable. (1) In the Talents we have a householder leaving home for a time, in the Pounds a nobleman going in quest of a crown; (2) the Talents are unequally distributed, the Pounds equally; (3) the sums entrusted differ enormously in amount; (4) in the Talents the rewards are the same, in the Pounds they differ and are proportionate to what has been gained; (5) in the Talents the unprofitable servant is severely punished, in the Pounds he is merely deprived of his pound. Out of about 302 words in Mt. and 286 in Lk., only about 66 words or parts of words are common to the two. An estimate of the probabilities on each side seems to be favourable to the view that we have accurate reports of two different parables, and not two reports of the same parable, one of which, if not both, must be very inaccurate. And, while both parables teach that we must make good use of the gifts entrusted to us, that in Mt. refers to those gifts which are unequally distributed, that in Lk. to those in which all share alike. See Wright, Synopsis, § 138, p. 127.

The lesson of the parable before us is twofold. To the disciples of all classes it teaches the necessity of patiently waiting and actively working for Christ until He comes again. To the Jews it
gives a solemn warning respecting the deadly opposition which they are now exhibiting, and which will be continued even after His departure. There will be heavy retribution for those who persistently reject their lawfully appointed King. This portion of the parable is of special interest, because there is little doubt that it was suggested by contemporary history. Herod the Great, appointed procurator of Galilee by Julius Caesar B.C. 47 and tetrarch by Antony B.C. 41, went to Rome B.C. 40 to oppose the claims of Antigonus, and was made king of Judæa by the senate (Jos. Ant. xiv. 7, 3, 9, 2, 13, 1, 14, 4; B. J. i. 14, 4). His son Archelaus in like manner went to Rome to obtain the kingdom which his father, by a change in his will, had left to him instead of to Antipas. The Jews revolted and sent an ambassador of fifty to oppose him at Rome. Augustus, after hearing them and the Jews on the spot, confirmed Herod’s will, but did not allow Archelaus the title of king until he had proved his worthiness. This he never did; but he got his “kingdom” with the title of ethnarch (Ant. xvii. 8, 1, 9, 3, 11, 4; B. J. ii. 6, 1, 3). All this had taken place B.C. 4, in which year Antipas also went to Rome to urge his own claims against those of Archelaus. His more famous attempt to obtain the title of king did not take place until after this, and cannot be alluded to here. The remarkable feature of the opposing embassy makes the reference to Archelaus highly probable; and Jericho, which he had enriched with buildings, would suggest his case as an illustration. But the reference is by some held to be fictitious, by others is made a reason for suspecting that the author of this detail is not Christ but the Evangelist (Weiss).

11. Ακουώντων δὲ αὐτῶν ταῦτα. These words connect the parable closely with what precedes. The scene is still Jericho, in or near the house of Zacchæus; and, as ταῦτα seems to refer to the saying about σωτηρία (vv. 9, 10), αὐτῶν probably refers to the disciples and those with Zacchæus. The belief that the Kingdom was close at hand, and that Jesus was now going in triumph to Jerusalem, was probably general among those who accompanied Him, and the words just uttered might seem to confirm it. “But because they heard these things” (Mey.) is, however, not quite the meaning: rather, “And as they heard” (AV. RV.); hæc illis audientibus (Vulg.).

Here Cod. Bezae has one of its attempts to reproduce the gen. abs. in Latin: audientium autem eorum; comp. iii. 15, ix. 43, xxi. 5, 26, etc.

πρὸς τις εἶπεν παραβολὴν. Not, “He spoke, and added a parable” to what He spoke; but, “He added and spoke a parable” in connexion with what had preceded. Moris est Domino, præmissum sermonem parabolis adfirmare subjectis (Bede). It is a Hebraistic construction: comp. Gen. xxxviii. 5; Job xxix. 1; Gen.
xxv. 1. In Lk. xx. 11, 12; Acts xii. 3; Gen. iv. 2, viii. 12 we have another form of the same idiom, προσέθησαν πέμψαι, etc. See also on vi. 39 for εἴπεν παραβολήν.

The Latin equivalents are interesting: addidit dicens (a), adject et dixit (e), addidit dicere (s), adjiciens dixit (Vulg.). See also xx. 11.

diá τὸ ἕγγος εἶχαν 'l. About six hours' march; 150 stades (Jos. B. J. iv. 8. 3), or about 18 miles. The goal was almost in sight; the arrival could not be much longer delayed.

παραχρῆμα μέλλει . . . ἀναφαίνεσθαι. It is against this that the parable is specially directed. The Messiah was there; Jerusalem was only a few hours distant; the inauguration of the Kingdom must be imminent: παραχρῆμα is placed first with emphasis. The μέλλει, "is sure to," and ἀναφαίνεσθαι, "come to view," are both appropriate: they believed that they were certain of a glorious pageant. Comp. Acts i. 6.

12. εὐγενῆς. In a literal sense here and 1 Cor. i. 26; comp. Job i. 3: in a figurative sense Acts xvii. 11; comp. 4 Mac. vi. 5, ix. 23, 27. The μακράν, which is probably an adj. as in xv. 13, has obvious reference to παραχρῆμα: the distance would exclude an immediate return. Note the της.

λαβεῖν ἐαυτῷ βασιλείαν. If we had not the illustrations from contemporary history, this would be a surprising feature in the parable. He is a vassal of high rank going to a distant suzerain to obtain royal authority over his fellow-vassals. For ὑποστρέψαι see small print on i. 56; it tells us that the desired βασιλεία is at the starting point, not at a distance.

18. He plans that, during his absence, servants of his private household shall be tested, with a view to their promotion when he is appointed to be king.

δέκα δουλοὺς ἐαυτοῦ. "Ten bond-servants of his own." It does not follow, because we have not δέκα τῶν δ. αὐτῶν, that he had only ten slaves. This would require τῶν δ. δ., and would be very improbable; for an Oriental noble would have scores of slaves. The point of ἐαυτῶν ("his household slaves") is, that among them, if anywhere, he would be likely to find fidelity to his interests. As he merely wishes to test them, the sum committed to each is small,—about £4. In the Talents the householder divides the whole of his property (τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὐτῶν), and hence the sums entrusted to each slave are very large.

Πραγματεύσατε. "Carry on business," especially as a banker or a trader: here only in N.T., and in LXX only Dan. viii. 27 and some texts of 1 Kings ix. 19. Vulg. has negotiamini (not occupare), which Wic. renders "chaffare." The "occupy" of Rhem. and AV. comes from Cov. and Cran., while Tyn. has "buy and sell." We have a similar use of "occupy" Ezek. xxvii. 9, 16, 19, 21, 22,
where Vulg. has *negotiatio* and *negotiator*: comp. "occupy their business in great waters" (Ps. cvii. 23).

Latimer exhibits the same use of "occupy"; and in a letter of Thomas Cromwell to Michael Throgmorton, A.D. 1537, he calls Pole "a merchant and occupier of all deceits" (Froude, *Hist. of Eng.* ch. xiv.). "Occupy till I come" is now misunderstood to mean "keep possession till I come."

WH. are alone in reading *πραγματεύσαταί* here. All other editors make the verb 2nd pers. plur. imper. not infin. WH. regard the decision difficult both here and xiv. 17, but prefer the infin. here as "justified by St. Luke’s manner of passing from *oratio obliqua* to *oratio recta*" (ii. p. 309).

εν φόροις. "During the time in which I am coming," i.e. the time until the return. For *ερχομαι* in the sense of "come back" comp. Jn. iv. 16 and esp. xxi. 22, 23. The meaning "to be on the journey" (Oosterz. Godet) is impossible for *ερχομαι*. The reading *ἐσον* (TR. with E etc.) is an obvious correction of *ἐν φόροις* (N A B D K L R etc.).

14. While the δοῦλοι represent the disciples, the πολίται represent the Jews. The Jews hated Jesus without cause, *ἐμίσησάν με δομέας* (Jn. xv. 25; Ps. lxviii. 5): but they had reason enough for hating Archelaus, who had massacred about 3000 of them at the first Passover after his accession (Ant. xvii. 9. 3; B. J. ii. 1. 3).

*Où θέλομεν τούτον.* They state no reasons: *stat pro ratione voluntas.* The τούτον is contemptuous (*istum*), or at least expresses alienation: "he is no man of ours." So the Jews, of Christ.

15. For *Καὶ ἔγενε ... καὶ εἶπεν* see note p. 45, and for *ἐν τῷ ἐπανέλθειν* see on iii. 21. The double compound occurs only here and x. 35 in N.T. Comp. ἐπανάγειν (v. 3, 4). Both verbs occur in LXX.

τούς δοῦλους τούτους ὅσι. This implies that he had other slaves to whom nothing had been entrusted.

*Ταῦτα γινόμεν.* For this form comp. Mk. v. 43 and ix. 30. TR. with A etc. has *γινομέν* in all three places. The *τὰ* after *γινόμεν* (A R, Syrr. Arm. Goth. Vulg.) is not genuine: om. N B D L, Boh. Aeth. d e.

*τί διεπραγματεύσατο.* "What business they had done": here only in bibl. Grk. In Dion. Hal. iii. 72, it means "attempt to execute." He wants to know the result of their trafficking. But the word does not assume that they have "gained by trading" (AV. RV.); and hence *negotiatus esset* (Vulg.) is better than *lucratus esset* (f).

16. *η μὲν σοῦ προσηγήσατο.* "Thy pound worked out in addition, won": *modeste lucrum acceptum fert herili pecunia, non industria sua* (Grot.). Comp. ὅκι ἐγώ δέ ἄλλα *ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ* [ἡ] σῶν ἐμοί (1 Cor. xv. 10): see also 1 Cor. iv. 7. The verb occurs here only in bibl. Grk. Comp. Mt. xxv. 16.

17. *εἶγε.* In replies approving what has been said this is classical; but the reading is doubtful: *εἶγε* (B D, Latt., Orig. Ambr.), *εῖ*, possibly from Mt. xxv. 21 (N A R etc., Syrr.).
17-21. JOURNEYINGS TOWARDS JERUSALEM

ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ πιστὸς ἐγένου. “Thou didst prove faithful in a very little”: comp. xvi. 10. The management of $L 4$ was a small matter.

τοθί ἐξουσίαν ἔχον. The periphrastic pres. imper. is not common in N.T. Comp. Gen. i. 6; Burton, § 97. Lk. is probably translating: Mt. is much more classical: ἐνι πολλῶν σε καταστήσω (xxv. 21). For ἐξουσίαν ἔχον comp. Mt. vii. 29.


19. ἐπάνω γίνου. “Come to be over, be promoted over.” In both cases the efficient servants “receive as their reward,—not anything they can sit down to and enjoy,—but a wider sphere of activity” (Latham, Pastor Pastorum, p. 320). Urbs pro minā; minā ne tugurium quidem emeretur. Magna rerum amplētudo ac varietas in regno Dei, quanvis nondum cognita nobis (Beng.).

20. καὶ ὁ ἐτέρος. The omission of the article in A and inferior MSS. is a manifest correction to avoid a difficulty. As there were ten servants, the third cannot rightly be spoken of as ὁ ἐτέρος. Weiss takes this as evidence that in the original parable there were only three servants, as in the Talents; and therefore as evidence that the two narratives represent the same original. But it would have been tedious to have gone through all the ten, which is a round number, as in the Ten Virgins. The three mentioned are samples of the whole ten. Some gained immensely, some considerably, and some not at all. The two first classes having been described, the representative of the remaining class may be spoken of as ὁ ἐτέρος, especially as he is of quite a different kind. They both belong to the profitable division, he to the unprofitable.

ἡν εἶχον ἀποκειμένην. “Which I was keeping stored up.” He is not owning a fault, but professing a virtue: “I have not lost or spent any of it.” In Col. i. 5; 2 Tim. iv. 8; Heb. ix. 27 the verb is used of what is “stored up” and awaits us in the future: here only in a literal sense.

σουδαρίῳ. A Latinism: sudarium (Acts xix. 12; Jn. xi. 44, xx. 7). Comp. ἀσάφαριον (xii. 6), λεγιόν (viii. 30), δενδρίων (x. 35), κενταρίων (Mk. xv. 39), καλάρτης (Mt. v. 26), etc.

21. αὔτος. Here only in N.T. Comp. 2 Mac. xiv. 30, and see Trench, Syn. xiv. The word originally means “rough to the taste, stringent.” It is in this servant's plea and in the reply to it that the resemblance between the two parables of the Pounds and of the Talents is closest.

αἵρεσι δ' οὐκ ἑθήκας. Perhaps a current proverbial expression for a grasping person. We need not decide whether he means, “If I had gained anything, you would have taken it,” or, “If I had lost it, you would have held me responsible.” The general
sense is, "You are a strict man; and I have taken care that you should get back the exact deposit, neither more nor less."

22. κρίνω σε. "Do I judge thee?"; te judico (f Vulg.), condemno (e). Most editors prefer κρίνω, "will I judge" (AV. RV.); judicabo (a d). But Tyn. has "judge I thee" and Luth. richte ich dich. Hist. pres. (λέγει, xiii. 8, xvi. 7, 29) is very rare in Lk.

The Latin Versions vary greatly in rendering ποιητε: inique (d), infidelis (e ff. i r), crudelis (b), nequa et piger (f), infidelis et piger (q), infidelis et male (a), nequam (Vulg.). Comp. Mt. xviii. 32. The piger comes from Mt. xxv. 26, ποιητε δοθε καλ δκηρε.

23. ε anv τραπεζαν. "On a banker's table." Here the interrogation ends, and καγω begins a declaratory sentence. It would have been very little trouble to put it in a bank. There the money would have been as safe as in the napkin, and would have borne interest. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 580.

The often quoted saying, "Show yourselves tried bankers," Γνωσθε τραπεζαι δοκιμα, may easily be a genuine utterance of Christ. But if it is a mere adaptation, it comes from Mt. xxv. 27 rather than from Lk. See Resch, Agrapha, pp. 118, 234; Wsctt. Int. to Gosp. App. C.

τοκω. In N.T. the word occurs only in these parables; but is freq. in LXX; Deut. xxiii. 19; Lev. xxv. 36, 37; Exod. xxii. 25, etc. The notion that money, being a dead thing, ought not to breed (τεκειν, τοκοσ), augmented the prejudice of the ancients against interest. Aristotle condemns it as πορα φύσιν (Pol. i. 10. 4; comp. Eth. Nic. iv. 1. 40). Cicero represents Cato as putting it on a level with murder (De Off. ii. 25. 89). "The breed of barren metal" (Shaks.).

εν αυτω επραξα. The protasis is readily understood from the previous question: comp. Heb. x. 2. For this use of πράσαν see on iii. 13.

24. τωσ παρεστωσαν. His attendants, or body-guard, or courtiers: comp. i Kings x. 8; Esth. iv. 5. The man who had proved most efficient in service is rewarded with an additional sum with which to traffic for his sovereign.

25. The subject of ειπαν and the meaning of αυτω are uncertain. The common interpretation is that the attendants who have received this order here express their surprise to the master who gave it; i.e. the remonstrance is part of the parable. But it is possible that Lk. is here recording an interruption on the part of the audience, and thus lets us see with what keen interest they have listened to the narrative. It is the audience who remonstrate with Christ for giving the story such a turn. They think that He is spoiling the parable in assigning the unused pound to the servant who has most and therefore seems to need it least (see on xx. 15). But in any case the remonstrance serves to give point to
the declaration which follows. Comp. Peter's interruption and Christ's apparent ignoring of it xii. 41, 42; and again xviii. 28, 29. In all the cases there is an indirect answer. A general principle is stated which covers the point in question.

Bleek rejects ver. 25 as an interpolation: om. D 69, b d e ff. q, Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. The difficulty might cause the omission. The insertion of γαρ after λέγω in ver. 26 (A D R, Syrr. Goth.) is due to a similar cause. Both omission and insertion may be influenced by Mt. xxv. 28, 29.

26. λέγω υμῖν. Whose words are these? The answer will partly depend upon the view taken of ver. 25. If the interruption is made by the king's attendants, then ver. 26, like ver. 24 and ver. 27, gives the words of the king. But if the interruption comes from Christ's audience, then ver. 26 may be His reply to the audience; after which He finishes the parable with the king's words in ver. 27. The λέγω υμῖν does not prove that Christ is giving these words as His own: comp. xiv. 24. But in any case, either in His own person or in that of the king in the parable, Jesus is stating a principle which answers the objection in ver. 25. In Mt. xxv. 29 this principle is uttered by the householder in the parable without λέγω ὑμῖν.

ἀπὸ δὲ τοῦ μὴ ἔχοντος. With this apparent paradox comp. viii. 18, when an unused gift is spoken of, not as δὲ ἔχει, but as δὲ δοκεῖ ἔχειν. He alone possesses, who uses and enjoys his possessions.

27. πλὴν τοὺς ἐχθροὺς μου τούτους. The τούτους represents the enemies as present to the thoughts of the audience: comp. τούτους in ver. 15. It is possible to take the pronoun with what follows, as in Syr-Sin.: "Bring hither mine enemies, those who would not," etc. And this makes one more witness for the reading ἐκεῖνος (A D R etc., Latt. Syrr. Goth.), which almost all editors reject as a correction of ἐκεῖνος (~BK L M II, Aegyptt.). For πλὴν comp. xviii. 8.

κατασφάζετε αὐτοὺς ἐμπροσθέν μου. Comp. ἐσφαζεν Σαμουηλ τον Ἀγάγ ἐνώπιον Κυρίου (1 Sam. xv. 33). The punishment of rebellious subjects and active opponents is far more severe than that of neglectful servants. The compound κατασφάζω occurs nowhere else in N.T., but is not rare in LXX. It means "hew them down, slay them utterly." The destruction of Jerusalem and the doom of all who deliberately rebel against Christ are here foreshadowed. Augustine more than once points to this sentence in answer to the objection that the severe God of the O.T. cannot be identical with the God of Love in the N.T. In the Gospels, as in the Law, the severity of God's judgments against wilful disobedience is plainly taught. Comp. Con. Faust. xxii. 14. 19.

The nobleman, who goes on a long journey and returns a
king, is Christ. He leaves behind Him servants of various degrees of merit, and enemies. When the King returns, each of these is rewarded or punished according to his deserts; and the rewards are larger opportunities of service. There is no special meaning in ten, which is a round number; nor in three, which gives a sufficiently representative classification. And it may be doubted whether there is any special meaning in the transfer of the pound from the unprofitable to the most profitable servant. The point is that to neglect opportunities is to lose them; and that to make the most of opportunities is to gain others. The main lesson of the parable is the long period of Christ’s absence, during which there will be abundant time for both service and rebellion. There is not to be, as the disciples fancied, immediate triumph and joy for all; but, first a long time of probation, and then triumph and joy for those only who have earned them, and in exact proportion to their merits.

28. Historical conclusion, corresponding to the historical introduction in ver. 11.

ἐπορευόμενον εἰμπροσθεν. “He went on before.” Although the αὐτῶν is not expressed, this probably means “in front of the disciples”: comp. Mk. x. 32. But εἰμπροσθεν may = εἰς τὸ εἰμπροσθεν (ver. 4), as ὄριον = εἰς τὰ ὄρια (Mt. xxiv. 18): in which case the meaning would be, “He went forwards” from Jericho towards Jerusalem. With ἀναβαίνων comp. κατεβάνων (x. 30) of the opposite route.

D omits εἰμπροσθεν and a d have simply ibat; c f f, i q r, s abit, while Vulg. has praeceedebat. D inserts δὲ after ἀναβαίνων. Syr-Sin. reads, “And when He had said these things, they went out from there. And as He was going up to Jerusalem, and had reached Bethphage,” etc.

XIX. 29—XXI. 38. THE LAST DAYS OF PUBLIC TEACHING.

29–40. The Triumphal Procession to Jerusalem. Mt. xxi. 1–11; Mk. xi. 1–11. Comp. Jn. xii. 1–19. “The Journeyings towards Jerusalem” are over, and Lk. now permanently rejoins the other Gospels in describing the concluding scenes. As compared with them, he has both additions and omissions. He omits the supper at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, which Mt. and Mk. place without date after the triumphal entry, but which Jn. states to have taken place before the entry. Lk. has already given a similar incident, a meal at which Jesus is a guest and a woman anoints Him (vii. 36–50), and perhaps for
that reason omits the supper at Bethany. The chronology may be tentatively arranged thus. Jn. tells us that Jesus arrived at Bethany six days before the Passover, viz. Nisan 8, a day on which pilgrims often arrived at Jerusalem, as Josephus states. Assuming that the year is A.D. 30, Nisan 8 would be Friday, March 31. Jesus and His disciples reached Bethany that afternoon, either before the sabbath began, or after having done no more than “a sabbath day’s journey” after it began. But the chronology of these last days, as of the whole of our Lord’s life, is uncertain. At Bethany He would part from the large caravan of pilgrims in whose company He had been travelling. Most of these would press on to Jerusalem. See Wieseler, Chron. Syn. v. 2, Eng. tr. p. 358, and comp. Caspari, Chron. Einl. § 165, Eng. tr. p. 217.

29. Ἰηθφαγή. Accent, derivation, and site are all doubtful. But Ἰηθφαγή is preferable to Ἰηθφαγή; the meaning is probably “House of unripe figs,” and the situation must have been near Bethany. See Robinson, Res. in Pal. i. 433; Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 422; D.B.2 s.v. Caspari, following Lightfoot, contends that Bethphage was not a village, but a whole district, including Bethany and all that lay between it and Jerusalem. The meaning in this case would be, that Jesus drew near to the district Bethphage and to the particular spot in it called Bethany (Chron. Einl. § 144, 145, Eng. tr. pp. 189–191). The passage is worthy of study. In N.T. Bethphage is mentioned in these three narratives only; in O.T. not at all. The Talmud says that it was east of the walls of Jerusalem. Origen, Eusebius, and Jerome knew it, but do not describe its position. Its being placed first points to its being more important than Bethany.

The derivation of Bethany is still more uncertain, but its site is well ascertained. The conjecture “House of dates” is confirmed by the adjacent “House of figs” and “Mount of olives.” The names point to the ancient fertility of the neighbourhood.

tο καλοφύλετον Ἑλαιών. Here also there is doubt about the accent, which in this case, as in κήπος (ver. 22), affects the meaning. In Mt. and Mk. the article, τὸν Ἑλαιῶν, shows that the word is gen. plur.; but here, with Lach. Tisch. Treg. and others, we may write Ἑλαιῶν, as nom. sing. In that case the name is treated as a sound and not declined. In xxii. 37 the same doubt arises. Acts i. 12 we have Ἑλαιῶνος, as in Ant. vii. 9. 2, from Ἑλαιῶν, Olivetum, “an olive-grove, Olivet.” But ver. 37 and the parallels in Mt. and Mk. render Ἑλαιῶν the more probable here (WH. ii. App. p. 158: so also Hahn, Wittichen, and Wetzel). The fact that Ἑλαιῶν commonly has the article is not decisive (Field, Otium Norvici. iii. p. 53).
In ver. 29 note the characteristic ἐγένετο and καλοῦμενον: In the latter we have an indication that Lk. is writing for those not familiar with Palestine: comp. xxi. 37, xxii. 1. Neither occurs in the parallels in Mt. and Mk. Note also ὅς = "when" and ἐγείρετε.

30. Ἐγείρετε. So also Mk., while Mt. has his favourite πορεύεσθε. The details which Mk. alone records render the conjecture that Peter was one of the two who were sent reasonable.

τὴν κατέναντι κώμην. Whether Bethany, or Bethphage, or an unnamed village, is quite uncertain. This compound preposition is not found in profane writers, but is common in bibl. Grk. (Mt. xxi. 2; Mk. xi. 2; Rom. iv. 17; 2 Cor. xii. 19; Exod. xix. 2, xxxii. 5, etc.). L. & S. Lex. quote C. I. 2905 D. 13.

ἐφ' ὑπὸ οὐδείς πώποτε ἀνθρώπων ἐκάθισεν. This intimates to the disciples that it is no ordinary journey which He contemplates, but a royal progress: comp. Deut. xxi. 3; Num. xix. 2; 1 Sam. vi. 7. The birth of a virgin and the burial in a new tomb are facts of the same kind.

31. οὖν ἔρειτε ὅτι. Vulg. and AV. make ὅτι the answer to Διὰ τί; So also Mey. and Hahn. But in Mt. xxi. 3 we have ὅτι and no διὰ τί; In both places the ὅτι is recitative. Comp. vii. 16, xxii. 70.

Ὁ κύριος. This rather implies that the owner has some knowledge of Jesus. Lk. omits the assurance that the owner will send the colt. That the whole had been previously arranged by Jesus is possible, for He gives no intimation that it was not so. But the impression produced by the narratives is that the knowledge is supernatural, which on so momentous an occasion would be in harmony with His purpose. Comp. Jn. xiv. 29, xvi. 32, xxii. 18, and see on Lk. xxii. 10, 13, 34. As Godet points out, this prophetic knowledge must not be confounded with omniscience.

32. καθὼς εἶπεν. "Exactly as He said." This καθὼς, in slightly different connexions, is in all three narratives. Mt. has "they did even as He appointed"; Mk., "they said to them even He said"; Lk., "they found even as He said." They could not have done and said just what He had commanded, unless the facts had been such as He had foretold. Lk. and Mk., as writing for Gentiles, take no notice of the prophecy in Zech. ix. 9, which both Mt. and Jn. quote.

Justin, in order to make the incident a fulfilment of Gen. xlix. 11, "Binding his foal unto the vine," etc., says that the πῶλος was πρὸς ἄμπελον δὲ δεδεμένος (Apol. i. 32). Syr-Sin. omits most of v. 33.

33. οἱ κύριοι αὐτῶν. The owner of the colt and those with him: τινες τῶν ἐκεί ἐστηκότων (Mk.). In all three narratives Jesus
uses the singular. A fiction would have made exact correspondence by representing the remonstrance as coming from one person only. Mt. omits the fulfilment of the predicted remonstrance.

35. αὐτῶν τὰ ἰμάτια. The pronoun stands first with emphasis: they did not spare their own chief garments. Comp. ἐαυτῶν in ver. 36.

In both verses readings vary: here TR. with A R etc. has ἐαυτῶν, while B D L, Orig. have αὐτῶν: there TR. with N D has αὐτῶν, while A B K have ἐαυτῶν. The best editors are unanimous for αὐτῶν here.

ἐπεβίβασαν. Lk. alone tells us of their placing Him on the colt. The other three merely state that He sat on it.1 Nowhere in O.T. do we find kings thus mounted. While there is much in this triumphal process that tells of royalty, there is also something which adds, “My Kingdom is not of this world” (Godet). Against carnal chiliastic notions of the Kingdom this entry on “a colt the foal of an ass” is an ἰρώνια ῥeαλ理性 ordained by the Lord Himself (Nösken, Gesch. J. Chr. p. 506). For ἐπιβιβάζω comp. x. 34; Acts xxiii. 24: it is not rare in LXX.

36. ὑπεστρέψων τὰ ἰμάτια. Change of subject: it is the multitude that does this. Robinson tells how the people of Bethlehem spread their garments before the horses of the English consul and his suite (Res. in Pal. i. p. 473): other instances in Wetst. on Mt. xxi. 8. Lk. omits the branches strewn in the way. All three omit the multitude with palm branches coming from Jerusalem to meet the procession (Jn. xii. 13, 18).

37. Here every word differs from the wording of the others, although the substance is the same. As marks of style note ἀπαντά, πληθῶς, φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, πασῶν δὲν. The ἰησοῦ is amphibolous, and may be taken either with ἐγγίζωντος (AV.) or with πρὸς τῇ κατάβασις (RV.): see on xvii. 22 and xviii. 31. In either case πρὸς τῇ κατάβασις is epexegetic of ἐγγίζωντος, “When He was drawing nigh, viz. at the descent,” etc. It is at the top of this descent that the S.E. corner of the “City of David” (but not the temple) comes in sight; and the view thus opening may have prompted (ἡράσκω) this “earliest hymn of Christian devotion” (Stanley). Many of the pilgrims were from Galilee, where Jesus still had enthusiastic friends.

The reading πρὸς τὴν κατάβασιν (D) is an obvious correction. D M ] with a d e Syr. Aeth. omit ἰησοῦ. In both readings D is supported by Syr-Sin., “When they came near to the descent,” etc. With this plur. comp. that of Syr-Sin. in ver. 28.

1 Mk. says ἔτει αὐτῶν (τῶν πώλων), Jn. ἔτει αὐτῶν (διάρίσκει). Mt. alone mentions both the colt and its mother and continues the plural throughout; ἐπέθηκαν ἔτει αὐτῶν τὰ ἰμάτια, καὶ ἐπεκάθισαν ἐπάνω αὐτῶν: over which Strauss is sarcastically critical.
The Latin Versions are interesting in what follows. Nearly all MSS. of Vulg. have *omnes turbw descendentium*, which is a mere slip for *discentium* (τῶν μαθητῶν), a reading preserved in G M of Vulg. as in Codd. Am. and Brix. *Discentes* was substituted for *discipuli* possibly to show that a larger body than the Twelve was meant. Cod. Bezae has *discentes* Jn. vi. 66, xxi. 2, while almost all have it Jn. xxi. 12, and c has it Lk. xxii. 45. Comp. Tert. Prascr. iii.

δυνάμεως. The healing of Bartimæus and the raising of Lazarus would be specially mentioned.

For δυνάμεως D has *gammaiēn, quae fieabant (d), factis (r); om. Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin.*

38. ἔλογγημένος ὁ ἐρχόμενος... ἐν ὀνόματι Κυρίου. In these words all four agree. Lk. and Jn. add ὁ βασιλεὺς, which in Mk. is represented by ἦ ἐρχομένη βασιλεία and in Mt. ὦ σαράντα τῶν εὐαγγελίων. Lk. substitutes δόξα (more intelligible to Gentiles) for the Hosanna of the other three. See on ii. 14. "He that cometh in the name of the Lord" means God's representative, envoy, or agent. The words ἐν σωφροσύνη εἰρήνη are in Lk. alone, and are perhaps part of his paraphrase of Hosanna. Heaven is the abode of God, and there is peace there because man is reconciled to God, or perhaps because peace is now prepared for man in the heavenly Kingdom.

These cries (comp. iv. 34) clearly recognize Jesus as the Messiah. The Psalms from which they come were sung at the Passover and at the F. of Tabernacles, and hence were familiar to the people. Ps. cxviii. is said by some to have been written for the F. of Tabernacles after the Return, by others for the dedication of the second temple. The supposition that the Evangelists have confounded the Passover with the F. of Tabernacles, and have transferred to the former what was customary at the latter, is gratuitous. These responses from the Hallel were sung, not only at the Passover, but at other Feasts; and the waving of palm branches was not confined to the F. of Tabernacles (1 Mac. xiii. 51). See Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 371.

Hase calls attention to the audacity of the whole transaction. Jesus and His disciples were under the ban of the hierarchy. The Sanhedrin had issued a decree that, if any one knew where He was, he should give information, that they might arrest Him (Jn. xi. 57). And yet here are His disciples bringing Him in triumph into Jerusalem, and the populace enthusiastically joining with them. Moreover, all this had been arranged by Jesus Himself, when He sent for the colt. What He had hitherto concealed, or obscurely indicated, or revealed only to a chosen few, He now, seeing that the fulness of time is come, makes known to the whole world. He publicly claims to be the Messiah. This triumphal procession is the Holy One of God making solemn entry into the Holy City. Hase is justly severe on Strauss for the way in which he changed his view from edition to edition: the truth being that the triumphal entry is an historical fact, too well attested to be discredited (Gesch. Jesu, § 94).

39, 40. Here Lk. is alone, not only in wording, but in substance. The remonstrance of these Pharisees is intrinsically probable. Having no power to check the multitude (Jn. xii. 19),
and perhaps not daring to attempt it, they call on Jesus to do so. Possibly they wished to fasten the responsibility upon Him, and they may have been sent by the Sanhedrin to spy and report. This Messianic homage was offensive to them, and they feared a tumult which might cause trouble with Pilate.

39. ἀπὸ τοῦ δρακόντος. It matters very little whether we take these words with τινες τῶν Φ. (AV. RV.) or with εἶπαν (Weiss, Hahn). Perhaps Διδάσκαλε implies that He is no more than a teacher: it is the way in which His critics and enemies commonly address Him (vii. 40, xx. 21, 28; Mt. xii. 38, etc.). But comp. xxi. 7; Mk. iv. 38.

Syr-Sin. has, “Some of the people from amongst the crowd said unto Him, Good Teacher, rebuke Thy disciples, that they shout not.”

40. Christ’s reply is of great sternness. It implies that their failure to appreciate the significance of the occasion is amazing in its fatuity. It is not likely that there is any reference to the crashing of the stones at the downfall of Jerusalem (Lange, Oosterzee). Perhaps οἱ λόγοι κραδύλους was already a proverbial expression. Comp. λίθος ἐκ τοῦ ἄμαρτμον βοήθεσαι (Hab. ii. 11): Parites, medius fidius, ut mihi videntur, tibi gratias agere gestiunt (Cic. Marcel. iii.) and see other illustrations in Wetst. Nothing is gained by making οἱ λόγοι figurative: “men of stony hearts”; such an event “might rouse even the dullest to rejoice” (Neander). Comp. iii. 8.

ἐὰν . . . σωπήσωσιν. This is the abundantly attested reading (ABL Δ). With the exceptional constr. comp. ἐὰν μὴ τις δημήτρις (Acts viii. 31); ἐὰν οὐκ εἰσέρχεται (1 Thes. iii. 8); ἐὰν οἴδαιμον (1 Jn. v. 15); ἐὰν προσφέρει; (Lev. i. 14). In Jn. viii. 36 and Rom. xiv. 8 the indic. is probably a false reading. Win. xli. 2 (b), p. 360; Lft. Επ. p. 46; Simcox, Lang. of N.T. p. 110; Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 29.

There is no authority for inserting max (Beza), “shortly” (Genev.), or “immediately” (AV.) with “cry out.”

The reading κεκράκωσται (AR.) is a substitution of the form which is most common in LXX (Ps. lxiv. 14; Job xxxv. 9; Jer. xi. 11, 12, xlvii. 2, etc.). See Veitch, s.v. “The simple fut. perf. does not occur in N.T.” Burton, § 93.

41-44. § The Predictive Lamentation of Jesus over Jerusalem. The spot where these words must have been uttered can be ascertained with certainty, although tradition, as in other cases (see on iv. 29), has fixed on an impossible site. See the famous description by Stanley, Sin. & Pal. pp. 190–193, together with that of Tristram (Land of Israel, p. 174), part of which is quoted in the Eng. tr. of Caspari’s Chron. Einl. p. 188. See also Tristram, Bible Places, p. 125. This lamentation must not be confounded with the one recorded xiii. 34, 35; Mt. xxiii. 37.

41. ἐκλαυσθεν. Stronger than ἐδάκρυσεν (Jn. xi. 35): it implies wailing and sobbing. It is used of the widow at Nain (vii. 13),
the penitent in the Pharisee’s house (vii. 38), and the mourners
in the house of Jairus (viii. 52). It was the sight of the city and
the thought of what might have been, which called forth the
lamentation. The attitude of the Pharisees had just shown Him
what the real condition of the city was. Christianity is sometimes
accused of being opposed to the spirit of patriotism: but there is
depth patriotism in this lamentation.

With εν ἀντίν comp. xxiii. 28; Rev. i. 7, xviii. 9. In class. Grk. we
have εν ἀντίν, but more often ἀντίν without a prep. Here TR. with E
etc. has εν ἀντίν.

42. Εἰ δὲνώς ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ταύτῃ καὶ σὺ τὰ πρῶς εἰρήνην—This
is probably correct; but the text is somewhat uncertain. The
aposiopesis is impressive. In the expression of strong emotion
sentences are often broken: xxii. 42; Jn. vi. 62, xii. 27; Exod.
xxxii. 32. Win. lxiv. 2, p. 749. The words imply that there have
been various opportunities, of which this is the last. Thus once
more (ποικάκες, xiii. 34) the synoptic narrative is found to imply
the Judaean ministry recorded by Jn. The καὶ σὺ perhaps implies
no comparison: “even thou” (AV. RV.). But if “thou also”
(Rhem.) be preferred, it probably means, “as well as My disciples.”
For the wish comp. Deut. xxxii. 29. The protasis, “If thou hadst
known,” does not imply any such definite apodosis as, “Thou
wouldest weep as I do, for thy past blindness”; or, “Thou
wouldest not perish”; or, “Thou wouldest hear Me and believe”; or,
“I would rejoice like My disciples”; all of which have been
suggested (Corn. à Lap. ad loc.). The expression is virtually a
wish, “O that thou hadst known.” Comp. εἰ δὲνώς μάχαραν ἐν
τῇ χερεὶ μου (Num. xxii. 29); εἰ κατεμείναμεν καὶ κατωκίσθημεν
παρὰ τῶν Ἰορδάνων (Jos. vii. 7); εἰ ἦκουνας τῶν ἐντολῶν μου (Is.
xlviii. 18). In all these places Vulg. has utinam, and RV. either
“would that” or “O that.” For τὰ πρῶς εἰρήνην see on xiv. 32.
There is possibly an allusion to the name Jerusalem, which perhaps
means “inheritance of peace.”

The καὶ γε before ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (TR. with A R) can hardly be genuine;
om. Ν B D L, Boh. Aeth. Goth. Iren-lat. Orig. The σου after ἡμέρᾳ is
still more certainly an insertion; om. Ν A B D L, Boh. Aeth. Arm. Iren-lat.
Orig. Eus. Bas. The σου after εἰρήνην has the support of Versions, but is
just the kind of addition which is common in Versions; om. Ν B L, Iren-lat.
Orig. Epiph. Godet naively remarks, Les deux mots καὶ γε et σου ont une
grande valeur; which explains the insertion. Elsewhere in N.T. καὶ γε
occurs only Acts ii. 18 in a quotation.

νῦν δὲ. “But now, as things are.” The actual fact is the
reverse of the possibility just intimated. Comp. Jn. viii. 40,
ix. 41; 1 Cor. vii. 14, xii. 20.

Jn. xii. 38-40. The nom. to ἐκρύβη is not "the fact that (ὅτι) days will come," etc. (Theoph.), but τὰ πρὸς εἰρήνην. For the form ἐκρύβη see Veitch, s.v.

43. ὅτι ἤθεσαν ἡμέραν. "Because days will come"; not "the days" (AV. RV.): see on v. 35 and xvii. 22. *Dies multii, quia unum diem non observas* (Beng.). The ὅτι probably depends upon εἰ ἔγνως: "Would that thou hadst known in time; because the consequences (now inevitable) of not knowing are terrible." Or ὅτι may introduce the explanation of νῦν δὲ ἐκρύβη: "They are hid from thine eyes, because the very reverse of peace will certainly come upon thee." But in any case ὅτι is "because, for," not "that." For the constr. see Blass, *Gr.* p. 256.

It is not easy to decide between παρεμβαλότων (X C* L), which Tisch. and WH. prefer, and περιβαλότων (TR. with A B etc.). D has καὶ βαλότων ἐπὶ σῆ. In LXX παρεμβαλέων is freq. for "to encamp": Num. i. 50, ii. 17, 27, iii. 38, xxxiii. 10, ii. 12, 13, etc. Here it would mean "cast up in front" or "plant in beside," rather than "surround." In Vulg., through carelessness on Jerome's part, *circumdabunt* is used to translate both περιβαλότων and περικυκλώσωσιν, although earlier Lat. texts distinguish. Similarly we have *pressura* for both ἀνάγη (xxi. 23) and *συνοχή* (xxi. 25). For a converse inaccuracy see on xxiv. 14.

χάρακα. From meaning a single stake (vallus), χάραξ comes to mean, not only a "palisade" (vallum) but a "rampart" or "palisaded mound" (vallum and agger combined). This is its meaning here: comp. Is. xxxvii. 33; Ezek. iv. 2, xxvi. 8; Jos. *Vita*, xliii. In Ezek. iv. 2 we have περιβαλεῖς ἐπὶ αὐτὴν χάρακα. "Pale" (Wic.), "rampars" (Gen.), and "bank" (Tyn. Cov. RV.) are all preferable to "trench" (Rhem. AV.). It is said that these details show that the prophecy has been re-worded to fit the event more precisely and that therefore this Gospel was written after A.D. 70. The argument is precarious, although the conclusion is probable. At any rate it is worthy of note that neither here nor elsewhere does Lk. call attention to the fulfilment of the prophecy, as he does in the case of Agabus (Acts xi. 28). To those who assume that Jesus was unable to foresee the siege of Jerusalem, the amount of detail in the prediction is not of much moment. But it is not logical to maintain that Jesus could foresee the siege, but could not have foreseen these details; or to maintain that He would make known the coming siege, but would not make known the details. What is there in these details which is not common to all sieges? Given the siege, any one might add them. *Il n’est pas nécessaire pour cela d’être prophète* (Godet). Moreover it is possible that Jesus is freely reproducing Is. xxix. 3: καὶ κυκλώσω ἐπὶ σέ, καὶ βαλῶ ἐπὶ σὲ χάρακα, καὶ θησον περὶ σὲ πύργους. In both cases note the solemn effect of the simple co-ordination of sentences with καὶ: here we have καὶ five times.
Note also the impressive repetition of the pronoun: we have σου, σοι, or σε ten times in two verses. For the fulfilment of this prophecy see Jos. B.J. v. 6. 2, 12. 2. The Jews burnt the palisade, and then Titus replaced it with a wall. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 30.

συνέβουσιν σε πάντοθεν. One of Lk.’s favourite verbs: iv. 38, vii. 37, 45, xii. 50, xxii. 63; Acts vii. 57, xviii. 5, xxviii. 8. It is possibly medical (Hobart, p. 3). The adv. occurs elsewhere in N.T. in Mk. i. 45 and Heb. ix. 4 only: it is rare in LXX. This “keeping in on every side” was so severe that thousands died of famine (Jos. B.J. v. 12. 3, vi. 1. 1).

44. ἐδαφιοῦσιν σε καὶ τὰ τέκνα σου ἐν σοί. Not a case of zeugma, for ἐδαφίζειν may mean “dash to the ground” (RV.) quite as well as “lay even with the ground” (A.V.), and the former will apply to both buildings and human beings. Comp. ἐδαφίζα τὰ νῆσιά σου πρὸς τὴν τέταραν (Ps. cxxxvii. 9); καὶ τὰ ὕποτήρθα αὐτῶν ἐδαφισθέσονται (Hos. xiv. 1). In Amos ix. 14 ἡδαφοσκέμανα is a false reading for ἡφανσιμένας, and therefore the passage gives no support to the rendering, “raze, level to the ground.” Field, Otium Norvic. iii. p. 53. Add in confirmation, τὰ νῆσια αὐτῆς ἐδαφιοῦσιν (Nah. iii. 10). The AV. translation, “lay thee even with the ground,” makes this tautological with “not leave in thee one stone upon another.” The τέκνα are all the inhabitants, not the young only.

The Latin Versions are interesting: ad terram prosternent (f Vulg.); ad terram consternent (some MSS. of Vulg.); ad terram sternent (E); ad solum deponent (e); ad nihilum deducent (d); pavimentabant (a). In class. Lat. pavimentare means “to cover with a pavement” (Cic. Q. Fr. iii. 1. 1). Comp. the double meaning of “to floor.”

οὐκ ἀφήσουσιν λίθον ἐπὶ λίθον. Comp. ὅπως μὴ καταλειφθῇ ἐκεῖ μὴ λίθος (2 Sam. xvii. 13); κατασπάσω εἰς χάος τοὺς λίθους αὐτῆς (Mic. i. 6). For ἀνθήνει see on i. 20 and xii. 3.

οὐκ ἔγνως τὸν καίρον τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς σου. “Thou didst not recognize the time in which God visited thee”—ἐπεσκέψατο σε. The whole of this period of opportunity, which culminated ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ταύτης was unnoted and unused. Like ἐπισκέπτομαι (see on i. 68), ἐπισκοπή is a neutral term, and may imply either blessing or punishment. Here and 1 Pet. ii. 12 (not v. 6) in the former sense, as in Gen. i. 24; Job xxix. 4; Ecclus. xviii. 20; and perhaps Wisd. iii. 7. In the sense of visiting with punishment it does not occur in N.T., but in LXX of Jer. x. 15; Is. x. 3, xxix. 6; Wisd. xiv. 11, xix. 15. It is not found in class. Grk. For τὸν καίρον Syr-Sin. has “the day.”

Here Lk. rather abruptly ends his account of the triumphal procession. The actual entry into the city is not recorded by him. The proposal of Schleiermacher and others to distinguish two triumphal entries, one unexpected and unannounced, recorded by the three, and one expected and arranged, re-
corded by S. John, is no real help. Does the hypothesis make either record more intelligible? What good purpose would a second triumphal procession serve? Would the Romans have allowed this popular Teacher to enter the city a second time with a tumultuous crowd hailing Him as King?

45, 46. The Second Cleansing of the Temple. Mt. xxvi. 12, 13; Mk. xi. 15-17. Both Mt. and Mk. record the entry into Jerusalem. The latter tells us how He entered the city and the temple, and having “looked round about upon all things,” went back in the evening to Bethany with the Twelve (ver. 11). It was the day following that He returned to Jerusalem and cleansed the temple, the cursing of the barren fig-tree taking place on the way. Lk. omits the latter, and records the former very briefly. He groups the cleansing and the subsequent teaching in the temple with the triumphal procession as a series of Messianic acts. They are all parts of the last great scene in which Jesus publicly assumed the position of the Christ.

That this is a second cleansing, and not identical with Jn. ii. 14-22, may be regarded as reasonably certain. What is gained by the identification, which involves a gross chronological blunder on the part of either Jn., who places it at the beginning of Christ’s ministry, or of the others, who place it at the very end? Could any of those who were present, John or Peter, transfer so remarkable an event from one end of their experiences to the other? Such confusion in memory is not probable, especially when we consider the immense changes which distinguish the last Passover in the ministry from the first. That the three should omit the first cleansing is only natural, for they omit the whole of the early Judean ministry. Jn. omits the second, as he omits the institution of the Eucharist and many other things, because it has been recorded already, and is not necessary for the plan of his Gospel. On the other hand, there is no difficulty in the supposition that the temple was twice cleansed by Jesus. He was not so reverenced in Jerusalem that one such act would put an end to the scandal for ever. The hierarchy would be glad of this opportunity for publicly treating His authority with contempt; and this would be the more easy, as Jesus does not seem to have kept the next Passover at Jerusalem (Jn. vi. 4). If a year or two later He found that the evil had returned, and perhaps increased, would He not be likely to act as He did before? There are differences in the details as given by Jn. and by the others, which confirm the view that he and they are recording different events.

45. εἰσελθὼν εἰς τὸ ἱερόν. If we had no other account, we should suppose that this took place on the same day as the triumphal entry. But as Lk. gives no note of time, there is no discrepancy between him and Mk. The Court of the Gentiles is meant. The traffic would be great as the Passover drew near; and, as the hierarchy profited by it, we may be sure that they would try to make the attempt to stop it fail.

ηρέσατο ἐκβάλλειν. So also in Mk., whose account is specially graphic, as that of an eye-witness. In this respect the narrative in Jn. ii. 14 ff. is similar. Here perhaps ἦρεσατο ἐκβ. is merely the Hebraistic paraphrase for ἐξεβάλει (Mt. xxi. 12) or ἔξεβάλλειν. See on iii. 8 and xii. 45, and comp. LXX of Gen. ii. 3; Deut. i. 5;
Lk. 45-48.

Judg. i. 27, 35; 1 Esdr. iv. 1, 13, 33. Lk. omits the buyers, the money-changers, and the dove-sellers (Mt. Mk.); also His allowing no vessel to be carried through the temple (Mk.).

46. Here the three narratives are almost verbatim the same, and very different from Jn. ii. 15, 16. On the first occasion, He charged them not to make His Father’s house a house of traffic (ολκον ιμποριου): now He charges them with having made it a robbers’ den (στηλαιων ληστων). The scandal is worse than before. For a detailed description see Edersh. L. & T. i. pp. 364–374; also a remarkable passage in Renan, V. de J. p. 215, in which he points out how “antichristian” the traditions of the temple have always been. In the passage from Is. lvi. 7 Lk. substitutes ἔσται for κληθήσεται, and with Mt. omits πᾶσιν τοῖς ἐθνοις, which one would have expected Lk. to preserve. Would he have omitted this, if he had had Mk., who preserves it, before him? See on xx. 17. Comp. μὴ στήλαιων ληστῶν δ’ ολίκος μου οὐ ἐπικέκληται τὸ οἴνομά μου ἐπ’ αὐτῷ ἐκεί ἐνώπιον υμῶν; (Jer. vii. 11).

That καὶ ἔσται before δ’ ολίκος, and not ἔστων after προσευχῆς is the right reading is sufficiently attested by ἀς B L R, Arm., Orig. But it is very unnatural to take καὶ ἔσται with γέγραπται: “It stands written and shall be so.”

47, 48. The Publicity and Popularity of Christ’s Final Teaching. Mk. xi. 19. These two verses form a link between the sections before and after them, introducing the public work which followed the public entry. Comp. the similar notice with which the record of this brief period of public work closes, xxi. 37, 38.

47. ἡν διδάσκοντον. Periphrastic imperfect expressing continued action: iv. 31, v. 17, xiii. 10. For τὸ καθ’ ἡμέραν comp. xi. 3. Mt. says that He healed the blind and the lame who came to Him in the temple.

οἱ ἄρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς. So in all three. The activity of the hierarchy is in marked contrast to His: while He teaches and heals, they seek to destroy. Lk. alone mentions οἱ πρῶτοι τοῦ λαοῦ. The difference of designation is against their being identical with οἱ πρεσβύτεροι. Comp. Acts xiii. 50, xxv. 2, xxviii. 7, 17; Mk. vi. 21.

Jesus restait ainsi à Jérusalem un provincial admiré des provinciaux comme lui, mais repoussé par toute l’aristocratie de la nation. . . . Sa voix eut à Jérusalem peu d’éclat. Les préjugés de race et de secte, les ennemis directs de l’esprit de l’évangile, y étaient trop enracinés (Renan, V. de J. p. 344).

48. τὸ τί ποιήσωσιν. For this use of τὸ see on i. 62, and comp. vi. 11.

ὁ λαὸς γὰρ ἄπας. Not δχλος, not the mere crowd, but the whole nation, which was numerously represented. A mixed multitude of
Jews from all parts of the world was gathering there for the Passover. These would sympathize with His cleansing of the temple; and His miracles of healing would add to the attractiveness of His teaching. This representative multitude "hung on His lips, listening." Comp. pendet narrantis ab ore (Aen. iv. 79); narrantis conjux pendet ab ore viri (Ov. Her. i. 30). Other examples in Wetst. and McClellan. See on xi. 29.

The form εξεκρέματο (B, Orig.) is preferred by Tisch. and WH. It implies a pres. κρήμαμα. But εξεκρέματο, if genuine, is imperf. also. Veitch, s. κρήμαμα.

XX. 1-8. The Question of the Sanhedrin respecting the authority of Jesus. Mt. xxi. 23-27; Mk. xi. 27-33. Having given a general description of the activity of Jesus and of His enemies during these last days, Lk. now gives some illustrations of both. It was fear of the people which kept His opponents from proceeding against Him; and therefore their first object was to discredit Him with His protectors. Then they could adopt more summary measures.

None of the Evangelists enables us to answer with certainty the question whether the hierarchy had at first any idea of employing the sicarii to assassinate Jesus. Mt. xxvi. 4 might mean this. But more probably this and other notices of plots against the life of Jesus refer to the intention of getting Him out of the way by some legal process, either as a blasphemer or as a rebel against the Roman government. Of course, if a mob could be goaded into a fury and provoked to put Him to death (iv. 29; Jn. viii. 59, x. 31), this would suit their purpose equally well. The intrinsic probability of the controversies reported by the Evangelists as taking place after the triumphal entry is admitted even by Strauss.

If the tentative chronology suggested above be accepted, this conversation about authority took place probably two days after the entry, and on Tuesday, April 4, Nisan 12. This day is sometimes called the "Day of Questions." We have (1) the Sanhedrin asking about Authority, and (2) Christ's counter-question about the Baptist; (3) the Pharisees and Herodians asking about the Tribute; (4) the Sadducees asking about the Woman with Seven Husbands; (5) the Scribe asking which is the First Commandment; (6) Christ's question about Ps. cx. It is possible that on this day the question was asked about the Woman taken in Adultery; but that is too precarious to be worth more than a passing mention, although Renan places it here without doubt, and makes it the proximate cause of the arrest and death of Jesus (V. de J. p. 346). If it were included, we might group the questions pressed upon Christ thus: (i.) a personal question; (ii.) a political question; (iii.) a doctrinal question; (iv.) an ethical question; (v.) a question of discipline. Of hardly any day in our Lord's life have we so full a report. With Lk. xx. and xxi. comp. Mt. xxi. 18-xxvi. 5; Mk. xi. 20-xiv. 2; Jn. xii. 20-43. It includes at least four parables: the Two Sons (Mt. xxi. 28-32), the Wicked Husbandmen (Mt. xxi. 33-44; Mk. xii. 11; Lk. xx. 9-18), the Ten Virgins (Mt. xxv. 1-13), and the Talents (Mt. xxv. 14-30). The day may be considered the last working-day of Christ's ministry, the last of His public teaching, the last of activity in the temple, the last of instruction to the people and of warning to their leaders. "It is a picture with genuine Oriental local colouring.... We see Jesus sitting, surrounded
by a multitude awed into silence. They are all devoutly meditating on the great Messianic question. From time to time an emissary from His opponents steps up to Him, with Eastern solemnity and ceremoniousness, to propose some well-considered question. Anxiously do the multitude listen for Jesus' answer. Then again follows a meditative silence as before, until at last Jesus Himself delivers a connected discourse” (Hausrath, N.T. Times, ii. p. 250).

1. **ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν.** Lk. alone uses this expression (v. 17, viii. 22; comp. v. 12, xiii. 10). He is still indefinite in his chronology. Mt. is a little more clear. It is Mk. who enables us to distinguish three days; presumably Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday. “The days” perhaps refers to the “daily teaching in the temple” (xix. 47); and this deputation from the Sanhedrin is the result of their “seeking to destroy Him.” We have a similar deputation to the Baptist Jn. i. 19. See fourth note on Lk. ix. 22. For ἐναγγελίζωμεν, which defines the character of His teaching more clearly than διδάσκωμεν, see on ii. 10.

ἐπέστησαν. One of Lk.'s favourite words (see on ii. 38): “there came upon Him.” So also σὺν τοῖς πρ. and πρὸς αὐτὸν illustrate his fondness for these prepositions. Mt. and Mk. here have καὶ for σὺν (see on i. 56), and neither of them has πρὸς after λέγειν.

The introduction of the oratio recta by λέγοντες or λέγων after εἰσεῖν is rare (Mk. xii. 26): but either is common after λαλεῖν (Acts viii. 26, xxvi. 31, xxviii. 25, etc.).

2. **ἐν ποιᾷ . . . ποιεῖς;** So in all three. The two questions are not identical; nor is the second a mere explanation of the first. It anticipates the reply, “By the Messiah’s authority,” with another question, “Who made Thee Messiah?” They ask by what kind of authority, human or Divine, ecclesiastical or civil, assumed or conferred, He acts. They refer not merely to His teaching, but also to His cleansing the temple, as ποιεῖς shows. On the first occasion they had asked for a σημεῖον as a guarantee for the lawfulness of His ποιεῖν (Jn. ii. 18). They do not venture to do more than question Him, for they know that the feeling and conscience of the people are with Him for putting down their extortionate and profane traffic, for His teaching, and for His works of healing. This was the one point where He seemed to be vulnerable. “For there was no principle more firmly established by universal consent than that authoritative teaching required previous authorization,” because all such teaching was traditional (Edersh. L. & T. ii. p. 381). For ἐν ἐξουσίᾳ see on iv. 32.

3. **εἰπεν πρὸς αὐτούς.** Both Mt. and Mk. have αὐτοῖς. ἐρωτήσω ὑμᾶς κἀγὼ λόγον. The λόγον refers to their answer rather than His question, as is shown by δὲ εἰς εἴητε μοι (Mt. xxi. 24). “You ask Me to state My authority. I also will ask you for a statement”; not, “ask you a question” (RV.), nor, “ask you one thing” (AV.). As teachers they must speak first.
The *ἐνα* (A C D) is an insertion from Mt. and Mk. om. N B L R, Syr-Sin. Latin texts are divided.

4. *Verbatim* as Mt. and Mk., except that Mt. inserts πόθεν, and Mk. adds ἀποκριθέν τοι. "Baptism of repentance" was the special characteristic of John's teaching (iii. 3). The question as to its origin is not a mere escape from their attack by placing them in a difficulty: the answer to it would lead to the answer to their question. John had testified to the Divine authority of Jesus, and his baptism was a preparation for the Messianic Kingdom. What had been their view of John's position? That was a question to which the official guides of the nation were bound, and had long been bound, to furnish an answer. For the alternative εἰ ὁμονοῦ ἢ εἰ ἀνθρώπων comp. Acts v. 38, 39.


6. *καταλύθησαν*. Here only: but λιθάζεσαν is found Jn. x. 31–33, xi. 8; Acts v. 26, xiv. 19. In LXX λιθάζεσαν occurs twice (2 Sam. xvi. 6, 13), but λιθοθελεῖν is the common verb: comp. xiii. 34; Acts vii. 58. The κατα- expresses "stoning down, overwhelming with stones": comp. καταλελθολεῖν Exod. xvii. 4, and καταλύθων in Josephus. Here Mt. and Mk. have the less definite expression, "fear the multitude."

7. ἐπρόφητην εἶναι. Their intense joy at the reappearance of a Prophet after three centuries of silence (p. 80) would be the measure of their fury against a hierarchy which should declare that John had not been a Prophet at all. Comp. vii. 29, 30. With ὁ λαὸς ἀπασ comp. xix. 48. Nowhere else does πεπεσεμένος ἐστιν occur.

8. μὴ εἰδέναι πόθεν. This shameful and dishonest avowal is excelled a few days later by their answer to Pilate, "We have no king but Cæsar" (Jn. xix. 15). *Timentes lapidationem, sed magis timentes veritatis confessionem* (Bede), these professed "Teachers of Israel" (Jn. iii. 10), who so scorned the ignorant multitude (Jn. vii. 49), confessed that they had not yet decided whether one, who for years had been recognized by the nation as a Prophet, had any Divine commission. If they were not competent to judge of the Baptist, still less were they competent to judge of the Christ. Nösgen, *Gesch. J. C.* i. p. 514.

9–10. The Parable of the Wicked Husbandmen. Mt. xxi. 33–46; Mk. xii. 1–12. Mt. here gives a trilogy of parables, placing this one between the Two Sons and the Marriage of the King's Son. Godet thinks that the Two Sons cannot have been uttered where Mt. places it. But it fits the preceding discussion about the Baptist very well; and Mk., who records one parable only,
The Gospel According to S. Luke

LXX·

9. says ἡρέσατο αὐτοῖς ἐν παραβολαῖς λαλεῖν, which agrees well with the fact that more than one parable was spoken. The idea of “work in the vineyard” is common to both parables. In this parable Christ lets His enemies know that He is aware of their murderous plans against Himself; and in it He warns both them and the people generally of the fatal results to themselves, if their plans are carried out. It is the special characteristic of this parable that it does not teach general and permanent truths for the guidance of Christians, but refers to past, present, and future events. From the conduct of His traditional enemies, especially at that very time, He predicts His own end and theirs. The parable is capable of spiritual application as to God’s dealings with churches and individuals, but its primary reference is to the treatment which He is receiving from the Jewish hierarchy. The parable contains the answer to the question which they had raised. He is acting in the authority of His Father who sent Him to them. The imagery is taken from the O.T. and would be readily understood by the audience. The main source is the similar parable Is. v. 1–7; but comp. Jer. ii. 21; Ezek. xv. 1–6, xix. 10–14; Hos. x. 1; Deut. xxxii. 32, 33, and the many other passages in which Israel is spoken of as a vineyard or a vine; Ps. lxxx. 8 ff.; Joel i. 7, etc.

It has been said that the main difference between this parable and Is. v. or other O.T. figures is, that there the husbandmen or leaders and teachers of the people are not mentioned: it is the nation as a whole that fails in its duty to Jehovah. Here it is those who have charge of the nation that are condemned: the vineyard itself is not destroyed for its unfruitfulness, but is transferred to more faithful stewards. And, in support of this view, it has been pointed out that in the first times of the Kingdom the nation went voluntarily into idolatry; it was not led into it by the priests and other teachers: but now it was mainly the official teachers who prevented the people from accepting Jesus as the Messiah. This, however, does not fit vv. 15, 16, which show that the tenants are the Jewish nation, and not merely the leaders, and that the vineyard is not the nation, but its spiritual privileges. The nation was not to be transferred to other rulers, but its privileges were to be transferred to other nations.

9. ἡρέσατο δὲ πρὸς τὸν λαόν λέγειν. There is a pause after the discomfiture of the deputation from the Sanhedrin; and then Jesus “begins” to address a different company. But while He speaks to the people He also speaks at the hierarchy, who are still present, though silenced. Mt. and Mk. regard the parable as addressed to the latter. Syr-Sin. has “to speak to them.” D, a d e omit πρὸς τὸν λαόν. Comp. v. 36.

*Ἀνθρώπως.* Lk. commonly adds τίς: see small print note on xiii. 19. TR. follows A in adding τίς here.

Keim speaks with severity of the “destructive criticism” which “again miserably fails to see anything but an invention of the dogmatic artist” in “this grand self-revelation of Jesus,” which is attested by all three Gospels (v. p. 142).
The phrase is freq. in O.T. (Gen. ix. 20 ; Deut. xx. 6, xxviii. 30, 39 ; Ps. cxi. 37, etc.). Lk. omits the fence, the winepress, and the tower.

ἐξέδετο. In all three narratives in this place, but nowhere else in N.T. In LXX it is used of giving a daughter in marriage; Exod. ii. 21; Ecclus. vii. 25; 1 Mac. x. 58: but the sense of letting out for hire is classical; Plat. Lég. vii. 866 D_yewphylai δὲ ἐκδεσμόμεναι δοῦλοις ἀπαρχὴν τῶν ἐκ τῆς γῆς ἀποτελοῦσιν ἰκανήν. Among the Jews rent was sometimes paid in money, but generally in kind. If in kind, it was either a fixed amount of produce, whether the harvest was good or bad; or a certain proportion, e.g. a third or fourth, of each harvest. This latter system led to much disputing and dishonesty, and does so still wherever it is adopted. The tenants in the parable have a long lease and pay in kind; but it is not clear whether they pay a fixed or a proportionate amount.

The same form (-ero, not -oro) is found in the best MSS. in all three. Comp. δεδίδετο (Acts iv. 35) and παρεδίδετο (1 Cor. xi. 23). Gregory, Proleg. p. 124.

χρόνους ἰκανοὺς. This addition is peculiar to Lk. See on vii. 12. We may understand several years.

10. καὶ ρ. No doubt ὁ καὶ ρὸς τῶν καρπῶν (Mt.) is meant. Syr-Sin. has ἵνα τις ἐν τῇ ἐ

ἐξεπέστειλαν. They probably told him, and perhaps tried to persuade themselves that his master's demand was unjust. Excepting Gal. iv. 4, 6, the verb is peculiar in N.T. to
Lk. (Acts vii. 12, ix. 30, xi. 22, xii. ii, xiii. 26, xvii. 14, xxii. 21); but it is freq. in LXX. For the phrase “send empty away” comp. i. 53; Gen. xxxi. 42; Deut. xv. 1; 1 Sam. vi. 3; Job xxii. 9. For δειμαντες see on xii. 47.

11. προσέθετον πέμψαι. A Hebraism: see on xix. ii. Whether this is a second messenger sent that same vintage, or the messenger sent at another vintage, is not stated. The important point is that chastisement does not follow upon the first outrage. The husbandmen have several opportunities; and these are brought by different persons. If one messenger’s manner of delivering his message was unpleasing, another’s would be the opposite. But this time they add insult (ἀτιμάσαντες) to violence. Comp. the use of ἀτιμάξειν in Jn. viii. 49; Acts v. 41; Rom. i. 24, ii. 23; Jas. ii. 6. The verb is freq. in LXX.

12. τραυμάτισαντες. Worse than δειμαντες κ. ἀτιμάσαντες, as ἐξεβάλον is worse than ἔπανετειλαν. Comp. Heb. xi. 36–38; Acts vii. 52.

13. Τί ποιήσω; Peculiar to this account; as also is the qualifying ἵσως, which occurs nowhere else in N.T., and only once in LXX (1 Sam. xxv. 21), where English Versions have “surely.” Godet contends for such a meaning here: pourtant, en tout cas, certainement. But comp. Κ. ἵσως. ΑΘ. Όυκ ἵσως, ἀλλ’ ὅντως ὅ δαιμόνιε (Plat. Laws, xii. 965).

We must remember that it is the ἀνθρωπος of ver. 9 who deliberates as to what he shall do, says ἵσως, and expects that his son will be well received. All this is the setting of the parable, and must not be pressed as referring to God. This man represents God, not by his perplexity, but by his long-suffering and mercy.

14. διελογίζοντο πρός ἄλληλους. This touch also is peculiar to Lk. It perhaps looks back to xix. 47, 48. Nothing is gained by taking πρός ἄλληλους with λέγοντες: comp. πρός ἑαυτούς, which is equally amphibolous, ver. 5.

A K and Latt. have διελογίσαντο, cogitaverunt; and A C Q, Vulg. have πρός ἑαυτούς from Mk. xii. 7 for πρός ἄλληλους (Ν B D L R, Boh. Arm.). For ἀ κληρονόμους see Wsctt. on Heb. i. 2 and his detached note on Heb. vi. 12, p. 167.

15. ἐκβαλόντες ἀπέκτειναν. This perhaps was intended to represent their turning him out of his inheritance. It may be
doubted whether it refers to Jesus "suffering without the gate." Outside the vineyard would be outside Israel rather than outside Jerusalem. Moreover in Mk. the heir is killed before he is cast out of his inheritance. It is possible that they regard the vineyard as already made over to the heir, as was often the case in ancient law: see on xv. 12. Comp. the case of Naboth: ἐγέραγον αὐτὸν ἐξὸς τῆς πόλεως καὶ ἐλθοῦσαν αὐτὸν λίθοις, καὶ ἀπέθανεν (I Kings xx. 13). No doubt ἐξὸς τ. ἄμπελῶν goes with ἐκβαλλότες (iv. 29; Acts vii. 58, which is closely parallel), not with ἀπέκτειναν.

τί οὖν ποιήσει αὐτοῖς; Not, τί οὖν ἐποίησεν; Our Lord indicates that the parable is not a mere fiction: it is a key to a future which depends upon present action. Assuming that the heir is killed, what will happen? In Mt. some of the bystanders answer the question. They are so interested, and enter so fully into the spirit of the narrative, that, without seeing the application to themselves, they reply κακῶς κακῶς ἀπολέσει αὐτοὺς. See on xix. 25, and comp. David's reply to Nathan's parable (2 Sam. xii. 5, 6).

16. ἀλευσταί καὶ ἀπολέσει . . . καὶ δώσει. Three points: He will no longer send but come; will punish the wrong-doers; will transfer their privileges to others. The Jews were familiar with the idea of the Gentiles being gathered into the Messianic Kingdom (Is. ii. 2; lx. passim; Jer. iii. 17). Yet this was restricted to those Gentiles who had taken no part in oppressing Israel, but had submitted to Israel; and later Judaism as a rule denied even this to the heathen (Charles, Enoch, xc. 30). Here the Jews are to lose what the Gentiles gain. In vv. 16–19 Syr-Sin. is confused.

ἀκούσαντες δὲ ἐπιαν ἦν γένοιτο. We need not confine this to the people and conclude that "the Pharisees had too much wariness and self command to have allowed such an exclamation to escape from their lips." The exclamation may not mean more than "That is incredible," or "Away with the thought." See Lft. on Gal. ii. 17 and Sanday on Rom. iii. 4. This is the only instance of ἦν γένοιτο in N.T. outside the Pauline Epp., where it generally is used to scout a false inference which might be drawn. Burton, § 176, 177. Here it probably refers to the punishment rather than to the sin which brings it,—to ἀπολέσει καὶ δώσει rather than to ἀπέκτειναν.

The expression is rare in the Pauline Epp. except in Rom., where it occurs ten times: twice in Gal. and once in 1 Cor. In LXX it is rare, and never stands as an independent sentence: Gen. xliv. 7, 17; Josh. xxii. 29, xxiv. 16; 1 Kings xx. [xxii.] 3.

17. ἐμβλέψας αὐτοῖς. Lk. alone has this touch. Comp. xxii. 61 and Elisha's fixed look on Hazael (2 Kings viii. 11).
Τι οὖν ἐστίν. "If the destruction which I have just foretold is not to come (μὴ γένοιτο), how then do you explain this text?"

The passage is once more (see on ver. 9) from the Hallel Psalms (cxviii. 22, 23), where see Perowne. The Rabbis recognized it as Messianic: see Schoettg. i. p. 173. In all three Gospels the quotation is verbatim as in LXX. For τὸ γεγραμμένον see on xxii. 37, and for ἀπεθοκλίμασαν see on ix. 22. Perhaps λίθον is "a stone" rather than "the stone": the builders may have rejected many stones, one of which became κέφαλὴ γωνίας. But, if the Jews used Δίθος as a name for the Messiah, as seems to be probable, "the stone" is better. In Justin Martyr we have Δίθος as a name for Christ (Tyr. xxxiv. xxxvi.): see on Rom. ix. 33.

For the attraction of λίθων to ὅν see on iii. 19, and for ἐγενήθη ἐις see on xiii. 19.

κέφαλὴ γωνίας. Not the key-stone of the arch, but a corner stone uniting two walls; but whether a foundation-stone at the base of the corner, or a completing stone at the top of it, is uncertain. Comp. Acts iv. 11 and i Pet. ii. 7; also ἀκρογωνιαῖος in Eph. ii. 20 and Is. xxviii. 16. Mt. and Mk. quote ver. 23 of Ps. cxviii. as well as ver. 22, and Mt. adds the explanation that the Kingdom shall be transferred to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. Would Lk. have omitted this reference to the believing and loyal Gentiles if he had known it? We conclude that he was not familiar with Mt.'s account. See on xix. 46.

18. πᾶς ὁ πεσὼν . . . αὐτόν. These words are not in Mk. and are of somewhat doubtful authority in Mt. xxi. 44, where they are omitted by D 33, or b d e ff2 Syr-Sin., Orig. But the characteristic πᾶς is in any case peculiar to Lk. The first half of the saying seems to be an adaptation of Is. viii. 14, and the second half an adaptation of Dan. ii. 34, 35, 44. Christ is a stumbling-block to some (ii. 34), and they suffer heavily for their shortsightedness. They not only lose the blessing which is offered, but what they reject works their overthrow.

συνθλασθήσεται. "Shall be shattered"; confringetur (Lat. Vet., Beza), conquassabitur (Vulg.), wird zerschellen (Luth.). But in Mt. xxi. 44 Vulg. has confringetur. The verb occurs nowhere else in N.T., but the act. is found in LXX (Ps. lvii. 7; Mic. iii. 3), and several times as v.l.

ἐφ’ δὲν δὲν πέτη. Note the impressive change of construction. In the first case the man is the chief agent; in the second the stone. And the main thought now is simply λίθος: the metaphor of κέφαλὴ γωνίας is dropped. A chief corner-stone would not be likely either to trip up a person or to fall on him.

λιμφήσει αὐτόν. The rendering "grind to powder," which all English Versions from Tyn. to AV. give (Rhem. "breake to
pouder”), follows the comminuet of Vulg. (in Mt. conteret), but is without authority. Not only in classical authors (Hom. Xen. Plut. Lucian.), but also in LXX, it means “to winnow chaff from grain,” from λιμέος, “a winnowing fan.” In Ruth iii. 2, λυμα τὸν ἀλων τὸν κριθῶν, and Ecclus. v. 9, μὴ λίμα εν παντὶ ἀνέμω, the meaning is indisputable. Hence “to blow away like chaff, sweep out of sight or out of existence”: ἀναλήμψεται ὃ ἀτοῦν καίστον καὶ ἀπελευσται, καὶ λιμέως ἀτοῦν ἐκ τοῦ τόπου ἀτοῦ (Job xxvii. 21); καὶ τορπῶν ἀτοῦν διώξεται ὃς χνοῦν ἀχύρων λιμέων τῶν ἀπέναντι ἀνέμων (Is. xvii. 13); ὁ λιμέως τὸν Ἰσραήλ συνάξει ἀτοῦν (Jer. xxxi. 10); καὶ λιμέως ἐν τάσιν τοὺς ἔθνες τῶν οἰκῶν τοῦ Ἰσραήλ, δὴ τρόπον λιμέως ἐν τῷ λιμέῳ (Amos ix. 9). Dan. ii. 44 is important, as being the probable source of the saying: there, while in LXX we read πατάξει καὶ ἀφανίσει, Theodotion has λειτυνεῖ καὶ λιμέως, showing that λιμέως = ἀφανίσει. Comp. Theod. ἔγχετο ὁσει κοινορτός ἀπὸ ἀλωνος θερηνίς, καὶ ἔξηρεν τὸ πλῆθος τοῦ πτερομάτος, καὶ τόπος οὐκ ἐφέρεθη ἀτοῦ (Dan. ii. 35). “Scatter him as chaff,” therefore, is the meaning. When a heavy mass falls, what is pulverized by the blow is scattered by the rush of air. The commovet ilium of Cod. Palat. (e) looks like an attempt to preserve the right idea. Deissmann, Neue Bibelstudien, p. 52.

19. ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ὥρᾳ. “In that very hour”: Lk.’s usual expression: see on x. 7, 21. There is no equivalent to it here in Mt. or Mk. ἐγνωσαν γάρ διτ πρὸς αὐτῶν. So also in Mk. xii. 12, while Mt. has περὶ αὐτῶν. Vulg. has ad iros here and ad eos in Mk. But πρὸς may be either “with a view to, in reference to” (see on xii. 41, xviii. 1, 9, xix. 9), or “against” (AV. RV.): comp. Acts xxiii. 30. Here, as in Heb. i. 7, 8, Wsctt. prefers the meaning “in reference to”: comp. Rom. x. 21; Heb. xi. 18. The nom. to ἐγνωσαν is of γραμματεῖς, not ὁ λαὸς, which would require ἐγνύο, to be unambiguous. In Mt. the nom. to ἐγνωσαν must be the hierarchy. And γάρ gives the reason, not for ἐξητησαν, but for ἐφοβήθησαν, as the order of the sentences shows: and this is still more clear in Mk. by the change of tense from ἐξητοὺν (see Gould). The hierarchy recognize that the parable was directed against themselves; and this made them fear the people, who had heard the parable also. Syr-Sin. transfers this to v. 16.

In class. Grk. πρὸς τινα often means “in reply to,” and hence “against,” being less strong than κατά τινος, as adversus than in. Here Beza has adversus ipsos and Luther auf sie.

20-26. The Question about the Tribute. Mt. xxii. 15-22; Mk. xii. 13-17. There is no evidence that a night intervened between the previous question and this one. The connexion between v. 19 and 20 is close; and ver. 19 took place ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ὥρᾳ with what precedes. The previous question about
authority had emanated from the Sanhedrin as a whole. The different parties represented in it now act separately and devise independent attacks. This one comes from the Pharisees (Mt. xxii. 15), who send a group composed of Pharisees and Herodians (Mt. xxii. 16; Mk. xii. 13). Neither Lk. nor Jn. mentions the Herodians. Their alliance with Pharisees is remarkable, for the Pharisees detested the Herodian dynasty; and this is not the first instance of such an alliance (Mk. iii. 6). But opponents often combine to attack those who are obnoxious to both.

20. παρατηρήσαντες. See on xiv. 1. Both AV. and R.V. follow Tyn. Cran. Cov. and Gen. in translating “watched him”; but neither indicates by italics that “him” is not in the Greek. Wic. and Rhem. have no pronoun, in accordance with Vulg. observantes miserunt. It is doubtful whether the pronoun ought to be supplied, for παρατηρεῖν without case may mean “to watch an opportunity.” See Field and Alford, ad loc. Mt. has his favourite πορευθέντες.

D and some Versions here have ἄποχρόφθαντες: so Goth. Aeth. cum recessissent (f i l), cum discessissent (a), recedentes (d), recederunt et (e).

ἐγκαθέτους. “Suborned to lie in wait”; lit. “sent down into.” In N.T. here only, and in LXX Job xix. 12, xxxi. 9: but classical. Comp. Jos. B. J. vi. 5. 2. The ὑποκριμένος shows for what purpose they were suborned: they posed as scrupulous persons with a difficulty of conscience. In different ways all three accounts call attention to their hypocrisy. Meyer quotes, Qui tum, cum maxime fallunt, id agunt ut viri bona videantur (Cic. De Off. i. 13. 41).

ἐπιλάβων τινὰ αὐτοῦ λόγου. “Take Him in His speech”; αὐτοῦ depending upon ἐπιλαβῇ. and λόγου being epexegetical (De W. Mey. Go.): rather than “take hold of His speech,” αὐτοῦ depending upon λόγου (Holtz. Hahn). Vulg. has cum in sermone. So also Tyn. Cov. Cran. Gen. Rhem. Luth. Comp. ἐπιλαβέτω μου τής στολῆς (Job xxx. 18) and ἐπιλαμβάνεται αὐτοῦ τῆς ἱπτος (Xen. Anab. iv. 7. 12). Mt. has διός αὐτοῦ παγιδεύσωσιν ἐν λόγῳ, Mk. ἵνα αὐτὸν ἀγρεύσωσιν λόγῳ. Jesus had baffled them with a dilemma (ver. 4), and they now prepare a dilemma for Him. Comp. the constr in xix. 4.

ὡστε παραδοθναι . . . τοῦ ἡγεμόνος. Peculiar to Lk. Quod per se non poterant, præsidis manibus efficere tentabant, ut veluti ipsi a morte ejus viderentur immunes (Bede). For ὡστε comp. iv. 29; Mt. xxiv. 24.

τῇ ἀρχῇ καὶ τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ τ. ἡγεμ. It is an improbable refinement to press the double article and separate τῇ ἀρχῇ from τοῦ ἡγεμόνος: “so as to deliver Him to the Government, and (in particular) to the authority of the governor” (Mey. Weiss); or, “so as to deliver Him to the rule (of the Sanhedrin), and to the
authority of the governor” (Nösg. Hahn). For the combination of ἀρχή with ἔσονσια comp. xii. 11; I Cor. xv. 24; Eph. iii. 10; Col. i. 16, ii. 15; Tit. iii. 1. See Lft. on Col. i. 16.

The generic term ἤγεμον may be used of the emperor (comp. ἤγεμονια iii. 1) or any of his subordinates. In N.T. it is often used of the ἐπιτροπος or procurator (Mt. xxvii. 2, 11, 14, etc.; Acts xxiii. 24, 26, 33, xxiv. 1, 10, etc.) and less definitely of any governor (xxi. 12; I Pet. ii. 14). Comp. Jos. Ant. xvii. 3. 1; and ἤγεμονεύω ii. 2, iii. 1.

21. ὅθρως λέγεις καὶ διδάσκεις. The falseness of these fulsome compliments in their mouths (οἴδαμεν ὅτι) stamps this as one of the most dastardly of the attacks on Christ. They go on to emphasize their flattery by denying the opposite.

οὗ λαμβάνεις πρόσωπον. Affreux barbarisme pour des lecteurs grecs (Godet). The expression is a Hebraism, which originally meant “raise the face,” i.e. make the countenance rise by favourable address, rather than “accept the face.” Hence it came to mean “regard with favour,” but not necessarily with undue favour: comp. Ps. lixxxi. 2; Mal. i. 8, 9. But the bad sense gradually prevailed; and both here and in Gal. ii. 6 (see Lft.) partiality is implied, as in Lev. xix. 15 and Mal. ii. 9. In LXX the common phrase is θαυμάζειν πρόσωπον: comp. Jude 16. The compounds προσωπολήμμενα, προσωπολήμμα, etc., always imply favouritism.

Both Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. for “way of God” read “word of God.”

22. The φόρος (classical and in LXX) or capitation-tax must be distinguished from τέλη, which are indirect taxes. Mt. and Mk. here have κήρυγμα, but in Mk. ἐπικεφαλαίων is a notable v.l.

For ἤμισυς (Κ Α Β Λ) TR. has ἤμισυ (C D P G Δ Α Π). Only here and vi. 4 does ἔχουσιν c. acc. et infinit. occur in N.T. Καίσαρι stands first with emphasis. Usually both dat. and acc. follow δοῦναι: i. 74, 77, xii. 32, xvii. 18; Acts v. 31, vii. 5; Mt. xiv. 7, xx. 4, etc.

23. κατανόησας ... πανουργίαν. Mt. has γνώσις ... πανουργίαν, Mk. εἰδως ... ἵπτορκιν. See on xii. 27 for Lk.'s fondness for κατανόειν. In N.T., as in class. Grk., πανουργία always has a bad meaning (I Cor. iii. 19; 2 Cor. iv. 2, xi. 3; Eph. iv. 14). In LXX it may mean “versatility, skill” (Prov. i. 4, viii. 5).

24. Δείξατε μοι δημαρίδος. Mk. has φέρετε, which implies that they had to fetch it. They would not have heathen money on their persons. Mt. has προσφέρειν αὐτῷ, which implies the same thing; and he calls it τὸ νόμισμα τοῦ κήρυγμα, because this poll-tax had to be paid in denarii.

Τλ με πειράζεται (Α C D P) is an insertion here from Mt. and Mk. ΝΒΛ omit. See Wright, Synopsis, § 80, p. 73.

Καύσαρος. Probably that of Tiberius. There was no royal effigy on Jewish coins: and Roman copper coins, if for circulation in
Palestine, had no image on them. It was a base piece of flattery on the part of Herod Philip that he placed on his coins the head of the emperor; and the *denarius* used on this occasion may have been one of his. It is possible but not probable that it was a foreign coin, such as circulated outside Palestine.1 “Judas of Galilee” (Acts v. 37; Jos. *Ant.* xviii. 1. 6, xx. 5. 2) or the Gaulonite (*Ant.* xviii. 1. 1) had denounced the payment of tribute to Caesar as treason against Jehovah, the only Lord that Israel could acknowledge (A.D. 6): and probably the Galileans who were listening to Jesus on this occasion were thoroughly in sympathy. But His adversaries had conceded the whole point when they admitted that the coinage was Caesar’s: for even Judaism admitted that coinage implies the right of taxation, and is evidence of the government to which submission is due. *Ubicunque numisma alicujus regis obtinet, illic incolae regem istum pro domino agnoscent* (Maimon.). See Edersh. *L.& T.* ii. p. 385; *Hist. of J.* N. p. 257. Grotius quotes Τίνα ἐξα χαρακτῆρα τούτο τὸ τετρασάριον; Ἕρων (Arrian. *Epict.* iv. 5. 17).

25. τοῦν ἀπόδοτα. This is the right order (N.B.L, Boh. Goth. Arm.), contrary to the best usage; and hence the correction ἀπόδοτε τοῦν (A C P Δ Δ II). D, Syr-Sin. and Lat. Vet. omit τοῦν. For τοῦν first in the sentence comp. Heb. xiii. 13; Is. iii. 10, v. 13, and contrast i Cor. ix. 26; Wisd. i. 11, viii. 9. The τοῦν (Mt. δι’ν) marks the sayings as a conclusion drawn from the previous admission: “Then render to Caesar,” etc.

τὰ Καὶσαρὸς Καίσαρι. This is the answer to the Pharisaic portion of His questioners, as τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ τῷ Θεῷ to the Herodian. The error lay in supposing that Caesar and God were mutually exclusive alternatives. Duty to Caesar was part of their duty to God, because for purposes of order and government Caesar was God’s vicegerent. In Rom. xii. 1, 2 S. Paul insists on the second of these principles, in xiii. 1–7 on the first. See detached note at the end of Rom. xiii. As Judaea was an imperial province, its taxes would go to the *fiscus* of the emperor, not to the *aerarium* of the senate.

τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ. No one duty is to be understood to the exclusion of others, whether offerings in the temple, or penitence, etc. All duties owed by man to God are included.2 For ἀποδίδωμι of paying what is due comp. vii. 42, x. 35, xii. 59; and see Wsctt. on Heb.

---

1 Some “heretic” sent R. Juda an imperial *denarius*, and he was deciding not to accept it, when another Rabbi advised him to accept it and throw it into a well before the donor’s feet (*Avoda Sara* f. 6 quoted by Wsctt. on Mt. xxii. 21). But see Schürer, *J.P. in T. of J.C.* p. 77.

2 It may be doubted whether the idea that man bears the image of God just as the coin bears the image of Caesar is to be supplied: “Render then the coin to Caesar, and give the whole man up to God” (Latham, *A Service of Angels*, p. 50).
XII. 11. They had said φόρον δοῦνατ, as if the tribute was a gift. By substituting ἀπόδοτε He indicates that it is a due.

26. οὐκ ἵσχυσαν... ἐπανίστο τῷ λαῷ. Peculiar to Lk., who draws special attention to this further victory of Jesus. All three record the wonder of His adversaries.

For the constr. of ἀπόδοτε see on ver. 20. This use of ἐπανίστο is common in LXX, but in N.T. is found only here, xxiv. 19; Acts vii. 10, viii. 32: comp. ἐπανίστησιν on ii. 8; Acts viii. 21.

For θαυμάζων εἰρί see on ii. 33, and for συγγνώ see on xviii. 39.

27-38. The Question of the Sadducees respecting a Woman with Seven Husbands. Mt. xxii. 23-33; Mk. xii. 18-27. Mt. tells us expressly that this took place εν ἐκείνης τῇ ἡμέρᾳ. Lk. mentions the Sadducees several times in the Acts (iv. 1, v. 17, xxiii. 6-8) but here only in his Gospel. Mk. also here only. This question was less dangerous than the previous one. It concerned a matter of exegesis and speculation, not of politics, and was doctrinal rather than practical. Like the first two questions, it aimed at destroying Christ's influence with the multitude. While the first aimed at inspiring them with distrust, and the second at rousing their indignation against Him, this one is calculated to excite their ridicule. If Jesus failed to answer it, He and His supporters would be placed in a grotesque position. The Sadducees were not popular, for the doctrine of the resurrection is precious to the majority of mankind, and they would be glad of this opportunity of publicly exhibiting the popular doctrine as productive of ludicrous results. Josephus says that when Sadducees became magistrates, they conformed to the views of the Pharisees, for otherwise the people would not tolerate them (Ant. xviii. 1, 4).

But the doctrine of the resurrection and of invisible powers (Acts xxiii. 8; Jos. B. J. ii. 8. 14) was not the main point in dispute between Sadducees and Pharisees, but a deduction from the main point. The crucial question was whether the oral tradition was binding (Ant. xiii. 10, 6). The Pharisees contended that it was equal in authority to the written Law, while the Sadducees maintained that everything not written was an open question and might be rejected. Apparently the Pharisees were willing to concede that the doctrine of the resurrection is not to be found in the written Law; and indeed outside the Book of Daniel it is not clearly taught in O.T. What is said in favour of it (Job xix. 26; Ps. xvi. 9, 11; Is. xxxvii. 19) seems to be balanced by statements equally strong on the other side (Ps. vi. 5, lxxxviii. 10, 11, cv. 17; Eccles. ix. 4-10; Is. xxxviii. 18, 19). Hence it followed, on Sadducean principles, that the doctrine was without authority, and was simply a pious opinion. That the Sadducees rejected the O.T., with the exception of the Pentateuch, is a mistake of Tertullian, Origen, Hippolytus, Jerome, and others; and perhaps arises from confusion with the Samaritans. But no Jew regarded the other books as equal in authority to the Books of Moses; and hence Jesus, in answering the Sadducees, takes His argument from Exodus (Bleek, Int. to O.T. § 305, Eng. tr. ii. p. 310). The name Σαδδουκαῖος probably comes from Zadok, the best attested form of which in many passages of LXX is Ζαδοκ (2 Sam. viii. 17;
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [XX. 27-33.]

Neh. iii. 29, x. 21, xi. 11, xiii. 13; Ezek. xl. 46, xliii. 19, xlv. 15, xlviii. 11): but which Zadok gave the name to the sect, remains doubtful (Schürer, Jewish People in the T. of J. C. II. ii. pp. 29-43; Hausrath, N.T. Times, i. pp. 136-150; Pressensé, Le Siècle Apostolique, pp. 87, 88, ed. 1888. For minor points of difference between Sadducees and Pharisees, see Kuenen, Religion of Israel, iii. pp. 234-238; Dernbourg, pp. 132-144).

27. τινες τῶν Σαδδουκαίων οἱ λέγοντες. The οἱ λέγ. may agree with τινες, or be an irregular description of τῶν Σαδδ. In the latter case comp. Mk. xii. 40; but the former is better. All Sadducees held that the resurrection was not an article of faith, but some may have believed that it was true. One might render οἱ λέγοντες “who were saying” at that moment.

λέγοντες is the reading of Μ Β Τ D L 1 33 etc., d e Syr-Sin. Syr-Cur. Aegypt. Goth. Aeth., which is not discredited because it is also in Mt. But Tisch. follows Α Ρ Γ Δ Λ Π in reading αὕτη λέγοντες.

Ἐὰν τινὸς ἄδελφος. The quotation gives the substance rather than the wording of Deut. xxv. 5; comp. Gen. xxxviii. 8. The levirate law is said still to prevail among the Kalmucks and other nations in the East. See Morison on Mk. xii. 19.

29. ἐπτὰ οὖν ἄδελφοι. The οὖν appears to indicate that what is about to be narrated was a consequence of this levirate law. But the οὖν may be a mere particle of transition. Mt. inserts παρ’ ἥμιν, as if they professed to describe what had actually taken place. It is said to have been a well-known problem, the recognized answer to which was, that at the resurrection the woman would be the wife of the first brother. This answer Christ might have given; but, while it would have avoided the ridicule to which the Sadducees wished to expose Him, it would not have refuted their doctrine. D, Syr-Sin. c d Ἰ l q ins. παρ’ ἥμιν here.

ἄτεκνος. “Childless” as in ver. 28: comp. ver. 31. All three imply that there was neither son nor daughter. And this is laid down in the Talmud,—that the deceased brother must have no child at all, although Deut. xxv. 5 says simply “have no son” (RV.). Some maintained that the levirate law, which to a large extent had gone out of use, did not apply to a wedded wife, but only to a betrothed woman. The Mishna recommends that the levirate law be not observed.

30. καὶ ὁ δεῦτερος. This is the reading of Μ Β Τ D L 157, c, omitting ἔλαβεν after καὶ and τὴν γυναῖκα καὶ οὖν ἄπεθανεν ἄτεκνος after ὁ δεῦτερος. These insertions are found in Α Ρ Γ Δ Λ Π, Syr-Sin. Syr-Cur. Vulg.

31. οὐ κατελίπτων τέκνα καὶ ἄπεθανον. The main point is placed first, although their death logically precedes.

33. τίνος αὐτῶν γίνεται γυνὴ; The question is a plausible appeal to the rough common sense of the multitude, and is based upon the coarse materialistic views of the resurrection which then prevailed.
34. Jesus begins by removing this erroneous basis and shows that the question is futile. The words οἱ οὐδὲν τοῦ αἰῶνος . . . τυχεῖν are peculiar to Lk., who omits “Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.” Comp. Eph. i. 21.

35. οἱ δὲ καταξίωθέντες τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐκείνου. One might have expected simply οἱ οὐδὲν τ. αἰῶνος ἔκ. But the substitution of καταξίωθέντες corrects the assumption that all the sons of this world will enter the Kingdom which begins with the resurrection. Comp. Acts v. 41; 2 Thes. i. 5. Nowhere else does ὁ αἰῶν ἐκείνος occur in N.T. It means the age beyond the grave regarded as an age of bliss and glory. See on Rom. xii. 2. In itself it implies resurrection; but, inasmuch as this is the doctrine in dispute, the resurrection is specially mentioned. The word ἀνάστασις occurs Zeph. iii. 8; Lam. iii. 63; Dan. xi. 20; title of Ps. lxv. But not until 2 Mac. vii. 14, xii. 43 is it used of resurrection after death.

τῆς ἐκ νεκρῶν. This must be distinguished from [ἡ] ἀνάστασις τῶν νεκρῶν. The latter is the more comprehensive term and implies that all the dead are raised (Mt. xxii. 31; Acts xvii. 32, xxiii. 6, xxiv. 21, xxvi. 23; Rom. i. 4; i Cor. xv. 12, 13, 42; Heb. vi. 2). Whereas ἀνάστασις ἐκ νεκρῶν rather implies that some from among the dead are raised, while others as yet are not. Hence it is used of the resurrection of Christ and of the righteous, and is equivalent to the ἀνάστασις ζωῆς (Acts iv. 2; i Pet. i. 3; comp. Col. i. 18). The ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν includes the ἀνάστασις κρίσεως as well as the ἄν. ζωῆς (Jn. v. 29). Comp. xiv. 14; i Thes. iv. 16; Rev. xx. 5, 6; and see Lft. on Phil. iii. 11 and Mey. on Rom. i. 4. With the construction comp. τοῦτον τοῖς οὐκ ἡξίωθην αὐτῶς (Aesch. P. V. 239).

γαμίζονται. Identical in meaning with γαμίζονται (ver. 34).

In both verses the simple verb is the right reading. In both places TR. follows inferior authorities in reading ἐκγαμ. 36. οὔδὲ γάρ ἀποθανεῖν. The γάρ means that the abolition of death involves the abolition of marriage, the purpose of which is to preserve the human race from extinction.

For οὔδὲ (A B D L P 106 157) Tisch. has οὔτε (N Q R T Δ A Π). It looks like a correction.

ισάγγελοι γάρ εἰσιν. The adj. occurs here only in bibl. Grk. and was probably coined by Lk. on the analogy of ἵσαυρες (4 Mac. xvii. 5), ἵσαρελφος, ἵσαρεθ, κ.τ.λ. Mt. and Mk. have ἦς ἰσάγγελοι. Grotius quotes from Hierocles τοὺς ἰσαούμονας καὶ ἰσαγγέλους καὶ τοὺς ἄγανοις ἡρωσίν ὄμοιον. “They do not marry, because they cannot die; and they cannot die, because they are like angels; and they are sons of God, being sons of the resur-
rection.” In correcting the error of the Sadducees about the resurrection Jesus incidentally corrects their scepticism respecting Angels (Acts xxiii. 8). See Latham, A Service of Angels, pp. 52–60; Charles, Apoc. of Baruch, pp. lxxvii, 84.

The connexion of καὶ ζωὴν Θεοῦ is uncertain. The repetition of ζωὴν is rather against the clause being taken with λογίαν γὰρ ζωὴν. More probably it is co-ordinate with ζωὴν ἀποθανεῖν διώνυσαι. It is worth noting that both in Job i. 6, ii. 1, and Gen. vi. 2 LXX has not ζωὴν but ἀγέλην τοῦ Θεοῦ. Comp. i Cor. xv. 52; Rev. xxi. 4. But in any case it is the immortality of the Angels, not their sexlessness or immateriality, that is the point of the argument. For τῆς ζ. ζωὴν δεῖτε see on xvi. 8.

37. Having shown that their question ought not to have been asked, being based upon a gross misconception of the conditions of the future state, Jesus proceeds to answer the objection which their question implied, viz. that the doctrine of the resurrection is inconsistent with the Mosaic Law. On the contrary, Moses implies the doctrine. The levirate law is no argument against a resurrection; and the passage here quoted is a strong argument in favour of it. See Martensen, Chr. Dogm. § 290, 274.

καὶ Μωυσῆς. “Even Moses,” who was supposed to be against the doctrine (Mey. Weiss, Holtzm.). Less well, etiam Moses, non modo prophetæ (Beng.). Jesus quotes Moses because they had done so (ver. 28), not because the Sadducees accepted only the Pentateuch (Tert. Orig. Hieron.), which was not the case.

ἐξῆλθεν. Not, “hinted,” but “disclosed, intimated, revealed.” Both in class. and bibl. Grk. μανεῖ is specially used of making known what was secret (Acts xxiii. 30; 1 Cor. x. 28; Jn. xi. 57; Soph. Ò. R. 102).

ἐπὶ τῆς βάτου. “In the Bush,” i.e. in the portion of Scripture known as “the Bush.” In Mk. we have ἐν τῇ β. θεοῦ Μωυσεῖ ἐπὶ τοῦ βάτου, where AV. violently transposes ἐπὶ τ. β.—“how in the bush God spake unto him.” Comp. 2 Sam. i. 18 and Rom. xi. 2. The O.T. was divided into sections, which were named after something prominent in the contents. Examples are quoted from the Talmud. The rhapsodists divided Homer into sections and named them on a similar principle. In the Koran the chapters are named in this way. But the possibility of the simple local meaning here must not be excluded.

The gender of βάτος varies. Here and Acts vii. 35 it is fem. In Mk. and in LXX it is masc. (Exod. iii. 2, 3, 4; Deut. xxxiii. 16). So also in Polyb. and Theophr. Several Old Latin texts here read sicut dixit vidit in rubo (cf. 11q), which seems to imply a Greek text ὡς λέγει εἰδον ἐν τῇ β.

38. The Sadducees based their denial of the resurrection on the alleged silence of Scripture and on the incredibility of existence after the death of the body (Jos. B. J. ii. 8. 14). Christ
demolishes their premises by showing that Scripture is not silent, but teaches the reality of existence after death.\footnote{Gamaliel is said to have silenced Sadducees by quoting such promises as Deut. i. 8, xi. 9. God's promises must be fulfilled, and these were not fulfilled to the patriarchs during their lifetime. Again, if God quickened buried seed, how much more His own people (Edersh. Hist. of J. N. p. 316).} His argument has less force against those who admit existence after death, but hold that this existence of the soul apart from the body will continue for ever. This, however, was not the error which He was combating, and perhaps was not a common view. Yet even against this error the argument has force, as Bengel points out. \textit{Deus non est non entis deus: ipse est deus vivens; ergo ii qui deum habent, vivere debent, et qua parte vivere intermiserant, reviviscere in perpetuum.} But perhaps this is more than is intended. What is obvious is this:—Dead things may have a Creator, a Possessor, a Ruler: only living beings can have a God. If Abraham or any of the patriarchs had ceased to exist when he died, God would have ceased to be his God. "I am the God of Abraham" implies that Abraham still lives. Comp. \textit{οί διὰ τὸν Θεόν ἀποθανόντες ζῶσιν τῷ Θεῷ, ὅπερ Ἀβραὰμ κ. Ἰσαὰκ κ. Ἰακὼβ} \textit{(4 Mac. xvi. 25).} It is in reference to us that they seem to die: in reference to Him \textit{πάντες ζῶσιν.} The \textit{πάντες} need not be restricted to the three patriarchs: it includes all who are mentioned in vv. 35, 36. Mk. adds \textit{πολὺ πλανᾶσθε}, but the condemnation of this doctrinal error is less severe than of the Pharisaic hypocrisy.

39, 40. The Testimony of the Scribes. Some of the Pharisees could not refrain from expressing their admiration of the manner in which Jesus had vanquished their opponents. That proof of the doctrine of the resurrection, which Sadducees had defied the Pharisees to find in the Pentateuch, Jesus had produced, and in the most convincing manner. The scribes were now persuaded that it was useless to ply Jesus with hard questions. Such attempts merely gave Him the opportunity of winning victories. But we learn from Mt. and Mk. that one of them came forward to try Him once more \textit{(περιάζων αὐτῶν)} with a question that was much debated, as to which commandment was chief. There is nothing to show, however, that there was any snare in the question: the scribe may have wished to try His sagacity on a point which was very interesting. That a similar inquiry has been narrated elsewhere \textit{(x. 25)}, may be Lk.’s reason for omitting the incident here.

40. \textit{γινώ.} The fact that this was not understood caused it to be altered in many texts into \textit{δε.} Godet maintains that it "has absolutely no sense," and

\footnote{1 The Fourth Book of Maccabees, although written before the destruction of Jerusalem, was probably written not very long before Christian interpolations, or conscious imitations of Christian phraseology, are possible (Schürer, \textit{Jewish People in the T. of J. C.} II. iii. p. 244).}
erroneously states that WH. have abandoned it. It is attested by Β, Λ, 33, Aegypt., and gives excellent sense. Some of His opponents praised Him, for they saw that He was always victorious, and that they must risk no more defeats.

41-44 Jesus in turn asks a Question about David and the Messiah. Mt. xxii. 41-46; Mk. xii. 35-37, where see Gould. It is yet another opportunity of instructing them, not of vanquishing and humiliating them, that is sought. The approbation recorded in ver. 39 (comp. Mk. xii. 32) gave signs that some of His opponents were open to conviction, and might even now recognize the Christ.

41. πρὸς αὐτούς. The scribes who had expressed admiration are perhaps chiefly meant. In any case, “unto them” and not “in reference to them” is the meaning.

πῶς λέγουσιν. Mk. gives οἱ γραμματεῖς as the subject of λέγουσιν, which does not imply that the scribes had gone away. “With what right do teachers say?” This is the usual doctrine; but do people consider what it involves in reference to other statements?

42. αὐτὸς γὰρ. This is the reading of Β, Λ, Ρ, Ρ, 33, 1, Aegypt., and may be safely preferred to καὶ αὐτὸς (A, D, Syrr, Vulg, Goth.). Q has καὶ αὐτῶς γὰρ.

ἐν Βιβλῳ Ψαλμῶν. See on iii. 4. Mt. has πνεύματι and Mk. τῷ πν. τῷ ὑπίῳ for βιβλῳ Ψαλμῶν. The quotation is verbatim the same in all three, excepting that Mt. and Mk. have ὑπόκατω for the ὑποτάσιον of LXX. and Lk. All three omit the ὁ before Κύριος. In the Hebrew we have different words for Lord: “Jehovah saith to Adonai.” Ps. cx. was always believed to be Messianic, and to have been written by David. That it is Messianic is a matter of spiritual interpretation; and, as Jesus here gives this doctrine the sanction of His authority, no loyal Christian will consider that he is free to question it. The authorship of the Psalm is a question of criticism; and nothing in the method of Christ’s teaching, or in the contents of Scripture generally, warrants us in believing that He here frees us from the duty of investigating a problem which is capable of being solved by our own industry and acuteness. We have no right to expect that Scripture will save us from the discipline of patient research by supplying us with infallible answers to questions of history, chronology, geology, and the like.

The last word has not yet been spoken as to the authorship of Ps. cx.; but it is a mistake to maintain that Jesus has decided the question. There is nothing antecedently incredible in the hypothesis that in such matters, as in other details of human information, He condescended not to know more than His contemporaries, and that He therefore believed what He had been taught in the school and in the synagogue (see footnote, p. 124). Nor ought we
summarily to dismiss the suggestion that, although He knew that the Psalm was not written by David, He yet abstained from challenging beliefs respecting matters of fact, because the premature and violent correction of such beliefs would have been more harmful to His work than their undisturbed continuance would be. In this, as in many things, the correction of erroneous opinion might well be left to time. But this suggestion is less satisfactory than the other hypothesis. It should be noticed that, while Jesus affirms both the inspiration (Mt. Mk.) and the Messianic character (Mt. Mk., Lk.) of Ps. ex., yet the argumentative question with which He concludes need not be understood as asserting that David is the author of it, although it seems to imply this. It may mean no more than that the scribes have not fairly faced what their own principles involve. Here is a problem, with which they ought to be quite familiar, and of which they ought to be able to give a solution. It is their position, and not His, that is open to criticism. The question, “Why callest thou Me good?” appears to serve a similar purpose. It seems to imply that Christ is not to be called good in the sense that God is called good (Mk. x. 18). But it need mean no more than that the young man who addressed Jesus as “Good Master” ought to reflect as to the significance of such language before making use of it.  

44. καὶ πῶς αὐτοῦ υἱὸς ἐστιν; De Wette and Strauss both point out that this question must imply either (1) that the Messiah is not the Son of David, or (2) that the inspired Psalmist teaches that the Messiah is no mere political deliverer. Strauss, with Schenkel and Volkmar, prefers the former alternative. But it is incredible that, even if Jesus were a mere human teacher, He would thus gratuitously have contradicted the express utterances of Scripture (2 Sam. vii. 8–29; Is. ix. 5–7, xi. 1–10; Jer. xxiii. 5–8; Mic. v. 2) and the popular belief which was built upon them; especially as this belief was a valuable help to His own work (xviii. 38; Mt. xv. 22, xii. 23, xxi. 9). Whereas, those who believe in His Divinity need have no difficulty in admitting, that, on a point which was no part of His teaching, Jesus might go all His human life without even raising the question as to the truth of what was authoritatively taught about the authorship of this or that portion of Scripture.

45–47. The Condemnation of the Scribes. Like Mk. xii. 38–40, this seems to be a summary of the terrible indictment of

1 “If I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out?” (Lk. xi. 19) is possibly a similar case. It need not imply that Jewish exorcists had succeeded in casting out demons, but only that they were credited with no diabolical witchcraft in making the attempt. The question may mean no more than “Judge Me on the same principles as you judge your own exorcists.” See Wright ad loc. and xvi. 19.

On Ps. ex. see Gore, Bampton Lectures, 1891, Lect. vii. sub fin. and note 55; Driver, Int. to Lit. of O.T. p. 362 and note; Perowne, Psalms, ii. p. 302, with the remarks of Thirlwall there quoted; Meyer on Mt. xxii. 43; Weiss on Mt. xxii. 43 with note; Bishop Mylne, Indian Ch. Quar. Rev. Oct. 1892, p. 486; Schwartzkopff, Konnte Jesus irren? 1896, pp. 21–36.

2 Latham is of the same opinion from a different point of view. He thinks that Jesus repudiated the title “Son of David,” as implying that the Redeemer of the world was a Jewish Messiah, with a title based on legitimacy and genealogy (Pastor Pastorum, p. 415).
the hierarchy given at length in Mt. xxiii. Lk. perhaps did not know the longer report preserved by Mt. As he had already given an account of a similar discourse (xi. 39-52), there was the less need to give a full report here.

45. ἀκούοντος δὲ παντὸς τοῦ λαοῦ. It is in the hearing of the multitude who had just been witnesses of the contest, in which the scribes had been so signally defeated, that Jesus utters His final condemnation of them. Comp. the similar condemnation xii. 1, where as here we have ἀπόκρυφον ἀπό, and see notes there. Comp. also the somewhat parallel passage in Ezek. xxii. 25: ἀρπάζοντες ἄρπαγματα, ψυχὰς κατεσθῶντες ἐν δυναστίᾳ, καὶ τιμᾶς λαμβάνοντες: καὶ ἀπὸ χήρας σου ἐπληθυνθόσαν ἐν μέσῳ σου.

46. περιπατεῖν ἐν στολαῖς. Mk. also has this Hellenized expression for πλατύνοντι τὰ φιλακτήρια αὐτῶν (Mt. xxiii. 5). The saying from ἀσσαλκικῶς ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς ἐν τοῖς δείπνοις is in all three accounts. Comp. xiv. 7, and see Wetst. on Mt. xxiii. 6, 7.

Salmon quotes AV. of this and of Mk. xii. 38 in illustration of the variety which independent translation is sure to produce. There, “love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market places and the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts, which for a pretense make long prayers.” Here, “desire, walk, robes, greetings, markets, highest, chief, show” for the words in italics, the Greek in all cases being the same.

τῶν βελόντων περιπατεῖν. This constr. of θέλω = “like, love” c. infin. occurs only here and Mk. xii. 38. It is perhaps an extension of the Hebraistic θέλω τικα or πι = “take delight in,” and in Mk. xii. 38 an acc. is coupled with the infin. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 43, ix. 13, xii. 7; Heb. x. 5, 8. But Lk. separates the acc. from the βελόντων by inserting the more usual φιλακτήρων, Win. lvi. 4, p. 587. What follows is common to all three accounts. See on xi. 43 and xiv. 7.

47. οἱ κατεσθῶντων τὰς οἰκίας τῶν χηρῶν. Comp. Mk. xii. 40; but this item in the condemnation is not found in the true text of Mt. xxiii. Probably wealthy widows are chiefly meant. They devoured widows’ houses by accepting hospitality and rich presents from pious and weak women. Sexus muliebris ut ad superstitionem pronior ita magis patet ad eas fraudes (Grot.). They would find widows a specially easy prey, and their taking advantage of the defenceless aggravated their guilt. C’étaient les Tartuffes de l’époque (Godet). Josephus says of the Pharisees οἰς ὑπὸ κατὰ χυνακωνίτις (Ant. xvii. 2. 4). Comp. the cases of Fulvia (xviii. 3. 5) and of Helene (xx. 2. 5) as instances of devout and benevolent women. The wife of Pheroras, brother of Herod the Great, paid the fines of thousands of Pharisees who had been fined for refusing to swear loyalty to Caesar (xvii. 2. 4). The Talmud gives evidence of the plundering of widows. Inter plagas quae a Pharisewis proveniunt hæc etiam est. Est qui consultat cum orphans, ut alimenta viduae eripiat (Sota Hieros. f. 20. 1, Schoettg. i. 199). Of a plundered widow R. Eleazar says, Plaga Phariseworum tetigit illam.
XX. 47-XXI. 3.] LAST DAYS OF PUBLIC TEACHING 475

λήψονται περισσότερον κρίμα. The “more abundant” may be understood in two ways: (1) in proportion to the high estimation in which they were held in this world; or (2) in proportion to the hypocrisy which makes a trade of religion (Gould). Qui male agit, judicatur. Qui bene abutitur ad malum ornandum, magis judicatur (Beng.). For λήψομαι κρίμα comp. Rom. xiii. 2; Jas. iii. 1; and for περισσότερον see on vii. 26.

XXI. 1-4. The Widow’s Mites. Mk. xii. 41-44. The incident is not recorded by Mt. The saying respecting “widows’ houses” might lead to the preservation of this narrative. Mk. and Lk. give both, Mt. neither.

1. Ἀναβλέψας. Mk. has καθώς. The long discussions had wearied Him, and He had been sitting with downcast or closed eyes.

eidev tods βάλλοντας... πλουσίους. Either, “He saw the rich who were casting,” etc. Or, “He saw those who were casting... rich people.” The former is better. In either case the imperfect part. expresses what was continually going on: vidit eos qui mittebant minera sua in gasophylacium divites (Vulg.).

tὸ γαζοφυλάκιον. We are not sure that there was a separate building called the Treasury. But the thirteen trumpet-mouthed boxes which stood in the spacious Court of the Women appear to have been known as the Treasury. These Shoparoth or “trumpets” were each of them inscribed with the purpose to which the money put into them was to be devoted. See Edersh. The Temple, p. 26. Besides these there was the strong-room whither their contents were taken from time to time. This, however, cannot be meant here. Comp. Jn. viii. 20.

Both in LXX and in Josephus we find sometimes τὰ γαζοφυλάκια (Neh. x. 38, xiii. 9; B. J. v. 5. 2, vi. 5. 2), sometimes τὰ γαζοφυλάκιων (2 Kings xxiii. 11; 1 Mac. xiv. 49; Ant. xix. 6. 1); and we cannot say that there is any difference of meaning.

2. πενιχράν. Exod. xxii. 25; Prov. xxviii. 15, xxix. 7; but nowhere else in N.T. Vulg. and 1 have pauperculum: see also Vulg. of Is. lxvi. 2. Note the τινα.

λεπτὰ δυό. See on xii. 59. The exact amount would not be visible from a distance. Jesus knew this, as He knew that it was all that she had, supernaturally. It was not lawful to offer less than two perutahs or mites. This was therefore the smallest offering ever made by anyone; so that Bengel’s remark on the two mites is out of place: quorum unum vidua retinere potuit. She could have kept both.

3. Ἁληθῶς λέγω ὅμιν. Introduces something contrary to the usual view. Here, as in ix. 27 and xii. 44, Lk. has ἀληθῶς, where Mk. or Mt. has ἀμήν.
πλείον πάντων. Non modo proportione geometrica, sed animo, quem spectabat Dominus (Beng.).

For πλείον (A B C Δ Λ Π), which is supported by πλεύον (N), Tisch. prefers πλεύο (D Q X), which is supported by πλεύωνa (L). Orig. has πλεύον several times.

4. πάντες γὰρ οὗτοι. Pointing to those of them who were still in sight.

εἰς τὰ δώρα. "Unto the gifts," which were already in the boxes.

ἐκ τοῦ ὑστερήματος. Comp. 2 Cor. viii. 14, xi. 9; Judg. xix. 20; Ps. xxxiii. 10. Whereas they had more than they needed for their wants, she had less: they had a surplus, and she a deficit. Yet out of this deficient store she gave,—gave all she had.

The Latin Versions vary much in rendering both expressions: de exuperan­tatis (s), de eo quod super­fuit illis (e), de quo super­fuit illis (f), ex eo quod abundavit illis (t), ex abundanti (Vulg.); de exiguitate sua (a), de inopia sua (e), de minimo suo (d), ex eo quod deest illi (f Vulg.).

πάντα τὸν βίον. All that she had to support her at that time:

comp. viii. 43, xv. 12, 30; Cant. viii. 7; Soph. Phil. 933, 1283.

5–36. The destruction of the Temple and of Jerusalem fore­told. Mt. xxiv. 1–36; Mk. xiii. 1–32. The section falls into three divisions: the Occasion of the Prophecy (5–7), the Prophecy (8–28), the Exhortation to Vigilance based on the Parable of the Fig Tree (29–36). Edersheim has shown in detail how different contemporary Jewish opinion respecting the end of the world was from what is contained in this prediction, and therefore how untenable is the hypothesis that we have here only a reflexion of ordinary Jewish tradition (L. & T. ii. pp. 434–445).

5–7. Lk. gives no indication of time or place. Mk. and Mt. tell us that it was as Jesus was leaving the precincts that the remark of the disciples was made. The discourse as to the comparative merits of the offerings made in the Temple would easily lead on to thoughts respecting the magnificence of the temple itself and of the votive gifts which it received.

5. τών ηγού­tων. Mt. and Mk. tell us that these were disciples.

Here again Cod. Bezae has a reproduction of the gen. abs. in Latin, quorundam dicentium: comp. ver. 26.

λίθοις καλοῖς. Some of the stones of the substructure were enormous. The columns of the cloister or portico were monoliths of marble over forty feet high. See Josephus, whose account should be read in full (B. J. v. 5), Tacitus (Hist. v. 12), Milman (Hist. of the Jews, ii. bk. xvi. p. 332), Edersheim (Temple, p. 21), Renan (V. de J. p. 210). "It is almost impossible to realise the
effect which would be produced by a building longer and higher
than York Cathedral, standing on a solid mass of masonry almost
equal in height to the tallest of our church spires” (Wilson, *Recovery
of Jerusalem*, p. 9).

ἀνάθημα. Mt. and Mk. say nothing about the rich offerings,
which were many and various, from princes and private individuals
(2 Mac. iii. 2-7): e.g. the golden vine of Herod, with bunches as
tall as a man (Jos. *B. J.* v. 5. 4; *Ant.* xv. xi. 3; comp. xvii. 6. 3;
xviii. 3. 5, xix. 6. 1). *Illic immensa opulentia templum* (*Tac. Hist.*
v. 8. 1). For ἀνάθημα comp. 2 Mac. ix. 16; 3 Mac. iii. 17; Hdt.
i. 183. 6. Here only in N.T.

On the relation between ἀνάθημα and ἀνάθημα see Ellicott and Lft. on
Gal. i. 8; Trench, *Syn.* v. ; Cremer, *Lex.* p. 547. In MSS. the two words
are often confounded. Here Ν Α Δ Χ have ἀνάθημα, which Tisch. adopts.


ἀνέκοψανται ἡμέραι. “Days will come”: no article. Comp. v. 35,
xvii. 22, xix. 43, xxiii. 29.

οὐκ ἀπεθάνωντα πλῆθος ἐπὶ λίθῳ. A strange prediction to those
who had been expecting that the Messianic Kingdom would imme-
diately begin, and that Jerusalem would be the centre of it.
Respecting the completeness of the fulfilment of this prediction see

7. Just as Lk. omits the fact that the remark about the glorious
buildings was made as Jesus was leaving the temple (ver. 5), so he
omits the fact that this question was asked while Jesus was sitting
on the Mount of Olives. Mt. knows that it was “the disciples”
who asked; but the interpreter of Peter knows that Peter, James,
John, and Andrew were the enquirers. Both state that the question
was asked κατ’ ἵσταν.

πότε οὖν ταῦτα ἐσται; They accept the prediction without
question, and ask as to the date, respecting which Christ gives
them no answer: comp. xiii. 23, 24, xvii. 20. Perhaps they con-
sidered that this temple was to be destroyed to make room for
one more worthy of the Kingdom. Their second question, τί τὸ
σημεῖον, shows that they expect to live to see the preparatory
catastrophe.

8-28. The Prophecy. The Troubles which will follow the
Departure of Christ—False Christs, Wars, Persecutions (8-19).
The Destruction of Jerusalem (20-24). The Signs of the Return
of the Son of Man (25-28). The record of the prediction in Mt.
and Mk. is similarly arranged. But in all three records the out-
lines of the two main events, with their signs, cannot always be
disentangled. Some of the utterances clearly point to the Destruc-
tion of Jerusalem; others equally clearly to the Return of the
Christ. But there are some which might apply to either or both;
and we, who stand between the two, cannot be sure which one, if only one, is intended. In its application to the lives of the hearers each event taught a similar truth, and conveyed a similar warning; and therefore a clearly cut distinction between them was as little needed as an exact statement of date. Some of the early commentators held that the whole of the prophecy refers to the end of the world without including the fall of Jerusalem.

8. πλανηθῆτε. “Be led astray.” The verb is used nowhere else in Lk. It implies no mere mistake, but fundamental departure from the truth: Jn. vii. 47; i Jn. i. 8, ii. 26, iii. 7; Rev. ii. 20, xii. 9, xx. 3-10, etc. “Deceive” (AV.) would rather be ἀπατήν (Jas. i. 26: comp. i Cor. iii. 18; Gal. vi. 3).

ἐπὶ τὸ ὄνομάς μου. Christ's name will be the basis of their claim. We know of no false Messiahs between the Ascension and the fall of Jerusalem. Theudas (Acts v. 36), Simon Magus (Acts viii. 9), the Egyptian (Acts xxii. 38) do not seem to have come forward as Messiahs. Dositheus, Simon Magus, and Menander might be counted among the “many antichrists” of 1 Jn. ii. 18, but not as false Christs. We seem, therefore, at the outset to have a sign which refers rather to Christ’s return than to the destruction of Jerusalem.

9. ἀκαταστασίας. Comp. i Cor. xiv. 33; 2 Cor. vi. 5, xii. 20; Jas. iii. 16; Prov. xxvi. 28; Tob. iv. 13. In Josephus we have abundant evidence of such things. Tacitus says of this period—
opimum casibus, atrox præliis, discors seditionibus, ipsō etiam pace sequum. Quatuor Principes ferro interempti. Trina bella civilia, plura externa ac plerumque permixta (Hist. i. 2. 1).—πτωσθῆτε. Only here and xxiv. 37: Mt. and Mk. have ἄφαθον.

dεί. It is so ordered by God: comp. xiii. 33, xvii. 25, xix. 5, xxiv. 7, 26, 44.

οὐκ ἐπεδέως. First, with emphasis: “Not immediately is the end.” For “by-and-by” as a translation of ἐπεδέως see on xvii. 7. By τὸ τέλος is not meant τὸ τέλος ἀδείων (comp. Mt. xxiv. 8), but πάντων τὸ τέλος (1 Pet. iv. 7), the end of the world and the coming of the Son of Man.

10. Τὸτε ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς. A new introduction to mark a solemn utterance. The τὸτε with ἔλεγεν is unusual; but that does not make the combination of τὸτε with ἐγερθῆσεται (Beza, Casaubon, Hahn) probable.

D, Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. ad e f f i l r omit the words.

ἐγερθῆσεται ἔδωκεν ἐπὶ ἔδωκες. Only here and in the parallels is this use of ἐγερθῆσεται ἐπὶ ἔδωκα found in N.T. Comp. ἐπεγερθῆσονται Αἰγυπτίων ἐπὶ Αἰγυπτίων . . . [ἐπεγερθῆσεται] πόλις ἐπὶ πόλιν καὶ ομός ἐπὶ ομόν (Is. xix. 2).

11. After describing the general political disturbances which
shall precede the end, Jesus mentions four disturbances of nature which shall also form a prelude: earthquakes, famines, pestilences, and terrible phenomena in the heaven. Lk. alone mentions the λούμολ (elsewhere in a metaphorical sense: Acts xxiv. 5; Prov. xxi. 24; Ps. i 1; 1 Mac. xv. 21). Lk. alone also mentions the φάντασμα της και σημεία. On the prodigies which preceded the capture of Jerusalem see Jos. B.J. vi. 5, 3; Tac. Hist. v. 13.

According to the better text (NBL, Aegypti. Arm. Aeth.) κατά τοποὺς belongs to λούμολ καὶ λιμοὶ, not (as in Mk.) to σεσοῦλ μεγάλοι (A D, Latt.). Syr-Sin. has “in divers places” with both. Many authorities (NA D L, d e Boh.) have λιμοὶ κ. λούμολ. For the παρανομασία comp. ζωὴν καὶ πνεῦμα (Acts xvii. 25); γινώσκεις κ. ἀναγινώσκεις (Acts viii. 30); ἐβαθεν ἀρν Ἐπαθεν (Heb. v. 8); ὀναληθῇ in Ὀνήσιμος (Philem. 20); τινὲς τῶν κλάδων ἐξεκλάδοσθησαν (Rom. xi. 17). Some Latin, Syriac, and Aethiopic authorities here insert et hiemes (tempestates), “probably from an extraneous source written or oral” (WH. ii. App. p. 63). Comp. the addition of καὶ παράχαι in Mk. xiii. 8. And as regards the terrors generally comp. 4 Esdr. v. 4-10.

12-19. Calamities specially affecting the Disciples; Persecution and Treachery. While Lk. and Mk. emphasize the persecution that will come from the Jews, Mt. seems almost to confine it to the Gentiles (but see Mt. x. 17-19). Jn. also records that Christ foretold persecution (xv. 18-21), and in particular from the Jews (xvi. 2, 3). The Acts may supply abundant illustrations. Note that Lk. has nothing about “the Gospel being preached to all the nations” (Mk. xiii. 10; Mt. xxiv. 14). Would he have omitted this, if either of those documents was before him?

12. πρὸ δὲ τῶν. The prep. is certainly used of time, and not of superiority in magnitude. Persecutions are among the first things to be expected. The tendency of Mt. to slur the misdeeds of the Jews is conspicuous here. While Lk. mentions τὰς συναγωγὰς and Mk. adds συνέδρια, Mt. has the vague term θλὺς.

13. ἀποδήσατε ὑμῖν εἰς μαρτύριον. “The result to you will be that your sufferings will be for a testimony.” A testimony to what? Not to the innocence of the persecuted, which is not the point: and they were commonly condemned as guilty. Possibly to their loyalty: comp. Phil. i. 19. More probably to the truth of the Gospel. For the verb comp. Job xiii. 16; 2 Mac. ix. 24.

14. προμέλεταί. The regular word for conning over a speech: here only in N.T. Mk. has the less classical προμερίμναί. Comp. Mt. x. 20, and see on xii. 11. Hahn would make the word mean anxiety about the result of the defence.

15. ἐγὼ γὰρ. With emphasis: “all of that will be My care.” In the parallel assurances in Mt. x. 20 and Mk. xiii. 11 it is the help of the Holy Spirit that is promised. In form this verse is peculiar to Lk. By στόμα is meant the power of speech; by σοφία the choice of matter and form. Comp. ἐγὼ ἀνοιξώ τὸ στόμα σου
(Exod. iv. 12), and δέδωκα τούς λόγους μου εἷς τὸ στόμα σου (Jer. i. 9).

This refers to σφίλα (Acts vi. 10) as ἀντετέθην to στόμα. Their opponents will find no words in which to answer, and will be unable to refute what the disciples have advanced. Vos ad certamen acceditis, sed ego prætor. Vos verba editis, sed ego sum qui loquor (Bede). Quid sapientius et incontradictibilis confessione simplicit et exserta in martyris nomine cum Deo invalescentis (Tert. Adv. Marc. iv. 39. 20). Holtzmann would have it that these verses (12-15) are the composition of the Evangelist with definite reference to the sufferings of S. Paul and S. Stephen.

16. καὶ ὅπως γονέων. “Even by parents” (RV.) rather than “both by parents” (AV.). Cov. also has “even.” Comp. xii. 52, 53; Mt. x. 35 for similar predictions of discord in families to be produced by the Gospel.

This verb is in all three accounts. It cannot be watered down to mean “put in danger of death” (Volkmar): ver. 18 does not require this evasion. Comp. ἐκ ἀδέων ἀποκτενεῖτε καὶ σταυρώσετε (Mt. xxiii. 34) and ἐκ αὐτῶν ἀποκτενοῦσιν (Lk. xi. 49). Here ἐκ ὦμων naturally means “some of you Apostles.” Three of the four who heard these words—James, Peter, and Andrew—suffered a martyr’s death.

17. καὶ ἐρεσθής μισοῦμεν. This verse is found in the same form in all three, excepting that Mt. inserts τῶν ἔλθον after πάντων, which is in harmony with his omitting synagogues as centres of persecution (xxiv. 9). For the paraphrastic future see on i. 20.

18. καὶ θρία... ὀδ ἁπόληται. Peculiar to Lk. This proverbial expression of great security must here be understood spiritually; for it has just been declared (ver. 16) that some will be put to death. “Your souls will be absolutely safe; your eternal welfare shall in nowise suffer” (Mey. Weiss, Nösg.). Jn. x. 28 is in substance closely parallel. This is more satisfactory than to take it literally and supply sine præmio, ante tempus (Beng.); or supply from Mt. x. 29 ἀνέω τοῦ πατρὸς ὦμων (Hahn). The proverb is used of physical preservation, Acts xxvii. 34; 1 Sam. xiv. 45; 2 Sam. xiv. 11; 1 Kings i. 52.

19. ἐν τῇ ὑπομονῇ ὦμῶν. “In your endurance” of suffering without giving way; whereas μακροθυμία is patience of injuries without paying back. See Trench, Syn. liii.; Lft. on Col. i. 11, iii. 12; Wsctt. on Heb. vi. 12. The Latin Versions often confuse the two words.

Here we have patientia (efficiatur Vulg.), tolerantia (a), sufferentia (d). These three translations are found also viii. 15. In no other Gospel does ὑπομονῇ occur; and in no Gospel does μακροθυμία occur.
lives." This confirms the interpretation given above of ver. 18. There the loss of eternal salvation is spoken of as death. Here the gaining of it is called winning one’s life. See on ix. 25 and xvii. 33. In Mt. (xxiv. 13, x. 22) and Mk. (xiii. 13) this saying is represented by “He that endureth (ὑπομενώνος) to the end, the same shall be saved.” Neither Lk. nor Jn. use ὑπομένων in this sense.

The reading is uncertain as regards the verb. A B some cursive, Latt. Syrr. Arm. Aeth. and best MSS. of Boh., Tert. Orig. support κτήσασθε, which is adopted by Treg. WH. RV. and Weiss; while ΝΔΛΡΧΓΔ etc., some MSS. of Boh., Const-Apost. Bas. support κτήσασθε, which is adopted by Tisch. Neither reading justifies “possess your souls,” a meaning confined to the perf. Cov. has “holde fast”; but nearly all others have “possess,” following in verb, though not in tense, the possidebitis of Vulg. Other Lat. texts have adquiretis (cf.1) or adquirete (d.i). See last note on xviii. 12.


20. κυκλῳμένην. “Being compassed”: when the process was completed it would be too late; comp. Heb. xi. 30. No English Version preserves this distinction: but Vulg. has videritis circumdari, not circumdatam (a e). Instead of this Mt. and Mk. have “the abomination of desolation,” etc.

ἡ ἐρήμωσις. The word is freq. in LXX, but in N.T. occurs only here and the parallels. The disciples had been expecting an immediate glorification of Jerusalem as the seat of the Messianic Kingdom. It is the desolation of Jerusalem that is really near at hand.

21. τότε . . . τὰ ἐρήμη. Verbatim the same in all three. What follows, to the end of ver. 22, is peculiar to Lk. By “the mountains” is meant the mountainous parts of Judæa: but ἐν μεσῷ ἀνδρὶ (see on viii. 7) refers, like ἐν αὐτῷ, not to Judæa, but to Jerusalem.

χώραις. “Land-estates” (xii. 16), “country” as opposed to the town. See Blass on Acts viii. 1. The Jews who fled from the country into Jerusalem for safety greatly increased the miseries of the siege. It is probably to this prophecy that Eusebius refers when he speaks of “the people of the Church in Jerusalem being commanded to leave and dwell in a city of Persea called Pella, in accordance with a certain oracle which was uttered before the war to the approved men there by way of revelation” (H. E. iii. 5. 3). The flight to Pella illustrates the prophecy; but we need not confine so general a warning to a single incident. It is important to note that the wording of the warning as recorded here has not been altered to suit this incident. Marcion omitted vv. 18, 21, 22.

22. ἡμέραι ἐκδικήσεως. Comp. LXX of Deut. xxxii. 35; Hos. ix. 7; Ecclus. v. 9. In what follows note the characteristic construction, and verb, and adjective. There is an abundance of such utterances throughout the O.T. Lev. xxvi. 31-33; Deut. xxviii. 49-57; Kings ix. 6-9; Mic. iii. 12; Zech. xi. 6; Dan. ix. 26, 27. The famous passage in Eus. H. E. ii. 23. 20 should be compared, in which (like Origen before him) he quotes as from Josephus words which are in no MS. of Josephus which is extant: "These things happened to the Jews to avenge (κατ᾿ ἐκδικήσεων) James the Just, who was a brother of Jesus of Nazareth, that is called the Christ. For the Jews slew him, although he was a very just man."

23. οὐαὶ...ἡμέραις. Verbatim the same in all three. For ἀνάγκη Mt. and Mk. have ἠλώφις. In Job xv. 24 we have ἀνάγκη καὶ ἠλώφις: comp. Job vii. 11, xviii. 14, xx. 22. In class. Grk. ἀνάγκη rarely means "distress," a meaning common in bibl. Grk. (1 Cor. vii. 26; 1 Thes. iii. 7; 2 Cor. vi. 4, xii. 10; Ps. cxvi. 6, 13, 19, 28; Ps. Sol. vi. 8). See small print on ver. 25. The meaning of ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς is determined by τὸ λαῷ τοῦφ. The latter means the Jews, and therefore the former means Palestine (AV. RV.) and not the earth (Weiss). For the Divine θρόνη comp. 1 Mac. i. 64, ii. 49; 2 Mac. v. 20; Ps. Sol. ii. 26, xvii. 14. The θρόνη is provoked by the people qui tantam gratiam caelestem spreverit (Beng.).

24. καὶ πεσόνται στόματι μαχαίρας. This verse and the last words of ver. 23 are peculiar to Lk. Note the characteristic πάντα, periphrastic future, and ἀχρι. The often repeated assertion of Josephus, that 1,100,000 perished in the siege and 97,000 were carried into captivity (B. J. vi. 9. 3) is quite incredible: they could not have found standing-ground within the walls. The sextenta millia of Tacitus (Hist. v. 13. 4), if taken literally, is far too many for the number of those besieged: but sextenti need not mean more than "very many." Perhaps 70,000 is an ample estimate.

The phrase ἐν στόματι μαχαίρας occurs Gen. xxxiv. 26; Jos. x. 28; ἐν στόματι ἰουδαίασ, Jos. vi. 21, viii. 24; ἐν στόματι ζῆσιν, Jos. x. 30, 32, 35, 37, 39. The plur. στόματα μαχαίρας is found Heb. xi. 34. In the best MSS. substantives in -πα form gen. and dat. in -πα and -πη (WH. ii. App. p. 156).

ἴσται πατομένην. See on i. 20, and see also Burton, § 71. Plus sonat quam patiḥθηται (Beng.): it expresses the permanent condition, la domination écrasante (Godet). Comp. the LXX of Zech. xii. 3, θύσομαι τῷ Ἰερουσαλήμ λίθων καταπατούμενον πάσιν τοῖς ἐθνεῖσιν. Jerusalem has more often been under the feet of

1 This use of πατὴρ, "I tread," as = καταπατῶ, "I trample on," is classical: Plat. Phdr. 248 A; Soph. Afr. 1146; Ant. 743; Aristoph. Vesp. 377. The meaning is certainly not "shall be inhabited by" (Hahn), as in Is. xiii. 5. Comp. Rev. xi. 2; Ps. Sol. vii. 2, ii. 2.
XXI. 24, 25.] LAST DAYS OF PUBLIC TEACHING 483

Gentiles than in the hands of Christians. Romans, Saracens, Persians, and Turks have all trampled upon her in turn.

The Latin Versions vary much: erit calcata (d), erit incalcata (e), erit in concalcationem (a), concalcabitur (r), calcabitur (Vulg.).

ἀχρισ. See on i. 20: ἀχρισ ὥς is possibly correct Rom. xi. 25; Heb. iii. 13.

καιροὶ ἑθνῶν. As stated already, the whole of this verse is peculiar to Lk., and some have supposed that the last part of it is an addition made by him. It is not necessary to charge him with any such licence; although it is possible that oral tradition has here, as elsewhere, paraphrased and condensed what was said. The “seasons of the Gentiles” or “opportunities of the Gentiles” cannot be interpreted with certainty. Either (1) Seasons for executing the Divine judgments; or (2) for lording it over Israel; or (3) for existing as Gentiles; or (4) for themselves becoming subject to Divine judgments; or (5) Opportunities of turning to God; or (6) of possessing the privileges which the Jews had forfeited. The first and last are best, and they are not mutually exclusive. Comp. ἀχρισ ὥς τὸ πλήρωμα τῶν ἑθνῶν εἰσέλθη (Rom. xi. 25), where the whole section is a comment on the promise that the punishment of Israel has a limit. The plur. καιροὶ corresponds with the plur. ἑθνη: each nation has its καιρός: but comp. ἐως πληρωθῶσιν καιροὶ τοῦ αἰῶνος (Tob. xiv. 5), where the whole passage should be compared with this.

25-28. The Signs of the Second Advent. Lk. here omits what is said about shortening the days and the appearance of impostors (Mt. xxiv. 22-26; Mk. xiii. 20-23). On the latter subject he has already recorded a warning (xvii. 23, 24).

25. ἐν ἡλίῳ κ. σελήνῃ κ. ἀστροις. “In sun and moon and stars.” In Mt. and Mk. the three words have the article. All English Versions prior to RV. wrongly insert the article here, Cov. with “sun,” the rest with all three words. Similar language is common in the Prophets: Is. xiii. 10; Ezek. xxxii. 7; Joel ii. 10, iii. 15: comp. Is. xxxiv. 4; Hag. ii. 6, 21, etc. Such expressions indicate the perplexity and distress caused by violent changes: the very sources of light are cut off. To what extent they are to be understood literally cannot be determined; but it is quite out of place to introduce here the thought of Christ as the sun and the Church as the moon, as do Ambr. and Wordsw. ad loc. (Migne, xv. 1813). The remainder of this verse and most of the next are peculiar to Lk.

συνοχή occurs only here and 2 Cor. ii. 4 in N.T.; but comp. viii. 45, xix. 43, xii. 50. In LXX it is found Judg. ii. 3; Job xxx. 3; Jer. lii. 5; Mic. v. 1. In Vulg. Jerome carelessly uses pressura both for συνοχῆ here and for ἀνάγκη in ver. 23; although Lat. Vet. distinguishes, with compressio

(a), conflictio (d), conclusio (e), or occursus (f) for συνοχή, and necessitas (ader or) pressura (l) for ἀνέφε. See small print on xix. 43.

ἐν ἀπορίᾳ ηχοῦσ. All English Versions prior to RV. go astray here, but Wic. and Rhem. less than the rest, owing to the Vulgate: in terris pressura gentium pra confusione sonitus maris et fluctuum. Tertullian is better: in terra angustias nationum obstupescientium velut a sonitu maris fluctuantem (Adv. Marc. iv. 39). It is the nations who are "in perplexity at the resounding of sea and surge." Figurative language of this kind is common in the Prophets: Is. xxviii. 2, xxix. 6, xxx. 30; Ezek. xxxviii. 22; Ps. xlii. 7, lxv. 7, lxxxviii. 7. See Stanley, Jewish Church, i. p. 130.

It is uncertain whether ἠχοῦσ is to be accented ἠχοῦς as from ἠχώ, or ἠχούς as from ἠχος (iv. 37; Heb. xii. 19; Acts ii. 2). See WH. ii. App. p. 158. The reading ἠχοῦσις (D Γ Δ Α Λ II etc.) is a manifest correction: the evidence against it (A B C L M R X and Versions) is overwhelming. For the gen. after ἀπορία, "perplexity because of," comp. καταλέγων τῶν Συνθέων τῆς ἀπορίας (Hdt. iv. 83. 1). The conjecture ἐν ἀπείρα is baseless, and gives an inferior meaning.


The arescentibus of Lat. Vet. and Vulg. is remarkable; but a has a refrigescensibus and d has deficientiam.1 Of these three words refrigescere best represents ἀποφύγεων. But in LXX ψάχεω is used of drying in the sun or air: Num. xi. 32; 2 Sam. xvii. 19. Comp. τοι δὲ ἐδρὼν ἀπεψύχοντο χιτώνων, στάντε ποτὶ προφήτης (Hom. II. xi. 621): "They dried the sweat off their tunics." Rhem. renders arescentibus "withering away." Hobart claims both ἀποφύγεων and πρόσδοκα as medical (pp. 161, 166). But medical writers use ἀποφύγεων of being chilled, not of swooning or expiring. He gives many instances from Galen of πρόσδοκα (which occurs here and Acts xii. 2 only in N.T.) as denoting the expectation of an unfavourable result. For this use of ἀπό see on xxiv. 41.

τῇ οἴκουμένῃ. See on iv. 5.

αἱ δυνάμεις τῶν οὐρανῶν σαλευθῆσονται. Comp. τακτούσαται πᾶσαι αἱ δυνάμεις τῶν οὐρανῶν (Is. xxxiv. 4). The verb which Lk. substitutes is one of which he is fond (vi. 38, 48, vii. 24; Acts ii. 25, iv. 31, xvi. 26, xvi. 13). By αἱ δυνάμεις τ. οὐρ. is meant, not the Angels (Euthym.), nor the cosmic powers which uphold the heavens (Mey. Oosterz.), but the heavenly bodies, the stars (De W. Holtz. Weiss, Hahn): comp. Is. xl. 26; Ps. xxxiii. 6. Evidently physical existences are meant.

27. καὶ τότε δεσμαῖ. "Not till then shall they see." Not δέσματε: there is perhaps a hint that those present will not live to see this. This verse is in all three: comp. i Thes. iv. 16; 2 Thes. i. 7, ii. 8; Rev. i. 8, xix. 11–16.

28. This word of comfort is given by Lk. alone. Only here in

1 Deficientiam hominum a timore: another reproduction of gen. abs. in Latin. Comp. iii. 15, ix. 43, xix. 11, xxi. 5, xxiv. 36, 41.
XXI. 28-88. LAST DAYS OF PUBLIC TEACHING 485

N.T. is ἀνακύπτων used of being elated after sorrow. Comp. Job x. 15, and contrast Lk. xiii. 11; [Jn.] viii. 7, 10. The disciples present are regarded as representatives of believers generally. Only those who witness the signs can actually fulfil this injunction.


29-88. The Parable of the Fig Tree. Mt. xxiv. 32–35; Mk. xiii. 28–32.

29. Καὶ εἶπεν. This marks the resumption of the discourse after a pause: comp. xi. 5. More often Lk. uses εἶπεν δέ or ἔληγεν δέ: xiv. 12, xx. 41, etc. For εἶπεν παραβολὴν see on vi. 39. Lk. alone makes the addition καὶ πάντα τὰ δεώρα: see on vii. 30 and vii. 35. Writing for Gentiles, Lk. preserves words which cover those to whom fig trees are unknown.

30. προβάλετων. Here only without acc. We must understand τὰ φύλα. In Jos. Ant. iv. 8, 19 καρπῶν is added: comp. Acts xix. 33.

ἀφ’ ἐαυτῶν γινώσκετε. “Of your own selves ye recognize:” i.e. without being told. For ἐαυτός, -ῶν, of the 2nd pers. comp. xii. 1, 33, xvi. 9, 15, xvii. 3, 14, xxii. 17, xxiii. 28. It occurs in class. Grk. where no ambiguity is involved.

There is no justification for rendering θέρος “harvest,” which would be θερισμός (x. 2). In N.T. θέρος occurs only in this parable.

32. ἡ γενέα αὐτῆς. This cannot well mean anything but the generation living when these words were spoken: vii. 31, xi. 29–32, 50, 51, xvii. 25; Mt. xi. 16, etc. The reference, therefore, is to the destruction of Jerusalem regarded as the type of the end of the world. To make ἡ γενέα αὐτῆς mean the Jewish race, or the generation contemporaneous with the beginning of the signs, is not satisfactory. See on ix. 27, where, as here, the coming of the Kingdom of God seems to refer to the destruction of Jerusalem.

33. δ’ οὕρανός καὶ ἡ γῆ. Comp. 2 Pet. iii. 10; Heb. i. 11, 12; Rev. xx. 11, xxi. 1; Ps. cii. 26; Is. li. 6. A time will come when everything material will cease to exist; but Christ’s words will ever hold good. The prophecy just uttered is specially meant; but all His sayings are included. ‘Comp. οἴδε γὰρ παρῆλθεν ἥπ’ αὐτῶν λόγος (Addit. Esth. x. 5).

οὐ μὴ παρελεύσονται. So also in Mk. xiii. 31; but in Mt. xxiv. 35 παρέλθωσιν, which ARX etc. read here and ACDX etc. read in Mk. As the subj. is the usual constr. in N.T. after οὐ μή, copyists often corrected the fut. indic. to aor. subj. Comp. Mk. xiv. 31; Mt. xv. 5; Gal. iv. 30; Heb. x. 37, etc. The Old Latin MSS. used by Jerome seem here to have read transient . . . transient. Our best MSS. of the Vulgate read transibunt . . . transient. Jerome may have forgotten to correct the second transient into transibunt: or he may have wished to mark the difference between παρελεύσονται and παρέλθωσιν. Cod. Brix. with the Book of Dimma and
some other authorities has transibunt: prateribunt. See Hermathena, No. xix. p. 386.

34-36. Concluding Warning as to the Necessity of Ceaseless Vigilance. Comp. Mt. xxv. 13-15; Mk. xiii. 33-37. The form of this warning differs considerably in the three Gospels. Not many words are common to any two of them; and very few are common to all three. It should be noted that here as elsewhere (x. 7 = 1 Tim. v. 18, xxiv. 34 = 1 Cor. xv. 5), Lk. in differing from Mt. and Mk. agrees with S. Paul. Comp. with this 1 Thes. v. 3. See Lft. Epp. p. 72.

34. For προσέχετε δὲ έαυτοίς see on ver. 30 and xii. 1; and for βαρηθώσιν see on ix. 32.

κρεπάλη. Not "surfeiting," but the nausea which follows a debauch: crapula. Here only in bibl. Grk. For this and μθι (Rom. xiii. 13; Gal. v. 21) see Trench, Syn. lxi.; and for the orthography see WH. ii. App. p. 151.

μερίμναις βιωτικαίς. The adj. occurs 1 Cor. vi. 3, 4: but is not found in LXX, nor earlier than Aristotle. Comp. πρὸς τὰς βιωτικὰς χρείας ὑπηρετεῖν (Philo, Vit. Mo. iii. 18).

The remarkable rendering soinis for μερίμναις in Cod. Bezae has long attracted attention, and has been regarded by some as a manifest Gallicism. It is confidently connected with the French soins. But the connexion is not certain. The word may be a form of somniis, and the transition from "disturbing dreams" to "perplexities" and "cares" would not be difficult. The word occurs once in the St. Gall MS. of the Sortes, and soiniari occurs four times. It was therefore a word which was established in use early in the sixth century. Whether it is original in the text of D, or is a later substitution, is much debated. Here other renderings are sollicitudinibus (a e), cogitationibus (b f), curis (Tert. Vulg.). The prevalent Old Latin rendering was sollicitudines (a b d f) both in vii. 14 and Mt. xiii. 22 (comp. Mk. iv. 19); and the translator of Irenæus has sollicitudinibus here. See Scrivener, Codex Bezae, pp. xlv, xlv. Rendel Harris, p. 26; and an excellent review in the Guardian, May 18, 1892, p. 743.

ἐφνίδιος. Here, but not 1 Thes. v. 3 or Wisd. xvii. 14, this form is best attested: WH. Intr. 309, App. 151. The Latin renderings are repentaneus (a), substantaneus (d e), repentina (f Vulg.).

Η ἡμέρα ἐκείνη. This is the one expression which in this section is common to all three accounts. Comp. x. 12, xvii. 31. The day of the Messiah's return is meant.

δὴ παγίς. According to the best authorities (N B D L, a b c e f g i Boh., Tert.) these words belong to what precedes, and the γάρ follows ἐπεσελεύσεται, not παγίς. The whole recalls φόβος καὶ βδύνοις καὶ παγίς ἐφ' ἡμᾶς τούς ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἐπὶ τῆς τῆς (Is. xxiv. 17). The resemblance between the passages, and the fact that ἐπεσελεύσεται suits the notion of a παγίς ("noose" or "lasso"), accounts for the transposition of the γάρ. Originally a παγίς (πύργος) is that which holds fast; Ps. xci. 3; Prov. vii. 23; Ecclus. ix. 12. Here most Latin texts have laqueus, but Cod. Palat. has nuscipla.

35-36. Note the characteristic repetition of παγίς.
35. πᾶσης τῆς γῆς. Not the land of the Jews only. Possibly καθημένους indicates that, as at the flood, and at Belshazzar's feast, people are sitting at ease, eating and drinking, etc. (xvii. 27): but it need not mean more than inhabiting. Comp. μάχαιραν ἐγὼ καλώ ἐπὶ πάντας τοὺς καθημένους ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Jer. xxv. 29). For ἐπὶ προσ. η. τ. γῆς comp. 2 Sam. xviii. 8. The phrase is Hebraistic.

36. ἀγρυπνεῖτε δὲ. Comp. Eph. vi. 18; Heb. xiii. 17; 2 Sam. xii. 21; Ps. cxxvi. 1; Prov. viii. 34.

The οὖν (A C R, b eff, Syrr. Aeth. Arm.) for δέ (N B D, a d e) probably comes from Mt. xxv. 13 and Mk. xiii. 35.

ἐν πάντι καιρῷ. xviii. 1 and 1 Thes. v. 17 are in favour of taking these words with δεόμενοι (Wic. Gen. Rhem. AV.) rather than with ἀγρυπνεῖτε (Tyn. Cov. Cran. RV.). For similar questions comp. ix. 17, 18, 57, x. 18, xi. 39, etc.

κατασχύσητε. This is the reading of B L X 33, Aegyptt. Aeth. and is adopted by the best editors. It properly means "prevail against" (Mt. xvi. 18; Jer. xv. 18; 2 Chron. viii. 3; comp. Lk. xxii. 23; Is. xxii. 4; Wisd. xvii. 5). The κατασχύσητε of A C D R, Latt. Syrr. Arm., Tert. perhaps comes from xx. 35.

σταθήσαι. "To hold your place," comp. Τότε σταθήσεται ἐν παρνησίᾳ πολλῆς δικαιοσύνης (Wisd. v. 1). It is clear from xi. 18, xvii. 11, 40, xix. 8; Acts ii. 14, v. 20, xi. 13, xvii. 22, xxv. 18, xxvii. 21, etc., that σταθήσαι is not to be taken passively of being placed by the Angels (Mt. xxiv. 31). Comp. τοῖς δώναται σταθήσαι; (Rev. vi. 17). For the opposite of σταθήσαι see xxiii. 30; Rev. vi. 16: comp. I Jn. ii. 28.

THE APOCALYPSE OF JESUS.

Hase (Gesch. Jesu, § 97), Colani (J. C. et les croyances messianiques de son temps), and others think that Jesus had penetration enough to foresee and predict the destruction of Jerusalem, but they cannot believe that He was such a fanatic as to foretell that He would return in glory and judge the world. Hence they conclude that these predictions about the Parusia were never uttered by Him. Keim sees that Mk. xiii. 32 cannot be an invention (Jes. of Naz. v. p. 241): in some shape or other Jesus must have foretold His glorious Return. Therefore this eschatological discourse is based upon some genuine utterances of Jesus; but has been expanded into an apocalyptic poem with the help of other material. Both Keim and some of those who deny the authenticity of any prediction of Christ's Return assume the existence of an apocalypse by some Jewish Christian as the source from which large portions of this discourse are taken. Weissacker holds that the apocalypse was Jewish, and was taken from a lost section of the Book of Enoch. Weißenbach, followed by Wendt and Vischer, upholds the theory of a Jewish-Christian original.

But did this spurious apocalypse, the existence of which is pure conjecture, also supply Lk. with what he has recorded xi. 49-51, xiii. 23-27, 35, xvii. 23, 37, xviii. 8, xix. 15, 43, xx. 16? Did it supply Mt. with what he has recorded vii. 22, x. 23, xix. 28, xxi. 44, xxii. 7, xxv. 31, xxvi. 64? Mk. also with the parallels to these passages? That all three derived these utterances from Apostolic tradition is credible. Is it credible that a writing otherwise unknown and by an unknown author should have had such enormous influence? And its influence does not end with the three Evangelists. It has contributed largely
to the Epistles of S. Paul, especially to the very earliest of them. Comp. I Thes. ii. 16, iv. 16, 17, v. 1-3; 2 Thes. ii. 1-12. And it would seem to have influenced much of the imagery in Revelation, which foretells wars, famine, pestilence, and persecution (vi. 4, 5, 8, 9), and the Return of the Saviour accompanied by the armies of heaven (xix. 11-16). This supposed fictitious apocalypse is assigned to A.D. 68, or thereabouts; and therefore long after the Pauline Epistles were written. Apostolic tradition, which is known to have existed, is a far safer hypothesis. See Godet, ad loc. (ii. pp. 430 ff.), whose remarks have been freely used in this note. See also Briggs, The Messiah of the Gospels, T. & T. Clark, 1894, ch. iv. where this "Apocalypse of Jesus" is critically discussed, with special reference to the theory of Weiffenbach and others that the assumed Jewish-Christian apocalypse consisted of these three portions:—(a) the ἅρπας ὡδινῶν, Mk. xiii. 7, 8=Mt. xxiv. 6-8=Lk. xxi. 9-11; (β) the θλιψις, Mk. xiii. 14-20=Mt. xxiv. 15-22; (γ) the παρωνια, Mk. xiii. 24-27=Mt. xxiv. 29-31=Lk. xxi. 25-27. Briggs points out the insignificance of the fact that ideas such as these are found in Jewish pseudepigrapha. These ideas were by them derived from the O.T., which was the common source of both canonical and uncanonical apocalypses, whether Jewish or Christian. Jesus uses this source on other occasions, and there is nothing unreasonable in the belief that He uses it here. The cosmical disturbances foretold (vv. 25-27) "belong not only to the theophanies and the Christophanies of prophecy, but also to the theophanies and Christophanies of history in both the Old Testament and the New. They represent the response of the creature to the presence of the Creator" (p. 155). Both Briggs and Nösgen (Gesch. J. C. Kap. ix.) give abundant references to the literature of the subject in Beyschlag (L. J.), Hilgenfeld (Einl. i. N.T.), Holsten (die Syn. Ev.), Immer (Mt. Theol.), Mangold in Bleek (Einl. i. N.T.), Pfeiderer (Urchristen.), Pressense (J. C.), Spitta (die Offg. des Joh.) and Wendt (Lehre Jesu). See also especially D. E. Haupt (Eschatolog. Aussagen Jesu in d. Syn. Evang., Berlin, 1895).

37, 38. General Description of the Last Days of Christ’s Public Ministry.

37. τὰς ἡμέρας. "During the days." From the other narratives we infer that this covers the day of the triumphal entry and the next two days. It is, therefore, retrospective, and is a repetition, with additional detail, of xix. 47. The contrast with τὰς δὲ νύκτας, "but during the nights," is obvious. It is not clear whether ἦν belongs to ἐν τῷ ιερῷ or to θυάτεροι, which probably ought to follow (Ἀ Ν Α Τ Λ Ρ Χ Υ Δ Δ Π) and not precede (Β Κ) ἐν τῷ ιερῷ.

ἐξερχόμενος ἦλιζεν εἰς. "Leaving (the temple) He used to go and bivouac on." (iv. 23, vii. 1, ix. 61, xi. 7). Comp. μηκέτι αὐλισθήτε εἰς Νινευ (Tobit xiv. 10), ὑπὸ τοὺς κλάδους αὐτῆς αὐλισθήσεται (Ecclus. xiv. 26). On the M. of Olives He would be undisturbed (xxii. 39). For καλοῦμενον see on vi. 15, and for Ἐλαιῶν see on xix. 29. It is not probable that εἰς τὸ ὄρος is to be taken with ἐξερχόμενος, but the participle of motion has influenced the choice of preposition.

38. ἀρθρίζει πρὸς αὐτὸν. Another condensed expression: "rose early and came to Him." The verb occurs here only in N.T., but

1 Holtzmann (Handcomm. on Mt. xxiv. 4-34, Eng. tr. p. 112) makes the divisions thus: (a) Mt. xxiv. 4-14; (β) 15-28; (γ) 29-34.
XXI. 88-XXIL 1.] THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION 489

is freq. in LXX. Twice we have the two verbs combined, αἰνισθητί δε... καὶ ὑποκείμεν εἰς ὁδὸν ἄμων (Judg. xix. 9): αἰνισθομένεν ἐν κώμαις ὑποκείμεν ἐς ἀμπελώνας (Cant. vii. 11, 12). The literal meaning is the right one here, although ὑποκείμεν may mean “seek eagerly” (Ps. lxxvii. 34; Ecclus. iv. 12, vi. 36; Wisd. vi. 14). Contrast Ps. cxxvii. 2; I Mac. iv. 52, vi. 33, xi. 67; Gospel of Nicodemus xv. The classical form ὑποκείμεν is always used in the literal sense.

Most MSS. of Vulg. here have the strange rendering manico hab ad eum, which is also the rendering in Cod. Brix. (f), the best representative of the Old Latin text on which Jerome worked. But G has mane habat, which may possibly be Jerome’s correction of manico habat, a word of which Augustine says mihi non occursit. See Rösch, It. und Vulg. p. 174. Other renderings are—vigilabat ad eum (d), de luce vigilabant ad eum (a), ante luce veniebat ad eum (e), diuus ab conveniendum erat (Tert.). See on xvi. 26.

Five cursives (13, 69, 124, 346, 556), which are closely related, here insert the pericope of the Woman taken in Adultery, an arrangement which was perhaps suggested by ὑποκείμεν here and ὑποκείμεν Jn. viii. 2. The common origin of 13, 69, 124, 346 is regarded as certain. See Scrivener, Int. to Crit. of N.T. i. pp. 192, 202, 231; T. K. Abbott, Collation of Four Important MSS. of the Gospels, Dublin, 1877. “The Section was probably known to the scribe exclusively as a church lesson, recently come into use; and placed by him here on account of the close resemblance between vv. 37, 38 and [Jo] vii. 53, viii. 1, 2. Had he known it as part of a continuous text of St. John’s Gospel, he was not likely to transpose it” (WH. ii. App. p. 63).

XXII.-XXIV. THE PASSION AND THE RESURRECTION.

We now enter upon the last main division of the Gospel (xxii.-xxiv.), containing the narratives of the Passion, Resurrection, and Ascension. The first of these three subjects falls into three parts:—The Preparation (xxii. 1-38); the Passion (xxii. 39-xxiii. 49); and the Burial (xxiii. 50-56). In the first of these parts we may distinguish the following sections:—The Approach of the Passover and the Malice of the Hierarchy (xxii. 1, 2); the Treachery of Judas (3-6); the Preparation for the Paschal Supper (7-13); the Institution of the Eucharist (14-23); the Strife about Priority (24-34); the New Conditions (35-38). In this part of the narrative the particulars which are wholly or mainly peculiar to Lk. are those contained in vv. 8, 15, 24, 28-30, 35-38.


1. �емыеν. “Was drawing nigh.” Mt. and Mk. say more definitely μετὰ διὸ ἣμέρας. Keim calls attention to the fidelity of this introductory section, ev. 1-13 (v. p. 305, n.).

η ἐφηρή τῶν ἀξίων. The phrase is freq. in LXX (Exod.
xxiii. 15, xxxiv. 18; Deut. xvi. 16; 2 Chron. viii. 13, etc.), but occurs nowhere else in N.T. Comp. ii. 41. Lk. is fond of these Hebraistic circumlocutions: ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν σαββάτων (iv. 16; Acts xiii. 14, xvi. 13), ἡ ἡμέρα τ. ἀ. (ver. 7), ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν ἑορτῶν (Acts vii. 42), etc. See small print on iv. 16.

ἡ λεγομένη Πάσχα. Strictly speaking the Passover on Nisan 14th was distinct from the F. of Unleavened Bread, which lasted from the 15th to the 21st (Lev. xxiii. 5, 6; Num. xxviii. 16, 17; 2 Chron. xxx. 15, 21; Ezra vi. 19, 22; 1 Esdr. i. 10–19; comp. Mk. xiv. 1). But they were so closely connected, that it was common to treat them as one festival. Not only Lk. as “writing mainly for Gentiles” does so, but Mt. (xxvi. 17); and Josephus goes beyond either in saying ἐορτήν ἰόγεν ἐφ᾿ ἡμέρας ὁκτώ, τὴν τῶν Ἀζύμων λεγομένην (Ant. ii. 15. 1). Comp. κατὰ τὸν καιρὸν τῆς τῶν Ἀζύμων ἐορτῆς ἣν Φάσκα λέγομεν (xiv. 2. 1). Elsewhere he distinguishes them (Ant. iii. 10. 5, ix. 13. 3).

2. ἐξήτου...τὸ πῶς. “They continued seeking as to the method”: comp. xix. 47, 48, and for the τὸ see on i. 62. Mt. tells us that they held a meeting in the house of Caiaphas. ἀνάλωσυν. Another of Lk.’s favourite words. Here, xxiii. 32, and eighteen times in the Acts it has the special meaning of “remove, slay”: so also 2 Thes. ii. 8, where the reading is doubtful. This meaning is common in LXX (Gen. iv. 15; Exod. ii. 14, 15, xxi. 29, etc.) and in class. Grk. Except Mt. ii. 16; 2 Thes. ii. 8, and Heb. x. 9 (where see Wsctt.), it occurs only in Lk. With ἐφοβοῦσθον comp. xx. 19, xix. 48, xxi. 38.

3. Εἰσῆλθεν ἐκ Σατανᾶς. Comp. Jn. xiii. 2, where this stage is represented as the devil making suggestions to Judas, while his entering and taking possession of the traitor is reserved for the moment before he left the upper room to carry out his treachery (xiii. 27). See on x. 18 and comp. iv. 13, to which this perhaps looks back. Satan is renewing the attack. Neither Mt. nor Mk. mentions Satan here. But there is no hint that Judas is now like a demoniac, unable to control his own actions (Hahn). Judas opened the door to Satan. He did not resist him, and Satan did not flee from him. Jesus must suffer, but Judas need not become the traitor.

tῶν καλούμενον ἱσκαριώτην. All three give this distinctive surname (see on vi. 16), and also the tragic fact that he was τῶν δώδεκα. Comp. i. 36, vi. 15, vii. 11, viii. 2, ix. 10, x. 39, xix. 2, 29.

For καλούμενον (N B D L X) TR. has ἐτικαλούμενον (A C P R Γ Δ Λ II), a form commonly used in Acts (i. 23, iv. 36, x. 5, 32, xii. 25). In Acts i. 23 we have both verbs.

4. στρατηγοῖς. Lk. alone mentions these officials. They are
the leaders of the corps of Levites, which kept guard in and about the temple. The full title is στρατηγοὶ τοῦ ἱεροῦ (ver. 52). See Edersh. *The Temple*, p. 119; Jos. *B. J.* vi. 5. 3. These officers would be consulted, because they had to take part in carrying out the arrest. The chief of them was called ὁ στρατηγὸς τοῦ ἱεροῦ (*Acts* iv. 1, v. 24, 26), or "the man of the temple mount" or "the man of the mount of the house." *Comp. 2 Mac.* iii. 4. Here and ver. 52 the plur. has no art.

παραδό. In vi. 16 Judas is called προδότης, but elsewhere παραδόναι, not προδόναι, is the word used to describe his crime.

5. ἔχαρησαν. It was wholly unexpected, and it simplified matters enormously.

συνέλευσεν. *Acts* xxiii. 20; *Jn.* ix. 22; and quite classical. *Mk.* has ἔπηγελεν. The ἔστησαν of *Mt.* refers to the actual paying of the money. He alone states the amount,—thirty shekels.

6. ἀτέρ ὀχλου. Either "without a crowd" or "without tumult." *Comp. Mt.* xxvi. 5. Contrast μετὰ ὀχλου, *Acts* xxiv. 18. In bibl. Grk. the poetical word ἀτέρ occurs only here, ver. 35, and 2 *Mac.* xii. 15. Very possibly the priests had intended to wait until the feast was over before arresting Jesus. The offer of Judas induced them to make the attempt before the feast began.

Keim rightly rejects with decision the theory that the betrayal by Judas is not history, but a Christian fiction personifying in Judas the Jewish people. That Christians should invent so appalling a crime for an Apostle is quite beyond belief. The crime of Judas is in all four Gospels and in the Acts, and is emphasized by Christ's foreknowledge of it. Speculations as to other causes of it besides the craving for money are not very helpful: but the motives may easily have been complex.

The well-known difficulty as to the time of the Last Supper and of our Lord's death cannot be conclusively solved with our present knowledge. But the difficulty is confined to the day of the month. All four accounts agree with the generally accepted belief that Jesus was crucified on a Friday. *In the Synoptists* this Friday seems to be the 15th Nisan. *Jn.* (xiii. 1, 29, xviii. 28, xix. 14, 31) clearly intimates that it was the 14th, and we shall probably do rightly in abiding by his statements and seeing whether the others can be brought into harmony with it. This is perhaps most easily done by regarding, in accordance with Jewish reckoning, the evening of the 13th as the beginning of the 14th. All, therefore, that is said to have taken place "on the first day of unleavened bread" may have taken place after sunset on what we should call the 13th. It seems improbable that the priests and their officials would go to arrest Jesus at the very time when the whole nation was celebrating the Paschal meal. It is more easy to believe that Jesus celebrated the Paschal meal before the usual time, viz. on the Jewish 14th, but before
midnight and some twenty hours before the usual time for slaughtering the lambs, at which time He was dying or dead upon the cross.

Professor D. Chwolson of Petersburg has made a new attempt at a solution in a recently published essay, "Das letzte Passamahl Christi und der Tag seines Todes; Memoire de l'Academie Imperiale des Sciences, vii Serie, tome xii. No. 1. A criticism in the Guardian, June 28, 1893, tends to show that it leaves the crucial question just where it was. A later contribution is that of G. M. Semeria, Le Jour de la Mort de Jesus; Rev. bibl. 1, 1896.

7. Ἡμέρα τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ τῆς ἀμαθείας. The day itself arrived, as distinct from "was approaching" (ver. 1). This arriving would take place at sunset on the 13th. See Schanz, ad loc. Mt. and Mk. have τῇ πρώτῃ τῶν ἀμαθειῶν.

Εἰς τὴν ἡμέραν. This in no way proves that the 14th, according to our reckoning, is intended. The day on which the lambs had to be killed began at sunset on the 13th, and ended at sunset on the 14th; and the lambs were killed about 2.30-5.30 P.M. on the 14th in the Court of the Priests. Each head of the company sharing the lamb slew the animal, whose blood was caught in a bowl by a priest and poured at the foot of the altar of burnt-offering (Edersh. The Temple, p. 190). It was on the evening of the 13th that the houses were carefully searched for leaven, in silence, and with a light: comp. 1 Cor. v. 7; Zeph. i. 12. The ἐν refers to legal necessity: it was so prescribed.

8. ἀπέστειλεν. Both Mt. and Mk. omit this preliminary order and begin with the disciples’ question: and Lk. alone gives the names of the two who were sent. As this does not harmonize with the theory that Lk. shows animus against Peter, we are told that Peter and John are named by Lk. as the representatives of the old Judaism. The treason of Judas might lead Jesus to select two of His most trusted Apostles.

10. The care with which Jesus avoids an open statement to all the disciples as to the place ordained for the supper may be explained in the same way. Until His hour is come Judas must be prevented from executing his project: and no miracle is wrought, where ordinary precautions suffice. In what follows Lk. and Mk. are almost identical: Mt. is more brief.

Evidently the ἄνθρωπος is not the head of the household, but a servant or slave: the carrying of water was specially the work of slaves or of women (Deut. xxix. 11; Josh. ix. 21-27; Gen. xxiv. 11; Jn. iv. 7). The head of the house is in the house (vv. 10, 11). The suggestion, therefore, that this is the master of the house drawing the water for making the bread, according to custom, on the 13th of Nisan, falls to the ground. This incident gives no help in deciding between the 13th and the 14th. The water was more probably for washing the hands before the evening meal. With κερίμων Ἰδατος comp. ἀλάβαστρον μύρου (vii. 37). As in the case of the colt (xix. 30), we are uncertain whether this
is a case of supernatural knowledge, or of previous arrangement; but in both cases prophetic prescience seems to be implied.

For amphoram aqua portans (Vulg.) basilans basilum (vaseellum) aquae (d).

11. ἵππες. Fut. for imperat. This is more common in prohibitions than in commands (iv. 12; Acts xxiii. 5; Mt. vi. 5). In the Decalogue, only the positive ἵμα τοῦ πατέρα has the imperative; the negative commandments have οὐ with the fut. indic. Win. xiii. 5. c. p. 396.

τῷ οἰκοδομτῷ τῆς οἰκίας. A pleonasm marking a late stage in the language, in which the meaning of οἰκοδομτός has become indefinite: comp. ὑποτέλειον τῶν ποδῶν (xx. 43), συν συβίστια, στρατηγοῦ τῆς στρατιᾶς, the Daily Journal, etc. The cogn. accus. (πόλεμον πολεμεῖν, οἰκοδομεῖν οἶκον) is different.

δ διδάσκαλος. Like δ κύριος (xix. 31), this implies that the man knows Jesus, and is perhaps in some degree a disciple.

τὸ κατάλυμα. Not necessarily the same as the ἀνάγαιον (ver. 12). It is possible that Jesus only asked for the large general room on the ground floor (comp. ii. 7), but that the man gave Him the best room, reserved for more private uses, above the κατάλυμα. It was a common thing for the inhabitants of Jerusalem to lend a room to pilgrims for the passover, the usual payment being the skin of the paschal lamb and the vessels used at the meal. Mt. alone gives the words δ καίρος μου ἐγρήγορος ἐστιν, which perhaps explains why Jesus is having the paschal meal before the time. Neither here, nor at the supper, is any mention of a lamb: and perhaps there was none. The time for slaughtering had not yet come; and, as Jesus was excommunicated, it is not likely that the priests would have helped His disciples to observe the ritual respecting it. Moreover, there would hardly be time for all this and for the roasting of the lamb. The Last Supper was the inauguration of a new order rather than the completion of an old one; and its significance is enhanced if the central symbol of the old dispensation was absent, when He whom it symbolized was instituting the commemoration of that which the old symbol prefigured. It was on the last great day of the Feast of Tabernacles, when the water from Siloam was probably not poured out beside the altar, that Jesus cried, “If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink” (Jn. vii. 37); and it was when the great lamps were not lit in the Court of the Women, that He said, “I am the Light of the World” (Jn. viii. 12). From vv. 15–19 it appears that τὸ πάσχα and φάγω refer to the eucharistic bread and wine.

12. ἀνάγαιον. “Anything raised above the ground (ἀνᾶ or ἀνὰ and γαῖα or γῆ), upper floor (Xen. Anab. v. 4. 29), upper room.” Only here and Mk. xiv. 15. The MSS. vary between ἀνάγαιον, ἀνώγαιον, ἀνώγεως, ἀνώγεως, ἀνώγειον, and ἀνώγεων. Most, including the best, have ἀνώγαιον. That this room is identical with the ὑπερφῶν. Acts L 13, is pure conjecture: the change of word is against it.
In both passages Vulg. has *cænaculum*, for which Old Latin texts have here *medianum* (a), *pede plano locum* (b), *superiorum locum* (q), in *superioribus locum* (c(e)), and *superiorem domum* (d).

ἔστρωμένων. “Spread, furnished”—with *what*, depends upon the context, which here suggests couches or cushions: comp. Acts ix. 34. Luther erroneously has *gepfästert*. Mk. adds ἐτούμων, which some insert here.

13. καθὼς. “Even as”: the correspondence was exact; comp. xix. 32. The Evangelists seem to intimate that Christ’s knowledge was supernatural rather than the result of previous arrangement. But in any case the remaining ten, including Judas, were left in ignorance as to where the meal was to take place.

14—23. The Last Supper, with the Institution of the Eucharist as a new Passover: comp. Mt. xxvi. 20—29; Mk. xiv. 17—25. The declaration that one of them is a traitor is placed by Mt. and Mk. at the beginning of the section, by Lk. at the end (ver. 21): comp. Jn. xiii. 21, where the wording of the declaration agrees with Mt. and Mk. Lk. seems to have used an independent source: comp. 1 Cor. xi. 24, 25.

14. Lk.’s independence appears at once: nearly every word in the verse differs from Mt. and Mk.

ἀνέπεσον. Mt. has ἀνέκεστο: the practice of standing (Exod. xii. 11) had long been abandoned; first for sitting, and then for reclining. *Mos servorum est, ut edant stantes; at nunc comedunt recumbentes, ut dignoscatur, exisse eos e servitute in libertatem*, was the explanation given by the Rabbins. The choosing of the lamb ten days in advance had also been given up. Here, as elsewhere, ἀναπίπτει implies a change of position (xi. 37, xiv. 10, xvii. 7; Jn. xiii. 12, 25, etc.). Lft. *On a Fresh Revision of N.T.* p. 80.

οἱ ἀπόστολοι. This is the true reading. In some texts δώδεκα has been inserted (A C P R) or substituted (L X) from Mt. and Mk. Ten to thirty was the number for a passover. Note that Lk. once more has σὺν, where others have μετά or καί: comp. viii. 38, 51, xx. 1, xxii. 56.

15. The whole of this verse and most of the next are peculiar to Lk. The combination of ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα with τοῦ μὲ παθεῖν is remarkable. The knowledge of the intensity of the suffering does not cancel the intensity of the desire.

Ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα. A Hebraism common in LXX. Comp. Acts v. 28, xxiii. 14; Jn. iii. 29; Mt. xiii. 14, xv. 4; James v. 17; Gen. xxxi. 30; Exod. xxi. 20; Deut. vii. 26, etc.

16. οὐ μὴ φάγω αὐτό. After this present occasion. The αὐτό must refer to τῶν τῶν τάσων (ver. 15), and shows that this need not imply a lamb. The Passover of which Christ will partake, after having fulfilled the type, is the Christian Eucharist, in which He joins with the faithful in the Kingdom of God on earth. Others
suppose the reference to be to the spiritual banquet in the world to come. But if αἰρέω means the paschal lamb, in what sense could Jesus partake of that in the future? The Mishna itself contemplates the possibility of a passover without a lamb, and rules that unleavened bread is the only essential thing. With an influx of many thousands of pilgrims, to provide a lamb might be in some cases impossible.

17. δεξίμενος. It was handed to Him: contrast λαβὼν, ver. 19 (Schanz). It is usual to consider this as the first or second of the four cups that were handed round during the paschal meal; the eucharistic cup being identified with the third or fourth. But we are in doubt (1) as to what the paschal ritual was at this time; (2) as to the extent to which Jesus followed the paschal ritual in this highly exceptional celebration; (3) as to the text of this passage, especially as to whether Lk. records two cups or only one: so that identifications of this kind are very precarious. In any case, Lk. mentions a cup before the breaking of the bread, whether this be the eucharistic cup or not: and S. Paul twice mentions the cup first (1 Cor. x. 16, 21), although in his account of the institution he follows the usual order (1 Cor. xi. 23). In the Δαυίς the cup is placed first (ix. 2.; see Schaff's 3rd ed. pp. 58-61, 191).

εὐχαριστήσας. This seems to imply the eucharistic cup. All three have εὐχαριστήσας of the cup. Lk. repeats it of the bread, where Mt. and Mk. have εὐλογήσας.

In the Jewish ritual the person who presided began by asking a blessing on the feast; then blessed, drank, and passed the first cup. Then Ps. cxiii. and cxiv. were sung and the bitter herbs eaten, followed by the second cup. After which the president explained the meaning of the feast: and some think that for this explanation of the old rite Jesus substituted the institution of the new one. After the eating of the lamb and unleavened cakes came the thanksgiving for the meal and the blessing and drinking of the third cup. Lastly, the singing of Ps. cxv.-cxviii. followed by the fourth cup: and there was sometimes a fifth.

διαμερίσατε. Comp. Acts ii. 45; Judg. v. 30. Followed by εἰς ἑαυτόν, it expresses more strongly than the mid. (xxiii. 34; Mt. xxvii. 35) the fact of mutual distribution. In some texts (A D etc.) εἰς ἑαυτόν has been altered into the more usual dat. (Jn. xix. 24; Acts ii. 45). The distribution would be made by each drinking in turn, rather than by each pouring some into a cup of his own. The εἰς ἑαυτόν perhaps corresponds to the πάντες of Mt. and Mk. Πέτερ (ἐπονο) ἐξ αὐτοῦ πάντες.

18. ἀπὸ τοῦ νοῦ. This at first sight appears to mean that Jesus did not partake of the cup. "I say, Divide it among yourselves, because henceforth I shall not drink," etc. But this would be strange; for (1) according to Jewish practice it would be monstrous for the presiding person to abstain from partaking; (2) Jesus had just said that He earnestly desired to partake of this paschal meal;
and (3) vv. 17, 18 seem to be parallel to 15, 16: He eats the paschal food, and then says that it is for the last time under these conditions; and He drinks of the paschal cup, and then says that it is for the last time under these conditions. There is nothing in any of the accounts to prevent us from supposing that Jesus drank before handing the cup to the others. The γάρ explains why they are to consume it among themselves, and not expect Him to take more than was ceremonially necessary; and the ἃπο τοῦ νῦν will then be quite exact. “I have just drunk; but from this moment onwards I will drink no more”: comp. ὅμως ὁ μή πίω. It was possibly because ἃπο τοῦ νῦν seemed to mean that Jesus refused to drink that some texts (AC etc.) omitted the words.

τοῦ γενήματος τῆς ἀμπελου. Some regard this as a reference to the Jewish benediction at the first cup: “Blessed be Thou, O Lord our God, the King of the world, who hast created the fruit of the vine.” It is quite uncertain that this form was in use at the time. For γένμα see Deissmann, *Bibelstudien*, p. 105.

Latin variations in rendering are of interest: *generatione vitis* (Vulg.), *fructu vinos* (a), *creatura vinos* (d), *geminine vites* (g). Comp. iii. 7. Syr-Sin. omits “of the vine.” See Pasch. Radb. on Mt. xxvi. 29, Migne, cxx. 895.

19, 20. In connexion with what follows we have these points to consider. (1) Are the words from τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν διδόμενον to τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἔχωννυμένην part of the original text? (2) If they are, is τὸ ποτήριον in ver. 20 the same as ποτηρίων in ver. 17?

Assuming provisionally that the overwhelming external evidence of almost all MSS. and Versions in favour of the words in question is to be accepted, we may discuss the second point. As in the other case, neither view is free from serious difficulty. If the cup of ver. 20 is not the same as that of ver. 17, then Lk. not only states that Jesus did not drink of the eucharistic cup (for ὁ μὴ πίω ἃπο τοῦ νῦν excludes the partaking of any subsequent cup), but he also records that Jesus charged the Apostles to partake of the earlier cup, while he is silent as to any charge to partake of the eucharistic cup. So far as this report of the Institution goes, therefore, we are expressly told that the Celebrant refused the cup Himself, and we are not told that He handed it to the disciples. If, on the other hand, we identify the two cups, and regard vv. 17, 18 as the premature mention of what should have been given in one piece at ver. 20, then its severance into two portions, and the insertion of the distribution of the bread between the two portions, are inexplicable. Of the two difficulties, this seems to be the greater, and it is better not to identify the two cups. It is some confirmation of this that in ver. 17 ποτήριον is without the article, “a cup,” while in ver. 20 it is “the cup.” But τὸ ποτήριον need not mean more than “the cup just mentioned.” In Mt. and Mk. ποτήριον has no article: and in all three ἄρρων has no article: so that its absence in ver. 17 and presence in ver. 20 is not of much weight in deciding between the two difficulties. The only way to avoid both these difficulties is to surrender the passage as an interpolation.

Lastly, we omit from τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν to ἔχωννυμένην, and Syr-Cur. omits ver. 20, while b e Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. place ver. 19 before ver. 17, an arrangement which has been elaborately advocated by Dean Blakesley (*Praelection in Scholis Cantab.*, Feb. 14, 1850). The possibility of the whole being an importation from 1 Cor. xi. 24, 25 may be admitted on the evidence; but the probability of ver. 19, either to τὸ σῶμα μου (b e Syr-Cur.), or to the end (Syr-Sin.), having stood
originally before ver. 17 is almost infinitesimal. In what way can we account for so simple an arrangement (harmonizing with Mt. and Mk.) becoming almost universally disturbed? “These difficulties, added to the suspicious coincidence with 1 Cor. xi. 24 f., and the Transcriptional evidence given above, leave no moral doubt (see Introd. § 240) that the words in question were absent from the original text of Le, notwithstanding the purely Western ancestry of the documents which omit them” (WH. ii. App. p. 64). For the other view see Scrivener; also R. A. Hoffmann, Abendmahlsgedanken Jesu Christi, 1896, pp. 5-25.

19. λαβὼν ἄρτον εὐχαριστήσας ἔκλασεν. The taking bread (or a loaf), breaking, giving thanks, and the declaration, "This is My Body,” are in all four accounts. But for εὐχαριστήσας here and 1 Cor. xi. 24 Mt. and Mk. have εὐλογήσας, and both here and 1 Cor. Δάβετε is omitted. Mt. alone has φάγετε with Δάβετε of the bread, and Lk. alone has Δάβετε of the cup (ver. 17); but perhaps this is not the eucharistic cup (see above).

Τοῦτὸ ἐστιν τὸ σῶμά μου. Not much is gained by pointing out that the ἐστιν would not be expressed in Aramaic. It must be understood; and the meaning of τοῦτο, and its relation to τὸ σῶμα μου must be discussed. The τοῦτο cannot mean the act of breaking and eating, nor anything else excepting “this bread.” For the meaning of ἐστι see ver. 20, where the παρηγόρως is identified with η καυχή διαφήκη, and comp. εἰμι in Jn. viii. 12, ix. 5, xiv. 6, xv. 1, 5. In taking this bread they in some real sense take His Body. See Thirlwall's Charges, vol. i. Charges v. and vi.; vol. ii. Charge x. and esp. p. 251, ed. Perowne, 1877; also Gould on Mk. xiv. 22.

tο ὑπέρ ὑμῶν διδόμενον. Peculiar to this account: “which is being given for your advantage.” The κλώμενον, which many texts add to το ὑπέρ ὑμῶν in 1 Cor. xi. 24, is not genuine.

τοῦτο ποιεῖτε. The proposal to give these words a sacrificial meaning, and translate them “Offer this, Sacrifice this, Offer this sacrifice,” cannot be maintained. It has against it (1) the ordinary meaning of ποιεῖν in N.T., in LXX, and in Greek literature generally; (2) the authority of all the Greek Fathers,1 who knew their own language, knew the N.T. and the LXX, and understood the words as having the ordinary meaning, “Perform this action”; (3) the authority of the Early Liturgies, which do not use ποιεῖν or facere when the bread and wine are offered, but προσφέρειν or offerre, although the words of institution precede the oblation, and thus suggest ποιεῖν or facere; (4) the authority of a large majority of commentators, ancient and modern, of the most various schools, who either make no comment, as if the ordinary meaning were too

1 It has been asserted that Justin Martyr (Try. xli. and lxx.) is an exception. But this is a mistake. That Justin himself sometimes uses ποιεῖν in a sacrificial sense is possible; that he understood τοῦτο ποιεῖτε in this sense is not credible. No subsequent Father notes that Justin gives this interpretation, an interpretation so remarkable that it must have attracted attention.
obvious to need stating: or give the ordinary meaning without mentioning any other as worthy of consideration; or expressly reject the sacrificial meaning; (5) the testimony of the Septuagint, in which the various and frequent Hebrew words which mean "offer" or "sacrifice" are translated, not by ποιεῖν, but by προσφέρειν or ἀναφέρειν or the like; (6) the fact that here and in 1 Cor. xi. 24 the writer might easily have made the sacrificial meaning clear by using προσφέρειν or ἀναφέρειν. He has not even suggested such a meaning, as he might have done by writing ποιεῖτε τοῦτον, i.e. τοῦτον τὸν ἄρτον. He has given as a translation of Christ's words neither "Offer this bread," nor "Offer this," nor "Do this bread" (which might have suggested "Offer this bread"), but "Do this thing." See Expositor, 3rd series, vii. 441; T. K. Abbott, Essays on the Original Texts of O. & N.T., Longmans, 1891, p. 110; A Reply to Mr. Supple's and other Criticisms, Longmans, 1893; Mason, Faith of the Gospel, Rivingtons, 1888, p. 309.

eis τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν. "With a view to a calling to mind, a recollection, of Me." The word means more than a mere record or memorial, and is in harmony with the pres. imperat. ποιεῖτε: "Continually do this in order to bring Me to mind," i.e. "to remind yourselves and others of the redemption which I have won by My death." The eucharist is to be a continual calling to mind of Him who redeemed men from the bondage of sin, as the Passover was an annual calling to mind of redemption from the bondage of Egypt (Exod. xii. 24-27, xiii. 8, 14). In N.T. ἀνάμνησιν occurs only here, 1 Cor. xi. 24, 25, and Heb. x. 3, where see Wsctt. Comp. 1 Cor. iv. 17; 2 Tim. i. 6. In LXX it occurs Lev. xxiv. 7; Num. x. 10; Wisd. xvi. 6; the titles of Ps. xxxvii. and lxxix. T. K. Abbott has shown that a sacrificial meaning cannot be obtained from ἀνάμνησιν any more than from ποιεῖτε (Essays, etc. p. 122; A Reply, etc. p. 34).

The els corresponds to τινα rather than to ως, and indicates the purport of the new institution. For the possessive pronoun used objectively comp. Rom. xi. 31; 1 Cor. xv. 31, xvi. 17.

The omission of this charge, τοῦτο ποιεῖτε, κ.τ.λ., in Mt. and Mk. has attracted attention. Dr. C. A. Briggs says, "Jülicher (Zur Gesch. der Abendmahlsfeier in der ältesten Kirche, in the Theolog. Abhandlungen Weissäcker gewidmet, 1892, s. 238 seq.) and Spitta (Urchristentum, i. s. 238 seq.) are doubtless correct in their opinion that the earliest Christian tradition, represented by Mark and Matthew, knew nothing of an institution of the Lord's Supper by Jesus on the night of His betrayal, as a sacrament to be observed continuously in the future. But they admit that Paul and Luke are sustained by the earliest Christian usage in representing it as a permanent institution. It is easier to suppose that the risen Lord in connection with these manifestations commanded the perpetual observance of the holy supper, just as He gave the Apostles their commission to preach and baptize, and explained the mystery of His life and death (Luke xxiv. 25-49). Paul and Luke would then combine the words of Jesus on two different occasions" (The Messiah of the Gospels, T. & T. Clark, 1894, p. 123). See Schaefer, Das Herrenmahl nach Ursprung und Bedeutung, Gütersloh, 1897.
XXII. 20-22. THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION

20. τὸ ποτήριον. The τὸ may mean the cup which all Christians know as part of the eucharist, or (if this passage be genuine) the cup mentioned before (ver. 17). Paul also has the article, Mt. and Mk. not. The other portions of this verse which are in 1 Cor., but not in Mt. and Mk., are ὡσάετως μετὰ τὸ δείπνησαι ... τὸ ποτήριον ... καὶ ... ἐν τῷ. On the other hand, Paul and Lk. omit Πάντες ἐκ αὐτοῦ πάντες (Mt.) or ἐκποιεῖν ἐκ αὐτοῦ πάντες (Mk.). The ὡσάετως means that He took it, gave thanks, and gave it to them. For καὶ, which is opposed to παλαιά (2 Cor. iii. 6; comp. Rom. xi. 27), see on v. 38.

διαθήκη ἐν τῷ αἴματι μου. Mt. and Mk. have τὸ αἷμα μου τῆς διαθήκης, which is closer to LXX of Exod. xxiv. 8, τὸ αἷμα τῆς διαθήκης. Comp. ἐν αἷμα διαθήκης (Zech. ix. 11). The testamentum sanguine suo obsignatum of Tertullian (Adv. Marcion. iv. 40) gives the sense fairly well. The ratification of a covenant was commonly associated with the shedding of blood; and what was written in blood was believed to be indelible. For διαθήκη see Wstt. on Heb. ix. 15, 16, with the additional note, p. 298.

tὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἐκχυνόμενον. The ὑμῶν is peculiar to this passage. Mk. has ὑπέρ πολλῶν, Mt. περὶ πολλῶν, and Paul omits. The ὑμῶν both here and in ver. 19 means the Apostles as representatives of all.

The part. is the Ἑολικ form of the pres. part. pass. of ἐκχύνω = ἐκχέω (comp. Acts xxii. 20); “being poured out,” like διδόμενον (ver. 19). In sense τὸ ἐκχ. agrees with αἷματι, but in grammar with ποτήριον; in Mt. and Mk., both in sense and grammar, with αἷμα. But see Win. lxvii. 3, p. 791.

21-23. The Declaration about the Traitor. Comp. Mt xxvi. 21-25; Mk. xiv. 18-21; Jn. xiii. 21-30.

If Lk. places this incident in its proper place, Judas did partake of the eucharist. But the question cannot be decided. See Schanz, ad loc. pp. 509, 510.

21. πλὴν ἵνα ἡ χείρ ... ἐν τῷ τραπέζῃς. The expression is peculiar to Lk. The πλὴν here indicates a transition; an expansion or change of subject. From the meaning of His death He passes to the manner of it. Others take it as a restriction of ἵνα τῷ ὑμῶν; others again as marking a contrast between Christ’s conduct and that of the traitor. See on vi. 24, 35, x. 11, 14. The verse may be understood literally, but probably means no more than that the traitor was sharing the same meal with Him: comp. Mt. xxvi. 23.

22. It is here that Lk. is almost verbatim the same as Mt. and Mk. Such solemn words would be likely to be remembered in one and the same form. Keim draws attention to their conspicuous originality. They are not adaptations of anything in O.T., although Obad. 7 and Mic. vii. 6 might appropriately have been
used (v. p. 309). He regards Lk. as most exact. In any case πορεύεται, for which Mt. and Mk. have ἤπαγε, is to be noticed. It is probably used in the LXX sense of “depart, die”: comp. Ps. lxxviii. 39.

δὴ δὲ υἱὸς μέν. The “because” explains how such an amazing thing has come to pass. Failure to see the meaning of δὴ (A B D L T, Sah. Boh.) has caused the substitution in many texts of καὶ (A X Τ Δ ΑΠ Β c e f f Vulg. Syr-Sin. Arm. Aeth.), while others omit (a d, Orig.).

κατὰ τὸ ὄρισμένον. It is part of the Divine decree that the death of the Christ should be accompanied by betrayal: Mt. and Mk. have καθὼς γέγραπται περὶ αὐτοῦ: comp. Acts ii. 23. Excepting Rom. i. 4; Heb. iv. 7, ὀρισμόν is peculiar to Lk. (Acts ii. 23, x. 42, xi. 29, xvii. 26, 31).

πλὴν οὖν. Mt. and Mk. have οὖν δὲ; but Lk. is fond of πλὴν (ver. 21). Although God knows from all eternity that Judas is the betrayer of the Christ, yet this does not destroy the freedom or responsibility of Judas. The ἐκεῖνος marks him off as an alien: comp. Jn. xiii. 26, 27, 30. Mt. and Mk. add καλὸν αὐτῷ εἰ ὕπκ ἐγεννηθῆ ὁ ἀνθρώπος ἐκεῖνος.

23. Here ἁρακτό is the one word which is common to all three. Mt. and Mk. say that they each asked Jesus (and Mt. adds that Judas in particular asked) “Is it I?” No one seems to have suspected Judas; and perhaps Christ’s Σὺ εἶπας was heard by Judas alone. Jesus may have had Judas next to Him on one side, S. John being on the other. For πράσσειν of doing evil comp. Jn. iii. 20, 21; Rom. vii. 19; Thuc. iv. 89. 2.

24-30. The Strife as to Precedence.

Disputes of this kind had taken place before, and the frequent records of them are among the abundant proofs of the candour of the Evangelists. But a comparison of the records seems to indicate that the tradition respecting them had become somewhat confused; and it is possible that what was said on one occasion has in part been transferred to another. Comp. Mt. xviii. 1-5; Mk. ix. 33-37; Lk. ix. 46-48; Jn. xiii. 14: also Mt. xx. 24-28; Mk. x. 41-45; Lk. xxii. 24-27. Of these last three passages, Mt. and Mk. clearly refer to the same incident, which took place considerably before the Last Supper. If Lk. merely knew what Jesus said on that occasion, but did not know the occasion, he would hardly have selected the Last Supper as a suitable place for the incident. He probably had good reason for believing that a dispute of this kind took place at the supper. Jesus may have repeated some of what He had said on a similar occasion; or Lk. may have transferred what was said then to the present occasion. But there is no note of time or sequence in ver. 24, where δὲ καὶ simply indicates that something of a different character (δὲ) from what precedes also (καὶ) took place: and it is scarcely credible that this strife occurred after Jesus had washed their feet and instituted the eucharist. More probably the dispute arose respecting the places at the paschal meal—who was to be nearest to the Master; and the feet-washing was a symbolical rebuke to this contention. Here ver. 27 appears to have direct reference to His having washed their feet.

24. ἐγένετο δὲ καὶ. “But there arose also”: see small print on
XXII. 24-27.] THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION 501

iii. 9. The δὲ perhaps contrasts this discussion with that as to which of them was the traitor. But we are not sure that the one discussion came closely after the other.

φιλονεικία. “Contentiousness.” Here only in N.T., but quite classical. It is sometimes coupled with βασκανία (4 Mac. i. 26; M. Antonin. iii. 4), and easily comes to mean “contention” (2 Mac. iv. 4; Jos. Ant. vii. 8. 4).

δοκεῖ εἶναι. “Is accounted, allowed to be”—omnium suffragiis; implying who ought to be so accounted. See Lft. on Gal. ii. 6.

μείζων. Not quite equivalent to the superlative, which would have indicated several gradations from lowest to highest. The comparative implies only two,—a superior and all the rest as equals: ix. 46; Mk. ix. 34. Win. xxxv. 4, p. 305.

25. Almost verbatim as the account of the earlier strife provoked by James and John (Mt. xx. 25; Mk. x. 42). For κυριεύων comp. Rom. xiv. 9; 2 Cor. i. 24; 1 Tim. vi. 15. Mt. and Mk. use the compounds, κατακυρίων, κατατευχωσίας.

ευφρηκτάς καλοῦνται. Peculiar to Lk. The phrase εὐφρηκτη 

βασιλεός ἄνεγραφή (Hdt. viii. 85. 4: comp. Thuc. i. 129. 2; Esth. ii. 23, vi. 1) is not parallel. There persons who have done special service to the sovereign are formally credited with it. Here it is the sovereign who receives the title of Benefactor (i.e. of his country, or of mankind) as a perpetual epithet; e.g. some of the Greek kings of Egypt. Comp. Σωτήρ, Pater patriae, Servus servorum. For less formal instances of the title see McClellan and Wetstein.

It is better to take καλοῦνται as middle: “claim the title,” hunc titulum sibi vindicant (Beng.). This is what the disciples were doing.

26. δ μείζων. He who is really above the rest. True greatness involves service to others: noblesse oblige. For γνώσθω, “let him prove himself to be,” comp. x. 36, xii. 40, xvi. 11, xix. 17. We have an echo of this i Pet. v. 3. For νέωτερος as διακοινόν comp. Acts v. 6, 10: νεώτερον δὲ λέγει τὸν ἐσχατον (Euthym.), the lowest in rank.

The Latin Versions have junior (cf Vulg.), minor (a cf. i), minus (d, μεικτὸς D), juvenis (r), adolescentior (b q).

For δ ἵγουνεος we have qui praest (a b cf q), qui princeps est (r), qui primus est (l), qui præsanis est (e), qui ducatum agit (d), qui præcessor est (Vulg.). In N.T. ἵγουες means “lead” only in pres. part., and most often in Lk. It is used of any leader, ecclesiastical or civil (Acts vii. 10, xiv. 12, xv. 22; Mt. ii. 6; Heb. xiii. 7, 17, 24). In LXX it is freq.

27. ἐγὼ δὲ ἐν μείζῳ ὑπῶν. This need not be confined to the feet-washing (Euthym. De W. Godet, Hahn), nor to the fact that the person who presided at the paschal meal served the others (Hofm.): and the reference to either is uncertain. The whole of

Christ's ministry was one of service to His disciples (Nösg. Weiss). For ἐν μέσῳ see on viii. 7.

Strauss, Keim, and others regard the feet-washing recorded in Jn. as a mere fictitious illustration of Lk. xii. 37 and xxii. 27 (L. J. § 86, p. 542, ed. 1864; Jos. of Nas. v. p. 341 n).

28–30. Nearly the whole of this is peculiar to Lk. But comp. Mt. xix. 28. Having rebuked them for raising the question of precedence among themselves, Jesus shows them wherein the privileges which they all enjoy consist, viz. in their standing by Him in His service to others. He gives preference to none.

28. οἱ διαμεμενήκότες μετ' ἐμοὶ. The idea of persistent loyalty is enforced by the compound verb, by the perfect tense, and by the preposition (Lft. on Gal. ii. 5): "who have perseveringly remained with Me and continue to do so" (i. 22; Heb. i. 11; 2 Pet. iii. 4).

ἐν τοῖς περασμοῖς μου. The trials to which He had been subjected during His ministry, and especially the latter portion of it. These, even to Him, were temptations to abandon His work. Comp. ἄχρι καιροῦ (iv. 13).

cάγω διαστέθηκα ὑμῖν. "And I on My part, in return for your loyalty, hereby appoint to you dominion, even as My Father appointed to Me dominion." As in i. 33, βασιλεία is here "dominion" rather than "a kingdom": comp. xxiii. 42; Rev. xvii. 12; 1 Thes. ii. 12. See on xi. 2. Comp. τὴν βασιλείαν εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδραν διέθετο (Jos. Ant. xiii. 16. 1).

A connexion with διαθήκη (ver. 20) is doubtful. The κανεὶ διαθήκη is with all the faithful; this διαστέθηκα seems to be confined to the Apostles. The verb does not necessarily mean "covenant to give" or "assign by bequest," which would not fit διέθετο here, but may be used of any formal arrangement or disposition (Hdt. l. 194. 6; Xen. Anab. vii. 3. 10; Mem. i. 6. 13; Cyr. v. 2. 7, 9).

30. ἵνα ἐσθήτε καὶ πίνητε. This is the purpose of conferring regal power upon them. Some make from καθὸς to βασιλείαν a parenthesis and render, "I also (even as My Father appointed to Me dominion) appoint to you that ye may eat and drink," etc. So Theophyl. Nösg. Hahn. But βασιλείαν belongs to both διαστέθηκα and διέθετο. So Euthym. De W. Mey. Weiss, Schanz, Godet.

ἐντὸς τῆς τραπέζης μου. The Jews commonly regarded the Messianic Kingdom as a banquet: comp. xiii. 29, xiv. 15. Cibus potusque, ille de quo alias dicitur. Beati qui esuriunt et sitiunt justitiam (Bede).

καθισθεὶς ἐν τῷ θρόνῳ. The meaning of the promise is parallel to what precedes. As they have shared the trials, so they shall share the joy; and as they have proclaimed the Kingdom to Israel, so
they shall exercise royal power over Israel, judging them according as they have accepted or rejected what was proclaimed. Comp. 1 Cor. vi. 2, 3; Rev. xx. 4.

As to the verb, the readings are very various: καθίσασθε (E F K M S U V X Γ Δ), καθώσασθε (H), καθίζασθε (D). But the choice lies between καθίσασθε (B T Δ), which must depend upon ἵνα, and καθίζασθε (xA B G L Q), which rather gives this as an independent promise. In Mt. xix. 28 καθίσασθε is right, and may have been transferred to this passage, as δώδεκα has been in some authorities (xD X, ab defql) with θρόνων.

31–34. The Prediction of Peter’s Denial

Both the prediction and the fulfilment are given in all four Gospels. A comparison of them shows that Lk. and Jn. are quite independent of one another and of the other two. We have three separate narratives. Lk. agrees with Jn. (xiii. 36–38) in placing the prediction in the supper-room. Mt. (xxvi. 30–35) and Mk. (xiv. 26–30) place it on the way from the room to Gethsemane. It is not likely that it was repeated; and the arrangement of Lk. and Jn. is to be preferred. But some make three predictions; two in the room (Lk. being different from Jn.), and one during the walk to Gethsemane. Godet regards a repetition of such a prophecy impossible de supposer (ii. p. 476).

31. Lk. makes no break in Christ’s words, but it is possible that a remark of Peter’s, such as Jn. records, is omitted. The apparent want of connexion between vv. 30 and 31 has led to the insertion εἰπε δὲ οἱ κύριοι (xA D Q X, Latt.), as if to mark the beginning of a new subject. BLT, Sah. Boh. Syr-Sin. omit. Bede suggests by way of connexion, Ne gloriantur undecim apostoli, suisve vxnibus tribuerent, quod soli pestis inter tot millia Judæorum dicerentur in tentationibus permansisse cum Domino, ostendit et eos si non juvantis se Domini essent opitulatione protecti, eadem procella cum ceteris potuisse conteri.

Σίμων Σίμων. The repetition of the name is impressive: see on x. 41. Contrast Πέτρα ver. 34. The whole of this address (31, 32) is peculiar to Lk. It tends to mitigate Peter’s guilt, by showing how sorely he was tried. Lk. “ever spares the Twelve.” See pp. 146, 172, 511.

ο Σατανᾶς ἔπληκτο ὑμᾶς. “Satan obtained you by asking” (RV. marg.); “procured your being surrendered to him,” as in the case of Job (i. 12, ii. 6): exoravit vos. Neither postulavit (Tert. Cypr.), nor quæstitit (c), nor expectavit (f Vulg.) is adequate. The aorist of the compound verb necessarily implies success in the petition. In class. Grk. the mid. would generally have a good sense: “obtained your release by entreaty.” See instances in Wetst. and Field. As in x. 18 Jesus is here communicating a portion of His divine knowledge. See notes there and on viii. 12. Note the plur. ὑμᾶς, which covers both σοῦ and τοὺς ἄδελφους σου. Satan was allowed to try them all (Mt. xxvi. 31, 56; Mk. xiv. 27, 50; Judæ non contentus (Beng.). Comp. Apost. Const. vi. 5. 4: Test. XII. Patr. Benj. iii.
toû σινίσαι. See on i. 74: “in order to sift.” Neither verb nor substantive (σινον, “a sieve, winnowing riddle”) is classical. They are probably colloquial for κόσκινον and κοσκινεῖν, which survives in modern Greek. In Amos ix. 9 we have λικμαῖν. See Suicer, s.v.

Ut ventilet (eβφηλρ, Ambr.), ut vexaret (Cypr. Aug.), ut cornaret (d, Tert. Hil.), ad cernendum (c), ut cribaret (Vulg.).

32. ἐγὼ δὲ ἔδειξην. See on v. 12. The ἐγὼ δὲ and the aor. are in marked contrast to Satan and his request. We may regard ἔκτύσατο and ἔδειξην as contemporaneous.

περὶ σου. As being the leader on whom so much depended, and as being in special need of help, as his fall proved. Jesus prayed for all (Jn. xvii. 21, 22, 23). The interpolator of Ignatius understands this as a prayer for all: ὁ δεσπότης μὴ ἐκλαίγῃ τὴν πίστιν τῶν ἀποστόλων (Smyrn. vii.) For ἔνα after δέομαι comp. ix. 40, xx. 36.

μὴ ἐκλαίγῃ. “Fail not utterly, once for all.” Defect in Petro ἢ ἐνεργεια τῆς πίστεως ad tempus: at ξένω labefactavit, non extinxit (Grotius).

καὶ σοῦ. Answering to ἐγὼ δὲ. Christ has helped him: he must do what he can for others.

τοῦτο ἐπιστρέψας στήρισον. “When once thou hast turned again, establish” (RV.). It is unnatural to take τοῦτο with στήρισον (Mey, Weiss); and it is a mistake to make ἐπιστρέψας a sort of Hebraism (Ps. lxxxv. 7, ἐπιστρέψας ζωόσεις ἡμᾶς), meaning “in turn” (Grot. Maldon. Beng.), a use which perhaps does not occur in N.T. See Schanz. On the other hand, “when thou art converted” is too strong. It means turning again after a temporary aberration. Yet it is not turning to the brethren, but turning from the fault that is meant. It is not likely that the transitive sense is meant: “convert thy brethren and strengthen them”: comp. i. 16, 17; Jas. v. 19, and contrast Acts iii. 19, xxviii. 27; Mt. xiii. 15; Mk. iv. 12. See Expos. Times, Oct. 1899, p. 6.

This metaphorical sense of στήρισαι is not classical: comp. Acts xviii. 23; Rom. i. 11, xvi. 25; Jas. v. 8, etc. The form στήρισαι for στήριξαι is late.

Some Latin texts add, without any Greek authority, et rogaste ne intretis in temptationem (a b c e f₂ l₁ q).

33. μετὰ σοῦ. First, with enthusiastic emphasis: “With Thee I am ready.” The impulsive reply is thoroughly characteristic. As at the feet-washing (Jn. xiii. 6, 8) he has more confidence in his own feelings than in Christ’s word; but this version of the utterance is less boastful than that in Mt. xxvi. 33 and Mk. xiv. 29.

34. Λέγω σοι, Πέτρε. For the first and last time in the Gospels Jesus addresses him by the significant name which He had given him. Rock-like strength is not to be found in self-confidence, but
XXII. 34-36.] THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION

in humble trust in Him. Mt. and Mk. have ἀμήν λέγω σοι: Jn. ἀμήν ἀμήν λ. σοι. The solemn earnestness with which this definite prediction was uttered made a deep impression upon all.

οὐκ ομερον. Mt. has ταύτη τῇ νυκτί. Mk. has both. The new day began after sunset. See iv. 40, v. 13, and xxiii. 38 for similar cases in which Mt. and Lk. have different parts of an expression, of which Mk. has the whole.

οὐ φωνήσει... ἀλέκτωρ. The third of the four Roman watches was called ἀλέκτροφωνία, gallicinium (Mk. xiii. 35; Apost. Const. viii. 34. 1; Strabo, vii. 35; Geopon. 1153). The expression here is equivalent to "Before this night is past." Mk. alone mentions the double cock-crowing, and the fact that Peter, so far from being silenced, kept on protesting with increased vehemence.

τοις τρίς μὲ ἀπανήσῃ εἶδεναι. This is the true reading (NBLMXT), The τρίς is in all four Gospels: the εἶδεναι in Lk. alone.

35-38. § The New Conditions; the Saying about the Sword.
The opening words mark the beginning of a new subject; and there is no indication of any connexion with what precedes. It is one more proof of His care for them. Precautions and equipments, which would have hindered them in more peaceful times, have become necessary now. What He formerly forbade, He now enjoins. Dominus non ed, dem vivendi regulā persecutionis quam pacis tempore discipulos informat (Bede).

35. ὅτε ἀπάστειλα δυμᾶς ἀπέρ β. The wording suggests a direct reference to x. 4, which is addressed to the Seventy. In ix. 3, where similar directions are given to the Twelve, the wording is different. In the source which Lk. is here using the words given in x. 4 would seem to have been addressed to the Apostles. There may have been some confusion in the tradition respecting two similar incidents, or in the use which Lk. makes of it.

This use of ὄστερον τῶν occurs here only in N.T. Comp. Jos. Ant. ii. 2. 1. The pass. is thus used xv. 14; Rom. iii. 23; Heb. xi. 37.

36. ὃ μὴ ἔχων. This is ambiguous. It may look back to ὃ ἔχων βαλλάντιον: "He that hath no purse, let him sell his garment and buy a sword" (Cov. Gen. Rhem. RV.). Or it may anticipate μᾶχαιραν: "He that hath no sword, let him sell his garment and buy one" (Tyn. Cran. AV.). The former is far the more probable. Only he who has no money or wallet, would sell the most necessary of garments (ἰμάτιον, vi. 29), to buy anything. But even the ἰμάτιον is less indispensable than a sword; so dangerous are their surroundings. "For henceforth the question with all those who continue in the land will not be whether they possess anything or not, but whether they can exist and preserve their lives" (Cyril Alex. Syr. Com. ad loc., Payne Smith, p. 680).
Christ implies that His Apostles will have to rely upon their own resources and to confront deadly hostility. Comp. Jn. xv. 18-21. Christ does not mean that they are to repel force by force; still less that they are to use force in spreading the Gospel. But in a figure likely to be remembered He warns them of the changed circumstances for which they must now be prepared.

37. λέγω γὰρ δµίν. The γὰρ introduces the explanation of the change from ὅτε ἀπέστειλα τὸν Ἰησοῦν.

τὸ γεγραµµένον. Comp. xx. 17; 2 Cor. iv. 13. More often we have τὰ γεγραµµένα: xviii. 31, xxi. 22; Acts xiii. 29; Rev. xx. 12, xxii. 19.

The ἐν before τὸντο (I' Δ Λ Π, Vulg. Arm.) is spurious. It is the kind of insertion which versions are apt to make for the sake of completeness: “must yet be fulfilled.” For δὲ see on iv. 43 and ix. 22.

ἐν ἑµοί. Therefore the disciples must expect no better treatment than the Master receives (Mt. x. 24; Jn. xv. 20, xiii. 16: see on vi. 40).

Καὶ μετὰ ἀνόµων. The καὶ is part of the quotation: καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀνόµοις ἔλογία ὑη (Is. liii. 12): “even with the transgressors” is incorrect. In AV. ἀνόµοις is translated in five different ways: “transgressor” (Mk. xv. 28); “wicked” (Acts ii. 23; 2 Thes. ii. 8), “without law” (1 Cor. ix. 21), “lawless” (1 Tim. i. 9), “unlawful” (2 Pet. ii. 8).

καὶ γὰρ. An extension of the argument: “and what is more.” This fulfilment is not only necessary,—it is reaching its conclusion, “is having an end” (Mk. iii. 26). The phrase τέλος ἔχειν is used of oracles and predictions being accomplished. See Field, Ot. Norvic. iii., and comp. tetélestitai (Jn. xix. 30).

Om. γὰρ D, a d e f g λ Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Failure to see the point of the γὰρ would cause the omission.

τὸ περὶ ἑµοῖ. This form of expression is found in no other Gospel; but the plur., τὰ περὶ ἑµοῖ, occurs xxiv. 19, 27 and is freq. in Acts (i. 3, xviii. 25, xxii. 11, 15, xxiv. 10, 22, xxviii. 15, 31: in viii. 12, xix. 8, xxviii. 23 the τὸ is probably spurious). Some texts (ἈΧΓΔ etc.) have τὸ here for τὰ: ea quæ sunt de me (Vulg.); ea quae de me scribta sunt (Cod. Brix.). But τὸ (N B D L Q) has been altered to the more usual expression, perhaps to avoid the possible combination of τὸ περὶ ἑµοῖ τέλος. There is no need to understand γεγραµµένον. Much which concerned the Christ had never been written.

38. μάχαιρα. Chrysostom has supposed that these were two knives, prepared for the slaughtering (ver. 8) or carving of the paschal lamb. In itself this is not improbable: but nowhere else in N.T. does μάχαιρα mean a knife. Assuming that swords are meant, these weapons may have been provided against robbers on the journey to Jerusalem, or against attack in the city. Peter had one of them, and may have been the speaker here. It is one more instance of the Apostles’ want of insight, and of the Evangelists’ candour: comp. Mk. viii. 17. Schleiermacher points
out that the obscurity of the passage is evidence of its genuineness and originality (p. 299, Eng. tr.).

'ικανόν εὐτυχ. Satis est (cf. q Vulg.), sat est (a i), sufficit (b d f l r), which last perhaps represents ἀρκεῖ (D). The reply is probably the equivalent for a Hebrew formula for dismissing the subject (Deut. iii. 26), not with impatience, but with satiety or sorrow. Comp. ἐως τοῦ viv [ικανόν] (1 Mac. ii. 33). But even if it means that two swords are a sufficient quantity ("They are enough for you," Syr-Sin.), it intimates that the subject is dismissed. Bede is hardly right in his view: duo gladii sufficiunt ad testimonium sponte passi salvatoris, i.e. to prove that he could have resisted, had He pleased. If the words apply to the swords, they are spoken with a sad irony (μονοκυλί διαγέλα, Cyril Alex.), as meaning, not that the two weapons will be sufficient for the protection of the company, but that none at all are required: they have grievously misunderstood Him. 1 Es gilt nicht mehr mit dem leiblichen Schwerdt fechten, sondern es gilt hinfort leiden um des Evangelii willen und Kreuz tragen: denn man kann wider den Teufel nicht mit Eisen fechten; darum ist Noth Alles dran zu setzen, und nur das geistliche Schwerdt, das Wort Gottes, zu fassen (Luth.).

XXII. 39-XXIII. 49. The Passion. In this part of the narrative of the Passion proper, i.e. from the Agony to the Death, the particulars which are wholly or mainly peculiar to Lk. are xxii. 51, xxiii. 6-12, 27-32 [34], 40-43, 46: and these particulars are among the most precious details in the history of the Passion.

39-46. The Agony in the Garden. With regard to the omission of nearly the whole of the last discourses (Jn. xiv.--xvii.) Godet remarks that the oral tradition was not a suitable vehicle for transmitting such things: c'étaient des trésors qu'un cœur d'élite pouvait seul garder et reproduire. On the other hand Jn. omits

1 The Bull Unam Sanctam of Boniface VIII., A.D. 1302, bases the double power of the Papacy on this text. The following are among the most remarkable passages: Igitur Ecclesie, unitus, et unica unum corpus, unum caput, non duo capita quasi monstrum, Christus scilicet et Christi vicarius, Petrus Petrique successor. . . In hac ejusque potestate duos esse gladios, spiritualem videlicet et temporalem evangelice dictis instruimur. Nam dicentibus Apostolis: Ecce gladii duo hic; in Ecclesia scilicet, sum Apostoli loquerentur; non respondit Dominus nimis esse, sed satis. . . . Uterque ergo in potestate Ecclesie, spirituallis scilicet gladius, et materialis: sed is quidem pro Ecclesia, ille vero ab Ecclesia exercendus; ille sacerdotes, ille vero ex Regum et militum; sed ad nutum et patientiam sacerdotis. Oportet autem gladium esse sub gladio, et temporalem auctoritatem spirituali subjici potestati . . . sic de Ecclesia et ecclesiastica potestate verificatur vaticinium Jeremiae [1. 10]: Ecce constitui te hodie super gentes, et regna, etc. quam sequuntur. . . . Porro subesse Romano Pontifici omnem humanam creaturam declaramus, dicitur et definitim omnino esse de necessitate salutis (Raynald. xxiii. p. 328; see Milman, Lat. Chr. Bk. xi. ch. ix.; Robertson, Bk. vii. ch. v.; Stubbs’ Mosheim, ii. p. 261; Zeeckler, Handb. d. Theol. Wiss. ii. p. 167; Gregorovius, Stadt Rom, v. p. 562; Berchtold, Die Bulle Unam Sanctam. München. 1888).
the whole of this scene, although there is a clear reference to it xviii. 11. Lk.'s narrative once more differs considerably from that of Mt. (xxvi. 30–41) and of Mk. (xiv. 26–38), which are almost verbatim the same; and it is very much shorter. It is in vv. 39, 42, 46 that Lk. comes most closely to the other two.

39. ἐξελθὼν. From the house.

κατὰ τὸ ἔστασα. Peculiar to Lk. (i. 9, ii. 42): comp. πολλάκις συνήχθη Ἰησοῦς ἐκεῖ (Jn. xviii. 2). It was no longer necessary to keep Judas ignorant of His movements; so He follows His usual practice. Lk. omits the ἰμνήσαντες which records the chanting of the second part of the Hallel. Jn. alone mentions the passing of the gloomy ravine of the Kidron (xviii. 1).

40. τοῦ τόπου. Lk. and Jn. call it "the place," Mt. and Mk. χωρὸν and add the name Γεθσημανὴ = "oil-press." The traditional Gethsemane is a questionable site. Both Robinson and Thomson would place the garden higher up the Mount of Olives. The tradition is continuous from the age of Constantine, but cannot be traced to any earlier source. Stanley inclines to accept it as correct (Sin. & Pal. p. 455). See D.B.2 art. "Gethsemane."

Προσεύχοντε. This first command to pray (comp. ver. 46) is recorded by Lk. alone. It is given to the eleven; the second is to the chosen three, whom Lk. does not notice particularly.

41. ἀπεσακασθῇ. Avulsus est (Vulg.). "He was drawn away" by the violence of His emotion, which was too strong to tolerate the sympathy of even the closest friends: comp. Acts xxi. 1. It seems to be too strong a word to use of mere separation: but comp. 2 Mac. xii. 16, 17; 4 Mac. xiii. 18; Is. xxviii. 9.

ὃς ἦ τὸν βολὴν. Mt. and Mk. have μικρὸν. Comp. ὃς τὸν βολὴν (Gen. xxi. 16): λείπει τοῦ βουδῆς ἑρωθήν (Hom. II. xxxiii. 529). The acc. in Jn. vi. 19 is not quite parallel.

θεῖς τὰ γόνατα. Lk. alone mentions this. Standing was the more common attitude (xviii. 11; Mt. vi. 5; Mk. xi. 25; 1 Sam. i. 26): but on occasions of special earnestness or humiliation kneeling was more natural (1 Kings viii. 54; Ezra ix. 5; Dan. vi. 10). In N.T. kneeling is the only attitude mentioned; perhaps in imitation of Christ's example here: Acts vii. 60, ix. 40, xx. 36, xxi. 5; Eph. iii. 14. The phrase τιβέναι τὰ γόνατα is not classical, but comp. genua ponere. See on iii. 21: the imperf. προσηύχετο implies continued prayer.

42. Πάτερ, εἰ βούλει, παρένευκε. We might have expected εἰ θέλεις (comp. εἰν θέλησ, v. 12), because of τὸ θέλημα in the next sentence. But this is one of the passages which tend to show that in N.T. θέλω indicates mere choice, while βούλομαι implies deliberate selection (Mt. i. 19). The latter is far less common in N.T. In LXX there is not much difference.
This is the only passage in which the Attic βούλη for βούλῃ is well supported. Such forms are found in some texts Mt. xxvii. 4; Jn. xi. 40; Acts xvi. 31, xxiv. 8.

In D a c d e f g h τὸ θέλημα . . . γενέθω precedes εἰ βούλη . . . εἰμόν, πλὴν being omitted. Several of the same authorities have a similar inversion ix. 62.

The reading παρέμενε κεῖ (A Q Χ Γ δ Λ) turns the prayer into an unfinished pleading: ‘Father, if Thou be willing to remove this cup from Me.’—Comp. Exod. xxi. 1. B D T Versions, and Orig. support παρέμενε. Vulg. transfer calicem istum; Tert. transfer poculum istud; but he may be quoting Mk. xiv. 36 (De Orat. iv.). Boh. Sah. Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. have ‘Let this cup pass.’

παρέμενε τούτο τὸ ποτήριον ἄν’ εἰμόν. “This cup” and the address “Father” are in all three accounts. In O.T. the metaphor of “cup” for a person’s fortune, whether good or bad, is very common (Ps. xi. 6, xvi. 5, xxiii. 5, lxv. 8, etc.). In N.T. specially of the sufferings of Christ (Mk. xiv. 36; Jn. xviii. 11; Mt. xx. 22, 23; Mk. x. 38, 39): comp. Rev. xiv. 10, xvi. 19, xviii. 6. In class. Grk. παρασφέρειν ποτήριον would mean to place a cup at the side of a person, put it on the table near him (Hdt. i. 119. 5, 133. 3; Plat. Rep. i. p. 354). But in Plutarch παρασφερε is used in the sense of “lay aside, remove” (Camill. xli.). Elsewhere in N.T. it is used of leading astray (Heb. xiii. 9; Jude 12).

τὸ θέλημά μου. Either βούλημα or βούλῃ might have been used of the Father’s will, but less suitably of Christ’s (Eph. i. 11). The γενέθω is peculiar to Lk. It recalls γενηθήτω τὸ θέλημά σου (Mt. vi. 10), which Lk. omits (xi. 2). For πλὴν comp. x. 11, 14, 20.

43, 44. As in the case of vv. 19, 20, we have to consider whether this passage is part of the original text. For the evidence see the additional note at the end of ch. xxiii. One thing is certain. “It would be impossible to regard these verses as a product of the inventiveness of the scribes. They can only be a fragment from the traditions, written or oral, which were, for a time at least, locally current beside the canonical Gospels, and which doubtless included matter of every degree of authenticity and intrinsic value. These verses and the first sentence of xxiii. 34 may be safely called the most precious among the remains of this evangelic tradition which were rescued from oblivion by the scribes of the second century” (WH. ii. App. p. 67). It matters little whether Lk. included them in his narrative, so long as their authenticity as evangelic tradition is acknowledged. In this respect the passage is like that respecting the Woman taken in Adultery.

43. Ἀφθη. “Was visible” to the bodily eye is obviously meant. It is against the context and the use of the expression in other places to suppose that internal perception of an invisible spiritual presence is intended. Lk. is fond of the expression (i. 11, ix. 31, xxiv. 34; Acts ii. 3, vii. 2, 26, 30, 35, ix. 17, xiii. 31, xvi. 9, xxvi. 16; comp. i Cor. xv. 5–8), which Mt. and Mk. use once each (xvii. 3, ix. 4), and Jn. thrice (Rev. xi. 19, xii. 1, 3), but...
not in his Gospel. The ἄπτος ὁφρανοῦ would not have been added if the presence of the Angel was invisible.

ἐνωπίαν. Elsewhere in N.T. only Acts ix. 19, of bodily strengthening: comp. 2 Sam. xxii. 40; Eccles. i. 4; and this may well be the meaning here, but without excluding the strengthening of soul and spirit. Either would tend to produce the other; and the sight of His Father’s messenger would strengthen both body and spirit. Commentators have speculated as to what the Angel said (see Corn. à Lap. ad l.). There is nothing to indicate that he spoke. Hobart remarks of εὐαγγελία that, outside the LXX “its use in the transitive sense, ‘to strengthen,’ is confined to Hippocrates and St. Luke” (p. 80). In Acts ix. 19 the true reading is probably εὐαγγέλια.1

ἐν ἠγωνία. Here only in N.T. Field contends that fear is the radical notion of the word. The passages in which it occurs in LXX confirm this view: 2 Mac. iii. 14, 16, xv. 19; comp. ἠγωνίαν Esth. xv. 8 [v. x]; Dan. i. 10; 2 Mac. iii. 21. It is frequently coupled with such words as φόβος, δεός, φρίκη, etc. For examples see Field, Ot. Norv. iii. p. 56. It is, therefore, an agony of fear that is apparently to be understood. Mk. has ἄπτονειν with ἐκμαιταὶ, Mt. with λυπεῖσθαι.—ἐκτενέστερον. “More extendedly,” and hence “more persistently.” This seems to be parallel to the πίπτειν ἐπὶ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ (Mt.) and ἐπὶ τής γῆς (Mk.). Heb. v. 7 probably refers specially to this. Comp. ἐκτενών of prayer, and ἐκτένεια of worship and service, Acts xii. 5, xxvi. 7.

44. ὥσει θρόμβοι αἷματος καταβαίνοντες. Even if καταβαίνοντες (n V X, Vulg. Boh.) be right, the words do not necessarily mean more than that the drops of sweat in some way resembled drops of blood, e.g. by their size and frequency. But it is not likely that no more than this is intended, or that the words are a metaphorical expression, like our “tears of blood.” That Justin in referring to the statement omits αἷματος—διὰ ὅσα ὥσει θρόμβοι κατεξῆς (Try. ciii.)—does not prove that he did not understand actual blood to be meant. Rather it shows that he considered that θρόμβοι, “clots,” sufficiently expressed “drops of blood.”2

The expression “bloody sweat” is probably a correct interpretation; and the possibility of blood exuding through the pores seems to be established by examples. Comp. Arist. Hist. Anim. iii. 19. De Mezeray states of Charles IX.

1 Even Meyer is disposed to admit that this strengthening by an Angel is legendary, because it is “singular” (absonderlich), and not mentioned by Mt. or Mk., who has Peter to rest upon. Let us admit that perhaps Lk. did not mention it either. That does not prove that it is legendary; unless we are prepared to admit that the ministry of Angels after the temptation, which is analogous to this, and which is attested by both Mt. (iv. 11) and Mk. (l. 13), is legendary also.

2 In class. Grk. θρόμβος, both with and without αἷματος, may mean a drop of blood (Aesch. Eum. 184; Choephe. 533, 546; Plato, Crat. p. 120 A.).
of France that "During the last two weeks of his life (May 1574) his constitution made strange efforts . . . blood gushed from all the outlets of his body, even from the pores of his skin; so that on one occasion he was found bathed in a bloody sweat." See W. Stroud, *The Physical Cause of the Death of Christ*, 1847, pp. 85-88, 379-389. Schanz cites Lönitz, *De sudore sanguinis*, Bonn, 1850, and Langen, *Die letzten Lebenstage*, p. 214. Why is αἷμα added, if no αἷμα accompanied the ἔριδος? It would be visible in the moonlight, when Jesus returned to the disciples: ὦθεν γενὸς non solis occultis, sed quasi membris omnibus flexisse videtur (Bernard, *In Dom. Palm. Serm. iii. 4*). Diatess-Tat. has "like a stream of blood."

45. Lk. is much more brief than Mt. and Mk., but adds ἀναστάς ἀπὸ τῆς προσευχῆς and also ἀπὸ τῆς λύπης. Prolonged sorrow produces sleep, and in mentioning this cause of their slumber Lk. once more "spares the Twelve." For ἀναστάς see on i. 39, and for ἀπὸ of the cause see on xix. 3, xxii. 26, xxiv. 41.

46. Τί καθεύδετε; The special address to Peter is omitted. προσεύχεσθε ἵνα μη. All three assign this to the first return from prayer. No words are recorded of the second, and Lk. omits both it and the third. These movements are some evidence as to Christ's human knowledge. Would He have come to the disciples, without waking them (as seems on the second occasion to have been the case), had He known beforehand that they were asleep? And does not εὐφίσκεσθαι, which is in all three, almost imply that until He came He did not know, as in the case of the barren fig tree (Mk. xi. 13)?

ἵνα μη. "That . . . not" (Wic. RV.) rather than "lest" (Tyn. Gen. Rhem. AV.). Comp. ver. 40, where the constr. is equivalent, although not identical. In both places we have the pres. imperat. of continuous prayer.

47-58. The Traitor's Kiss and the Arrest of Jesus. Mt. xxvi. 47-56; Mk. xiv. 43-52; Jn. xviii. 2-11. It would have been possible for Jesus to have evaded Judas by not going to the usual place (ver. 40) or by leaving it before he arrived. The sneer of Celsus, that Jesus went to the garden "to make His escape by disgracefully hiding Himself," is out of place. By going and remaining where Judas must find Him, He surrendered Himself voluntarily. As Origen says, "At the fitting time He did not prevent Himself from falling into the hands of men" (*Cels. ii. 10*).

47. Ἡτὶ αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος . . . ὀξλος καὶ . . . ἱοῦδας ἐίς τῶν δώδεκα. These nine words are in all three accounts. He was still addressing the disciples when He was interrupted by a hostile multitude led by one of the Twelve. See Blass on Acts x. 44.

φίλήσαι αὐτὸν. Lk. omits that it was a prearranged sign; also the χαίρε Ἐρασίε and the fact that an ostentatiously affectionate kiss (κατεφίλησεν) was given. Jn. does not mention the kiss
His narrative shows how unnecessary the treacherous signal was, for Jesus came forward and declared Himself. 1

48. Φιλήματι. First, with great emphasis. "Is it with a kiss that thou betrayest?" Osculo Filium hominis tradis? hoc est amoris pignore vulnus infligis, et caritatis officio sanguinem fundis, et pacis instrumento mortem irrogas, servus Dominum, discipulus prodit magistrum, electus Auctorem (Bede). Jesus does not say, "betrayest thou Me?" but "betrayest thou the Son of Man?" He reminds Judas that it is the Messiah whom he is treating with this amazing form of treachery. Mt. words Christ's rebuke very differently: Εραίρε, ἐφ᾽ ὑπάρχῃ. Mk. omits the rebuke.

49. Κυρίε, εἰ πατάξαμεν ἐν μαχαίρῃ; Lk. alone records this question. It is said that "since it was illegal to carry swords on a feast-day, we have here another sign that the Last Supper had not been the Passover." But if the μαχαίρα was a large knife used for killing the lamb, this would not hold: see on ver. 38.

For the constr. see on xiii. 23 and Burton, § 70, 169: and for the form μαχαίρῃ see on xxi. 24.

50. εἰς. All three use this indefinite expression: Jn. alone tells us that it was the impetuous Peter, who acted without waiting for Christ's reply. When Jn. wrote it was not dangerous to disclose the name of the Apostle who had attacked the high priest's servant. And John alone gives the servant's name. As a friend of the high priest (xviii. 15) he would be likely to know the name Malchus. Malchus was probably taking a prominent part in the arrest, and Peter aimed at his head.

τὸ οὖς αὐτοῦ τὸ δεξιόν. Mt. has ὀπίσω, Mk. and Jn. ὀπίσω. Jn. also specifies the right ear. Mt. records the rebuke to Peter, "Put up again thy sword," etc.

51. Ἐὰν εἶς τούτῳ. The obscurity of the saying is evidence that it was uttered: an invented utterance would have been plainer. If addressed to the disciples (as ἀποκριθείσης implies, for He is answering either their question or Peter's act), it probably means, "Suffer My assailants to proceed these lengths against Me." If addressed to those who had come to arrest Him, it might mean, "Tolerate thus much violence on the part of My followers,"—violence which He at once rectifies. It can hardly mean, "Allow Me just to touch the sufferer," for He is still free, as ver. 52 implies: the arrest takes place at ver. 54. Some even

1 It was perhaps in memory of this treacherous act that the "kiss of peace" was omitted in public service on Good Friday. Tertullian blames those who omit it on fast-days which are less public and universal. But die Pascham, quo communis et quasi publica jejuni religio est, merito deponentis osculum (De Orat. xviii.). At other times the omission would amount to a proclamation that one was fasting, contrary to Christ's command.
make ἐως τούτου masc. "to go as far as Malchus": but comp. Lev. xxi. 18. In either of these last cases we should have had με after εἶμε. For ἐδω see on iv. 41.

ἰάσαντο αὐτῶν. Lk. the physician alone records this solitary miracle of surgery. A complete restoration of the ear is meant and required. "He touched the ear," not the place where the ear had been. Peter's act had seemed to place Jesus in the wrong and to justify His enemies: He was shown to be the Leader of dangerous persons. To undo this result it was necessary to render Malchus uninjured, and to surrender without resistance. This confirms the interpretation given above of ἔτερε ἐως τούτου: they are a public command to the disciples not to impede the arrest. Comp. Jn. xviii. 36. Marcion omitted vv. 49-51.

In the Classical Review of Dec. 1893 Dr. E. A. Abbott proposes to resolve this miracle into a misunderstanding of traditional language. The ingenuity is unconvincing. See Additional Note p. 545.

52. τοὺς παραγενομένους ἐπ’ αὐτῶν. These are not fresh arrivals, but portions of the δρχλος of ver. 47 more particularly described. There is nothing improbable in the presence of δρχερεῖς, who are mentioned by Lk. alone. Anxiety about the arrest, which might be frustrated by a miscalculation of time, or by the people, or by a miracle, would induce them to be present. For στρατηγοῦς τοῦ ἱεροῦ see on ver. 4. Jn. tells us that Roman soldiers with their chief officer were there also (xviii. 3, 12). Jesus addresses the Jewish authorities, who are responsible for the transaction.

The reading ἐπ’ αὐτῶν (A B D L T X Γ Λ Π), "against Him" (RV.), is to be preferred to πρὸς αὐτῶν (είς τοῦ Π), "to Him" (AV.); but Tisch., with his bias for Μ, adopts the latter.

'Ως ἐπὶ λήπτην. First with emphasis. These words down to καθ' ἡμέραν are the same in all three accounts. Jesus is not a bandit (x. 30, xiv. 46). The fact that they did not arrest Him publicly, nor without violence, nor in the light of day, is evidence that the arrest is unjustifiable. Perhaps ἕλων means "clubs," as Rhem. from fustibus (Vulg.): comp. Jos. B. J. ii. 9. 4.

53. Every point tells: "Every day there was abundant opportunity; you yourselves were there; the place was the most public in the city; and you made no attempt to touch Me." The sentence is certainly not a question (Hahn). Tisch. does not make even the first part, from ὥς to ἔχειν, a question: so also Wic. and Cran.

ἀλλ’ αὕτη ἐστίν. "But the explanation of such outrageous conduct is not difficult. This is your hour of success allowed by God; and it coincides with that allowed to the power of darkness." So Euthym. ὅποι ἐν ᾫ δύναμιν ἐλάβετε κατ' ἐμαυθ θεόθεν:
comp. Jn. viii. 44. Perhaps there is an intimation that the night is a fit season for such work: comp. Jn. xiii. 30, and see Schanz, p. 529.

ἡ ἔξουσία τοῦ σκότους. See Lft. on Col. i. 13, where the same phrase occurs. He points out that ἔξουσία is sometimes used of unrestrained and tyrannical power, as well as of delegated and constitutional power. But the latter may be the meaning here. It is by Divine permission that Satan is ἐξ ἀρχῶν τοῦ κόσμου τοῦτο (Jn. xiv. 30).

Lk. omits the flight of all the disciples, which Mt. and Mk. record. This is further evidence, if any be needed, that Lk. exhibits no animus against the Twelve. See on ver. 45 and vi. 13.

Peter's Denials are recorded in detail by all four Evangelists, who tell us that three denials were predicted (Mt. xxvi. 34 ; Mk. xiv. 30 ; Lk. xxii. 34 ; Jn. xiii. 38), and record three denials (Mt. xxvi. 70, 72, 74 ; Mk. xiv. 68, 70, 71 ; Lk. xxii. 57, 58, 60 ; Jn. xviii. 17, 25, 27). As already pointed out, Lk. and Jn. place the prediction during the supper, Mk. and Mt. on the road to the Mount of Olives, which is less likely to be correct, if (as is probable) the prediction was made only once.

As to the three denials, all four accounts are harmonious respecting the first, but differ greatly respecting the second and third. The first denial, provoked by the accusation of the maid, seems to have led to a series of attacks upon S. Peter, which were mainly in two groups; and these were separated from one another by an interval, during which he was not much noticed. Each of the four narratives notices some features in these groups of attacks and denials: but it is unreasonable to suppose that they profess to give the exact words that were spoken in each case. See on viii. 24 for Augustine's remarks on the different words recorded by the three Synoptists as uttered during the storm on the lake. Alford on Mt. xxvi. 69, and Westcott in an additional note on Jn. xviii., have tabulated the four narratives: see also Rushbrooke's Synopticon, p. 114. With these helps the four can readily be compared clause by clause; and the independence of at least three of them soon becomes apparent. This independence results from truthfulness, and the variations will be a difficulty to those only who hold views of verbal inspiration which are contradicted by abundant phenomena both in O.T. and N.T. "St. Luke adds force to the episode by placing all three denials together. With St. John, however, dramatic propriety is sacrificed to chronological accuracy" (Lft. Biblical Essays, p. 191).

54. Συλλαβόντες. All four use this verb in connexion with the arrest of Jesus. It is freq. in Lk., especially of the capture of prisoners: Acts i. 16, xii. 3, xiii. 27, xxvi. 21. Jn. tells us that they bound Him and took Him πρὸς Ἀνναν πρῶτον, i.e. before His being examined by Caiaphas, as recorded Mt. xxvi. 57-68 and Mk. xiv. 53-65. Both these examinations were informal. They were held at night, and no sentence pronounced in a trial held at night was valid. Hence the necessity for a formal meeting of the Sanhedrin after daybreak, to confirm what had been previously decided. This third ecclesiastical trial is mentioned by all the
Synoptists (ver. 66; Mt. xxvii. 1; Mk. xv. 1); whereas Jn. gives only the first (xviii. 12), and shows that it was in connexion with it that Peter’s denials took place. Lk. can hardly be said to give either of the first two hearings. He says that Jesus was taken to the high priest’s house, and was there denied by Peter and ill-treated by His captors; and then he passes on to the formal assembly of the Sanhedrin; but there is no mention of any previous examination. With the help of the other narratives, however, we obtain an account of all three hearings. The space devoted by all four to these Jewish and Roman trials seems to be out of proportion to the brief accounts of the crucifixion. But they serve to bring out the meaning of the crucifixion by exhibiting the nature of the Messiahship of Jesus. Why was Jesus condemned to death by the Sanhedrin? Because He claimed to be the Son of God. Why was He condemned to death by Pilate? Because He claimed to be the King of the Jews.

They led Him (away) and brought Him.” The latter verb is a favourite with Lk. See on ii. 27.

eis tɛn oikIAS τOY oRhɪεrwɔs. It is impossible to determine whether this means of Annas or of Caiaphas (comp. iii. 2 and Acts iv. 6): but the narrative of Jn. (xviii. 12–24) renders it highly probable that Annas and his son-in-law Caiaphas shared the same palace, occupying different parts of it. As Lk. records no examination of Christ before either of them, we do not know whether he connects Peter’s fall with the hearing before Annas (as Jn.), or with that before Caiaphas (as Mt. and Mk.). All that he tells us is that Jesus was kept a prisoner and insulted between the night arrest and the morning sitting of the Sanhedrin. Possibly his authorities told him no more. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 100.

This following at a distance is noted by all three. Quod sequitur, amoris est, quod e longo, timoris.

55. pεριαιαφαντῶν. Here only in N.T. Comp. 3 Mac. iii. 7. This would be April, at which time cold nights are not uncommon in Jerusalem, which stands high.

A D R X Γ Α Π have ἀφάντων, which is peculiar to Lk. in the sense of kindling: viii. 16, xi. 33, xv. 8; Acts xxviii. 2. For ἐν μέτρῳ see on viii. 7. ἐκάθητο ὁ Πέτρος μέτρῳ αὐτῶν. Cod. Am. and other MSS. of Vulg. have erat Petrus in medio eorum. All Greek texts have ἐκάθητο. Where did Jerome find ἣν? See on ix. 44. Here only in N.T. is συνκαθίσκω intransitive: contrast Eph. ii. 6. D G, b c d e f g i l l Vulg. Arm. Syr-Sin. have περικαθισάντων. But a (consedentibus) supports Ν Α Β Λ Ρ Χ etc. (συνκαθισάντων): and this is doubtless right.
56. παιδίσκη. All four use this word of the person who began the attack on Peter. Jn. says that she was the doorkeeper. It was not Pilate, nor any of the Sanhedrin, nor a mob of soldiers, but a single waiting-maid, who frightened the self-confident Apostle into denying his Master. Note the τις.

πρός το φῶς. Comp. Mk. xiv. 54. For ἀτενίσασα, which is a favourite word with Lk. (iv. 20 and often in Acts), Mk. has ἐμβλέψασα.

καί οὕτως σὺν αὐτῷ ἦν. The meaning of the καί is not obvious: as well as who? Possibly S. John, who was present and known to the household. With σὺν αὐτῷ ἦν comp. xxiv. 44; Acts xiii. 7. The fondness of Lk. for σὺν here comes out. Mk. and Mt. have μετά, and Jn. has ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν.

57. Οὐκ οἶδα αὐτόν. For αὐτόν Mk. and Mt. have the less explicitly false τί λέγεις. Lk. has δὲ λέγεις ver. 60, where they have τοῦ ἀνθρωπον. Here Lk. again mitigates by omitting the oath which accompanied the second denial (Mt.), and the cursing and swearing which accompanied the third (Mt. Mk.). This first denial seems to have been specially public, ἐμπροσθεν πάντων (Mt.).

58. μετὰ βραχί. Lk. alone states that a second denial followed close on the first. For ἔρευς Mt. has ἄλλη, Mk. ἡ παιδίσκη, Jn. ἐπιν. For ἀνθρώπευ see on xii. 14.

59. διαπάσης ὥσει βραχι μίας. Mk. and Mt. say μετὰ μικρόν. The classical διάστημα is peculiar to Lk. (xxiv. 51; Acts xxvii. 28. In LXX Exod. xv. 8; Prov. xvii. 9, etc.).

ἀλλος τις. Jn. says a kinsman of Malchus; Mt. and Mk. say the bystanders. In this third attack all four call attention to the positiveness of the speaker; because he had seen Peter in the garden with Jesus (Jn.), and because of Peter's Galilean λαλία (Mt.). The Galileans are said to have mixed the gutturals in pronunciation, and to have had in some respects a peculiar vocabulary.

διαχωρίζετο. Classical, but only here and Acts xii. 15 in bibl. Grk.

60. παραχρήμα. All four note how quickly the crowing followed upon the third denial. Lk. has his favourite παραχρήμα and Mk. his favourite εὐθύς: comp. v. 25, viii. 44, 55; xviii. 43. But the graphic ἐπὶ λαλοῦτος αὐτοῦ is given by Lk. alone.

ἐφώνησεν ἀλέκτωρ. No article: "a cock crew." A few cursives insert δ.

The objection which has been raised, that the Talmud pronounces fowls which scratch on dungheaps to be unclean, is futile. In this the Talmud is inconsistent with itself: and Sadducees would have no scruples about what was not forbidden by the written law. Certainly Romans would have no such scruples.

61. στραφεῖς. Lk. alone preserves this incident. Peter is
probably still in the court, while Jesus is inside. It is improbable that Jesus was present when Peter denied Him. He may have been visible through door or window, but scarcely within hearing. The ουράφεις ενέβλησεν may have taken place as He was being led to or from the examination before Caiaphas.

σώμερον. Lk. alone repeats this word, as Mk. repeats his δι: otherwise all three have the same words. Jn. omits Peter’s recollection of the warning and also his bitter weeping.

The σώμερον is omitted in A D Γ Δ Α and several Versions, but it is attested by Β Κ Λ Μ Τ, Boh. Sah. Syr-Sin. Aeth. b ff 1.

62. WH. bracket this verse, which is wanting in a b e f i l r. But δ Πέτρος (Α Γ Δ Α, Vulg.) is no doubt an addition both here and Mt. xxvi. 75.

63-65. The First Mocking. As Lk. omits the examination by Caiaphas, it is impossible to determine whether he places this mocking before or after it. He knows that Jesus, after being denied by His chief Apostle, was insulted by His captors, and then taken before the Sanhedrin. His omissions seem to show that he is making no use of Mt. or Mk. Comp. Mt. xxvi. 67, 68; Mk. xiv. 65.

63. οἱ σωφέχοντες αὐτόν. Not members of the Sanhedrin, but the servants or soldiers in whose charge Jesus had been left. Here only is σωφέχεω used of holding fast a prisoner. Comp. viii. 45; xix. 43. See Deissmann, Bibelstudien, p. 158.

64. δέροντες. Comp. xii. 47, xx. 10. Of the five expressions which are used in describing these blows each Evangelist uses two: Lk. δέροντες and παλασας; Mt. έκολδείνας and έράσασαν; Mk. κολαφίζειν and παλασασαν θλαβον. Comp. the treatment of the Apostles, Acts v. 40; and of S. Paul, Acts xxii. 32, xxiii. 2. Lk. omits the spitting. All three have the Προφήτευσον.

65. τέρα τολλά. Comp. iii. 18. The statement here is made by Lk. only. On the combination of participle and verb, describing the same action from different points of view, see Burton, § 121.

66-71. The Third Jewish Trial. The Sanhedrin could hold no valid meeting before daybreak, and what had been irregularly done in the night had to be formally transacted after dawn. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 1; Mk. xv. 1. But Lk. is quite independent; whereas Mt. and Mk. have much in common.

66. ως ἐγένετο ἡμέρα. All three note the early hour: εἰθύς πρώι (Mk.), πρῶιας δὲ γενομένης (Mk.). The expression ἡμέρα γίνεται is characteristic of Lk. Comp. iv. 42, vi. 13; Acts xii. 18, xvi. 35, xxiii. 12, xxvii. 29, 33, 39.

η τοῖς πρεσβυτέρων τοῦ λαοῦ, ἄριστεις τε καὶ γραμματεῖς. The meaning is that the three component parts of the Sanhedrin met,

1 Synedrium magnum sedet a sacrificio iugi matutino ad sacrificium iuge pomeridianum (Maimonides, Sanhed. iii.); sessiones judiciti sunt instituenda mane, non autem postquam homo edit et bibit (Synops. Soh. p. 56 n. 2).
and that Jesus was brought before the whole assembly. Mt. and Mk. also give the parts as well as the whole; but the place of meeting is not given by any. That portions of what is recorded of one examination should resemble portions of what is recorded of another is natural. Before Annas, Caiaphas, and the Sanhedrin the same questions would be asked. At this last and only valid trial everything of importance would have to be repeated. It is probable that τὸ συνεδρίου αὐτῶν is here used in a technical sense for the Great Council or Sanhedrin. Comp. Acts iv. 15, v. 21, 27, 34, 41, vi. 12, 15, xxii. 30, xxiii. 1, 6, 15, 20, 28, xxiv. 20. See Herzog, art. Synedrium; Keim, Jes. of Naz. vi. pp. 63–72; Edersh. L. & T. ii. pp. 553–557; Hist. of J. N. ch. v.; Farrar, L. of C. II. Excurs. xiii.; and above all Schurer, J. P. in T. of J. C. ii. i. pp. 163–195, where the literature of the subject is given.

Note the τε καλ, which neither Mt. nor Mk. has. In the Gospel Lk. never has τε without καλ following: ii. 16, xii. 45, xxi. 11, etc.

67. Εἰ σὺ εἶ ὁ Χριστός, εἰπὼν ἡμῖν. Si tu es Christus, dic nobis (Vulg.). The εἰ is conditional, and the emphasis is on ὁ Χριστός, not on σὺ. This is the simplest construction, and is adopted by Luth. Wic. Rhem. RV. De W. Schanz, Mey. Nösg. Go. Hahn, etc. Others prefer, "Art Thou the Christ? tell us": so Erasm. Tyn. Cran. Gen. AV. Or, "Tell us whether Thou art the Christ": Ewald and some others. The question was vital; and in the examination recorded by Mt. and Mk. it was coupled with "Art Thou the Son of God?" (ver. 70).

Ἐὰν ὑμῖν . . . ἀποκριθήτε. This part of Christ's reply is peculiar to this occasion, whereas what follows (ver. 69) is almost verbatim as in Mt. and Mk. The meaning seems to be, "If I tell you that I am the Christ, ye will assuredly not believe; and if I try to discuss the question, ye will assuredly refuse to do so." Note that here the proceedings are conducted by the Sanhedrin as a body; not, as in the earlier trial, by the high priest alone (Mt. xxvi. 62, 63, 65; Mk. xiv. 60, 61, 63). For the addition ἃ ἀπολύσετε see additional note at the end of ch. xxiii.

69. ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν δέ. His glorification has already begun: Jn. xii. 31. Hoc ipsum erat iter ad gloriōram (Beng.) Comp. the parallel Acts vii. 56, where see Blass.

The δέ is thus placed because ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν is virtually one word. TR. with Γ Δ Λ Π. I. Sah. omits δέ, and Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. substitute γάρ. The Latin Versions are again interesting in their rendering of ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν: a modo (acdr), ex hoc (f Vulg.): see on i. 48 and also on v. 10.

70. εἰπαρ δέ πάντες. The πάντες is again peculiar to Lk. (vii. 35, xix. 37, xx. 18): in Mt. and Mk. the high priest asks the
question. In the allusion to Dan. vii. 13 they recognize a claim to Divinity, and they translate δὲ νῦν τοῦ Διόρθωτου into δὲ νῦν τοῦ Θεοῦ. But it is not clear whether by the latter they mean the Messiah or something higher.

οὐ μείζονες ἐγένετο ἡμι. Both here and Jn. xviii. 37 "that I am" (English Versions, Godet) is more probable than "because I am" (Luth. Weiss, Hahn). A third possibility, to make the whole a question, is worth noting. For other cases of ambiguous ὅτι comp. i. 45, vii. 16, xix. 31.

71. ἡκούσαμεν. "We have heard" that He claims to be the Messiah and the Son of God. It is quite natural that in accusing Him to Pilate nothing is said about this charge of blasphemy,—one of great weight with the Sanhedrin, but which the heathen procurator would not appreciate.

XXIII. 1-7. The Civil Trial before Pilate. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 2, 11, 12; Mk. xv. 1-3; Jn. xviii. 28-37. Lk. assumes that his readers know that Jesus was condemned to death by the Sanhedrin. But it was necessary to have Him condemned by the Roman procurator also, in order that the sentence might be executed, and without delay, by him who possessed ἰδίως τοῦ κτητοῦχου ἐξουσίασ (Jos. B. J. ii. 8. 1). It is almost certain that at this time the Jews were deprived of the right of inflicting capital punishment. They sometimes did inflict it and risked the consequences, as in the case of S. Stephen: and the Romans sometimes found it expedient to ignore these transgressions (Jn. v. 18, vii. 1, 25, viii. 5, 59; Acts v. 33, xxi. 31, xxvi. 10). A good deal would depend upon the character of the execution and the humour of the procurator. But besides Jn. xviii. 31 we have the express statement, quadraginta annis ante vastatum templum ablata sunt judicia capitalia ab Israele (Bab. Sanh. f. 24, 2). See Blass on Acts vii. 57.

But it is quite possible that in some of the cases in which the Jews are represented as trying to put persons to death, the meaning is that they wished to hand them over to the Romans for execution. See notes on Jn. xviii. 31 in Camb. Grk. Test. In the accounts of this Roman trial we have the attempts of the Jews to induce Pilate to condemn Jesus contrasted with Pilate's attempts to save Him from execution. The Sanhedrin hoped that Pilate would confirm their sentence of death; but Pilate insists on trying the case himself. This he does 1

1 The expressions jus gladii and potestas gladii are of later date. Professor Chwolson argues that the Sadducees were dominant when Jesus was condemned to death. It was against the law as maintained by the Pharisees to sentence a criminal and execute him within a few hours. The law required an interval of forty days for the collection of evidence on his behalf. It was the Sadducees, the servile upholders of Roman authority, who took the lead against Christ. They were the wealthy class, who lived on the temple sacrifices and dues, and therefore were bitter antagonists of a Teacher whose doctrine tended to the reform of lucrative abuses (Das letzte Passamahl Christi, etc., Appendix).
in his πρωτόφυιον or palace (Mt. xxvii. 27; Mk. xv. 16; Jn. xviii. 28, 33, xix. 9). But we do not know where this was. A little later than this (Philo, Leg. ad Gaium, § 38, ed. Mangey, ii. 589) the Roman governor resided in “Herod’s Praetorium,” a large palace on the western hill of the city. But Pilate may have used part of the fortress Antonia, the site of which is supposed to be known; and some conjecture that a chamber with a column in it is the scene of the scourging. For the rather considerable literature concerning Pilate see Leyrer in Herzog, art. Pilatus, sub fin., and Schürer, Jewish People, etc. I. ii. p. 82, who refers especially to G. A. Müller, Pontius Pilatus, Stuttgart, 1888.

1. ἀναστὰν ἀπαύ τὸ πλῆθος. All three words are characteristic: see on i. 39, on iii. 21, and on i. 10. The whole body of the Sanhedrin (αὐτῶν) is meant, not including the populace, who at this point are not mentioned in any of the accounts.

ἐν τῶν Πελατῶν. Neither in order to shift the responsibility on to him, nor to avoid disturbing the feast with a Jewish execution, nor to ensure death by crucifixion, but simply in order to get their own sentence of death confirmed.

2. Lk. is alone in giving clearly the three political charges, which could not fail to have weight with Pilate: (1) seditious agitation, (2) forbidding tribute to Tiberius, (3) assuming the title of king. The point of ἡρέαντο seems to be that they began to do all this, but Pilate interposed: comp. v. 21, xii. 45, xiii. 25, xix. 37. The τοῦτον is probably contemptuous: “this fellow” (Tyn. Cov. Cran. Gen. AV.). Whether εἰραμεν refers to “catching in the act” or to “discovering by investigation” is not certain.

The form εἰραμεν is well attested here (B* L T X) as ἀνευραν in ii. 16. In 2 Sam. xvii. 20 we have εἰραν with ἔθαν and παρῆθαν. See small print on i. 59.

διαστρέφοντα τὸ ἔθνος ἡμῶν. They imply that the perversion of the nation was seditious. The excitement caused by Christ’s ministry was notorious, and it would not be easy to prove that it had no political significance. For the verb comp. ix. 41; Acts xiii. 10, xx. 30; Exod. v. 4; 1 Kings xviii. 17, 18.

κωλύοντα φόρους Καίσαρι δίδοναι. Jesus had done the very opposite a day or two before (xx. 25). But this second charge seemed to be of one piece with the third. If He claimed to be a king, He of course would forbid tribute to a foreign power. Vulg. wrongly changes the dare of Lat. Vet. to dari.

Χριστὸν βασιλέα. “Messias, a king” (comp. ii. 11) is more probable than either “King Messias,” or, “an anointed king” (Schegg). They add βασιλέα that Pilate may know the political significance of Χριστὸς (Schanz). It is here that the charge made before Pilate approximates to the charge on which they condemned Jesus (xxii. 69–71). But with them it was the theological significance of His claim that was so momentous: and this Pilate could not regard.
Epiphanius (Marc. 316, 317, 346) tells us that after διαστρέφοντα τὸ θεὸς Marcion inserted καὶ καταλύοντα τὸν νόμον καὶ τοὺς προφήτας; and that after κωνόντα ... διδᾶσκεν he added καὶ ἀποστρέφοντα τὸς γυναῖκας καὶ τὰ τέκνα. The former of these interpolations is found in various MSS. of the Old Latin, et solventem legem [nostram] et prophetas (b c eff. i q), and in some MSS. of Vulg. (E Q R), while the latter is added to ver. 5 in some Old Latin texts; see below. Prof. Rendel Harris attributes these insertions to Marcion himself, who was himself accused of these things, Texts & Studies, ii. 1, p. 230. See small print note on xvi. 17.

3. Σὺ εἶ ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν ἱουδαίων; All four record this question, and in exactly these words. The pronoun is emphatic, implying that His appearance was very much against such a claim.

Σὺ λέγεις. Like the reply in xxii. 70, this is probably not interrogative. It condenses a conversation given at greater length by Jn., without whose narrative that of the three is scarcely intelligible. It would be extraordinary that Pilate should simply hear that Jesus admitted that He claimed to be King of the Jews, and at once declare, “I find no fault in this man.” But a conversation with Jesus had convinced Pilate that He was a harmless enthusiast. He did not claim to be a king in the ordinary sense.

4. καὶ τοὺς ὄχλους. The first mention of them. The procession of the Sanhedrin would attract a crowd; and perhaps some had come to ask for the customary release of a prisoner (Mk. xv. 8).

αἰτίων = αἰτία is peculiar to Lk., and is always combined with a negative: vv. 14, 22; Acts xix. 40.

5. ἐπισαχευν. Intransitive, as in 1 Mac. vi. 6, so that nothing is to be understood: “they were the more urgent,” invalescēbat (Vulg.). They became more definite in their accusations, because Pilate took the matter too easily.

καθ’ ὀλης τῆς ἱουδαίας. Comp. iv. 44. Whether this means the whole of Palestine (i. 5, vii. 17; Acts ii. 9, x. 37; xi. 1, 29) or Judaea proper (ii. 4; Acts i. 8, viii. 1), is uncertain. In either case we have allusion to an activity of Jesus in southern Palestine of which Lk. records very little.

ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλαλαίας. Nutrix seditionorum hominum (Grot.). The ἔως ὅσα may have special reference to the triumphal entry into Jerusalem; but it may also refer to previous visits of Jesus to the city.

With the constr. ἀφέλμενος ἀπὸ ... ἔως comp. Acts i. 22; Mt. xx. 8; [Jn. viii. 9]. The very words καθ’ ὀλης τῆς ἱουδαίας, ἀφέλμενος ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλαλαίας occur Acts x. 37.

At the end of ver. 5 Cod. Colb. adds et filios nostros et uxores avertit a nobis, non enim baptizatur sicut nos; and the same thing in Cod. Palat. has the same down to nobis, and continues non enim baptizatur sicut et nos nec se mundant.

The retention of “Jewry” in AV. here, Jn. vii. 1, and Dan. v. 13 (where the same word is translated “Jewry” and “Judah”) was probably an oversight.

7. ἐπιγνωσόμενοι. Freq. in Lk. in the sense of “thoroughly ascertain”; vii. 37; Acts xix. 34, xxii. 29, xxiv. 11, xxviii. 1, etc.
The verb may be used in the legal sense of "sending up" to a higher authority or "referring" to another jurisdiction, like *remitto*, which Vulg. has here and vv. 11, 15: comp. Acts xxv. 21; Jos. B. J. ii. 20. 5; Philo, *De Creat. Prin.* viii. But in vv. 11, 15 the meaning "send back" is more suitable, and may be retained here: comp. Philem. 12. If Jesus originally belonged to Herod’s jurisdiction, sending Him to Herod was sending Him back; just as the man born blind is said to recover his sight (*ἀναβλέπειν*), because sight is natural to man (Jn. ix. 15, 18). It was perhaps chiefly in order to get rid of a difficult case, or to obtain official evidence from the tetrarch, that Pilate sent Jesus, rather than merely to conciliate Antipas. Justin says that Pilate *χαρίζομενος δεδημένων τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἐπέμψε* (*Try.* ciii.) and comp. Vespasian allowing Agrippa to have the prisoners who came from the latter’s kingdom (Jos. B. J. iii. 10. 10). Herod had come up to keep the feast, and probably occupied the palace of the Asamonreans (B. J. ii. 16. 3; Ant. xx. 8. 11).

8-12. § The Trial before Herod. It has been noticed by Schleiermacher that its omission by Jn. is no serious objection to its authenticity. “The transaction is too circumstantially detailed to admit a doubt, and our reporter seems to have had an acquaintance in the house of Herod who supplied him with this fact, as John seems to have had in the house of Annas” (*S. Luke*, p. 304, Eng. tr.). Joana, the wife of Chuza, Herod’s steward (viii. 3), would be a likely source of information: see on viii. 3 and xxiv. 10.

8. ἤν θέλων, τὸ ἀκούσειν, ἠλπίζειν. These expressions indicate the continuance of the wishing, hearing, and hoping: comp. ix. 9. Such curiosity is not gratified any more than the demand for signs from heaven (xi. 29). With ἐξ ἰκανῶν χρόνων comp. χρόνω ἰκανῷ (viii. 27; Acts viii. 11), χρόνον ἰκανοῦ (xx. 9).

TR. follows ARΓΔΛ in reading ἐξ ἰκανοῦ, to which HMXΠ add χρόνον. But NBDLT, Sah. Arm. give the plural.

9. αὐτὸς δὲ οὕδεν ἀπεκρίνατο αὐτῷ. “But He on His part answered him nothing.” The language and tone of Antipas showed that he was in no condition to profit by anything that Jesus might say: see on iii. 1. “He regarded Jesus as a sight.” For ἀπεκρίνατο comp. iii. 16.

Cod. Colb. adds quasi non audiens: and Syr-Cur. has the more remarkable quasi non ibi erat. This may have suggested the possibly Docetic touch in the Gospel of Peter, "He held His peace as in no wise feeling pain." Both Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. for ἐκ λόγου ἰκανοῖς have "in cunning words." Syr-Sin. omits vv. 10, 11, 12.

10. ἵστηκαν. This, and not ἵστηκεν, is the pluperf. of ἵστηκαν. The evidence varies in the fourteen places; but ἵστηκεν is never a mere
XXIII. 10-12.] THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION 523

itacism, and is freq. in LXX. Even B, which often prefers α to τ, supports λαθέει five times (WH. ii. App. p. 162).

εὐθυνός. "At full stretch, vehemently," in N.T. only here and Acts xvii. 28; comp. Josh. vi. 8 ; 2 Mac. xii. 23. In Latin texts we have instanter (c), fortiter (d), vehementer (a r), constanter (f Vulg.). Apparently they had kept silence while Herod was questioning Jesus; but His silence had exasperated them. Syr-Sin. omits vv. 10-12.

11. ἐπιβλέπων . . . ἐμπαιάζω. These participles are put first in their clauses with emphasis. Herod’s baffled curiosity takes this despicable revenge: comp. xviii. 9 ; Gal. iv. 14. We need not suppose that Antipas formally pronounced Him innocent, but that he did not condemn Him to death. He evaded the responsibility, as Pilate tried to do. In the Gospel of Peter Herod sentences the Lord; and when "Joseph, the friend of Pilate and of the Lord," asks Pilate before the crucifixion for the Lord’s body, Pilate sends to ask Herod for it. The chief guilt throughout is transferred from Pilate to Herod and the Jews.

αὐν τοῖς στρατευμασίων. Probably a guard of honour: cum militibus suis (f). It was one of these perhaps that he had sent to behead John in the prison (Mk. vi. 27; Mt. xiv. 10). It was fitting that the prince who had murdered the Baptist should mock the Christ.

ἐμπαιάζω. He treats Him as a crazy enthusiast, and gives a mock assent to His claim to be a king, which the scribes no doubt reported. Latin texts have irrisit (c), inludens (d), deludens (r), delusum (a), inlusit (Vulg.).

ἐσθήνα λαμπράν. "A bright robe," splendidum (c), rather than "a white robe," candida (a), alba (f Vulg.). That it was a toga candida to mark Him as a candidate for royalty, is not likely: it was to mark Him as already king. The epithet does not indicate its colour, but its “gorgeous” character: comp. Jas. ii. 2, 3. In Acts x. 30 it is used of angelic apparel. Elsewhere in N.T. ἑσθής occurs only xxiv. 4; Acts i. 10, xii. 21: comp. 2 Mac. viii. 35, xi. 8.

12. ἐγένοντο δὲ φίλου. Although Pilate failed in the attempt to transfer the responsibility to Herod, yet something was gained by the transaction. In the Gospel of Peter Herod addresses him as Ἀδελφε Πειλάτε. The cause of enmity may easily have been some dispute about jurisdiction.

Ephrem conjectured that the enmity arose through Pilate sending soldiers to punish the chief men of Galilee who had been the guests of Herod when he put the Baptist to death, and that this was the occasion when the blood of Galileans was mingled with their sacrifices. For the importance of this strange idea as a link in the evidence respecting the Diatessaron see Rendel Harris in Contemp. Review, Aug. 1895, p. 279.

D transposes the clauses, and has ἄνθρωπον γιγάντων δὲ ἐν ἄνθρωπον ὁ Π. κ. ὁ Ἡ. ἐγένοντο φίλου ἐν αὐτῷ τ. ἡμ. So also Cod. Colb. cuni essent autem in dissensionem pil. et her. facti sunt amici in illa die.
18-25. The vain Attempts of Pilate to avoid Sentencing Jesus to Death. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 15-26; Mk. xv. 6-15. Pilate’s first two expedients had failed: (1) telling the Jews to deal with the case themselves; (2) sending it to Herod. He now tries two others: (3) to release Him in honour of the feast; (4) to scourge Him and let Him go. Roman dislike of a gross injustice to an innocent person possibly influenced him; but perhaps the chief motive was the superstitious fear, produced by his wife’s dream and confirmed by Christ’s bearing and words. Jn. states that he again and again declared Jesus to be innocent (xviii. 38, xix. 4, 6). In wording Lk. is not very similar to either Mt. xxvii. 15-26 or Mk. xv. 6-15; but the substance of all three is the same. Jn. is more full and quite independent; he distinguishes the conversation inside the pretorium with Jesus and outside with the Jews.

18. συνκαλεσάμενος. See on ix. 1. Pilate in taking the matter in hand again summons not only the hierarchy, whose bitterness against Jesus he knew, but the populace, whom he hoped to find more kindly disposed, and able to influence their rulers.

14. ἀποστρέφοντα τὸν λαὸν. “Seducing the people from their allegiance.” He condenses the three charges in ver. 2 into one. Note the emphatic ἐγώ and the ἐνώπιον ὄμων: the one anticipates Ἡρῴδης, and the other implies that they know with what thoroughness the case has been investigated.

 anakrīnas. In its forensic sense of a judicial investigation the word is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (Acts iv. 9, xii. 19, xxiv. 8, xxviii. 18). But the classical use for a preliminary examination must not here be pressed. See Dict. of Grk. and Rom. Ant., art. Anakrisis; Gardner and Jevons, pp. 574 ff. Pilate’s οὐθὲν ἕρων is in direct contradiction to their εὑραμὲν (ver. 2). For αὐτὸν see on ver. 4.

15. ἀλλ' οὖθεν Ἡρῴδῃς. Therefore the friendship between Herod and Pilate is hardly “a type of Judaism and Heathenism leagued together to crush Christianity.” Both were willing to set Jesus free. What we see here is, however, an anticipation of what not unfrequently happened during the first three centuries, viz. that Jewish mobs incited the heathen against the Christians.

ἀνέπεμψαν γὰρ αὐτὸν πρὸς ἡμᾶς. This reading agrees better with “No, nor yet Herod” than does “For I sent you to him,” and the external evidence for it is decisive.

For the text, ΝΒΚΛΜΤΠΠ and some cursive; for ἀνέπεμψα γὰρ ὑμᾶς πρὸς αὐτόν, ΑΔΧΤΔΑ. Versions are divided, Latt. against Egypt., while Syrr. including Syr-Sin. have the confiate, “For I sent Him to him.” Wic. had a Lat. text such as Cod. Brix. nam remissit eum ad nos, for he renders “For he hath sent Him again to us,” although Vulg. has nam remissit vos ad ilium. Some Latin authorities combine both readings.

ἐστίν πεπραγμένον αὐτῷ. “Is done by Him,” or “hath been done by Him” (RV.). The former is perhaps better, as giving the
result of the trial before Herod. The dat. indicates that what is done stands to the person's credit; Win. xxxi. 10, p. 274; xxiv. 35 is not parallel. "Nothing worthy of death is done unto Him" (AV.) is scarcely sense. Cov. has "There is brought upon Him nothing that is worthy of death." For the periphrastic perfect see Burton, § 84.

16. παθέως. He uses a light word to express the terrible flagellatio, in order to excuse the injustice to his own conscience, and to hide his inconsistency from them. It is no punishment, but a chastisement to warn Him to be more circumspect in future. But the priests would see that a judge who was willing to inflict this on an innocent person could be induced by further pressure to inflict death. Scourging was sometimes fatal: Hor. Sat. i. 2. 41; comp. i. 3. 119. Comp. Deut. xxii. 18.

17. This verse is wanting in A B K L T II, Sah. a, while D, Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Æth. insert it after ver. 19. It is a gloss based on Mt. xxvii. 15 and Mk. xv. 6. Alf. urges that ἀνέκρατος is an idiom in Lk.'s manner. But Lk. uses it only once (xiv. 18), as do also S. Paul (Phil. VII. 37) and S. Jude (3). Homeoteleuton (ΑΝΑΓΚΗΝ, ΑΝΕΚΡΑΤΟΝ) might explain the omission in one family of witnesses; but against this is the widespread omission, and the fact that the gloss is inserted in two different places. The passage reads more naturally without the gloss than with it.

18. άνέκρατος. We have the aorist iv. 33, viii. 28; Mk. i. 23, vi. 49: and in LXX both aorists are common. Here ADX άνέκρατος, ΝΒLT άνέκρατος. Here only in bibl. Grk. does πανεληφθε occur.

Αἰρε τοῦτον. E medio tolle istum: Acts xxi. 36, xxii. 22; Mt. xxiv. 39; Jn. xix. 15: comp. Acts viii. 33. They are perhaps recalling such passages as Deut. xvii. 7, xix. 19.

ἀνέκρατος δὲ ήμῖν. Nothing is known of this custom of releasing a prisoner at the Passover apart from the Gospels. Pilate says "Ye have a custom" (Jn. xviii. 39), which is against the hypothesis that he originated it. The Herods may have done so in imitation of Roman customs. At the first recorded lectisternium prisoners were released (Livy, v. 13. 7).

Βαραββᾶς. "Son of Abba" (father). Other instances of the name are given by Lightfoot: Samuel Bar-Abba, Nathan Bar-Abba (Hor. Heb. Mt. xxvii. 16). But evidence is wanting that Abba was a proper name. On the remarkable reading "Jesus Barabbas" Mt. xxvii. 16, 17 see WH. ii. App. 19.

19. διὰ στάσιν τινὰ γενομένην. Of Barabbas they might with some truth have said τοῦτον εὗραμεν διαστρέφοντα τὸ ἔθνος (ver. 2). Not that he had originated the στάσις, but that he had taken a conspicuous part in it. The στάσις was probably no popular movement, but some plundering disturbance. Jn. calls him simply "a robber," and he may have been connected with the other two robbers who were crucified with Jesus. The rather awkward order
of the words in the verse is perhaps to intimate that while the στάσις took place in the city the murder did not.

On the rare form of periphrastic tense (ἡν with aor. part.), see Burton, § 20. βεβαίως is the reading of B L T, for which NαΔΞΓ etc. have the more usual βεβαίως (μή) ἦν; and while ΒΛΤΧ, f q have ἦν ἡ τῆς φιλακής, ΑΔΓΔ etc. have the obvious correction εἰς τὴν φιλακήν.

Excepting Mk. xv. 7 and Heb. ix. 8, στάσις in N. T. is peculiar to Lk. (ver. 25; Acts xv. 2, xix. 40, xxiii. 7, 10, xxiv. 5). In LXX it represents several Hebrew words of different meaning. Syr-Sin. here has "wicked deeds."

20. That we should read δὲ (Ν Δ Β Δ Τ, Latt. Boh. Sah.) and not ὅν (Χ Γ Δ Δ etc.) after πᾶλιν is certain. That αὐτῶς is to be added after προσφέρων (ΝΒLT, Latt. Boh. Sah. Syr-Cur. Εθ.) is also certain. But Lk. uses the verb absolutely, xiii. 12; Acts xxii. 40. Contrast vii. 32; Acts xxii. 2.

21. εἴπερ φώναυ. "Kept shouting at him": clamaban (f), proclamaban (a), succlamanaban (Vulg.). In N. T. the verb is peculiar to Lk. (Acts xii. 22, xxi. 34, xxii. 24); but it is classical. According to all four Gospels the demand for crucifixion was not made until Pilate had proposed to release Jesus on account of the feast. Lk. and Jn. give the double cry, "Crucify, crucify." Mt. has σταυρωθήτω, Mk. and Jn. σταυρώσων, Lk. σταύρων.

We must read σταύρων, 2 pers. imper. act., and not σταυρῶ, mid. ΝΒΔΦα have σταυρῶν (bis), while ΑΛΠΧΓ etc. have σταυρῶσον (bis); but U 157, a β ε f L Arm. Aeth. omit the second "Crucify."

22. Τί γὰρ κακὸν ἐποίησεν? So in all three. The γὰρ means "Impossible; for what evil hath this man done?" This is well represented by the idiomatic "Why," which we owe to the Vulg. Quid enim, through Rhem. Cov. has "What evil then," etc. The τρίτον refers to vv. 4 and 14.

οὐδὲν αἰτίων θανάτου. The θανάτου is a qualification added after the failure of the mission to Herod (ver. 15). Previously it was οὐδὲν αἰτίων without limitation (vv. 4, 14). In his weakness Pilate begins to admit, "Well, perhaps He may be guilty of something: but He is not guilty of a capital offence." He began by saying that Herod had not found Him worthy of death. Now he says the same himself. In each case the proposal is the same,—παιδεύσας ἀπολύσω (vv. 16, 22).

23. ἐπέκειτο φ. μ. αἰτοῦμενοι. Comp. μᾶλλον ἐπέκειτο δεξιῶν, μᾶλλον ἐπέκειτο βλασφημοῦντες (Jos. Ant. xviii. 6. 6, xx. 5. 3). With φωναῖς μεγάλαις comp. i. 42, iv. 33, viii. 28, xvii. 15, etc.

κατίσχουν. Comp. xxi. 36: "they prevailed," but not until Pilate had tried whether the παιδεύσας would satisfy them (Jn. xix. 1). Mt. and Mk. connect the scourging with the crucifixion, because it usually preceded this punishment in Roman
law. It is extremely unlikely that Pilate allowed the scourging to be repeated. He merely separated it from the crucifixion in the hope that the latter would not be required. Note the impressive repetition of ϕωναί.


25. ἀπέλυσεν ... παρεῖδωκεν. This tragic contrast is in all three; and all four use παρεῖδωκεν of the final surrender. Comp. Acts iii. 14, and note the contrast between these aorists and the imperfect ἱπτοῦντο, "kept demanding." Both the repetition of τὸν διὰ στὰσιν, κ.τ.λ. and the addition of τὸ λελήματι αὐτῶν are peculiar to Lk. The writer thus emphasizes the enormity of the transaction. In the Gospel of Peter Herod is present at this point and gives the sentence. He does not wash his hands, and the blame is transferred to him and the Jews. So also in the Acta Pilati (B. x.) it is the Jews who hastily execute the sentence, as soon as Pilate has pronounced it. Comp. Justin (Try. cviii.) δν σταυρωσάντων ἢμῶν. See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 245.

26-28. § The Road to Calvary, Simon the Cyrenian, and the Daughters of Jerusalem. With the exception of ver. 26, the whole of this is peculiar to Lk. In ver. 26 his wording is closer to Mk. xv. 21 than to Mt. xxvii. 32.

26. Κυρηναῖον. Josephus tells of the origin of the Jewish colony in Cyrene (Απίων. ii. 4), and quotes Strabo respecting it (Ant. xiv. 2): this gives us important information respecting that branch of the Dispersion. Comp. Ant. xvi. 6. 1, 5; 1 Mac. xv. 23; 2 Mac. ii. 23. That Cyrene was the chief city of the district, which is the modern Tripoli, is shown by the name Cyrenaica and by Acts ii. 10. For the literature of the subject see D.B.2 i. p. 688. This Simon may have been a member of the Cyrenian synagogue at Jerusalem (Acts vi. 9). It has been proposed to identify him with "Symeon that was called Niger," who is mentioned in company with "Lucius of Cyrene" (Acts xiii. 1). But Simon or Symeon was one of the commonest of names; and Lk. would probably have given the same designation in both books, if he had meant the same person. If the Rufus of Rom. xvi. 13 is the Rufus of Mk. xv. 21, then the wife of Simon of Cyrene was well known to S. Paul.

ἔρχομενον ἀπ’ ἀγροῦ. Mk. has the same. He might be taking "a sabbath day's journey"; so that this is no proof as to the date. But he would not be likely to be coming in from the country on such a sabbatical day as Nisan 15.

1 Jos. B. J. ii. 14. 9, v. 11. 1; Livy, xxii. 13. 6, xxxiii. 36. 3; Cic. In Verr. v. 62, 162. Capital punishment of any kind was generally, according to Roman custom, preceded by beating.
The gen. of TR. following ΑΠΓΔ etc. (Σιμωνὸς τινος Κουρήναον) is probably a grammatical correction.

ἐπεθῆκαν αὐτῷ τὸν σταυρόν. His being a provincial may have made them more ready to make free with him. Perhaps it was only the cross-beam (patibulum) which he carried; and if he carried both pieces, they would not be fastened together as finally erected. On the shape of the cross see Justin, Try. xci.; 1 Apol. lv.; Iren. ii. 24. 4; Tert. Adv. Jud. x.; Ad. Nat. xiii.; and Schaff's Herzog, art. "Cross"; Kraus, Real-Enc. d. Chr. Alt. ii. p. 225. At first Jesus carried it Himself (Jn. xix. 17), according to the usual custom, ἐκατοσ τῶν κακούργων ἐκφέρει τὸν ἔαυτον σταυρὸν (Plutarch, De Sera Num. Vind. ix. p. 554 B), as indicated by the word jurgifer: but He was physically unable to continue to do so. Indeed it has been inferred from φέρων αὐτὸν (Mk. xv. 22) that at length He was unable even to walk, and was therefore carried to Golgotha: but comp. Mk. i. 32, vii. 32, viii. 22, ix. 19. On the other hand Lange interprets φέρων ὅπως ὁσιόθεν as meaning that Simon carried the lower end, while the top was still carried by Jesus. But this is not in harmony with ἵνα ἄρη τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτοῦ (Mt. Mk.). Syr-Sin. here has, "that he might bear the cross and follow Jesus." See Hastings, D.B. i. p. 529.

The Basilidian Gnostics taught that Simon was crucified in the place of Jesus, being transformed by Jesus to look like Him, while Jesus in the form of Simon stood by and laughed at His enemies: and it was for this reason that they disparaged martyrdom, as being an honour paid, not to Christ, but to Simon the Cyrenian. See Photius, Bibli. cv. 292. Irenæus (i. 24. 4) wrongly attributes this doctrine to Basilides himself, who was not docetic, but made the sufferings of Jesus an essential part of his system. Contrast Hippol. Refut. vii. r5. The Mahometans teach a similar doctrine; that God deceived the Jews and caused them to crucify a spy, or an emissary of Judas, or Judas himself, in mistake for Jesus. See Sale's Koran, pp. 38, 70, Chandos ed.

27. γυναικῶν αἱ ἐκόπτοντο. This incident is in place in the "Gospel of Womanhood" (i. 39-56, ii. 36-38, vii. 11-15, 37-50, viii. 1-3, x. 38-42, xi. 27, xiii. 11-16). These are probably not the women who had ministered to Him previously (viii. 1-3), but sympathizers from the city. Comp. Zech. xii. 10-14. In the Gospels there is no instance of a woman being hostile to Christ. For ἐκόπτοντο comp. viii. 52 and Mt. xi. 17.

The καὶ after αἱ—"which also bewailed" (AV.)—must be omitted upon decisive evidence: A B C* D L X, Boh. Sah. Vulg. etc.

28. σταφαίεις πρὸς αὐτάς. As they were following Him, this would hardly have been possible, if He was still carrying the cross: comp. vii. 9, 44, ix. 55, x. 23. For "daughter of" = "inhabitant of" comp. Is. xxxvii. 22; Zeph. iii. 14; Jer. xlv. 19; Ezek. xvi. 46. 

μὴ κλαίετε ἐπὶ ἐμὲ· πλὴν ἐφ' ἐαυτάς κλαίετε. Comp. Judg.
xi. 37, 38. Note the chiasmus, making the contrast between ἐπὶ and ἐκατόρας very emphatic. His sufferings will be short, and are the road to glory: theirs will be prolonged, and will end in shame and destruction. Christ is not rebuking mere sentimentality or sympathetic emotion, as if the meaning were that they ought to lament their own sins rather than His sufferings. The form of command is similar to that in x. 20. They are not wrong in weeping for Him: nevertheless there is something else for which they may weep with far greater reason. That for which He wept (xix. 41–44) may rightly move them to tears,—the thought that a judgment which might have been averted must now take its course. For the legend of Veronica see D. of Chr. Biog. iv. p. 1107.

Comp. an eloquent passage in a lecture on the relation of Art to Religion by Ruskin, in which he contrasts the barren emotion produced by realistic representations of the past agonies of Christ with sympathetic realization of the present miseries of mankind (Lectures on Art, Oxford, 1870, § 57, p. 54).

29. ἐρχονται ἡμέραι. “Days are coming”: comp. Heb. viii. 8; Jer. vii. 32, ix. 25, xvi. 14, xix. 6, xxiii. 5, 7, etc. In all these cases ἱδοὺ precedes ἐρχονται. In Lk. the fut. is more common: v. 35, xvii. 22, xix. 43, xxi. 6. Here the nom. to ἔρχονται is not ἃς τέκνα ἡμῶν, but “people, the world in general”: man wird sagen.

Μακάραι αἱ στεῖραι. As a rule childless women are commiserated or despised (i. 25, 36), but in these dreadful times they will be congratulated. Comp. Eur. Androm. 395; Alc. 882; Tac. Ann. ii. 75. 1. See on i. 24.

30. τότε ἀρθονται. The nom. is the same as to ἔρχονται,—the population generally, not the women only; and the τότε means simply ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις. The wish is that the mountains may fall on them and kill them, not hide and protect them. Death is preferable to such terror and misery. So also in the original passage Hos. x. 8; comp. Rev. vi. 6, and contrast Is. ii. 19.

31. οὗτοι εἰ ἐν τῷ ὄγκῳ ξύλῳ. This is not a continuation of the cry of despair, but gives the reason for predicting such things. “These horrors will certainly come, because,” etc. In Syr-Sin. the ὅτι is omitted: “Who do these things in the moist tree, what shall they do in the dry?” Proverbs of similar import are found in various languages, and are capable of many applications: comp. Prov. xi. 31; 1 Pet. iv. 17, 18. This saying is an argument a fortiori, and it may be easily applied in more than one sense here. (1) If the Romans treat Me, whom they admit to be innocent, in this manner, how will they treat those who are rebellious and guilty? (2) If the Jews deal thus with One who has come to save them, what treatment shall they receive themselves for destroying Him? (3) If they behave thus before their cup of wickedness is
full, what will they commit when it overflows? The use of ξύλον, lignum, for a tree as well as for timber is late Greek (Gen. i. 29, ii. 9, iii. 1; Is. xiv. 8; Ps. i. 3). In Ezek. xxii. 3 we have ξύλον χλωρόν and ξύλον ξηρόν combined; but otherwise there is no parallel.

For the delib. subjunct. γένηται comp. Mt. xxvi. 54, and ὄμοι εὐγά, τι πάθος; τί νόμι μηκίωτα γένηται; (Hom. Od. v. 465). See Burton, § 169.

32. ἔτεροι κακοῦργοι δύο. This is the order of N B and Aegyptt., which has been corrected to ἔτεροι δύο κακοῦργοι, to avoid the implication that Jesus was a κακοῦργος. With a similar object Syr-Sin. with Codd. Colb. and Palat. omits ἔτεροι, and perhaps the omission of καί before ἔτεροι (Syr-Cur. b) is due to the same cause. Yet the implication is not necessary. We may retain the order of N B and translate, "others, viz. two malefactors"; or, "two very different malefactors." In the latter case κακοῦργος is used of Jesus with irony against those who treated Him as such: ἐν τοίς ἀνόμοις ἐλογίσθη (Is. liii. 12). But it is perhaps best to regard it as what Field calls "a negligent construction" not likely to be misunderstood. In that case the AV. is courageously accurate with "two other malefactors," for the comma after "other" is a later insertion of the printers; it is not found in the edition of 1611. These two κακοῦργοι were bandits (Mt. xxvii. 38, 44; Mk. xv. 27). The hierarchy perhaps contrived that they should be crucified with Jesus in order to suggest similarity of crime. In the persecutions, Christians were sometimes treated in this way. Comp. πολλάκις ἄμα κακοῦργοι ἐμπομπεύεσθαι τῷ σταδίῳ (Eus. Mart. Pal. vi. 3).

Note the characteristic σίν, and for ἀναιρεθήναι see on xxii. 2.

The Latin Versions render κακοῦργοι latrones (a b c f f l), maligni (d), rei (e), nequam (Vulg.), to which are added the names of the robbers, Ioathas et Maggatus (l). Similarly in Mk. xv. 27 we have names added, Zoathan et Chammatha (c), and in Mt. xxvii. 38, Zoathan et Camma. See on ver. 39.

33-38. The Crucifixion. The narrative is substantially the same as Mt. xxvii. 33-44 and Mk. xv. 22-32; but it has independent features.

33. τότεν. This word is used by all three. The precise place is still a matter of controversy, and must remain so until excavation has determined the position of the old walls, outside which it certainly was. See MacColl, Contemp. Rev., Feb. 1893, pp. 167-188; D.B.2 i. pp. 1205, 1652-1657.

tόν καλοῦμενον Κρανίον. See on vi. 15. It was so called on account of its shape, not because skulls were lying there unburied, which would have outraged Jewish feeling. Lk. omits the Hebrew name Golgotha (Mt. xxvii. 33; Mk. xv. 22; Jn. xix. 17), which would have conveyed no meaning to Greek readers, as he has
already omitted (without Greek equivalent) Gethsemane and Gabbatha. It is from the Latin \textit{(locum qui vocatur Calvariae)} that the word “Calvary” has come into all English Versions prior to RV., which has, “the place which is called The Skull.”

The ancient explanation that the place was thus called because of the skull of Adam, who was buried there by Noah after the Flood, is rejected by Jerome (on Mt. xxvii., Migne, xxvi. 209), as \textit{interpretatio mulcens aurem populi, nec tamen vera}. But he wrongly adopts the view that it was a place in which \textit{truncatur capita damnata}, a view which even Fritzsche (on Mt. xxvii. 33) has defended. No such place has ever existed in the East, least of all at Jerusalem: and such a place would be styled \textit{krauvov tivos} not \textit{krau10v}. A rocky protrusion, resembling a skull in form, is no doubt the meaning. Thus Cyril of Jerusalem speaks of it as “rising on high and showing itself to this day, and displaying even yet how because of Christ the rocks were then riven” (\textit{Catech. Lect. xiii. 39}).

For the attractive Adam legend compare Ambrose, \textit{ad loc.}: \textit{Congruebat quippe ut ibi vitam nostra primitia locarentur, ubi fuerant mortis exordia} (Migne, xv. 1852). Chrys. and Euthym. do not go beyond \textit{tradition (φασι tivnet)}, which they do not expressly accept. See Tisch. \textit{app. crit. ad Jn. xix. 17}.

\textit{ἐσταύρωσαν αὐτὸν}. It will always remain disputable whether our Lord’s feet were nailed as well as His hands. Jn. xx. 25-27 proves that His hands were nailed: but it is not \textit{certain} that Lk. xxiv. 39 has any reference to the nails. In the \textit{Gospel of Peter}, before the burial, nails are taken from the hands only. Ewald refers to the \textit{Zeitschrift für die Kunde des Morgenlandes}, i. 20, for evidence that in Palestine the mediaeval tradition limited the nailing to the hands; but this is less probable.

\textit{δὲ μὲν . . . δὲ δὲ . . .} For this late use of the relative comp. Mt. xxi. 35, xxii. 5, xxv. 15; I Cor. xi. 21; 2 Tim. ii. 20; Rom. ix. 21.

34a. As in the cases of xxii. 19b, 20 and of 43, 44, we have to consider whether this passage is part of the original text. For the evidence see the additional note at the end of the chapter. “Few verses of the Gospels bear in themselves a surer witness to the truth of what they record than this first of the Words from the Cross: but it need not therefore have belonged originally to the book in which it is now included. We cannot doubt that it comes from an extraneous source. Nevertheless, like xxii. 43f.; Mt. xvi. 2f., it has exceptional claims to be permanently retained, with the necessary safeguards, in its accustomed place” (WH. ii. App. p. 68).

\textit{ὁ δὲ ἡσυχῶς ἐλεγεν}. The \textit{δὲ} and the imperf. refer back to \textit{ἐσταύρωσαν αὐτὸν}: while they crucified Him, He in contrast to them was saying.

\textit{ἀφεῖς αὐτοῖς}. This cannot refer to the Roman soldiers, who were doing no more than their duty in executing a sentence which had been pronounced by competent authority. It was the Jews, and especially the Jewish hierarchy, who were responsible for what was being done: and but for the pressure which they had put upon him, even Pilate would have remained guiltless in this matter. What follows shows that the petition refers to the act of
crucifixion, not to their sins generally. In this way He "made intercession for the transgressors" (Is. liii. 12); where, however, LXX has διὰ τὰς ἁνομίας αὐτῶν παρεδόθη.

οὗ γὰρ οἴδασιν τί πιοῦσιν. This was true even of the rulers (Acts iii. 17), still more of the people, and most of all of Pilate. Their ignorance of what they were doing in crucifying the Christ mitigates their guilt. Comp. xii. 48, and πιοῦσιν in ver. 31: also the use of the words attributed to James the Just at his martyrdom (Hegesip. ap. Eus. H. E. ii. 23, 16).

34b. Διαμεριζόμενοι . . . κλήρον. The wording is very similar in all three, and is influenced by Ps. xxii. 19, which Jn. (xix. 24) quotes verbatim from LXX. Some texts wrongly insert the quotation Mt. xxvii. 35; but the Synoptists use the wording of the Psalm without directly quoting it. Jn. tells us that it was a quaternion of soldiers (comp. Acts xii. 4) who were carrying out the procurator's sentence, and thus came to share the clothes as their perquisite. And Jn. distinguishes, as does the Heb. of Ps. xxii. 19, although LXX and the Synoptists do not, between the upper and under garments. This dividing of the clothes is one more detail in the treatment of Christ as a criminal, and a criminal whose career was closed.

The sing. κλήρον (N B C D L, b c d Aeth.) has been altered in some texts to κλήρους (AX, a e ff, Vulg. codd. plur. Syr-Sin.) to harmonize with usage, e.g. 1 Chron. xxv. 8, xxvi. 13, 14; Neh. x. 34, xi. 1, etc.

35. θεωρῶν ἐξεμυκτήριζον. Both words are from Ps. xxii. 8: πάντες οἱ θεωροῦντες με ἐξεμυκτήριζον με. Mt. and Mk. use other words; but they add, what Lk. omits, the fulfilment of ἐκίνησαν κεφαλήν. Lk. marks clearly four kinds of ill-treatment which Jesus received. The people ἵστηκε θεωρῶν, the rulers ἐξεμυκτήριζον, the soldiers ἐνέταξαν, and the robber ἐβλάσφημε. They form a sort of climax. The θεωρῶν implies vulgar curiosity, staring as at a spectacle (comp. ver. 48) for ἐκμυκτήριζω comp. xvi. 14, where, as here, Cod. Bezae has subsanabant. For the form ἵστηκε see on ver. 10.

"Αλλοις ἔσωσεν. This sarcasm is preserved in all three narratives, but Lk. alone gives the contemptuous οὗτος and δε έκλεκτός. Comp. ix. 35. Jesus was elected from all eternity to fulfil all these things. Comp. Enoch, xl. 5.

WH. and RV. put a comma after τοῦ Θεοῦ, which belongs to δ Χριστός, not to δ έκλεκτός. TR., following A C8 Q X Γ etc., places δ before τοῦ Θεοῦ, while C*, ff, have δ έκλεκτός before τοῦ Θεοῦ. Syr-Sin. supports this combination. D has el ήδος τοῦ Θεοῦ δ τοῦ Χριστός εἶ δ έκλεκτός, si flius es dei si christus es electus; and the insertion of ήδος is found in other texts.

The όντων αὕτων after ἀρχοντες (ΑΓ Δ Π, f Vulg. Syr-Sin.) is an insertion to harmonize with Mt. and Mk.

36, 37. This mockery by the soldiers is peculiar to Lk.
Apparently it was the hierarchy who took the initiative. They
told the King of Israel to come down from the cross; the soldiers
told the King of the Jews to save Himself. Note the change of
tense (ἐξεμνουτήματον, ἐνέπαυξαν), which implies that the soldiers
were less persistent in their derision than the rulers. The reading
ἐνέπαυξαν (A C D Q etc.) has all the look of a correction.

36. διόσος προσφέροντες. Offering some of their sour wine or posca,
which the Evangelists call διόσος, perhaps in connexion with ἐγνώσαν
με διόσος (Ps. lxviii. 22). Probably they could not have reached
His lips with a vessel held in the hand; otherwise the sponge
would not have been placed on a stalk, however short (Jn. xix. 29):
but there is no reason for supposing that Christ's feet were on a
level with the heads of the spectators, as pictures sometimes
represent. Syr-Sin. omits the words.

38. ἠν δε καὶ ἐπιγραφῇ ἐπὶ αὐτῷ. For ἐπιγραφῇ Mt. has τ. ἀνίαν αὐτοῦ, Mk. ἡ ἐπιγραφῇ τῆς ανίας αὐτοῦ, Jn. τίτλον. Thus
Mk. again has the whole expression of which Mt. and Lk. have
each a part: comp. iv. 40, v. 13, xxii. 34. The name and crime
of the person executed was sometimes hung round his neck as he
got to the place of crucifixion and then fastened to the cross.
The καὶ suggests that this inscription was an additional mockery.

The wording differs in all four Gospels, and perhaps it varied in the
three languages. It was directed against the hierarchy rather than against
Jesus. All four variations contain the offensive words “The King of the
Jews” (Jn. xix. 21). But Lk. regards it as an insult to Jesus. In the
Gospel of Peter the wording is “This is the King of Israel,” just as at the
mock homage the address is “Judge righteously, O King of
Israel.”

The words γράμματων Ἠλληνικοῖς καὶ Ρωμαίοις καὶ Ἑβραίοις are almost
certainly a gloss from Jn. xix. They are omitted in ἱ. B. L, Syr-Cur.
Syr-Sin. Boh. Sah., and by the best editors. The authorities which insert
the words differ as to the order of the languages and as to the introductory
words γεγραμμένον ἐπὶ γεγραμμένη, ἐπὶ αὐτῷ ἀρχική ἐπὶ αὐτῷ γεγραμμένη. The
omission of the statement, if it were genuine, would be unintelligible. Comp.
Jos. Ant. xiv. 10. 2 ; B. J. vi. 2. 4, v. 5. 2. In the inscription itself the
order of ἱ. B. L, ἰ βασ. τῶν ‘I. oνόσ, is to be preferred. D has the same,
adding ἄστιν after ἄνοσ, rex Iudæorum hic est. Contrast Eus. H.E. v. 1. 44.

39–43. § The Two Robbers. Mt. (xxvii. 44) and Mk. (xv. 32)
merely state that those who were crucified with Him reproached
Him.

Harmonists suggest that during the first hour both robbers reviled Jesus,
and that one of them (who may have heard Jesus preach in Galilee) afterwards
changed his attitude and rebuked his comrade. So Origen, Chrysostom, Jerome,
Theophylact, Euthymius, on Mt. xxvii. But Cyril of Jerusalem, Ambrose, and
Augustine confine the reviling to one robber, who in Mt. and Mk. is spoken of
in the plur. by synecdoche. See Maldonatus on Mt. xxvii. 44: with Suarez he
adopts the latter view. Or they insist upon the difference between ὀνειδίζων, which Mt. and Mk. use of the two robbers, and ἐθλασθήμην, which Lk. uses of one of them. Both bandits reproached Jesus (perhaps for not having helped them in their revolt against existing conditions of society); but only one of them railed upon Him. It is much simpler to suppose that Mt. and Mk. regard the two λῃστακαί as a class, to which the conduct of either of them may be attributed. Christ’s conversation with the penitent robber would not be heard by many. The constant reviling (imperf.) of the other would be much more widely known. That ὀνειδίζω may mean much the same as ἐθλασθήμην is seen from vi. 22; Rom. xv. 3; 1 Pet. iv. 14. The two verbs are combined 2 Kings vii. 22, and seem to be synonymous. Mt. and Mk. would hardly have omitted the incident of the penitent robber, if they had known it; but here Lk. once more has other sources of information. The incident would have special interest for him as illustrating the doctrine that salvation is open to all.

In the Arabic Gospel of the Infancy (xxiii.) the names of the two robbers are given as Titus and Dumachus. Titus bribes Dumachus to release the Holy Family, whom they had captured. In the Greek form of the Gospel of Nicodemus (Acta Pilati x.) the penitent malefactor is Dysmas, and the other is nameless. In the Latin form (Gesta Pilati x.) the two are Dismas and Gestas. See small print note on ver. 32.

39. Εἴπε δὲ τῶν κρεμασθέντων. When used of hanging on a cross or gibbet εἶπεν ἐξολοθρεúνος is commonly added (Acts v. 30, x. 39; Gal. iii. 13; Gen. xl. 19, 22; Deut. xxii. 22, 23, etc.): but here the context is sufficient.

Οὐχὶ σὺ εἶ. This is the true reading (N B C* L and most Versions, including Syr-Sin.) rather than Εἶσ� εἶ(A Q R X etc. c f q Vulg.). "Art thou not" is a more bitter taunt than "If thou art."

D de omit the utterance, and 1 substitutes qui destruebas templum et in tribus diebus renovabis illum, salvum te Nunc et descend de cruce.

40. Οὐδὲ φοβῆσαι τὸν Θεόν. The οὐδὲ cannot be taken with either σου (De W. Nösg.) or τὸν Θεόν (Pesh.), but only with φοβῆσαι. "Dost thou not even fear," to say nothing of penitent submission (Schanz). "Dost not even thou fear" would be οὐδὲ σου φοβῆσαι; Vulg. Neque tu times, Beza Ne tu quidem times, and Godet Et toi non plus, tu ne crains donc point, are all inaccurate. The meaning is, "You and He will soon have to appear before God. Does not even fear restrain you from adding to your sins; whereas He has nothing to answer for."

41. οὖδέν ἀτοπον. A meiosis: "nothing unbecoming," still less anything criminal; Acts xxv. 5; Job xxvii. 6, xxxiv. 12, xxxv. 13; Prov. xxiv. 5; 2 Mac. xiv. 23.

D has οὐδὲν πονηρὸν ἐπράξειν and then adds a characteristic amplification: καὶ στραφεὶς πρὸς τὸν κύριον ἔστην αὐτῷ Ἐκαθόρισέ μου ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῆς εἰλικρίνειας σου. ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ ὁ Ιησοῦς ἐπένευν αὐτῷ τῷ ἐπίλησον (?) Θάρασι, σημειοῦν ἔτι ἐμοὶ ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ παραδείγματι. Respondens autem Jesus dixit qui oburgabat animo quoque, hodie mecum eris in paradiso. See on ver. 53 and vi. 5.

42. Ἰησοῦν, μηθῃθῆτε μου. "Jesus, remember me." The insertion of κύριος (A R X Γ Δ etc. and most Versions) was made
because Ἰησοῦς was mistaken for the dat. after ὄλεγέν: dicebat ad Ἰησοῦν, Domine, memento mei (Vulg.). So also Syr-Sin. Comp. ἀλλὰ μνησθῇ μου διὰ σεαυτοῦ ἄταν εὖ σοι γένηται (Gen. xl. 14).

The robber knew that he had only a few hours to live, and therefore this prayer implies a belief in a future state in which Jesus is to receive him in His Kingdom. Possibly he believed that Christ would raise him from the dead. In any case his faith in one who is crucified with him is very remarkable. Some saw Jesus raise the dead, and did not believe. The robber sees Him being put to death, and yet believes. Contemperunt Judæi mortuos suscipiunt: non contempsit latro secum in cruce pendentem (Aug. Serm. xxiii. 3). D again amplifies with στραφεῖς πρὸς τ. κύριον.

ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ σου. This is perhaps the best supported reading: comp. Mt. xvi. 28, xxv. 31. It means "when Thou comest in the glory and power of Thy Kingdom": whereas εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν σου (B, L, Vulg., Hil. Ambr.) would mean "comest into Thy Kingdom." The former refers to Christ's return in glory, the latter to His return to the Father through death. The alteration of ἐν into εἰς as more appropriate to ἐλθεῖν seems more probable than the converse. That the robber had heard what is recorded Jn. xviii. 36, 37 is possible, but not probable. He believes that Jesus is the Messiah, and he knows that the Messiah is to have a kingdom. It is all but certain that the robber was a Jew. This is antecedently probable; and to a heathen the word "paradise" would hardly have been intelligible.

There is no reason for supposing that the robber felt the need of obtaining forgiveness from the Messiah. To the Jew death is an expiation for sin. In the "Confession on a Death Bed" in the Authorized Daily Prayer Book of the United Hebrew Congregations we have, "O may my death be an atonement for all my sins, iniquities, and transgressions, of which I have been guilty against Thee" (p. 317).

43. Ἀμήν σοι λέγω. As usual, this introduces something of special importance, or beyond expectation: iv. 24, xii. 37, xviii. 17, 29, xxi. 32. B C* L have this order; others the common Ἀμήν λέγω σοι.

σῆμερον. To take this with λέγω robs it of almost all its force. When taken with what follows it is full of meaning. Jesus knows that both He and the robber will die that day, and He grants him more than he had asked or expected. Überior est gratia quam precatio. Ille enim rogabat ut memor esset sui Dominus cum venisset in regnum suum: Dominus autem ait illi: Amen, amen dico tibi: Hodie mecum eris in paradiso. Ubi Christus, ibi vita, ibi regnum (Ambr. ad loc.).

μετ' ἐμοὶ ἐστι. Not merely in My company (σὺν ἐμοί), but sharing with Me. The promise implies the continuance of consciousness after death. If the dead are unconscious, the assurance
to the robber that he will be with Christ after death would be empty of consolation.

 év τῷ παραδείσῳ. The word, said to be of Persian origin, is used in various senses in Scripture: 1. "a park or pleasure-ground" (Neh. ii. 8; Cant. iv. 13; Eccl. ii. 5); 2. "the garden of Eden" (Gen. ii. 8-10, 15, 16, iii. 1-3, 8-10, etc.); 3. "Abraham's Bosom," i.e. the resting-place of the souls of the just until the resurrection (the meaning here); 4. "a region in heaven," perhaps identical with "the third heaven" (2 Cor. xii. 4). It is doubtful whether ὁ παράδεισος τοῦ θεοῦ (Rev. ii. 7) is the same as 3 or 4, or is yet a fifth use. By His use of the word, Jesus neither confirms nor corrects Jewish beliefs on the subject. He assures the penitent that He will do far more than remember him at some unknown time in the future: this very day He will have him in His company in a place of security and bliss. See Wetst.

Epiphanius (317, 347) states that Marcion omitted this promise of Christ to the robber.


44-49. The Death. In substance, and sometimes in wording, Lk. is the same as Mt. xxvii. 45-56 and Mk. xv. 33-41. But the words recorded in ver. 46 are peculiar to this Gospel, and once more (comp. vv. 27-32) are among the most precious details in the history of the Passion.

44. ηδεν ὡσεί ὡρα ἐκτη. This is Lk.'s first note as to the time of day (xxii. 66), and he qualifies it with his favourite ὡσεί (iii. 23, ix. 14, 28, xxii. 41, 59, xxiv. 11). In days in which there were no clocks, and on a day on which the darkness and the earthquake caused so much disturbance of the ordinary signs of the hour, very large margin for inaccuracy may be covered by ὡσεί. All three Synoptists give the sixth hour, i.e. about noon, as the time when the darkness began; while Mk. (xv. 25) gives the third hour as the time of the Crucifixion. On the apparent discrepancy between these statements and Jn. xix. 14 see Ramsay in the Expositor for March 1893 and June 1896. The ηδεν is in B C* L, Boh.


These exceptional phenomena, as Godet points out, may be attributed either to a supernatural cause or to a providential coincidence. On ne peut reconnaître une relation profonde, d'un côté, entre l'homme et la nature, de l'autre, entre l'humanité et Christ. The sympathy of nature with the sufferings of the
Son of God is what seems to be indicated in all three accounts, which are here almost verbally the same; and possibly the Evangelists believed the darkness to have enveloped the whole earth.

45. τοῦ ἡλίου ἐκλείπτων. The reading is doubtful; but this is probably correct, although ἐκλείπτων may possibly be correct. “The sun failing,” or “the sun having failed,” is the meaning: and we must leave it doubtful whether Lk. supposes that there was an eclipse (which is impossible at full moon), or uses ἐκλείπτων in its originally vague sense of “fail.” The latter is probable. Neither in LXX nor elsewhere in N.T. is ἐκλείπτω used of the sun. The fact that it might mean an eclipse, and that an eclipse was known to be impossible, would tempt copyists to substitute a phrase that would be free from objection; whereas no one would want to change ἐσκοτίσθη ὁ ἡλίος. The Gospel of Peter states that “many went about with lamps, supposing it is night,” and that the darkness lasted until Jesus was taken from the cross, when the earthquake took place: “then the sun shone out, and it was found to be the ninth hour.” See Charles, Assumps. of Moses, 41, 87.

The evidence stands thus:—


Julius Africanus (c. A.D. 220) in his Chronica opposes the heathen historian Thallus for explaining this darkness as an eclipse, which at the Passover would be impossible (Routh, Rel. Sacr. ii. pp. 297, 476). In the Acta Pilati, A. xi. the Jews are represented as explaining away the darkness in a similar manner: ἐκλείψα τὸν ἡλίον γέγονεν κατὰ τὸ ἔλευθος! Ortigen (Con. Cels. ii. 33, 59; comp. 14) tells us that Phlegon (a freedman of Hadrian) recorded the earthquake and the darkness in his Chronicles. Eusebius in his Chronicle quotes the words of Phlegon, stating that in the 202nd Olympiad (4th year of the 203rd, Arm. Vers.) there was a very great eclipse; also that there was a great earthquake in Bithynia, which destroyed a great part of Nicea (Eus. Chron. p. 148, ed. Schene). It is impossible to determine whether the events recorded by Phlegon have any connexion with the phenomena which accompanied the death of Christ.

ἐσχάσθη δὲ τὸ καταπέτασμα. Between the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies (Exod. xxvi. 31; Lev. xxi. 23, xxiv. 3; Heb. vi. 19; comp. Heb. x. 20) there was a curtain called τὸ δεύτερον καταπέτασμα (Heb. ix. 3), to distinguish it from the curtain which separated the outer court from the Holy Place. The latter was more accurately, but not invariably, called τὸ κάλυμμα (Ex. xxvii. 16; Num. iii. 25). But Jewish traditions state that there were two curtains, one cubit apart, between the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies, the space between them being called τάραξις because of the perplexity which led to this arrangement (J. Light-
foot on Mt. xxvii. 51). It is not clear how many curtains are included in τὰ καταπετάσματα in 1 Mac. iv. 51. It is futile to speculate how the curtain was rent; but the fact would be well known to the priests, "a great company" of whom soon afterwards became "obedient to the faith" (Acts vi. 7). The μέσον of Lk. is more classical than the εἰς δῦο of Mt. Mk. and the Gospel of Peter.¹

46. φωνήσας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ. All three mention this loud voice, which seems to indicate that Jesus did not die of exhaustion, Comp. Stephen's cry (Acts vii. 60). But here the fondness of Lk. for cognate words is conspicuous. While he has φωνήσας φωνῇ, Mt. has κράζας φωνῇ, and Mk. ἀφεῖς φωνῇ: comp. ii. 8 and 9, vii. 29, xii. 50, xvii. 24, xxii. 15: and see on xi. 46. The µτα-ov of Lk. is more classical than the ds 8vo of Mt. Mk. and the Gospel of Peter.

All three mention this loud voice, which seems to indicate that Jesus did not die of exhaustion. Comp. Stephen's cry (Acts vii. 60). But here the fondness of Lk. for cognate words is conspicuous. While he has φωνήσας φωνῇ, Mt. has κράζας φωνῇ, and Mk. ἀφεῖς φωνῇ: comp. ii. 8 and 9, vii. 29, xii. 50, xvii. 24, xxii. 15: and see on xi. 46. The aorist does not prove that φωνήσας is not to be taken with εἶπεν, and we may suppose that what was uttered with a loud voice was the saying, "Father, into Thy hands," etc. Comp. the freq. ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν. But it is admissible to make the φωνήσας refer to "It is finished," or to some separate inarticulate cry. It is quite unnecessary to suppose that Lk. has here taken the words of Ps. xxi. 6 and attributed them to Jesus, in order to express His submissive trust in God at the moment of death. Are we to suppose that Jesus did not know Ps. xxi. 6 or that, if He did not, such a thought as this could not occur to Him?

eis χείρας σου παρατίθεμαι τ. πν. μ. The psalmist, thinking of a future death, has παραθήκομαι, which L and inferior MSS. read here. The voluntary character of Christ's death is very clearly expressed in this last utterance, as in ἀφῆκεν τὸ πνεῦμα (Mt.) and παρέδωκεν τὸ πνεῦμα (Jn.). None of the four says ἀπέθανεν, or ἐκμισθη, or ἐκτελέσθησεν. Quis ita dormit quando voluerit, sicut Jesus mortuus est quando voluit? Quis ita vestem ponit quando voluerit, sicut se carne exuit quando voluit? Quis ita cum voluerit abit quomodo cum voluit obiit? (Aug. Tr. in Joh. xix. 30). To urge that this utterance is not consistent with ver. 43 is futile, unless we

¹ Jerome says, In evangelio autem quod Hebraicus litteris scriptum est, legimus non velum templi scissum, sed superlimenare Templi miræ magnitudinis corrisse (Ad Hadyb. viii.). Elsewhere he says, superlimenare templi infinita magnitudinis fractum esse atque divisum legimus (Com. in Matt. xxvii. 51). See Nicholson, Gospel acc. to the Hebrews, p. 62.

In the Gemara it is stated that some forty years before the destruction of Jerusalem, the heavy gates of the temple, which could with difficulty be moved by many men, and which were locked at the time, flew open about midnight at the Passover. Josephus (B. J. vi. 5. 3) reports an occurrence of this kind shortly before the capture of the city. As Neander remarks (L. J. C. § 293 n.), these accounts hint at some strange occurrence as being remembered in connexion with the time of the Crucifixion.

The rending of the veil perhaps symbolized the end of the temple and its services. In Clem. Recogn. i. 41 it is otherwise interpreted as a lamentation (comp. the rending of clothes) over the destruction which threatened the place. Better Theophylact : δεικνύοντος τοῦ Κυρίου, οὐ γὰρ ητατα ἐστι δ' Ἀγία τῶν ἅγιων, ἀλλὰ τοῖς Ῥωμαίοις παραδόθητα, βάσιμα καὶ βέβηλα γενησοντα. 
believe that God is excluded from paradise (Ps. xvi. 10, cxxxix. 8; Acts ii. 27).

Strauss, Renan, and others are unwilling to decide whether all the Seven Words from the Cross are to be rejected as unhistorical. Keim will commit himself to no more than “the two probable facts, that shortly before His death Jesus uttered a cry of lamentation, and when on the point of dying a death-cry” (vi. p. 162). One asks once more, Who was capable of inventing such words? Compare the inventions in the apocryphal gospels.

47. ο ἐκατοντάρχης. The one who was there to superintend the execution, supplicio præpositus; all three speak of him as “the centurion.” Legend has invested him with the name Longinus (Acta Pilati, B. xi.), which perhaps originally meant the soldier with the λόγχη (Jn. xix. 34), and later writers make both him and the soldier with the spear die a martyr’s death. See D. of Chr. Ant. p. 1041.

τὸ γενόμενον. Not merely the manner of Christ’s death, but its extraordinary circumstances. Mt. has τὸν συστάτην καὶ τὰ γινόμενα. Mt. ὁ δὲ οὖσας ἐγείρεσεν. Mt. says that those with him joined in the exclamation, and that they “feared greatly.”

ἐδόξαζεν τὸν Θεόν. He glorified God unconsciously by this public confession, by saying (λέγων) that Jesus was no criminal, but had died in accordance with God’s will. The statement is the Evangelist’s appreciation of this heathen’s attitude towards the death of Christ. Some, however, suppose that the centurion was a proselyte, and that He first consciously praised God, and then added the remark which is recorded: comp. the use of the phrase ii. 20, v. 25, 26, vii. 16, xiii. 13, xvii. 15; xviii. 43; Acts iv. 21, xi. 18, xxi. 20. The good character of the centurions in N.T. confirms the statement of Polybius, that as a rule the best men in the army were promoted to this rank (vi. 24. 9). See small print on vii. 5. A Ç P Q X etc. have ἐδόξασε.

"Ὅρνος... δίκαιος ἤν. Mt. and Mk. have ἀληθῶς Θεῶν ἢν. Harmonists suggest that the centurion said δίκαιος before the earthquake, and Θεῶν after it. More probably the two expressions represent one and the same thought: “He was a good man, and quite right in calling God His Father” (vv. 34, 46). The centurion would not mean much by ἢν Θεῶν. See Aug. De Cons. Ev. iii. 20.

48. συντεταραγμένοι... θεωρίαν. Neither word occurs elsewhere in N.T. For θεωρία comp. Dan. v. 7; 2 Mac. v. 26, xv. 12; 3 Mac. v. 24. Note the πάντες here and ver. 49. Neither Mt. nor Mk. has it: comp. xx. 18, 45, xxi. 29, xxiii. 1. The multitude would be very great, owing to the Passover, and thousands would see Jesus hanging dead upon the cross. They had looked on the whole tragedy as a sight, spectaculum (ver. 35).

τοπτοπότες τὰ στήθη. Many of them had had no share in clamour-
ing for Christ's death; and those who had taken part had been hounded on by the priests, and now felt remorse for what they had caused. In the Gospel of Peter they are made to say, "Woe to our sins, for the judgment and the end of Jerusalem is at hand!" One Latin MS. (G) here adds dicentes, dicentes, "But (not "And," as AV. RV.), in contrast to the crowds who επίστρεφον (Lk.'s favourite word), the faithful few remained." Lk. alone mentions this fact: the Apostles perhaps are included. Comp. έμάκρυνας τούς γνωστούς μου ἀπ’ ἑμοῦ (Ps. lxxxvii. 9); οἱ ἔγινοτά μου μακροθεν ἐστησαν (xxvii. 12).

For this use of γνωστός comp. ii. 44. In the common signification of "known," γνωστός is freq. in Acts: elsewhere in N.T. rare.

γυναίκες. Mt. and Mk. name Mary Magdalen, Mary the mother of James and Joses, and Salome the mother of the sons of Zebedee.

δρώσαι ταύτα. These do not gaze as at a spectacle. The change of verb from θεωρήσαντες (ver. 48) is ignored in Vulg. Tyn. Gen. Rhem. AV., while Cov. Cran. RV. distinguish. Although feminine, because of the nearest substantive, δρώσαι belongs to γνωστό as well as to γυναίκες.

50-56. The Burial. Comp. Mt. xxvii. 57-61; Mk. xv. 42-47. In this section the whole of vv. 54-56 and portions of the rest are peculiar to Lk. Mk. tells us of Pilate's surprise that Jesus was already dead, and of his sending for the centurion to be certified of the fact. Jn. xix. 38-42 is altogether independent. All four show how, even before the Resurrection, love and reverence for the Crucified was manifested.

50. Note the characteristic καὶ ἰδοὺ (i. 20, 31, 36), ὄνοματι (see on v. 27), ὑπάρχων (see on viii. 3 and 41).

βουλευτής. A member of the Sanhedrin is meant; and ὑπάρχων is to be taken with βουλευτῆς. Another amphibolous expression: comp. vv. 35, 43.

The Latin Versions render βουλευτῆς by decurio, the technical word for a member of a municipal senate; but δ has consiliarius. Cod. Colb. after Joseph continues de cívitate arimathia cum esset decurio qui sperabat regnum déi et bonus homo non consentiens concilio et actui eorum hic accessit, etc.—a free transposition.

ἄγαθος καὶ δίκαιος. Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. transpose the epithets, which refer to his life as a whole, and not merely to his conduct at this time (i. 6, ii. 25). Mt. says that Joseph was πλούσιος, Mk. that he was εὐσεβής, Jn. that he was μαθητής τοῦ Ἰησοῦ κεκρυμμένος δὲ διὰ τὸν φόβον τῶν Ἰουδαίων.
51. οὐκ ἐν συνκατατεθεμένοις. We do not know whether he had
absented himself, or abstained from voting, or voted in opposition
to the sentence: the verb occurs Exod. xxiii. 32. Apparently he
was not present when the sentence recorded Mk. xiv. 64 was
pronounced, for that was unanimous.

τῇ βουλῇ. Excepting 1 Cor. iv. 5; Eph. i. 11; Heb. vi. 17,
βουλῇ is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. See on vii. 30. In LXX it is
very common. Syr-Sin. has “to the accusers.”

τῇ πράξει. When the word is used in a bad sense, the plur. is
more common (Acts xix. 18; Rom. viii. 13; Col. iii. 9), as in our
“practices”; but Polybius uses the sing. in this sense. Here the
method by which they compassed the death of Jesus is specially
meant.

αὐτῶν. Who these are is suggested rather than stated by the preceding

ἀπὸ Ἄρμαθαίας τολεως τ. ’l. The ἀπό probably means birth-
place or former residence (Mt. xxi. 11): his having a burial-place
at Jerusalem shows that he had settled there; and his being one of
the Sanhedrin confirms this. Arimathæa is commonly identified
with Ramah, the birthplace and home of Samuel. Its full name
was Ramathaim-zophim = “Double Height of the Watchers.” In
LXX it is called Ἄρμαθαιν (1 Sam. i. 19), and the identification of
its site “is, without exception, the most complicated and disputed
problem of sacred topography” (Stanley, Sin. & Pal. p. 224).
The addition of τολεως τῶν Ἰονδαίων points to Gentile readers.

προσεδέχετο τ. βασιλείαν τ. Θεοῦ. “He was waiting for the
Messianic Kingdom” : that he recognized Jesus as the Messiah is
not implied. Comp. ii. 25, 38; Acts xxiii. 21, xxiv. 15. The
verb is not found in Mt. or Jn., and only once in Mk., but occurs
seven times in Lk. and Acts.

52. The wording of all three is very similar, and also of the
Gospel of Peter, which represents Joseph as coming before Jesus
was dead, and Pilate as sending to ask Herod for the body, who
replies, “Brother Pilate, even if some one had not asked for Him,
we were intending to bury Him . . . before the first day of the
unleavened bread.” Comp. the addition made in Cod. Colb.

53. ἑντύλιξεν αὐτὸ σινδόνι. The verb occurs only here, Mt.
xxvii. 59, and Jn. xx. 7. All three mention the σινδόνι, which was
cut into strips (ὁθόνια or κεφάλα) for the burial. Mk. (xv. 46) tells
us that it had been bought by Joseph for the purpose, and there-
fore on that day; which is another sign that the feast had not
begun the previous evening. The Gospel of Peter says that Joseph
washed the body before wrapping it in linen.

ἐν μνήματι λαξευτῷ. For μνήμα see on xxiv. 1: the adjective is not
classical; once in LXX (Deut. iv. 49) and four times in Aquila (Num.
542 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [XXIII. 53, 54.

xxi. 20, xxiii. 14; Deut. xxxiv. 1, 4; Josh. xiii. 20). Comp. λαξεύω (Exod. xxxiv. 1, 4; Num. xxi. 19, xxii. 14; Deut. iii. 27, x. 1, 3, etc.). Verb and adjective seem to belong to the important class of words which became current through having been needed to express Jewish ideas and customs. Kennedy, Sources of N. T. Grk. p. 116.

οὐκ ἦν οὐδεὶς οὕτω. Accumulation of negatives: comp. Heb. xiii. 5, and see Win. iv. 9, b, p. 626; Burton, § 489. Mt. has καθώσι. The fact is mentioned as a mark of special honour in contrast to the shameful death: comp. xix. 30.

Cod. Bezae has here one of its characteristic interpolations. After κελευθορίτων it adds καὶ διότι αὐτῶν ἐπέθηκε τῷ μισθίῳ λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ ἐν μίσθῳ ἐλεοσύνης εὐλογοῦν: et posito eo imposuit in monumento lapidem quem vix viginti movebant. Scrivener (Cod. Bezae, p. iii) remarks that this “strange addition” is “conceived somewhat in the Homeric spirit.” Comp. Od. ix. 241. Prof. Rendel Harris (Cod. Bezae, ch. vii.) finds a hexameter in the Latin: *imposuit ... lapidem quem vix viginti movebant.* But against this (as an acute critic in the Guardian of May 25, 1892, p. 787, points out) are to be urged (1) the intrusive *in monumento,* (2) the shortening of the final syllable in *viginti,* which is improbable so early as the second century, (3) the fact that the same gloss, rather differently worded, is found not only in Cod. Colb., but in the Sahidic Version. Thus in one we have, *posuerunt lapidem quem vix viginti voluerant* (c); in the other, *posuit lapidem in porta sepulcri quem viginti homines volvere possent.* To assume a Greek gloss, which was differently translated in two Latin and one Egyptian text, is a simpler hypothesis than a Latin gloss translated into Greek and Egyptian, and then from the Greek into a different Latin. Moreover, the fact that the tone of the gloss is Homeric rather than Virgilian points to a Greek origin. That there were Homerizers and Virgilianizers at this early date may be inferred from Tertull. De Praescr. Hebr. xxxix.

54. παρασκευής. The word may mean either the eve of the sabbath or the eve of the Passover: and on this occasion the sabbath probably coincided with Nisan 15, the first day of the Passover. This first day ranked as a sabbath (Exod. xii. 16; Lev. xxiii. 7), and therefore was doubly holy when it coincided with an ordinary sabbath. If the Passover had begun the previous evening, would Lk. and Mk. (xv. 42) speak of its first day as the eve of an ordinary sabbath? Just as we should hardly speak of “the first Sunday in April,” if that Sunday was Easter Day. But, although the day was a παρασκευή to both sabbath and Passover, it is the former that is probably meant. Comp. Mk. xv. 42. Caspari (§ 157) would take it the other way.

For παρασκευής (NBC* L 13 346, cœns puræ a b c l paraseunes Vulg.) A C² P X etc., f has παρασκευήν, Syr-Cur. *feria sexta.* For the whole verse D substitutes ἦν δὲ ἡ ἡμέρα προσαββάτου, erat autem dies antesabbatum.

σάββατον ἐπέφωνεν. An inaccurate expression, because the sabbath began, not at dawn, but at sunset. But “it was dawning” easily comes to mean “it was beginning,” and is transferred to things which cannot “dawn.” In the *Gospel of Peter,* when Pilate before the Crucifixion asks Herod for the body of Jesus, Herod
replies that in any case the body would have been buried that day, ἐπεὶ καὶ σάββατον ἐπιφάνειας, γεγραπται γὰρ ἐν τῷ νόμῳ, ἥλιον μὴ δὲναι ἐπὶ περιονεμένῳ. The verb has nothing to do with lighting lamps at the beginning of the sabbath (J. Lightfoot, Westst.), nor is the rising of the stars or the glow of sunset meant (Hahn).

55. Κατακολουθήσασαν. In N.T. here and Acts xvi. 17 only: in LXX Jer. xvii. 16; 1 Es. vii. 1; Judith xi. 6; Dan. ix. 10; 1 Mac. vi. 23. Their following from the Crucifixion (ver. 49) to Joseph’s garden is meant, and the κατα- does not mean “down into the grave,” but “after Joseph and his assistants.” Syr-Sin. and Syr-Cur. have “And the women, who came with Him from Galilee, went to the sepulchre in their footsteps, and saw the body when they [had] brought it in there.” The fact of the women beholding the tomb in which the body was laid is in all three Synoptic Gospels. It is part of the evidence for the Resurrection.

For ἡγαλίκες (B L PX, Boh. Sah.) D 29, a b e f q r have δῶ χ ἡγαλίκες, while TR. follows certain cursives in reading καλ ἡγαλίκες. Ν Α Τ Γ etc. have ἡγαλίκες without αὐ or δῶ or καλ, and this Tisch. adopts.

ὁ ἑτέθη. We might have expected πῶς: comp. vi. 4, viii. 47, xxiv. 35.

56. ἀφόματα. In N.T. only of these spices; freq. in LXX. For μὺρα comp. vii. 37. Mk. says that when the sabbath was over, i.e. on Saturday evening, the women bought ἀφόματα that they might anoint Him, which shows that ἀφόματα are not to be confined to “sweet-smelling herbs” or to “dry” spices. The chapter ought to end at μὺρα, for τοῦ μὲν σάββατον plainly balances τῆς δὲ μιᾶς τῶν σαββατων, and no more than a comma is needed after ἐντολὴν. D omits κατὰ τῆν ἐντολὴν.

ἡσύχασαν. The notice of this resting on the sabbath would be strange if they had been working on so sabbatical a day as Nisan 15; for it could not be urged that the preparation of spices and ointments was in any sense necessary. When a sabbath immediately preceded Nisan 15, it was lawful to work on the sabbath at preparations for the feast. But can we suppose that, if in this year Nisan 15 immediately preceded the sabbath, pious women would have worked merely to gratify affectionate feeling? Or, having thought themselves justified in working for this purpose on Nisan 15, that they would scrupulously have avoided continuing such work on the sabbath? If Nisan 15 coincided with the sabbath, all is explained: up to sunset on Friday it was lawful to work, and after sunset on Saturday it was lawful to work again. Of the interval Godet remarks, On peut dire que ce sabbat était le dernier de l’ancienne alliance qui prenait fin avec la mort du Christ. Il fut scrupuleusement respecté par tous ceux qui, sans le savoir, allaient inaugurer la nouvelle.
ADDITIONAL NOTE ON READINGS IN CHAPTERS XXII. AND XXIII.

(1) xxii. 43, 44. "ὤφθη δὲ ... ἐκεῖ τῇ γυν.

Evidence for the passage:—
N* D F G H K L M Q X A etc. and nearly all cursive. A has the Ammonian section of the passage marked in the margin, although it omits the passage in the text.


Evidence against the passage:—
N* A B R T 124: 13 has ὀφθη δὴ prima manu, the rest secunda manu. Cc 69 and all known Evangelistaria have the passage inserted after Mt. xxvi. 39. E S V Π Δ II and others, including nine cursive, have the passage marked with asterisks or obeli. Et in Graecis et in Latinis cod. complur. known to Hilary it was wanting, and it was found only in quibusdam exemplaribus tam Graecis quam Latinis known to Jerome.

f, most MSS. of Boh. including the best, some MSS. of Sah. and of Arm. (see Sanday, App. ad N.T. pp. 188, 191), Syr-Sin., Syr-Harcl. marg.

Cyr-Alex. omits in his Homilies on Lk. Ambr. likewise. The silence of Clem-Alex. Orig. Cyr-Hier. Ath. and Greg-Nys. can hardly be accidental in all cases, or even in most.

Excision for doctrinal reasons will not explain the omission. "There is no tangible evidence for the excision of a substantial portion of narrative for doctrinal reasons at any period of textual history" (WH. ii. App. p. 66).

Nor does "Lectionary practice" seem to be an adequate cause for such widespread omission. It is suggested that, because the passage was read after Mt. xxvi. 39 in the Lection for Holy Thursday, and omitted after Lk. xxii. 42 in the Lection for Tuesday after Sexagesima, therefore some MSS. came to omit in Lk. or both Gospels.

It will be observed that the early non-patristic evidence in favour of the words is N* D, Latt. Syrr. "a frequent Western combination."

But, if we regard the passage as probably a Western insertion in the text of Lk., we need have no hesitation whatever in retaining it as a genuine portion of historical tradition. It is true, whoever wrote it.

(2) xxii. 68. After ὄδ μὴ ἀποκριθῆτε the words μοι ἣ ἀπολύσητε.

Evidence for the words:—
A D X Τ Δ Α Π II etc., Latt. Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin.

Evidence against the words:—
N* B L T, Boh. one MS. of Vulg. (J), Cyr-Alex. Ambr.

A few authorities have μοι without ἣ ἀπολύσητε.

With Tisch. WH. RV. we may safely omit. Treg. brackets, Alf. the same, suggesting homoeoteleuton as the cause of omission.

(3) xxiii. 34 a. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς ... ποιοῦντι.

Evidence for the passage:—
N* Α C D3 Λ Q X Τ Δ Α Π II etc.

Evidence against the passage:—

Evidence against the passage:—

κατ' Β Δ* 38 43 435. E has it marked with an asterisk.

This is confirmed by the text prefixed to the Syriac Homily on Lk. xxiii. 32–43 (p. 718, ed. Payne Smith). This, however, exists in only one MS., which ends before ver. 34 is properly reached.

The omission in such witnesses would be very difficult to explain, if the passage had been part of the original text of Lk. But, even more strongly than in the case xxii. 43, 44, internal evidence warrants us in retaining the passage in its traditional place as a genuine portion of the evangelic narrative. That point being quite certain, it matters comparatively little whether we owe this precious fragment to Lk. or not.

ADDITIONAL NOTE ON xxiii. 45.

Dr. E. A. Abbott conjectures that both here and xxii. 51 we have instances of substitution through misunderstanding. In the Classical Review of Dec. 1893, p. 443, he writes: “Though these words (τοῦ ἡλίου ἐκλείπουσι) might mean ‘the sun failing (to give its light),’ yet the natural meaning is ‘the sun being eclipsed.’ Now every one knew that an eclipse could not happen except at new moon, and every Jew knew that Passover was at full moon.” Why, then, he goes on to ask, does Lk. give an explanation of the darkness, which neither Mt. nor Mk. give, and which involves a portentous miracle? To the imaginary reply, “Because Lk. wished to make it clear that it was a miracle and not a natural obscuration of the sun; for he is not afraid of being the only Evangelist to insert a miracle, as is shown by his account of the healing of Malchus’ ear,” Dr. Abbott rejoins that “the latter miracle is substituted rather than inserted. It is substituted for a rebuke to Peter, ‘restore thy sword to its place.’”

Let us turn to the parallel passage in Mt. (xxvii. 46–49) and Mk. (xv. 34–36). Here we find no mention of an eclipse, but of a saying of Jesus which was interpreted by the bystanders to mean that “Elias” had “abandoned” (ἐγκαταλείπων) Jesus. This Lk. omits altogether. But the genitive case of “Elias” is the same as that of the “sun,” viz. ἡλίου, or in MSS. ἡλιοῦ, and ἐκλείπει, although not often used of persons failing others in an emergency, is so used occasionally. Thus ἡλιοῦ ἐκλείπων might mean either “the sun being eclipsed,” or “Elias failing, or forsaking.”

But how could ἐγκαταλείπων be changed into ἐκλείπει;? Curtailments of long compounds are not infrequent in MSS. of the N.T., and specially with ἐκλείπει: comp. Mk. xiv. 40; Lk. vi. 36; Mt. xiii. 40; Jas. ii. 13, iii. 14. . . . If Lk., or others before him, concluded that ἡλιοῦ must mean the sun, they would naturally infer that ἐγκαταλείπων must be an error for ἐκλείπει.

It seems probable that Lk., finding obscure and divergent traditions about some utterance of Jesus, . . . considered that he was restoring the original meaning, and a meaning worthy of the subject, in retaining two or three words of the current tradition, but placing them in such a context as to show that it was the sun, and not Elias, that “failed.”
It is well known that the difficulty of harmonizing the different accounts of the Resurrection given by the Evangelists and by S. Paul is great; and this difficulty is perhaps at a maximum when the narrative of Lk. is compared with the others. Here, as so often in the Gospels, we have not sufficient knowledge to piece together the different fragments which have come down to us, and consequently the evidence for important facts is not what we might antecedently have expected or desired. But our expectations and wishes are not adequate criteria, and it is no paradox to say that the difficulty of harmonizing the various narratives is in itself a security for their general truthfulness. Dishonest witnesses would have made the evidence more harmonious. As it is, each witness fearlessly tells his own story according to the knowledge which he possesses, and is not careful as to whether it agrees with what may have been told elsewhere. Nevertheless there is agreement in the following important particulars:

1. The Resurrection itself is not described. Like all beginnings, whether in nature or in history, it is hidden from view. (Contrast the attempt at description in the Gospel of Peter.)

2. The manifestations, while confined to disciples, were made to disciples who were wholly unexpectant of a Resurrection. The theory that they were visions or illusions, arising from intense and unreasoning expectation, is contrary to all the evidence that has come down to us. On the contrary,

3. They were received with doubt and hesitation at first, and mere reports on the subject were rejected.

4. The evidence begins with the visit of women to the tomb very early on the first day of the week, and the first sign was the removal of the stone from the door of the tomb.

5. Angels were seen before the Lord was seen.

6. He was seen on various occasions by various kinds of witnesses, both male and female, both individuals and companies, both sceptical and trusting.

7. The result was a conviction, which nothing ever shook, that "the Lord had risen indeed" and been present with them (see Wsctt. on Jn. xx. 1; he gives a tentative arrangement of the events of the first Easter Day, which at least shows that there is no serious discrepancy between the four narratives).

Sadler asserts, and Godet endeavours to show, that each narrative is determined by the purpose which each Evangelist had in view in writing; but in most cases the distinctions are not very convincing. Nearly the whole of Lk.'s narrative is peculiar to him, the partial exceptions being vv. 1-6 and 9, 10. The nucleus of the whole is the account of the walk to Emmaus (vv. 13-43); and the first part of the chapter is an introduction to this graphic account, with special reference to vv. 22, 23. See Loofs, Die Aufstehungsberichte.

An excellent opportunity of comparing six forms of the Old Latin (a b c d e f) with one another and with the Vulgate is given in Scrivenor's edition of Codex Bezae in connexion with a large portion of this chapter. He prints the first twenty-four verses of this chapter as given in these authorities in seven parallel columns (pp. xxxvi, xxxvii). This passage is "rich in peculiar and idiomatic expressions, and little liable to be corrupted from the Synoptic Gospels." The result, he thinks, is to show that the Latin of Codex Bezae was made "immediately from its Greek text," which it generally servilely follows; but that occasionally the translator was led away by his recollection of the Old Latin, "sometimes for whole verses together," even when the Old Latin differed from the Greek text which he was translating. Adhuc sub judice his est.

1-11. The Visit of the Women to the Tomb and the Vision of Angels. Comp. Mt. xxviii. 1-10; Mk. xvi. 1-8; Jn. xx. 1-10. Lk. and Jn. mention two Angels; Mt. and Mk. mention only one:
The Passion and Resurrection

but we know too little about the manner of Angel appearances to be sure that Lk. and Jn. mention the same two Angels, or that Mt. and Mk. mention the same one. In the other two cases of similar difference (the Gerasene demoniacs and the blind men at Jericho) it is Mt. who mentions two, while Lk. gives only one. In all three cases Mk. mentions only one. Where, out of two or more, only one is spokesman, he is necessarily remembered. The other or others may easily be ignored or forgotten. It is an exaggeration to call such differences absolute discrepancies. Lk. records only those appearances of the risen Lord which took place in Judæa.

1. τῇ δὲ μεν τῶν σαββάτων. "But on the first day of the week." The δὲ corresponds to the previous μὲν: they rested on the sabbath, but the next day they did not. Jn. has the same expression (xx. 1), which literally means "but on day one of the week," una autem sabbati (Vulg.). Cov. here translates "upon one of the Sabbaths," and in Jn. "upon one day of the Sabbath." But here with Cran. he rightly has "But" (RV.) and not "And" (Rhem.) or "Now" (AV.).

Comp. Acts xx. 7; Mt. xxviii. 1; Mk. xvi. 2; Jn. xx. 19; Rev. ix. 12. This use of the cardinal for the ordinal is Hebraistic: Gen. i. 5; Esr. iii. 6; Ps. xxiii. 11. In class. Grk. it occurs only in combination with an ordinal: τῷ ἑνι καὶ τριήμερῳ (Hdt. v. 89, 2).

δρομον βαδέως. It is doubtful whether βαδέως is the Attic form of the gen. of βαδος (De W. Nösg. Alfr.) or an adv. (Mey. Weiss). The former is probable; for δρομον βαδος occurs (Aristoph. Vesp. 216; Plat. Crit. 43 A; see esp. Prot. 310 A; Philo, De Vita Mosis, i. 32), and 2 Cor. xi. 23 does not favour the latter. For δρομον comp. [Jn.] viii. 2; Jer. xxv. 4, xxvi. 5.

tὸ μνημα. With the exception of Mk. v. 3, 5, xv. 46; Rev. xi. 9, the word is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (viii. 27, xxiii. 53; Acts ii. 29, vii. 16). The common word is μνημεῖον (xi. 44, 47, xxiii. 55, xxiv. 2, 9, 12, 22, 24, etc.); but Mt. sometimes has τάφος (xxiii. 27, 29, xxvii. 61, 64, 66, xxviii. 1; comp. Rom. iii. 13). RV. has "tomb" for μνημα and μνημεῖον, and "sepulchre" for τάφος.

A C D X Τ etc. δὲ ἐν Syr. (Cur. Sin. Pesh. Harcl. Hier.) Sah. Arm. Aeth. (most MSS.) add καὶ τεις σὺν αὐτοῖς, and D c d Sah. add from Mk. xvi. 3 ἄγετεν δὲ ἐν αὐτοῖς, τή ἁμα ἀποκύλιει τὸν λίθον; N B C L 33 124 a b c e f Vulg. Boh. Aeth. (some MSS.) omit. The insertion is a gloss from ver. 10 and Mk. xvi. 1, 3.

2. εἰρήν τὸν λίθου. Lk. has not yet mentioned it, but he speaks of it as well known or as usual. All three use ἀποκύλιον of the stone, while Jn. has ἐρημένον ἐκ: the verb occurs nowhere else in N.T. Comp. Gen. xxix. 3, 8, 10; Judith xiii. 9.

3. τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ. The combination occurs nowhere else in the Gospels, although possibly right [Mk.] xvi. 19; but it is frequent in Acts (i. 21, iv. 33, viii. 16, etc.) and Epistles. Here the words are possibly a very early insertion. See note on Western Noninterpolations at the end of this chapter.

4. καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ ἀπορείσθαι αὐτὰς περὶ τούτου, καὶ ἰδού. Note
the strongly Hebraistic construction, so common in Lk., and see additional note, p. 45.

The Latin Versions differ greatly: dum aperiarentur (d), hasiarent (f), stuperent (a,c), mente contristarentur (ff), mente consternati essent (Vulg.). The last is wrong in verb and tense. *Aperiari* occurs in Vulg. 2 Cor. iv. 8; Is. lix. 16; Ecclus. xviii. 6, and in Irenæus, ii. 7, 1, 2.

*ánndres dúo.* The *plur.* agrees with *dýgélów* in ver. 23. For *áníρ* of an Angel in human form comp. Acts i. 10, x. 30; for *épéstēsan* see on ii. 9; and for *ésthēs* see on xxiii. 11. Only here and xvii. 24 in N.T. does *dútráptuw* occur.

Instead of *ésthēs* *dútráptuw* (*K B D* Latt. Orig. Eus.) TR. has *ésthēs-swn* *dútráptowat* with A C D Γ Δ etc.; Sah. Boh. Arm. L has *ésthēs-swn* λευκαί, Syr-Sin. “their garments were dazzling.” *ésthēs* occurs Acts i. 10 only. See Deissmann, *Neue Bibelstudien*, p. 90.

The contrast between the *Gospel of Peter* and the Canonical Gospels is still more marked in the account of the Resurrection than in that of the Passion. There the watchers see δύο ἀνδρας come down from heaven; and ἀμφότεροι οἱ νεανίσκοι enter the tomb. But the watchers see τρεῖς ἀνδρας come out of the tomb. Then ἀνθρωπός τις comes down from heaven and enters the tomb; and the women find τινα νεανίσκονν sitting in the tomb, and he addresses them.

5. ἐμφόβων δὲ γενομένων. In N.T. the use of ἐμφόβως (always with γίνομαι) is almost confined to Lk. (ver. 27; Acts x. 4, xxiv. 25; Rev. xi. 13): in LXX (without γίνομαι) Ecclus. xix. 24. The detail *κλωνουσόν τά πρόσωπα εἰς τ. γίν* is peculiar to Lk Note *πρόσ* αὐτὰ: Mt. and Mk. have the dat.

Τί ζητεῖτε τόν Ἰωάντα μετὰ τῶν νεκρῶν; A rebuke: comp. ii. 49. There is possibly a reference to Is. viii. 19, τί ἐκζητοῦσιν περὶ τῶν Ἰωάντων τοὺς νεκροὺς; They ought to have remembered His assurance that on the third day He would rise again.

6. οὐκ ἔστιν δὲ, ἀλλὰ ἡγέρθη. Like the doubtful words in ver. 3, this sentence is wanting in D and important Latin authorities. A reason for the omission is hard to find. A very early insertion from Mk. xvi. 6—Mt. xxviii. 6 may be suspected: see note at the end of this chapter.

μνήσθητε. Angels “may be employed in endless ways of which we can form no idea, but we have Scripture warrant for supposing that they call things to remembrance, and it is not going much farther to suppose that they put thoughts into people’s minds” (Latham, *A Service of Angels*, p. 162).

ὡς ἐλάλησεν ὁμιν. The ὡς is not exactly ὅτι, but suggests the wording of the statement: in both ix. 22 and xviii. 32, 33 the important “on the third day” is predicted. The whole of this to the end of ver. 8 is peculiar to Lk. On the other hand Lk, who
records no appearances in Galilee, omits προέχει ύμᾶς εἰς τὴν ταλαίπωρα, which refers back to Mk. xiv. 28; Mt. xxvi. 32.

7. δεῖ. See on iv. 43 and ix. 22.

9. ὑποστήρισαν. Lk.’s favourite word: Mt. has ἀπέλθοσαν and Mk. ἐξελθοσαν. Lk. omits the speed with which they returned in mingled fear and joy.

ἀπεγγέλλαν. Mt. says the same (xxviii. 8), but Mk. says οὐδὲν οἴδαν ἔπαν, ἐφοβοῦσα γάρ. If we had the conclusion of Mk.’s Gospel we should know how this apparent contradiction is to be explained. Obviously they did not remain silent about it for the rest of their lives, but only so long as fear kept them silent. When the fear passed away, they told their tale to the disciples (not merely to the Apostles) in accordance with the angelic charge (Mt. xxviii. 7). But it is perhaps simpler to suppose that Mt. and Lk. here give, as Mt. and Mk. do in the case of the crucified robbers, the tradition which was generally current, and which attributed to all the women what was true of only one, viz. Mary Magdalen. She on her return told the Apostles, while the others kept silence through fear. A little later no doubt all told to all. Note the characteristic πάντα and πᾶσιν. Mt. has neither, and he sums up “the Eleven and all the rest” in τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτῶν.

10. The other Evangelists give the names of the women at the beginning of the narrative. All four place Mary Magdalen first, and Jn. mentions no one else; but οὐκ οἴδαμεν (xx. 2) implies that others were with her. “Mary the [mother] of James” or “the other Mary” is mentioned by all three; Joana by Lk. alone, and Salome by Mk. alone. For Joana see on viii. 3: it is from her that Mk. may have got both these details, and also what he relates xxiii. 8-12. Here only does the order Ἡ Μαγδ. Μαρία occur: elsewhere Μαρία Ἠ Μαγδ. (so D here).

All English Versions previous to RV. follow a false reading, and make one sentence of this verse. There are two sentences. “Now they were Mary Magdalen, and Joana, and Mary the mother of James”: these were the women specially referred to in ver. 9. “Also the other women with them told these things unto the Apostles.” The evidence against the second αἱ (before Ἰησοῦν) is overwhelming (Κ* ΑΒΔΕΦΓΗ etc. ὁ ἐν ὑποστήρισι), and the reason for its insertion is obvious.

Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. interpret ἡ Ἰακώβου “the daughter of James.” There is little doubt that “mother” is meant, and that James is not the Lord’s brother, the first president of the Church of Jerusalem. She is called “the mother of James and Joses” (Mk. xv. 40), and “the mother of Joses” (Mk. xv. 47); and she is probably the same as “Mary the [wife] of Clopas” (Jn. xix. 25). See J. B. Mayor, Ep. of St. James, Macmillan, 1892, p. xv, perhaps the best discussion of the vexed question about the brethren of the Lord.

11. ἐνώπιον αὐτῶν. “In their sight,” in the judgment of the Apostles and others; ἀπέδοτος (c), in conspectu eorum (d), coram illis (f), apostolis (l). For ἐνώπιον see small print on i. 15, and for ὡς on i. 56.
λύρος. "Nonsense"; the word "is applied in medical language to the wild talk of the sick in delirium" (Hobart): comp. 4 Mac. v. 11: here only in N.T. derisus (d), delira (a), deliramentum (f Vulg.). The incredulity with which mere reports were received is noted [Mk.] xvi. 11. Even S. John did not infer from the disappearance of the body that He had risen until he had examined the tomb himself (Jn. xx. 8). Apparently no one had understood Christ's predictions of His rising again. They were interpreted of His return in glory, either with a new body or as an incorporeal being. No Apostle had grasped the fact that He would be killed, buried, and raised again to life. They had seen Him dead, and women's talk about Angels who said that He was alive did not cancel that.

τὰ ρήματα ταῦτα (κ B D L, a b c e l q Vulg. Sah. Boh. Syr-Cur. Aeth.) is certainly to be preferred to τὰ ρήματα αὐτῶν (A I X Γ Α etc. f Arm.). Syr-Sin. has "They appeared in their eyes as if they had spoken these words from their wonder." For neut. plur. with plur. verb comp. Jn. xix. 31.

12. § The Visit of Peter to the Tomb.

The whole of this verse is of unknown and doubtful authority. It is absent from important Western documents, and has the look of an insertion. Its source is probably Jn. xx. 3-10, part of what is there said of "the other disciple" (ver. 5) being here transferred to S. Peter. The only words which are not found in Jn. xx. 3-10 are ἀναστάς, μόνα, θαυμάζων τὸ γεγονός: but of these ἀναστάς (not in Jn. and rare in Mt.) and τὸ γεγονός (not in Mt. or Jn. and once in Mk.) are specially frequent in Lk. And although Lk. more often writes θαυμάζων ἐπὶ τῷ, yet he sometimes has θαυμάζειν τι (vii. 9; Acts vii. 31). Perhaps the hypothesis of an insertion made in a second edition is here admissible. See note on Western Noninterpolations at the end of this chapter.

The verse has probably no connexion with what precedes. Certainly it does not give the reason why the Apostles disbelieved, viz. because Peter had already been to the tomb and seen no Angels but only grave-cloths. That would require θάρσο for δὲ and the pluperf. The δὲ would rather mark a contrast; although they disbelieved, yet Peter went to the grave to satisfy himself. Didon supposes two visits of Peter to the tomb, one with John when Mary Magdalen reported the tomb empty, and a second when she reported that she had seen Angels and the Lord Himself (J. C. ch. xii. p. 797). More probably this verse (whatever its source) is an imperfect account of the visit of Peter with John.

τὰ θάνατα μόνα. "The grave-cloths without the body."

This is the reading of Ν b B, Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Boh. Sah., omitting κέμενα, while Ν A K II omit μόνα. L, cf Arm. have μόνα κέμενα, I X Γ Δ etc. κέμενα μόνα. Cod. Am. has postita only, but many MSS. of Vulg. have sola postita.

Τρόσι αὐτῶν. So B L, the rest reading τρόσι θαυμῶν. The words are amphibolous (comp. xxiii. 35, 43, 50), and may be taken either with ἀγηλέου, "he went away to his home," i.e. his lodging in the city (Syr-Sin. RV. Hahn), or with θαυμάζων, "wondering with himself" (Vulg. Luth. AV. RV.).

13-32. The Manifestation to the Two Disciples at Emmaus.
This narrative forms a counterpart to that of the manifestation to Mary Magdalen in Jn. There is a condensed allusion to the incident in the appendix to Mk. (xvi. 12, 13); but the narrative is peculiar to Lk., and is among the most beautiful of the treasures which he alone has preserved for us. He almost certainly obtained his information from one of the two disciples, and probably in writing. The account has all the effect of personal experience. If this is accepted, then Cleopas may be regarded as the narrator; for Lk. would know and be likely to name the person from whom he received the account.

The fact that Lk. was almost certainly a Gentile (Col. iv. 10-14), and that in the preface to his Gospel he indicates that he was not an eye-witness, renders the conjecture of Theophylact, that Lk. was the unnamed disciple who went with Cleopas to Emmaus, very improbable. This disciple was evidently a Jew (ver. 20, 27, 32) or a proselyte. Lk. may have been a proselyte before he was a Christian, and his preface may mean no more than that he was not one of those "which from the beginning were eye-witnesses": but nothing is gained by such conjectures. In the Acts he uses the first person plural, when he himself was present. Why does he not do the same here, if he was one of the two? It would have added greatly to "the certainty" which he wished to impart to Theophilus, if he had assured him that he himself had talked and eaten with Jesus on the very day of His Resurrection. But the hypothesis still finds supporters, e.g. Lange, Godet, Bp. Alexander. Origen twice gives Simon as the name of the unnamed disciple (Cels. ii. 62, 68). This may be an erroneous interpretation of ὁ Ἰωάννης Εὐσταθιοῦ (ver. 34). Epiphanius conjectures Nathanael, which could hardly be right, if Nathanael is Bartholomew (ver. 33). But all such conjectures are worthless. Probably Lk. himself did not know who the other was.

18. Καὶ Ἰδοῦ. As often, introduces something new and unexpected: i. 20, 31, 36, ii. 25, v. 12, 18, vii. 12, etc. δύο ἔστιν αὐτῶν. Not of the Apostles (ver. 10), as is shown by ver. 33, but of the disciples generally. A direct reference to τὰυτὰ τοὺς λύστρα (ver. 9) is not manifest. For ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ see small print on x. 7, and contrast AV. and RV.

dēkōta. The reading διὰ τοῦτο εἰκοσαπήντα (Ν K R¹ N² II and some other Gk. Lat. and Syr. authorities) is "an Alexandrian geographical correction, though not of the type of Γερμανίαν or Βηθαβάφα; evidently arising from identification of this Emmaus with the better known Emmaus which was later called Nicopolis. The identification is distinctly laid down by Eus. Hier. Soz., though they do not refer to the distance" (WH. ii. App. p. 72). Syr-Sin. has "threescore."

Ἐμμαυτός. The fortified town afterwards called Nicopolis cannot be meant, although all Christian writers from Eusebius to the twelfth century assume that it is meant. It is 176 stadia, or 20 English miles, from Jerusalem; and it is absurd to suppose that these two walked about 20 miles out, took their evening meal, walked 20 miles back, and arrived in time to find the disciples still gathered together and conversing (ver. 33). Yet Robinson contends for it (Res. in Pal. iii. pp. 147-151). El Kubeibeh, which is
63 stadia from Jerusalem, on the road to Lydda, is probably the place. It is about 7 miles N.W. of Jerusalem, in the beautiful Wady Beit Chanina, and the tradition in its favour dates from the crusades. Of other conjectures, Kulonieh and Beit Mizzeh are too near (36 to 40 stades), and Khamasa is not near enough (72 stades). But Caspari is very confident that Kulonieh is right (p. 242). See D.B. and Schaff's Herzog, art. "Emmaus"; also Didon, J. C. App. U.

14. καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐμίλευον. If αὑτὸς has any special force, it is "and they communed"—as well as those mentioned in ver. 10. Among the disciples this was the topic of conversation. The verb is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (ver. 15; Acts xx. 11, xxiv. 26). The meaning of "converse, talk with" is classical, and survives in mod. Gk.

Vulg. leads the way in translating διμλεῖν differently in ver. 14 (loquebantur, “talked” AV.) and ver. 15 (fabularentur, “communed” AV.). See footnote on ii. 9.

15. καὶ αὐτῶν ἵπποις. B omits καὶ, which makes no difference to the sense, but is the common constr. after ἐγέρθην: see note at the end of ch. i. "It came to pass . . . that Jesus Himself," about whom they were talking.

ἐγγίσας. He overtook them, for they assume that He comes from Jerusalem (ver. 18), from which they are walking.

16. ἐκπατοῦντο. There is no need to assume a special act of will on the part of Christ, "who would not be seen by them till the time when He saw fit." They were preoccupied and had no expectation of meeting Him, and there is good reason for believing that the risen Saviour had a glorified body which was not at once recognized. Comp. εἰν ἐγέρθης μορφῆ in the appendix to Mk. (xvi. 12), the terror of the disciples (ver. 37), the mistake of Mary Magdalen (Jn. xx. 14, 15), and the ignorance of the Apostles on the lake (Jn. xxi. 4). But it is quite possible that the Evangelist understands the non-recognition of Jesus here and the recognition of Him afterwards (ver. 31) to be the results of Divine volition. For κρατεῖσθαι comp. Acts ii. 24. See on xviii. 34.

tοῦ μῆ. This may mean either "in order that they might not" or "so that they did not." If the latter is adopted, the negative may be regarded as pleonastic. "Were holden from knowing" easily passes into "were holden so that they did not know," or "were holden that they might not know." Comp. ἔκτισαν τοῦ μῆθην (Acts xiv. 18); κωλύσαν τοῦ μῆ βαπτισθῆναι (Acts x. 47); οὐχ ἑπτευεδύμην τοῦ μῆ άναγγελθαί (Acts xx. 27): see also Gen. xvi. 2; Ps. xxxiv. 14, etc.; Win. xliv. 4. b, p. 409. For ἐγνώσατε comp. Acts xii. 14, xxvii. 39.

17. ἀντιβάλλετε. Here only in N.T. and once only in LXX (2 Mac. xi. 3). It looks back to συνήγαγεν (ver. 15).

καὶ ἐστάθησαν σκυθρωτοί. This is the reading of Ν B, e Boh. Sah. It is supported by the τοῦτον of L, and probably by the erasure in A. It is adopted by Tisch. Treg. WH. Weiss, RV., but contended against by Field, Ot. Nov. iii. p. 60. With this reading the question ends at περιπατοῦντες. For σκυθρωτοί comp. Mt. vi. 16; Gen. xi. 7; Ecclus. xxv. 23.
XXIV. 18-21. THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION 553

18. ἄνωματι Κλέοπας. See on v. 27. The name is not to be identified with Κλωσά (Jn. xix. 25), which is Aramaic, whereas Κλέοπας (= Κλέοπαρτος) is Greek. The incorrect spelling Cleophas (AV.) comes from some Latin MSS. The mention of the name is a mark of reality.

Σὺ μόνος παραοικεῖς Ἰερουσαλήμ. The pronoun is emphatic. The μόνος cannot mean "only a stranger" (AV.), but either "the only stranger" or "a lonely stranger," i.e. either "Dost thou alone sojourn at J.," or "Dost thou sojourn alone at J."). The former is more probable: see Wetst. and Field for examples. The verb occurs only here and Heb. xi. 9 in N.T., but is common in LXX of being a stranger or sojourner (Gen. xxi. 23, 34, xxvi. 3, etc.). Comp. πάροικος (Acts vii. 6, 29) and παροικία (Acts xiii. 17). The usual construction would be ἐν Ἰερουσαλήμ: but we have γῆν ἣν παραοικεῖς (Gen. xvii. 8; Exod. vi. 4).

19. Νοία; "What kind of things?" The question leads them on to open their hearts, and He is able to instruct them.

ς εὐγένετο ἄνηρ προφήτης. "Who proved to be, showed Himself to be, a Prophet." The ἄνηρ is perhaps a mark of respect, as in addresses (Acts i. 16, ii. 29, 37, vii. 2, etc.); or mere amplification, προφήτης being a kind of adjective.

δύνατός εἰ ἔγρω. Comp. Acts vii. 22, xviii. 24; Ecclus. xxi. 8; Judith xi. 8. In class. Grk. without ἐν. In Ps. Sol. xvii. 38, 42 we have both constructions, but in a sense different from this. With the order comp. 2 Thes. ii. 17; usually λόγος καὶ ἔγρων.

ἐναντίων. He proved Himself to be all this before God and man; but no more than this. In thinking Him to be more they had made a mistake.

20. It is not out of any favour to the Romans (Renan) that Lk. does not mention their share in the crime. Lk. alone tells us that Roman soldiers mocked Jesus on the cross (xxiii. 36). And here their share (which was notorious and irrelevant) is implied in παρέωκας and ἐγκαίρωσαν.

21. ἡμεῖς δὲ ἡπιπτομεν. "But we were hoping," until His death put an end to our expectation, "that precisely He," and no other, "was the one who should redeem Israel." Comp. the use of ὅ μελλων in xxii. 23; Mt. xi. 14; Jn. xii. 4.

λυτρούσθαι. "To cause to be released to oneself, set free for oneself the slave of another, redeem, ransom." Comp. Tit. ii. 14; Deut. xiii. 5; 2 Sam. vii. 23; Hos. xiii. 14.

The ό δὲ εἶπαν justifies us in concluding that vv. 19-24 were spoken partly by Cleopas and partly by his companion. But the attempt to assign definite portions to each (19, 20 to Cl., 21a to the other, 21b to Cl., and so on) is wasted ingenuity.

ἀλλά γε. The combination occurs elsewhere in N.T. 1 Cor. ix. 2. In class. Grk. another particle must immediately follow, and with this the γε coalesces, as ἀλλά γε δὲ or ἀλλά γε τοι. Otherwise a word or more must separate ἀλλά from γε. The force of the two is concessive. See Stallbaum on Plat. Rep. i. 331 B. The καὶ after ἀλλά γε is certainly genuine (BDLΔ 33, Arm.).
554 THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. LUKE [XXIV. 21–25.

σῶν πάσιν τούτοις. Super hac omnia (Vulg.): rather a lax use of σῶν. Comp. Neh. v. 18; 3 Mac. i. 22. Syr-Sin. omits.

τρίτην ταύτην ὑμέραν ἄγει. The verb is probably impersonal: "one is keeping the third day, we are at the third day" (Grot. Beng. De W. Nosg. Wordsw. Hahn). Perhaps we may understand ὁ Ἰσραήλ (Mey. Godet, Weiss, Alf.): the speaker has an impression that there was a prediction about the third day. But it is not probable that either ὁ ἡλιος, or ὁ ὀφρανός, or χρόνος, or Ἱσραήλ is to be supplied. Comp. περίεχε ἐν γραφή (1 Pet. ii. 6). The σήμερον after ἄγει (AP X Γ Δ etc. Syr-Pesh. Sah. Aeth. Vulg.) may be omitted (Β, L, Boh. Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Arm.) with Tisch. WH. RV.

22. ἀλλὰ καὶ. "But, in spite of this disappointment, there is also this favourable item."

ἐξ ὑμῶν: and therefore not wanton deceivers. With ἐξευτελοῦν comp. ἐξυτανόν Acts viii. 9: the trans. use is found nowhere else in N.T. There should perhaps be a colon at ὑμᾶς. To put a colon (AV.) or semicolon (RV.) at μνημείων implies that the being early at the tomb was the astonishing thing. Better "amazed us: having been early at the tomb and having failed to find His body, they came, saying," etc. ὁρθριος is a later form of ὁρθριος.

23. ἠθάνω λέγουσαι . . . οὖν λέγουσιν. It is all hearsay evidence and unsatisfactory; but it is sufficiently disturbing. For the constr. see Burton, § 343.

24. ἀπηλθάν τινες. If this refers to the visit of Peter and John, it confirms the view that ις was not part of the original narrative. The pleonastic καὶ before αἱ γυναῖκες ought probably to be omitted with Β and most Versions.

αὐτόν δὲ οὐκ εἶδον. This was true of Peter and John: and perhaps Cleopas and his comrade had left Jerusalem without having heard that Mary Magdalen had said that she had seen Him. If they had heard it, like the rest, they had disbelieved it, and therefore do not think it worth mentioning.

25. ἀνάκτοι. Four quite different Greek words are translated "fool" in AV.; ἀνάκτος (elsewhere "foolish," Gal. iii. 1, 3; 1 Tim. vi. 9; Tit. iii. 3), Δοφός (Eph. v. 15), ἄφρος (xi. 40, xii. 20; 1 Cor. xv. 36, etc.), and μωρός Mt. v. 22, xxiii. 17, [19]; 1 Cor. iii. 18, iv. 10). The latter two are much stronger in meaning than the former two. Here the Latin translations vary between insensati (a c d e) and stultii (f Vulg.), as in xi. 40 between insipientes (e) and stultii (f Vulg.): xii. 20 and Mt. xxiii. 17 all have stultus, Mt. v. 22 all fatus.

βραδείας . . . τοῦ πιστεύειν ἐπὶ πάσιν οἷς. The gen. is one of limitation depending upon βραδεία, which occurs here and Jas. i. 19 only. Comp. έτοιμος τοῦ ἀνελεύν (Acts xxiii. 15): έτοιμος τοῦ ἀλεεύν (1 Mac. v. 39). Elsewhere Lk. has the acc. after πιστεύειν ἐπὶ (Acts ix. 42, xi. 17, xvi. 31, xxii. 19), in all which cases the object of the belief is a person. The difference is between faith resting upon, and faith directed towards, an object. Note the characteristic attraction: see small print on iii. 19.
XXIV. 25-27. THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION

ἐπὶ τάσιν ὧς ἐδάλλησαν οἱ προφῆται. There is special point in the τάσιν. Like most Jews, they remembered only the promises of the glories of the Messiah, and ignored the predictions of His sufferings. We cannot well separate ἐπὶ τάσιν from πιστεύειν and take ἐπὶ = "on the top of, after, in spite of": "slow of heart to believe, in spite of all that the Prophets have spoken" (Hahn). Still more unnatural is Hofmann's proposal to transfer these words to the next verse: "On the basis of all that the Prophets have spoken ought not Christ," etc.

26. οὐχὶ πάντα ἦσει. "Behoved it not the Christ to suffer these very things and thus enter into His glory?" According to the Divine decree respecting the Messiah as expressed in prophecy, precisely the things which these two had allowed to destroy their hopes were a confirmation of them. The τάστα stands first with emphasis: for ἦσει comp. ix. 22, xiii. 33, xvii. 25, etc. There is no need to understand ἦ with ἐδεικνύειν in order to make it clear that He had not yet entered. Grammatically ἦσει belongs to both verbs, but it chiefly influences παθεῖν: the suffering comes first, and is the road to the glory. Comp. ver. 46. The same is said of Christ's followers Acts xiv. 22.

27. ἀπὸ Μωσῆσος. For the form see on ii. 22. Such prophecies as Gen. iii. 15, xxii. 18; Num. xxiv. 17; Deut. xviii. 15, and such types as the scape-goat, the manna, the brazen serpent, and the sacrifices, are specially meant. Comp. Acts viii. 35.

καὶ ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν προφητῶν. This may be regarded as a lax construction not likely to be misunderstood: comp. ἔτεροι κακοσκόργοι δῶο (xxiii. 32). But this is not necessary, for with each Messianic passage there was a fresh start in the interpretation. It does not help much to say that Moses and the Prophets are here considered as one class in distinction from the rest of O.T., and that the meaning is that He began with these and thence passed to the Psalms (ver. 44) and other books (Hofm. Hahn). The repetition of the ἀπὸ shows that the Prophets are regarded as separate from the Pentateuch. The literal meaning of the characteristic πάντων and πάσας may stand, but need not be pressed. There is nothing incredible in the supposition that He quoted from each one of the Prophets.

διερήμησεν (M*) supported by διερήμησες (M) is probably right, rather than διερήσευ (A PGXΓΔΛ). But instead of δράμαντος . . . διερήσεσαν we have in D ἦν δράμαντος ἀπὸ Μωσῆσος καὶ Π. τ. πρ. ἐρημεύειν, οὐσιν interpretabatur (M*) points to some form of this Western reading.

Comp. i Cor. xii. 30, xiv.
5, 13, 27. In Acts ix. 36 and 2 Mac. i. 36 the verb is used of interpreting a foreign language. Neither γεγραμμένα (De W. Mey. Weiss) nor anything else is to be understood with τὰ περὶ έαυτοῦ: see small print on xxii. 37.

28. προσεπιθήσατο. No unreal acting a part is implied. He began to take leave of them, and would have departed, had they not prayed Him to remain. Comp. His treatment of the disciples on the lake (Mk. vi. 48), and of the Syrophoenician woman (Mk. vii. 27). Prayers are part of the chain of causation.

The Latin Versions suggest pretending what was not meant: finxit se (b c f ff₂), dixit se (l), secit se (d), simultavit se (e), aspectabat se (a). But all of these, excepting the last, support προσεπιθήσατο (N A B D L) against προσποιείτο (P X Γ Δ Α Π). The προσποιείθανα did not continue. The verb does not occur elsewhere in N.T. Comp. Job xix. 14.

In this verse όδ for ό or εἰς ἡν is genuine; not in xxii. 10.

29. παρεβίάσατο. Moral pressure, especially by entreaty, is meant: Acts xvi. 15; Gen. xix. 9; 1 Sam. xxviii. 23; 2 Kings ii. 17, v. 16. In the last case the urgent entreaty is unsuccessful, and therefore the word does not imply compulsion. Comp. ἀνάγκασθαν εἰσελθεῖν (xiv. 23).

Μεῖνον μεθ' ἡμῶν. Combined with what follows, this implies a dwelling, which may have been the home of one of the two. Their allowing Him to preside does not prove that it was an inn. In their enthusiasm they naturally left the chief place to Him. On the other hand, μεθ' ἡμῶν is simply "in our company," not necessarily "at our house": comp. σὺν αὐτοῖς below.

τρόπος εὐπέμαν. Comp. Gen. viii. 11; Exod. xii. 6; Num. ix. 11; Zech. xiv. 7. The classical εὐπέμα is very freq. in LXX, but in N.T. is peculiar to Lk. (Acts iv. 3, xxviii. 23). So also κλίνω of the declining day (ix. 12): comp. Jer. vi. 4.

The ἡμέρα after κέκλεικαν (N B L I 33, a b e ff₂ Vulg. Boh.) is doubtless genuine. Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. paraphrase the sentence: "And they began to entreat Him that He would be (abide) with them, because it was nearly dark."

30. ἐν τῷ κατακληθεῖα. "After He had sat down"; not "as He sat," etc. (AV.), nor dum recumbet (Vulg.): see on iii. 21. In N.T. the verb is peculiar to Lk. (vii. 36, ix. 14, 15, xiv. 8): see on ix. 14.

λαβὼν τὸν ἄρτον. "He took the bread" that was usual, or the loaf" that was there. That this was a celebration of the eucharist (Theophylact), and a eucharist sub una specie, is an improbable hypothesis. To support it Maldonatus makes ἐν τῷ κατακλ. mean "after He had supper," as a parallel to μετὰ τὸ δειπνήσας (xxii. 20). But the imperfect ἐπέδοθαν is against the theory of a eucharist. In the Last Supper there is no change from aor. to imperf. such as we have here and in the Miracles of the Five Thousand (κατέκλασεν καὶ ἔδοθο, ix. 16) and of the Four Thousand
XXIV. 30-32.) THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION 557

(ἐκλαίσεν καὶ ἐδίδον, Mk. viii. 6). In none of the Gospels is the imperf. used of the eucharist (xxii. 19; Mk. xiv. 22; Mt. xxvi. 26), nor in 1 Cor. xi. 23. Wordsworth, although he regards this as a eucharist, points out that "bread" was to the Jews a general name for food, including drink as well as meat; and that to "eat bread" and "break bread" are general terms for taking refreshment. That the bread was blessed in order that it might open the eyes of the disciples is also improbable: the εἰλόγησεν is the usual grace before meat. It was the breaking of the bread on the part of Jesus, rather than their own partaking of the bread, which helped them to see who He was; see ver. 35.

31. δεινοίχθησαν οἱ ὀφθαλμοί. This must be explained in harmony with ver. 16. If the one implies Divine interposition, so also does the other. These two had not been present at the Last Supper, but they had probably often seen Jesus preside at meals; and something in His manner of taking and breaking the bread, and of uttering the benediction, may have been the means employed to restore their power of recognizing Him. Wright's conjecture that the eucharist was instituted long before the Last Supper is unnecessary. Comp. Gen. xxi. 19; 2 Kings vi. 20; Gen. iii. 5, 7.

For the augment see WH. ii. App. p. 161. All three forms, ἐποίχθην, ἀρέψχθην, and ἢρεψχθην, are found well attested in N.T. Gregory, Prolegom. p. 121. Syr-Cur. and Syr-Sin. add "immediately" to "were opened."

ἀφαντὸς ἐγένετο. "He vanished, became invisible": comp. ver. 37, vi. 36, xii. 40, xvi. 11, 12, xix. 17. It is very unnatural to take ἐγένετο with ἀπ' αὐτῶν and make ἀφαντὸς adverbial: "He departed from them without being seen." Something more than a sudden departure, or a departure which they did not notice until He was gone, is intended. We are to understand disappearance without physical locomotion: but we know too little about the properties of Christ's risen body to say whether this was supernatural or not. Nowhere else in bibl. Grk. does ἀφαντὸς occur: in class. Grk. it is poetical. In 2 Mac. iii. 34 ἀφανεῖς ἐγένετο is used of Angels ceasing to be visible. The ἀπ' αὐτῶν implies no more than withdrawal from their sight: to what extent His presence was withdrawn we have no means of knowing. But His object was accomplished; viz. to convince them that He was the Messiah and still alive, and that their hopes had not been in vain. To abide with them in the old manner was not His object.

The Latin Versions vary much, but none of them suggest a mere quiet withdrawal: nusquam comparuit ab eis (c.e.f.) or illis (a), non comparuit ab eis (dr), invisus factus est eis (bf), non apparet factus est ab eis (s), evanuit ex oculis eorum (Vulg.). Syr-Sin. has "He was lifted away from them": so also Syr-Cur. Respecting Jos. Ant. xx. 8. 6 see p. xxx.

32. καλομένη ἤν. The periphrastic tense emphasizes the con-
tinuance of the emotion. Common and natural as the metaphor is, it seems to have been misunderstood; and hence the reading κεκαλυμμένη (D), perhaps from 2 Cor. iii. 14–16; while exactatum (c), and optumum (l) seem to imply πεπηρωμένη as another correction. Other variations are exterminatum (e) and gravatum (Syr-Cur. Syr-Sin. Sah. Arm.). They regard the glow in their hearts as further proof that it was indeed Jesus who was with them as they walked.

"While He was speaking . . . while He was opening." Note the asyndeton and the use of the same verb for the opening of their eyes and the opening of the Scriptures.

33–43. § The Manifestation to the Eleven and the other Disciples at Jerusalem. We cannot determine whether this is the same appearance as Jn. xx. 19. If it is, then τοὺς ἄνδεκα is not exact, for on that occasion Thomas was absent; and in any case it is improbable that he was present. If he was, why was the incident which convinced him delayed for a week? Can we suppose that he withdrew between vv. 35, 36? It is much simpler to suppose that "the Eleven" is used inaccurately.

33. αὐτῇ τῇ ὥρᾳ. "That very hour": comp. x. 7. The lateness of the hour, which they had urged upon their guest (ver. 29), does not deter them. Note the characteristic διαστάτησε (i. 39, iv. 29, etc.) and ὑπεστρεψαν (i. 56, ii. 20, 43, 45, iv. 1, etc.). It was in order that others might share their great joy that they returned at once to Jerusalem. Yet D c d e Sah. insert λυπούμενοι (tristes, contristati) after διαστάτησε.

34. λέγοντας. This was the statement with which the assembled disciples greeted the two from Emmaus. The appendix to Mk. cannot be reconciled with this. There we are told that, so far from the two being met by news that the Lord was risen, their own story was not believed (xvi. 13). For ἔφθασεν see on xxii. 43. This manifestation apparently took place after the two had started for Emmaus and before the disciples assembled at Jerusalem. The Apostle
"most in need of comfort was the first to receive it." But Lange
is fanciful when he adds, "We here learn that after his fall Peter
named himself, and was named in the Church, Simon, not Peter"

35. καὶ αὐτοὶ ἔξηγοῦντο. "And they on their side rehearsed."
Excepting Jn. i. 18, the verb occurs only here and Acts x. 8,
xxv. 12, 14, xxvi. 19. Note that the Lord's breaking of the bread,
and not their partaking of it, is spoken of as the occasion of their
recognizing Him. Syr-Sin. has "as He brake bread."

36. ἔστη ἐν μέσῳ. A sudden appearance, analogous to the
sudden disappearance (ver. 31), is intended. See on viii. 7. On
the words καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Εἰρήνη ὑμῶν, which look like a very
early insertion from Jn. xx. 19, see note at the end of the chapter.
They express what is true in fact, but is probably not part of the
original text of Lk.

37. πτωπθέντες δέ. There is some confusion of text here. This is the
reading of A L P X Γ Δ etc. supported by conturbatis (b ff.), turbati autem
(c e), et conturbati (l), conturbati vero (f Vulg.). But D has αὐτοὶ δὲ πτωπθέν-
tes, ἵππι autem raverunt (d), ἐκ φοβηθέντες δὲ, exteriti autem (a), and B
θροπθέντες. The last may possibly be right. Syr-Sin. has "shaken" both
here and for τεταραγμένου in ver. 38.

πνεῦμα. "The disembodied spirit of a dead person, a ghost."
Comp. φάντασμα (Mt. xiv. 26), which D has here. Thomas
would explain away their evidence by maintaining that this first
impression respecting what they saw was the right one. For
ἐμφασιν γενόμενοι see on ver. 5; and for this use of πνεῦμα
comp. 1 Pet. iii. 19. To introduce the notion of an evil spirit
is altogether out of place.

38. τί . . . καὶ διὰ τί. So in ΝΑΧΓΔΛΠΠ, quid . . . et quare,
abceff1.1 Syr-Cur. "Why . . . and wherefore" RV. But D L have τί . . .
ta τί, and B A² τί . . . τί, Syr-Sin. has Why . . . why, Tert. quid . . . quid.
Vulg. inaccurately omits the second quid.
ἀναβαίνοντι εν τῇ καρδιᾷ υἱῶν. So A² (?) B D, in corde vestro
(a b c e f f 1. Sah. Aeth.); for which ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις υἱῶν (ΝΑΛΓΔ
etc.), in cordibus vestris (f Syr-Sin.), is an obvious correction. Vulg. is
again the least accurate with in corde vestra. Nowhere else does ἐν τῇ
cardiᾳ occur; elsewhere ἐπὶ τῆς ἡμ. (Acts vii. 23) or ἐπὶ καρδίαν (1 Cor.
ii. 9; Jer. iii. 16).

39. ἰδεῖτε τὰς χεῖρας μου καὶ τῶν πόδας. This seems to imply
that His feet as well as His hands had been nailed. Jesus first
convinces them of His identity,—that He is the Master whom
they supposed that they had lost; and secondly of the reality of
His body,—that it is not merely the spirit of a dead Master that
they see.

Tyn. Cov. Cran. Gen. AV. all have "Behold . . . see" for ἰδεῖτε . . .
see." The first refers to the test of identity, the sight of the wound-prints, the second to the test of reality, the sense of touch.

ψηλαφήσατε με. i Jn. i. i seems to be a direct reference to this passage: the same verb is used. The remarkable quotation in Ignatius (Smyr. iii. 1) should be compared: ἄτι πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρον ἦλθαν, ἐφ' αὐτοῖς Δάβδε, ψηλαφήσατε με, καὶ ἑδετε ὅτι οὐκ εἰμι δαιμόνιον ἀσωμάτων. Eusebius (H. E. iii. 36. 11) does not know whence Ignatius got these words. Jerome more than once gives the Gospel according to the Hebrews as the source of the saying about the incorporale daemonium. Origen says that it comes from the Teaching of Peter. As all three writers knew the Gospel according to Hebrews well, the testimony is perplexing. We may conjecture that Origen is right, that Eusebius had never seen the passage, and that Jerome's memory has failed him. That it is quite possible to forget much of a book that one has translated, every translator will admit. See Lft. on Ign. Smyr. iii.

ἄτι πνεῦμα. Once more an ambiguous ἄτι: comp. xix. 31, 43, xxii. 70, etc. But "because" or "for" (AV. RV. Nösg. Godet, Weiss) is much more probable than "that" (Mey. Hahn). Comp. οὗ γὰρ ἐτι σάρκας τε καὶ ὄστεα ἰνεῖς ἔχουσιν (Hom. Od. xi. 219).

40. The evidence against this verse is exactly the same as against the doubtful words in ver. 36 with the addition of Syr-Cur. It may be regarded as an adaptation of Jn. xx. 20, καὶ τὴν πλευρὰν being changed into καὶ τοὺς πόδας to suit ver. 39. Apelles in Hipp. Ref. vii. 26 combines the two, δεικνάτα τοὺς τύπους τῶν ἑλων καὶ τῆς πλευρᾶς. Tertullian uses ver. 40 to answer Marcion's perversion of ver. 39 (iv. 43). See note p. 568.

41. ἄπιστοι ἄνθρωποι ἄπο τῆς χαρᾶς. A remark, "which, with many similar expressions, we owe to the most profound psychologist among the Evangelists." Vix sibimet ipsi præ necorporato gaudio credentes (Livy, xxxix. 49). For this use of ἄπο comp. xxi. 26, xxii. 45; Acts xii. 14; Mt. xiii. 44, xiv. 26, etc.

"Εχετέ τι βρωσίμου ἐνδάδε; The objection that, if Jesus took food in order to convince them that He was no mere spirit, when food was not necessary for the resurrection-body, He was acting deceitfully, does not hold. The alternative—"either a ghost, or an ordinary body needing food"—is false. There is a third possibility: a glorified body, capable of receiving food. Is there any deceit in taking food, which one does not want, in order to place others, who are needing it, at their ease? With the double sign granted here, the handling and the seeing Him eat, comp. the double sign with Moses' rod and hand (Exod. iv. 1-8), and with Gideon's fleece (Judg. vi. 36-40). For βρωσίμου comp. Lev. xix. 23; Ezek. xlvii. 12; Neh. ix. 25: not elsewhere in N.T. ἐνδάδε: rare in LXX, and in N.T., excepting Jn. iv. 15, 16, peculiar to Lk. (Acts x. 18, xvi. 28; xvii. 6, xxv. 17, 24).
42. καὶ ἀπὸ μελισσῶν κηρίου. The evidence against these words is far stronger than against any of the other doubtful passages in this chapter (vv. 3, 6, 9, 12, 36, 40, 51, 52). Here ΝΑΒΔΛ, δὲ Βο. Συρ-Σιν. omit the whole, while α β omit mellis. Clem-Alex. Orig. Eus. Cyr-Alex. speak of the broiled fish in a way which makes it very improbable that they would have omitted the honey-comb, had it been contained in their copies of the Gospel. Ν Χ are the best uncials which contain the words, and of these Χ with Ε* has κηρίου for κηρίου. Even Godet admits that not only here, but in vv. 36 and 40, the disputed words are probably interpolations.

43. ἐνώπιον αὐτῶν ἐφαγεν. Comp. οἶνων συνεφάγομεν καὶ συνεπίομεν αὐτῶ μετὰ τὸ ἀναστήναι αὐτῶν ἐκ νεκρῶν (Acts x. 41). Nothing is said here or in the meal at Emmaus about drinking, but are we to infer that nothing was drunk?


44–49. Christ's Farewell Instructions. This section seems to be a condensation of what was said by Christ to the Apostles between the Resurrection and the Ascension, partly on Easter Day and partly on other occasions. But we have no sure data by which to determine what was said that same evening, and what was spoken later. Thus Lange assigns only ver. 44 to Easter Day, Godet at least vv. 44, 45, Euthymius vv. 44–49, while Meyer and others assign all the remaining verses also (44–53) to this same evening. On the other hand Didon would give the whole of this section to a later occasion, after the manifestations in Galilee. It is evident that the command to remain ἐν τῇ πόλει (ver. 49) cannot have been given until after those manifestations, and was almost certainly given in Jerusalem.

44. Εἶπεν δὲ πρὸς αὐτούς. This new introduction points to a break of some kind between vv. 43 and 44; but whether of moments or of days we cannot be certain. It is probable that Lk. himself, when he wrote his Gospel, did not know what the interval was. This was one of several points about which he had obtained more exact information when he wrote the first chapter of the Acts.

Οὕτως οἱ λόγοι. “These are My words, which I spake unto you formerly (and repeat now), viz. that all things,” etc.

Ὸὶ ἤν ὄν ὑμῖν: refers to His intercourse with them before His death, a mode of intercourse which is entirely at an end: comp. Acts ix. 39. Not that the new intercourse will be less close or continuous, but it will be of a different kind. His being visible is now the exception and not the rule, and He is ceasing to share in the externals of their lives. That the words refer to what He said during the walk to Emmaus (ver. 26) is most improbable. Christ is addressing all the disciples present, not merely those who walked
with Him to Emmaus. Such passages as xviii. 31–33 and ix. 22 are meant.

*Math 19:24-24* with 19:45-46. This is the only place in N.T. in which the tripartite division of the Hebrew Canon of Scripture is clearly made. But it does not prove that the Canon was at this time fixed and closed; nor need we suppose that “Psalms” here means the whole of the Ketubim or Hagiographa. Of that division of the Jewish Scriptures the Psalter was the best known and most influential book; and, moreover, it contained very much about the Messiah. Hence it is naturally singled out as representative of the group. In the prologue to Ecclesiasticus we have the tripartite division in three slightly different forms (1) “the Law and the Prophets and others that have followed their steps”; (2) “the Law and the Prophets and other books of our fathers”; (3) “the Law and the Prophets and the rest of the books.” Elsewhere we have “the Law and the Prophets” (xvi. 15; Mt. vii. 12); “Moses and the Prophets” (xvi. 29, 31, xxiv. 27); and “the Law of Moses and the Prophets” (Acts xxviii. 23); where the third division is not to be regarded as excluded because not specially mentioned. Ryle, *Canon of the O.T.* pp. 150, 191, 291.

Note that the prep. is not repeated with either ἐν τῷ νόμῳ Μωσεῖ καὶ [τοῖς] προφήταις καὶ ψαλμοῖς, and that the art. is not repeated with ψαλμοίς and not quite certainly with προφήταις: the three divisions are regarded as one storehouse of Messianic prophecy. The evidence stands thus: καὶ προφήταις (A D N X τὰ Δ ΔΠ, et prophetis Latt.), καὶ τοῖς προφήταις (B, Boh.), εν τοῖς προφ. (N), καὶ εν τοῖς προφ. (L).

45. This opening of their understanding is analogous to that in ver. 31. Comp. Acts xvi. 14, xxvi. 18; 2 Mac. i. 4. Godet regards this as parallel to “He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost” (Jn. xx. 22). It was by the gift of the Spirit that their minds were open to understand. Contrast xviii. 34. D has διήνυσεν (sic) αὐτῶν τὸν νοῦν, but d has *adaperti sunt eorum sensus*.

46. Godet would put a full stop at γραφάς and make καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς introduce a fresh summary of what was said, possibly on another occasion. It is very unnatural to make δετί mean “because” or “for,” and take it as the beginning of Christ’s words. “He opened their minds and (in explanation of this act) said to them, Because thus it is written,” etc. (Mey.). It is more doubtful whether δετί introduces the oratio recta (Weiss, Hahn), in which case it is left untranslated (AV. RV.), or the oratio obliqua (Rhem.).

οὕτως γέγραπται παθεὶν τὸν Χριστὸν. Thus A B C* L, Aeth. Syr.-Harcl. So also D, ab c def f.1r Boh., but with τὸν Χριστὸν before παθεῖν. Syr-Sin. and Arm. substitute for γέγραπται the ἔδει of the similar ver. 26, while A C* N X τὰ Δ ΔΠ, f q Vulg. insert καὶ οὕτως ἔδει after γέγραπται, and
c e Cypr. omit ὀρθως. All are attempts to get rid of abruptness, and perhaps the reading of A C² etc. is a conflation of B etc. with Syr-Sin. and Arm. D omits εκ νεκρων.

For the aor. infin. referring to what is future in reference to the main verb see Burton, § 114.

47. ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι αὐτοῦ. "On the basis of all that His name implies": it is His Messiahship which makes repentance effectual. Comp. the use of ἐπὶ τῷ ὄν. ix. 48, xxi. 8; Acts iv. 17, 18, v. 28, 40, etc.

μετάνοιαν εἰς ἀφεσιν ἀμαρτίων. The εἰς (B, Boh. Syr.) was corrected to καὶ (A C D N X etc.) on account of the second εἰς. The εἰς is confirmed by iii. 3; Mt. xxvi. 28; Mk. i. 4: comp. τὴν μετάνοιαν εἰς ἐκείνη (Acts xi. 18). Comp. also Mt. xxviii. 19.

ἀρξάμενοι. It is difficult to decide between taking this as a rather violent anacoluthon, as if "that ye should preach" had preceded, and making it the beginning of a new sentence, "Beginning from Jerusalem ye are witnesses of these things." The former is perhaps better. The correction ἀρξάμενος (A C etc.) is meant to agree with τὸν Χριστόν, or perhaps to be an impers. acc. abs. like ἐξών, παρὸν. Comp. ἀπὸ δὲ Ποσειδίου τῶν, ἀρξάμενον ἀπὸ ταύτης μέχρι Αλγυστου (Hdt. iii. 91. 1). The priority of the Jewish nation in its right to the Gospel is still acknowledged, in spite of their rejection of the Messiah. D has ἀρξάμενον, ἀ incipientium.

48. ὃμαι μάρτυρες τούτων. The omission of ἐστέ is against taking ἀρξάμενος ἀπὸ Ἰερ. with this clause. That ἐστέ is rightly omitted (B D, Aeth. Aug.) is shown by its being inserted sometimes before (A C B etc.) sometimes after (C*) μάρτυρες. A C X Τ etc. have ὃμαι δὲ, D καὶ ὃμαι δὲ. B C L, Boh. Syr-Harcl. have ὃμαι alone. The omission of both conjunction and verb makes the sentence more forcible and ὃμαι more emphatic. That bearing testimony respecting the Passion and Resurrection was one of the main functions of an Apostle is manifest from Acts i. 8, 22, ii. 32, iii. 15, v. 32, x. 39, 41, etc.

49. καὶ ἴδων ἐγώ. The ἐγώ balances the preceding ἃμαι. "I have told you your part: this is mine." The ἴδω is wanting in N D L, Latt. Boh. Syr-Sin. The combination ἴδων ἐγώ (xxiii. 14; Acts x. 21, xx. 22) is extraordinarily frequent in LXX.

ἐξαποστέλλω τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν. Present of what will come in the immediate and certain future. Here first in the Gospels have we ἐπαγγελία in the technical sense of the "promise of God to His people": see on Rom. i. 2. The gift of the Spirit is specially meant: comp. Is. xliv. 3; Ezek. xxxvi. 27; Joel ii. 28; Zech. xii. 10. "The promise" therefore means the thing promised. For ἴδων ἐγώ ἐξαποστέλλω comp. Jer. viii. 17; ἴδων ἐγώ ἀποστέλλω, vii. 27; Mt. x. 16; Mal. iv. 4 [iii. 23]: Ν* A C D N Τ Α Π have ἀποστέλλω here. In Jn. xv. 26 and xvi. 7, where, as here, Christ speaks of the Spirit as His gift, τέμπως is used: in Jn. xiv. 16 the Father δώσει at the petition of Christ.

ἡμεῖς δὲ καθιστάτε ἐν τῇ πάλαι. Once more an emphatic contrast between ἐγώ and ἡμεῖς. For καθίζειν of spending some time in a
place comp. Acts xviii. 11; Exod. xvi. 29; Judg. xi. 17, xix. 4; Ruth iii. 1 [ii. 23]; 1 Sam. i. 23, etc. With the command here given comp. Acts i. 4. To suppose that it was spoken on Easter Day involves a contradiction with Mt. xxviii. 7, 10, 16; Mk. xvi. 7; Jn. xxi. 1. It implies patient waiting.

ενδόσασθε . δύναμιν. The metaphor is common both in N.T. and LXX: Rom. xiii. 14; 1 Cor. xv. 53; Gal. iii. 27; Col. iii. 10; Eph. iv. 24; Job viii. 22, xxix. 14, xxxix. 19; Ps. xxxiv. 26, xcii. 1, etc. There is no need to discuss whether the Spirit is the δύναμις or confers it.

According to the best texts (B C* L 33, Eus. Syr-Hier.) είς υψος precedes δύναμιν and immediately follows ενδόσασθε, to which it belongs. Comp. Is. xxxii. 15.

50-53. The Ascension and the Conclusion of the Gospel. It is not improbable that, at the time when he wrote his Gospel, Lk. did not know the exact amount of interval between the Resurrection and the Ascension. That was a piece of information which he may easily have gained between the publication of the Gospel and of the Acts. And while he does not state either here or ver. 44 that there was any interval at all, still less does he say that there was none: there is no εν αυτῷ τῇ ημέρᾳ (ver. 13). Being without knowledge, or not considering the matter of importance, he says nothing about the interval. But it is incredible that he can mean that, late at night (vv. 29, 33), Jesus led them out to Bethany, and ascended in the dark. So remarkable a feature would hardly have escaped mention. Probably δέ both here and in ver. 44 introduces a new occasion.

50. ἐως πρὸς Βηθανίαν. It is doubtful whether this can mean "until they were over against Bethany." Field regards πρὸς after ἐως as a mere expletive and compares καὶ ἀφίκετο ἐως πρὸς ἀνθρωπὸν τίνα ὀδολαμάτην (Gen. xxxviii. 1). In LXX ἐως εἰς is common, and many texts (A C* X Γ Δ Α Π) substitute ἐως εἰς here for ἐως πρὸς (B C* L). D has πρὸς without ἐως. The ἐως after αὐτῶν (A C* D X etc.) is omitted by B C* L 33, a c Boh. Syr. Arm.

The well-known passage in the Epistle of Barnabas (xv. 9) is probably only a clumsily expressed explanation for keeping Sunday as a day of joy; viz. because Jesus on that day rose from the dead, and (not to die again, as Lazarus and others,—on the contrary) manifested Himself and ascended into heaven. Διὸ καὶ ἀγαμεν τὴν ημέραν τὴν οὐδέν εἰς ἐνφορινήν, ἐν γὰρ καὶ τῷ Ἰησοῦς ἀνάστη εκ νεκρῶν, καὶ φανερώθη εἰς ἀνέσθη εἰς οὐρανοῦς. Grammatically ἐν γὰρ belongs to ἀνέσθη as well as to ἀνάστη, and with Hefele we must admit the possibility that Barnabas believed that the Ascension took place on Sunday. But Funk is right in saying that ἐν γὰρ is perhaps not intended to go beyond ἀνάστη εκ νεκρῶν. Dressel's expedient, however, of putting a full stop at εκ νεκρῶν, is rather violent. Harmer does not place even a comma between the clauses.

51. διέστη ἀπ' αὐτῶν. "Parted, withdrew from them." The verb
is peculiar to Lk. in N.T. (xxii. 59; Acts xxvii. 28). This refers to the Ascension, whatever view we take of the disputed words which follow. Weiss holds that, if the doubtful words are rejected, we must interpret διέστη of mere withdrawal, as after previous appearances; and that Lk. purposely reserves the narrative of the Ascension for the Acts. But at least a final departure is meant. It is evident that ver. 50 is preparatory to a final withdrawal, and that vv. 52, 53 are subsequent to such an event. And was there ever a time when Lk. could have known of Christ’s final withdrawal without knowing of the Ascension? In the Acts (i. 1, 2) he expressly states that ὁ πρῶτος λόγος contained an account of the work of Jesus ἄνω ὡς ἡμέρας ... ἀνελήμφθη. He himself, therefore, considered that he had recorded the Ascension in his Gospel. See Hastings, D.F. i. p. 161.

καὶ ἀνεφέρετο εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν. The important witnesses which omit the disputed words in vv. 3, 6, 9, 36, 40 are here joined by N* and Aug. No motive for their omission, if they were in the original document, can be suggested. They look like a gloss on διέστη: but it is conceivable that Lk. himself (or Theophilus) may have added them in a second edition of the Gospel, in order to make it quite clear what διέστη ἀν' αὐτῶν meant. See p. 560. Note the change from aor. to imperf.

δ. προσκυνήσαντες αὐτῶν. This again is either a very ancient gloss or an insertion made by the Evangelist in a second copy. See the note at the end of the chapter. Comp. Mt. xxviii. 17.

ὑπεστρεψαν εἰς ἱεροσαλήμ: in obedience to καθίσατε ἐν τῇ πόλει (ver. 49).

μετὰ χαρᾶς μεγάλης. A writer of fiction would have made them lament the departure of their Master: comp. Jn. xiv. 28, xvi. 6, 7, 20, 22, 24.

Note how the marks of Lk.’s style continue to the end. In ver. 51 we have ἐγένετο, ἐν τῷ εὐλογείν, διέστη: in ver. 52 καὶ αὐτῶν, ὑπεστρεψαν, and the addition of μέγας to an expression of emotion (ii. 9, 10, viii. 37; Acts v. 5, 11, xv. 3).

δ. ἤσαν διὰ παντὸς ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ. These words are to be taken together: ἤσαν does not belong to the participle, and this is not an example of the periphrastic imperf. (Hahn). The continued attendance of the disciples in the temple is recorded in the Acts (ii. 46, iii. 1, v. 21, 42). It savours of childish captiousness to find a contradiction between διὰ παντὸς here and Acts i. 13, where it is stated, and ii. 44, where it is implied, that the Apostles were sometimes elsewhere than in the temple. No reasonable critic would suppose that διὰ παντὸς is meant with absolute strictness. It is a popular expression, implying great frequency in their attendance both at the services and at other times. Comp. what is said of Anna, ii. 37, which is stronger in wording and may mean more.
Lachm. Treg. WH. Weiss write διὰ παντὸς, while Tisch. Wordsw. and the Revisers prefer διαπαντὸς. Comp. Acts ii. 25, x. 2, xxiv. 16; Mt. xviii. 10; Mk. v. 5, etc.

εὐλογοῦντες. The reading is uncertain. There is little doubt that ἀλοῦντες καὶ εὐλογοῦντες (A C T D II, cf Vulg. Syr-Pesh. Syr-Harl. Arm.) and εὐλογοῦντες καὶ αἰσθάνεται (Aeth.) is a conflation. But is αἰσθάνεται (D, a b d ff 2 l Boh. Aug. Tisch.) or εὐλογοῦντες (NBC* L, Syr-Sin. Syr-Hier. Weiss, WH. RV.) the original? The fact that ἀλοῦντες is a favourite word with Lk. does not turn the scale in its favour: εὐλογοῦντες might be corrected to αἰσθάνεται for this very reason. See WH. ii. p. 104, where the distribution of evidence in this and similar instances of conflation is tabulated. Comp. ix. 10, xi. 54, xii. 18. See Introduction, p. lxxiii.

The various conjectures as to why the disciples were so joyous and thankful may all be right: but they remain conjectures. Because of the promised gift of the Spirit (Euthym.); because of the Lord's teaching and blessing (Mey. Weiss); because of His glorious return to the Father, which was a pledge of the victory of His cause (Godet); because His Ascension confirmed all their beliefs and hopes (Maldon.); because His presence with God was a guarantee for the fulfilment of His promises and an earnest of their own success (Hahn).

Ἀμφε: probably not genuine, but a liturgical addition. It is absent from N C* D L II, several cursives, a b d e ff 1 Syr-Sin. etc.

**WESTERN NON-INTERPOLATIONS.**

Unless Mt. xxvii. 49 and Lk. xii. 11 (ἢ πεπληρώθη) are to be regarded as examples, all the instances of Western non-interpolations are found in the last three chapters of S. Luke. In ch. xxiv. they are surprisingly frequent. The opposite phenomenon of interpolation is among the most marked characteristics of the Western texts. And although omissions also are not uncommon, yet Western omissions for the most part explain themselves as attempts to make the sense more forcible.

But there are cases in which the absence of words or passages from Western authorities, and their presence in other texts, cannot be explained in this way. In these cases the more satisfactory explanation seems to be that it is the other texts which have been enlarged, while the Western documents, by escaping interpolation, have preserved the original reading in its simplicity.

It is evident that these insertions in the original text (if insertions they be) must have been made very early: otherwise they could not have become diffused in every text excepting the Western. Alexandrian corruptions which have spread widely are a common phenomenon. But these insertions have a different aspect; and neither internal nor external evidence favours such a theory of their origin. We must look elsewhere for an explanation. That the original readings should be preserved nowhere else but in a text which is wholly Western is so unusual a result that there is nothing extravagant in assuming an unusual cause for it.

It must sometimes have happened in ancient times that authors, having published their MS. and caused it to be multiplied, afterwards issued revised copies with corrections and insertions. In the cases before us "the purely documentary phenomena are compatible with the supposition that the Western and the Non-Western texts started respectively from a first and a second edition of the Gospels, both conceivably apostolic (WH. ii. p. 177).” This conjectural source of variations, viz. changes made in later copies by the authors themselves, is
accepted by Scrivener as a general possibility (Scriv-Miller, i. p. 18), and is suggested as specially applicable to the latter part of S. Luke’s Gospel (ii. pp. 298, 299 n.). Blass regards this as highly probable with regard to the Acts. Lk. made a rough copy first on cheap material, and then a better copy to give to Theophilus, who was a person of distinction. In this second copy he made alterations. But both remained in existence and became the parent of other copies, the Western text being derived from the rough draft, and the more widely diffused text from the presentation copy.1 Salmon thinks that something of the same kind “took place with St. Luke’s Gospel; and that in the case of the Gospel, as well as in that of the Acts, it was the first draft which went into circulation in the West.” He supposes that the second edition of the Gospel was about contemporary with the Acts, and that between the two writings Luke had conversed with a witness able to give him additional information about the Lord’s sayings and the Ascension. Having just written the full account of the latter in the Acts, he added a word or two to Lk. xxiv. 51, 52. “And since in Luke’s account of the dying words of Stephen (Acts vii. 59, 60) we find an echo of two of the utterances which the common text of St. Luke’s Gospel places in the mouth of the dying Saviour, I find it hard to regard the coincidence as fortuitous, and but the lucky hit of an unknown interpolator” (App. to Hist. Int. to N.T. 7th ed. p. 603). See also Rendel Harris, Four Lectures on the Western Text, Camb. 1894, p. 62. A theory such as this certainly is very welcome as an explanation of Lk. xxii. 43, 44 and xxiii. 34a, although neither of them can be called Western non-interpolations. But in other cases the apparent insertions are perhaps scarcely worthy of so high an origin: e.g. the non-Western insertions in xxiv. 3, 6, 9 seem to be about on a level with Western insertions. See WH. ii. pp. 175-177.

The question cannot be regarded as settled; but, assuming that there are such textual phenomena as Western non-interpolations, the more manifest examples are Lk. xxii. 19b, 20, xxiv. 3, 6, 9, 12, 36, 40, 51, 52. To which may be added as a possible instance in a secondary degree xxii. 62.

(1) xxii. 19b, 20. ἐξ ὑπὸ διδόμενον . . . ἐκχυμάτωμεν.

Evidence for the passage:—

| A | B | C | E | F | G | H | K | L | M | (P R defective here) | S | U | X | V | Γ | Δ | Π |

and all cursives.
Almost all Versions.
Marcion or Tertull. Cyr-Alex.
Evidence against the passage:—

D omits.
adf, i, omit.
b e S r-Cur. omit and put vv. 17, 18 in the place of the omitted passage, so that the verses run—16, 19a [b], 17, 18, 21, 22, etc. Syr-Sin. has an elaborate transposition:—16, 19a b, 20a, 17, 20b, 18, 21, 22, etc. It also exhibits considerable changes in the wording.

But in order to appreciate these various attempts to get rid of the difficulty involved in the ordinary text, owing to the mention of two cups, it is necessary to see them in full in a tabular form.

Cod. Veron. (b).

19 et accepto pane gratias egit et fregit et dedit illis dicens hoc est corpus meum 17 et accepto calicem gratias egit et dixit accipite hoc et dividite inter vos dico enim vobis . . . . . veniat. 21 veruntamen ecce, etc.

Cod. Palat. (c).

19 et accepit panem et gratias egit et fregit et dedit eas dicens hoc est corpus meum 17 et accepit calicem et gratias egit et dixit accipite vivite inter vos dico enim vobis . . . . . veniat. 21 veruntamen ecce, etc.

1 Apostolorum Acta, Fr. Blass, Gottingen, 1895, § 13, p. 32.
It is obvious that these two Latin texts represent one and the same Greek original. There is much more difference between the two Syriac Versions, of which Syr-Cur. agrees more with the Latin texts than with its fellow.

**Syr-Cur.**

19 And He took bread and when He had given thanks, He brake it, and gave to them, saying, This is My body, which (is given) for you: this do in remembrance of Me. 17 And He received a cup, and when He had given thanks, He said, Take this and divide it among yourselves: 18 for I say to you, I will . . . . . . . come.

21 But behold, etc.

**Syr-Sin.**

19 And He took bread and gave thanks over it, and brake, and gave unto them, saying, This is My body which I give for you: thus do in remembrance of Me. 20 And after they had supped, 17 He took the cup, and gave thanks over it, and said, Take this, share it among yourselves. 20 This is My blood, the new testament. 18 For I say unto you, that henceforth I will not drink of this fruit until the kingdom of God shall come. 21 But nevertheless behold, etc.

(2) xxiv. 3. After σῶμα the words τοῦ κυρίου Ιησοῦ.

Evidence for the words:—

Almost all Greek MSS. Most Versions.

Evidence against the words:—

D omits the whole, 42 omits κυρίου. abdef1r omit the whole. Syr-Cur, Syr-Sin, Sah. omit κυρίου.

Nowhere else in the true text of the Gospels does ὁ κύριος Ἰησοῦς occur: but it may be right in the appendix to Mk. (xvi. 19).

In the remaining instances only the evidence against the passage need be stated.

(3) xxiv. 6. ὅπως ἢστιν ὡδε, ἄλλα ἡγερθην.

D omits the whole. C* omits ἄλλα. abdef1r* omit the whole. c substitutes resurrexit a mortuis, which perhaps is an independent insertion. Syr-Pesh. g2 omit ἄλλα. Aeth. transposes, omitting ἄλλα: ἡγερθην, ὅπως ἢστιν ὡδε, exactly as Mk. xvi. 6, which is the probable source of the insertion: comp. Mt. xxviii. 6. Marcion ερμηνευει Epiph. seems to have omitted all but ἡγερθην.

(4) xxiv. 9. ἅπα τοῦ μνημείου.

D omits.

abdef1r omit.

(5) xxiv. 12. ὅς ὁ Πέτρος . . . γεγονεί.

D omits.

abdef1r omit. Syr-Harcl.* omits at the beginning of one lection, but perhaps accidentally.

(6) xxiv. 36. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς, Εἰρήνη υμῶ.

D omits.

abdef1r omit.


(7) xxiv. 40. καὶ τοῦτο εἶπὼν . . . καὶ τούς πόδας.

D omits.
THE PASSION AND RESURRECTION

a b d e ff l r Syr-Cur. omit. Syr-Sin. is here defective, but apparently contained the verse.

Probably an adaptation of Jn. xx. 20. Tisch. and Weiss omit. WH. place in double brackets.

(8) xxiv. 51. καὶ ἀνεφέρετο ἐλι σ τῶν οὐρανῶν.

N D omit.

a b d e ff l l r Syr-Sin. condenses, omitting δικαστή and ἐλι σ τῶν οὐρανῶν : "He was lifted up from them." Syr-Pesh. is defective.

Aug. omits once and inserts once.

Tisch. and Weiss omit. WH. place in double brackets.

(9) xxiv. 52. προσκυνήσαντες αὐτόν.

D omits the whole.

a b d e ff l l r Syr-Sin. omit the whole.

Aug. omits the whole.

c Vulg. omit eum.

Tisch. and Weiss omit. WH. place in double brackets.

It will be observed that throughout these instances the adverse witnesses are very much the same. The combination D, a d e l prevails throughout; and in almost all cases these are supported by b and ff, and very often by r also. In xxii. 62, which was mentioned as a secondary instance of possible non-interpolation, D deserts its usual allies. The verse is found in all Greek MSS. and in all Versions, excepting a b e ff l l r.

INTERPOLATIONS IN THE SINAITIC SYRIAC.

Some of these have been pointed out in the notes; e.g. pp. 53, 449, 468, 507, 540, 543, 556. But there are others which are of interest; and in some cases they are peculiar to this MS.

i. 3. to write of them one by one carefully unto thee.

6. blameless in all their manner of life.

12. was troubled and shook.

13. for behold, God has heard the voice of thy prayer.

49. name is glorious and holy.

64. the string of his tongue was loosened.

ii. 10. as they told them about what they had seen and heard, wondered and were astonished.

20. glorifying God, and talking about the things.

22. according as it is written in the law of Moses.

37. the rest of her life she was in widowhood.

39. Now Joseph and Mary, when they had fulfilled in the temple on the first-born all that is written in the law.

41. at the feast of unleavened bread of the passover.

44. supposed that He had gone out with their company ... sought for Jesus among the men of their company.

iii. 4. make straight in the plain a path for our God.

6. the glory of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together.

iv. 1. the Holy Spirit led Him and took Him out to the wilderness, that He might be tempted of Satan, and He was there forty days. And after forty days that He had fasted, He hungered.

6. All these kingdoms and their glory which are committed to me will I give Thee, all this power and glory, because that to me He gave it.

23. done in Capernaum, ye will say to Me, do also here.
v. 3. Jesus went up and sat down in it, and said, Take it from the dry land a little way on the water.
7. They were nearly sinking from the weight of them.

vi. 40. There is no disciple who is perfect as his master in teaching.
45. from the evil treasure that is in his heart (A C).
48. when the rivers were full, they beat upon that house.

vii. 15. that dead man was raised and sat up.

viii. 10. but to those without it is not given to them to know.
13. receive it hastily with joy (Cur.).
29. brake his bonds, and cut them, and was led.
44. the fountain of her issue of blood was stanch.

ix. 6. when His apostles had gone out they went about among the villages and the cities.
36. in the sight of men they told nothing.
40. they were not able to deliver him (comp. Cur.).
48. he that is small and is a child to you (comp. Cur.).
61. to them of my house, and I will come (Cur.).

x. 25. while He said these things, a certain (Cur. Lat. Vet.).
29. no sign from heaven shall be given unto them, but the sign of Jona the prophet (A C, etc.).
36. thy body, when there is in it no light that shines, is dark.
53. And as He said these things (A) against them in the sight of all the people (D, Cur.).

xi. 7. the very hairs of the hair of your head are numbered (xxi. 18).
56. this time and its signs ye do not desire to prove (Cur.).

xii. 13. immediately her stature was made straight.
23. a certain man came, asking Him, and said.

xiv. 1. after He had ceased from prayer (Cur.).
13. call the poor, and the blind, and the lame, and the afflicted (order), and the outcasts, and many others.
21. and the outcasts (order changed).
22. yet there is room at the feast (Cur.).

xv. 13. because he was living wastefully with harlots (Cur.).
23. And being cast into Sheol, he lifted up (Harcl.).

xviii. 24 when Jesus saw that he was sorrowful, He said (A D, Cur.).
32. spit in His face, and shall scourge Him (Cur.).
36. when he heard the voice of the multitude (Cur.).

xix. 39. Good Teacher, rebuke Thy disciples, that they shout not (Cur.).

xx. 9. planted a vineyard, and surrounded it with a hedge.
16. when they heard these things, they knew certainly that He spake this parable about them (from v. 19).
24. And they shewed it to Him, saying, Cæsar's (C L, etc.).
29. There were seven brethren amongst us (D, Aeth.).
30. the second took the woman, and he also died childless.
34. The children of this world beget and go on begetting, and marry and are given in marriage (comp. D, Cur. Lat. Vet.).
37. Moses shewed, when God spake with him from the bush.
41. How say the scribes concerning the Christ (Cur.).

xxi. 11. great earthquakes in divers places, and pestilences in divers places, and famines.
18. one hair of the hair of your head (xii. 7).
25. distress upon the earth, and weakness of the hands of the nations (comp. Cur.).
30. shoot forth and yield their fruit (comp. D, Lat. Ver.).
34. by the eating of flesh and with the drunkenness of wine.
xxii. 58. Let alone, man, I know Him not.
68. answer, nor even let Me go (A.D., Cur., etc.).
xxiii. 15. nothing that is worthy of death did he find against Him, nor has anything worthy of death been done by Him.
20. again Pilate called them, and said unto them, because he was willing to release Jesus, Whom will ye that I release unto you?
23. their voice prevailed, and the chief priests were with them.
37. Saying, Hail to Thee! If Thou be the King of the Jews, save Thyself. And they placed also on His head a crown of thorns (D., Cur.).
52. This man, who had not consented to the accusers.
xxiv. 5. bowed their heads and looked on the ground for their fear. These men said unto them (Cur.).
10. Mary the daughter of James.
19. in power and in deed and in word.
22. went to the sepulchre, where He had been laid (Cur.).
23. We have seen angels there, and we were amazed, and they said about Him that He was alive (Cur.).
33. And He hath appeared.
INDEX TO THE NOTES.

INDEX I. GENERAL.

Abijah, the course of, 8.
Abila, 84.
Abilene, 84.
Abraham's bosom, 393.
Acts, parallels between the Gospel and the, 17, 38, 375, 521.
Adam's skull, legend respecting, 531.
Adultery, 389.
woman taken in, 455, 489.
Aeolic forms, 170, 314, 499.
Almsgiving, 329, 385.
Alphæus, 173.
Analytical or periphrastic tenses, 11, 17, 18, 120, 131, 142, 146, 151, 171, 441, 454, 482, 525, 526, 557.
Andrew, 173.
Angels, 11, 20, 114, 278, 393, 469, 509, 547, 548.
Anna, 71.
Annas, 84, 515.
Annunciation of the birth of the Baptist, 7, 13.
of the birth of Jesus, 20, 23.
of the Passion, 245, 256, 427.
Antipas (see Herod).
Aorist, the supposed gnomic, 33, 208.
Aorist and imperfect, 60, 245, 286, 556.
Aorist and perfect, 31.
Aorist, mixed forms of, 36, 59, 295.
Apocalypse of Jesus, 487.
Apocryphal gospels, their contrast with the canonical, 26, 35, 46, 53, 61, 76, 168, 229, 539, 546, 548.
Aposiopesis, 340, 450.
Apostles, lists of the, 172.
Archelaus, 74, 430, 438.
Aramaic, different translation of the same, 102, 154, 186, 223.
Arimathea, 541.
Article, force of the, 56, 211, 404, 441.
repeated, 219.
Ascension or Assumption, 262, 564.
Asyndeton, 121, 189, 251, 324, 383, 408, 558.
Attic forms, 137, 509, 547.
Attraction of the relative common in Lk., 5, 17, 60, 97, 145, 256, 332, 374, 447.
Augment, 40, 170, 392, 557.
Augustus, the Emperor, 48, 51, 195.
Ave Maria, the, 21.
Baptism of John, 42, 85, 88, 457.
Baptism of Jesus by John, 98, 100.
Baptist, the characteristics of the, 14, 15, 38, 42, 44, 79, 80, 86, 101, 115, 205, 457.
the date of the appearance of, 81.
his message to Christ, 203.
Barabbas, 337, 525.
Bartholomew, 173.
Bartimæus, 429.
Basilidian Gnostics, 528.
Baskets, different kinds of, 245.
Beelzebub, 301.
Benedictus, the, 38, 39.
Bethany, 289, 445, 564.
Bethlehem, 52.
Bethsaida, Lk. perhaps ignorant of a second, 243.
Bezae; see Codex.
Birth of Christ, date of, 55.
Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, 321.
Blind, healing the, 203, 431.
Bloody sweat, 510.
Bread, break, 557.
daily, 295.
Brethren of the Lord, 174, 223, 549.
Bull Unam Sanctam, 507.
Bush, the, 470.
Caesar, 466.
Caesarea Philippi, 83, 246.
Calaphas, 84, 515.
Calvary, 530.
Capernaum, 131, 195.
Capital punishment, 519, 527.
Census, 47, 52.
Centurions, 194, 195, 539.
Chiasmus, 277, 324, 529.
Childlessness, a calamity to Orientals, 10, 19, 529.
Children, Christ's attitude towards, 257, 421.
Chorazin, 276.
Christ, meaning of the title of the, 67, 121; comp. 448, 456.
Christology of the Synoptists, 282.
Chronology in Lk., 5, 19, 75, 81, 102, 250, 261.
Circumcision, 36, 61, 62.
Cleansing of the temple probably repeated, 453.
Cleopas, 551, 553.
Climax, 184, 203, 204, 245.
Cocks not excluded from Jerusalem, 516.
Coincidences between Lk. and S. Paul, 274, 411, 514, 558.
Coins, 320, 370, 465, 475.
Colt, 447.
Confession of Peter, 245.
Conflation of texts, 243, 300, 316, 324, 524, 553, 566.
Court of the Women, 67, 475.
Cross, 248, 528.
Crucifixion, 531.
day of the, 491, 492, 527, 541, 542, 543.
Cups at the Passover, 495.

Darkness at the Crucifixion, 537.
David, 52, 167, 472.
city of, 52.
Davidic descent of Mary uncertain, 21, 23, 53.
Day of Questions, 455.
Dead, raising the, 197, 201, 237.
Demoniacs, 134, 136, 229, 253, 342.
Demonology, Lk. has no peculiar, 242, 277.
Demons, 133, 139, 208, 228, 278, 301.
Denials, Peter's, differences respecting, 503, 514.
 Destruction of Jerusalem, 250, 451, 481.
influence over Judas, 490; see Satan.
Disciples other than the Twelve, 176, 179, 198, 254, 267.
pairs of, 272.
Discourses of Christ, 176, 316.
Discrepancies between the Gospels, 226, 239.
Dives, 391.
Divinity of Jesus Christ, 25, 78, 121, 364, 370, 519.
Divorce, 390.
Documents used by Lk., 7, 44, 46, 260.
Dogs, 392.
Door, the narrow, 346.
Doric usage, 128.
Dove in symbolism, 99.
Doxology to the Lord's Prayer, 298.
Drachts of fishes, two such miracles to be distinguished, 147.
Ehionism not found in Lk., 180, 300, 329, 390, 413, 425, 426.
Elijah and the Baptist, 15, 241.
and Moses, 251.
 Elisabeth, mother of the Baptist, 9, 25.
song of, 27, 29.
Emmaus, 551.
Enoch, Book of, 156, 398, 461.
Essenes, 44.
Eternal life, 284, 386, 427.
Eucharist, Institution of the, 494, 557.
Evening, 138, 556.
Excommunication, 181.
Exorcists, Jewish, 259, 302.
I. GENERAL

Faith, 154, 213, 226, 236, 400, 431.

Fasting, 72, 108, 161, 417.

Feasts, 74, 448, 490, 493.

Fig tree, the barren, 339.

Fire, baptizing with, 95.

Five thousand, the feeding of, 242.

Forty, the number, in Scripture, 108.

Fox, 265, 349.

Funerals, 198, 199, 237.

Gabriel in Scripture and in Jewish legend, 16.

Galileans, 263, 337.

Galilee, 20, 117, 521.

Gehenna, 277, 319.

Genealogy of Christ, 101.

given as that of Joseph, 103.

Genitive absolute in Latin of Codex Bezae, 93, 256, 438.

Genitive, characterizing, 124, 383.

Gennesaret, 142.

Gentiles, salvation open to the, 69, 80, 105, 129, 270, 363, 461.

Gerasenes, 227.

Grace before meat, 244, 557.

Graves, 312.

Hades, 277, 319, 393, 397.

Hands, laying on of, 338, 341.

Hebraisms, 9, 10, 17, 29, 37, 68, 162, 263, 273, 320, 360, 438, 460, 465, 494, 548.

Hermon the probable scene of the Transfiguration, 250.

Herod the Great, 7, 430, 438.

his supposed destruction of Jewish genealogies, 102.

Herod Antipas, 83, 97, 241, 337, 348, 522.

Herod Philip, 83.

Herodians, 464.

Heredias, 97.

High priest, 8, 84, 515.

Hillel, 182, 189, 304, 318.

Hinnom, 319.


Horn of salvation, 40.

Houses in the East, 153, 318.

Iambic verse, accidental, 155.

Ignatius, false tradition respecting, 258.

Imperative present, 186, 196, 199, 288, 511.

Imperfect and aorist, 60, 245, 286, 556.

Impersonal plurals, 189, 325, 385.

Inspiration, not a substitute for research, 5.

Interpolations, 22, 120, 165, 168, 264, 294, 312, 327, 331, 410, 450, 521, 522, 525, 531, 533, 540, 542, 551, 561.

Iturea, 83.

Jairus, 234.

James the brother of John, 145, 173.

James of Alphaeus, 173.

Jericho, 429, 438.

Jerome, Greek text used by, 256, 485, 515.

occasional carelessness of, 347, 451, 483, 552.

Jerusalem, two forms of the name, 64.


Jesus does not publicly proclaim Himself as the Messiah, 247.

abstains from invading the office of constituted authorities, 150, 322, 404.

often answers questions indirectly, 332, 443.

seems to use His supernatural power of knowledge with reservation, 434, 446.

by Divine decree must suffer, 247, 250, 350, 408, 506, 555.

Jews and Samaritans, 263, 289.

Joana, 216, 549.

John the Apostle, 145, 237, 250, 259, 264, 279, 292, 512, 516.

John the Baptist; see Baptist.

Jonah, 306.

Jordan, 85.

Joseph the husband of Mary, 26, 52, 63, 67, 75, 78.

Joseph of Arimathea, 540.

Judea, meaning of the name, 8, 141, 200, 521.

Judas of James, 174.

Judas Iscariot, 172, 175, 425, 490, 499, 511.

his treachery not a fiction, 491.

Judas of Galilee, 248, 337, 466.

Judge, the unrighteous, similarities between this and other parables, 413.

Judgment, day of, 276.

Juttah possibly the birthplace of the Baptist, 28.
Kingdom of God, 140, 141, 249, 275, 406.
Kiss of peace, 512.
Kneeling at prayer, 308; comp. 416.

Last Supper, day of the, 491.
Latinisms, 336, 361, 441.
Lawyers, 152, 206.
Lazarus, 390.
Leaven, 318.
Lepers, healing of, 149, 404.
Leprosy, 48, 50.
Levi, 158, 268.
Levirate law, 468.
Life, 235, 249, 323.
Lilies of the field, 327.
Limitation of Christ's human knowledge, 79, 197, 236, 404, 446, 472.
Lord, the word, how used of Christ and of Jehovah, 152, 199, 309, 400.
Lord's Prayer, 293.
Lord's Supper, 495, 557.
Lot's wife, 499.
Love, 184.
Luke, not an eye-witness, 2, 3.
not one of the Seventy, 270.
not one of the two at Emmaus, 551.
his order mainly chronological, 5, 19, 75, 81, 102, 250, 261.
Lysanias, 84.
Maccabees, Fourth Book of, 471.
Magdalen, 215; see Mary.
Magnificat, the, 30, 39.
Malchus, 513.
Mammon, 385.
Marcion's alterations in the text of Lk., 283, 347, 389, 423.
Marcion's excisions, 6, 119, 347, 536 (p. lxviii).
insertions, 264, 521.
Mark, Gospel of, whether used by Lk., 2, 246, 250, 494.
Marriage, 21, 469.
Martha of Bethany, 233, 290.
Mary of Bethany, 209, 290.
Mary of Magdala, 209, 216, 540, 549.
Mary the Blessed Virgin, 21, 25, 29, 32, 34, 53, 60, 65, 70, 77.
Mary, her supposed vow of perpetual virginity, 24, 53, 224.
Matthew, 158, 173.
Gospel of, whether used by Lk., 26, 27, 64, 74, 246, 250, 462, 479, 494.
Measures of quantity, 383.
Messiah, 101, 448.
Millenarians, 427.
Ministry in Galilee, 115.
in Judea, 352.
Ministry, duration of Christ's, 122.
Miracles, their harmony with a great crisis, 7.
their position in the Ministry, 140, 217.
condensed reports of numerous, 137, 151, 176, 203.
Mission of the Twelve, 238.
of the Seventy, 269.
Moses, 65, 251.
Mount of Precipitation, 129.
of Transfiguration, 250.
Mustard-seed, 344.
Nain, 198.
Nazareth, 21.
Nazirite, 10, 14, 267.
Nominative for vocative, 238, 282.
Non-interpolations, Western, 322, 566.
Nunc dimittis, the, 67.
Olives, Mount of, 445.
Optative mood, 22, 94, 170, 421.
Oral tradition, 3, 61, 507.
Orthography, questions of, 21, 28, 51, 57, 63, 128, 131, 142, 359, 389, 434, 486, 493.
coincidences between, 413, 437-pairs of, 163, 344.
Paradise, 536.
Paronomasia, 479.
Passion, 489.
Passover, 490.
Paul; see Coincidences.
Periphrastic tenses; see Analytical.
Peter, 140, 142, 144, 172, 236, 237, 252, 331, 492, 504, 514.
his mother-in-law, 136.
I. GENERAL

Philip the Apostle, 136, 173.
Philip the tetrarch, 82.
Philip son of Mariamne, 96.
Phlegon, 537.
Pilate, 82, 337, 339, 520, 524.
Pounds, parable of, not a version of that of the Talents, 437.
Prayer, Lk.'s Gospel the Gospel of, 99, 151, 246, 251, 294, 298, 411, 508.
The Lord's, 293.

Purification, 63

Prepositions of rest with verbs of motion and vice versa, 15, 151, 169, 201, 299, 488.
Presentation in the temple, 64.
Priests, 9, 18.
residences of the, 19, 28, 287.
Procurators of Judaea, 49, 51, 82.
Prophecies of Christ, 277, 451, 477.
Prophecies of Christ, 277, 451, 477.
Prophecies of Christ, 277, 451, 477.
Prophets, the, as a division of Scripture, 555, 562.
Psalm x., Christ's question about, 472, 473.
Publicans or tax-collectors, 91, 159, 367, 433.
Purification, 63, 64, 150.
Purpose of the Gospel, 5.

Quirinius, census of, 49.

Rabbinical sayings, 13, 89, 111, 168, 170, 171, 193, 306, 385, 494; see Hillel, Mishna, and Talmud, in Index II.

Rationalist explanations of miracles, 61, 149, 245.


Rebel's beating, 129.
Remission of sins, 42, 86, 154, 563.
Rents, Jewish methods of paying, 383, 459.
Resurrection, 467, 469, 546.
Riches, dangers of, 182, 325, 395, 425.
Righteousness, meaning of, 9.
Robbers, the two, 539, 533.
Room, upper, 493.
Ruler, the young, 421.

Sabbath, attitude of Jesus towards the, 168, 170, 343.
miracles wrought on the, 353.
Sadducees, 467, 519.
Salome, 540, 549.
Salt, savourless, 366.
Salvation, 41, 68.
Samaritans, 263, 289, 337, 404, 405.
Sanhedrin, 248, 269, 455, 514, 517.
Sarepta, 128.
Satan, 108, 111, 278, 302, 341, 490, 503
never said to be visible, 109, 114.
Scorpions, 279, 300.
Scourging, 321, 525, 527.
Scribes, 160, 368.
Sepulchre; see Graves, Tombs.
Serenon the Mount, 176.
Seventy, the, 269, 277.
Shealtiel, 104.
Sheba, the queen of, 307.
Shechinah, 24, 55, 252.
Sheol, idea of in O.T., 397.
Shepherd, the Good, 328, 368.
Shepherds, 54.
Shewbread, 167.
Sicarii, 174, 455.
Silence, why enjoined on the healed, 149, 233, 238.
Siloam, 339.
Simon, Lk.'s use of the name, 144, 172.
Simon the Pharisee, 209.
Simon Zelotes, 174.
Simon of Cyrene, 527.
Sinaic Syriac; see Syriac.
Slaves, 26, 68, 332, 376, 401, 439, 459.
Socrates, 146.
Soldiers, 92, 523, 531, 533.
Son of David, 431.
Son of God, 25.
Son of Man, 156.
Son of the Law, 75.
Soul and life, 249, 324.
Sparrows, 319.
Spirit and soul, 31, 71; see Holy Spirit.
INDEX TO THE NOTES

Steward, different kinds of, 332, 381.

Style of Lk.; see Luke.

Superscription or title of the Gospel, 1.

on the Cross, 533.

Supper, the Last, 494.

Surgery, miracle of, 513.

Susanna, 216.

Swine, difficulties respecting the demons and the, 229.

Sycamore, 400, 433.

Synagogues, business done in, 117, 195, 321.

offices of, 123, 342.

service of, 119, 123, 341.

numbers of, 117, 118.

Symeon, 65.


Tabor, 251.

Tell Hum, 117, 131, 195, 276.

Temple, the, 11, 476.

pinnacle of, 113.

captains of, 490.

Temptation of Christ real, 106, 114.

Tenses, sequence of, 169, 421.

Tetrarch, 82.

Theophilus, a real person, 5.

Tiberius Caesar, the fifteenth year of, 81.

Tiberius Gracchus, 266.

Title; see Superscription.

Tolerance, lessons of, 258, 261.

Tombs, 198, 229, 313, 547.

Trachonitis, 83.

Transfiguration, 250, 253.

Treasury in the temple, 475.

Trials of Christ, the ecclesiastical, 514, 517.

the civil, 519, 522.

Tribute to Caesar, 463, 520.

Triumphal entry into Jerusalem, 444, 452.

Twelve, the, 172, 215, 239, 428.

Uncleanness, 63, 150, 267, 310.

Unicorn, 40.

Usury not forbidden by Christ, 188.

Veil of the Temple, 537.

Virgin birth, 26, 67.

Voice from heaven, 100, 253.

Vultures, 410.

Washing, 309.

Wedding, 331, 357.

Western non-interpolations, 322, 566.

Widow, 72, 198, 412.

Wine, new and old, 164, 165.

Woes, 181, 276, 311, 398, 500.

Words of our Lord, the first recorded, 77.

from the Cross, 531, 535, 538.

the impossibility of inventing such, 539.

Zacchaeus, the head tax-gatherer, 432.

Zacharias, father of the Baptist, 8, 9, 36, 85.

his prayer, 13.

Zacharias, the blood of, 314.

Zealots, 174, 269.

Zerubbabel, 103.

Zeugma, 37.
II. WRITERS AND WRITINGS

INDEX II. WRITERS AND WRITINGS.

Quotations from Greek and Latin authors in illustration of Grammar and Diction are not included in this Index.¹

Acts of Paul and Thecla, 23.
Africanus, 102, 103, 537.
Alexander, Bishop, 91, 329, 551.
Alford, 19, 21, 132, 207, 210, 249, 304, 351, 514.
American Church Review, 86.
American Revisers, 208.
Anastasius Bibliothecarius, 258.
Andrewes, Bishop, 56.
Andrews, S. J., 55, 64, 131, 350.
Annius of Viterbo, 103.
Antipho, 92.
 Apostolic Constitutions, 67, 155, 186, 432, 503.
Aquila, 26, 57, 339.
Aretæus, 254.
Aretius, 185, 323, 347, 442.
Arrian, 466.
Assumption of Moses, 262, 310.
Bacon, 216.
Barnabas, Ep. of, 145, 564.
Baur, 232, 264.
Becker, 222.
Bengel, 17, 29, 37, 78, 81, 90, 93, 137, 143, 211, 214, 246, 271, 274, 287, 322, 334, 362, 367, 396, 423, 441, 471, 475, 503.
Bently, 396.
Bernard, Saint, 417, 511.
Beza, 102, 146, 202, 249.
Birks, 260.
Blakesley, 496.
Blass, 125, 236, 415, 481, 519, 567.
Bleek, 16, 71, 443, 493.
Blunt, J. J., 216, 287.
Boniface VIII., 507.
Browne, E. Harold, 79.
Cajetan, 249, 350.
Calvin, 249.
Campbell, Colin, 91.
Caspari, 9, 178, 261, 445, 552.
Cassiodorus, 48.
Catullus, 199.
Celsus, 425.
Chadwick, 172, 230.
Chandler, 208, 226, 229.
Charles, R. H., 398, 461.
Chase, F. H., 294, 295, 298.
Cheyne, 182.
Chrysostom, 150, 197, 202, 205, 436, 437, 506, 531, 533.
Chwolson, 492, 519.
Cicero, 442, 449, 464.
Classical Review, 119, 513.
Clement of Rome, 33, 189, 399.
Pseudo-Clement, 273, 386.
Clementine Homilies, 161, 189, 281, 423, 432.
Clementine Liturgy, 279.
Clementine Recognitions, 270, 432, 538.
Complutensian Bible, 37, 63.
Conder, 85, 129, 251, 276.

¹ In the majority of cases the references given in this Index are to actual quotations. But, as one of its purposes is to supplement the list of commentaries given in the Introduction (pp. lxxx-lxxxv), by mention of other writers and writings which have been found helpful, bare references without quotation are often included.
Contemporary Review, 229, 295, 523.

Cornelius & Lapide, 126, 278, 450.

Coverdale, 167, 303.

Cox, S., 223, 308, 328.

Cremer, 231, 235.

Cromwell, Thomas, 440.

Curtius, 182, 191.

Cyprian, 298, 418, 427, 436.

Cyril of Alexandria, 139, 340, 343, 349, 368, 406, 410, 422, 505, 507.

Cyril of Jerusalem, 251, 531, 533.

Davies, T. L. O., 326, 357, 401.

Davidson, S., 54.


Didaché, 47, 186, 297, 495.

Didon, 28, 35, 107, 130, 159, 415, 561.

Dimma, Book of, 485.

Diodorus Siculus, 335.

Dionysius of Alexandria, 298.

Dioscorides Pedacius, 5.

Dollinger, 188.

Dorner, 156.

Driver, 31, 88, 473.

Ebrard, 50.

Ecce Homo, 7, 80.


Ellicott, 73, 261, 351, 411.

Enoch, Book of, 25, 156, 262, 385.

Ephrem, 523.

Epiphanius, 274, 521, 536, 551.

Erasmus, 311.

Eusebius, 52, 180, 233, 271, 382, 410, 481, 482, 530, 537, 560.

Eustathius, 166.


Evans, T. S., 58, 144, 278.

Ewalt, H., 81, 87, 141, 189, 339, 531.

Ewalt, P., 177.

Expositor, 102, 105, 155, 196, 222, 246, 311, 372, 425, 498, 536.

Expositor’s Bible, 174, 224.

Ezra, Fourth Book of, 25, 262, 273, 479.

Ezra, Fifth Book of, 386.

Fairbairn, 105.

Farrar, F. W., 133, 175, 178.

Feine, P., 177.

Field, F., 58, 188, 287, 289, 315, 413, 445, 452, 530.

Fritzsche, 89, 133, 154, 192, 203, 531.

Funk, 564.

Furneaux, 51, 212.

Galen, 126, 137, 188.

Gladstone, 228.


Gospel of the Infancy, 76, 229, 534.

Gospel of Pseudo-Matthew, 53.

Gospel of Nicodemus, 65.

Gospel of Peter, 527, 531, 536, 540, 541, 548.


Green, 110, 132, 171.

Gregory of Nazianzus, 304.

Gregory of Nyssa, 295, 297, 406.

Gregory the Great, 279, 293.

Gregory, C. R., 203, 212, 253, 392, 393, 399, 412, 459, 557.

Groser, 192, 401.


Guardian, 486, 492, 542.

Gumpach, 50.

Hahn, 249, 264, 269, 405, 406, 415, 555.

Halcombe, 261.

Hall, Bishop, 357.

Hammond, C., 294.

Harnack, 172.

Harris, Rendel, 119, 264, 486, 521, 523, 542, 567.

Hase, 75, 80, 130, 202, 214, 282, 448, 487.

Hatch, 33, 93, 121, 155, 332.

Haupt, D. E., 488.

Hausrat, 118, 152, 456.

Hefele, 564.

Hegesippus, 532.

Heinichen, 96.

Hengstenberg, 209.

Heracleon, 158, 320.

Hesychius, 93, 315.

Hierocles, 469.

Hilary, 544.

Hilgenfeld, 266, 415.

Hippocrates, 8, 510.

Hippolytus, 386, 423, 560.
II. WRITERS AND WRITINGS

Hitzig, 430.
Hoffmann, R. A., 497.
Hofmann, 19, 555.
Holtzmann, 19, 148, 209, 249, 422.
Hooker, 79, 297.
Hort, 58, 150, 311, 315, 341, 389.
Huxley, 228.
Hoffmann, R. A., 497.
Hofmann, 19, 555.
Holtzmann, 19, 148, 209, 249, 422.
Hooker, 79, 297.
Hort, 58, 150, 311, 315, 341, 389.
Huxley, 228.
Ignatius, 560 ; comp. 504.
Ireneus, 197, 237, 386, 528.
Isocrates, 186.
Jannaris, 296, 298.
Josephus, 84, 97, 102, 117, 131, 142, 251, 269, 339, 345, 452, 466, 477, 474, 477, 482, 490, 538.
Julian, the Emperor, 366.
Jülicher, 498.
Julius Africanus, 102, 103, 537.
Juvenal, 245, 310.
Kimchi, 330.
Koran, 425, 528.
Kuenen, 468.
Lactantius, 86.
Lange, 11, 79, 101, 262, 267, 345, 394, 528, 551, 559, 561.
Lassere, 24, 275, 416.
Latham, 109, 112, 182, 295, 381, 441, 466, 473, 548.
Lutmer, 440.
Leo the Great, 251.
Lewin, 74, 81, 83, 92, 337.
Liber Antiphonanus, 22.
Lightfoot, Bishop, 81, 220, 230, 290, 296, 398, 323, 326, 514.
Lipsius, R. A., 147, 171.
Loman, 352.
Longfellow, 274.
Lucian, 91, 292.
Luther, 163, 190, 202, 303, 507.
Maccabees, Fourth Book of, 471.
Macknight, 429.
McClellan, 51, 101, 296, 406.
Magna Moralia, 222.
Maimonides, 285, 466, 517.
Maine, 372.
Malalas, 233.
Maldonatus, 249, 350, 406, 422, 434, 533, 556.
Marcion, 119, 264, 347, 423.
Margoliouth, 329.
Marshall, 102, 231.
Martial, 245, 301.
Maundrell, 366.
Maurice, F. D., 46, 165.
Mayor, J. B., 53, 174, 223, 549.
Menander, 223.
Meyer, 35, 130, 413, 510.
Michelis, 158.
Milligan, 380, 390.
Milman, 174.
Mimmermus, 327.
Misna, 54, 194, 355, 468.
Mozley, J. B., 93.
Muratorian Canon, 4.
Neander, 70, 85, 237, 422, 449, 538.
Nicander, 167.
Nicephorus Callistus, 258.
Nicholson, E. B., 538.
Nilus, 297.
Nineteenth Century, 228.
Nonnus, 174.
Nösgen, 122, 249, 447, 457, 488.
Olshausen, 58, 237, 345.
Oosterzee, 262, 449.
Origen, 54, 122, 125, 197, 237, 271, 328, 511, 533, 536, 551, 560.
Page, 293.
Passio S. Perpetuae, 92.
Paulus Prædictio, 99.
Paschatus Radbertus, 305, 321, 351, 411.
Pearson, Bishop, 79.
Pfleiderer, 352.
Philo, 66, 119, 195, 337, 520.
Philostorgius, 233.
Phoebus, 528.
Plato, 66, 170, 191.
Pliny the Elder, 48, 210, 268, 360, 366.
Plutarch, 44, 183, 210, 266, 528.
Polybius, 539.
Pressensé, 310, 468.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Protevangelium of James</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psalms of Solomon</td>
<td>32, 33, 41, 56, 57, 283, 284, 295, 310, 394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quadratus</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ramsay</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Renan</td>
<td>124, 131, 156, 207, 224, 245, 260, 277, 322, 454, 539, 553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Resch</td>
<td>168, 273, 442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riess</td>
<td>246, 416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robinson, E.</td>
<td>193, 198, 313, 447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schaff</td>
<td>78, 105, 495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schanz</td>
<td>184, 226, 511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schleiermacher</td>
<td>21, 60, 69, 73, 177, 404, 452, 506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schoettgen</td>
<td>310, 330, 338, 348, 352, 385, 411, 417, 419, 423, 474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scholten</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schreiber</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schürer</td>
<td>19, 49, 83, 152, 263, 468, 518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scrivener</td>
<td>21, 58, 165, 486, 542, 546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Semaeria</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seneca</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Servius Sulpius</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simcox, W.</td>
<td>22, 32, 169, 282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simplicius</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smith of Jordan Hill</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sozomen</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spitta</td>
<td>498</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stallbaum</td>
<td>335, 553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stanley</td>
<td>54, 129, 142, 198, 215, 218, 344, 447, 449, 541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steinhardt</td>
<td>271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stier</td>
<td>207, 351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strabo</td>
<td>44, 51, 141, 219, 286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strauss</td>
<td>70, 130, 197, 200, 202, 352, 413, 430, 437, 473, 502, 539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stroud</td>
<td>511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suetonius</td>
<td>82, 92, 333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suicer</td>
<td>173, 262, 268, 365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suidas</td>
<td>48, 154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surenhusius</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swete</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tacitus</td>
<td>48, 82, 477, 478, 482</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talmud</td>
<td>18, 159, 244, 249, 273, 311, 337, 343, 349, 354, 356, 411, 416, 419, 422, 423, 425, 468, 474, 516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terence</td>
<td>357, 384, 412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tertullian</td>
<td>35, 49, 202, 224, 252, 253, 268, 271, 295, 297, 391, 399, 450, 512, 542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Testaments of the XII. Patriarchs</td>
<td>21, 43, 73, 262, 323, 503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theodotion</td>
<td>463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theophylact</td>
<td>190, 205, 349, 533, 551, 556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thirlwall</td>
<td>473, 497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomson, W. M.</td>
<td>178, 226, 227, 366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tischendorf</td>
<td>130, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tractatus de Rebaptismate</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tregelles</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trench</td>
<td>143, 145, 165, 184, 207, 210, 230, 262, 286, 326, 341, 349, 371, 397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Unam Sanctam</td>
<td>507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Veitch</td>
<td>274, 455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Velleius Patereculus</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warfield</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weissenbach</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weiss</td>
<td>31, 61, 124, 137, 201, 221, 239, 245, 253, 341, 406, 430, 441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wendt</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Westcott</td>
<td>20, 105, 106, 144, 264, 320, 350, 419, 442, 460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WH.</td>
<td>21, 59, 166, 220, 243, 427, 440, 479, 489, 497, 509, 531, 532, 551, 566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wetstein</td>
<td>165, 324, 327, 345, 370, 466</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wieseler</td>
<td>9, 50, 82, 166, 261, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winer</td>
<td>23, 26, 33, 36, et passim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson, C. W.</td>
<td>131, 232, 477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wordsworth, Chr.</td>
<td>132, 289, 385, 422, 483, 557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright</td>
<td>437, 557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xenophon</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zeller</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zumpt</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Index III. Greek Words

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἀσιδ, i. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀδίνηρ, iii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀδραμ, τὸν κλπον, xvi. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδυνος, viii. 31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγαθονεν, vi. 33</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαλλασ, i. 47, x. 21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαλλίασ, i. 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαπά, vi. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαπη, xi. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγελος, i. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἂγει, xxiv. 21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγάζεω, xi. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγος, i. 35</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγρα, v. 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγραυλεω, ii. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγωμα, xxii. 44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄγωμενεσθαι, xiii. 24</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδελφος τοῦ κυρίου, viii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδητ, x. 15, xvi. 23</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδικα, xiii. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδικος, xvi. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄδισεται, i. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄξυμα, ἄδ, xxii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄσεται, vii. 30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιματος, ὥρμβοι, xxii. 44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιος, ii. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιος, xviii. 43</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιει, vi. 29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιειν φωνή, xvii. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιτον, xxiii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλγοντος, iv. 18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλος, i. 55</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλωνος, x. 25</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλθαρας, iv. 33</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκοη, vii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκολοθει μοι, xviii. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκοινως, vi. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκριβως, i. 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλαζατον, vii. 37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλεκτρον, xxii. 60</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλευρος, xiii. 21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄληθος, ix. 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλθως, xii. 51</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλθως, xvili. 18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλους, viii. 29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλως, iii. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄμαρτολος, vii. 37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄμεμπτος, i. 6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄμφετρος, v. 7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄν, i. 62</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναβαινειν, ii. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνάγαιναι, xxii. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνάγειν, ii. 22, viii. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναγινωσκειν, iv. 16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναγκάζειν, xiv. 23</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναγκηρ ἔχειν, xiv. 18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναπεκρίσαι, x. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναπτειν, i. 80</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναφησθη, ii. 44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναθημα, xxi. 5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναρειν, xixi. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνακαβζειν, vii. 15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνακρίνειν, xxiii. 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναληψις, ix. 51</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναλυσις, xiii. 36</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναμνησις, xxii. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναπειρον, xiv. 13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναπτέμπειν, xxiii. 7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνάστασις, ii. 34</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄναστασθαι, i. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνατολη, i. 78</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνδρεας, vi. 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνθεκτορον, x. 12</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνδεκτορ, xvii. 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνηρ, vi. 8, xxiv. 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄνθρωπος, viii. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄντοσαναι, i. 39, iv. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄργα, iii. 36</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρρας, iii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄροια, vi. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρθου δε, i. 20, xii. 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρτιλαμβάνεσθαι, i. 54</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρτιπαρεχοσθαι, x. 31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρτιπερ, viii. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρωμα, i. 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρωτορον, xiv. 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄραγγελλων, viii. 20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄραρς, iii. 21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρειθις, i. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρειττικειν, vi. 35</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄρειχειν, vi. 24</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄριστον, xiii. 46</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄτο, viii. 35</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄτο τοῦ πιθpatibility, x. 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄπογραφή, ii. 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄποδηγεσθαι, viii. 40</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄποδηδόνα, xx. 25</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄποδοκιμάσθαι, ix. 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄποκρίνεσθαι, i. 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄπολαμβάνειν, vi. 34</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄπολυσις, ii. 29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄπολυτρωσις, xxii. 28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX TO THE NOTES

αποτυγχάνει, viii. 7.
αποστασθήναι, xxii. 41.
αποστέλλειν, iv. 18.
απόστολος, vi. 13.
αποστοματίζειν, xi. 53.
αποστρέφειν, xxiii. 14.
αποστάσεσθαι, ix. 61.
αποτελέσαι, xiii. 32.
αποτίθεσθαι, ix. 19.
αποφύχειν, xxii. 26.
απεινα, viii. 16, xv. 8.
απευθεία, vii. 39.
άρα, i. 60.
άρα, xviii. 8.
'Αριμανθία, xxiii. 51.
άρσαται, xi. 37.
άρτοι τῆς προθέσεως, vi. 4.
αρτέσις, xiv. 34.
αρχεσθαι, iii. 8, iv. 21, xii. 45.
αρχή, ζ. εξουσία, xx. 20.
αρχυρείς, iii. 2, ix. 22.
αρχυτελάψης, xix. 2.
αριστεραῖος, iii. 17.
αρκός, v. 37.
αρσάδιον, xii. 6.
αρσώτερος, xv. 13.
αρτιον, iv. 20.
αρτηρίς, xi. 21.
αστεριός, xix. 21.
αστυπός, i. 16, ii. 38.
ασφαλέως, xxiv. 31.
αφεως ἀμαρτῶν, i. 77.
αφορίζειν, vi. 22.
αφρόν, xi. 40.
αφιντυθοῦν, viii. 23.
αρχεῖον, xvi. 10.
ἀρχαῖος, ἀρχαῖ, i. 20, iv. 13.
ἀρχαῖον, i. 17.
βαδέως, xxiv. 1.
βαδέως, vii. 49.
βαλλαντίον, x. 4.
βάλλειν, v. 37, xvi. 20.
βαστιζεῖν, iii. 7.
βαστιζεῖσα, iii. 3.
βαστιζότας, θ. i. 7.
Βαραβάβας, xxiii. 18.
Βαρθολομαῖος, vi. 14.
βασανίζειν, viii. 28.
βάσανος, xvi. 23.
βαστάζειν, vii. 14, xiv. 27.
βάτος, vi. 44, xx. 37.
βάτος, xvi. 6.
βαδελύμα, xvi. 15.
Βεβεβουλεύθαι, vii. 15.
βελώνη, xviii. 25.
Βεβαία, xix. 29.

Βαθρείμου, ii. 4.
Βαθροφάγη, xix. 29.
Βίβλος, iii. 4.
Βλεπος, viii. 43.
Βλασφήμια, v. 21.
Βλάδυνα, vi. 39.
Βλήθη, xxii. 41.
Βλοκοθείς, x. 22.
Βουλευτής, xxiii. 30.
Βουλή τοῦ Θεοῦ, viii. 29.
Βουνος, iii. 4.
Βραχίων, i. 51.
Βρέφος, ii. 12, xviii. 15.
Βρέχειν, vii. 38.
Βρυγμός, xiii. 28.
Βύσσος, xvi. 19.
Γαβριήλ, i. 19.
Γαζοφυλάκου, xxi. 1.
Γαλλαλα, i. 26.
Γάμοι, xii. 36, xiv. 8.
Γάρ, xviii. 14, xxiii. 22.
γε, v. 36, xi. 8.
γέννα, xii. 5.
γενεά αἰών, xxi. 32.
γεννάω, i. 33.
γένεσις, iii. 7.
Γενεσαρέτ, v. 1.
γῆ, ἢ, iv. 25.
γινεσθαι, i. 5, 41, iii. 2, iv. 36, vi. 13.
γίνωσκειν, x. 22.
γνωρίζειν, ii. 17.
γνωστός, xxiii. 49.
γογγυζειν, v. 30.
γραφή, ἢ, iv. 21.
δαμινών, iv. 33, vii. 33.
δάκτυλος, xv. 22.
δάκτυλος, Θεοῦ, xi. 20.
δαίζειν, vi. 34.
δαίωσθης, vii. 41.
δὲ καί, iii. 9.
δήσεις, i. 13, v. 33.
δεῖ, ii. 49, iv. 43, ix. 22.
δεύτεραι, v. 12.
δέεις, xii. 47.
δεσπότης, ii. 29.
[δεσποτικότης], vi. 1.
δεξίοσθαι, xii. 17.
διά, v. 19.
δ. τῶν προφητῶν, xviii. 31.
διαβάλλειν, xvi. 1.
διαβλέπειν, vi. 42.
διαβολος, iv. 2, viii. 12.
διαγγέλλειν, ix. 60.
διαγγελλεῖν, ix. 32.
III. GREEK WORDS

diaβήσῃ, xxii. 20.
dialouγiσμός, v. 22.
diaμένειν, xxii. 28.
diaμέριζειν, xxii. 17.
diaπολέμειν, ii. 23.
diaφόρμα, xi. 17.
diaυκτηρεῖσθαι, vi. 12.
diaπραγματεύεσθαι, xix. 15.
diaσελεῖν, iii. 14.
diaστρέφειν, ix. 41, xxiii. 2.
diaσωμῖν, vii. 3.
diaτάσσειν, iii. 13.
diaφέρειν, xii. 7.
dιήρξεσθαι, ii. 15, v. 15.
dηγγοσίς, i. 1.
dικαιος, i. 6.
dικαιοῦν, vii. 29, 35.
dικαίωμα, i. 6.
dίκτυον, v. 2.
dίδ, i. 35.
διχοτομεῖν, xii. 46.
δόγμα, ii. 1.
δοκός, vi. 41.
dοξάζειν, ii. 20.
dοξάζειν τόν Θεόν, v. 25.
δούλη, i. 38.
δοξῆ, v. 29.
δραχμῆ, xv. 8.
δύναμις, iv. 14, 36.
δύνατης, i. 52.
δυσατός, i. 49.
δύναν, iv. 40.
dυσκόλως, xviii. 24.
dώμα, v. 9.
ed, iv. 34.
ed, xix. 40.
ed, iv. 34, 41, xxii. 51.
edoμος, εαυτόν, xii. i, xxi. 30.
edομήκορτα, x. 1, 17.
edελείρειν, i. 69.
edγακείν, ει, ενκακείν.
edφάλειν, xix. 44.
edθήν, τά, τού κόσμου, xii. 30.
edθός, κατά τό, i. 8.
ed, xii. 22, xxii. 67.
ed δέ μηγε, v. 36.
ed kal, xi. 8, xviii. 4.
edθιαμέναι, κατά τό, ii. 27, i. 8.
edθόδος, κατά τό, iv. 16.
edεκεν, ou, iv. 18.
eπεν δέ, i. 13, iv. 24.
eπεν παραβολήν, vi. 39.
eπεν πρός, i. 13.
elήφην, ii. 29.
elήφην, eli, vii. 50.
el, μᾶ, elv, viii. 22, xiv. 18, xxiv. 1.
elάγειν, ii. 27.
elαφέρειν, xi. 4.
el, el, i. 4, xi. 13.
el ḗκ κηρῶ, xx. 35.
elβάλλειν, vi. 22.
elβιδουα, ix. 9.
elβιεῖν, xviii. 3.
elε, xiii. 28.
elείνοις, x. 12, xxii. 22.
elκόπτειν, iii. 9, xiii. 7.
elκρήμασθαι, xix. 48.
elκλέγεσθαι, vi. 13.
elκλείσθαι, xvi. 9, xxii. 32, xxiii. 45.
elμωκτηρίζειν, xvi. 14.
elπειράζειν, iv. 12.
elπλησιάσθαι, ii. 48.
elπνεύειν, xxiii. 46.
elπενέθερον, xxii. 43.
elλαία, xix. 29, xxi. 37.
elλαιος, vii. 46.
elλαιόν, xix. 29, xxi. 37.
elλαχιστος, vii. 10.
elλέγχεσθαι, iii. 19.
elλος, i. 59, 54, 74.
elλεισαίος, iv. 27.
elλοιοῦν, xvi. 20.
elλεμανοῦς, xxiv. 13.
elμημηλαίος, vi. 25.
elμπροσθεν, xiv. 4, 28.
elν, iv. 32.
elν εξουσία, i. 32.
elν after verbs of motion, i. 17, v. 16, vii. 17.
elνθος, vii. 25, xiii. 17.
elνθεῖν, xxiv. 49.
elνδρεύειν, xi. 54.
elνχειν, i. 53.
elνιατών κυρίου δεκτόν, iv. 19.
elνκακείν, xviii. 1.
elνοτα, τά, xi. 41.
elτιμος, vii. 2.
elτος ὅρω, xvii. 21.
elτρέπεσθαι, xviii. 2, xx. 13.
elτιμωρίον, i. 15.
elτιμεῖσθαι, xxii. 31.
elτίφηνες, see εξέφυνες.
elτιμεστέλειν, xx. 10.
elτέχνησθαι ἀπό, iv. 35.
elτέστι, xx. 22.
elτέφυνες, ii. 13, ix. 39.
elτης, vii. 11.
elτιματαίοι, ii. 47.
INDEX TO THE NOTES

εξοδος, ix. 31.
εξοδουσεων, xviii. 9.
εξουσια, iv. 32, 36, ix. 1.
εξουσία του σκότους, xxii. 53.
επάρειν φωνή, xi. 27.
επαιχύσεσθαι, ix. 26.
επαετία, xvi. 3.
επί, xi. 22, 34.
επανάχγεσθαι, v. 3.
επαναπάθεσθαι, x. 6.
επεδίδημε, i. 1.
επέρροντι, iii. 10.
επέχειν, xiv. 7.
επηρέαζεν, vi. 28.
επι, iv. 25, v. 5.
επί τῆς βατοῦ, xx. 37.
επιβίβαζεν, xix. 35.
επιβιβάζειν, ix. 38.
επιβλημα, v. 36.
επιγνώσκειν, i. 4, v. 22.
επιγραφή, xxii. 28.
επίδεος, i. 25.
επιδοδος, iv. 17.
επιζητεύει, iv. 42.
επικεθαδα, v. i, xxiii. 23.
επιλαμβάνεσθαι, ix. 47.
επιλεγέται, xvi. 21.
επινοία, x. 3.
επιπλείτειν, i. 12, xv. 20.
επιστιγμος, ix. 12.
επισκέπτεσθαι, i. 68, vii. 16.
επισκιάζειν, i. 35, ix. 34.
επισκόπηθη, xix. 44.
επιστάτης, v. 5.
επιστρέφειν, viii. 55.
επιστρέφειν, xxiii. 5.
επιστρέφοντας, iv. 39.
επιφώςειν, xxii. 54.
επιτήκερα, i. 1.
εργάτης διδόται, xii. 58.
εργομοι, i. 80.
ερσης, xxiii. 11.
εστέρα, xxiv. 29.
εσωθεν, το, xi. 39, 40.
εστέρος, ix. 56, xxiii. 32.
ετο, i. 15.
ετοι μάζειν, ii. 31.
ετος, i. 24, ii. 41.
ετος λήξεσθαι, i. 19, ii. 10.
ευγγελίζεσθαι, ix. 17.
eυγγενής, xix. 12.
eυδοκεῖν, iii. 22.
eυδοκία, ii. 14.
eυδογέτης, xxii. 25.
eυδερος, ix. 62.
eυδέθεος, xii. 34.
eυδοκοτέρον, v. 23.
eυδαρδής, ii. 25.
eυδογία, vi. 28.
eυδογυμνός, i. 42.
eυδογυμνότας, i. 68.
eυδώρως, xxii. 10.
eυδώρως, xxii. 17, 19.
eφιμαρία, i. 5.
eφιστάναι, ii. 9.
εχειν, vii. 42.
eῖς, iv. 42.
 Zikaerias, x. 5.
ζηλωτής, vi. 15.
ζυς, ii. 37.
ζυτέων, xiiil. 24.
ζηροφόβει, i. 25.
ζυγη, xii. 1, xiii. 21.
ζωγραφίζειν, v. 10.
ζωή, viii. 43.
ζωογονεῖν, xvii. 33.
η, xv. 7, xvii. 2.
η, αλλ', xii. 51.
ηγεμονεύειν, ii. 2, iii. 1.
ηγεμονία, iii. 1.
ηγεμόν, xx. 20.
ηλικία, ii. 52, xii. 25.
ημέρας, ευ ραίσ, i. 39.
ημοία, τά, xiv. 8.
ηρωίν, i. 5.
'Ηρωίν (Antipas), iii. 1, ix. 7.
'Ηρώδας, iii. 19.
ησυχάζειν, xiv. 3.
ήχος, iv. 37, xxii. 25.
θάμβος, iv. 36.
θαυμαζέων εκ, ii. 33.
θεάσαται, v. 27.
θέλειν, ix. 24, 54, xiii. 31, xx. 46.
θέλημα, xxii. 42.
θεόφιλος, i. 3.
θεραπευεῖν, iv. 40, v. 15.
θέρος, xxii. 30.
θρίξ, xxi. 18.
θρόμβος, xxii. 44.
θύειν, xv. 23.
'Ιδείρων, viii. 41.
'Ιδειρων Αλφαίων, vi. 15.
ιάσθαι, v. 17, vi. 17.
ιαστίς, xiii. 32.
ιδος, i. 38.
ιδον γηρ, i. 44.
ιερατεύειν, i. 8.
'leperlys, xviii. 35.
leprour, ii. 46, iv. 9.
lepressa, ii. 22.
leprousa, Æ, ii. 25.
Iesous, i. 31.
Ikanos, vii. 12.
Ikaous, viii. 6.
Ileakebeba, xviii. 13.
Ileapelas, ii. 46, iv. 9.
Ilepore, xvi. 22.
Illepoue, ii. 25.
Ileus, i. 31.
Iooaa., v. 10.
Iooaas, xe.KlA.Dov, vi. 16.
Iooaas, IrepKa.piwe, vi. 16.
IrrdryeKos, xvi. 35.
IrrTAm, l911, yiii. #.
IrrTw, l. 19.
IrrTwv, xii. 29.
IrrVas, xi. 29.
Itaten, xi. 9.
Itamen, vi. 2.
Itra., iv. 31.
Itraa., i. 43, iv. 3.
Itoa, i. 39.
'Itoia, i. 5, iv. 44, vii. 17.
'Itoia, I. 5.
'Itoias' Iakosou, vi. 16.
'Itoias' Iskapou, vi. 16.
Itaggeivos, xx. 35.
Istpav, eptyp, viii. 44.
... en epToos, i. 19.
... en sTadeis, xviii. 11.
'Itoane, viii. 3, xxiv. 10.
'Itonai, i. 29.
IgyI, xvi. 9.
Iaki, xvi. 9.
Iadepise, v. 12.
Iadepismoi, ii. 22.
Iadehe, i. 3, viii. 1.
Iadehevin, viii. 52.
Iadepise, iv. 20, xiv. 28.
Iadeite, i. 7.
Iadete, i. 2.
Iaia itou, i. 16, vi. 14, vi. 20.
Iaia yap, vi. 32.
Iaipa, iii. 2.
Iaipou, v. 38.
Iatiar, ii. 1, xx. 24.
Ialados, vii. 24.
Ialein, vi. 15, xiv. 12.
Iamhlos, xvii. 25.
Iarpou, i. 42.
Iarpous, vi. 41.
Iat, vii. 1.
Iat hyeran, 70, xi. 3.
Iat Dous, p. 1.
Iat mados, ix. 18.
Iat geuven, v. 11.
Iatgeuven, xiii. 17.
Iatgeuven, ix. 14.
Iatgeuven, iv. 29.
Iatgeuven, xx. 6.
Iatgeuven, xix. 7.
Iatgeuven, ii. 7, xxii. 11.
Iatgeuven, vi. 41, xii. 27.
Iatgeuven, xiiii. 45.
Iatgeuven, viii. 26.
Iatgeuven, iii. 7.
Iatgeuven, ii. 30.
Iatgeuven, ix. 58.
Iatgeuven, vii. 38, xv. 20.
Iatgeuven, xix. 30.
Iatgeuven, iv. 31.
Iatgeuven, i. 4.
Iatgeuven, xi. 26.
Iatgeuven, xii. 55.
Afaapein, iv. 23, 31.
Afaapein, ii. 34.
Afar, i. 69.
Afar, xv. 16.
Afar, gamias, xx. 17.
Afar, xii. 3.
Afar, xix. 31.
Afar, xii. 26.
Afar, xiiii. 39.
Afar, xiiii. 39.
Afar, xiiii. 39.
Afar, xi. 13.
Afar, vi. 62.
INDEX TO THE NOTES

λαγγάνειν, i. 9.
Δάγαρος, xvi. 20.
λαλαγ, viii. 23.
λαξευτός, xxiii. 53.
λατρεευν, iv. 8.
λέγειν παραβολήν, v. 36.
λέγω σοι, ὕμνον, vii. 9, 47, xviii. 14.
λεγεύων, viii. 30.
λειτουργία, i. 23.
λεπτόν, xii. 59, xxii. 1.
Δεῦτ, v. 27.
λήρος, xxiv. 11.
ληστή, x. 30.
λίθος, iii. 8, xx. 7.
λυκή, xvii. 18.
λύκη, v. 1.
λυμός, v. 25.
λόγος, i. 2.
λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ, viii. 11.
λοιμός, xxi. 11.
Δυσαναίος, iii. 1.
λυσιτελεία, xvii. 2.
λυσόδοσις, xxiv. 21.
λύτρωσις, i. 68.
λυχνία, viii. 16.
λύχνος, viii. 16.

Μαγγάλην, viii. 2, xxiv. 10.
μακάριος, i. 45, vi. 20.
μακάριον, xv. 13.
μακρόθεν, xvi. 23, xviii. 13.
μακρόθυμοι, xviii. 7.
μακρότης, xix. 12.
μαραμάται, xvi. 9.
Μάρθα, x. 38.
Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου, xxiv. 10.
Μαρία ἡ Μαγγάλην, viii. 2, xxiv. 10.
Μαρία ἡ Μάρθας ἀδελφή, η. 39.
μαρτυρεῖν, iv. 22.
mαρτυροῦσα, el. v. 14.
mάρτις, vii. 21.
Μαρταῖος, vi. 15.
μάχαιρα, xxii. 38.
μεγαλύθεναι, i. 46, 58.
μεγάλη φωνὴ, η. 42.
μέλλειν, ix. 31.
μέν, viii. 5.
μέν οὖν, iii. 18.
μένειν, xix. 6.
μενείν, xi. 28.
μεριμνᾶ, x. 41.
μέρος, x. 42.
μερισμός, xii. 14.
μεσανύκτιον, xi. 5.
μέσω, ἐν, viii. 7.
μεταδίδοναι, iii. 11.

Μετάνοια, iii. 3, v. 32.
μετεωρίζεσθαι, xii. 29.
μέτοχος, v. 7.
μέχρι, xvi. 16.
μὴ interrogative, x. 15.
μὴ prohibitive, vii. 6.
μὴ with participles, i. 20.
μὴ γένοιτο, xx. 16.
μὴ τοτὲ, iii. 15.
μὴν, i. 24.
μηνύειν, xx. 37.
μηκρότερος, o. vii. 28.
μισμα, xxiv. 1.
μισμαίος, xxiv. 1.
μισθοθρόπως, l. 27, ii. 5.
μόγις, ix. 39.
μοδίος, xi. 33.
μονογενὴς, vii. 12, viii. 42, ix. 38.
μύρον, vii. 37.
μορφαίνειν, xiv. 34.
Μωίσης, ii. 22.

Ναζαρῆ, i. 26.
Ναζαρηνός, iv. 34.
Ναῦ, vii. 11.
νεκρός, xv. 24.
νέος, v. 37.
νήσιος, x. 21.
νομικός, vii. 30.
νομοδιδασκάλος, v. 17.
νόμος, o. vii. 16.
νότος, xii. 55.
νομιφή, xii. 53.
νομιφόν, v. 34.
νῦν, xi. 39.
νῦν, ἀπὸ τοῦ, i. 48.
 νῦν, ii. 37.

Ξόλον, xxii. 52, xxiii. 32.
ὁ δὲ, i. 29.
τὸ with clauses, i. 62, ix. 46.
to with infinitives, i. 74, 77.
ἐν τῷ . . . i. 8, iii. 21.
τὸ καθ’ ἡμέραν, xi. 3.
ἀδυνάται, ii. 48, xvi. 24.
οικήτης, xvi. 13.
οικονύμιος, xii. 42, xvi. 1.
οίκος, ii. 4.
oikouμένη, η. ii. 1, iv. 5.
καθ’ ὀλήν, iv. 14.
διβροσ, xii. 54.
διμελεῖν, xxiv. 14.
diakios, xii. 3, 5.
diaveloiv en xii. 8.
III. GREEK WORDS

παρέχειν, xi. 7.
παροτάρειν, ii. 22.
παρεστώτες, ol, xix. 24.
παρακιήν, xxiv. 18.
πάσα, i. 66, iii. 16, iv. 13, vi. 30, ix. 42.
πάσα σαρκί, iii. 6.
πατείν, x. 19, xxi. 24.
πατηρία, ii. 4.
πέδη, viii. 29.
πεδινός, vi. 17.
πεθέσθαι, xvi. 31.
Πέλατος, iii. 1, xiii. 1, xxiii. 1.
περάξειν, iv. 2.
περασμός, xi. 4.
πέμπτης, iv. 18.
πενθερά, iv. 38.
πενθός, xxi. 2.
πέρατα τὴν γῆν, τὰ, xi. 31.
περή, θαυμάσκειν, ii. 18.
περί, τὸ, ὁ, xxii. 37.
περιγιόνωσθαι, xii. 35.
περιλυπται, xviii. 23.
περιπλέκται, x. 30.
περιποιεῖσθαι, xvii. 33.
περιποιέωσθαι, xii. 35.
περιφόρησθαι, viii. 29.
περιφέρεσθαι, iii. 22.
περίχωρος, iii. 3.
Pέτρος, v. 8, vi. 14.
πεινακίδιον, i. 63.
πιστεύειν, xvi. 11, xxiv. 24.
πίστις, v. 20.
πιστός, xii. 42.
πίνακας, xxii. 38.
πίνακας, xii. 9.
πίνακας, xii. 35.
πίνακας, xii. 1.
πίνακας, i. 13.
πίνακας, i. 47.
πατείν, xxii. 19.
πατείν ἔλεος, i. 72, λ. 37.
πατείν κάρπος, iii. 8.
πατείν κράτος, i. 51.
ποιμνος, xii. 32.
πῶς, v. 19, vi. 32.
πόλις Δανείς, ii. 4.
πόλις Ιωάννα, i. 39.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>INDEX TO THE NOTES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>πορεόσθαι, iv. 30.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πόρονον, xvii. 12.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ποταμός, i. 29, vii. 39.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πότηριον, xii. 17.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πόδας, παρά τούς, vii. 38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πραγματεύθηκα, xix. 13.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πράκτωρ, xii. 58.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πράξις, xxiii. 51.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πράσινοι, i. 13.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεπραγμένον ἠστίν, xxiii. 15.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρεσβυτέρων, xxii. 66.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρεσβύτεροι, vii. 3.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προιόν, ii. 26.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προδάλλων, xxi. 30.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προδότης, vi. 16.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προφέρσανθα, i. 17.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προδέχεσθαι, ol ὁροὺ τῆς, vi. 4.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προκόπτερι, ii. 52.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προμελερτή, xxi. 14.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρό, xxiv. 50.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εἰσε πρός, i. 13, v. 30.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τὰ πρός, xiv. 32.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσταπανοῦ, x. 35.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσδέχεσθαι, xv. 2.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσδικέψα, iii. 15.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσεργάζεσθαι, xix. 16.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσευχέσθαι, iii. 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσευχή, vi. 12.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσέχειν, xili. 1.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσκίνων, iv. 7.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσποιεῖται, xxiv. 29.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προστεθήκα, i. 20, xvii. 5.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσθείς εἰπέν, xix. 11.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσθέτο πέμψα, xx. 11.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσφωνεῖν, vi. 13.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προσφέσαι, xi. 46.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρόσωπον, iii. 31, ix. 51, 53.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρόσωπον λαμβάνειν, xx. 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προφητεύειν, i. 67.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προφητήτα, oi, xvi. 16.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>προφήτης, ii. 36.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρωτοκαθεδρα, xi. 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρωτοκλησία, xiv. 7.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρώτος, ii. 2, xv. 22, xix. 47.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρώτον, xili. 1.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρωτότοκος, ii. 7.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτερόγυνον τοῦ ἱεροῦ, iv. 9.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτυόν, xiii. 17.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτύσσειν, iv. 20.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτώσις, ii. 34.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτώχος, iv. 18.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτύλων, xvi. 20.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτυχάνεσθαι, xviii. 36.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πῦρ, iii. 16, xili. 49.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πυελ αἰσθάνονται, ii. 17.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πυρετὸς μέγας, iv. 38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σάρ, i. 34, vi. 42.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| hēma, vi. 49. |
| ἤμα, i. 65, ii. 15, 52. |
| ἡμείς, v. 6, ix. 42. |
| δίτειν, iv. 35. |
| δομφαλα, ii. 35. |
| δύμη, xii. 21. |
| δύσι, viii. 43. |

| ἀδῆθατων, -α, iv. 36. |
| ἄδων, xx. 27. |
| σάκκος, x. 13. |
| Σαλαβίθη, iii. 27. |
| σάλευν, xxi. 26. |
| Σαμαρείτης, ix. 52. |
| Σάραππα, iv. 26. |
| σάρξ, iii. 6. |
| Σατανᾶς, x. 18. |
| σάτων, xiii. 21. |
| σημείων, ii. 34. |
| σῆς, xii. 33. |
| σαγάων, vi. 29. |
| σικερα, i. 15. |
| Σελαδέα, xili. 4. |
| Σίμων, vi. 14. |
| Σίμων ὁ ἱησοῦτις, vi. 15. |
| Σίμων Φαρισαῖος, vii. 40. |
| Σίμων ὁ Κυρραίος, xxii. 26. |
| σίναπι, xili. 19. |
| συνάων, xxiii. 53. |
| συνάξεις, xxii. 31. |
| σταυρός, x. 23. |
| στοματέρων, xii. 42. |
| σκανδαλείς, vii. 23. |
| σκάδαλος, xvii. 1. |
| σκηνή, vii. 9. |
| σκιρτήν, i. 41. |
| σκορπίος, xii. 12. |
| σκούρωτος, xxiv. 17. |
| σκόλλειν, vii. 6. |
| σκύλον, xi. 22. |
| σοφιστὴς, xiii. 20. |
| σοφία, ii. 52. |
| η σοφία τοῦ Θεοῦ, xi. 49. |
| στείρον, i. viii. 5. |
| στείβον, ii. 16. |
| στέλλερα, i. 78. |
| στόρμα, vi. 1. |
| στάσις, xxiii. 19. |
| σταυρός, ix. 23, xxiii. 26. |
| στολή, xv. 22. |
| στόμα μαχαλίνης, xxi. 24. |
| στρατηγευμον, iii. 14. |
| στράτευμα, xxiii. 11. |
III. GREEK WORDS

591

στρατηγὸς τοῦ ἱροῦ, xxii. 4.
στρατωμένος, xxii. 12.
συγγενής, i. 36.
συκομορέας, xix. 4.
συκοφαντείς, iii. 14.
Σωματικοί, ii. 25.
σύν, i. 56.
συναγωγὴ, iv. 15.
συναπλαμβάνομαι, x. 40.
συνιστάσθηκα, viii. 29.
συνδέλλεω, i. 19.
συνέθροος, xxii. 56.
συνεφαί, ix. 18.
σύνεσις, ii. 47.
συνευδοκεῖ·, xi. 48.
συνέχεια, iv. 38.
συνθάλασσα, xx. 18.
συνλαμβάνειν, i. 24.
συνοικία, ii. 44.
συνοχή, xxi. 25.
συνπίπτεις, vii. 49.
συσπείτευς, viii. 14, 42.
συντρεπθείσας, xiv. 25.
συστήρεις, i. 19.
συστηθείσαι, xxii. 5.
συσφάσθαι, viii. 7.
Σύριος, iv. 27.
σχολάζω, xi. 25.
σωματικός, iii. 22.
σωφή, i. 47, ii. 11.
σωτηρία, i. 71.
σωτήριον, ii. 30.

tαμειών, xii. 3.
tαπεινώθη, xiv. 11.
tαπελώσας, i. 48.
tε, ii. 16.
tέκνον,
tελέειν, ii. 39.
tελείων, ix. 32.
tελευθερών, i. 45.
tελευθερία, viii. 14.
tελευθερία, xii. 25.
tελευθερία, v. 30.
tελευθέρων, v. 27.
tεραρχεῖν, iii. 1.
Τίθερος Καίσαρ, iii. 1.
tίθεθατι ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ, i. 66.
tίς ἐς υμᾶς, xi. 5.
tὸν, ix. 17.
tούς, xvii. 16.
tόκος, xix. 23.
tόποι, xiv. 9.
tόπος τεῦθος, vi. 17.
tράπεζα, xix. 23.
tρυφή, vii. 25.

δήλεις, xi. 45.
δύναται, v. 31, vii. 10.
δυνὴ Ὥλος, xxii. 31.
δύνατικὸς, xiv. 2.
ὑὸς Τύλιτος, i. 32.
ὑπέρτερος, xvi. 12.
ὑπάρχει, viii. 41.
ὑπαρχόντα, τά, viii. 3.
ὑπέρ, xvi. 8.
ὑπερήφανος, i. 51.
ὑπηρέτης, i. 2, iv. 20.
ὑπό, iv. 2.
ὑπ’ ὀφράνων, ὃ, xvii. 24.
ὑποδείκνυσι, iii. 7.
ὑποδέχεσθαι, x. 38.
ὑπόδημα, iii. 16, ix. 3.
ὑποκρίσεως, xx. 20.
ὑποκρίσθη, vii. 42.
ὑπολαμβάνειν, viii. 43, x. 30.
ὑπομένειν, ii. 43.
ὑπομονή, viii. 15, xxi. 19.
ὑποστρέφεις, i. 56.
ὑποχωρεῖν, ix. 10.
ὑποτιθέσθη, xvii. 5.
ὑποτρεπίας, xv. 14.
ὑπότρημα, xxi. 4.
ὑφιστάτος, L 32, viii. 28.

φάγω, viii. 34.
φάραγες, iii. 5.
Φαρμακώς, v. 17.
φάτης, ii. 7.
φλάνω, xi. 20.
φιλάργυρος, xvi. 14.
φίλημα, viii. 45, xxii. 48.
Φιλίππος, vi. 14.
Φιλίππος τετάρχης, iii. 1.
φιλοσύνη, iv. 35.
φοβοῦ, μή, i. 13.
φόρος, xx. 22.
φορτισώ, xi. 46.
φραγμός, xiv. 23.
φράγμας, i. 17.
φρονίμος, xvi. 8.
φυλάκη, ii. 8, xii. 38.
φυλέται, ix. 58.
φωνεῖν, viii. 8, xiv. 12.
φωνὴ ἐγένετο, iii. 22.
φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, i. 42.
φωνῇ ἀναίρεσθαι, xvii. 13.

χαλέπις, i. 14.
χαλάρω, v. 5.
χάραξ, xix. 43.
INDEX IV. ENGLISH AND LATIN WORDS.

aporiari, xxiv. 4.
by and by, xvii. 7.
Calvary, xxiii. 33.
chaos, xvi. 26.
cousin, i. 36.
decurio, xxiii. 50.
dispensator, xii. 42, xvi. 1.
manicabat, xxi. 38.
occupy, xix. 13.
pavimentare, xix. 44.
pignerarius, xii. 58.
procurator, xvi. 1.
quaterducatus, iii. 1, 19.
rate, iv. 35.
room, xiv. 9.
sonis, xxi. 34.
subsannare, xvi. 14, xxiii. 35.
thought, xii. 22.
ventilabrum, iii. 17.
vilicus, xii. 42, xvi. 1.